

[06/15, 17:10] Snr: Hidden secrets

INTRODUCTION

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

It has always been about the phakade family, people saw us as strange people

because we were poor but well mannered and full of life even though we didn't have it all but we appreciated what we had. I was once a girl of the township, my parents had died when I was still a baby. I live with my older brother Dumi and my grandmother works in Cape town but visits every month. Dumi and I are very close, since my parents passed away Dumi has been protecting me and caring of me, the love we both share in our hearts for each other is extraordinary. I on the other hand is the smart girl in the family, beauty and power runs through my veins. I am not perfect but am gifted with the

gift of beauty and wisdom. My name is Tumi Phakade and this is my story..... ride with me and see where everything goes.....

[06/15, 17:10] Snr: INSERT 1

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

It was a bright Thursday afternoon when I came back from school and as I got home I saw plastic bags everywhere full

of groceries and Dumi was watching TV.
we live in a very small house with 3
small bedrooms, a kitchen and a small
bathroom.

Me: Hi bro (staring at the bags)

Dumi: hey cutie, how's your day been?

Me: forget about my day...and then
(pointing to the bags) who is this for
and where is it from (I said curiously)

Dumi: we need to talk Tumi and I hope
you will forgive me for this but I had no
choice and I did it for us, we had no food
left.

Me: Dumi, what are you talking about??
what did you do? did you steal these

things and why are you home so early, aren't you supposed to be at school??

Dumi: uhm Tumi plz relax...uhm well

Me: talk damn it!!

Dumi: OK, OK but plz don't be angry

Me: I already am

Dumi: uhm well...(rubbing his hands together nervously) well..i..i...I dropped out of school today and I told the principal that I'm not coming back because I am going to start working to provide for us and so I can't continue studying.

Me: (my eyes were widely open out of shock) Dumi, no,no,no, you can't do

that no, you have to go back to school, its your last year, and how come you still need to get a job but already you have all these things, Dumi plz don't tell me you're getting into a gang???(I said with questioning eyes because I know my brother very well, he will do anything just so that I live like other kids)

Dumi: it doesn't matter what I'm doing, just be grateful that I'm providing for you damn it!! and plus, school wasn't gonna put food on the table and don't you ever shout at me again!! (he said roaring with anger written all over his face then he walked out of the house)

Me: (I ran after him) Dumi!! wait where

are you going!! (too late, he was already turning by the corner of the street)

.

.

.

.

.

Days have passed and Dumi's behavior still hasn't changed since that day and he doesn't communicate with me anymore and he always comes home late and leaves early and I'm really worried about him but he doesn't wanna tell me anything.....

Today is Sunday and I'll be going to church with Lindiwe (best friend) so I woke up at 07:30 and did my hygiene process and wore my white dress that hugged my body and revealed my curves with black pumps then did my braids into a neat bun and went to knock on Dumi's door.....

Me: Dumi!! are you coming to church or not (there was no reply)

Me: Dumi!!!

Dumi: what is it Tumisani! what's bothering you?? (he said in an irritated tone)

Me: its Sunday and I'm going to church,

are you not coming??(then he opens the door and walks to the kitchen with me following behind him)

Dumi: no, I'm not going today and I have work to do so please take this money and be home as soon as the service ends (hands me a R100 note and walks away)

Me: (he didn't give me time to say anything or simply say " thank you " so I just took the money and walked out to fetch Lindiwe)

.

.

.

Gogo taught me to pray every day and believe in God because he is the one that makes everything possible so that's why I always made sure to go to church every Sunday. I grew up without knowing my father nor mother, Gogo told me God is my father but I always wondered why he was not there with me physically but Gogo told me, he is always me.....so that's why I learnt to make God my first priority in life and always put him first.....you might think I'm miss "holy" but nah...actually I'm just human just like everyone else and I sin too so that doesn't make us any different from each

other.....anyway.....
the story.....

back to

.

.

It is now after church and the service was powerful and I really loved it. I took a taxi home with Lindiwe and we parted ways. As soon as I got close to the house, I saw a black car parked outside and I think it's Ferrari.....and I was wondering who it might be...when I got inside the house there was this guy that looked like a total gangster and Dumi was there with him and they were both drinking and talking.....

Me: good afternoon

Guy: oh this must be the one and only
Tumi phakade, woww Dumi your sister
is really beautiful hey...(he said drooling
over me and looking at me weirdly)

Dumi: uhm yes Bozza this is my sister
(boss??? who the heck is this??)

Me: uhm excuse me, I will be in my room
(I said tempting to walk away)

Guy: no, my baby don't walk
away...come and sit down with us
(patting to the seat next to him)

Dumi: uhm no bra skopp, she's going to
her room (I walk to my room and lock
the door immediately and I

uncomfortably remove my clothes and
put on something that covers me
completely)

plz like, comment and share....I really
need your comments because it means
a lot to me....plzzz guys and share
too

[06/15, 17:11] Snr: INSERT 2

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

Dumi's POV

Hi, I'm Dumisani, as you all know I'm Tumi's brother and I love my sister dearly and I know I've been acting strange lately but I have my reasons.....so, to change the circumstances we've been living in I decided to become a gangster and it was the only way for me to get income and put food on the table and also pay for Tumi's school fees which has been stressing me and I hate how this is hurting my sister but I had no choice and Bra Skopp (guy/boss) is here to collect the money that he lent to me and he is not an easy guy plus he's a

gangster too and is a gang leader,
everyone in town fears him and right
now I don't have the money because I've
already spent it buying groceries and
paying rent.....

Me: uhm Bra Skopp please just give me
another two weeks and I'll pay back your
money as soon as possible please

Bra Skopp: Listen here Dumi my boy, I
come in peace and I am in fact giving
you three weeks instead and after three
weeks if I don't get my money back I
won't be as nice as I am today.....or
maybe we should get your sister into
this business too....don't you think???

(he says smiling in a devilish way)

Me: uhm no Bra Skopp, there is no need for that I will get your money as soon as possible, my sister is innocent leave her out of this. (getting heated up)

Bra Skopp: hahaha I see she is your weak point....hmmm relax my boy, Damnnn she's very beautiful... haiii (he says scratching his head)

Me: Bra Skopp uhm...I think you should be going, I have places to get to (standing up)

Bra Skopp: hehehe you chasing me out, OK I am leaving....I'll be back for my money(he smiles rudely and leaves)

Oh jesuu!! what did I get myself into.... I

can't put Tumi's life in danger like this, I have to find a solution and ASAP.....

.

.

Tumi's POV

I haven't heard anything from Gogo in a very long time, I will have to call her because I am getting worried now.....I come out of my room hoping that the guy is gone and I'm glad he is gone because he is not here anymore Dumi is sitting here alone in deep thoughts.....

Me: bro, are you OK??

no reply

Me: Dumi!! hello!!?? (he snaps out of it)

Dumi: yah....what were u saying again??

Me: are you OK?

Dumi: I'm alright and you?? (he smiles faintly.....Damn I missed that smile)

Me: I'm fine (I smiled back)....have you eaten??

Dumi: no not yet, are you going to cook or should I??.....(yaaayy my bro is back!!!)

Me: no its OK, I'll cook (I go to the kitchen and he follows behind me and I take out the food from the fridge)

Dumi: We need to talk.

Me: spill, I'm listening (washing the meat)

Dumi: well, uhm, I know I haven't been the best brother these past few days and I want to firstly apologize for that, I know I hurt you and I'm sorry.

Me: (smiling) its OK Dumi don't worry about it, I've been worried about you, what's going on Dumi??

Dumi: well, the truth is, I've....uhm....I'm ashamed of it tumi and I hope you can forgive me.

Me: whatever it is just know that you're my brother and I'll always love you...so plz tell me??

Dumi: OK, well...I've become a gangster, I did it so that I could protect you and provide for us so that Gogo doesn't have to suffer like that anymore and....(he keeps quite and looks at me)

Me: what!!!??? (I knew that he had become a gangster but I just didn't want to believe it....I was shocked and my eyes were flooded with tears but I was trying so hard not to let them out)

Dumi: I'm sorry but I had no choice, your principal was complaining about your school fees and I had no money for rent and Gogo's phone is constantly off so I couldn't phone her.

Me: (I was now crying) uhm, uhm, OK...I understand (wiped away my tears)

Dumi: plz forgive me for this and plz don't tell anyone about this Tumi plzz I'm begging you (he pleaded and was close to tears too)

Me: I promise I won't tell anyone about this but Dumi its not right, I'm scared (I said hugging him)

Dumi: don't worry, everything will be fine (then there was a knock on the door. we both stared at each other and wiped away our tears)

Voice: Tumi, Dumi, gogo is here..(we both rushed to the door with happiness

written all over our faces)

Us: Gogo!!! (we opened the door and hugged her).....

TO BE CONTINUED

PLEASE GUYS.....LIKE, SHARE AND COMMENT

#loveyou

[06/15, 17:11] Snr: CONTINUATION

.

.

.

.

Gogo is finally home and we missed her so much, although she doesn't look

really well and its making me worried.

Gogo: oh my children, I missed you guys so much, Dumisani I can see you've been taking very good care of your sister, aaaaiii tumi you look even more beautiful every time I come here.

Me: haii gogo, we missed you too and yes my brother has been taking good care of me. (smiling)

Dumi: Gogo, would you like something to eat or drink?? you must be tired, you look weak gogo, have you been taking yours meds??

Gogo: oh my child, gogo is getting old now and that's the reason I am back, I

have a lot to tell you guys....(starts coughing and I immediately sense that Gogo is not well)

Me: Dumi plz bring Gogo some water(he brings water and gogo drinks it breathing heavily)

Gogo: thank you my child, don't worry about me, I will be fine (smiles faintly)

Dumi: mara gogo you don't look well...

Gogo: Dumi drop it mahn!(she scolds) anyway how is school?? (Dumi looks at me and I can see he feels guilty)

me: uhm, gogo school is fine, we are working very hard gogo (fakes a smile)

Gogo: OK mtanam, go cook, I have to

talk to your brother (I leave them and walk to the kitchen)

- .
- .
- .

Dumi's POV

I am scared of what Gogo will say now because this woman knows me from head to toe, A to Z and can magically somehow read my mind just by looking at me.....

me: uhm, gogo what is wrong?

Gogo: you tell me Dumisani, what's bothering you? (she asks with

questioning eyes)

Me: what you mean gogo, there's nothing bothering me(I look down)

Gogo: are you sure??

me: 100% gogo

Gogo: hmm ok....(she keeps quite)

me: gogo, you look weak

Gogo: Dummi my child, it is almost my time

me: gogo what are you talking about, I don't understand??

Gogo: Dumisani, I want you to start becoming a man and take care of your fathers house and your sister, the

Phakade legacy lies in the hands of yours and Tumi's, tumisani is very young and I didn't want her to be here when I tell you this because she won't take this easily (she hesitates) well the doctors say that I have only a month to live and it is only by God's grace that I am still walking around today (she blinks away tears)

me: (I am breaking deep down but i am trying to keep calm) uhm, but gogo how can you be leaving us so soon, gogo tumisani has one more year then she will be graduating from high school, how will I tell her this news???

Gogo: I need you to be her strength

Dumisani, she has no one else, God will help you through every step of the way. we will all die someday mtanam, so be a man and protect your sister, she is the light of this family, I don't know the expected date that I will be gone but I will start having symptoms soon and I don't want you to worry just be your sisters strength and there's one more thing.....(she hesitates again, this time she's more calmer)

me: what is it gogo (I asked worriedly)

Gogo: well...this I have to tell you with the presence of both you and your sister but not today, I will tell you another day because your heart has bared enough

heart break for one day already.

Me: ok gogo, I will wait and I promise I will take care of tumisani, she is all I will have left.

gogo: don't worry my boy, all will be well....now go and check on her, she's taking long now yoh..(she giggles)

me: ok gogo I will be back (I walk to the kitchen and find tumi cooking)

.

.

.

Tumi's POV

(Dumi walks in the kitchen and it smells

divine, I've been cooking up a storm)

Dumi: hmmmm it smells like heaven in here (he says inhaling the smell)

Me: of course it does (I said smiling from ear to ear)

Dumi: I'm starving and gogo is waiting for you to finish up)

me: Don't worry, I'll be done in 10 mins

Dumi: ok, do you need help....and what are you cooking anyway??

me: Chicken stew and rice and I've made desert too....

Dumi: hmمم gogo will love this one and I'm guessing desert is chocolate ice

cream?? (I giggled naughtily) eish mahn
you and your chocolates (he says
walking out and I'm laughing behind him)

After dinner we all sat in the lounge
watching tv and laughing around with
gogo and it was fun until we all got tired
and went to bed.

.
. .
.

The next day was Monday and its a
school day and I love school (I
know...am crazy hey), so I woke up early
and took a bath then got dressed in my
uniform which made me look even more

beautiful..... oh I forgot to tell you.....well truth is....I'm very light in complexion, well not normal light in complexion but....I'm a coloured.....yeah crazy hey....my natural hair is a long afro and naturally I'm a colored by race....I don't know how it happened but I was like this since birth and sometimes people mistook for an albino since I live in a black area and my family is black and stuff but am not an albino, I'm a colored, gogo never told me why, she always skipped the topic whenever I ask and told me its a blessing from God and I should accept my skin and beauty runs through my veins so yeah.....anyway.....

I got ready for school and tied up my braids into a neat pony tail since I decided to braid my afro....

Me: morning gogo (she was up early too)

Gogo: morning baby, how are you?

me: I'm good gogo and how did you sleep?

Gogo: yoh I missed my bed (we giggle), breakfast is ready, go wake up your brother (I went to Dumi's room and he was already up so I told him to come have breakfast)

Dumi: morning my Queen (kissing gogo's cheek)

Gogo: morning handsome (they smile)

me: yoh I feel unwanted (I pout.... they laugh)

we eat our breakfast and I wash the dishes.

me: gogo I have to go, Lindiwe is waiting for me

gogo: ok my baby have a wonderful day, oh wait, let's pray first...(we prayed and said Amen at the end)

me: ok gogo see you later, your highness (I said kissing her cheek) bye Dumsa (kissing him too)

Dumi: bye princess, go safely

I said my goodbyes and left them and went to fetch lindiwe...

AT SCHOOL.....

well school was school and I went to my first lesson and it was physics.....just great!!!!

.

.

its now break and I'm so relieved....I met lindiwe by the toilet and we went outside to our spot....

Lindiwe: yoh chomma, I'm so tired already (she says sitting down and it just hit me that I forgot my lunch money)

Me: shit!!!

Lindi: and then...what's up with you??

Me: I just remembered I forgot my lunch money

Lindi: no worries, you can have mine

Me: no its cool, I had breakfast this morning so I'm not really hungry.

Lindi: ok chommi.....yoh babes...guess what!!? (she said excited)

Me: what???

Lindi: I said guess mahn Tums??

Me: you know I'm not good with guessing so spill already..

Lindi: OK, ok, so my parents had an

emergency with work so they had to go overseas last night and....(she says naughtily)... tebogo has organised a party tonight and you have to come Tumsa plzzz its gonna be lit like omg!!!(she squeels)

me: but Lindi, its Monday and its a school day like a party on a Monday????

Lindi: are you coming or not?? (she was getting annoyed now)

me: no sorry, gogo is back I have to stay with her so no thanks...

Lindi: mxm ok whatever, but guess who is coming too???

Me: who?? Davido???

Lindi: in your deepest dreams,
Luyanda is coming too babes

Me: yoh Lindiwe you sounded like the
president was coming....gaaa (I sais
disappointed) out of all the people in
Soweto you decided to invite him too??

Lindiwe: ohh what's wrong with you, he's
the hottest guy in Soweto Mahn and
ohh...speak of the devil, here he comes
(I turn and our eyes meet....jesuu save
me)

Luyanda: good morning ladies

Us: Hi

Lu: how are we today?? (he smiles
revealing his beautiful teeth)

Lindi: good and you?

Lu: I'm great, Tumsa what's up? (he says looking at me)

Me: the sun and the beautiful blue sky....(he giggles) I'm fine (I smile and damn that was the wrong move because these dimples pop out like a surprise)

Lu: uhm, so you coming to the party tonight right?

me: unfortunately not, I'll be busy

Lu: oh ok (he says disappointed)

Lindi: uhm hello...I'm still here (we all laugh because she looks like a baby yet so cute)

the bell rings and we stand up to leave..

Lu: so I'll see you ladies around..

Lindi: sure (I just smile)

we walk away and I can feel his eyes
staring right through me....mxm....bad
boy of Soweto isn't he??

LIKE, SHARE AND COMMENT

PLZZZZ

#loveyou

[06/15, 17:11] Snr: INSERT 3

.

.

.

.

Dumi's POV

I'm sure Gogo is wondering why I am not dressed to go to school...

Gogo: Dumi aren't you going to school mtanam? (its like she read my mind)

Dumi: uhm, gogo I don't have school today but I have somewhere to go so I'll see you later (I said kissing her cheeks, ready to walk out)

Gogo: ok but are you sure everything is Ok?

Me: yes gogo everything is fine...I have to go now, bye

Gogo: ok bye

I left the house and went to the gang because I'm sure there's a mission tonight. I get there and I find the guys chilling.

The guys: owh chowchow my mahn (that's my gangster name)

Me: owh guys, what's up??

them: the sky (they laugh)

me: mxm you fools, I mean what's happening tonight??

Bino: owh man, there's a party tonight at some rich bitches house not too far from the hood, so we get into the house and fuck a couple of bitches and steal phones and cash of course, that bitches

parents are packed but we have to do everything within an hour without anyone noticing us.

Me: wait, what house is this because I can't risk anyone from my hood seeing me?

Tino: ohhh ntwana, you scared?? (he says laughing)

Me: no, I just can't risk

Bino: Dude are you in or out, and the house is number 66

(say what!! that's tebogo's house, damn that chick is hot as in hot hot!!!)

Me: ok dude, I'm in

Bino: good!!! (he says getting high on weed) want some?? (he offered)

Me: no thanks, I'm cool

Tino: we need to toughen you up chowchow, you too soft...

- .
- .
- .

Tumi's POV

School is out and I am walking home alone because Lindiwe's sister picked her up and they went shopping for the party. As I'm walking I feel someone walking next to me and its

Luyanda....Eish this dude..

Luyanda: hey

Me: hey

(silence)

Luyanda: Tumi why don't you wanna give me a chance?

Me: I don't know what you talking about

Luyanda: Tumi don't do this plz you know that I truly feel for you

Me: yet you've been fucking every girl around this place

Luyanda: you know thats not true..(he looks at me) Don't tell me you believe that bullshit (I keep quiet)

Luyanda: But I can change Tumi, just give us a chance plz, if I didn't love you then why am I still here when I can get any girl that I want, hah tell me?? (he stops me holding both my arms on my sides and looks straight into my eyes and I feel my legs getting weak...God, the effect this dude has on me.. it worries me)

Luyanda: Talk to me mahn tumsa plzz

Me: Luyanda plz not today

Luyanda: then when Tumisani?? plz just give us a chance plzz (he gets on his knees and I'm amazed)

Me: ok ok plz stand up (I help him up

feeling so embarrassed)

Luyanda: is that a yes?? (he smiles)

Me: I'm scared Luyanda, you'll break my heart into pieces and leave me hanging

Luyanda: no babe don't say that, I won't do that plz trust me (he cups my face with his hands and I gently nod then we continue walking)

.

.

.

Luyanda's POV

Hi everyone, I'm Luyanda and yes as you've heard I'm a gangster for real and

yes I love Tumi with all my heart and I'm so happy that she has finally given us a chance because its been 2 years now that she's been rejecting me but today is my lucky day..she finally accepted me and I'll treat her like the queen she is. I might be a gangster but I'm still human . I can't wait for tonight tho because the gents just told me that we have a job tonight and there's a new guy in the gang....so I've heard. As soon as I get home I eat then take a long shower then go to the gang to plan the actions needed for tonight. it's already 17:45 and the party is at 19:00, as I get to the crib, I spot a familiar face and....oh shit!!!

wait...isn't that Tumi's brother!!! oh my
shit!! I'm so glad he doesn't know
me..damn if he finds out I'll be in big
shit!!

Me: Gents hoza!!

Bino: ohw yanda (thats my gang name)

Tino: ohw my boy, this is chowchow,
chowchow meet yanda, yanda meet
chowchow (we shake hands)

Me: ntwana, welcome to the gang

Chowchow: thanks bra

Me: I'm guessing this is your second
mission because I wasn't here on the
last one?

Chowchow: yeah it's my second

Me: ok gents, this is what's gonna happened...(I told the guys the plan and we got our weapons in place just in case)

Me: Gents, remember...no shooting, we just hit and run okay??

Them: ok boy got it

when we got to the party it was packed but it was still early..the Gents got in through the back door and I was the one who got invited so I came in through the front door and bumped into Lindiwe.

Me: Lindi this place is packed yooo

Lindiwe: yeah it is hey(she was looking so damn good and I was going crazy

already)

I took a few drinks and went to the back where there was few people and spotted the gents and we drank and got high then when it was 22:30 we did our job and switched off all the lights and people were drunk and bitches screaming in the room but because the music was loud no one could hear them. when we were done we took the cash in peoples bags and checked out Tebogo's parents room and damn!! these people are stinking rich..the lights were still off so it was easy for us so no one spotted us....just before quarter past 11 we were out and drove off to the crib and you

should have seen the faces of the
gents these people are sweating as
fuck!!

.

Dumi's POV

Damn!!! best night of my life..I have
never had so much fun in my entire
life..Tebogo's pussy is so damn good!!
she doesn't know that it was me that
fucked her but damn I had so much fun.

Bino: ooooh that was hectic!!

Tino: you could say that again!!

Me: Damn that pussy taste good!!!!

Yanda: Ooih Gents best night ever!!!

we got to the crib and fixed ourselves and shared the things we got and parted ways

PLEASE LIKE, SHARE AND COMMENT

#loveyou

[06/15, 17:12] Snr: INSERT 4

- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumi's POV

I'm getting worried now because Dumi

wasn't home yet and gogo is asleep but I can't sleep so I decided to study to get my mind off things and then I heard a knock at the door and I froze....

Voice: open up its me Dumi

(sigh)

Me: (I opened the door and he is sweating like hell and smells like a shebeen) Mxm...

Dumi: what's wrong? (looking at me)

Me: I've been worried sick, you could've at least called to say you were coming late.

Dumi: I'm here now so stop complaining

Me: mxm (this dude is so mean)

Dumi: go sleep its late!

me: but I'm still studying

Dumi: not anymore, now go sleep

(I take my books and go to my room and got under covers then he knocks on my door and comes in)

Me: I didn't say you could come in

Dumi: sorry

Me: for what exactly??

Dumi: everything (he comes closer and tucks me in bed and kisses my cheek)

Goodnight, I love you

Me: goodnight, love you too (he

switches off the light and closes the door behind him)

.

Lindiwe's POV

The party was going well until someone pulled me in a dark room and started taking my clothes off and I couldn't fight back because they were too strong then they raped me. Everyone has left because tebogo chased them all out and she and the other girls were raped too. I've been crying for the past two hours, tebogo tried to console me but I was crying non stop. I could see she was in pain too, we couldn't call the

police because then we would be in trouble too with our parents so we just cried in each others arms until we fell asleep.

.

Tumi's POV

I woke up the next morning and did my hygiene process then got a message from Lindiwe saying she is not coming to school today and said I should pass by her house after school. I am guessing she got too drunk last night and can't wake up. I went to the kitchen and gogo and Dumi were already there so we had breakfast and I was walking to school

then got a call from Luyanda.

Me: hello

Luyanda: morning beautiful, how are you

Luyanda: fine, just missing you

me: (giggled) are you coming to school?

Lu: no babe, I'm not coming today, do you want me to pick you up after school??

me: no thanks, I'm going to Lindi's house so I'll be fine.

Lu: OK baby talk later, have a great day love you...

me: mmmhm (giggled) Thnx

I hanged up the call and get to school

and the bell rang so on the day went...

school was school...it was boring

because lindiwe wasn't here with me so

I spent the day alone till school ended

and I went to Lindiwe's house....

Me: knock, knock (tebogo comes to open the door and her eyes look so red and puffy) Tebo what's wrong, are you OK?? (she starts crying then I took her in my arms and we walked inside and I saw Lindiwe cuddled up on the couch looking so scared)

Me: Lindiwe what's going on, what happened??

Tebogo: (crying) they they they

raped us (I gasped)

me: what?? (I was close to tears too)

I stayed with them the whole day and they told me everything that happened and we shed tears together and I forced them to eat then I went home, I already phoned gogo and told her that I'll be home late.

.

.

Three weeks later, everything was going so well, Lindiwe and Tebogo were slowly healing and they are doing so great.

It is Saturday today and Lindiwe , Luyanda and I are going out shopping

and then have lunch and stuff...Lindiwe knows that Luyanda and I are dating and she was shocked and I feel like she knows something that I don't know but whatever it is, its the least of my worries right now.

I woke up and did my hygiene process and put on a pair of blue jeans and sandals with a white see through top and I was looking simple but great. I went to the kitchen had my breakfast since I was alone because gogo and Dumi went out to buy some groceries... then I heard a knock on the door.

Me: come in!!

Lindiwe walks in wearing a tight dress that hugged her body and showed off her assets.

Lindiwe: hey babes

Me: hey Nana

Lindi: are you ready to go?

Me: yeah but..(my phone rings) babe where are you?

Luyanda: I'm outside my love, come out

Me: OK (end the call) chommie lets go we walked out to where he was and he was in a car and damn that's one sexy beast!!

Luyanda: (kissing my cheek) hey babe

Me: hey you (smiles)

Lu: hey Lindiwe, sup??

Lindi: good good (smiles)

we get in the car and drive off

Lu: you must be wondering whose car this is??

Me: yep

Lu: well...its my car (my eyes grew wider and I looked up at the rear view mirror and Lindiwe has the same expression on her face)

Lindiwe: are you serious?? you mean this beast is yours??

Lu: (giggles) yup this is my beast

Lindiwe: wow

me: impressive!! and where did you get the money to buy this?? it looks pretty expensive!

Lu: well...my dad bought this for me because he was sick and tired of giving me transport money.

Me: oh OK, I see, it's a beautiful car babe

Lindiwe: yeah it is indeed

Luyanda: thanks ladies, we are here now we got to the mall and shopped till we dropped..... it was really fun

Me: babe, I'm tired now we've been walking all day

Lindiwe: haaiii chomma its only been three hours

Me: ohw three hours is a long time, I wanna sit down

Lu: OK babe, let's go have lunch then we can go home

we went to spur and ordered our food and ate while chatting then a girl came from no where and....

Girl: yanda is that really you.... (he looked up)

Lu: hey Emma, what's up?? (they hugged and the girl was so forward)

Emma: I'm good, I see you've forgotten me and you're enjoying yourself...

(I cleared my throat)

Me: uhmmm (they looked at me)

Lu: ohh uhm Emma, this is my girlfriend
Tumi and her friend Lindiwe

Me: hi

Emma: (fakes a smile) hello, yanda
when last did you become the boyfriend
type....I mean like you usually just hit
and run..hmm

Lu: well Emma people do change hey

Emma: no way, not the Luyanda I know,
as they say a leopard never changes its
spots

Lu: uhm Emma, with all due respect, as

you can see we're having lunch here and I think you've over stayed your welcome, it was nice meeting you again now bye!!(yoh lol i almost bust in laughter and Lindiwe was laughing out loud like nobody's business)

Emma: wow you even chasing me away...mxm bye..don't come running to me when you need a pussy to fuck!! (she gives me a death stare and storms out)

Lindiwe: aagggg such a slut, is she your ex or something?? (we both look at him)

Lu: uhm well she's nothing to me

we eat in silence, then Lu paid and we left

(IN THE CAR)

Lindiwe: chomma are you OK??

Me: yeah, I'm cool (I smile)

we dropped Lindiwe at her house and
we were going to the direction of my
house

Lu: Babe are you OK, what's wrong??

(he stops and parks on the side of the
road)

Me: why are we stopping??

Lu: we gotta talk, I know you wondering
who Emma is (God, I don't know how he
does it)

Me: I don't care who she is (I said trying

to show no emotion)

Lu: yeah you don't but just let me apologise at least...

Me: (silent)

Lu: babe, look at me(I face him)

Lu: I love you (he knows exactly what to say to melt my heart...)

Me: (I smile and my dimples pop out)

He passionately kisses me and I respond and after what felt like forever we let go and just look each other in the eyes and I break the silence...

Me: who is she?? (he laughs)

Lu: you said you didn't care babe....but

anyway....well she was my fuck buddy
and we did some crazy things together
and stuff

Me: hmm OK

Lu: Babe don't worry about what people
say about me, just know that I love you
OK?

Me: Lu just make sure your bitches stay
away from me cuz its annoying (I
pout)

Lu: ncooh babe, don't worry if anyone
and I mean ANYONE comes close to you
and tries to hurt you, I'll make sure I kill
them (he sounds so serious and that
frightens me)

Me: aaahh babe don't talk like that you scaring me.

Lu: no tumisani I mean it, you're mine and mine alone.

Me: OK, OK, got it now plz take me home (he starts the engine and he drives off to my area and drops me off two houses away and I take my shopping bags and kiss him goodbye)

.

.

Lindiwe's POV

I had a great day with tumi and Luyanda and it was awesome. when I got home tebogo was not there and my parents

are at work, I decided to try on my new clothes and it was stunning!! I was watching TV and eating noodles when my phone rang and guess who it was..
....it was ex BF jason

Me: hello?

Jay: hey Lily, how are you?? (mxm that fucken nickname)

Me: I'm good, what can I do for you??

Jay: uhm babe we need to talk, can I come over to your place plzz

me: and who said I was at home??

Jay: well, I was hoping you'd be there, so where are you??

Me: mxm....I'll be waiting (just like that I hanged up)

Last time I checked this dude broke up with me and told me that we were not meant to be so I don't know what he wants now....ten minutes later there's a knock at the door...

Me: come in!!

he walks in looking all hot and stuff and I just realize how much I missed this dude

Him: hey (he sits down next to me and I put the plate down and cross my legs like a five year old)

Me: Hi, what do you want Jason...last

time I checked we were not meant to be??(I said looking so pissed)

Him: I want to apologize Lind, I'm really sorry for the way I treated you and I regret it, I just realized that no other girl can fill up your space babe and I'm truly sorry plz give me another chance (he says with pleading eyes)

Me: you hurt me jay...you made me feel useless and stupid (I was now in tears)

Him: babe I'm sorry (he pulls me into his chest and I inhale his cologne and it makes me go crazy.....damn I love this dude) plz forgive me and let me fix things this time plzzz babe

Me: I've forgiven you but if you ever hurt me again I swear I'll....

(I didn't finish what I was about to say because he smashed his lips on mine and kisses me and I respond craving for those juicy lips)

we kisses till we got tired and I pulled out smiling and I lay my head on his chest again and we stay in that position holding each other tightly like there's no tomorrow.....

PLZ LIKE, SHARE AND COMMENT.....

I've realized like mostly everyone here is silent readers but I'm pleading with you

guys to plzzzz like and comment, plzzzz
guys

#loveyou

[06/15, 17:12] Snr: INSERT 5

- .
- .
- .
- .

Luyanda's POV

I had a great day with my baby today
and I miss her already... I got home and
my parents aren't home yet but my
sister is in the lounge busy on her
phone...

Me: hey lil sis

Yemi: hey you

Me: how's your day been??

Yemi: not bad and yours.....oh don't tell me, I saw you and your chick today, she's cute (she smiles)

Me: (I zone out thinking about tumsa) I know heywait what??? were you stalking me?? (I looked at her)

Yemi: (she laughs) me?? stalk you?? mxm you must be dreaming, I was shopping with my girls..

Me: ohh that's why your bitch of a friend Emma was there, mxm

Yemi: wait you saw Emma??

Me: she came to us while we were having lunch at spur and she was all forward and stuff, I can't believe I used to fuck her...agghh

Yemi: (she laughs) too bad, no wonder she was so pissed when she came back to us

Me: thats because I had to put her in her place, anyway I'm going to my room

Yemi: OK see yah (she giggles)

.

.

Yemi's POV

Hola, Hola, I'm Yemi, yanda's lil sister even tho he is only one year older than me. I'm 17 doing grade 11 and my friends are Micka, Emma, Nina and Thandi, well I'm a yellow bone, got an ass for days and yeah I'm beautiful in my own opinion because I completely love myself and respect myself as a woman, yes I am not perfect but I value myself and respect others. I'm not innocent as crystal clear, yes I've done the deed and am no longer a virgin and I have a boyfriend, we've been together for two years now and we love each other a lot and when I say a lot I mean aaa lottt!! so Emma is my friend too, she

and my brother had a thing going on and they were fuck buddies well it wasn't a secret since Emma has a big ass mouth and it spills too much shit so yeah that's why lots of people knew about it and I know Emma is a bitch and doesn't get enough of the dick so yeah....that's Emma for you....I had a call coming through and it was bae

Me: love of my life (smiling)

Mangi: my queen, how are you??

Me: I miss you babe

Mangi: my queen, I miss you too, I'll be home tomorrow so plz come and visit me babe plz

Me: OK babe I'll come but by one condition..

Mangi: what is it my love??

Me: I have to find two boxes of debonairs pizza on the table

Mangi: anything for my queen

Me: thnx baby

Mangi: OK Nana, I'll be waiting, babe I have to go we'll talk later and if you have a problem with transport just call me and I'll pick you up OK??

Me: OK love you bye!!

Mangi: love you too bye!

He hanged up and I felt like someone

was watching me..I turned around only to find yanda looking at me..

Me: dude don't do that, you freaking me out

Yanda: who was that on the phone??

Me: does it matter?

Yanda: answer me mahn Yemi!!

Me: OK relax geez...it was Mangi, mxm

yanda: you guys still dating??

me: for the past two years (smiling)

yanda: gosh two years, are you crazy??

that's a long time

me: its love bro and if you dare hurt that cute girlfriend of yours, I swear I'll forget

you're my brother and kick your balls!!

yanda: (laughing) aaahh Yemi
relax, tumi is my woman and I would
never do anything to hurt her, so i see
you really like her

me: yes I really like her..the phakade
family are people full of life and respect
for each other and love too, I really like
that about them..

Yanda: hmmm than maybe we should
organise a date for her to come here
and have lunch with us, huh what do you
think??

me: hmm that's a great idea and I'll
invite the girls too (I said teasingly)

yanda: hell no!! not in my house, don't even think of bringing them here especially Emma wish

Me: haaiii yanda but they my friends plz just micka and Thandi plz bro plzz
(putting on a puppy face)

yanda: OK whatever but only them two

Me: Thanks bro (I said standing up giving him a hug and a kiss then ran up to my room excitedly)

.

.

Tumi's POV

The next day is Sunday and gogo and I

are going to church, Dumi doesn't
wanna go to church anymore and I
understand, so I woke up took a bath
and motioned my body and wore a black
tight knee length skirt with a short
sleeve blouse tucked in my skirt and a
black blazer with black sandals and
made two plaits with my braids and I
was slaying from top to bottom I
went to the lounge and gogo was ready
to go...

Gogo: oh my goodness tumisani you
look so beautiful, you going to make the
youth go crazy my child

(we both laughed)

Me: haaiii gogo (smiling shyly) lets go we'll be late.

(we went to church and so on the day proceeded)

After church I was sitting on the chairs waiting for gogo because she was talking with the church ladies when someone tapped on my shoulder...

Me: oh hi Mike

(mike is one of the church band members and he is hot like flames)

Mike: hey Tumisani (he smiled) how are you ??

me: I'm OK and you?

Mike: I'm good so how is Dumisani, I haven't seen him in quiet a while now??

Me: he's well, just been busy that's all

Mike: oh OK, you look beautiful by the way (he smiles and blushes and so do I)

Me: oh thanks

Mike: Tumi may I ask you a question??

Me: oh sure go ahead

Mike: Do you have a boyfriend??

(wooah I wasn't expecting that question but since we at church let be honest and respect the house of God)

Me: uhm well, yes I'm in a relationship right now but why tho??

Mike: no nothing, uhm, I'm just curious
(he looked disappointed)

Me: ohk I have to go, gogo has finished
talking with the ladies so I'll see you
around (I said getting up to leave)

Mike: OK see you (he smiles and I
return the smile)

while walking home with gogo....

Gogo: hmm my child, I see you've made
a friend in church?? (smiles naughtily)

Me: (giggling) haaiii no gogo

Gogo: haaowu OK (eish this woman
mara gogo is old but knows it all,
she's like a mother I've never had and I
love her so much)

We got home and to my surprise Dumi was there outside the gate with the "bra skopp" guy and I immediately got annoyed. mxm. I can feel Gogo getting heated up too...

Gogo: Good afternoon (greeting them and I greet them too)

Bra skopp: Hello ladies, Dumi I'll be on my way now (he looks at me and licks his lips while still looking serious and gogo gives him a death stare yoh if stares could kill he would be dead by now he gets in his car and drives off)

Gogo: you better have a good explanation for this (she looks at Dumi

and leaves us standing there)

Dumi: what do I tell her??

Me: why was he here in the first place,
that man sickens me to the core

Dumi: He came for his money....

Then all of a sudden we heard a scream
coming from the house and we rushed
inside and found gogo breathing heavily
then she just fell and lost
consciousness

Dumi: Gogo!! gogo!! Tumi pick up the
phone and call the ambulance (I was
shaking and tears were just flowing
down and I was physical there but my
mind was all over the place) Tumisani

mahn, damn it pick up the damn phone
(he was trying to get her pulse and
checking if she was still breathing and I
quickly snapped out of it and called the
ambulance)

PLZ LIKE, SHARE AND COMMENT

#loveyou

I might post again later....depends on
the likes and comments

[06/15, 17:12] Snr: INSERT 6

.

.

.

.

The next day I had to go to school otherwise I would be behind and I don't like having to catch up especially with school work so I woke took a bath and put on my uniform than made breakfast and packed some for Gogo and Dumi took it to her and I went to school.

(At school)

It was break time so Lindi and I went to our spot..

Lindiwe: chommie how are you?

Me: I'm much better now and you?

Lindiwe: I'm OK, how's Gogo?

Me: she's looking weak every time I go visit her, I'm worried about her it's stressing me out.

Lindiwe: Don't worry chomma, Gogo is a strong woman and all this will pass, she'll be fine

Me: I hope so, anyway what's up, you're all smiles today??

Lindiwe: well...(she was blushing)

Me: gosh look at you!! (we both laughed)

Lindiwe: well Jason came back to me...

Me: tell me you're joking!!

Lindiwe: nope I'm not , he apologized and begged me for a second chance

and friend I miss him so much tumsa
you know I love him, so I agreed.

Me: oh OK but are you sure you happy
with this??

Lindiwe: yes friend don't worry

me: well OK, if you're happy than I'm
happy

Lindiwe: thanks babe (we hugged)

I saw Luyanda coming up to us...

Lu: babe (he kissed me) how are you?

me: I'm fine babe and you?? (I said
smiling)

Lu: I'm good, can I take you out after
school plz babe plz (he said pleading)

me: OK OK, don't look so sad (he kissed me again)

Lu: thnx my love...so Lindi what's up??

Lindiwe: I thought I was a ghost, only now you recognized I'm here (she rolled her eyes)

Lu: eish girl, you and your attitude...totally on another level

Me: what's up with you two??

Lu: don't mind her babe, mxm

(than the bell rang and we went to our classes)

.

.

.

It is now the last period and I'm exhausted plus I have physics so I had to go.

(In mr Samuels class)

Mr Samuels: oh tumisani you're back, where were you yesterday?? (he said checking me out from top to bottom)

Me: well mr Samuels my grandmother is in hospital so I had to go to her..

mr Samuels: OK, go sit down and plz see me after class..

(I walked to my desk and I could feel his eyes on my ass but I didn't give a damn)

After class (we were alone)

me: mr Samuels you wanted to talk to me??

mr Samuels: oh tumisani (he looked at me weirdly) well I wanted to say you're a very smart girl and you are really beautiful so keep up the good work (he took my hand weirdly and I pulled it away)

me: mr Samuels plz don't touch me like that you're making me uncomfortable and if that's all you've got to say than I'll be on my way...(he clearly didn't listen to me and shifted closer to me and I moved backwards but couldn't go

further because I was stuck between the desks)

Me: sir plz don't come any closer and let me go..

.

.

Luyanda's POV

I was told that Tumi was talking with mr Samuels so I decided to go and wait for her there, as I was walking closer to the class I heard her since the school was empty...

Tumi: sir plz leave me alone, what do you want?

mr Samuels: come closer and I'll show you

I got so pissed and knocked the door down and punch the fool in the face and he fell..

me: don't you ever and I mean ever touch my woman again (I was boiling with anger)

mr Samuels: young man what the hell are you doing here?

me: (I punched him again and he was now bleeding so I just took Tumi's arm and we walked out before I kill the bastard mxm)

She was shaking and fear was written

all over her face and that broke my heart to pieces. I have to finish this fool off, I have to get rid of him. we walked to my car and drove off...

.

.

Tumi's POV

I'm so glad Luyanda came to my rescue otherwise that devil was gonna rape me. I don't know what I feel right now, thoughts were just popping up in my mind like I'm going crazy but I just kept calm. I was completely silent when we got to the car and drove to his place and I didn't have the energy to tell him to

take me home so I just left it. we got to his house and damn!! its a beautiful big house and I liked it from first sight, I was stucked on one position staring while still in the car.

Lu: like it?? (he says smiling)

me: I love it, its really big

Lu: come on let's go inside

we went inside and found his sister in the kitchen cooking.

Lu: (whispering in my ear) I've already told her everything so don't worry

me: OK (I smiled. she's really beautiful and you could totally see she looks exactly like Luyanda)

Lu: hey sis, this is Tumi, tumi my lil sister
Yemi...

me: hi nice to meet you (she pulled me
into a warm embrace and I smiled)

Yemi: nice to meet you too, goodness
gracious where on earth did yanda find,
you're really beautiful

me: aaww thank you, you are beautiful
too. I must say. (we both smiled)

Lu: uhm hello?! I'm still here (we all
laughed) I'll be back babe, Yemi take
care of my woman

Yemi: don't worry bro, I got it (he went
up to his room)

Yemi: so tumi how was your day?

me: it was fine until...

Yemi: don't worry my brother will sort him out, so would you like some juice?

me: sure (she poured juice in a glass and gave it to me) thanks

Yemi: sorry but I can't help....you're really beautiful, no wonder my brother loves you so much (I blushed)

me: ncooh thanks and I love him too, I see where he got his looks from, you're so cute

Yemi: yup that's me!!! (we laughed and talked then Luyanda came down and we ate and had some fun till it was time for me to go home and I actually

forgot all my problems for once. Lu dropped me off and we kissed goodbye and he told me not to worry about anything then he left...)

- .
- .
- .

Luyanda's POV

I called the gents and they got the address of the fools house and now we are gonna pay him a visit since he lives alone which makes it even better because no one can mess with me or anyone close to me and think they can get away with it. so we went to his place

and wore face masks, dressed all black.
I got there and the gents were with me
including chowchow but he doesn't
know I'm doing this for his sister which I
love so much.

(I knocked on the door and he opened)

me: hey old man, how are we?? (I
smiled wickedly)

Him: who are you and what do you
want?? (I pushed him in the house and
walked in and the gents followed)

me: I told you not to mess with me,
didn't I ??

Him: what do you want, who are you??

me: your worst nightmare (I shot him on

his leg and the guys beat him up and we left him there but not dead)

.

.

Tumi's POV

The next day was a public holiday so I decided to visit gogo and Dumi was coming with me, I woke up and took a long bath cuz I needed it and got dressed then went to prepare breakfast and I saw Dumi staring into space..

Me: don't do that, you look scary (he snapped back to reality)

Dumi: sorry

me: what's bothering you?? (I didn't tell him what happened yesterday because he would go crazy and do something stupid)

Dumi: no, don't worry about me, I wanna ask you something...

Me: shoot...I'm listening (I was now worried)

Dumi: are you dating tumi?? (OK, I didn't expect that and I'm shocked, I immediately started sweating and I looked down)

Me: uhm yes (that came out as a whisper)

Dumi: Relax, why are you scared?

me: are you angry?? (I looked up now)

Dumi: no am not, plus you mature enough so I trust you but be careful OK? (I sighed, I'm so relieved he didn't bomb me with questions)

Me: yeah sure, thanks, uhm breakfast is ready. (he chuckled)

Dumi: don't make it so awkward geez come here (he pulled me and hugged me messing up my hair wow, he's way tooo calm with this but I'm glad its like this)

we ate and on we went to visit Gogo.

we went to gogo's hospital bed and we found her and the doctor talking.

Us: good afternoon

Doc: good afternoon children, I'll leave you guys (he walks out)

Gogo: hello my babies how are we doing today??

Me: fine and you gogo?? (I said hugging her)

Gogo: I'm OK mtanam

Dumi: we brought food for you gogo

Gogo: thank you Nana, put the food down we need to talk (Dumi puts the food and we both sit down)

Gogo: mtanam you know in life we will all eventually die and I have lots of

things to tell you and I wish it was in different circumstances but unfortunately I have to tell you. firstly the doctor said I only have a few days to live and I don't want you guys to worry about anything because I will always be with through thick and thin and Tumisani my baby I'm sorry I won't be there with you next year as you graduate from high school and you'll be going to university my baby (tears fall from the corners of her eyes and she wipes them away and.....)

Don't miss out on the next insert.....time for the secrets to be revealed.....WILL TUMISANI BE ABLE TO BARE THE

TRUTH.....WELL we'll HAVE TO WAIT
AND SEE..... Catch you guys
tomorrow.... for now....LIKE, COMMENT
AND SHARE

#loveyou

Goodnight y'all

[06/15, 17:12] Snr: INSERT 7

.

.

.

.

(tears fall from the corners of her eyes
and she wipes them away and
continues....)

Gogo: mtanam (referring to tumi) I still remember when you used to ask me why is your skin color different to your brother's and why are you referred to as colored and not black, well the truth is long ago while your father was still alive. your mother used to work in Cape town for a white businessman and then she started having an affair with him and your father wasn't aware of this, she then fell pregnant and by that time Dumi was two years and she was pregnant with Tumisani in her womb (my heart shattered when Gogo said that) she fell pregnant when she was still in Cape town and when she came

back to Soweto your father found out that she was pregnant and he wanted to tell your uncles about what your mother did but your mother killed him and the white man helped her but he was married to the lady that I recently worked for and that's how I ended up working there but the lady doesn't know that her husband had an affair and made someone pregnant (she was now in tears) then after your father died your mother tried to take away everything the white man owned like his business and all his companies but the white man refused and out of her greed for money she murdered him too and stole 12

million from his company and came back to Soweto. After she gave birth to Tumi, the police tracked her down and arrested her and she was sentenced 25 years imprisonment. She made me swear to never tell anyone about this and if people ask I should say that she had passed away, that's why I didn't tell you guys because you were too young. (we were all in tears now).

.

.

(FLASH BACK TO LINDOKUHLE'S POV
(Dumi/ tumi's mother))

I can't believe this man got me pregnant

and now with all my hard work and effort, he doesn't want to give me half his companies and shares....he thinks he will get away with this well he won't, I'll make sure he Sees his ancestors and leave his 3 kids without a father.

(In the office)

Me: mr Matthews you have an appointment in half an hour.

Mr Matthews: cancel all my appointments and meetings because baby I've booked a hotel for us and we are leaving in half an hour.(hmm perfect, now I can get rid of you)

Me: (smiling) hmhm lovely, I'll go

cancel your meetings... (turned to leave)

Mr Matthews: wait don't go yet, lock the door and come here (I did as I was told)

Mr Matthews: I missed you so much baby (he said kissing me)

Me: hmmm really (I said unbuttoning his shirt while sitting on his desk)

He hungrily squeezed my breast and kissed the living day lights out of me.

We had a steamy session and got dressed again then I went to my office.

It was time for us to leave so I packed my things and booked a bus for the next morning back to Soweto because I want to get out of this city as soon as I get

the confirmation that the 12 million has been transferred to my account. We drove to the hotel and went up to our room and I told him to switch off his phone so that we don't get disturbed.

Matthews: damn you drive me crazy (he said undressing me and I did the same to him, then he gently pushed me on the bed and got between my thighs and fucked me to the moon and back then collapsed next to me)

Matthews: hungry?

me: very

(he picked up the hotel phone and called and ordered)

me: do you want more?? (because baby you won't see any of this by tomorrow morning, I said in my mind)

Matthews: of course (he came back on top of me and the rest is history)

So we ate and I made sure I put poison in his drink and a dose of rat poison plus sleeping pills and dear friends I loved his reaction, it gave me the confidence. so straight after he drank the wine, he started holding his head and spinning around like he was going crazy...

Matthews: babe my head (I kept quite put my right leg over my left and ate strawberries popping each one in my

mouth with amusement and pleasure)

He suddenly fell and poof....keigan

Matthews was gone!! lovely shit hey....I

picked up the glass wearing gloves and

Prince it with water, making sure every

single stain was out and I packed my

stuff and by the time I was done

cleaning everything it was already 22:30

so off I went to sleep in peace!!

I woke up early the next morning around

06:15 and took a quick shower and got

dressed and took all my things and left

the dead body in the hotel room, I put on

my sun glasses and left the hotel

without anyone noticing and I went to

my apartment and quickly pack my bags

and took a taxi to the bus station
because my bus arrives at 07:30. so
goodbye Cape town, See you when
never....

.

.

(BACK TO REALITY)

Gogo: my children don't cry, its life, the
other thing I wanted to tell you guys is
that Mrs Matthews (keigans wife)
knows about all this and I told her about
you guys and she has already promised
me that after my death she will take
care of you guys and you both will have
to move to Cape town, I know this is

hard for you guys but plz forgive me for keeping this away from you and plz forgive your mother. please fulfil my last wish because I want what's best for you guys so plz Dumisani plz promise me you guys will go to Cape town at the end of this year, Tumisani will do her matrix next year in Cape town and Mrs Matthews is a really wonderful person, she won't hurt you guys or do anything that makes you unhappy, and yes your mother is still alive but she still has 8 years left in prison.

Dumi: uhm, yes gogo don't worry, we will go (I saw my brother cry for the first time in my life and that broke my heart

into pieces)

Gogo: Tumisani plz promise me you will go (my whole life is here gogo, how can I just pack up and leave, I said that in my mind but I kept quite) my child don't worry, you will start fresh there and your life will become better mtanam

Me: OK gogo I promise (tears flooded my cheeks and I just looked down)

Gogo: thank you my babies, now can we stop crying and pray, I don't want you guys to cry anymore.. OK??

Us: OK gogo (we closed our eyes and prayed)

Gogo: Dumisani take Mrs Matthews

number from my phone and she has yours, she will call you and talk to you guys throughout the year and she'll help you guys financially

Dumi: OK gogo, thank you (he did as he was told)

It was getting late so we said our goodbyes to gogo and took a taxi home...

.

.

I don't know how to explain the pain that I am feeling, I don't know if it is anger or pain. but I told myself I will have to be strong and let dead bury it's own

grave..I'll just have to listen to gogo and maybe next year I'll turn over a new leaf, get a fresh start but I'll extremely miss my best friend and the people I've met, especially Luyanda, I fell in love with him and the thought of being away from him drives me crazy and breaks me even more, well I'll have to be strong and trust in God. The truth hurts, I can't believe Dumisani is my half brother, but all these Years he's been more than a brother to me, he's like a father to me also. I never knew my father or mother because when I was born I was raised by gogo and Dumi and never knew what my parents looked like but now I know

the truth and it somehow gives me some comfort, I don't know if I should hate my mother for what she did but how can I hate someone I've never met. I'm sure Dumi is breaking inside but the love we share can never be broken because that love is extraordinary....

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO.....LIKE,
SHARE AND COMMENT

Guys I won't post tomorrow cuz I have church tomorrow and I'll be busy but I'll catch you on Monday

#loveyou

[06/15, 17:13] Snr: INSERT 8

- .
- .
- .
- .

Dumi's POV

If I open up my chest and show you how my heart feels right now, you wouldn't believe it. it kills me to know that Tumi is not my full sister but that doesn't make me love her any less, I have no choice but to fulfil gogo's wish so by the end of the year we'll be out of Soweto so I need a fresh start and maybe go back to school too. The truth

about what my mother did to my father breaks me even more and I hope she rots in that prison cell because she deserves it, I was only 2 when Tumi was born and I always wondered why she was so light in complexion and her natural hair was a long afro and she is so beautiful, now I know why and I promised myself that I will protect her and love her till I take my last breath because she is all I have.

Now I have to prepare for gogo's funeral because I want to give her the best funeral ever because she's the only mother I've known since birth so I'll give her a grand funeral..

.

Tumi's POV

we got home and I cook dinner then we ate in silence, I guess we didn't know what to say to each other, after we ate, I washed the dishes and went to sit in the lounge..

Dumi: are you OK??

Me: yeah am fine (smiled faintly)

He sat down next to me and pulled me into his arms with my head resting on his chest...

Dumi: whatever happens from now, I want you to know we'll fight this together and I'll never let you go, even though its true that you're my half sister,

it doesn't mean I love you and less so I just want you to be strong and know that I love you with my whole heart (I smiled)

Me: I love you too

Dumi: that's my baby girl (we giggled)

me: so what happens with the friendships and relationships we've built over the years??

Dumi: we'll just have to keep in contact and see where everything goes....you really love him, don't you?? (he chuckled)

Me: you wouldn't understand...

Dumi: can I be honest with you?

me: sure

Dumi: well, I know who the dude is and I know what he's into, I didn't tell you that I know him because I wanted to make sure it is who I think it is.

Me: I know he's a player and all but maybe I can change him Dumi.

Dumi: he's not just a player but a gangster too()

Me: what??? (I pulled out from his chest and look at him in a shocked way)

Dumi: relax, I'm sure he stopped his fuck boy days but the truth is we're in the same gang and he's scared to tell me that he's your boyfriend but I understand

and j just want you to be careful

me: well, now this is even more frightening, first my brother becomes a gangster then I find out my boyfriend is a gangster too and worst thing is they're both in the same gang gosh (I put my face in my hands) well at the end of the year everything will change..

Dumi: Don't worry tumsa, nothing will happen to you, if he really loves you, he'll wait for you or maybe come visit you when we move to Cape town, plus the dude is loaded.

Me: mxm, I hope so

Dumi: but if he does anything funny or

forces you to do anything that makes you uncomfortable make sure you tell me, OK??

me: I will, don't worry

We sat there talking and talking until I fell asleep in his arms and I guess he carried me to bed because the next day I woke up on my bed...

.

Luyanda's POV

I miss my woman so much and she's making me worried cuz the past few days she's been going through a lot and we don't spend much time together and honestly speaking I need a pussy ASAP,

I haven't fucked for a long time now and its killing me because Tumisani is taking things slow and its not easy to be loyal with all these chicks throwing themselves at me and I still got that fuck boy blood running through my veins but I'm a man and a dude needs a pussy sometimes you know!! but I'll wait, no rush....so I woke up got ready for school and took my keys then left and called my babe so I can pick her up..

Me: babe, morning

Tumsa: morning my love

Me: are you ready? I'm on my way

Tumsa: yeah I'm ready.

me: OK I'm coming, meet me two
houses away

Tumi: no babe come to my front gate, I'll
explain when you get here

Me: oh OK (I hang up)

I drove to her house and she came out
looking beautiful as always, she got in
and I kissed her, then she pulled out
smiling...

Tumi: babe we'll be late
we drove off..

Tumi: Lu are you a gangster?? (woah, I
was shocked, I didn't expect that, I
started sweating and I open the car
window)

Me: uhm, well, let me rather be honest with you.... yes I'm gangster but babe I promise this won't come between us babe

Tumi: relax, I'm just asking, well Dumisani knows about us but he's not angry and he's OK with us being together but just make sure you don't hurt me

me: babe you don't know how happy I am to hear this, I promise I won't hurt you.

Tumsa: thanks babe but I need to tell you something else but I'll tell you some other time

me: oh ok, how about we go out for lunch after school, I miss spending time with you.

Tumsa: I miss you too (she smiled and damn those dimples...it turned me on!)

Me: my goodness stop smiling (I said laughing) you have a beautiful smile babe

Tumi: (she laughed) thank you baby

We got to school and went on with our day and I guess it went fast....

.

Tumi's POV

It is after school now and I'm so glad Mr Samuels wasn't in class today because I'm still scared of what he did, my babe and I met at the gate and got in the car then drove off

Lu: I saw Lindiwe and Jason, what's up with them??

Me: they're back together now (I said smiling)

Lu: oh that's nice...so we going to Spur right?

Me: sure

Lu: babe you look worried, what's eating you??

Me: I'll tell you later babe (OK, this is

harder than I thought, I looked out the window just in case tears fall down without me knowing...yeah it happens)

Lu: oh OK

We drove to Spur and got in, ordered our food and sat down drinking milkshake while waiting..

Lu: babe you're scaring me, plz don't tell me you breaking up with me (he said looking uneasy)

Me: no Lu, I'm not breaking up with you

Lu: then tell me what's wrong??

Me: (I breathed in..let's see...) well the past few days has been tough for me and I found out a lot of hidden secrets in

my family and now my grandmother will die any day from now or maybe any minute from now...(I told him everything and I mean every single detail, from what my mom did and what gogo wants us to do at the end of the year and yeah) and babe I don't wanna go to Cape town but I have no choice and its gogo's last wish and...(I broke down)

Lu: (he was silent this whole time and his emotion less so I can't tell what he looks like right now) babe, look at me.. (I wiped away my tears and looked up)

Lu: honestly speaking babe I'm really hurt and I'm sorry for all this you're going through and I wish I could take

away all this pain babe but that doesn't mean I love you any less in fact I love you with all my heart and even if you going to be 1000 miles away I'll always and I mean always love you and I've been meaning to tell you...(he smiled) I think this is a coincidence because I didn't know how to tell you that....(he kept smiling...geez this dude is crazy)

Me: Dude tell me already (we both laughed)

Lu: well, I applied to study law in UCT in Cape town and I didn't want to leave you and it was breaking my heart to pieces with the thought of not being close to you

(I literally screamed in excitement and jumped on him, hugging him so tight, everyone was now staring at us like he just proposed or something)

Me: babe I'm so happy right now (I was crying tears of joy)

Lu: I'm happy too babe, and I love you
Tumisani Phakade

Me: I love you too

(we kissed passionately not caring who was watching and it felt like I was in heaven And only the two of us existed)

Our food came and we dug in smiling like two idiots. I silently thanked God for his glory and always being with me

every step of the way...maybe next year won't be so bad...hey!!

we finished eating then Lu paid and we drove to the hospital to visit gogo and she was happy to see us, I went to her and hugged her so tight

Me: hello gogo, this is Luyanda, Lu this is gogo

Lu: I see where you get your beauty from Tumsa, even in a hospital bed you still look so beautiful gogo (we all laughed)

Gogo: oh thank you mtanam (she said smiling)

Me: how are you gogo??

Gogo: I'm a bit fine today, and you?

Me: I'm fine, did Dumi come here today??

Gogo: yes mtanam, he comes here every morning

Me: OK gogo, I missed you so much, I couldn't wait to see you today (I said kissing her cheek)

gogo: I missed you too mtanam, so Luyanda are you taking care of my baby??

Lu: yes gogo I am don't worry, she's in save hands.

Gogo: promise me you won't break her heart?

Lu: I promise gogo I won't hurt her (he took gogo's hands and kissed them....

mxm such a charmer)

gogo: haaii Tumisani where did you find this charmer, they're so rare in this place (we all laughed)

We talked till it was late and we said our goodbyes and headed home, we got to my place and he parked the car and looked at me

Lu: babe, I had a great day and I wish you were coming home with me but we have school tomorrow and we gotta study

me: yes my love, we gotta study cuz we'll be writing tests and stuff soon..

Lu: yup (he pulled me and kissed me

with pleasure and it lasted forever until I felt his hands under my shirt and I opened my eyes and saw Dumitru approaching the gate, then I pulled out of the kiss)

Me: babe...

Lu: sorry I got carried away...

Me: its OK, Dumitru was coming to the gate that's why I stopped (I half lied because I could see he wanted to take this further and I'm not ready)

Lu: oh OK so I'll pick you up tomorrow right?? (he smiled)

Me: yes tomorrow (he pecked my lips and I left the car and he drove off).

I got in the house and found Dumi channeling through the channels...

Me: good evening (I smiled)

Dumi: (he smiled naughtily) you're one hell of a kisser, damn you guys looked so good... (he laughed)

Me: damn you...I thought you didn't see

Dumi: nah, I saw everything!! (we both laughed)

Me: I'm starving, did you cook??

Dumi: nah I bought take aways, its in the kitchen, go fetch it and come sit with me...

I fetch the take aways and sat with him

and we ate and talked...

Dumi: why don't you invite your boyfriend for lunch this Saturday, we could chill together

Me: hmm that would be nice but I wanna spend Saturday with gogo, she's always lonely in that place, speaking about gogo, Lu and I went to her today and she liked him...

Dumi: that's great, she needs our support right now

me: yup we gotta be strong and learn to move on after her death..

Dumi: that's gogo's princess (he said kissing me)

Me: (I giggled) so any new girlfriend??

Dumi: well, not yet but I'm smashing some pussy's so I'm cool

Me: aaaggh Dumisani mahn, like seriously get done with your fuck boy days already, its not healthy and I hope you use a condom, sis Mahn mxm

Dumi: but tebogo doesn't wanna give me a chance and its only her that I want..

Me: geez bro, I don't know what to do hey!!

Dumi: well then let me smash some pussy's maybe that will help...

Me: mxm you disgust me, do you know that?? (he laughed)

Dumi: that's why you love me.

Me: mxm I'm gonna go change and study so I'll see you tomorrow (I kissed his cheek)

Dumi: goodnight princess

Me: night bro

I went to my room, got dressed in my PJ's and started studying then got a called from Lindiwe and we talked for a while then I went to sleep.....

The next day in the afternoon.....

Yemi's POV

I'm going to Mangi's place so he picked me up after school and we went to his

house and there was no one there...

Mangi: babe are you hungry??

Me: yes babe

Mangi: can I order pizza

Me: yes plz

we sat down and kissed the whole time till we heard the door bell ring and he went to open and came back with pizza and sat down and I sat on his lap while eating. we finished up and went to his room and things got heated up, he took off my shirt and skirt and took off his jeans and he took his top off, his hands travelled everywhere on my body and landed on my bra, he unclipped it and

took it off, and started playing with my boobs without breaking the kiss and then went down to my thighs, he pulled off my panty and started playing with my clit and I moaned in pleasure and the rest is history.....after the steamy session we fell asleep in each others arms. when I woke up the time was 18:38 and I should be on my way home, Mangi was still sleeping so I got out of the bed and put on my clothes then woke him up...

Me: my love wake up, I gotta go home, yanda is probably boiling with anger.

Mangi: OK baby

He woke up, got dressed and took me home. when I got there Lu was cooking and he looked pissed.

Me: before you starting shouting, just let me apologize...I'm sorry I lost track of time and I'll make it up to you...

Lu: you better because I'm really exhausted and then I get home and you weren't here and then I have to cook.

Me: sorry big bro (I said giggling) I'm going to take a shower and I'll be back in an hour, is that OK??

Lu: sure whatever

I went to my room and took a hell of a shower and made a few calls and did

my homework then went downstairs and found Lu dishing up..

Lu: perfect timing..

me: hmmm I know, it smells marvellous in here

Lu: what can I say, I learnt from the best (I giggled)

Me: yep, I know, I know

Lu: you're so full of yourself silly, I meant I learnt from mom

Me: agghh you mean!!

We sat down and ate dinner, left mom and dads food in the microwave then went to sleep cuz I was really tired and

Mangi fucked me good so that's why I'm exhausted

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO.....LIKE,
COMMENT AND SHARE

#loveyou

[06/15, 17:13] Snr: INSERT 9

- .
- .
- .

Luyanda's POV

I am so happy that Tumsa will be moving to Cape town because I didn't

know how to tell her that I am moving there next year and I knew it would've broken her heart and I don't like seeing my baby sad but what happened in her family is really heart breaking and she's so strong to accept the fact that her mom is in prison for killing both her real father and her step father but I'll do all I can withing my power to make sure she's always happy and never sheds a tear. I'm thinking of starting fresh when I get to Cape town and leave this gangster life because I want to focus on my future and leave all the bad things I did behind me and concentrate on my education and the love of my life...

So it's Friday today and school ended early, while we were on our way to her place, she got a call....

Tumi: hello Dumi what's up??

Dumi: Tumi, I need you to come to the hospital immediately (he sounded traumatized)

Tumi: Dumi, what happened, what happened to gogo??

Dumi: don't worry just come (he hanged up)

Tumi: Lu plz take me to the hospital, something's not right (she looked worried)

I took a U-turn straight to the hospital

driving as fast as possible...

.

Tumi's POV

As soon as we got to the hospital I ran out of the car to gogo's hospital bed and I saw Dumi sitting next to her and she looked really really weak...

me: gogo! (I ran to her and hugged her)

Gogo: oh Thank you lord, now I can go in peace.

Me: gogo what are you saying, you're not going anywhere, plz don't talk like that (a tear escaped my eye and landed on my cheek)

She took my hand and Dumi's hands and put it together and kissed them)

Gogo: I love you my children (tears fell on her cheeks and she slowly closed her eyes and just like that Gogo was gone)

I cried and cried holding Gogo's hand like my life depended on it, I cried for the woman that raised me up, the woman who taught me love, the woman that gave me love, happiness and comfort. I cried my lungs out and so did Dumisani, we both sat there on the bed helplessly and cried pouring our hearts out holding both her hands, the hands that raised me and nurtured me, I've lost my mother...

The nurses came and took us out and tried to comfort us but we just cried and cried. Luyanda was there too holding me tight without saying a thing and I could see the hurt in his eyes. They tried to take Gogo's body away but I kept pulling the white covers off and longed for her touch again, I longed for her beautiful hands to hold me once again, I longed for her...I cried my lungs out and couldn't stop the tears from coming then Lindiwe and Tebogo came to comfort us...

I sat down on the floor helplessly sobbing like a new born baby...

Lindiwe knelt down and held me...

Me: Lindiwe tell them to bring gogo back,
tell them she's still breathing (I cried)

Lindiwe: shhshhh its OK

Me: no, no, its not okay (I got up and
wiped my tears and went to Dumisani
who was on the floor too)

Me: Dumisani plz tell them to bring gogo
back plz (tears fell like the rain)

He pulled me into his arms and I sobbed
on his chest and sobbed and sobbed.....

.

.

.

.

.

Two weeks has passed since gogo passed away and its been the worst two weeks of my life, all I do is cry and cry and cry. We gave gogo a grand funeral and Mrs Matthews came to the funeral and organised everything with Dumisani, since gogo passed she's been calling us everyday to make sure we are OK and send us money every week. I still remember the day gogo died like it just happened yesterday, I still remember I would wake up in the middle of the night and call gogo's name like she was still here and I would cry myself to sleep and refuse to eat anything until I see gogo, it

was hard for me to accept my mother was gone, my role model was no more...but today I have finally accepted the fact that gogo is gone and am much stringer then I've ever been before. I have a feeling Mrs Matthews will be a good person to us. when she came to gogo's funeral she was so loving and caring, she shed a lot of tears with us and I felt that gogo made a difference in a lot of peoples lifes. Mrs Matthews stayed with us for three days after the funeral to comfort us but then she had to leave because of work. Dumi and I have been taking care of each other and Lindiwe and tebogo were coming

everyday to check up on us and tebogo and Dumi have become closer than before. As for Luyanda, he's been the best boyfriend ever, always called to check up on me and visited everyday too and Yemi included, they were very helpful and loving. I tried to catch up with my school work as much as possible and I've been studying hard too. Its June and we are busy with exams and I only have two more papers to write then I'll be done and dusted..

I woke up and it was raining hard outside and I love the rain so it made me comfortable. I did my daily routine and got dressed then went to make

breakfast, Dumi walked in the kitchen shirtless and Damn my brother is hot...all these abs and muscles....mmmm

Dumi: good morning, stop staring at me

Me: (I giggled) morning bro

Dumi: its pouring outside geez!! (he looked out the window drinking coffee) oh there's Lu

me:(I looked out and Lu beeped) OK see you later (I said kissing his cheek and took my bad)

Dumi: be careful

me: I will (I smiled and walked out in the rain and got to Lu's car)

me: morning baby

Lu: morning my love...you look happy today)

me: its a new day, the rain is pouring and I love the rain

Lu: hmmm I see, after school we going to my place right??

me: sure babe

we drove to school and on the day proceeded....

.

Dumi's POV

Its been two weeks since gogo passed away and I really miss her so much.

when I look back to all the years we've spent together it brings me great joy to call her my grandmother and the woman that raised me up , I hope she rests in peace. It breaks me to think that she won't see Tumisani's success but I know wherever she is she's looking down at us smiling and she's protecting us. As for my mother I've gather information about her and I found out she's in one of the prisons in Cape town . I will make sure I visit her as soon as I arrive in Cape town. I want to see if she is suffering and I hope she is, I bet she even forgot how her own son looks or even her daughter but I will make sure

she doesn't come into our life's again, I know Tumisani will want to get to know her but I'm sorry I'll have to be selfish and rob her of that right because this woman we call " mother" is nothing but pure evil and selfish....

I went back to my room and called tebogo, well things have been going great between us, I think she's slowly but surely falling for me...

< call convo >

Tebogo: hello?

me: morning babe, how are you?

Tebogo: oh Dummi, I'm good and you??

me: I'm not feeling well, I'm sick (I lied

because I knew then she'll get worried and come straight away)

Tebogo: oh my goodness, I'm coming right now (she hang up)

Just perfect hey....I layed there on my bed shirtless and 15 minutes later

Tebogo barged in looking gorgeous as always yet worried, she came in and closed the door...

Tebogo: are you OK?? (she puts her hand on my head and feels my temperature)

I take it away and kiss it.

me: I'm fine now that you're with me (I smiled)

Tebogo: so you weren't sick??

me: I was babe (she chuckled)

Tebogo: yeah right! you crazy you know that?? I was so worried, I thought you had a fever or something, I was driving in the rain, you idiot (she hit me with a pillow)

me: sorry my love, come here (I opened my arms and she smiles)

Tebogo: you know I have a boyfriend right? (her eyes landed on my six pack and she shyly looks away, I sigh)

me: really tebogo? a hug won't kill. (she came down and hug me, damn I was longing for this)

I gently held her chin and made her look up at me and my eyes landed on her lips, pink and soft. I couldn't help it, I kissed her beautiful lips and she kissed me back and that lasted for about five whole minutes then she pulled out (I chuckled)

me: babe I know you want this as much as I do.

Tebogo: this is not right Dumisani. (I sat up straight and held her hands)

Me: tobogo I love you, I really do and I would do anything just to be with you and I think you feel the same way but your so called boyfriend is in the way,

tell me you don't feel the same way and
I'll leave you and never bother you again
(I looked her straight into the eyes and
she pulled her hands away)

Tebogo: plz don't do this Dumisani plz
me: tell me you don't love me and I'll
leave you (I pulled her hands back into
mine)

she hesitated for a few minutes then...

Tebogo: I love you too but look at me
Dumisani, I'm damaged goods, I'm not
the girl for you, I'm a bitch Dumi...

me: don't ever say such things about
yourself in my presence ever again, I
love you for you, I don't care what they

say, I care about you and my love for you.

(18 SN)

I pull her into my arms and kiss her again but this time , passionately.

she circulates her hands around my neck and returns the kiss and my hands start traveling everywhere, I don't know what came over me but it just found its way to her breast and squeezed them and she moans in my mouth without breaking the kiss, the kiss starts tensing up and her hands go down to my packs since I was shirtless and she allows me to take her top off and her jeans included. she pulls out of the kiss and

looks at me and smiles and I smile back, she gets on the bed and I come on top of her and rip her panties off and unclip her bra and my man down there is ready to play but just not yet boy. I bring my lips back to hers and we kiss while my finger plays with her nunu down there, she moans in pleasure and my other hand finds its way to her left breast and I gently squeeze it and break out from the kiss and suck her breast while my fingers are doing wonders down there, her moans are driving me nuts...she finally comes and I pull my finger out and look at her...

me: ready for round two?? (I smile, she

nods unable to speak)

I get on top of her and pull down my boxer shorts and look at her...

Tebogo: no, I'm not doing this, you too big Dumisani

me: no babe, you can't do that to me

I kiss her to distract her a bit and she falls for it and I slowly enter my man and she gasps, I continue playing with her lips sucking them and she moans and moans and moans....

Tebogo: aaahhh ahhh Dumisani aaaah, I think I'm coming...

me: me too babe, aaaahhh

she came and so did i, we both froze breathlessly and I got up and went to fetch a towel then cleaned the both of us up and layed next to her and pulled her to my chest....

me: that was great...

Tebogo: it was wonderful

me: I love you

Tebogo: I love you too

we layed in that position till we both fell asleep.....

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO.....LIKE,
COMMENT AND SHARE

#loveyou I think its time y'all
fasten up your seat belt because drama
is knocking up on my door.

[06/15, 17:14] Snr: INSERT 10

- .
- .
- .
- .

Lindiwe's POV

well things have been great so far and
Tumi is finally accepting that gogo is no
more. Things with Jason have been
great, he's been the perfect gentleman

and always buying me gifts and taking me out and stuff, so it is after school, Jay and I are going to his place...we met at the gate and got into his car, well yeah he has a car and his parents are stinking rich so we drove to his place.

(In the car)

Jay: babe, how are you?

Me: I'm OK, how's the exams so far??

Jay: its good, my last paper is tomorrow

me: mine too, can't wait already

Jay: yup me too..

we got to his house and gosh this is a dream come true....a beautiful house

indeed, we went inside and there was no one there...

me: where is everybody??

Jay: my brothers are probably at work and my sister is probably on her way, my mom is at work and my dad is on a business trip.

Me: oh OK, you have a beautiful house babe

Jay: thanks my love, I'm sure you're hungry, take a seat and I'll be back, let me go fix something to eat, I'll be back.

Me: OK babe

He goes to the kitchen and later comes back with a plate of food then starts

feeding me (I sigh)

Me: you know I have hands right?

Jay: let me take care of my queen

please, may i?? (I smile and nod, he continues)

we are disturbed by Amanda bursting into the house with earphones on.....wow...just...wow

(she removes them and looks at me disgustedly then looks at Jason)

Jay: oh you're home...(he says irritated while chewing)

Amanda: what is she doing here??

Jay: for your information her name is

Lindiwe and she is my girlfriend..

Amanda: girlfriend?? oh please!! what happened with you and Mickah?? (who the hell is "Mickah" and what in Gods name is Amanda doing here)

Jay: does that concern you? (he looks at her)

Amanda: anyway, where is uncle martin and aunt Sindiswa?? (she said totally ignoring me)

Jay: Dad's on a business trip and mom is not home yet.

Amanda: oh (with that said she walks up the stairs and disappears)

Me: am I missing something here??

Jay: babe that's Amanda, my adopted sister....

Me: what?? she's adopted??

Jay: yeah, is there a problem??

Me: no, no problem (I smiled and he continued feeding me)

Jay: she's a spoilt brat and not really an angel. my parents adopted her when she was 11 and since she's the only girl in the family you could imagine how much attention she gets.

Me: oh OK, does everyone know you have an adopted sister, I mean as in friends and stuff??

Jay: yeah my friends know and since

Amanda has a huge ass mouth the whole of this city probably knows about it..

me: so I guess I was the only one who didn't know?

Jay: I didn't find the need to tell you since I thought you knew cuz most people know about it..

Me: oh OK, thanks for the food, its delicious

Jay: pleasure my love (he kissed me deeply, then a handsome dude burst into the house and Jason pulls out from the kiss)

The dude: good afternoon (goodness,

lord have mercy, he's HOT, I'm guessing this is Jay's older brother)

Jay: hey bro, babe this is my brother Brian, Brian my girlfriend Lindiwe

Brian: its nice to meet you (he smiled and extended his hand for me to shake, and I did)

Me: nice to meet you too (Jesu!! this guy is on another level!! he's hot like flames geez!! my eyes couldn't get off his, they're so beautiful and he kept staring at me too, for a second I was lost.....then I felt someone nudge me...)

Jay: babe, you OK??

Me: hmmm uhm sorry yes I'm fine (I

smile)

God, what is wrong with me, this better stop, I can't fall for Jason's brother this is madness, I think I'm going crazy. He looks really young, he couldn't be more than 23...yeah 23 probably, gosh those lips look so yummyno Lindiwe stop it, stop your madness.....

Me: Jay, I think I should get going its getting late

Jay: OK my love , let's go, bro I'll be back..

Brian: OK sharp, bye Lindiwe (he smiles, my feet lose control and its wobbly, I blush)

Me: uhm bye b b brian (I can't even

speak properly, the things he's doing to me!!)

We left.....

.

Brian's POV

Okay!! that was weird...

Hi, my name is Brian, Jason's elder brother, I'm 22, we have an elder brother who goes by the name of Themba, he's 25. I am still a student, currently studying Business Management because I want to take over my fathers companies when he retires. I have a girlfriend, her name is Tebogo and we haven't been together for that long,

probably just two months I think, but she's not really my type and that interesting but I mean the sex is good and the chick is beautiful but not that interesting in personality, to me she's more like a fuck buddy. I don't know much about her but anyway when I got home Jason's chick caught my eye, she's beautiful on another level and looks really intelligent, curves in all the right places, Goodness lord, she's really beautiful and I totally got lost in her eyes...I hope I'm not falling for her...Jesu!!

I was lost in thought when my eyes landed on the table and there sat

Jason's phone....couldn't this get any better...I took the phone and to my surprise there was no password...so I went in his contacts and typical Jason, he could've at least saved her as " babe" but instead it simply states " Lindiwe", I quickly saved her number onto my phone and placed it back where I found it then Amanda came down wearing shorts and a vest..

Amanda: Hey Brian, you early for a change...

Me: hey sister, how's you??

Amanda: Good, good, I heard uncle Martin is on a business trip?

me: yeah

Amanda: and he didn't bother to tell me..

me: I'm sure it was urgent

Amanda: yeah right!!

me: anyway...I'm going to my room,
catch you later...

Amanda: sure

I went up to my room and took a cold
shower then called Tebogo....

.

Tumi's POV

I had a great day, well apart from writing
an exam, Lu took me out for ice cream
and it was fun...

I got home and went straight to Dumi's room because I'm sure he didn't go out today because he doesn't go out when it's raining...

I went in without knocking and boom there he was with Tebogo in his arms and they were both naked....so dude doesn't play games hey....well I didn't see anything weird cuz they were under the blanket...

Me: oh fuck, sorry!! (I took a U-turn straight to my room and locked the door....eeewwee that was awkward)

I got dressed into a pair of jeans and a vest, went to the kitchen, took out meat

from the fridge and put it in water to unfrozen it and started chopping vegetables, then Tebogo came to the kitchen fully dressed this time..

Tebogo: may I help you with that? (she asked)

Me: sure (I smiled)

(I made space for her and she helped me chop the vegetables)

Tebogo: sorry for what you saw earlier, that was awkward...

Me: no its cool (I giggled....like hell it was awkward)

Dumi came to the kitchen when we started cooking...

Dumi: ladies, you guys look so cute (we laughed)

Me: hey bro

Dumi: hey princess

we cooked dinner then ate together and Dumi walked Tebogo home, I went to study for my last exam.....can't wait!!!

.

The next day was Friday, I woke up somehow happy and did my daily routine and got dressed then made breakfast, ate and was ready to go...

Me: Dumsa am going

Dumi: OK baby, take care of yourself (he

said kissing my cheek and giving me a R100 note)

Me: thanks bro.

I left the house and went to pick up Lindiwe and on we went on our way to school...

Lindiwe: chomma, you won't believe what I'm about to tell you!!

Me: tell me already Lindiwe mahn...

Lindi: so yesterday, I went to Jason's house and we chilled then all of a sudden Amanda barged in...

Me: Amanda??

Lindi: yes Tumsa, Amanda!!!

Me: what was she doing there?

Lindi: well, did you know that Amanda is Jason's adopted sister??

Me: What?? are you sure Lindiwe??

Lindi: 100% sure chomma, she was adopted when she was 11 and since Jays parents didn't have a daughter they've been spoiling her since then, and she gets all the attention, you know, Mommy's little princess and stuff..

Me: wow chomma, this is a surprise

Lindi: I know hey, I was as surprised as you are anyway then Jason's elder brother Brian came and yohhh

TUMISANI (she said that screaming)

that dude is goals, he's HOT chomma,
yoh...

Me: yoh haaiii Lindiwe, stop your
nonsense...

Lindi: you saying that because you
haven't seen him Tumsa, he's flames
girl...

Me: lol you nuts, he's way older than
you

Lindi: age is just a number Tumsa, he's
probably just 23..

Me: hmm Lindiwe yohh, I thought you
loved Jay.

Lindi: I do, Tumsa I do

me: then focus on him and stop drooling over other dudes...

Lindi: hmmm OK, Tumsa Tumsa (she joked nudging me, this friend of mine is crazy as fuck)

Me: Haaii suka mahn Lindiwe, you fucked up (we both laughed)

Lindi: that's why you love me!! (she's loud this one haii)

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO.....LIKE,
COMMENT AND SHARE...

#loveyou

I might continue.....battery low

[06/15, 17:14] Snr: INSERT 11

- .
- .
- .

Tebogo's POV

Hello, Tebogo's in the house! I'm sure y'all known me already, I'm Lindiwe's elder sister, well its only the two of us. I'm 19 and I've already matriculated and I'm still thinking of what to be but for now let me just enjoy Daddy's money and enjoy it while it still lasts....well I have a boyfriend whose name is Brian and we met at some party and since then we've been dating but I don't feel

this dude, the sex is good but, love is not one of the aspects in this relationship but then...I became close with Dumisani during the time I was comforting him when his grandmother died...may her beautiful soul rest in peace ...I started having feelings for him and I fell for him but I don't want to mess the dude's life up like seriously, look at me! I love the dick like nobody's business and I'm a party animal, Dumi isn't innocent either but I don't think I deserve him or rather he doesn't deserve to be with someone like me, but then there's love and the heart wants what it wants. Brian called me yesterday when I was with Dumi and

I had to tell him I was busy because I don't know if being with Dumisani will hurt him at the end or me, or maybe I'll change into a better person once I'm with Dumi....just maybe...I was getting ready to meet up with Brian since he wants us to go his place....

I was wearing denim shorts with a white vest written on the front " I'm yours" tucked into my shorts with white sandals, I finished up and applied lip gloss then went to the kitchen grab an energy bar and took my car keys then drove off to Mac Donalds cuz that's where we meeting first...I got there and I spotted his car and went in, found him,

he already had the food...

Me: hey Brian (I smiled)

He stood up and tempted to kiss my lips but I turned and his lips landed on my cheek...

Brian: how are you?

Me: I'm good and yourself?

Brian: I'm cool...

Me: OK

we ate then went to our cars and he told me to drive behind him, I did till we got to his place and Lord have mercy!! Is this not heaven, I step out of my car and so did he.

Me: you have a wonderful house.

Brian: Thanks

we went inside and there was a pretty girl sitting in the lounge watching TV.

Brian: hey sis

Girl: hey B (she smiled)

Brian: Amanda, this is my girlfriend
Tebogo, Tebogo my sister Amanda.

Me: Nice to meet you Amanda (I smiled)

Amanda: the feeling is mutual

Brian: babe let's go to my room

we went to his room, I really don't feel

Brian anymore, I so badly wanna get rid
of him, all this is bloody pretence...

Brian: you look tensed

Me: no, I'm cool

Brian: something to drink?

(he had a fridge in his room, interesting much)

Me: juice is fine

(he poured a glass of juice and gave it to me

Me: thanks (I took a sip and he sat next to me on the bed)

Brian: Do you think this relationship is working? (like, fuck no its not)

Me: uhm, yes its working (I faked a smile)

He put my glass down and kissed me, I got horny and I returned the kiss, he unbutton my shorts and pulled it off, I unbutton his crisp white shirt and remove it, his abs are good but not better than Dumi's.....oh shit Dumisani, why am I comparing him to you, I can't get you out of my mind babe, Dumi's face popped in my mind and I pulled out...

Me: sorry I can't do this

I pulled my shorts back on and fixed myself up and took my bag, rushed down the stairs got in my car and drove off....

.

Tumi's POV

I'm so happy right now, I've written my last paper and it was good. I met up with Lindiwe by the school exit doors...

Lindiwe: baby girl finally the exams are over, this calls for a celebration!! (she says screaming)

Me: yeah you're right, we need to celebrate (then I felt someone's hands circulate around my waist, he kissed my neck, that sent shivers down my spine)

Lu: baby...

Me: my love (I said smiling)

Jason joined us and kissed Lindiwe right there on the spot, ncooh they look so cute...

Jay: guys I think we should celebrate

Me: you guys sound like you've written the last paper of the year...

Lindiwe: chomma don't spoil the feeling (we laughed, this girl hates school hey) how about we go to a club tonight??

Lu: great idea (he says holding me tight as if I'll disappear any second now)

Jay: yeah, we should definitely get wasted tonight

Lu: babe you coming right?? (they all looked at me, geez I really don't wanna

go, I've never been to a club before and I don't drink)

Lindiwe: Tumsa plz, I know for sure you can dance, you always hiding that talent, chomma plz come...

well, yeah....you heard it, I can dance, I used to dance for the school competitions and stuff but I stopped when I realized that my marks needed my attention and the last time I remember dancing was like two years ago plus it was a tough time for me and a lot was going on that time, the competitions helped because the winner would win lots of money plus free books and stuff, well I used to win quite a lot

and that helped pay for my school fees
sometimes because that time we were
really broke...

Lu: baby plz come (he says pleading)

Me: but I don't drink, I can't be sitting in
a room full of drinkers and I'm sitting
there drinking what??? water???

Lu: baby you don't have to drink alcohol,
you can drink juice or cool drink... plz my
love

Lindiwe: plzzz Tumsa

Me: OK, OK geez all these sad faces,
stop it (they laughed)

Jay: finally gosh took you some time to
say yes

Lu: I'm sure you'll own that dance floor tonight babe, because damn this ass can work...(we laughed)

Me: I probably can't even dance anymore, its been a long time since I've stopped.

Lindiwe: we'll find that out tonight..

We all got into Jays car and went to the mall, had lunch and joked around then the guys dropped us (Lindiwe and I) at Lindiwe's house....

Lindi: chomma I think you should call Dumsa and tell him you not coming home tonight cuz you going out with me.

Me: what if he says no Lindiwe, he'll

think I've started drinking..

Lindi: then don't tell him we going to a club, tell him we going out for dinner and you're sleeping over...

Me: what about my clothes??

Lindiwe: (she laughed) haaiii I bet you were gonna wear a long skirt with shirt, sister Mary (she laughed)

Me: voetsek mahn (I threw a pillow at her and we both laughed)

Lindi: I'll give you something sexy to wear babe you need to loosen up, now plz call him and don't you dare stutter Tumisani (haiii she knows me too well, when I want to ask my brother

something naughty I always stutter)

Me: OK! don't bite my head off (I said pulling my phone out of my pocket and dialing Dumi's number)

< call convo >

Dumi: baby sis

Me: hey bro how are you?? (I say nervously)

Dumi: I'm fine, what do you want Tumisani?? (damn!! he already knows, I look at Lindiwe and she gives me a death stare...mxm)

Me: I'm just checking up on my big bro..

Dumi: yeah right...spill I'm listening

Me: plz don't get pissed and plz don't refuse

Dumi: Tumisani talk Mahn

Me: OK, uhm, bro Lindiwe and I are going out for dinner and I'm sleeping over by her house..(he keeps quite)

Dumsa..

Dumi: Do you need cash??

Me: no no, I just need permission..

Dumi: so you not coming home?

Me: no

Dumi: this house is gonna be so fucking boring but anyway...you may go

Me: (Lindiwe screamed) aaah really??

Dumi: yes but plz take care of yourself
OK?

Me: yes bro don't worry, thank you (I
smiled)

Dumi: OK princes have fun, I love you

Me: Thanks bro, I love you too (I hanged
up and sighed)

Lindi: see!! was that so hard??

Me: Pheew I almost wet myself (we
laughed)

Lindi: chicken

Me: fuck you (she laughed even
harder...mxm)

.

Well time was flying so fast, it was already 17:30 so we took a shower together then dried ourselves and wore marching bra and panties then started looking for outfits to wear....

Lindiwe wore white jean shorts with a blue sports bra and all stars (the white one) she did her make up and she was slaying from top to bottom...her huge ass hugging those shorts....my bestie is hot

She then opened her closet and said.....

Lindiwe: chomma this is yours....

it was a mini skirt white in color it hugs your body and shows your assets with a

blue crop top with a heart shape by the cleavage and to top it up, a black chain choker....you could swear I'm going out for prostitution....

Lindiwe: we matching in color baby girl (I couldn't speak, my mouth was wide open)

Me: am I going to be a prostitute or what??

Lindiwe: aggh Tumisani Phakade you will wear this outfit whether you like it or not (she says that through gritted teeth, she looks irritated, I wonder where I found this mad child)

Me: but...

Lindiwe: no buts Tumisani, now put it on...(mxm traitor)

Me: mxm OK...

Lindiwe: (she smiles) love you too
(mxm, I sulk)

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO.....LIKE,
COMMENT AND SHARE

#loveyou

[06/15, 18:20] Snr: INSERT 12

.

.

.

Tumi's POV

I was having a good time till Lu started acting crazy and that made me uncomfortable. I wonder where Lindiwe is, how could she leave me here all by myself, I was in the restroom fixing myself up even tho I wanted to go home so badly, I took my phone out and called Lindiwe, it rang like five times then she answered....

Lindiwe: hello?

Me: Lindiwe where the hell are you? (I was close to tears, this place doesn't feel safe anymore)

Lindiwe: oh my gosh Tumisani, I'm so

sorry just give me...aaaaahha (she was moaning) uhmm 30 minutes...aaahh

Me: what?? Lindiwe tell me where are you and what are you doing??

Lindiwe: (she kept moaning) aaaah baby (she hanged up)

fuck, I'm defeated, what is wrong with everyone, I wonder where is Jay cuz I don't think he's with Lindiwe. God plz forgive me for coming to this place, plz get me out of here plzzz lord. I fought back tears and cleaned myself up, took a deep breath then went out of the restroom. The pumping music made its way to my ears again, I squeezed my

tiny self through the big crowd and found myself by our table but to my surprise there was no one there.....wow.....just fucking wow.....this is like a nightmare, so they all disappeared leaving me here all alone, I'm going to the car and I don't care if its locked, I'd rather be outside breathing oxygen instead of being in here breathing alcohol....

Once again I squeezed myself through the crowd and went out to the parking lot, there was a few people smoking and drinking, I tried to be confident and I walked out to Lu's car and yeah the car was locked so I just stood there hoping

no one sees me until.....

Voice: you alright??? (wait that sounds familiar and I hate that voice, the person came closer. God plz help me.....)

Right there before my very own eyes stood Bra Skopp and not too far from him stood two other guys with there backs turned to us.....I looked left, right and center, but unfortunately there was no escape route. I swallowed hard and took a deep breath...

Me: yes I'm fine, I'll be on my way (I tempted to leave but he stretch out his hand and stopped me)

Bra Skopp: not so fast beautiful, where

are you rushing to?

(he came so close to me that I could smell his alcoholic breath, a tear escaped my eye)

Dumi where are you, I'm in desperate need of you (I silently prayed)

Me: plz let me go (I begged)

Bra Skopp: Relax, the Phakade princess is scared, ncoooh how cute (he caressed my cheek and I flinched)
maybe we should go have a little fun, don't you think ??(I tempted to run but I was locked between his strong arms, I tried to scream but he smashed his lips forcibly onto mine and I pull my face

away)

All of a sudden a white cloth was forcibly put into my mouth and boom***** lights out.....

.

Dumi's POV

I was tossing and turning all night, something wasn't Right, I felt like something bad is happening or its already happened. I woke up around 02:30 it was still very dark, I went to the kitchen and drank some water, my heart was beating really fast but I am not sick, what is happening to me?? what if....No Tumisani.....what if something

happened to her.... I rushed back to my room, pick up my phone and called Tumi but it went straight to voice mail, I called again but dololo...voice mail again...I called Lindiwe and same thing happens...oh maybe they are sleeping, but why are both their phones switched off...I dialed Tebogo's number and she picked up on the third ring...

Tebogo: hmhhh

Me: Tebogo, its me Dumisani, sorry for waking you up.

Tebogo: no its cool, what's up??

Me: uhm is Tumisani OK?? I mean is she doing fine??

Tebogo: uhm she's not with me, she's with Lindiwe

Me: oh can you perhaps give her the phone, I want to talk to her..

Tebogo: no, I mean she's not here at my place, she's gone to the club with Lindiwe...

Me: club!!! (I said literally screaming)

Tebogo: yes club, why?? is something wrong??

Me: Tebogo something's not right, she didn't tell me she's going to a club, they said they going out for dinner but they were supposed to be home long time ago..

Tebogo: what?? (she was worried now)

Me: Tebogo I have a feeling that something's not right, I feel like she's in danger.

Tebogo: OK calm down, I'm coming to get you (then I heard some rustling sounds and she hanged up)

Oh my God Tumisani what have you got yourself into, I'm so worried and freaked right now, I feel like she's into big trouble right now, I can't believe Tumisani lied to me, oh my fuck..I hope she wasn't drinking, how could she do this to me knowing very well that I wouldn't allow her to go to a club she had to lie. No that

wasn't my sister, she would never lie to me about a thing like thisI heard a car hoot and I jumped and literally ran to the door. well I'm already dressed into jeans....

Me: do you know which club they went to??

Tebogo: Yeah, I think we should call Jason (she handed me her phone and I looked up for the number, called it and put it on loud speaker since she's driving.....)

Jason: Hello!!! (there was noise in the back ground)

Tebogo: Jason, Hi, are you with Lindiwe??

Jason: no, I can't find any of them for the past two hours, I've been looking for them.

Me: have you seen Tumisani or Luyanda??

Jason: they were all here, but then they all disappeared and I don't think they together but the car is here...

Tebogo: OK, plz come outside, we are here... (she parked the car and we both ran out of the car to where Luganda's car was parked and found Jason)

Tebogo: so have you found them yet??

Jason: no not yet

Me: oh my fuck, so didn't you know that

they lied to me and said they going to dinner?? (I was shouting now cuz I'm so pissed right now)

Tebogo: Dumi relax, they probably didn't tell him either

Jason: I thought she was allowed to come, they didn't say anything about lying.... (then his phone rang)

Jason: Lindiwe where the fuck are you!!??? (he shouted)

.....

Jason: OK, come by the car..

Me: where is tumisani???

Jason: I don't know mahn

(Lindiwe came to the car)

Lindiwe: Tebogo! Dumisani! what uhm
are you guys doing here???

Me: Lindiwe so you guys lied to me, is
this the damn dinner you were talking
about??? mxm fuck, I should've known
(she keeps quite and look down) where
the fuck is my sister!!?? (I roar)

Lindiwe: i, I I, I don't know, I (she started
crying , her sister takes her into her
arms and she sobs)

Lindiwe: (she stopped and looked down)
wait, that's my necklace (she picks it up)
Tumi was wearing this, she was here...

Tebogo: Lindiwe are you sure???

Lindiwe: yes Tebogo, she was wearing this tonight, its even broken...

Me: no, no, this can't be!!! they kidnapped her, no, no (I was pacing up and down worriedly)

Tebogo: Dumisani that can't be, we don't know for sure.

Dumi: they kidnapped her Tebogo, why is the necklace broken, they probably grabbed her and she fought back and her necklace broke, fuck no!!!

(Luyanda came)

Me: dude where is my sister?? (I said roaring)

Luyanda: what?? I thought she was in

the restroom, that's where she said she went to..

Me: but here is the necklace she was wearing

Luyanda: what??

Lindiwe: she was kidnapped Luyanda, they kidnapped her (she cried)

I looked at Luyanda and he looked at me...

Luyanda: Tebogo, I need you to take Lindiwe and Jason home, we'll see you guys tomorrow.

Tebogo: where are you guys going its late..

Me: don't worry about us, you guys go home safely plz

Tebogo: OK (she said then kissed my cheek and they all went to Tebogo's car. Luyanda and I hopped into his car and drove off)

Luyanda: I'm calling the gents (he took his phone out and called Bino and Tino while we driving to the crib)

Luyanda: dude where are you guys??

Bino: home brah

Luyanda: drop whatever you're doing and meet me at the crib in 15 mins..(he hanged up)

.

Luyanda's POV

Mahn, I feel so guilty right now, I'm such an idiot. how could I be SK stupid, if only I hadn't let my dick take control of my emotions than this wouldn't have happened. she probably came back from the restroom and didn't find me at the table so she decided to go outside since there was no one that she knew in there, Gosh I'm such a fool...while I was busy fucking another chick, the love of my life was in danger. Gosh Yanda you so dumb. she's gone through a lot already now this, I have no idea who could've kidnapped her because she has no enemies what so ever...

we got to the crib and the gents were there.

Bino: Dude what happened??

Dumi: Dude someone kidnapped my sister

Tino: what?? you mean boss lady?? (I looked at him warning him not to start his shit right now)

Me: yes damn it, my girlfriend!!

Tino: OK give her number (he says taking out his laptop and I look at him weirdly) Relax, I'm not gonna ask her out, I'm tracking down her location. (I gave her number to him and he started typing)

Bino: what did you find mfethwu??

Tino: uhm, Yanda I think we should call the big boss himself dude, this guy is not easy to fight, he's the snake himself...

Me: what do you mean??

Tino: write this down quickly.....Address.....number...(I wrote whatever he just said)

Dumi: wait, that's Bra Skopp, oh shit...

Tino: you know him???

Yanda: fuck no!! what does he want with her, that's my Fathers biggest enemy, my dad will kill me mahn

Dumi: fuck dude my sister is in danger, we've got to find her gents plzz mahn

Bino: OK gents can we relax plz, we need to find a solution and fast before he does anything to her..

Tino: dude we can't do this alone, we have to call Monster (my dad) and no one should contact Bra Skopp what so ever, understood?? (he says looking at us)

Us: OK

Me: we need to be aware of our surroundings from now, he's probably planning his next move, so we need our weapons on us at all times...

Bino: sure boy

Tino: oh , keep that address and

information I just gave you, its very useful.

Me: OK gents, I'll call monster tomorrow, let's pray he gets his ass down here because he's doing business in Mexico, he'll be pissed when he hears I'm messing with Skopp, for now let's leave....

(we all got in the cars we came with, two by two, and I dropped Dumi off, I feel really guilty he looks tensed. I know he's really hurt, I mean if Yemi was kidnapped I would go crazy too but I hope that Bustard doesn't do anything to my woman yohh!!!)

so yeah you've already heard, my father is a gangster too (gang leader) like father like son huh, he's very dangerous. the heartless and cruel man I've ever known, can kill without even thinking twice.....

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO.....LIKE,
SHARE AND COMMENT

Guys feel free to advertise your pages and other peoples pages. Thanks to those who like and comment, I really appreciate it

#loveyou

Admin

[06/15, 18:20] Snr: INSERT 13

- .
- .
- .

Tumi's POV

My head is pounding with a headache, my heart is beating so fast which tightens my chest and makes it hard to breath. My eyes want to open but it fears of what its about to see. I slowly open my eyes and the light hits me and I shut it back again, OK tumisani, its now or never, I tell myself. I quickly open my eyes forcing it not to close again, I am lying on a white bed with pink pillows

and the sun is shining so bright outside.
I hold my head and I get dizzy
immediately, I force myself to wake up
and sit up straight. I am still in the same
outfit from yesterday but my necklace is
gone, I rush to the door and turn the lock
but dololo, its locked, I walk to the
window and pull the curtains apart,
damn it!! the window has frames but
light can still pass through. I slowly
return to the bed hopeless and
disappointed. Gogo's voice rang in my
head, " whatever situation you find
yourself in, always remember the God
we pray to is a living God". I kneel down
on my knees and prayed...I prayed than

sat back on the bed hoping someone would come and save me but then a man dressed in all black walked in with his face covered with a face mask, he had a plate of food in his hands...

Man: eat your food! (he commanded, wait, wait, that sounds familiar, I've heard that voice somewhere but my head is so painful that I don't remember)

Me: how do I know its not poisoned?? (I asked, he chuckled)

Man: if we wanted to kill you, we would've done that long time ago, but if you insist...(he took a piece of the food and ate it) happy now your Majesty??

(he handed me the plate and my stomach betrayed me, it growled)

Man: now eat.

(without discussion, I slowly ate the food and finished up then gave him back the plate)

Man: follow me, don't even think of escaping because my princess there is no way you can escape here... (I followed him downstairs without saying a word and we found the Devil himself smoking whatever it was he was smoking downstairs, this house is not a house, its a mansion, very big yet nice)

Bra Skopp: oh beautiful, Tumisani

Phakade, good morning to you beautiful..
(I kept quiet and blankly looked at him)

Bra Skopp: How did you sleep baby??
(silent) talk to me mahn!! (he said shouting)

Me: (I jumped) I'm fine

Bra Skopp: good, now take this clothes and put it on (he says giving me the clothes in a small bag)

I took it and turned to walk to the room but he stopped me...

Bra Skopp: where are you going, get dressed right here, I want to see how beautiful you really are (my eyes widen and a tear falls down my cheek)

Man: uhm sir plz let her change in her room. (he tells Bra Skopp then he looks at me and nod for me to go)

I walk up to the room and I can feel there eyes piercing right through my back, I quickly get in the room and close the door. I'm relieved when I see the clothes, its a pair of light blue jeans with a grey vest. I put it on and replace my clothes in the bag then walk back down stairs)

Bra Skopp: finally

(the man takes his mask off and I want to scream when I see who it is)

Me: Siphon!! (I shout)

Sipho: hello Tumisani (he smiles)

Bra Skopp: Tumisani, this is my son,
Sipho

Me: what??

Bra Skopp: and you guys are getting
married in two days time, then you are
flying to Paris. (tears escape my eyes
once again and fell down my cheeks)

Me: no, no, you can't do that plz why
me?? plz don't do this plz (I went down
on my knees and pleaded)

Bra Skopp: your begging won't make a
difference

Me: how can you be so cruel, how dare
you decide what I will and will not do. I

will not marry him, over my dead body.
(I get up and wipe away my tears then
fold my hands on my chest)

Bra Skopp: the decision is made, I told
your brother not to mess with me but he
never listened, I told him if he didn't pay
back my money I would do something to
his family but he is so stubborn so now
you will pay the price!! (I cried even
harder)

Bra Skopp: now wipe your stupid tears
and sit down on the couch, Siphos sit
next to her (he commanded) you will
bare me beautiful children and they will
take over my business since my son is a
coward (he spat out)

I looked at Siphon and I could see the hatred in his eyes for his father. So he's afraid of his father, he isn't doing this for his own good, he's doing this to please his pathetic crooked old father. I somehow have faith that Dumisani will get me out of this hell hole, he won't rest till he finds me. Yes, that's how much faith I have in my brother, my source of strength. No Dumisani will rescue me, he'll find me...Clearly this man is not right in the head...he all of a sudden starts singing and smoking, he looks so old and disgusting, anger fills up in my veins, I want to rip his eyes out of his sockets, I look at him then back at Siphon,

he is staring at the floor and looks scared as if his father will say something crazy any minute now. Tears keep flooding my cheeks, imy trying to be strong but I am defeated.

A young lady around the age of 26 walks in dressed in uniform...

Lady: sir your appointment starts in 20 mins, your driver is here to pick you up.

Bra Skopp: I'm coming Brandella (he gets up) keep an eye on her son and man up for once damn it!! (he leaves and I feel a little bit relieved).

maybe I can get Sipho to let me go, I just need to find his weak point cuz clearly

he's a coward, I can't get married to him, even the thought of it makes me sick to the core...

Me: Siphos (he looks at me)

Siphos: yes (he tries to toughen up and look strong but he looks stupid and I want to laugh but I pull myself together)

Me: plz don't do this to me, plz I know you don't want this as much as I don't want this.

Siphos: I want this, from the first day my father told me about you, I've been secretly stalking you and I fell in love with you, now that I finally have you, you want me to let you go, never!!

(ok, wow, let's get comfortable
Tumisani, there's more about this boy
that seems interesting)

Me: (I chuckled) you kidding right, look
Sipho I don't love you and I never will so
plz let me go and lets just move on plz...

Sipho: you will learn to love me bitch,
understand?? (he says jumping onto me
with anger and pressing me down onto
the couch)

Sipho: sorry (he gets off me and fix
himself then sit back down) I'm sorry for
scaring you. I love you Tumisani (OK
clearly like father like son, they are both
not normal in the head, I think Sipho has

a mental problem cuz he's emotions change in a weird kind of way, no I can't marry this man, no, he'll murder me)

Tears fall down and I just sit there silently crying.

He wipes away my tears and all I can see in his eyes is a call for "help" loud and clear.

.

Luyanda's POV

I woke up the next day and took a cold shower got dressed into a pair of blue jeans and a black Nike shirt with a pair of Nike takkies and headed downstairs.

Me: morning sis

Yemi: morning Yanda

Me: I'm starving

Yemi: your food is in the microwave, you look stressed

Me: baby sis, you won't believe what happened last night (I took my food and started eating)

Yemi: what happened??

Me: tumi was kidnapped last night

Yemi: (she screamed) what??

Me: yeah

Yemi: did you find the person yet?

Me: no but we know who its is

Yemi:who?

Me: Dad's biggest enemy

Yemi: (she gasped) Bra Skopp, yanda
are you fucked up

Me: Dad's gonna kill me

Yemi: you have to call him, you can't do
this alone

Me: yeah I will don't worry

Yemi: what if they hurt her Yanda, I'm
worried

Me: he wouldn't dare, don't worry

Yemi: I hope so

I ate my breakfast and Yemi went to her
room, she looks really worried shame...I
called dad...

<call convo>

Monster: Yanda

Me: Monster

Monster: how are you son?

Me: uhm I'm fine Dad

Monster: how is your sister doing?

Me: she's good

Monster: OK, talk I'm listening

(OK, this man freaks me out even in his absence, I'm still scared of him)

Monster: are you gonna talk or not?? I have important things to get to son.

Me: uhm dad, I need you to come back home as soon as possible, its urgent..

Monster: what happened, is it your sister?

Me: no dad, I'm in big shit right now, I messed up

Monster: what did you do?

Me: dad, uhm (I breathed deeply) Skopp is the problem

(silence)

Monster: fuck you Yanda, what the fuck are you doing with Skopp, I told you to stay the hell away from him, I hope you haven't dragged my daughter into this crap.

Me: no dad, its not like that...(I narrated the whole story to him and about Tumi being my girlfriend and I love her)

Me: dad you have to come back, I don't wanna lose her.

Monster: (he chuckled) so you finally grew up, you really love her, don't you??

Me: with my heart, body and soul

Monster: does her family know she's kidnapped?

Me: her only family is her brother, she recently lost her grandmother and it's a long story

Monster: oh I see, what happened to you son, you've become way too soft, damn!!
(he chuckled)

Me: really?? I'm monsters son, how can I be soft??

Monster: you're monsters son yet you can't fight your own battles (he laughed)

Me: that's not fair dad, he's too big for me

Monster: stop sounding like a chicken, mxm anyway I'm putting more security systems in the house, I don't want anything to happen to my princess

Me: so you're gonna help me?? (I smiled)

Monster: what other choice do I have?? since my son is a chicken (mxm this man) anyway I'll be down there tomorrow morning, get your guys ready and I'll get my people ready, its time for war

Me: OK, thanks Monster

Monster: sure, take care of your sister

Me: sure bozza

(we hanged up, I sighed relievedly)

wow that was easy, I didn't tell him everything tho, I didn't say anything about Amanda, just simply stated my chick was kidnapped and I love her, I'm sure dad hasn't gotten over the fact that I'm messing with Skopp, he'll kick my ass when he gets here... I hope

Tumisani is still fine, my woman is probably stressing, I miss her so much....

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO.....LIKE,

COMMENT AND SHARE

#loveyou

Plz comment, comment and
comment

[06/15, 18:20] Snr: INSERT 14

.

.

.

.

Guys, I'm disappointed, the number of
likes and comments is breaking my
heart guys plz I'm pleading with you
now plz like and comment because I

write with so much love and passion but seems like you guys don't appreciate me but I really appreciate the few that comment and like so thank you guys very much

.

.

Lindiwe's POV

I feel really terrible that Tumisani was kidnapped, this is all my fault, if only I didn't influence her to come to the stupid club. I feel really guilty. I wonder who could have kidnapped her because tumisani has no enemies at all, everyone we know love her so much. So now my

best friend is kidnapped and I feel really stupid, if only I didn't let Brian get to me, I somehow ended up having sex with him and honestly it was great but when Tumi called I was so drunk in love that I couldn't see that my friend was calling out for help, I'm such a horrible friend. I wake up the next day around 12:35 and my head is spinning, I've gained weight lately these past few weeks and I don't like it at all, even tho its not showing but it doesn't feel right. I wake up and go to the bathroom and wash my face, when I'm about to brush my teeth, I throw up. wow, that was weird, I put the brush back into my mouth and start brushing

but something comes up my throat and I vomit again. That lasted for about 8 whole minutes. I eventually stop vomiting and hop into the shower immediately... it must be because of all that alcohol I had last night, I feel really nauseous and this headache is killing me yoooh!!

I finish and get out of the shower, get to my closet and wear a pair of blue jeans which was a struggle to fit on and a big oversized white T-shirt, then head downstairs and Tebogo is probably mad at me right now and it sickens me to the core...

Me: morning (I greet sitting down on

one of the chairs in the kitchen)

Tebogo: hi, here is your breakfast (she gives it to me without making eye contact)

Me: thank you (I started eating)

Tebogo: Lindiwe where were you last night when Tumisani was missing??

(what do I tell her?? that I was busy cheating on my boyfriend with his elder brother??)

Me: uhm, I uhm,

Tebogo: Lindiwe do you realize that Tumisani is probably suffering right now, they probably doing who knows what with her because you guys decided to

go clubbing, I shouldn't have allowed you guys to go, but I was so nice and thought, oh my sister is finished with exams she needs a break but look at what that turned out to be!! (she was yelling, now this is not fair, Tumisani is old enough to think for herself and she wanted to go, its not like I put a gun to her head)

Me: but Tebogo I didn't force her...

Tebogo: Lindiwe I know you so well, you probably influenced her into this and as sweet and shy Tumisani is she agreed...

Me: but why is everybody blaming me for this (I started crying and she kept

quiet)

Tebogo: Lindiwe I'm not blaming you,
just...(she hugs me) I'm sorry...

Me: I know this is hard for you too but
imagine how I feel, she is my best friend
and....(I sobbed in her arms and she
cried with me)

Me: (I wiped my tears away and ate my
food) I need to call Jason and Luyanda

Tebogo: ok, I'll go check up on Dumisani

Me: OK

I went to my room and called Jason....

< call convo >

Jay: baby

Me: babe

Jay: how are you (he sounds so down and that hurts because I just cheated on him with his own brother, tears make their way to my eyes again but I stop them)

Me: uhm, I'm fine and you?

Jay: I'm OK, I'm worried about Tumisani, I wonder where she is.

Me: me too Jay (gosh this hurts a lot...)

Jay: Don't worry, they'll find her, have they contacted the police yet??

Me: I don't know Jay, Tebogo is going to check up on Dumi.

Jay: OK babe, take care of yourself plz...

Me: OK my love, you too (I can't believe I just said that)

Jay: OK babe, talk later

Me: OK see you (we hanged up)

OK, now I feel really guilty, but I really like Brian too, my feelings for Jay are just leaving my heart slowly but surely....

.

Dumi's POV

I barely slept last night, all I could think of was Tumisani, I'm so worried about her, I wish I could save her but if I dare go to Skopps house they will kill me and

then what will happen to Tumisani when I die, she'll blame herself for this all her life and I can't let that happen. I miss her so much, I wish I could hold her again and carry her in my arms like I used to do and kiss her soft cheeks even if its for the last time, she is all I have left, she is my world, the reason am still living today is because of her, I wonder how Gogo would be if she was still alive, Gogo would've been worried sick, she would be crying and crying. The two most important people in my life are being taken away from me, I can't lose Tumisani too, I have to find her, I miss her so much, my source of strength, her

smile gives me the energy to be able to carry out my day....I have to find her, God help me, I wipe away the tears that have made it's way to my cheeks and pick up my phone....

< call convo >

Yanda: ntwana

Me: hey dawg, any news??

Yanda: yeah dude, monster is landing tomorrow morning

Me: OK cool, dude but are you sure he'll be able to help us??

Yanda: dude don't worry, this is monster we're talking about, so don't worry.

Me: OK mfethu someone's at the door,
catch you later.

Yanda: sharp

(I hang up and go check who's at the
door and I'm not expecting anyone and it
could be the enemy so I put my weapon
in place)

Me: who is it?? (I hold up my gun ready
to bomb)

Voice: its me, Tebogo (oh shit, I put my
gun at the back of my pants and pull
down my shirt)

Me: come in (I open the door and she
hugs me)

Tebogo: how are you???

Me: (I chuckled) I don't think I know how I feel right now (we sit down)

Tebogo: have you guys gone to the police??

Me: this has nothing to do with the police...

Tebogo: but how do you know she's really kidnapped??

Me: trust me, I know for sure.

Tebogo: so you trying to say this is a more personal thing with whoever took her

Me: something like that..

Tebogo: but baby Tumisani has no

enemies

Me: I wish I could tell you everything but I can't, I'm sorry, I just can't

Tebogo: I understand, have you eaten?

Me: I have no appetite, how can I eat not knowing if my sister has eaten or not.

Tebogo: but baby you have to eat something, plz Dumisani for Tumisani's sake plz babe.

Me: I miss her so much, Tebogo she's the most important and special thing in my life, I can't lose her (she hugged me)

Tebogo: I know babe, I know, you won't lose her, Tumi will come back to us, don't worry

Me: I wish it was that easy

Tebogo: don't worry babe, let me go cook something for you, I'm sure you're hungry (she got up and went to the kitchen...)

Lord knows how much these people mean to me...

.

Tumi's POV

I've been sitting on this couch since Bra Skopp has left and Siphos has been quiet since he shouted at me, we sat there in complete silence and I miss my brother so much, I want to hug him and be in his arms again but look what my stupid

decisions got me into, if only I didn't go to that stupid club, if only I went home and not let Lindiwe convince me, I feel like this is where it all ends, I wish I could go back to the past and correct my mistakes...

Sipho: Tumisani

Me: hmm yes (I snapped out of my thoughts)

Sipho: plz stop crying

Me: huh what?? I'm not crying (I reach my hand to my cheeks and its soaking wet, I didn't even realize that I was crying, I quickly wipe them away)

Me: sorry

Sipho: plz don't apologize, I'm the one that is supposed to apologize, I'm sorry tumisani, I'm sorry for kidnapping you...I just... (he breaths deeply) I love you, you might not believe me but its true, I know I was a coward to follow my fathers plan into kidnapping you to make you mine but that wasn't my intentions, I wanted to do things right but seeing you I wanted to do things right but seeing you with another man so happy broke me inside deeply, that's why I let my father get me into his manipulative evil ways.. (hearing him say that somehow made me feel like there is hope, he sounds so sincere, I want to believe him but I love

Luyanda with all my heart and I don't think I could ever love someone else)

Sipho: plz say something tumisani (he holds my hands and looks me deep in the eyes, all I see is love and the need for help)

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO.....LIKE,
COMMENT AND SHARE.....

#loveyou

I want to hear your opinions guys....plz
comment

[06/15, 18:21] Snr: CONTINUATION

(short)

.

.

.

(Recap)

Sipho: plz don't apologize, I'm the one that is supposed to apologize, I'm sorry Tumisani, I'm sorry for kidnapping you...I just...(he breaths deeply) I love you, you might not believe me but its true, I know I was a coward to follow my fathers plan into kidnapping you to make you mine but that wasn't my intentions, I wanted to do things right but seeing you with another man so happy broke me inside

deeply, that's why I let my father get me into his evil manipulative ways...

(Hearing him say that somehow made me feel like there is hope, he sounds so sincere, I want to believe him but I love Luyanda with all my heart and I don't think I could ever love someone else)

Sipho: plz say something Tumisani (he holds my hands and looks me deep into the eyes. All I see is love and the need for help)

.

Me: Sipho do you know what my brother is going through at the moment!! he is probably worried sick about me, he is

my only family Siphon and you took me away from him.

Siphon: I'm sorry but...

Me: but what???huh?? (I pull my hands away) you robbed me the right of making my own decisions and choices and future! so tell me, what future do I have if I get married to you, I'm 17 Siphon for crying out loud, how can I get married when I have so much dreams that I want to make a reality, I have a bright future ahead of me but you only care about yourself, you are one selfish sick bast....(I felt a hot burn on my cheek and my hand immediately flew to my cheek ...he slapped me...tears

collapse down my cheeks like the rain
and I start shaking out of fear)

For all my 17 years of life, no- one has
ever raised their hands on me and not
even my own brother has ever raised his
hand on me but for the first time in my
whole life, a stranger that I've barely
known for 24 hours raised his filthy
hands on me...

Sipho: I'm sorry (he pulls me into his
chest and I'm so defeated that I can't
even speak)

Sipho: plz don't cry Tumisani, you're
making this hard for me, plz don't cry
(he brushes my back and I just sob)

Sipho is mentally sick and he has anger issues, he urgently needs medical attention and fast....

(the young lady from earlier on comes back...her name is Brandella I believe....)

Brandella: sir, lunch is served

Sipho: Thank you Brandella, we are coming

Brandella: OK sir (she smiles and leaves)

Sipho: come on Tumisani, let's go eat

Me: I'm not hungry

Sipho: Tumisani plz don't be stubborn, let's go eat plz

Me: I said I'm not hungry

Sipho: you leave me with no choice than to carry you to the lunch room...(he scoops me off the couch and carries me in his arms and starts to walk)

Me: ok, plz put me down, I can walk

Sipho: no it's fine, I feel comfortable like this

Me: no plz put me down, you're making me uncomfortable plz Sipho (I pleaded, his arms are so built and strong, he probably works out)

Sipho: OK fine (he slowly puts me down and holds my hand as if I'll run away)

Me: please leave my hand, I won't run away

Sipho: so you don't want me to carry you, you don't want me to hold your hand, so what do you want?? (we get to the lunch room and stop at the door and I look him in the eyes)

Me: I want you to let me go (I walk to the table and sit down on the chair)

Sipho: that is merely impossible, I can't let you go

Me: I hate you (I said coldly)

Sipho: (he clenches his big fist on his sides big and hard) don't test me

Tumisani Phakade (he says ready to fire) you will learn to love me, trust me...

(he dishes up for the two of us then sits

down next to me and I wait for him to eat first.... he looks at me)

Sipho: its not poisoned babe (he digs in....the nerve this dude has!!)

Me: don't call me that...

Sipho: what?? babe?? (he chuckled)
when you're angry it makes you look even more beautiful (I eat quietly and let the knives and forks make music to my ears)

I wonder if Dumi has eaten, oh my poor brother, God plz protect him, I miss him so much....

Sipho: what are you thinking about??

Me: my brother (I say softly)

Sipho: don't worry, we'll go visit him once we're married (my heart sinks)

Me: Sipho plz think about my future, plz I want to still study, plz don't do this to me plz.

Sipho: you will continue studying when we come back from Paris, we will move to a new City and you will continue studying...

Me: if you really loved me, you would care about my feelings but clearly you are heartless and cruel (he drops his fork hard onto the plate and I jump in shock)

Sipho: Tumisani, don't make me what I

don't want to be and I don't think you will like it (his eyes were red and anger was written all over his face.)

I continue eating not making eye contact with him but he keeps stealing glances at me.

I don't think I will survive living with this man, he is very sick and I'm afraid I'll leave this house dead.....

YOU KNOW

WHAT TO DO.....LIKE, COMMENT AND SHARE

#loveyou

Admin

[06/15, 18:21] Snr: INSERT 15

- .
- .
- .

Luyanda's POV

The next day....

So today Monster is landing, I woke up and took a shower, wore all black, took my phone and keys from my desk and headed downstairs and my beautiful sister is dressed in all black as well...its a family thing...she looks really beautiful; short black dress that hugs her body and her back is open a little with black high hills and black lipstick, her braids are made into two plaits....

Me: morning beautiful

Yemi: morning yanda

Me: you ready to meet monster?

Yemi: yup, I missed him

Me: OK, let's go babe

we left the house and got in the car then off we went to the airport...

After about an hour of driving, we finally arrived and saw the plane landing. Dad later came out of the airport (wearing all black) with his bodyguard's and stuff then Yemi ran into his arms...

Yemi: Daddy!!! (he hugged her and spun her around)

Monster: princess, how are you

Yemi: I'm good, wow look at you, Mexico is doing things to you, you look great
Daddy (she said fixing his tie and kissing his cheek)

Monster: (laughs) you don't look bad yourself

(they came to the car)

Me: Father

Monster: son (he gives me a man hug)
should I take my revenge on you now or later?

(Damn this old man, I knew he would get back at me for messing with Skopp)

Yemi: wooaw, Daddy take a chill pill, you only landed few minutes ago, give yanda a break.

Monster: hmmhmm as you wish my love (Yemi is his soft spot) so are you driving with yanda or with daddy??

Yemi: I think we should go and celebrate your arrival, how about we go out for lunch dad?

Monster: anything for my princess, then come with me and yanda will drive behind us...

Yemi: OK daddy, yanda see you there (she said kissing my cheek and walking to dads Limo)

Monster: I'm not done with you yet
buddy (he smirks)

Me: I know dad, see you there

Monster: sure

Geez, I thank Yemi for that or else that
man was gonna knock my balls out.

we drove to some fancy restaurant and
have lunch then get into separate cars
again and we went home...

.

Yemi's POV

We arrive at home and I'm exhausted,
walking in these hills all day tires me. I
misses my dad and I'm so happy to see

him, I'm his little princess and he listens to me, I actually think I'm his weak spot but dad is a tough guy I don't think he has a soft spot. I immediately kick off my shoes and collapse on the couch...

Dad: tired???

Me: very

(he sits next to me and pulls my legs onto his lap and start massaging my feet...best dad on earth)

Me: hmm that feels good (he tickles my toes and I laugh) stop it!! (he continues) dad I'm not a baby anymore

Dad: you'll always be my baby (I laugh)

Yanda: when is mom coming??

Dad: your mom has been busy lately, she'll probably land here in a months time

Me: geez I miss her

Yanda: me too

Dad: its work, being the boss ain't easy, I was doing really important shit when you called me to come and I don't really trust the person I left in charge so I have to do this thing of yours really quick then rush back.

Me: but daddy what if they attack us in your absence...

Dad: they won't dare my princess, Skopp

is scared of me but he doesn't like to admit it...but to keep you safe for a couple of weeks, you guys will have to move to my hotel and live there for two weeks just to keep you safe...

Yanda: but that's not necessary, I can take care of Yemi

Dad: son the decision is already made, I trusted you with her but look now, her life is already in danger probably

Yanda: but Monster, they are not after her, they're...

Me: yes dad, we will go stay at the hotel (they are both getting angry and they'll start going crazy any minute now and I

don't want that, when you have yanda and Monster in the same room, there is always a problem)

Me: as long as we're safe then its cool with me

(I look at yanda and he looks pissed, its his fault we're in this now so he needs to put himself together, he needs dads help)

Dad: good (his phone rings and he excused himself and went to his room)

Yanda: what the fuck was that yemi??

Me: don't you give me that bullshit

Luyanda, weren't you the one that called him and asked for his help, the least you

can do is listen to him, its for your own safety damn it.

Yanda: so you don't mind sleeping in a hotel and eating hotel food for two weeks??

Me: if the hotel is under my fathers name than its cool with me, like seriously its not like you gonna pay for anything, its dads hotel yanda.

Yanda: so you don't mind traveling by taxi to and from school for two weeks??

Me: my fathers name is " Monster " which means no daughter of his will travel to and from school by taxi...

Yanda: you have so much faith in him,

I'm sure you don't know why they call him " Monster " .

Me: Luyanda, for goodness sake, just be grateful for once

Yanda: OK fine, daddy's little princess

Me: (I laugh) that's me!!

Dad walks back downstairs looking disturbed

Dad: yanda, in my office, babe you gonna be fine by your self here??

Me: yes dad I'm cool

Dad: (kisses my cheek and walks back upstairs after Yanda)

.

Luyanda's POV

I'm definitely not happy with dad's idea of us moving to his hotel for two weeks, like how am I supposed to meet Tumisani, the hotel is fucking far from her school and house....

we get to his office and he locks the door and takes his blazer off and unbuttons his shirt and he looks pissed...

Monster: you're lucky yemi is at home or else I would've kicked your lame ass..

Me: dad, I already explained everything to you and even apologized, what more do you want me to do..

Monster: bullshit!! so what's your plan??

(OK, I thought he was gonna do the planning)

Me: well, uhm, (I looked at him blankly)

Monster: don't tell me you don't have a plan (he chuckles) boy that chick made you a fucking chicken, did you bang her yet??

Me: no dad, I can't believe we're talking about this..

Monster: so you didn't fuck her yet and she's already gotten into your veins, damn she's good!!

Me: come in dad, can we get to business plz, what if Skopp is selling her to be a prostitute, plus he doesn't know that I'm

involved

Monster: he doesn't ?? (I nod, he smiles)
good!! we'll hit him when he least
expects it, we'll knock him down and this
time I'll get rid of him for good...

Me: so what's the plan and when??

Monster: I need my men to dig and see
his move at the moment (he picks up
his phone)

< call convo >

Monster: Digger, monster on the line (he
puts it on loud speaker)

Digger: bozza, talk to me

Monster: I need you to find out what

Skopp is doing with that chick he is holding captive.

Digger: OK bozza got it

Monster: I want the info in an hour

Digger: bozza half an hour is perfect

Monster: sharp (he hangs up)

Me: what do you think he's planning on doing to her??

Monster: that man is a snake, he's probably fucking her

Me: what?? no that can't be, dad we have to find her fast..

Monster: why?? is she pure?? (he asks

surprised)

Me: yes damn it, she's still a virgin!!

Monster: OK relax, we'll get her, damn son, you sure know how to pick, so you wanted to be the first one to taste her.

Me: that's not funny dad (he laughs) I'm sure you were the first to taste mom

Monster: of course I was, your mom fell in love with me even tho I was a gangster, yet a player too.

Me: same with Tumisani, that's why I love her so much

Monster: don't worry son, we'll get her...

(half an hour later his phone rings and

he puts it on loud speaker)

Monster: Digger

Digger: bozza I'm afraid I come with bad news (I frown)

Monster: talk??!!

Digger: bozza, he is planning on getting the chick married to his son

Me: what?? (I shouted in anger)

Digger: shall I continue??

Monster: shoot

Digger: they are getting married tomorrow afternoon then they are flying to Paris the next day and will only return after a month.

Monster: do you know the location of the place the wedding is taking place.

Digger: yes bozza, I'll send it to you

Monster: good, inform me if anything changes

Digger: sharp bozza (he hangs up)

Monster: damn it!! (he punches the desk and picks up his phone again and calls someone)

Monster: ziggler, get the guys ready and meet me at the crib

Ziggler: is it time??

Monster: yes

Ziggler: sharp bozza

(he hangs up)

Monster: call your people and inform them to meet us at the crib.

(I did as told, I called the gents including Dumi and we both left his office and headed downstairs)

Monster: princess

Yemi: yes dad

Monster: I'm going out with your brother, I'm sending a bodyguard here, if you feel lonely call one of your friends and ask them to sleep over.

Yemi: OK dad, thanks, plz take care of yourself

Monster: don't worry my love (he kisses her cheek and walks out)

Me: I'll see you later (I kiss her forehead)

Yemi: take care

Me: will do (I follow my father and get into a black car which we are driving in and there are two other black cars driving behind us)

we get to dads crib and it's packed with about 20 men and I spot the gents.

Me: gents (we fist pump)

Tino: any news??

Me: you won't believe what the fool is doing to my woman! (I get pissed)

Dumi: what is he doing to my sister??

Me: he...(before I could say anything my father interrupts me)

Monster: you must be chowchow??
(they shake hands)

Dumi: honor to meet you sir

Monster: call me monster (he walks in front of the whole crowd and starts walking)

Monster: the reason why we are all here is because my biggest enemy, " Skopp" has crossed the line. He has again messed with me and I want war, we all know my son Yanda, Skopp has...(he narrated the story)

Ziggler: so Bozza what's the plan??

Monster: good question Ziggler my boy, I want to get rid of Skopp, I want him out of my life, I want to kill him with my own bare hands, the plan is that we are going to go to the church that the wedding is taking place and.... (he told us the whole plan and how things will work)

Dumi looked as if he was about to explode, I can imagine what he is going through.

Monster: guys, I don't want anyone to mess up this plan, I want it to go perfectly so make sure all your guns are ready to fire because Skopp doesn't

come empty handed. (the meeting ended and everyone went all their separate ways except my gents, dad comes to us)

Monster: son, you ready to go??

Me: yes dad

Monster: cool, gents I hope you are ready for tomorrow especially you chowchow (he looks at Dumi with a smirk on his face)

Dumi: yes monster

Monster: good

(we all take our separate ways)

.

Dumi's POV

I can't believe that bastard wants to get my sister married, I want to kill him so badly. how can he be so cruel and so evil just because of money, Tumisani is probably traumatized by all this, my poor sister is so young and innocent and he wants to destroy her, I will make sure he rots in hell.

I get home and take a cold shower, its already 18:45, I get to the kitchen wearing only my shorts and I start preparing something to eat when someone knocks on the door, its probably Tebogo. (I open the door)

Tebogo: my love

Me: sweetheart (she kisses me and wrap her arms around my neck) hmmm you smell good.

Tebogo: thanks babe (we continue kissing and I am horny but I'm not in the mood, my sister is in danger and this doesn't feel right)

Me: babe, can you help me cook, am hungry (I pull out and she looks surprised because she wants me too, but just not today)

Tebogo: uhm OK sure (she fakes a smile)

Me: thanks (we cook then eat together

and wash the dishes than sit on the couch together, note I'm still half naked)

Tebogo: baby are you OK??

Me: yes babe

she gets on top of me and starts kissing me and I respond, her hands start traveling around my body and land in my shorts, my man down there was hard but something told me, no. she starts playing with my man while still kissing me but I pull out.

Me: babe

Tebogo: (irritated) what is it Dumisani??
I want you (she smashes her lips back onto mine and I pull out again)

Me: Tebogo plz stop

Tebogo: stop what Dumisani, what is wrong with you (she gets off me and sit on the couch)

Me: I'm not in the right state of mind right now Tebogo so can we not do this right now..

Tebogo: (pissed) fine

Me: I love you

(she keeps quite)

Me: my love....my heart....my nunu....my pumpkin...

Tebogo: shut the fuck up dude, I got it (we laugh)

Me: I love you (I pull her onto my chest)

Tebogo: I'm horny right now, but I love you too. (I giggled)

We fell asleep on the couch and woke up the next day, its the day I bring my sister home.

Me: baby wake up

Tebogo: what time is it??

Me: 09:30

Tebogo: oh shit, babe I gotta go home

Me: OK babe, see you later then

Tebogo: sure babe (she kissed me and left)

I took a quick shower then made myself

breakfast and ate then wore all black, by the time I was done it was already 11:45, I heard a hoot outside and its the gents, I put my weapons in place then leave....

.

Tumi's POV

I never thought this day would come, I thought Dumisani was gonna save me from this horrible people but unfortunately he didn't so I have accepted the fact that I am getting married to Siphon, I've never stopped praying but it feels like God is not listening to my prayers, my future has been thrown away, my pride and dignity

will be taken away from....what more can a person endure....I am sitting in my room tears flooding my cheeks while Brandella is fixing my wedding dress....

Brandella: Tumisani plz stop crying (she looks sad, she's been good to me lately) everything is going to be fine.

Me: Brandella you don't understand what I'm going through (I cried)

Brandella: you'll be fine Tumisani, its time to go (she holds my hand and I stand up not even bothering to look in the mirror, Brandella wipes away my tears) you'll be fine, trust me

we walk downstairs and get into the

white Limo parked outside, I never imagined my wedding day to be like this. Guards fill the car and I feel intoxicated.

As soon as we get close to the church, tears make their way to my eyes again and I'm defeated, the guards open the door for me and I'm lost in thought, tears uncontrollably flowing....

Guard: madam plz step out of the car

I get out of the car and Brandella once again wipes away my tears and holds my hand. I slowly walk to the entrance of the church. My head spinning and so much questions popping in my mind.

Brandella leaves my side and it is

replaced by the devil himself in a black suit smiling with all his teeth showing.

Bra Skopp: you look beautiful Tumisani
(I keep quiet)

We start walking down the aisle and a huge lump builds up in my throat. I feel my heart beating fast and tears threaten my eyes and my lips are in a curved shape pressed together. Siphos is standing there with a priest who looks like he's crooked and the room is filled with not normal people but guards dressed in all black, the only person who is dressed in white is me!! we finally get to where Siphos is standing and I let my

tears fall. He looks at me with pity and wipes them away.

Sipho: you look extremely beautiful (he whispers)

.

The service begins and all of a sudden I hear gun shots and I'm being pulled by Sipho and I'm taken to the back and Sipho pulls hard without letting go, we get to the private parking lot....we are met by about 10 guards with weapons and Bra Skopp himself....all of a sudden another group of men come and my heart sinks when I see Dumisani I'm trying to break free of Sipho's strong

hold but I can't...

Me: Dumisani!!! (I cried)

Sipho pulls out a gun and points it to my head and I freeze...

Sipho: move one inch and I'll blow your smart brains out...

I spot Luyanda and he's pointing his gun out to one of Bra Skopp's guards, everyone here is pointing their guns out at someone.... then a man who almost looks exactly like Luyanda comes out with a huge gun and I almost wet myself.....

Man: so we meet again, my friend (he says)

Bra Skopp: its good to see you can still stand on your own two feet (he chuckles) so Dumisani couldn't fight his own battles he had to run to his sisters father in law, " Monster ".

Monster: at least I have a daughter in law, unlike you

Bra Skopp: hey wena, shut the fuck up

Monster: feisty, I like, listen Skopp, this is what's gonna happen you going to let go of the girl and we will all leave in peace.

Bra Skopp: peace?? since when do you and I have war and end in peace??

Monster: since Today!!!

The next thing I hear is gun shots and I'm there screaming and blocking my ears while crying, the noise these gun shots are making can turn you deaf....

Sipho roughly pulls me and drags me but I find strength and run out of his arms....

Me: Dumisani!!!! (I scream)

I run to where he is but it feels far....then.....I feel something hard hit me on my stomach, I immediately stop running and look down at my stomach and there is blood , I touch the red stained spot and I get dizzy.....

.

Voice: Tumisani!!!! nooo!!!!

..

Boom lights out****

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO.....LIKE,
COMMENT AND SHARE

Let's reach more than 35 likes and 10
comments then I'll post the next insert,
so its up to you guys if I should post or
not

#loveyou

Goodnight Admin

[06/15, 18:21] Snr: INSERT 16

.

.

.

.

(Recap)

I run to where he is but it feels far....then....I feel something hard hit me on my stomach, I immediately stop running and look down at my stomach and there is blood, I touch the red stained spot and I get dizzy...

Voice: Tumisani!!! Nooo!!!

.

Boom lights out****

.

Luyanda's POV

Tumisani has been shot and she is lying there on the floor separating the gents from Bra Skopp's people. Dumisani is being stopped from going to her, if he goes close to her, they'll kill him, there is blood everywhere on the floor and gun shots are being thrown left, right and center...

Monster: its now or never Skopp!!! (he roars and gets out of his hiding spot and so does Bra Skopp.)

Monster shoots first and it lands on Bra Skopps left leg, Bra Skopp shoots but he misses, Monster takes advantage and

shoots again, which lands on Bra Skopps chest and he gets weak and drops his gun then he drops on his knees, Monster shoots again with hatred and anger then.....BOOM.....Bra Skopp is out....

All his guards were knocked out but one escaped and I believe that was his son, "Sipho" the bastard has a nerve to escape.....

Dumisani immediately runs to tumisani's unconscious body on the floor and he cries....

Dumi: Tumisani!! no!! you can't leave me now, no!! (he holds her into his arms)

Monster: we need to get to a hospital!!

I stand there tears rolling down my cheeks watching the love of my life slowly dying

Monster: mother fucker get her into the car!! (he yells and the gents rush to her body and put her into the car)

Tino: yanda get yourself together man!! (he yells)

My head is spinning and my heart is pounding.....we all get into the car and drive to the hospital.....

.

Dumi's POV

My heart is pounding and it feels like it's being hit by a hammer, I cry out loud and my fingers are stained with Tumisani's blood, I'm shaking...

No Tumisani plz don't leave me plzz God plzz don't take her away plz...(I silently prayed)

we get to the hospital and she's immediately rushed to the theatre room. I closed my eyes and her beautiful face pops up in my mind and tears roll down my cheeks. Gogo's face pops up as well and something tells me, " pray". I silently prayed, even though I'm a gangster, I'm still human, I prayed and open my eyes again and my hands are still blood shot

red, everyone of the gangsters left when we were at the church, right beside me is yanda, Monster, Tino and Bino, than all of a sudden Lindiwe, Tebogo and Jason rush in looking worried as fuck, as soon as Lindiwe saw my hands, she collapsed on the floor crying, Tebogo rushes to me and attack me with a tight hug and I started crying all over again....

Me: Tebogo, my sister is dying, my sister is dying Tebogo (I cried)

Tebogo: no Dumisani, she won't die, she'll be fine....

(Jason picked Lindiwe off the floor and all of a sudden she fainted!!)

Tebogo: Lindiwe!!! (she rushed to her and another doctor came then they took her)

Jason: don't worry they'll be fine (he said to us)

We all stood there, some crying, some praying and some hoping for a maricle..

.

Narrated

Later a doctor came out from Lindiwe's hospital room...

Doc: Lindiwe?? (he looked at us)

Tebogo: yes Doctor (she flew up) can we see her plz

Doctor: yes you may

(Tebogo, Jason and Luganda went to her and Dumi sat there helplessly)

Lindiwe: Tebogo, where is Tumisani, plz call her here (she cried)

Doc: she fainted because she was going through too much stress and she's not eating well, and that is affecting the baby

All: Baby!!??! (they yelled)

Doc: yes, she is one month and 3 weeks pregnant

Lindiwe: what!!?? (they all stared at her)

Doc: you didn't know you were

pregnant??

Lindiwe: doctor that is impossible

Doc: we did all tests and it shows you are pregnant, I will leave you guys to sort it out as a family. (he left)

Tebogo: Lindiwe you are pregnant??
(she cried)

Lindiwe: Tebogo, I'm not pregnant, I, I,
(she hesitated and cried)

Tebogo: mom is going to kill you

Lindiwe, since when did you start having sex??

Jason: Lindiwe, I swear on my life, I've never slept with you, Tebogo I promise you I've never slept with her.

Tebogo: then who is fucking responsible
mahn???!?

Lindiwe: I, I, I, (she hesitated)

Tebogo: has he ever slept with you

Lindiwe??

Lindiwe: no!! Tebogo no!!

Tebogo: then who is responsible damn
it!!

Lindiwe: I, I, I, I don't know Tebogo.

(silence)

Tebogo: (gasped) was it.....

.

* flashback to the day of the party that
was hosted by Tebogo at there house*

I was having so much fun then all of a sudden I was being pulled in a dark room and girls screaming, they raped us and Tebogo chased everyone away and we cried in each others arms.

* end of flashback*

.

Tebogo: no, no, it can't be Lindiwe no!

Lindiwe: what Tebogo??

Tebogo: the day of the party Lindiwe!!
(she broke down)

Lindiwe: (she screamed) no!!! (she cried) this child can't be a product of rape, no!!! (she cried)

Dumi rushed into the room looking worried with his eyes red as fuck...

Dumi: what is going on, Tebogo, Lindiwe why are you crying??

Luyanda looks at Dumi and he looks scared as fuck as well...

Jason: Lindiwe is pregnant

Dumi: what!!?? how??

Jason: they said something about a party at there house and being raped!!

(Dumisani's Jaw dropped* Literally)

.

Luyanda's POV

This is too much stress for one day, its

like a nightmare come alive. On the one hand the love of my life is fighting for her life and on the other hand her best friend is pregnant and there's a huge possibility that it could be my child. I can't believe what I'm hearing, how can this be possible, sooner or later the truth will be out and what will I tell them??? that I raped Lindiwe. Gosh I can't believe what I'm hearing right now...

Tebogo: what do we do now??

Jason: are your parents in town?

Tebogo: they are probably on there way home right now.

Jason: OK, we need to get Lindiwe

discharged and tell them the truth.

Me: what!!???

Lindiwe: they gonna kill me

Jason: but its not your fault Lindiwe, you were raped.

Lindiwe: so what do I tell them when they ask why didn't I tell them before.

Tebogo: then you say, you were too traumatized, we'll figure something out.

Lindiwe: OK

Tebogo: I'll go sign your discharge papers (she left)

Dumisani went out too, he is probably Wondering which one of us (me, Tino

and Bino) raped her.

Jason: Lindiwe why didn't you tell me you were raped??

Lindiwe: because I was scared Jay

Jason: so were you a virgin before they raped you?? (she keeps quiet) huh??

Lindiwe: no, I wasn't Jay but I wasn't sleeping around.

Jason: so Lindiwe you didn't bother to tell me?? Did you even ever love me??
(silence)

Jason: I'll take that as a no (he leaves and he looks heart broken , its only me and Lindiwe left)

Lindiwe: your face tells a lot of things

Luyanda, I hope you were not part of this rape scheme (she looks pissed)

Me: what?? so you suspecting me, that's bullshit

Lindiwe: mxm, let's hope you're innocent, I'm gonna take a test when the child is old enough to be tested directly from the womb and I'm starting with you because honest something tells me its you

Me: (fuck she's suspecting me) fuck you Lindiwe

I tell her and I left her there then found my dad, Tino, Bino and Dumi still waiting for the doctor.

Me: any news??

Monster: not yet

Me: what the fuck are these doctors doing?? (I punched the wall looking pissed as fuck)

Monster: son, relax

Me: mxm, bullshit

I'm pissed, not only at myself but at the bullshit I got myself into.

.

Lindiwe's POV

I don't even know what I'm feeling right now, how can I be so stupid. I can't believe I'm pregnant, my whole future is

shattered, from the first time I got these pregnancy symptoms I thought it was just normal then I started missing my periods but I didn't take it serious, now look at the situation I'm facing. This child might be a product of rape but I don't care, if it means losing my future just to be a good mother to this unborn baby then so be it. I have a feeling that Luyanda is responsible for this pregnancy because that night I got raped, he was nowhere to be found and the scent of his perfume was still lingering in my mind but what worries me the most is what I'm going to tell Tumisani if she makes it alive, she's

gone through a lot and now this....

Jason is going to hate me when he finds out that I slept with his brother, I've been such a bitch and I can't believe it was me that did all those things. we got home from the hospital and its 16:30, my parents cars are parked outside and I get goosebumps everywhere....

Tebogo: I'll explain to them myself

Me: thank you

Tebogo: but you have to be there with me

Me: OK

we park the car and go inside, we find mom cooking in the kitchen and Dad

watching TV.

Tebogo: good afternoon (she fakes a smile)

Dad: hey honey, Lindiwe why are your eyes so puffy, have you been crying??

(mom walks in the lounge)

Me: uhm, no dad I'm fine

Tebogo: mom, Tumisani was shot and she's in a critical condition right now

Mom: (gasps) oh my goodness, is she OK??

(I break down again and she hugs me) its OK my baby, she'll be fine, don't worry.

Tebogo: ma, there is something else we need to tell you guys.

(we all sat down)

Dad: what is it??

Tebogo: well, uhm, well (she hesitates)

Lindiwe is pregnant

(both their eyes pop out and their jaws drop to the floor)

Dad: what??!! (he shouts angrily)

Mom: what!???

.

Watch how all the little secrets slowly reveal themselves.....its Hidden Secrets

after all.....

Will Tumisani wake up??? will she survive??? will Jason find out the truth about Lindiwe and his brother or will Tebogo find out the truth about her sister and her ex boyfriend Brian???.....will Luyanda and Dumisani confess about what they did to the two sisters?? Will Tumi forgive them if she wakes up from the dead???.....wellwe'll just have to wait and see keep on riding my babies, some will cry, some will laugh but at the end we will all enjoy

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO....LIKE,
COMMENT AND

SHARE

Admin

[06/15, 18:21] Snr: CONTINUATION

.

.

.

Guys I'm sorry its not long but I'll make it up to you, this fever is making me weak, sorry .

.

(Recap)

Tebogo: well, uhm, well (she hesitates)

Lindiwe is pregnant (both their eyes pop out and their jaws drop to the floor)

Dad: what!!?? (he shouts)

Mom: what!!??

.

Mom: Lindiwe, plz tell me I'm hearing wrong!!

(Dad is boiling with anger and he looks like he will explode.)

Tebogo: Ma...

Mom: Tebogo shut the fuck up mahn, what the hell is this??!! (she yells angrily)

(Tebogo keeps quite and looks down)

Dad: who is responsible?? (tears roll down my cheeks and I'm trembling)

Tebogo: Baba..

Mom: Lindiwe did they cut off your

tongue or which one of you is pregnant because clearly Tebogo is doing all the talking here.

Tebogo: Ma, its...

Mom: Tebogo I'm warning you, don't even say a single thing.

Dad: I asked a question, who the hell is responsible Mann!!?? (he roars)

Me: (I jumped, sweat filling up my forehead) Baba, i, I, I was raped. (I broke down)

Mom: what!?? Raped?? (she cries)

Me: I was raped and I don't know who is responsible Ma, they raped me and and ran away (I cried even harder, she pulls

me into her arms and hugs me)

Me: Ma, that's why I didn't tell you guys because I was traumatized and this whole issue was eating me

Mom: shhh baby its OK, don't cry.

(Dad stormed out of the room and we heard his car leaving, he looks pissed as hell)

Mom: Don't worry, I'll talk to him.

Me: Ma I'm sorry!! (I sobbed)

Mom: shhh baby there's nothing to be sorry about OK?? (I nod)

.

Dumi's POV

its been about two hours now and the doctors haven't told us anything. My princess is probably in so much pain right now, watching my sister get shot right in front of my very own two eyes feels like I've been shot straight in the heart. I wish I could be the one in there, I wish I could take her place right now....

The worst part is that Lindiwe is pregnant and it could be either Luganda, Tino or Bino and I'm praying that its not Luganda because this would hurt tumisani so much. I wish I could go back to the past and change all my wrongs, if they find out who the father of the baby is then they'll surely find out

that I raped Tebogo too. fuck, this is so messed up, I pray Tumisani wakes up...

A doctor walks out of the theatre room and he doesn't show any emotions....

(I quickly jump up, hoping for a miracle)

Doctor: Phakade??

Me: Yes!! (they guys stand up and we all looking at the doctor, desperately)

Doctor: well we've done a operation on her and we removed the bullet but she's lost a lot of blood and she needs blood as soon as possible....

Me: but is she going to be OK??

Doctor: well it'll take a while until she's

fully recovered but that is only possible once we have the blood needed.

Me: take my blood, I'm her brother.

Doctor: OK, plz follow me, I'll go test your blood type and see if it matches with hers.

Me: Doctor there's no need for all that long explanations, just take my blood, I'm her brother.

Doctor: young man, its the rules and regulations, we can't just take your blood just like that..

Me: Mara...

Luyanda: Dumi just let them do their job, tumisani needs us right now

Doctor: so shall we go??

Me: ok fine

(we went to wherever that place was and they took my blood and tested it then they told me to wait outside and I did)

The doctor later came back...

Doctor: Mr Phakade, we've done the test and your blood type does match hers, so can we plz go and carry on with the process.

(I followed the doctor once again and they pumped my blood which hurts but I'm doing this for tumisani)

I would rather die than to watch her

suffer. After what felt like forever, they finally finished but I felt sick. I was put in a hospital bed and I don't know when I closed my eyes....

.

Luyanda's POV

Wow, I wish life wasn't so tough, Tumisani is suffering right now and it hurts to know that if all this doesn't go well, she might not wake up. Dumisani has been hospitalised because all that blood pumping made him drowsy and weak but I believe he'll be fine.

Monster: son, we have to go and come back tomorrow.

Me: no dad, I'm not going anywhere until tumisani wakes up

Monster: we can always come back tomorrow, I'll even put her on special protection by the doctors.

Me: but dad

Monster: we'll come here first thing in the morning, come on

Me: OK fine

we spoke to the doctor and made sure they are both doing fine then we left. All that I could think about was Tumisani. God knows how much I love her.

We got home and Yemi attacked me with a hug, poor girl has been crying.

Me: hey yemi look at me, hey (she looks up at me with red puffy eyes, that breaks my heart even further)

Me: she's going to be fine OK?? (I sound so stupid right now, who am I even trying to convince?? myself or Yemi??)

I held her tight into my arms and she just cried and cried. I'm trying so hard not to cry but Yemi's sobs are making me weak.

Me: baby plz stop crying

Yemi: Yanda what if, what if.....(she cries)

Me: shhh hey, nothing will happen to her, trust me (I kiss her head)

Monster: princess come here, your brother needs to rest

Me: plz don't cry anymore Yems (I wiped her tears and kissed her cheek)

I get to my room and immediately break down, I'm a man, I know, but men also have feelings and men also cry, when that bullet hit Tumisani, I felt like my world just broke down, she's the best thing that's ever happened to me. Her smile, her dimples, those pink soft lips, her sexy curves, I miss her so much but even if she does make it alive, there is no way she'll take me back when she finds out that I'm a rapist and I've impregnated her bestfriend. I miss my

woman, I want to at least kiss her soft
lips for the last time and maybe even
hold her warm hands....

I cried and cried and cried

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO.....LIKE,
COMMENT AND SHARE.....

#loveyou

Admin

[06/15, 18:22] Snr: INSERT 17

.

.

Lindiwe's POV

Its Tuesday today, they giving our school reports today so I'll have to go fetch both mine and Tumisani's reports. I woke up feeling a little bit fine, went to the bathroom took a shower and got dressed into a plain red dress and just let my braids loose. I headed downstairs and Tebogo was cleaning.

Me: morning

Tebogo: morning, are you going to fetch your report?

Me: yes

Tebogo: do you need a lift?

Me: no I'll be fine

Well actually Brian called and we are

meeting up for lunch. I took my phone, purse and clutch bag then left...

I got to school and went to fetch my report then Tumisani's, I was on my way to the gate when I bumped into Jason..

Me: hey Jay

Jason: Lindiwe (ouch that was cold)

Me: how are you?

Jason: I'm fine, how's the baby??

Me: the baby is fine, we're fine (I smiled)

Jason: OK see you around

Me: Jay we gotta talk

Jason: about what exactly??

Me: about us Jay, we can't just act like

total strangers because....

Jason: Us?? there is no " us" Lindiwe,
you never loved me so plz don't fool me
with this "us" bullshit.

Me: but....(my phone interrupted me
and it was Brian calling) excuse me, I
have to go (he just looked at me and
left)

< call convo >

Me: hello

Brian: babe I'm a few blocks from your
school, come to the gate and look left
(he hanged up)

I walked to the gate making sure that
Jason was out of sight and I saw Brian's

car. I almost run to him and quickly get in the car.

Me: are you crazy to come here?? what if Jason saw us??

Brian: relax babe, Jason won't see us (he started the engine and drove off)

Me: where are we going??

Brian: to a hotel, why do you look so tensed??

Me: no I'm fine

(I'm not fine, I'm actually thinking of telling him that I'm pregnant and I don't know how he'll take it but I hope he doesn't leave me too because I've started having real feelings for him)

We get to the hotel and check into a room, we then go up to the room and he orders something to eat...

Brian: you look beautiful babe

(he says looking at me from top to bottom)

Me: thank you (I blush and butterflies play with my stomach)

Brian: I love you Lindiwe and I'm serious about you, I want us to be together, I want you to be my girlfriend from now on (I smiled)

Me: thanks but....the truth is (I fiddled with my fingers) I'm pregnant.

(He doesn't look surprised at all, he

keeps a straight face but I can see he wants to smile)

Brian: but we only slept together like.....not even a week ago (he says)

Me: yes I know, well before I met you....(I told him everything and he looks hurt)

Brian: you were raped?? (I nod)

He clenches his fists and he looks pissed...

Brian: do you know who did it??

Me: no they they ran away and it was in the dark (I want to tell him how I suspect Luyanda but I'll have to confirm my suspicions first)

He comes and sits next to me on the bed and pulls me into his arms, I'm surprised my tears didn't betray me today...

not once have I cried..

Brian: are you OK?? are you over it??

Me: it took a while for me to get back at my normal self but I'm fine now (I smiled)

I think I've found my soulmate, I thought he was going to reject me and call me names because I'm damaged goods but his reaction took me by surprise...

Brian: I love you OK?? and I'll never do anything to hurt you, I promise to

cherish and treat you like the beautiful queen that you are, I won't let anyone hurt you OK??

Me: (I nod) thank you, I love you too

He puts his warm lips on top of mine and passionately kisses me....we play with each others lips then stop to breath..

Brian: when did you find out you were pregnant?

Me: yesterday

Brian: how far are you?

Me: one month and three weeks

Brian: I was wondering why you glowing

today and look so different (I smiled) I want to be part of the baby's life, I want to take care of you guys.

Me: you're so caring and kind, I don't think I deserve this, why are you being so kind to me??

(he kissed me)

Brian: because you have stolen my heart Lindiwe, I love you, from the first day I met you I couldn't stop thinking about you, I fell deeply in love with you, I know I sound crazy right now but I just love you (we kissed for a very long time then we were interrupted by room service and it was our food, he went to fetch it and

came back then started feeding me)

Me: you're so cute

Brian: you're so beautiful, you know babe, I love babies so much, that's why I want to be part of the baby's life.

Me: you know, I've never seen someone like you before

Brian: meaning??

Me: well I thought you were gonna reject me because who wants a 17 year old girl, who's pregnant and still in high school.

Brian: well, I'm not like other dudes, I love with my heart not my brain, I just don't know why I feel this way about you,

I just love you so so much. (he kisses me, this time, bringing my whole body onto his)

Brian: may I continue feeding you?? (he says smiling)

Me: go ahead

He feeds me, we finish eating then just lay on the bed in each others arms, I felt warm and safe...

Me: I love you Brian

Brian: I love you more, babe you didnt tell me about your family??

Me: well, I live with both my parents who are always working and my elder sister

Brian: so its only the four of you guys?

Me: yep

Brian: what is your sisters name?

Me: Tebogo

Brian: Tebogo!!??

Me: yes, Tebogo (he looks uneasy)

why?? is there a problem??

Brian: no no it just sounds familiar,
that's all

Me: oh OK, so what are you studying??

Brian: uhm, well I'm currently studying
Business studies/ Business
management

Me: cool, is Varsity hard??

Brian: Varsity isn't easy at all, its triple the work done in high school, lots of assignments and projects

Me: wow

Brian: so what do you wanna be one day??

Me: I wanna be a Therapist.

Brian: wow that's great, are your marks good?? well that would be a stupid question, how can a girl be this beautiful with no brains?? (I laughed)

Me: well yeah my marks are pretty good actually

Brian: great, so tell me babe, are your parents taking this pregnancy well??

Me: actually I only informed them yesterday and my mom is totally supportive although my dad hasn't said anything to me, he was pissed last night.

Brian: oh, I can imagine, I would be pissed as hell if my daughter was raped and don't worry babe, I will protect this angel growing inside of you with my life (he said kissing my forehead and rubbing my tummy)

Me: thanks, babe (I smiled)

Brian: I heard your bestfriend was shot?

Me: yes (that immediately made me emotional And tears rolled down my cheeks)

Brian: hey baby, don't cry plz (he said wiping my tears away) she'll be fine babe

Me: she's my only friend, she's like a sister to me.

Brian: I know babe, I know but she'll be fine, plz don't cry its not healthy for the baby

Me: sorry I just can't help it, whenever I think about it, it brings tears to my eyes.

Brian: shhhhh its OK, we'll go visit her tomorrow OK?

Me: baby what if someone sees us together, then what??

Brian: I don't care what they'll say, I love

you and that's all that matters. but if it'll make you happy then I'll come with Jason as well just to clear up the suspicion

Me: OK bby

Brian: now come here, I crave you babe (I giggle)

He positions himself on top of me and kiss my lips seductively, he goes to me neck, my weak point, I moan...we kiss until things get heated and we rip each others clothes off. we are both fully naked now, he sucks my twins* and I moan and moan....

he fingers me and I'm wet as fuck.....

We make love in the daylight of the day, pleasure and the sound of moans fill the room, all my worries have vanished, all that is left is pleasure, lust and desire...he makes love to me and we both climax at the same time then he collapse on top of me breathing heavily like he has just ran a marathon....

Brian: goodness Lindiwe the things you are doing to me (he heaves)

Me: (I giggle) you look so cute right now

Brian: (he laughs) I love you Lindiwe

Me: I love you more

(he kisses me before getting off from on top of me then walks to the

bathroom naked)

Damn that sexy body, he looks so hot and built. I close my eyes and just lay there...

I feel his soft lips kissing my belly....

Brian: princess let's go shower.

Me: OK but first promise me its gonna be a innocent shower because....(I pointed down there) its burning babe (he laughs)

Brian: I can't predict the future babe (he says naughtily) now come on my queen (he lifts me up into his arms and kiss me till we get into the shower and have another steamy session, you could

swear Brian is a sex addict, this one, yoh he loves the pussy too much....but I ain't complainingwe finish showering and lotion each other then get dressed into our clothes again and the time was already 17:45, yoh shit, I spent the whole day here but I had fun, Brian is just so wonderful.....

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO.....LIKE,
COMMENT AND SHARE

guys comment plz!!!

#loveyou

Admin

[06/15, 18:22] Snr: INSERT 18

- .
- .
- .
- .

Dumi's POV

I woke up the next day and I'm in a hospital bed, my hand has a small plaster on it, I'm sure that is where they've been pumping the blood from and it hurts. The doctor walks in and he looks a little happy this time around....

Doctor: morning dumisani

Me: morning doctor

Doctor: how do you feel?

Me: I'm alright, how is my sister doing?

Doctor: well I have good news (my heart jump in excitement) we did every process needed and she's finally out of danger, she'll take a while to wake up but she'll be fine, she's a very strong girl.

Me: thank you doctor (I smiled) may I see her plz

Doctor: yes of course, follow me

(we went to tumisani's hospital room and the doctor left me there)

My baby looks so pale and weak yet still beautiful.... (I sit next to her and kiss her hands)

Me: thank you for not leaving me Tumsa,

plz get well soon so I can carry you in my arms, I really miss you. I thought you were giving up on me tumsa, I lost all hope (I cried) I can't live without you tumisani, you're my everything, plz don't ever do this to me again, I love you so much...(I kiss her cheeks and tears rolled down her cheeks, while her eyes were still closed. I wiped them away....)

Me: I don't want to see you crying ever again, I just want you to be happy tumisani plz, you're the light of this family tumsa, so I need you more than anything in this world.

(someone's warm hand lands on my shoulder and I turn around only to see

tebogo who looks happy to see tumisani)

Tebogo: how is she?? (she hugs me)

Me: she's getting there

(Lindiwe walks in)

Lindiwe: is she awake yet?

Me: no she needs to rest

Lindiwe: OK, but when will she wake up?

Me: the doctor said it'll take a while but she'll be fine.

(Luyanda walks in with a bunch of flowers, followed by Jason and some other dude)

Tebogo: (shocked) Brian!!??

Dude: Tebogo!!?? (he looks at Lindiwe

then at Tebogo then back at Lindiwe)

Lindiwe: you guys know each other??

Brian: uhm, excuse me I have to go
(with that said, he leaves)

Me: what is going on here??

Tebogo: sorry, I need some fresh air
(she leaves too)

Jason: OK this is weird, what just
happened??

Lindiwe: I'll come visit tumisani later
(she also walks out looking terrified)

Me: what the hell was that??

Luyanda: do they know each other??

Jason: you ask me and I'll ask you, I'm

just as confused.

Luyanda: anyway this is for tumisani
(he puts the bouquet of red roses down
beside her)

Me: she'll love them

Luyanda: I know, have you eaten
anything??

Me: nah, I just need someone to stay
with her while I go home and take a
shower and eat.

Luyanda: I'm here, you can go

Me: are you sure??

Luyanda: yah mahn, don't worry about it

Me: OK thanks mahn (I kiss tumisani's

cheeks) baby I'll be right back, see you guys later (I left and headed home)

.

Tebogo's POV

That was totally weird, what the hell was Brian doing there, what will I tell dumisani now, he'll probably think I'm sleeping with Brian, I was going back to tumisani's room again when I bumped into him.

Brian: Tebogo

Me: Brian, what are you doing here??

Brian: I came to visit a friend of Jason's with him.

Me: Jason is your brother??

Brian: yes my younger brother

Me: oh OK

Brian: Lindiwe is your sister?? (he asks looking shocked as fucked)

Me: you know Lindiwe?

Brian: yes she's Jason's ex girlfriend

Me: yes she's my sister

Something doesn't add up here, there's something going on with this dude....

(Lindiwe came)

Lindiwe: you guys know each other?

Me: yes he is my ex boyfriend / fuck buddy

Lindiwe: what!!?? (she yells and looks hurt)

What the hell is going on here....

Me: why are you so shocked??

Brian: uhm, excuse me plz ladies, I'll be on my way (she looks at him with burning eyes)

Me: sure see you around (he left)

Lindiwe: you guys were fucking??

Me: yes just a temporary thing, you know

Lindiwe: you such a slut Tebogo
(tears roll down her cheeks and just like that she storms out of the hospital)

What the fuck was that, thoughts pop up in my mind and I feel like I'm going nuts....

.

Brian's POV

This is the craziest day of my life, when Lindiwe told me her sisters name was "Tebogo" something told me its the same Tebogo that I used to fuck with but I didn't listen to myself then today all of sudden I find out that I've been fucking both sisters. I feel ridiculous, like really. I've tried calling Lindiwe several times but she's not picking up, she probably thinks that I've been using

her and taking advantage of her but honestly I love Lindiwe and I really want to be with her, I called her once again and this time she finally picks up....

Me: baby plz don't hang up plz

Lindiwe: what do you want?? (she has been crying)

Me: baby plz give me a chance to explain plz my love.

Lindiwe: I'm listening

Me: baby can we do that over lunch tomorrow plz

Lindiwe: where??

Me: I'll send you the location babe

Lindiwe: I'll be waiting (she hangs up)

She sounds hurt and pissed but I know she still loves me, I'm sure I can melt her heart with the click of a finger, she's just way too soft but I won't take advantage of that because I love her so very much....

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO.....LIKE,
COMMENT AND SHARE.....

I think its time sleeping beauty (tumi) wakes up now, don't you think she's been sleeping forever now.....its time for her to face the music.....drama,

drama, drama.....shit is about to go
down.....don't miss the next inserts
babies

#loveyou

Welcome to all our new
babies Admin

[06/15, 18:22] Snr: INSERT 19

- .
- .
- .

Luyanda's POV

I slowly kiss her soft pale lips, craving
for her to kiss me back, I slowly suck on
them, desperately wanting her to

respond, but she doesn't. I pull away and just look at her beautiful face, God took his time making this queen, she's so beautiful and looks peacefully in deep sleep....

Me: tumisani you are driving me crazy, your beauty is like a ever flowing river, open your eyes and look at me babe, I desperately want to hug you and hold you again, I want to devour your juicy lips babe, I love you so much tumi.

(she slowly tries to open her eyes but I can see she is afraid of the light, I smile and put my hand a little over her eyes just to make it easy for her)

She slowly opens her eyes and blinks, I take my hand away and broadly smile at this royal beauty...

Me: my love

Tumi: water.... (she heaves)

(I get her a glass of water and she gulps it down quickly)

Me: how do you feel tumisani??

Tumi: my stomach hurts, how long have I been here?? (she tries to sit up but fails) ouch!! (she screams)

Me: careful babe (I place her back down)

Tumi: why does my stomach hurt so much?? where is Dumisani?? (tears fall

down her cheeks)

Me: tumsa plz don't cry, I'll call the doctor (I rush out and call the doctor then we return back to her room)

Doc: miss Phakade, you're awake, you're one strong girl, how do you feel??

Tumi: I have a huge pain on my stomach, and I feel like its ripping apart, what did you do to my stomach??(she asks shocked)

Doc: well miss Phakade, you were shot on the stomach and we did an operation to remove the bullet.

Tumi: Shot!!!?? (she asks yelling, then zoned out)

Me: doctor why doesn't she remember??

Doc: she's just recovering, give her some time, she'll be fine....(he left)

.

Tumi's POV

All the memories of what happened came running back to my mind, I remember how I was kidnapped and how I was shot....all the memories came back like a flood....

Luyanda: baby plz stop crying

(I looked at him)

I just realized how much I missed this guy, he looks so worried and

stressed....the thought of Sipho runs back to my mind and I cried out loud...

Me: Lu they're coming to get me, Sipho is coming to kill me (I cried)

Luyanda: no babe (he hugs me tight) they won't do anything to you anymore, nothing will happen to you, trust me.

Me: but what if, what if he.....

Luyanda: shhhh he won't come near you (he wipes my tears)

(Dumisani walks in and my heart flies)

Me: Dumisani!! (I cried)

Dumi: tumi!! (he attacks me with a hug

and drops the bags he was carrying)

Dumi: Thank God you're awake, tumisani
plz don't you ever do that to me again, I
thought I was gonna lose you (he said
tightening the grip of his arms on me)

Me: I'm sorry dumi, I'm sorry (I cried)

Dumi: shhh don't cry plz slow down (he
wiped my tears and sat down next to me
) Did they do anything to you??

Me: Dumisani I'm scared, what if they
come back, Siphos will kill me Dumi

Dumi: tumsa nothing will happen to you,
I'm here now OK ?? (I nod)

This morning someone was in this room
and it sounded like a lady but I just didn't

know the voice and I couldn't open my eyes...

Me: Dumsa there was a lady in this room this morning, and I don't know who it is, she sounded weird and in a rushed tone...

Dumi: it was probably the doctor or nurses.

Me: no Dumisani, it didn't sound like a nurse, the voice just sounded so real, I'm telling you.

Dumi: what was the voice saying??

Me: it kept saying, I should wake up and my time isn't here yet...

* flashback to this morning*

Voice: vuka mntanam, vuka, tumisani
don't go yet my child, the Phakade blood
lies in your veins, wake up tumisani, you
are the light of this family, you can
shamge the circumstances of this
family.....

* end of flashback*

Dumi: how does her voice sound??

Me: she sounds like me but in a more
adult way, like gogo but just a little (he
looks scared)

Dumi: OK don't worry about it, (he
smiles) you have to eat, here take, (he
gives me the bags that had the food in)

Luyanda: how do you feel??

Me: I'm much better now Lu (I smiled)

Luyanda: I missed that smile

Dumi: I'll give you guys some space, this is too weird (we laugh he leaves)

.

Luyanda's POV

My queen is finally awake and I'm worried now of how I'll tell her about Lindiwe and stuff....

Tumi: why do you look so worried??

Me: no nothing my love, I'm just happy that you're wake, you almost gave me a heart attack, you've made a huge impact on peoples life's tumi, even Yemi was

crying babe

Tumi: ncooh poor girl, where is she??

Me: she doesn't know that you're awake,
I'll bring her tomorrow.

Tumi: OK babe, Yanda I thought I lost
you, I was going to get married to Siph
(she cried and I hugged her)

Me: its over now babe, he won't do
anything to you anymore.

Tumi: let's hope so, I missed you so
much (she says cupping my cheeks)

Me: I miss you more (I kissed her and
she responds, mmmm I was craving
this)

Tumi: okkk (she breaks the kiss) let's not get too naughty here (I chuckled)

Me: I can't wait for you to get out of here

Tumi: me too but the pains are killing me

Me: you'll be fine my royal beauty (I kiss her cheek)

Tumi: royal beauty??

Me: yes baby, you're my beautiful queen (she smiles)

Tumi: and you're my handsome king, where's Limdiwe and everyone else??

Me: uhm they were here this morning but you weren't awake yet.

Tumi: oh OK, I saw your dad that other day

Me: how did you know that he is my dad??

Tumi: well, you guys look alike, like literally.

Me: that's your father in law, he was worried

Tumi: ncooh cute

Me: I think he'll come visit tomorrow too, you guys will get along so well

Tumi: let's hope so

(I kissed her again, I just can't help it)

Me: baby I'm getting you discharged

myself, I can't take this anymore, I'll get you a special doctor from home (she laughs)

Tumi: did you miss me that much

Me: like crazy miss Phakade (she giggles)

Tumi: I don't think the doctor will allow you to discharge me, I'm under their control babe.

Me: I'll get dad to talk to them

Tumi: OK sure

(we sat their cuddling and talking till late and then I had to leave...)

I missed my princess, I'm so glad she's

awake. That beautiful smile just made my day.

.

Dumi's POV

I'm so happy that tumisani is awake, now I have to find a way to make this secret disappear because if she finds out that I was the one that took part in the rape scheme, she'll never forgive me. She said something about a woman coming to her room this morning and that worries me, the way she described it was weird...The only woman that I know has a similar voice to her and gogo is my mom but its impossible for

her to come here since she's in prison
and its worrying me....

it's the next day and I woke up around
09:20, did my hygiene Process then
made breakfast. after eating I was on
my way to visit tumisani when I got a
call from tebogo....

< call Convo >

Me: hello

Tebogo: babe, where are you??

Me: on my way to visit tumi

Tebogo: can we meet for lunch
somewhere??

Me: sure, where??

Tebogo: MacDonald's would be nice.

Me: OK see you around 14:00

Tebogo: OK, sharp

< end of convo >

I feel like she's hiding something from me, yesterday she was acting strange with that dude around and I feel like there's something going on between them, if she's cheating on me I'll kill her...

I get to the hospital and my angel is staring into space....

Me: what are you thinking about??

Tumi: hey you (she smiles)

Me: how are you?? (I kiss her cheeks)

Tumi: I'm OK and you? have you eaten??

Me: yes I'm fine tumsa don't worry about me, I'm supposed to be worried about you...(her eyes look red and puffy)

tumisani have you been eating??

Tumi: me?? no I haven't been crying
(she looks down)

Me: you can lie to anyone else but not me tumsa, what's wrong babe??

(I hold her)

Tumi: I'm scared Dumi, I'm really scared, I feel like there is someone after me, like someone is planning on coming to get me.

Me: no tumsa, no one is after you,

nothing is gonna happen to you, I'm here for you baby.

What have they done to my sister, she now fears everything, it make me so angry I want to find that Sipho dude and kill him with my bare hands....

.

Lindiwe's POV

I'm so frustrated right now, I can't believe Brian Tebogo used to fuck, like really!!!.... I feel like Brian has been playing me but I so badly want him, I've fallen for him, I just don't know what to think of him anymore... I wake up, take a shower, wear a pair of white jeans, white

see through top with a white vest underneath, my bump will be showing soon but for now its invisible and my figure still looks OK, I put on a pair of Vans and a black choker, tie my braids up and headed downstairs...

The house looks clean and its quite, I'm so glad Tebogo isn't here because I feel sick when I see her, I want to throw up, I can't get over the fact that we fucked the same dude. I drink a glass of water, take my phone and clutch bag and leave. I catch a taxi to some fancy restaurant Brian insisted on, I get there and he's waiting for me at the door....

Brian: hey babe, you look beautiful (he

tries to hug me but I move back and he gets the message) shall we go inside??

Me: let's go (we get inside and its beautiful, I must say, its so rich and expensive, wow)

We sit down and order..

Brian: Lindiwe I'm sorry, I didn't know she was your sister, when you told me her name the other day, I didn't know she was the same girl I once dated.

Me: Brian are you playing me??

Brian: Lindiwe, I know I look like a fuck boy and I know you think I'm just like the rest of them but I'm not, I really love you and I would never play with you

Me: Brian I want to be with you, honestly I do but I don't know if I can trust you.

Brian: you can trust me Lindiwe, I won't ever do anything to hurt you, I love you

I look in his eyes and my heart melts, why didn't I feel this way with Jason, I thought I loved Jay but clearly I was just in love with the thought of being in love.

Brian makes me happy. He leans in and kisses me right there on the spot, I respond to the kiss and it felt like our first kiss today....

Brian: I love you (he smiles)

Me: I love you too (I smiled back)

We had lunch smiling from ear to ear,

then we went to the park and my day was just perfect....

He dropped me off at home, he parked the car then we both get off and lean against the car with him holding my waist and my arms around his neck....

Brian: did you have a great day babe?

Me: it was awesome, I had fun

Brian: when are we going for a scan, I want to see our princess (he's too cute, the baby isn't even his yet he cares so much, I smile)

Me: I think we have to wait till the baby is between 2-3 months because he's too small now

Brian: he?? no you're crazy, its a she.

Me: says who?? I want a boy

Brian: its a girl babe, I can feel it, she's gonna look like her beautiful mom. (he kisses me)

Me: hmMMM we'll have to wait and see (I kiss him back passionately...)

Voice: what the hell is going on here?? (its Tebogo and Dumi standing not too far away from us)

Tebogo: Lindiwe what the fuck are you doing with Brian??

Brian: uhm Tebogo, Lindiwe and I are dating (he says holding my hand)

Tebogo: (laughs sarcastically) oh please, don't give me that bullshit, since when?? not too long ago you were fucking my pussy and now you're dating my sister??

(she looks pissed and poor Dumi beside her looks terrified and even more pissed)

Dumi: excuse me?? (he asks)

Me: Tebogo watch your mouth!!

Tebogo: shut up you little slut, how dare you date my boyfriend and on top of that he's your ex's brother, what kind of person are you Lindiwe, I even helped you when you were telling mom and dad about the pregnancy now this is how

you repay me back?? by sleeping with the dude I once fucked, your one sick ass bitch (next thing I saw was my hand slapping Tebogo and tears flew down my cheeks)

Me: what difference does it make you from me, huh, don't you have any shame, your damn boyfriend is here, here listening to you saying all this things in front of him, how do you think he feels, the man you claim to live is listening to you talk about your sex life about another man.

Dumi: Enough!!!! Tebogo what is this!!??
(he shouts)

Tebogo: Dumi I'm sorry, I didn't mean to say that

Dumi: oh really Tebogo?? I truly love you but seems like you don't want me, I never judged you or said anything bad to you, I'm so disappointed in you, I thought you loved me...

Tebogo: I do Dumisani I do love you...
(she cried)

Dumi: mxm, excuse me, I'm leaving (he left running)

Tebogo: I hope you are happy with what you've done (she storms inside)

Brian: babe are you OK??

Me: I'm fine my love (I kiss his cheek)

see you tomorrow.

Brian: take care

Me: you too (I smile and walk inside)

COMMENT, COMMENT, AND

COMMENT i will be

waiting to hear what you guys are saying

#loveyou

Who do you think is this mysterious woman tumisani is talking about, what do you think will happen during this war of the two sisters, will Tumisani find out about the rape scheme, will the two gangsters confess (Dumi and yanda), are Brian's feelings for Lindiwe

real??.....we'll have to wait and see.....

Admin

[06/15, 18:22] Snr: INSERT 20

.

.

.

Guys I'm sorry this is short, I've just been busy lately and I promise to give you a long juicy insert tomorrow

.

.

Tumi's POV

Mxm, everyone is busy living their lives while I'm here stuck on a hospital bed. I

feel useless.... I try to sit up but fail.....

Me: ouch!!! (I scream out loud!! It hurts)

Voice: be careful, you'll hurt yourself.

I look up and my eyes meet with the eyes of a lady. She is medium in height with a afro, she looks like a mixture of me and Gogo, her skin is caramel, she is wearing all black, beauty is what she resembles, true beauty. I'm pretty sure she is not the doctor or nurse. My lips immediately gets dry and I'm scared, I start shaking....

Voice: don't be frightened my child, I'm here now (she starts walking closer to

me)

Voice: I will take care of you mtanam, I missed you Phakade princess....

(I finally find my voice..and scream out loud!!!)

Me: aaaaaahhh!! (I scream!!!.....I shut my eyes)

.

All of a sudden I'm being shaken.....

Voice: tumsa wake up, its only a dream..

(I open my eyes and I'm trembling)

Luyanda: baby are you alright?? (he holds me)

Me: Lu I'm scared (I cried) there, there's

a woman who wants to take me
she, she..

Luyanda: shhhh its OK, its just a dream.
(he breaths deeply)

Luyanda: I'm fed up with this, I'm getting
you discharged right now (he looks
angry. Yemi walks in)

Yemi: tumi!! you're really awake (she
hugs me)

Luyanda: Yemi she's having nightmares
in here, I'm getting her out of here..

Yemi: why is she shaking?? Are you OK??

Me: I'm fine now (I fake a smile)

Luyanda: no babe, you're not OK (Lu's

dad walks in)

Luyanda: dad plz get her discharged today, she looks terrified.

Dad: oh my goodness makoti, you're finally awake

(was I dead for that long....wow)

Me: yes sir, I'm awake (I blush)

Dad: you almost gave us all a heart attack here

Me: I'm sorry about that Sir

Dad: I think you should come home with us

Me: I have to inform my brother first
(Dumi walks in)

Dumi: good day everyone.

Dad: hey boy, I'm discharging my daughter in law and putting her on special protection

Dumi: why?? is everything OK??

Dad: she's fine but I think she'll be more comfortable at home , right makoti? (I feel like a baby, everyone is just making decisions for me)

Me: yes sir

Dumi: OK, that's OK, baby why do you look so freaked out??

Luyanda: when I came in here, she was screaming in her sleep, she was having a nightmare

Dumi: tumsa what's going on?? (he looks concerned)

Me: There was a woman in my dream
Dumi, she looks like Gogo and her voice sounded like the same woman that was here yesterday morning.....

Dumi: no, no, no, it can't be.....but, but, she's in prison, no!!! (he shouted)

Everyone froze and looked at Dumi.....

Seems like there is more to the Phakade blood than we thought.....

IS IT REALLY WHO WE THINK IT IS???

again sorry it's short guys

COMMENT, COMMENT AND
COMMENT.....

#loveyou

Admin

[06/16, 16:15] Snr: INSERT 21

- .
- .
- .
- .

Dumi's POV

When tumisani told me about the lady
she's been seeing in her dreams, I
started getting suspicious but I didn't

take it serious. But when she told me about her again then I knew immediately that it is s

who I think it is because on this earth there is only one person that looks like tumisani and sounds like gogo. I finally did 1+1 and the answer came out 2 and then boom...Reality hit me...Lindokuhle Phakade.. is out of prison. I hate the fact that she's out, I hate the fact that her first target is tumisani, I wish I knew the bastard that helped her leave prison.

Mrs Matthews (tumi's late father's wife) is probably worried sick right now because she knows my mom is crazy and is capable of anything and I

mean.....Anything!!!

I will make sure Lindokuhle doesn't come close to tumisani because she's the reason why tumisani has no father....

I've been twisting and turning all night, I just couldn't get over the fact that she's out of prison. I woke up around 08:30, did my hygiene process and made breakfast then called Mrs Matthews, her first name is Bella, I believe.

< call convo >

Me: good morning ma'am

Bella: morning dumisani, I'm afraid its not a good morning at all....(she sighs)

Me: yeah I know, you heard??

Bella: yes I heard, and I'm worried about you guys more than I worried about myself.

Me: don't worry about us, I can take care of tumisani and myself.

Bella: I just feel like something bad is about to happen, how is tumisani doing??

(I told her about what happened to tumisani)

Me: she's getting there, but she's having nightmares of Lindokuhle.

Bella: oh my gosh, you see, that's what I'm worried about, no, Dumisani I'm coming there (I heard ruffling sounds)

Me: no there's no need, she'll be fine.

Bella: no, I have to make sure she's fine, gogo left you guys in my hands, I promised her that I'll take care of you guys, I'll be on my way now, so see you soon.

Me: ma'am what about work?

Bella: work can wait, tumisani is more important, see you in a while. (she hanged up)

< end of convo >

wow.... if only my mom was this caring and loving, I just hope she doesn't come close to tumisani because I swear I'll kill her.....

.

Lindokuhle's POV

well, well, well, look who we have here....

I'm back!!! Hello y'all, the Queen is finally back, did y'all miss me???

For those who don't know me, the name is Lindokuhle Phakade, Tumisani and dumisani's mother, yes, I'm the one that murdered dumisani's father and dumisani's father. Oh no, I don't regret it. I was sentenced 25 years imprisonment when I gave birth to tumisani, my little angel never saw her mommy, she never sucked my breast craving for milk, I only served 17 years, all I craved for was to hold my baby girl, my sweet angel, I

know I don't deserve to be called "mother" because simply I'm a murderer but I give a fuck?? Hell no!! well you're wondering why I didn't serve the whole 25 years, well, the thing is, I have connections everywhere!! Before I went to prison I found out that tumisani's white father (Mr Matthews) wrote his "Will". And in this " will" he said, his first daughter will take over his hotel, company and his mansion in Cape Town and while I was pregnant, his wife, "Bella" was also pregnant with a baby girl. So I thought hard and hard, the only way to make my daughter get all his things was for me to make it snappy and just

murder him so that tumisani can get everything under her name and than I can take advantage of that and change the " will" to my name, and I did just that, I murdered Mr Matthews and ran away with 12 million, while waiting to give birth to tumisani so she can get all the things said in the " will" under her name, but unfortunately my plan failed, I gave birth to tumisani and boom.....out of nowhere the " will" said the first daughter of Mr Matthews will only get the companies and mansions once they've turned 18. I was so pissed when I heard that. I was arrested three days after tumisani was born and trust me,

she was one hell of a beautiful baby, when I got to prison, they gave me 25 years on a silver platter. I started planning my next moves, my friends would always visit me but than slowly they all left, and guess who came to my rescue....Monster....Monster was Matthews best friend, we were fuck buddies back in the day....he wanted me but I was married to Dumisani's father and plus I was Matthews mistress, I agreed to be monsters fuck buddy and yeah life went on. Monster came to my rescue on my 16th year in prison, he wanted to get me out of prison earlier but I stopped him because I wanted

things to go according to my plan. My plan was that I get out of prison when tumisani is 17, and once I'm out of prison I would bond with her and reconnect, then once she's turns 18, I would snatch her rights, right from under her very own nose, slowly but surely....yeah my plan is definitely in the right lane..

But the only obstacle is Dumisani. Dumisani is one stubborn ass hell of a boy. Since birth he was stubborn just like his father!! He will do anything just to make my plans fail. My eyes and ears have been watching these kids since I was I'm prison. As I've said, I have

connections everywhere. I know Skopp kidnapped my daughter and she was shot. I hope that bastard rots in hell...He once raped me when he found out that I was having an affair with Monster, and they're enemies. Monster has been there for me through every step of the way, he got me out of prison and now I'm living in his hotel...Too bad he's married to that bitch " Cynthia ". Aaagh..I have way too many enemies....My next target is definitely tumisani and Bella, I have to win over all this things that are under dumisani's name and I hope Bella's daughter won't even think of putting her filthy mouth into this because she was

born after tumisani by a minute, so basically they were born on the same day but a minute apart, which makes tumisani the first. My second target is Bella because she has way too much authority, she has too much of her own, I need to get rid of her...I pick up my phone...

< call convo >

Monster: beautiful Lindokuhle

Me: jack pot, I need a favor

Monster: anything for queen Lindo, talk to daddy.

Me: first come to the hotel, than we'll talk

Monster: I'll be there in the evening, is that OK??

Me: perfect, see you later

Monster: see you (I hanged up)

< end of convo >

I need Monster to help me figure something out, I need a plan ASAP.

.

Monster's POV

Hi everyone, I'm sure you already know me. I'm yemi and yanda's father. Well, yes I know Lindokuhle but I never knew tumisani was her daughter and dumisani her son, I was surprised when

she told me about them, so my son is dating her daughter...wow... and he said he's in love with her.

Which makes it even crazier, Lindo doesn't know about this but I know she'll do everything within her power to break them up. I help Lindokuhle out of prison because we had a thing going on and I started to catch feelings for her but I am married to Cynthia and have two kids already so I kicked the feelings away but when she called me to help her get out of prison, I wanted her. I'm q very powerful man, people fear me and I kill without thinking twice, Lindokuhle is my type of woman, she's brave and savage

and tough which makes her even sexier. She has a beautiful body, big curves that drive me crazy, with that huge ass, oh I can ride her for days nonstop, she has beautiful breasts that rise seeking for attention, honestly Lindokuhle is everything a man needs, she drives me crazy, she's beautiful, smart, intelligent, brave....and lots more.

Yanda: dad! (I snap back to reality, I was in my office at home)

Me: son, what's up??

Yanda: when are you getting tumisani discharged??

(I wish I could but I need Lindo's order

first)

Me: I will son, just let the doctors decide first, looks like she's still in pain.

Yanda: but we can put her on special protection

Me: I know but we need the doctors orders first, I have to go, we'll talk later.

(I said picking up my car keys and rushing to the door)

Me: I'll be home late, lock the doors

Yanda: where are you going??

Me: business

(I left the house, got into my car and drove to the hotel to meet Lindokuhle)

I got there and softly knocked on her door and she opens wearing a black gown with a black bikini...oh yummy

I got in and locked the door behind me

Me: queen Lindokuhle

Lindo: Jack pot

Me: I want you (I said holding her waist)

Lindo: oh really?? (she starts removing my tie)

I smashed my lips onto hers....

.

Lindokuhle's POV

He kisses me greedily and his man down there is poking me thighs. He lifts

me up and I rap my legs around him without breaking the kiss, we get to the bed and both our clothes are already on the floor, we are both naked. He plays with my twins and is manipulating my VJ, I'm wet as fuck...

Monster: I missed this (he groans)

Me: aaahh me too (I moan)

He comes in between my legs and inserts his man inside of me....(I moan out loud)

Monster: Lindo the things you're doing to me aaah (he groans)

After about 30 whole minutes we both climax, he lays on top of me with his

man still in me....

Monster: you are one sexy woman (he kisses my tummy.

Me: you naughty, now its my turn.

I'm so glad I took the injection because I don't want no more kids, hell no!!

I get on top of him and ride him to the moon and back.

Our moans and groans fill up the room and its just amazing, Prison was one nasty hell hole, I surely missed this...

Monster: aaagg Lindokkkuhhlee (he groans) I miss you so much.

Me: Monster, I'm coming (I moaned)

We hit climax once again, we are both panting heavily, he's so yummy. I got off from on top of him and model to the bathroom...

Monster: that ass (he whistles, I laughed, I returned with a towel and cleaned the both of us)

Monster: if Cynthia See's you doing that to her property, she'll go crazy.

Me: if she knew how to control her property then it would be here screaming " queen Lindo's" name (he laughs)

Me: or am I wrong? I can ride you to planet Mars and back, you'll scream my

name all the way to Mars and back to earth

Monster: yes your majesty (I laugh)

Me: good boy, now let's talk business.

Monster: the night is still young, now come here.

(he lifts me up and carries me to the shower, we had another hot session while took a whole 2 hours, we finally finished and layed naked on the bed)

Me: are you satisfied now jack pot?

Monster: yes my queen, talk to daddy

Me: so I'm still going through with the plan but now the obstacle is dumisani

and Bella, Dumisani will do anything to protect his sister, he won't let me manipulate her and as for Bella, I want to get rid of her.

Monster: Dumisani loves his sister with his life so of course he'll want to protect her and Lindo, Bella has three kids, imagine them living with no mother or father.

Me: I don't give a fuck if they have no father, as long as I get what I want.

Monster: Lindo, you can't do that to those kids, its not right and it'll be impossible for you to bond with tumisani if her brother hates you

Me: will you help me or not??

(silence)

Me: you're pissing me off (I was getting angry now)

Monster: Lindo can we plan this through first, let's give them two weeks, then we can strike, because this is peoples life's we are talking about.

Me: two weeks is all I'm giving, after two weeks I'm striking but for now, I'm getting my daughter back.

Monster: whatever you want, your highness

He said pulling me closer to him and kissing me...

Queen Lindokuhle Phakade is back, now its my turn to rule.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Guys plz let's increase the number of likes and comments, the next insert depends on you...

#loveyou

Admin

[06/16, 16:15] Snr: INSERT 22

.

.

.

Tumi's POV

Two days have passed and I'm finally getting discharged today. Well aunt Bella came two days ago, she was worried about me so she decided to come here personally. She's been nothing but the best, I don't get nightmares about the lady anymore and I feel much better now. I woke up , did my hygiene process and just sit on the hospital bed, then the doctor walks in....

Doctor: Good morning miss Phakade, how do you feel??

Me: Morning doctor, I feel much better now, thank you so much for all you've done for me (I smiled)

Doctor: its a pleasure miss Phakade, I was just doing my job, although we'll miss you.

Me: ncooh I'll miss you guys too.

(Aunt Bella walks in)

Aunt Bella: Good morning (she says smiling)

Doctor: morning ma'am, I'll leave you guys (he leaves)

Me: hi Aunt (I smile)

Aunt Bella: hey sweetheart, here are your clothes. (she hands me a bag that had my clothes in)

Me: thanks aunt (I quickly get dressed

into my jeans and black top with slippers)

It feels weird call Mrs Matthews " Aunt" because I've never had a " aunt" before, I wish I could call her " mother" but it'll be hard for me simply because I've never had a mother figure in my life, though I wish I had a mother.

Aunt Bella: tumisani you're really beautiful. (I blush, she's been watching me dress. I lost weight lately but my figure still looks cool.)

Me: thank you aunt.

Aunt Bella: (she smiles) you ready to go??

Me: yes I'm ready.

We leave the hospital. As soon as I step outside of the hospital, the morning breeze hits me. Wow, I missed being outside, I took a deep breath allowing the air to comfort me. We slowly walk to the car and I have a huge smile plastered on my face, I'm just so happy. I feel alive and free. We get to the car and drive off. I took a good look at my surroundings, everything just looks so beautiful. I feel like a new born baby, the world has never been this beautiful before....

Aunt Bella: would you like to get some ice - cream before we get home?? (she

asks)

Me: that would be wonderful (I smiled)

We drove to the ice cream shop near town and had some ice cream while having a good conversation about life and my dreams and getting to know each other better. She made me feel comfortable in some sort of way, I just felt open to her and I feel like I've know her all my life. We later headed home. We got to the gate and I saw Dumisani standing outside as if he was patiently waiting for us. I quickly rushed out of the car and ran to him...

Dumi: tumsa!! (he smiled in excitement,

he opened his arms and I ran into them and hugged him tightly)

I finally feel at home.

Me: I missed you so much (I said letting go of him)

Dumi: I missed you more (he said smiling broadly)

Aunt Bella came to us smiling too. This is the best moment of my life, being with my brother makes me happy especially when he's smiling. This boy is my life, this one. My ride or die.

We get inside the house, Wow I truly missed home, this place is spotless, I guess Dumi has been cleaning.

Aunt Bella: smells divine in here, are you cooking Dumi?

Dumi: yes aunt (my brother?? cook?? you kidding right?? he's the worst cook on earth!!)

Me: are you serious?? (he had a naughty grin on his face, I giggle)

Dumi: of course, I'm serious (he laughs)

Me: aunt don't let him fool you, he can't cook, he probably it (she laughs)

Aunt Bella: oh my word, is that true Dumisani??

Dumi: of course not Aunt, tumisani is talking nonsense, let me go check on

the food (he goes to the kitchen smiling naughtily)

Me: let's see what you're cooking.

Dumi: stay there tumisani, don't even think of coming in here (we all laugh)

He finally finishes doing whatever he was doing because clearly he wasn't cooking, he dishes up for us...

Dumi: I'm done!!!

We settle down, wow, its Lasagne with green salad on the side.

Me: are you sure you made all this??

Dumi: yes I did, let's pray first.

(we said our thanks for the food)

Aunt Bella: wow this is really great
Dumisani (she says eating with
amusement)

Me: its really good.

Dumi: thanks you guys (he laughs
naughtily, this dude with his tricks hey)

We continued eating....we were
interrupted by a knock at the door...

Dumi: I'll get it (he walks to the door)

.

Dumi's POV

My sister is finally home and I'm really
happy she's doing well. well, let me
confess I didn't cook the food, I

bought it and just put it in the oven. I'm a terrible cook, trust me. We were interrupted by a knock on the door, I stood up to go open, as soon as I opened the door I saw something that took me by surprise, I never thought I would see this day, she has the nerve to even come here...

Me: Lindokuhle!! (I don't consider her my mom, so I would never call her "mother")

Lindo: mntanam, Dumisani my son
(tears find its way to her brown eyes and fall on her cheeks)

Me: I'm not your son, don't you ever call

me your son woman!! (I yelled, anger taking control of my body and filling up my veins, the sight of this woman makes my blood boil. I hate her with passion)

Lindo: mntanam, plz forgive me, (she kneels down) plz don't....

Aunt Bella: Dumi who is at the door??
(aunt Bella comes to the door)

Aunt Bella: Lindokuhle!! (she gasps)

Lindo: Bella Matthews (she gets up on her feet again)

Tumi: aunt what is going on here??
(tumisani follows after aunt)

Tumi: you!!?? (she points at Lindokuhle)

its her, She's the woman I've been
seeing in my dreams, its her Dumisani,
it's her!! (tears fall down her cheeks and
she holds onto me)

Lindo: my child (she cries) my baby,
tumisani my little princess (she falls
down on her knees once again and
weeps)

Tumi: Dumisani who is she?? why is she
saying I'm her child?? Aunt do you know
her?? (she asks panicking)

Lindo: I'm, I'm your....(I interrupt her)

Me: she is nothing to you tumisani, she
doesn't know what she's talking about...

Lindo: Dumisani don't do this to me

mntanam, let me tell your sister who I am, plz forgive me (she continues crying)

Me: Never!! I will never forgive you!! (I scream, I want to kill her right here and now)

Aunt Bella: Lindokuhle let this children be, plz let them live their life's, let them be happy.

Lindo: shut up Bella, shut your filthy ass rich mouth, this is my children we're talking about here, I want my kids back, they're mine!! mine!! (she stands up yelling, anger written all over her face)

Tumi: who's kids?? Dumisani what the

hell is going on here?

Lindo: I am your mother!!! yes, I'm your mother (she cried) plz forgive me my children, plz give me a second chance....

Tumi: mother?? (she collapse to the floor, tears flooding her now red cheeks)

Me: mother?? you call yourself our mother?? huh....where were you when all we wanted was a mother figure in our life's, where were you when tumisani took her first step, where were you when tumisani said her first word and grew her first tooth?? huh?? where were you when I craved a motherly touch, when I cried every night, hoping you would

come wipe away my tears?? " mother" ??
(I cried)

Lindo: plz forgive me (she begged)

Tumi: mother?? I have a mother?? The mother I always wanted to meet?? the mother I desperately yearned for, I yearned for her touch, since birth I yearned to be fed her breast milk?? mother?? The mother that took away my father?? the man I always wish I had, you call yourself my mother?? you are selfish, you are evil, you killed my father for your own selfish reasons, every time I heard someone say the word, " parents" I thought, why did God take mine away from me, why did God let me

grow up with no parents, don't I deserve to have parents?? The only woman I consider as my mother in this world is Gogo. Gogo suffered for me, tell me something "mother", where were you when Gogo struggled and strained just to get a piece of bread on the table, where were you when she had to go through thick and thin just to give us a good life?? (she weeped)

Me: you know what Lindokuhle??? I hate you with every muscle in my body, with every bone and every organ, when I look at you all I see is hatred. (we were all in tears now, Aunt Bella bends down and hugs tumisani who is now crying

uncontrollably)

Lindo: plz forgive me, I know I don't deserve your forgiveness but plz find it in your heart to forgive me, tumisani, my daughter, I love you

Tumi: you don't know the meaning of love, if you loved me, you would've thought about my life and my future, you wouldn't have took away the one person I would've called, " father"

Me: Lindokuhle Phakade, get out, get out before I do something I will regret in the not too distant future!!

Lindo: Dumisani plz don't kick me out (she cried) plz forgive me, I'm your

mother...

Me: " mother" my left foot, get out of my fucking house woman!!! (I shout, she quickly gets up crying)

Lindo: I won't give up on you, I want my kids back (she wipes her tears away)

Lindo: Bella, if I were you, I would pack my bags and leave this town because bitch, Lindokuhle Phakade rules this town.

(with that said, she turns and leaves)

I bang the door closed.....tumisani sits there on the floor crying helplessly

Lindokuhle is crazy, all she touches just breaks

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO.....LIKE,
COMMENT AND SHARE

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

sorry I've been scarce, this long
weekend expect the unexpected.....

#loveyou

Admin

[06/16, 16:16] Snr: INSERT 23

.

.

.

.

The next day....

Lindiwe's POV

Things have been good so far, apart from me and tebogo not talking to each other, we've been giving each other ugly looks and attitude, she's pissing me off now a days but that's the least of my worries right now. Brian and I are totally in love, he's been good to me and taking care of me. Well, I'm close to finding out who's responsible for my pregnancy, my father has looked at all the hidden camera's in the house and is on the hunt to find out who's responsible and his

very close but I still want to take Luyanda's blood sample and test it to see if he's the one who impregnated me because something keeps telling me that its him. My stomach is visible now and I think I look cute being pregnant. I'm already in love with my baby and I can't wait to finally meet it, but school starts in a week and I'm scared of what people will say and think about me and I don't know if I'll be able to cope with being pregnant and still schooling plus this pregnancy ain't easy.....I wake up to the sound of my phone ringing....

< call convo >

Me: hello? (I answered without looking

at the name)

Brian: goof morning beautiful

Me: morning babe, how are you??

Brian: I'm OK, how are you two doing??

Me: we doing just fine

Brian: OK babe, what are you doing today?

Me: I heard my bestie is out of hospital so I want to go and visit her.

Brian: OK babe, how about lunch later?

Me: that would be awesome, so see you later

Brian: yes see you later, love you

Me: love you too, bye! (I hanged up)

< end of convo >

OK, I know I've been a terrible friend to tumisani, I've only been to visit her twice at the hospital and I feel really bad, I'll buy her a chocolate to make it up, she can't resist chocolate....

I did my hygiene process, after taking a shower, I put on a white dress with pink flowers on it which stop at my knees with sandals, I tied up my hair, took my clutch bag and headed downstairs...

Me: good morning ma (I greeted and totally ignored tebogo)

Ma: morning, you look beautiful

Me: thank you (I smiled)

Ma: where are you off to?

Me: tumisani was discharge yesterday
so I want to go visit her

Ma: OK cool, here's your breakfast (she
hands me a plate of food) do you need a
lift, I'm on my way to the mall??

Me: thanks I would like that

Ma: this pregnancy is making you look
really cute, your bump is so adorable
Nana (I giggled)

Me: thanks ma

Ma: don't you think so tebogo?? (she
says looking at her)

Tebogo: yeah whatever (she rolled her

eyes)

Ma: hayibo!! what's with the attitude?

Tebogo: mxm nothing (she storms out to her room)

Ma: what's wrong with your sister??

Me: I don't know and I really don't care, are you ready to go?

Ma: yeah let's go

We left the house and mom dropped me off at tumisani's house....I knocked and a lady comes to open, I wonder who this is....

Lady: hi, can I help you?? (she said smiling)

Me: oh, hello, I'm Lindiwe, tumisani's best friend

Lady: oh OK, she's inside, come in

Me: thank you

I came in and sat down

Lady: tumisani!!

tumi: aunt??

Lady: you have a visitor

Tumisani comes to the lounge, oh my gosh, I missed my best friend....

Tumi: Lindiwe (she said smiling and hugging me)

Me: babes I missed you so much

Tumi: yeah right!! you hardly came to

visit me but I missed you too

Me: you chommie things happened

Tumi: hmmm I see, this is aunt Bella, my fathers wife. (she introduced)

Me: nice to meet you aunt

Aunt Bella: nice to meet you too
sweetheart (she said hugging me)

Tumi: come on let's go to my room, aunt
I'll be in my room if you need me

Aunt Bella: OK darling (we went to
tumi's room)

Tumi: so what's been happening?? (she
said looking at me from top to bottom)

Tumi: oh my God, Lindiwe you're

pregnant!!! (she said with her eyes popped out with a huge smile on her face)

Me: yeah I'm pregnant

Tumi: wow, I'm so happy for you, I was wondering why you're glowing and look so cute

(we laughed)

Tumi: who's the father??

Me: eish chommie that's the problem

Tumi: what do you mean, " that's the problem "?

Me: well I don't know who's responsible but I know for sure its not Jay because

I've never had sex with Jay before.

Tumi: how far are you?

Me: two months or so

Tumi: and we know it can't be Brian because??

Me: because I only slept with Brian the day we went to the club and that was only like a week or two weeks ago, I'm sure its one of the rapists from the day of the party because that was like a month and a couple of weeks ago, tumisani I'm confused right now.

Tumi: wow, I'm surprised as hell, I thought you were preventing??

Me: I was chomma, I was, but I stopped

because I thought I wouldn't have sex again until Jay asked for it.

Tumi: oh, but you look cute when you're pregnant

Me: I know, I know, (she giggled) I'm sorry I didn't come visit you at the hospital, just that things happened with Brian and I had to tell my parents about the pregnancy and stuff.

Tumi: its alright, what happened with Brian?

Me: yoh chomma, Brian is tebogo's ex and now tebogo and I are not on talking terms, she's angry that I'm dating her ex and he loves me more than he loved her

Tumi: you Lindiwe that's crazy

Me: yeah I know hey, oh here (I handed her chocolate) to make up for not visiting you

Tumi: ncooh thank you chomma (she said hugging me)

Me: its a pleasure, so why's aunt Bella here, what's been happening in the Phakade family??

Tumi: yoh friend, too much drama for my life (she sat crossed legged on her bed)

Me: what's happening tumsa??

She told me everything that's been happening and it hurts to know she's

going through so much and I just can't bring myself to her tell her that the father of my child might be her boyfriend. I hate how all this will break her now that her mom is back in the picture and I'm sure we all know that Lindokuhle Phakade is one hell of a woman, she rules Soweto for sure. I don't know how she'll react when she finds out that my rapist is Luyanda.

A tear escapes my eye....

Tumi: chomma why are you crying??

Me: (I wipe it away) no nothing, I'm just emotional, all this is happening to you and you're so strong to be able to stand

up on your two feet as if nothing happened

Tumi: (she smiles) its life chommie, there'll always be obstacles in life, we just need to be strong and have faith

Me: even though deep down we are breaking apart

Tumi: yes, even though deep down we are breaking apart

(she smiles and hugs me, I love this girl so much, she's the best bestfriend a girl could ever ask for, she's like a sister to me)

Me: I love you tumisani (I smiled)

Tumi: I love you too Lily (she laughs)

Me: aaagh that fucken nickname (yoh she knows how much I hate that nickname, it sounds horrible)

Tumi: lol (she laughs) its cute Lindiwe, now enough with the tears, its not healthy for my baby

Me: OK aunty Tumi

Tumi: ncooh I can't believe I'm gonna be a aunt soon, can I rub your tummy

Me: sure

(she rubbed my tummy smiling)

Tumi: ncoooh too cute, what's our baby's name??

Me: I don't know yet chommie, I'm still

thinking

Tumi: OK, what does Brian say about this pregnancy??

Me: I told him everything and he's OK that its not his baby, in fact he loves us so much, he's been the perfect gentleman

Tumi: that's great, I'm happy for you chommie

Me: thanks babes (I said smiling)

My phone rings, oh my gosh, I've totally forgotten about lunch with Brian, its already 13: 30

< call convo >

Me: hello babe

Brian: babe are we still meeting up for lunch

Me: yes my love, where are you?

Brian: on my way to your house

Me: no, don't go to my house, come to the bus bus stop on....street

Brian: OK love am on my way.

Me: OK see you (he hanged up)

< end of convo >

Me: yoh chommie, I totally forgot about lunch with Brian, I have to be on my way now

Tumi: OK sure, let me walk you out.

She walked me out and I said goodbye to everyone then left....

.

Luyanda's POV

Everything is just a mess right now, dad's been acting strange, he's been coming home late and is never at home, on the other hand my mom has been making excuses all the time, she hasn't come home yet and Yemi is pissed at both mom and dad. Then Amanda has been on my neck every single day, she's been calling me non stop, telling me she misses me, I told her to back off but Amanda being the bitch that she is, she

just won't stop. I was at spur having lunch, I decided to call my wife, since I heard she's been discharged....

< call convo >

Me: my queen

Tumi: yanda, how are you?

Me: I'm fine babe, just missing you, how are you ?

Tumi: I'm fine too, and I also miss you.

Me: when can I see your beautiful face babe

Tumi: how about tomorrow?

Amanda walks to my table and sits down, damn this girl's got a nerve

Amanda: Hi yanda (damn why would she do that!!)

Tumi: Lu?? is that Amanda?? (she asks)

Me: no, no babe its not Amanda, its the waitress

Tumi: oh OK (she said in a tone that says, " I don't believe you") uhm, chat later then, see ya... (she hangs up)

< end of convo >

Sigh.....gosh, just what I needed!!! not!!!

Me: Amanda what do you want?? (I said trying to keep calm)

Amanda: I want you Luyanda, I miss you, every time I think about that night at the

club, I end up craving you

Me: Amanda I already told you, that night was a terrible mistake.

Amanda: it wasn't a mistake yanda, you were screaming out my name like a hungry dog....

Me: it was a.....

(I looked up and my eyes met with Lindiwe's.....Gosh, motherfucker, couldn't this day get any worse!! she walks up to us, her bump is getting visible, she's with Brian)

Lindiwe: good afternoon

Me: hi Lindiwe, Brian (I nod)

Amanda: Brian? bitch what is it with you and my brothers?? first Jason now Brian?? is themba next in line??

(what is Amanda talking about? are Jason and Brian her brothers?)

Brian: Amanda shut up, what are you doing here??

Amanda: wait, (she looks at Lindiwe weirdly) you're pregnant??

Brian: Amanda I'm warning you, shut the hell up!!

Amanda: wait until jay finds out that you've been fucking his bitch and worse part is that she's pregnant, I thought I was the bitch but damn girl, I gotta hand

it to you, you're the bigger bitch

Brian: OK that's enough, Amanda we're going home (he takes Amanda's hand roughly and drags her up)

Brian: babe, I'll call you later (he kisses her cheek and they walk out)

Lindiwe sits down, waves down a waiter, she orders and looks at me...

Lindiwe: is this what you do behind tumisani's back??

Me: what you mean?? I'm simply having lunch

Lindiwe: oh plz save me the lies, are you cheating on tumisani??

Me: what? Lindiwe stop this crap, you know how I feel for tumisani so why would I cheat on her?

Lindiwe: hmmm just curious

Me: how's the baby??

Lindiwe: why do you care??

Me: I was just asking, am I not allowed to ask how my.....

(oh shit, wrong move yanda, wrong move!!)

Lindiwe: how your what?? huh??

Luyanda: I know you know that its you that raped me, so save me the bullshit and just tell me the truth!

Me: you're crazy

Lindiwe: yeah, I might be crazy but we'll see who'll be crazy when tumisani finds out that you're a rapist because God knows that you're guilty and maybe if you damn confess then you wouldn't have to go to prison for rape!!

Me: what??

Lindiwe: yeah you heard me, the hidden camera's in my house have a footage of you raping me, so talk brother, time is ticking

fuck!! why didn't I think about the camera's!! how could I have been so stupid!! I have no choice but to confess

because I raped Lindiwe and I know this baby is mine...

Me: Lindiwe plz don't tell tumisani about this, she's been through a lot already, it'll break her hear Lindiwe plz (I pleaded)

tears fell down her cheeks and she quickly wiped them away...

Lindiwe: you're so cruel Luyanda, you're selfish, why did you rape me in the first place?? now look, my first child will be a product of rape, do you know how long it took me to finally heal and get back to my normal self again??

Me: I'm sorry Lindiwe, I wasn't thinking, I'm really sorry

Lindiwe: do you know how disappointed tumisani will be when she finds out about this, tumisani is my bestfriend and I love her so very much, I would never do anything to hurt her

Me: I know Lindiwe, I love her too, she's the first girl that's ever loved me for me, she never judged me on who I was or what I did, Lindiwe I'm really sorry, I will take responsibility for my actions, I want to be a father to my child, I want to part of my baby's life plz forgive me

Lindiwe: sooner or later tumisani will fins out about this so its best that we tell her ourself.

(she's right, she'll find out anyway, I'll have to take the risk and tell her, I know she'll hate me for it but I have to tell her)

Me: OK, I'm scared she'll break up with me, I don't want to lose her.

Lindiwe: you should've thought about that before you raped me.

(she stood up and left)

fuck!! this is so messed up...

I can't afford to lose tumisani, shes my first love, the love of my life...

Amanda will also find a way to ruin me, this girl will make my life and living hell, my goodness.....

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO....LIKE,
COMMENT AND SHARE

#loveyou

Admin

[06/16, 16:16] Snr: INSERT 24

.

.

.

Guys plz share and invite people to the
page, its growing slowly but surely,
thanks to those who like, comment and
share

.

.

Three days later...

Lindiwe's POV

Well its the day we tell tumisani the truth. I'm really scared and worried of how she'll feel. Luyanda and I did the test and yeah, the baby is his. It breaks my heart that tumisani will hear the truth, she'll hate me for this but I wouldn't be able to live with myself knowing that my baby's father is my bestfriends boyfriend and she doesn't know...I called her to come to my place and share did, Luyanda is on

his way too....

Tumi: chomma why do you look so nervous??

(she said sitting down on the couch looking beautiful as always, dressed in black jeans, a grey vest and sandals with her braids down, I admire her beauty, honestly)

Me: (sigh) no chommie am fine (I faked a smile)

Tumi: Lindiwe you can't fool me, what's wrong??

(there was a knock at the door, I went to open and Luyanda walks in looking miserable as if he's about to die)

Tumi: Luyanda?? (she looks at him then back at me)

Tumi: what is going on here?

Yanda: babe, how are you?

(gosh what a stupid question at a time like this.... I started fiddling with my fingers)

Me: can we sit down plz

(we sat down)

Me: tumsa there's something that we have to tell you (I said nervously)

Yanda: babe, you might hate me for this but I just want you to know that I've never doubted my feelings for you, I

really love you with all my heart and I'm sorry for hurting you like this.

Tumi: OK guys what's going on here? I don't understand...

Me: Tumi the night of the party that was held here, Luyanda and his gang including your brother came here...(I breathed deeply)

Tears warmed my cheeks, I can't do this to my friend, no I can't....

Yanda: Tumi, (he hesitated) I'm, I'm the one that raped Lindiwe and I'm responsible for her pregnancy....

.

.

Tumi's POV

I can't believe what I'm hearing right now, it feels like a dream, it must be a dream, it has to be a dream!!!

Tears welcome them self to my pink cheeks and just make a river down as it flows....

I lose my voice and I'm unable to speak, no words are able to come out of my mouth, my throat feels dry and so does my lips, I sit there staring at the two of them as if the clock has stopped ticking.....

Yanda: tumisani I'm really sorry for this, I was stupid, that night the gang and I

raped one girl each, your brother included, but I....

Lindiwe: tumisani, we just had to tell you, I wouldn't have lived with myself knowing that my rapist is my bestfriends boyfriend.

Yanda: my other confession is that (sighs) that night we went to the club, when you went to the restroom and got kidnapped at the parking lot, I was busy fucking Amanda, I regret what I did tumisani, honestly I do but I love you with my whole heart, I've never loved any girl the way that I love you, you make me feel complete tumisani, plz forgive me!! (he was on his knees pleading)

How could they have been so selfish, how could they be so evil, my own brother!!! the brother I gave my heart to, Dumisani couldn't have been that selfish and that wicked. That could've been me that was raped, he would've killed someone if they had raped me but he found the courage to molest someone else's child!!

I feel disappointed in him, I'm ashamed to be called his sister...

As for Luyanda, he's selfish, that could've been Yemi, he wouldn't have let anyone hurt his sister yet he raped someone else's sister....

Tears blinded me and I just sat there crying and crying....

I quickly wiped away my tears and rushed out the door, away from that house that my brother and boyfriend were busy raping girls in, that same house, it intoxicates me being in there...

Yanda: tumisani plz don't go plz (he says running after me)

My legs somehow found the strength to run, u ran as fast as I could, until he couldn't keep up, I don't even want to look at him...

I found myself at home and barged inside, the first face that I see is

Dumisani's, tears rush down once again and I start fighting his chest....

Me: I hate you Dumisani, (I cried while fighting him) I hate you, how could you do this to me!! (I cried) how could you Dumisani!! you're evil!! you're a rapist Dumisani!! (I collapse to the floor defeated)

Me: I hate you so much Dumisani...(my voice trailed off as I cried)

.

Dumi's POV

My heart sank when tumisani said that. When she said the word, " rapist" I knew immediately that the truth is finally out.

She finally found out about the rape scheme and now my only sister hates me, it hurts so much. But what was I expecting? sooner or later she was bound to find out anyway. I can't bare to see her like this, it hurts...

I bend down and try to touch her but she yanks her arm away....

Me: tumisani

Tumi: don't touch me!! (she roared)

Tumi: I can't even look at you right now Dumisani, you're selfish, I believed in you, I trusted you with my life yet you find the fucken courage to molest someone else's child, what were you thinking

Dumisani!! Gogo never raised us up like this, what were you thinking?? that could've been me being raped by your gang that day Dumisani!! I hate you!! your presence sickens me!! (she cries and stormed out to her room)

I try to run after her but aunt Bella stops me...

aunt Bella: give her some space

Me: aunt that's my life in there, she's my life, she's all I have and she hates me, I didn't mean to hurt her like this (I cried)

Aunt Bella: I know, she just needs space

Gosh, this can't be happening, her being in hospital and hurt physically, that I can

bare but her being hurt emotionally, I can't bare, and worse part is that she hates me....

.

Luyanda's POV

Days have passed since the day we told tumisani the truth and its been the worst few days of my life, she doesn't pick up my calls, she's blocked me everywhere, on WhatsApp, Facebook, everywhere!! I drown my sorrows in drinking now, that's the only way I can stop stressing..

Its Monday and school opens for the third term today, I really don't wanna go but its matric and I can't afford to fail....

I woke up, did my hygiene process, wore my clothes and headed downstairs....

Me: morning... (I greeted the whole fam, oh yeah my mom arrived two days ago)

Everyone: morning

(I took an apple from the fridge and my car keys from the table)

Me: see you guys later

Mom and dad: see you later son

Yemi: yanda, I need a ride plz

Me: come

(in the car)

Yemi: Lu what's going on?

Me: nothing , why?

Yemi: you've been drinking way too much the past few days, what's going on with you and tumisani??

Me: none of your business (I snapped) we're here, bye!!

Yemi: take care of yourself (she kissed my cheek) bye!

I dropped her off and went to school, I was early so I decided so stay in the car and just chill...

I really miss tumisani, I can't live without her.....

.

Lindiwe's POV

School reopens today and I'm not ready to face the world yet. I haven't heard from tumisani since that day, her phone is constantly off and she's been scarce. She needs space. She probably feels bad and doesn't wanna be with me but I can't force her. My baby is slowly growing inside of me, its the one thing that makes me happy right now.

I arrive at school and all eyes are on me, I ignore them and go straight to my locker and fetch my books then went to my class but tumisani wasn't there, I sat down busy on my phone, the bell rang and the class filled up but still no sight of tumisani...

After register we went to assembly ,
then went to our first lesson...

Mrs Hilston: Good morning class,
welcome back, I hope we all had a good
holiday....(tumisani walks in)

Tumi: morning Mrs Hilston, sorry I'm late

Mrs Hilston: Miss Phakade, late on the
first day of the term, take a seat plz

(she totally ignores me as I try to make
eye contact and rushes to her desk)

All the first three lessons go slowly and
tumisani keeps ignoring me...

I was in the girls restroom washing my
hands when the school bullies entered,
Thando, Zizipho, Miranda and Luko..

Thando: well, well, well, look who we have here, pregnant Lindiwe...

Luko: How cute..(she giggles sarcastically)

Zizopho: oh my gosh, she looks like a pumpkin

Miranda: oh no, she's a hippo
(they laugh)

Mxm, such bitches. I try to leave but Luko blocks my way...

Me: if you don't mind, could you plz get your thin ass out of the way

Luko: oh make me!!

She was now pissing me off and its only

the first day of the term, I slightly push her out of the way and she pulls me back..

Thando: are you trying to act smart or something?? because bitch plz, you look stupid

Me: what's y'all problem?? can't you leave a bitch alone!! (I yelled) mxm y'all just some piece of shit waiting to erupt.

(I walked out looking pissed as hell, I literally bumped into Jason, gosh I don't need this right now)

Me: (let's be polite now Lindiwe) sorry, now plz could you just move so I can pass (he was in my way)

Jay: why do you look so pissed??

Me: does it matter?

(Thando walks out of the restroom)

Thando: oh babe, (she kisses his lips, making it very clear that he's hers to keep, mxm desperate bitches)

Jay: hey baby

Me: mxm (I push them both out of my way and carry on walking)

Jay: Lindiwe!!

(I turned around, looked at him)

Me: toughen your wack ass Jay, you could do way better then that (I said pointing at Thando) look at her, she's

not even close to being in line with me
(I turned and continued walking,
aaaggggh)

Lindiwe chill, its the first day of the term.
it has to be this pregnancy and its
hormones.....

.

Tumi's POV

School, school, school, that word, "
school" used to excite me but now it
doesn't. The first day of term and I was
late. I can't face Lindiwe right now
because I feel sick when I look at my
Bestfriend, I feel like its me fault that
she got raped, if only I gave my

boyfriend my damn pussy than maybe he wouldn't have gone to look for it elsewhere, I feel like its all my fault...

Why do boys have to be such assholes, Gosh...I was deep in thoughts when someone interrupted me....guess who it was.....

Me: what do you want??

Yanda: I can't live without you tumisani, look at me, I'm a broken mess, I need you tumisani, plz forgive me, I'm begging you

(he was crying)

Mxm he's face just sickens me, everything about him just sickens me,

like to the core.

Me: Luyanda plz just leave me alone, why can't you just leave me the fuck alone??

Yanda: because I love you tumisani, I messed up, I know, but plz forgive me, I need you

Me: you hurt me deeply Lu, you sicken me, when I look at you, do you wanna know what I see?? all I see is hatred!! (I was pissed, tears fell down) you promised me you would never hurt me, you told me, " tumisani I would never let you cry again." but look at me now, hurt, broken and oh yes, I'm crying!!

Yanda: Tumi plz (he pleaded) if you ever felt anything in your heart for me than you would look me deep in the eyes and forgive me. (he held my face and made me look him deep in the eyes, I love this man so much....but he hurt me, I don't know if I'll ever forget this in my life)

A man who finds the strength to rape/ molest a woman is not a man but a coward.

Me: yanda (I remove his hands)

Me: Its over

Yanda: no, no, tumisani, no I'll kill myself if you don't take me back, I love you with my life tumisani plzz (he pleads)

I wipe my tears and walk away. Away from the man that I've fallen in love with , the man that made me feel special, Love is so unfair, my heart tells me, " turn around tumisani, go back to him." but my mind tells me, " he doesn't deserve you, you're a beautiful treasure tumisani." I can't bare to see him like this and I can't bring myself to stop loving him, I just can't.....

I've fallen in love with a bad boy....

A little something....

.

I always told myself that no matter what happens, I would never cry over spilt milk. I would never let my tears flood for someone who made me break into pieces, for someone who made me feel less of a woman...

I don't know if its because I lack the feeling of love or I just didn't care, but no matter what happens I will keep my head held up high and I would live my life the way it was before I met you. I would live my life forgetting that you ever existed. my heart loves and loves until all it can feel is love, but maybe you lacked patience, as they say, "patience is a good virtue" but maybe I lacked

courage, courage to tell you that you were not the one for me, courage to tell you about my past, courage to tell you that I simply never loved you..

I have more of pain than love, but that pain forms into love very easily, my anger never lasts for a minute, my anger never lasts because the love in my heart, blocks the way of anger. Wisdom and power runs through my veins. My heart tells me, " yes" and my mind tells me " no".

By: Admin

Show a little appreciation, this is my favorite insert, well not " favorite,

favorite " but I put so much effort into this and I hope you appreciate it, I will only post the next insert once I'm satisfied with the likes and comments

#loveyou

Guys I feel like y'all are shy to talk to me, I would really love to get to know you all, so plz do inbox me, I love people

[06/16, 16:17] Snr: INSERT 25

- .
- .
- .

Yemi's POV

Everything in my life just keeps turning upside down, my dad is always not home and when he comes home, he smells of some cheap perfume and body wash, I don't think I'm the only one that has realized that. My mom on the other hand is pissed at him, she's also always busy. Luyanda's condition is getting worse, he doesn't only drink but smokes too. Whenever he comes home from school, he would immediately start drinking and I doubt he goes to school, maybe he goes to some friend's house and drinks there then comes back the same time school ends. It's Saturday

and I'm worried sick about him, he drinks day and night. I take a shower than wear my black tracksuits then go to yanda's room and the door is open. I find him drinking (so early)....

Me: Lu come on this is getting out of hand, drinking isn't healthy yanda (I said taking the bottle of vodka away from him, his room is full of empty beer bottles)

Yanda: leave me alone Yemi (he's drunk)

Me: no Yanda, you can't keep drinking like this

Yanda: what should I do?? huh?? she hates me, the love of my life hates me

(he cries)

Me: Lu what are you talking about?? (I said trying to pick up the bottles)

Yanda: tumisani hates me, I can't live without her Yemi, she's my everything!!

(he sobs loudly)

So they broke up?? Damn, my poor brother, why did they break up?? they loved each other....

Me: Lu, I'm sorry (I said hugging him)
I'm so sorry

Yanda: I want her Yemi, I regret what I did, she's all I ever wanted but my stupidity got me into this, I love her so much... (I can't bare to see my brother

like this, it breaks my heart to see him
like this)

Me: sssshh its OK, everything will be
alright..

Yanda: no it won't Yemi, let me drink (he
says taking the bottle of vodka again)
drinking will help me stop stressing.

Me: no Yanda, plz stop, this isn't good (I
pull the bottle away)

Yanda: Yemi give it back plz, she'll never
take me back, she hates me, I don't
deserve her , I hurt her way too much,
she's better off without me

Me: no Yanda don't say that, you have to
fight for what you love, don't give up like

this, now stand up (I helped him up)

Me: go in there, take a shower and fix yourself up, then come downstairs and we'll talk like two civilized people, OK??

(I walk him to his bathroom then left him there, I cleaned up his room and threw away all the bottles and cigarette buds)

I wonder how things will be when Mangi and I break up, Gosh I'll break apart.

Yanda really loves tumisani but he's too stupid, he can't stop fooling around, and focus on one thing, I wonder why they broke up, I hope he didn't cheat on her because I know my brother very well, when he can't get the pussy then he will

go look for it elsewhere. I finished cleaning his room then made breakfast for two since mom and dad aren't home. He comes downstairs looking much better than before, he's fully dressed and smells good too...

Me: finally, I thought you would never come down

Yanda: I wasn't going to come but I was hungry so I just had to come

(we sat down and started to eat)

Me: do you wanna talk about it?

Yanda: I'm sure you dying to know so I'll tell you....well its my fault that tumisani left me, I was stupid and foolish, I raped

her best friend at one of the parties I went to and now she's pregnant with my baby, I confessed about it to tumisani and also told her what happened on the night that she got kidnapped...

Me: the fuck Luyanda?? (I said raising my hands up) you guys were so in love and was going so well...

Yanda: I know, I messed up big time

Me: so what happened on the night she got kidnapped?

Yanda: well that night I was drunk and horny, I was gonna force myself onto her but she ran to the restroom then I saw Amanda and one thing led to

another..

Me: damn that bitch!! luyanda I'm so disappointed in you right now, how can Amanda be that desperate for a fucking d***

Yanda: yeah I know and I'm sorry, I hate myself too right now, that's why I said tumisani will never forgive me, ever!

Me: (sigh) now what do we do?? as for Amanda, I swear I'll sort her out myself!
(I was pissed, Amanda is so desperate and fucked up)

Yanda: don't do anything stupid Yemi, just leave her, its not like I wasn't aware of the fact that I was cheating on my

girlfriend.

Me: mxm, this is crazy

Yanda: I know, I just need space, so plz don't worry about me , OK? (he said standing up)

Me: Yanda plz don't go drinking again, plz

Yanda: I wont, I just need some fresh air

Me: OK take care of yourself plz

Yanda: I will (he kissed my cheek then walked out)

This is harder then I thought. I doubt tumisani will ever forgive him. If this was me and Mangi, I don't think I would

want to see him again...so my brother is a rapist, life is crazy....

.

Lindokuhle's POV

I guess my plan failed, once again, now I'm back to square one, so frustrating.

But you know what?? I'm not gonna give up, that kid has millions under her name and I will make sure I make it all mine.

Even if it means I have to kill...

I'm pacing up and down the hotel room trying to find a solution and a plan, its been almost like a week since I've visited them and today its Monday, knowing that I don't have a plan makes

me stress....

Monster: Lindokuhle calm down, pacing up and down won't magically give us a plan.. (he says sitting upright in the bed)

Me: shut up monster, you're not helping, its been a fucken week and still we have no plan.... (he sighs and comes up to me and pulls me onto his chest)

Monster: my queen relax, monster will make a plan

Me: you've been saying that since I've been released from prison but do we have a plan?? No!!

Mxm he's just bloody useless, all he does is eat my pussy and scream out

my name but he can't even make a plan for one simple damn thing...

I swear I could blow up his balls right now, he's pissing me off...

my phone rings and I rush to pick it up...

Me: Phakade speaking...

Rachel: boss lady, I've got news

Me: speak to me

Rachel: well, I found out that your son was being a bad boy, and now he's in shit... (I can feel her smirking right through the phone, I smile)

Me: oh is that so...

Rachel: yes, well about two months ago,

he was at a party and you know teenage boys and their nonsense, he ended up raping a rich mans daughter and now as we speak, your daughter is angry and emotionally broke, you get the story?

Me: interesting much!! (I said smiling happily)

Rachel: so your role is to be the good mother and go help your daughters sad heart, renew it and make sure she starts hating her brother, that won't be hard since she already hates him and there's tension in the Phakade house right now....

Me: Rachel did I ever tell you that I love

you??

Rachel: bullshit, you love my smart ass
brain

Me: you just made my job easier, thanks
babe I love you!!!

Rachel: love you too boss lady!! (I hang
up)

wow, finally I've got a plan!! Thanks to
Rachel...

(I ended the call and jumped into
Monsters arms, rapped my legs around
his waist and kissed him)

Monster: and then??

Me: baby we've got to celebrate, Rachel

is one boss ass fucking genius..(I said smiling)

Monster: is that so??

Me: yes jack pot, we've got a plan, for now let me spoil you a little...

Monster: mmm I like the sound of that...

(he said kissing my neck and walking to the bed)

Things got heated, we were both naked, I was wet and he was horny as fuck, his man down there was poking my thighs....

We were interrupted by his phone constantly ringing, he ignored it but the person couldn't stop calling....

Me: baby just pick up!!

(he was sucking my twins so good!! the constant ringing was pissing me off)

Monster: no, I'll call them back later!!

(he says kissing me all over)

The ringing was just getting worse and worse... (I pushed him off of me and gave him the phone)

Me: answer it...

(he picks up looking angry as fuck and horny as well)

Monster:hello?? (he said annoyed)

...

Monster: what?? what are you doing

here Cynthia??

....

Monster: I'll be down there in ten min

(he hangs up and looks at me)

Me: what is it??

Monster: Cynthia is downstairs, at the receptionist

Me: fuck, how did she know you were here?

Monster: my car is outside and she said she was here to pick up a few things...

Me: ok go to her

(I was disappointed and jealous, I wanted him in me right now but his bitch

of a wife just had to ruin everything)

Monster: but babe, I still... (he looked down at his erected d***, he can go fuck her for all I care)

Me: I don't care Monster, just go to your wife

Monster: my queen, I'm sorry

Me: whatever plz leave

(he immediately gets dressed and comes to kiss me but I push him away

Me: just leave plz

(he turns around leaves)

Mxm, I need to get rid of this bitches they keep standing in my way and

ruining all my damn plans.....

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

#loveyou

Admin

[06/16, 16:17] Snr: CONTINUATION

- .
- .
- .

Monster's POV

Cynthia better have a good reason of why she's here because she just cost

me a pussy. I'm so horny right now, I'm practically walking around with a boner....

Lindokuhle is pissed, now I gotta fix that too...

I get to the receptionist and she's standing their patiently waiting for me with a huge pathetic smile on her stupid little face...

Cynthia: baby (she came to hug me)

Me: what are you doing here??

Cynthia: I came to spend time with my husband, am I not allowed to spend time with my husband?? (she says)

Me: you could've waited till I get home,

can't you see I'm still at work?

(we were at my office now)

Cynthia: at work?? smelling like some cheap woman perfume?? is that what you call work?

Me: what are you trying to say?

Cynthia: what is going in Monster?
you've changed, you don't communicate with your kids anymore, you're not home most of the times and you don't get intimate with me anymore, what is going on?

Me: as I've already told you before, I'm busy!!

Cynthia: so busy that you don't have

time for your family anymore?

Me: Cynthia what are you really doing here?? (I said irritatedly)

Cynthia: I came to see what you call, "work" but clearly this "work" is not really what I thought it was.

Me: so you saying I'm cheating on you?

Cynthia: I didn't say anything about cheating but now that you've brought it up, maybe it is true...

Me: this is ridiculous Cynthia, this is pathetic (I said sitting down and pouring a glass of wine)

Cynthia: monster did you ever love me?

Me: Cynthia what are you talking about?
of course I love you, if not then why did I
marry you and have two beautiful
children with you?

Cynthia: promise me that you're not
cheating on me?

Me: I promise babe (I said standing up
and planting a kiss on her lips)

Cynthia: let's hope that's true..

(with that said, she turns around and
leaves, banging the door behind her)

Gosh, she's already suspecting me!! I
need to pull myself together, these
women are driving me nuts!!! I can't ruin
my reputation like this...

.

Lindokuhle's POV

I was on my way out when I accidentally bumped into Cynthia at the receptionist, her facial expression was both anger and stress...

Cynthia: uhm Lindokuhle?? (she asked confused)

Me: one and only...

Cynthia: when did you get out of prison?

Me: I don't discuss my personal matters with just anyone.

Cynthia: oh OK, so what are you doing at my husband's hotel?

Me: I live here

Cynthia: live here?? how? why?

Me: you're wasting my time Cynthia, so plz if you don't mind, I have some serious business to take care of.. (I said almost walking away)

Cynthia: wait!! that perfume?? (she says sniffing) where did you get it?

(shit, monster probably smells likely me and she's suspecting us)

Me: I got it from the shop, would you like to know the address of the shop? (I said sarcastically)

Cynthia: mxm, no!! (she walks away looking pissed)

I left the hotel, got into my car and drove off to tumisani's school. Maybe I should pay to Phakade Princess a visit, it is already 15:30. The school opened and kids started departing from the school....

.

Tumi's POV

I was on my way to the school gate when someone called my name and they were behind me, I turned around...

Lindiwe: tumisani plz wait...

(she says almost running after me, I was nervous to even look at her)

Lindi: tumsa plz don't do this to our

friendship, plz don't let a boy get between us, we've been friends for so long and now because of a boy you want to end our friendship, I know this is hard for you to forget but its none of our fault. Its not your fault that I was raped, some people are just selfish they want to take other people's happiness away but that's life. I've accepted the fact that I was raped by your boyfriend and that my baby is a product of rape. (she was now crying, I pulled her into my arms and hugged her)

Me: I'm sorry Lindiwe, I'm sorry. I just can't get over this, its too painful, every time I look at you I feel like dying, I feel

like its all my fault that this happened to you, if only...

Lindiwe: no tumisani this is none of our fault, let's move on and forget about this, I missed you so much. I'm so sorry about this, I know things didn't go the way we wanted it but its life.

Me: don't apologize Lindiwe, I'm the one that should apologize, I'm sorry I should be supporting you right now, not being distant from you.

Lindi: you're forgiven, our baby missed you (she said rubbing her tummy, we laughed)

Me: I missed our baby too..

(we hugged and started walking together)

Me: so how's Brian?

Lindi: he's fine, just been caring and loving as always.

(I heard someone calling my name, It sounded familiar....I turned around)

Its her. My so called, " mother", so she still finds the courage to call my name, WOW..

Lindi: tumsa that lady is...

Me: My mother

(she gets out of the car and comes up to us)

Lindo: tumisani, mntanam (she hugs me, out of nowhere)

I somehow feel good, I feel welcome in the arms of mother, it feels so warm and loving. Comfortable and welcoming. Is this how a mothers embrace feel like?? I feel wanted and treasure....I've never experienced this kind of warmth before, I know my mother did her evil deeds but do I deserve this punishment? Do I deserve to be motherless because of her wrong doings?? A mothers touch is more special then any other touch. I have such a strong connection with her, I just want to stay in her arms forever, this feeling is extraordinary...

Lindo: can we please talk? (she asks letting me go and I just want to hug her all over again. I want to say no to her question but maybe I should just hear her out, let her explain herself)

My subconscious is screaming out a big fat " NO" but my body expression is betraying me...

Me: uhm, I, I don't know

(I don't know what to do, Dumisani will kill me if he finds out that I'm communicating with her)

Lindo: please tumisani please (she pleads)

Lindi: uhm chommie, I think you should

give her a chance to explain, hear her out (she says sincerely)

Me: but.. (I hesitated and looked into her eyes) OK fine

(I don't know if this is a good idea but, I just want to experience this, maybe just a little)

Lindi: OK chommie, see you later, I'll call you (she hugs me and leaves, we get into Lindo's car and she starts the engine)

Me: where are we going? (I asked nervously)

Lindo: to MacDonalds, maybe we can eat first then talk, that's if you don't mind?

(she says looking at me and smiling)

Me: oh OK, but Dumisani will be worried about me, I have to call him first...(I say, then I remembered that we're not on talking terms, we haven't spoken since the day I found out the truth...)

Me: oh uhm never mind...(I look out the window)

Lindo: is there anything wrong?

Me: uhm no nothing..

I feel comfortable around this woman, I just feel welcomed and open around her, this bond between us amazes me. Is this how it feels to have a mother? Yet I can't stop thinking about all the things

she's done...

Yet again I can't hate someone I've never seen or been with before, this is confusing...

Lindo: we are here..(she announces, we get out of the car and go into MacD's, ordered our food and sat down)

Lindo: well, tumisani firstly I want to assure you that as your mother I've never stopped loving you or ever even thought of disliking you, I loved you the day I found out that you were growing inside of me, I know the bad decisions that I've made cost you not to have a mother figure in your life and I would

really like you to plz find it in your heart to forgive me...

(she sounds so sincere and apologizing that I deeply want to forgive her but it feels like something is holding me back, I don't want to be motherless forever, we only have a mother once in life, I want to at least experience the feeling of having a mother figure in my life)

Me: uhm, I need time (I say in the nicest way possible)

Lindo: yes of course, its not easy to forgive someone, it takes time so take your time but just know that I'm sincerely sorry and I'll always love you...

Me: thank you (I smile, blinking away tears)

Lindo: I know your brother would never forgive me because its not easy but I understand... (we silently ate then left MacD's and drove to the direction of my house)

Me: so where are you staying?? (I asked trying to lighten up the mood)

Lindo: I don't have a place at the moment but I'm currently staying at a hotel

Me: oh OK, do you work?

Lindo: no, I'm looking for a job at the moment since I've just gotten out of

prison..

Me: oh OK

Lindo: maybe we should do this more often, I really want to get to know you and but a mother to my daughter but I don't want to push you

Me: uhm I would like to do this again too

Lindo: how about this weekend? we could go out shopping and do your hair and stuff..

(she says smiling and parking outsiders the gate of my house)

Me: I'll think about it

Lindo: here's my number, text me then

we'll talk and if you need anything plz do call..(she scribbles her number down on paper and hands it to me)

Me: OK

Lindo: OK thank you for giving me a chance to talk to you, I hope you'll forgive me and maybe we could get to know each other better

Me: OK thanks, bye! (I said leaving the car before anyone saw me, especially Dumi)

I would really like to get to know my mother better but I feel like my subconscious is telling me to back off...I just like this new feeling of being wanted

by your mother....it's extraordinary...

COMMENT, COMMENT, COMMENT

Will Lindokuhle's plan of winning her daughters heart succeed?? will tumisani find it her heart to forgive both her brother and her mother?? will tumisani forgive Luyanda and get back together with him?? Will Cynthia find out the truth behind her husband's constant change of behaviour?? ...

well, we'll just have to wait and see....its Hidden secrets after all...

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO, LIKE,

SHARE AND COMMENT

plz feel free to advertise your pages
guys!!!

[06/16, 16:18] Snr: INSERT 26

.

.

Guys let's keep liking and sharing plz,
out page is taking long to improve but
I'm a patient person

.

Tumi's POV

As soon as I get home, I find Dumisani
pacing up and down, he looks panicked
and worried, he sees me and rushes

towards me...

Dumi: tumisani where the hell have you been, I've been worried sick...(he says hugging me tight, as if I was going to disappear)

Dumi: where have you been?

(he let's go of me and the piece of paper in the hands catch his attention, its Lindo's number scribbled down plus her name)

Dumi: what?? where did you get this??
(he says looking pissed)

Me: uhm, uhm, I (I hesitated)

Dumi: tumisani plz don't tell me you're getting into contact with her!? plz tell me

you're not??

(he says shaking me furiously)

Me: Dumisani plz, you're hurting me

(I said trying to get out of his strong grip)

Me: I know she did bad things but don't you think we should forgive her?

Dumi: never!! never! over my dead body, I will never forgive her and you will never forgive her either, understood? (he said grabbing the piece of paper out of my hands and cutting it into tiny little pieces)

Me: OK, I'm sorry for going to meet her but everyone deserves a second chance, I've decided to forgive you for what you

did, I want to at least try to forgive mom too...

(I was now emotional, maybe all I want is a mother that cares and loves me)

Dumi: thank you for forgiving me, I know I was selfish and I'm really truly sorry but I don't know if I'll ever forgive mom. (he said hugging me)

Me: OK, did aunt get home safely?

Aunt Bella left early this morning to Cape Town, she had an urgent business meeting that she had to attend, she usually calls to check up on us...

Dumi: no, that's why I was worried, she didn't call or text me...(well, that's

strange, she always calls)

Me: that doesn't sound normal, what if something happened to her?? (I asked worriedly)

Dumi: no, don't think like that, I've tried to call her several times but her phone keeps sending me straight to voicemail.

Me: this isn't normal Dumisani, do you perhaps have her daughter/ sons number?

Dumi: no, I don't have any of their numbers...don't worry, I'm sure she's just busy, go and change nana..

Me: OK I'll be back.

I went to my room and changed into

blue jeans and a long sleeve shirt then went to the lounge again...

Dumi's phone rang...

Dumi: hello??

....

Dumi: yes, this is Dumisani Phakade

....

Dumi: Bella Matthews, yes I know her
(he puts it on loudspeaker)

Voice: I'm Vuyo, Bella Matthews
personal assistant, I just want to inform
you that Bella Matthews has been in an
accident and she was rushed into
hospital a couple of hours ago, we don't

know her condition as they are still busy with her..

Both of us: what!!?

Dumi: where? what hospital!?

Vuyo: Groote Schuur Hospital in Cape town, I believe you guys are in Soweto so don't worry about it, I'll keep you in touch.

Dumi: no, we're on our way, we'll be on the next bus to Cape town, plz text me the details.

Vuyo: are you sure

Dumi: yes

Vuyo: OK, I'll meet you guys at Bus stop

tomorrow in Cape town

Dumi: thank you (he hangs up)

Oh my God, why is all this happening to us, why is everything turning upside down, Aunt Bella doesn't deserve this...

Dumi: tumisani go pack your bag plz we're going to Cape town and I can't leave you here all alone.

Me: OK

I went to my room and started packing. I called Lindiwe and informed her about what is happening, she's worried. This is too much to bare, I feel like we're being punished, Life is so not fair....

.

Lindokuhle's POV

Finally my plans are getting back on its feet, tumisani will soon fall into my trap and then I'll strike, once I strike, I won't pity anyone...

On the other hand, my other plan worked perfectly, Bella Matthews is soon going to be out of the picture, I planned an accident for her, I found out that she was heading to Cape town today so I planned a beautiful surprise for her...

I was interrupted by my ringing phone...

< call convo >

Me: Rachel talk to me

Rachel: boss lady, the job is done

Me: is she dead?

Rachel: from the look of things, I think she is, because the car literally rolled...

Me: thanks babe (I smiled)

Rachel: always a pleasure, so how did things go with " the daughter"??

Me: better than I expected, she was actually smooth andhow do I say this, hmm..(I thought) " obedient " maybe...

Rachel: perfect, so when are you gonna satisfy me??

(wow, well, well, well, I'm sure y'all are wondering what Rachel means?? well, let me break it down for you....I'm

Bisexual....I date both men and women. I love the dick and I love the pussy just as much, its only between me and Rachel, No one knows...)

Me: uhm ...about that..

Rachel: nah, Lindo plz don't give me excuses

Me: but babe, you gotta understand, I've been busy lately...

Rachel: doing what Lindokuhle?? huh??
mxm i miss you

Me: I miss you too babe, how about tomorrow evening, I could come over to your place?

Rachel: perfect, so tomorrow it is?

Me: yep, I gotta go, keep me in touch

Rachel: will do..(I hanged up)

< end of convo >

OK, I know I'm a bitch, hoe, whore and all the other names there are but that's life...

I met Rachel in prison, she was a lesbian and she turned be bisexual too, Prison is one sick hell hole, but I enjoyed it tho, Rachel was always there for me, she's beautiful, brave, tough, she taught me a lot, she's also one crazy ass bitch, she doesn't take shit from anyone. One thing I admired about her was that she was really smart, she got brains for days...

Monster barged into the room fuming

with anger..

Monster: what the hell did you do
Lindokuhle?

(he said yelling furiously)

Me: you need to chill and plz don't you
ever barge into my room like that

Monster: fuck that! what did you do to
Bella?

(oh, he's pissed because of that bitch,
mxm)

Me: is that why you look like a volcano
that is about to explode? (I asked sitting
down on the bed)

Monster: Lindokuhle don't fuck with me,

what did you do to Bella?

Me: mxm, I did what I was supposed to do a very long time ago..

Monster: didn't I tell you to wait Lindokuhle!!? what did I tell you?

Me: I know what you told me Monster but, she was pissing me off..

Monster: damn you Lindokuhle, do you know what you've done?? the damage you've caused??

Me: I don't care Monster, I don't give a fuck!! (I said yelling, he's pissing me off)

Monster: well I'm sure you would care once you find out that your kids are on the bus on their way to Cape town (he

said)

Me: what!!?? (I jumped off the bed)

Monster: yes, you heard me, your children are on their way to Cape town !!

Me: how!! why??

Monster: if you had listened to me then this wouldn't have happened, now the plan is ruined!!

Me: fuck!!?

(I said banging the table and knocking off the things that were on it)

This cannot be happening, why now?

Motherfucker why?? I was fuming with anger, I picked up my phone and called

Rachel...

Rachel: before you bite my neck off, plz chill, I only found out now so plz don't bite my head off!!

Me: what the fuck are we gonna do??

Rachel: I can't think when you're screaming Lindokuhle, chill!!!

Me: OK, I'm calm (I was breathing heavily)

Rachel: OK, so this is what's gonna happen, you will go to Cape town and wait till after the funeral, kuhle i hope you're listening, I don't want you to give me excuses say, " I was pissed", don't you dare strike, OK!!?

Me: ok, ok, got it, then what??

Rachel: after the funeral, they will read out the will of both Mr Matthews and Bella Matthews at their house, you have to be present at that meeting, and again, don't strike, after you've heard of what the will says then we'll make our next move, ok

Me: ok

Rachel: Lindo promise me you won't do anything stupid?

Me: I promise

Rachel: good now start packing, your bus leave at 10:30 tomorrow morning...

Me: ok, thank you

Rachel: sure, see you tomorrow morning
(she hangs up)

.

Me: I gotta start packing, I'm leaving
(I said walking up and down the room)

Monster: so soon?? Lindo think about
this plz, let's plan this

Me: don't worry about me monster (I
said throwing my clothes in my suitcase)

Monster: I'm coming with you

Me: hell to the No!! you're not coming
with me, you have a wife and kids to
take care of

Monster: No Lindo I'm coming with you

and that is final

Me: suit yourself, just don't stand in my way

Monster: if it means protecting you then so be it

(he says leaving the room and banging the boor)

Gosh, everything is in such a mess, I have to fix this, ASAP...

.

I wake up the next day to wet kisses, caressing my body, it went down to my tummy and as soon as it touch my jack pot, a moan escapes my lips...I slowly open my eyes and I'm completely

naked...

Rachel: good morning gorgeous (she said smiling)

Me: Morning beautiful, how did you get in and how did you strip me naked without me knowing?? (I said sitting up)

Rachel: well as for the first question, I have my ways and as for the second question, you're a beautiful deep sleeper...

(she said smashing her lips onto mine)

She passionately kisses me, sending tingles down my spine, the kissing gets heated, I quickly undress her and suck her beautiful twins, (she moans in

pleasure) she grabs my ass and squeeze it (I moan) she pulls out from the kiss and heads down to my jack pot...

Me: not so fast Rachel (I complain and bring her lips back to mine)

Rachel: baby you have a bus to catch, we have to make it quick...(she moaned)

Me: what's the time??

Rachel: something pass 8hr am

Me: ok, but let me eat you first

(I went down to her honey jar and took her to planet Mars and back)

Rachel: fuck!! aaaaah!! am coming!!

(she climax and I pull out)

Rachel: my turn

(she eats my cookie and takes me to an unknown planet)

Me: aaaah, aah, fuck, Rachel!!!

(I moaned in pleasure)

After what felt like eternity. I finally climax and damn!! that felt good!

Rachel: come on Lindo, let's take a shower, you need to be on the bus in less then an hour

Me: that was amazing babe

Rachel: I know (she said kissing my forehead)

Me: why can't you come with me Rachel?

Rachel: I can't babe, you know I have to stay, my dad won't let me.

Me: the old man thinks you're his wife.

Rachel: I know right, now come on

(we hopped into the shower and had another session then lotion each other and got dressed)

I wore black jeans, a black vest tucked into the jeans with black pumps, black is my favorite color especially when my enemies are right where I wanted them to be...

Rachel: you look beautiful, black suits you

Me: thanks babe (I kissed her cheek) I'll miss you

Rachel: me too boss lady, now come on, I gotta drop you at the bus stop.

Me: OK, but baby, Monster is coming with me (her facial expression changed to annoyed)

Rachel and Monster don't really get along that well but shame, too bad, they'll be strong..

Rachel: you don't need him Lee

Me: I know but he insisted on coming with me (we left the hotel room and headed to the elevator with two suitcases in hand)

Rachel: mxm, I hope he won't be
persuading you in changing the plan

Me: he says if it means protecting me
then so be it

(we get to the last floor downstairs and
leave the elevator)

Rachel: you don't need him, mxm (she
rolls her eyes)

Me: babe plz relax..

Rachel: I am calm, I'm always calm!

(we stop right in our tracks when a
black Limo parks right in front of us as
soon as we exit the hotel)

Monster comes out of the Limo and

damn, he looks yummy in that tuxedo...

Monster: Lindo (he kisses my cheek)

Rachel (he gives her a look and she rolls her eyes)

Rachel: if you don't mind, could you plz excuse us, we're running late. (she says coldly)

Monster: she's coming with me (he statesz and I look at Rachel with that, " I'm sorry " look)

Me: babe, I'll be fine (she looks me in the eyes and she's furious as hell)

Rachel: Lindokuhle don't fu..

Me: plz Ray (I pleaded, Monster tenses up beside me)

Rachel: whatever (she let's go of the suitcase that she was holding onto so tight)

Me: I'll call you ok..

(I said hugging her and kissing both her cheeks)

Rachel: ok (she fakes a smile, and walks away, I get into the Limo and we drove off)

.

Monster: are you fucking with her?

Me: how is that any of your business?

Monster: I hope you're not because if...

Me: if what?? huh?? Listen monster

don't fuck with me, you don't own me
ok?? get that through your thick sculp..

(he looks at me rudely and gets busy on
his phone, mxm arsehole)

.

Tumi's POV

We finally arrive in Cape town an damn,
this place is. beautiful. Everything looks
so beautiful and in place. We met Aunt
Bella's PA at the bus stop and she took
us to the Matthews mansion..

Vuyo: uhm welcome to the Matthews
mansion...

Dumi: oh my God!! (he said in a
surprised tone, this is like heaven itself,

its huge!! This house has to be heaven, who in their right mind has such a house!?! we get out of the car and go inside. The inside is even better than the outside. I don't even know how to explain how this house looks....its just beautiful)

Inside the house there are beautiful golden sofas with a huge plasma TV in the wall, on the far side is the dining table then there's a door away from the dining table, I think that's the kitchen and then there's the stairs with black and white tiles, there are Vases on flowers almost everywhere, its a good vibe....

(Dumi nudges my arm and I snap back to reality, this house is heaven)

we got to the lounge and there are two boys, one looks 18 and the other looks 20 something, and there's a girl who looks about my age (they are all so beautiful, they look like one of those rich, spoilt arrogant kids) then on the other side was a older lady and older man. They all look traumatized and their eyes are red and puffy, what the hell is going on....

Vuyo: uh, afternoon everyone, uhm this is Dumisani and tumisani Phakade...

yound girl: oh, so this is the girl that my

mother ran to, you're the reason why my mother died?! (she cried, what?? Aunt Bella died!!? Tears rolled down my cheeks, why is this happening to us? tears fell down and I just stood there helplessly)

Young girl: it was always about this girl, even in her absence, mom was always, tumisani this, tumisani that!! now she died because of this stupid ass tumisani!!

Old lady: Layla, plz not now (she cried)

Layla: no granny, let me clear off my chest, if mom didn't go to that stink junk they call a house then she wouldn't be

laying at the mortuary right now!! just because of the " so called, princess tumisani"

Guy 1 (older one): Layla shut up

Vuyo: uhm guys, I don't think this is the right time to be fighting, I can't leave tumisani and tumisani with you guys at this state so I'll go put them in a hotel (she turned and gestured for us to follow her)

Guy 1: no, Vuyo its ok, they can stay with us

Layla: no, no Justin they're not staying here

Justin: yes they are and you're not going

to say anything from now onwards..

Vuyo: I don't mind taking them with me..

Justin: no its okay, you may go, we'll sort this out as a family

Vuyo: oh ok, I'll be here first thing tomorrow morning...

Justin: cool (Vuyo leaves and I feel uncomfortable in this house)

They all stare at us as if we're some type of zombies. I want the ground to open up and swallow me right now, this is really uncomfortable, Layla looks like she'll eat me up, Justin looks exhausted and drawn out, the other boy keeps staring at me and the granny and

grandpa are holding each other. I look up at the wall and I see a picture of aunt Bella and some guy holding hands.....

Could this be my father???

YOU KNOW WHAT TO DO....LIKE, SHARE AND COMMENT

I'll be waiting for your comments

Admin

[06/16, 16:18] Snr: INSERT 27

- .
- .
- .

They kept staring at is for five whole

minutes. No one dared to say anything which made me feel even more uncomfortable. I never thought this day would come, I finally met my half siblings. Knowing that Aunt Bella was no more, broke my heart, I only knew her for a short period of time but she made a huge impact in my life.

From where I'm standing I have a feeling that her family won't be able to accept me that easily and its understandable because my mother is the reason why they don't have a father today....

Justin: uhhmm (he clears his throat and brings us all to planet earth)

Justin: its nice to meet you guys, tho I wish it was under different circumstances (he says with sadness in his voice) I'm Justin Matthews, the first son of Keigan and Bella Matthews, this is Zack, the second born and Layla, the last born. (he introduces)

Dumi: nice to meet you all

Granny: you guys must be exhausted so I'll get someone to show you your rooms (she leaves)

Justin: plz take a seat (I just realized we've been standing since we got here, we sat down)

Justin: as you've heard earlier, my mom

is no more (he stops)....we are still trying to process this as family so please bare with us.

Dumi: I'm sorry for your loss, my condolences, I know how it feels to lose your loved one, we just need to stay strong and support each other in order to be able to move on.

Layla: oh puhlease, don't try to act all holy and mighty here, you're the reason why she's no more...(she broke down, and so did i)

Life is so not fair....

(dumisani pulls me into his arms and I silently sob)

Justin: Layla please, not now

(I can see the misery in his eyes, he is trying to be strong but deep down he is breaking)

The granny comes back with a young lady who looks round about in her early 30's

Granny: Rose plz show them their rooms.

Rose: yes madam, plz follow me

(she instructs us to follow her and we get up then follow her up the stairs)

Ma Rose: sir this is your room (she tells dumisani)

Dumi: OK thank you, tumsa I'll see you

later (he pecks my cheek then leaves)

His room is not too far from the stairs, its two doors away from the stairs. I once again follow ma Rose down the large passage, making sure that I admire every little thing. The house is indeed beautiful, it probably has 20 rooms.

Ma Rose: ma'am this is your room

(she stops not too far from the stairs, she opens the door and I follow her inside)

The room is decorated in black and white poke dots. There is a huge flat screen TV on the wall and not too far

from it is my name written in expensive Gold "Tumisani". The room is really big, too big for a small girl like me, there is a bathroom and big bed with soft pink lining. There is a walk in closet on the far side of the room and a desk with a lap top close to the mirror and other girly stuff...

Ma Rose: like it?? (she smiles, my mouth is wide open and I'm unable to speak)

Me: there must be a mistake, this can't be my room...(she laughs)

Ma Rose: no ma'am this is your room, look, (she points to the wall with my

name on it) your name is written there ma'am.

Me: uhm plz ma, call me tumisani or simply tumi, its disrespectful for an elder to call a young child " ma'am" or "sir" , plz call me by my name. (I smile, so does she)

Ma Rose: oh OK, I understand. you know, your grandmother was like a mother to me...

Me: you mean Gogo?? do you know Gogo??

Ma Rose: yes she used to work here with me, she was a very wonderful woman, I admired her (a tear escapes

her eye and she quickly wipes it away)

Me: me too, she was the only mother I had.

Ma Rose: I know mntanam, but be strong. I know Madam Bella's death also affected you too but be strong, she decorated this room for you personally, she was so excited for you to come here...

Me: I know (I looked around and smiled)

Ma Rose: let me leave you now, feel comfortable, if you need anything plz call me, dinner will be served soon so take a bath so long and I'll come get you once I'm done.

Me: OK ma, thank you once again (she smiles at me warmly and leaves)

I take a good look around and the sight of this room fills my heart with appreciation. I hope Aunt Bella rests in peace.

I sit on the bed and slowly take my shoes off then my clothes. I carefully fold them and put it on the bed. I walk to the bathroom and there's a shower and a bath tub and a basin with a tap and toiletries included. I stand there admiring every little thing. I then finally hop into the shower. The warm water hits my body and it feels good, memories of all kinds make its way to

my mind, I close my eyes and Luyanda pops up in my mind. I miss him so much. I can't understand how my heart still yearns for him, I love him so much. Fresh tears roll down my cheeks, I cried for Gogo, Aunt Bella and the love of my life.

I shut the tap and exit the shower, wrap a fresh towel around my beautiful body then walk out to my room, soaking wet. I open my suitcase and find something comfortable to wear then called Lindiwe....

< call convo >

Me: hey lindiwe

Lindi: hey chommie, did you get there safely? how are you??

Me: I'm fine, we got here just fine.

Lindi: OK, so how are things that side??

Me: hectic, Aunt Bella is no more.

Lindi: (gasp) oh chommie I'm sorry

Me: its OK (I sigh)

Lindi: be strong OK?

Me: yeah I will

Lindi: so how are her kids?

Me: yohhh, her daughter hates me, she's blaming me for her mothers death.

Lindi: aaw chommie that's not fair, its not your fault, I have a feeling they're

spoilt

Me: yep they are, but I'll manage.

Lindi: aagg these rich kids, chommie talk later, I gotta go

Me: sure see ya, love you OK

Lindi: I love you too babes, see ya (she hanged up)

< end of convo >

I sat silently on the bed, thinking about life. I didn't want to go downstairs and be in the presence of Layla, she totally has a problem with me....my phone rings

< call Convo >

Me: hello? (I answered without looking)

Yemi: hey tumisani, its me yemi

Me: oh hey Yemi, how are you?

Yemi: uhm unfortunately I'm not fine

Me: oh what's wrong?? did anything happen?? (I was getting worried now)

Yemi: uhm its about Yanda (my heart sank)

Me: what about Yanda?? (my heart was beating fast)

Yemi: uhm, he's not well tumisani, he's broken, he's been drinking lately and even worse, smoking. all he does is drink and smoke, he, he even tried to commit suicide...(she broke down)

Me: what!!?? (I was now in tears too)

Yemi: yes, I found him today with a knife in his hand, if I didn't get there at that time then...(she sobbed) then he would be dead by now..

Me: uhm, I, I,

Yemi: tumisani he needs you, he regrets what he did, plz forgive him, plz don't punish him like this, I don't wanna lose my only brother plzz (she cried)

Me: Yemi plz don't cry, I wish I was there right now, at the moment I'm not in Soweto but as soon as I come back I'll fix this, plz stop crying...

Yemi: where are you??

Me: Cape Town... (I explained everything to her)

Yemi: oh my gosh, I'm so sorry, I shouldn't have called you, I'm a terrible person, you're going through a lot already and now this, I'm really sorry

Me: it's OK, don't worry, I'll be fine, just plz take care of Lu, plz

Yemi: yes I will, take care of yourself plz

Me: OK, you too

Yemi: OK, I gotta go, bye

Me: bye (she hanged up)

< end of convo >

I can't believe Yanda tried to commit

suicide, why would he do that?? He can't just decide to take his life away like this, what about Lindiwe and his unborn baby, he's being selfish, what is wrong with everyone!!?? why does he want to do such a thing....

I was in deep thoughts when someone knocked on the door...

Me: yes, come in

(Dumi walks in looking fresh)

Dumi: tumsa have you been crying??

(he asks closing the door behind him and sitting next to me on the bed)

Me: why shouldn't I cry Dumisani??
everything is such a mess, give me a

reason why I shouldn't cry?? (I sobbed,
he sighs, then hugs me)

Dumi: everything is going to be OK, don't
worry (he wipes my tears away)

Dumi: now come, dinner is ready

(we left the room and went downstairs
where we found more of the Matthews
family)

An older lady, which I've never met
before come to me and hugs me...

Old lady: my child, tumisani I've been
waiting for you, I'm your grandmother,
your fathers mother, this is your
grandfather (she points at the old man
next to her)

Old man: welcome into the Matthews family my child, we've always wanted to meet you but never got the chance, plz feel comfortable, this is your home...

I was so speechless, I didn't know what to say. I simply nodded my head and smiled. The whole family sat down at the dining table...

Granny (Layla's grandmother/ Aunt Bella's mother): thank you all for being here, we really appreciate your support, we've lost a very important and special member of our family (tears rolled down her cheeks) I've lost my only daughter, when she was sill young, she would always tell me not to cry when

she dies, she made me promise her that I'll be strong for her and her children, so I don't want us to cry a lot over her death because we know for a fact that she would break into pieces if she sees us at a state like this so plz let's not mourn her too much, let's try to move on because Bella loved us all unconditionally, let's be strong for each other plz.

Grandmother (my fathers mother): yes, I know its not easy to move on when you've lost a loved one but let's support each other, stick together as a family now that we are all united again, lets bow our heads down and pray (we

closed our eyes, bowed our head and prayed)

We had dinner together as a family and they accepted Dumisani and I even though Layla doesn't really approve of us but I hope that will change, only time will tell....

PLZ LIKE, SHARE AND COMMENT

Will Layla's hatred towards tumisani and her brother change???

Will Tumisani and Luyanda ever get back together again?? Does the Matthews family really accept Tumisani

as there own???

hmmm....what can we expect next, plz
comment or inbox me on what you think
will happen next????

Guys plz do inbox me, I'm always free

#loveyou

Admin

[06/16, 16:18] Snr: INSERT 28

.

.

.

Guys sorry for being scarce.

.

.

Its been a week since aunt Bella passed away and we've done the funeral and I must say, she was really loved, I miss her so much. This reminds me of when Gogo passed away, I was broken and hurt, the saddest time in life is when you've lost a loved one. I haven't spoken to any of my friends for a very long time, my phone has been off this whole time. Everyone in the Matthews house has been depressed since the funeral and that is understandable, I miss my best friend and my old life...

Its a bright Tuesday morning. Cape Town weather is complicated and

confusing, one times its raining and the next its sunny, you just wouldn't know what to expect...

I open my eyes and the sun is shining bright into the room, I pull the crisp white covers off and stretch. I'm in a good mood today, I go to the window and pull the curtains apart, inviting more of the sunshine into the room, I go to the bathroom and brush my teeth then hop into the shower. I let the water caress my bare body, it feels good. When I've finished, I wrapped a towel around my body and walk to my closet. I miss school, I'm probably so behind, when all this is over, I'm gonna make sure that I

catch up. I put on a white floral dress that stops by my dress and structures my frame perfectly. well I got my afro back, I finally decided to take my braids out, what I love about my hair is that its naturally caramel in color which almost match with the color of my skin and plus its a long afro which falls almost above my shoulders. I put a band on my hair which pulls it backwards. I put on my sandals and switch on my phone...

20 missed calls from Luyanda and 10 messages, 5 missed calls from Lindiwe and 2 messages, 2 missed calls from Yemi and 3 messages...

I logged onto WhatsApp and read the

messages from yanda. All it says is that he misses me and he needs me, he is apologizing multiple times...I read the rest of the messages then debate with myself if I should call him or not. I finally decide to call him just to make sure he's fine and plus....I miss him

< call convo >

Yanda: tumsa?? hello, tumisani is that you?

(he sounds as if he's unsure of what's happening)

Me: hey, yeah its me, how are you?

Yanda: oh my love, I've been a mess, tumisani I need you, I'm really sorry for

what I did plz forgive me, I need you
tumsa (he's voice was shaking)

Me: its OK, I forgive you (I felt a burden
taken off my shoulders)

Yanda: really?? baby are you serious??

Me: yes, I forgive you

Yanda: thank you so much, thank you....I
heard what happened to your aunt, I'm
sorry I wasn't there to comfort you, I'm
really sorry..

Me: its OK, its in the past now

Yanda: OK, so when are you coming
back home?

Me: oh I'm not sure yet, I think maybe we

are moving here permanently

Yanda: what?? no that can't be, they said at the end of the year??

Me: I know but they want the whole family together and to make peace

Yanda: what about us?? what about your friends??

Me: I don't know Yanda but I'll let you know if anything changes, maybe I'll come home for the last time then move here permanently.

Yanda: oh OK, I miss you

(silence, I smiled)

Me: I miss you too, I've gotta go now,

talk later, bye

Yanda: bye, I love y...

(I hanged up, I knew he was gonna say that last part, I didn't want to hear it because I'm not ready to fully accept him again)

< end of convo >

Although I miss him so much, I just want to be in his arms again, I know I still love him, something deep inside of me is craving him, gosh this boy is driving me insane...

I pull myself together and head downstairs, the whole family was there once again, I wonder what is the

occasion...

Layla: finally queen tumisani decides to come down (he says sarcastically and rolled her eyes)

Justin: Good morning tumisani, did you sleep well?? (he said smiling, for the first time since I've got here he smiled, he has a beautiful smile tho)

Me: morning, I slept well and yourself?

Justin: I'm fine

(I greeted the elders and everyone else, maids were walking up and down the house, I went to Justin and whispered in his ear)

Me: do you perhaps know where my

brother is?

Justin: he'll be down here in no time,
relax

(he smiled again, which made me calm
down a little)

later Dumisani came downstairs and
joined us all, we had breakfast as a
whole big family which was new for me
because I've never had such a big family
before. After breakfast we all once again
gathered in the lounge and Vuyo and
some other lady joined us, she was
wearing those lawyer gowns and stuff..

Vuyo: uh, thank you all for gathering
here on this day, the reason why we are

here is because we are doing the reading of the will of both Mrs and Mr Matthews, before we begin we are just waiting for one more person. This is Lawyer Dlamini, she is the family lawyer. (then there was a knock at the door, mam Rose went to open and I couldn't believe what my eyes were seeing.....my mother walked through the door)

Mrs Dlamini (lawyer): are we all present now?? are all the Matthews and Phakade family present??

Vuyo: yes, this is Lindokuhle Phakade, mother of Dumisani and tumisani Phakade. (Lindo sat down on the same couch that Dumi and I were seated)

Mrs Dlamini: shall we proceed?

Vuyo: yes please

Mrs Dlamini: OK, the first will that I'll be reading is the will of Keigani Matthews. Written in this will states that all the cars and houses built under his name shall be shared equally between his two sons, Justin and Zack Matthews. These houses are 6 houses in Cape town but in total it is actually 7 when we include the mansion that he build under the name of his first daughter. So basically what I'm trying to say is that Keigan Matthews built 7 houses in total, 6 should be shared between his sons and the one house should be given to his first

daughter. Then he said, his first daughter should have power over the two Matthews companies and the one hotel, once they've turned 18. He then states that this house that we are standing in right now which he bought should be given to his second daughter once she's 18 and that also includes the shopping mall he had built in PE. That is everything in summary that Keigan Matthews said in his will. He also states that anyone that does not obey by the will, their belongings shall be taken away from them, do we all understand?? (we all nod our heads)

Mrs Dlamini: OK, so you are all probably

wondering who is the first daughter since Keigan Matthews had an affair with his PA and she fell pregnant, stated by fact and science, the two daughters were born on the same day but, one was one minute earlier than the other. We had done our DNA tests and all the other tests and it clearly states that Tumisani Phakade is the first daughter of Keigan Matthews....

(everyones jaw dropped, literally)

Layla: what!!!? no, that's a lie, that is not true, I'm the first daughter of my father, not her!!?? (she yelled angrily)

Mrs Dlamini: when you were both born

we made sure we had the correct information of the time, place and day you were born, here are the results, you may take a look...

(Layla grabbed the papers and scanned through them)

Layla: no, I don't believe a word written on these false information, this is all lies...

Mrs Dlamini: it is written in the will miss Matthews and anything you say will not change anything, now please if you don't mind, we would like to proceed in reading the next will.

Justin: plz continue (he says giving

Layla a look that clearly said, " shut the fuck up")

Mrs Dlamini: the next will that I'll be reading is the will of Bella Matthews. In this will it clearly states that Bella Matthews owns three cars and each one should be shared equally amongst her three children, it also states that "Bella fashion Industry" is a family business, so therefore the company should be under the dictatorship of the whole Matthews family, it also states that the orphanage in Stellenbosch should be given to his second son Zack Matthews, this orphanage is under Bella Matthews name. That will be the summary of Bella

Matthews will. if you have any queries or questions plz speak now or forever hold your peace....

Justin: when do we get the keys of the cars and belongings that we've got?

Mrs Dlamini: as for you and Zack you will get the keys in two days time and you will be allowed to do whatever you please with it, but for the two daughters unfortunately they have to wait till they've turned 18.

Justin: OK so is there anything else we need to know?

Mrs Dlamini: yes, stated in both wills, it states that the first daughter of Keigan

Matthews shall live under his roof until she has turned 18, so basically as from now onwards tumisani is part of the Matthews family and she will be living in Cape town in this house till she is officially done with high school and it is her choice if she wants to change her surname to Matthews or keep it as Phakade.

(wow, I knew that one was coming...)

Layla: unbelievable, this is ridiculous

Mrs Dlamini: unfortunately it is written in both wills.

Justin: thank you, is that all??

Mrs Dlamini: yes, I will be taking my

leave now, stay safe

Justin: thank you once again. (he walked her out then returned)

Everyone sat in dead silence and dared not to say anything. I guess we are all just shocked, I mean like who would ever think that Tumisani Phakade, the owner of a whole mansion, including two whole companies and a hotel...

This must be a dream, from nothing to something...

its gotta be a dream...

Comment, comment and comment

#loveyou

Admin

[06/16, 16:18] Snr: CONTINUATION

(Bonus insert)

.

.

.

Lindokuhle's POV

After hearing what the wills said I felt a bit calm. Dumisani is pissing me off, he refused me the right of speaking to tumisani, he told me never to talk to them ever again, so basically they've disowned their own mother. I hate to say

what I'll do to him because it won't be very nice. He is standing in my way, and ruining my plans. The amount of power and money Tumisani has under her name is insane, what makes my job even harder is that she has to move to Cape town permanently, I wonder how I'll approach her now.

I get to the house Monster and I are currently staying and I'm pissed and stressed. Rachel's plan isn't working and I so desperately want to strike but I promised Rachel I wouldn't do anything stupid.

I kick off my shoes and remove the blouse I was wearing. I walked to the

kitchen shirtless and poured myself a glass of wine. I wonder where Monster is, I sit on the kitchen counter sipping my stress away...

I was deep in thought when my phone rang and it was an unknown number..

< call convo >

Me: Phakade speaking...

Voice: The royal beauty herself...

(even over loud banging music, I would always recognize this voice, Bra Skopp's son, Siphos)

Me: what do you want Siphos?? (I said irritated)

Sipho: for someone who is in need of help, you shouldn't be so rude, miss Phakade.

Me: and who said I needed help?

Sipho: oh, trust me, you need plenty of help.

Me: listen Sipho, you're wasting my time, what do you want?? fuck, damnit
Monster should've just killed you...

Sipho: oh is that so?? I know your plans Lindo, but I have a proposal for you...

(oh hmmm, let's see)

Me: shoot...

Sipho: bingo, I knew you would be

interested...

so your target is Tumisani, your obstacle is Dumisani, true??

Me: true

Sipho: same applies to me, how about we team up and work this one out together, we will both benefit from this, I know you need my help...

(this is a good proposal but, I can't betray monster like this, this is his biggest enemy's son and he'll kill me if he finds out that I'm working with the enemy but I need a plan and maybe Sipho is my only source...)

Me: what's your plan??

Sipho: now that is confidential especially when we are not working together, I don't want you to steal my plan so I'll give you time to think, once you've made your decision then let me know. (he hangs up)

Damn, he got me in with this one but what worries me is monster, you may think we call him, " monster" just for fun but, he is exactly the reason why we call him " monster ", he's not one to mess with. I continue drinking my wine still seated on the counter shirtless with only my bra and skirt on when monster barges in and spots me in the kitchen on the counter...

Monster: baby

Me: sweetheart

(he positions himself between my legs and kisses me, I wrap my arms around his neck and respond to the kiss)

Monster: how was the meeting??

(he says breaking the kiss)

Me: aaaghh, it was not bad but I doubt our plan is gonna work, they are moving here permanently and Dumisani is becoming a problem.

Monster: don't worry my queen, everything will be OK, when are we leaving?

Me: are you crazy?? I'm not going anywhere until tumisani fully trusts me then I'll strike, so I'll stay here for a while.

Monster: no Lindo plz, let's go back home and make a plan first.

Me: OK whatever, I'm tired of fighting with you over this, whatever you want to do, we'll do it

(damn monster is useless, I'll have to team up with Sipho because if this continues I won't get anywhere, mxm)

Monster: thanks babe (he said unclipping my bra and doing what he does best.....fucking me)

He sucks my breast and I moan in

pleasure, I cup his face and kiss him hungrily, he carries me off the kitchen counter and walks to the room.

He throws me on the bed and undress himself until he's fully naked. I unzip my skirt and he gets on top of me, he plants his lips onto mine and our tongues dance together, his one hand squeezes my breast while the other is doing wonders to my wet pussy. I'm horny and wet. I hit my first orgasm, my second and my third then he pulls his fingers out...

Me: aaahaah (I moan) damn!!

(he gets on top of me and inserts into

me without warning, I gasp and grip onto the sheets)

He thrusts in and out of me while I am moaning and he is groaning...

The moment is intoxicating and intense, he goes deep inside of me and all you hear is the sound of our moans and groans...

we both hit climax and breath heavily, he kisses my forehead before laying next to me on the bed, that was just insane!!...

Me: monster you're a sex God, do you give it to Cynthia this good too??

Monster: nope, you're just special

(he draws my waist closer to him and

kisses my lips, we lay fully naked on the bed until we both fall asleep)

Let's bring Siphon back into the game, shall we??

This insert was to make up for being scarce, I hope you enjoyed

plz comment

#loveyou

Admin

[06/16, 16:19] Snr: INSERT 29

.

.

.

Tumi's POV

Today is Wednesday, I don't know how much I've missed out on school but I have a feeling its a lot of work. I really want to go back to school, what can I do, I don't know anything or anyone in this new city. I wake up, take a shower, lotion then put on a pair of blue high rise jeans with a white vest and slippers (i love vests and slippers). I neaten up my afro then head downstairs, I meet Layla half way down the stairs...

Me: morning (I smile)

Layla: mxm (she looks at me with attitude and rolls her eyes)

OK, enough is enough. This girl doesn't know me, I need to set the record straight...

Me: Layla listen, I don't know what your problem is with me or simply you are jealous of, this behavior of yours is really disgusting, I don't like the way you treat me, I don't know what I've ever done to you to get such treatment, I know how it feels to lose a loved one and you're not the only one who is at loss here and you can't keep blaming people for things that they didn't do, you may not like me but I don't give a fuck whether you like me or not but the one thing you can't change is the fact that our Fathers blood

is running through our veins, I don't know the reason you are treating me like this but you have no right whatsoever to treat me like some piece of shit.

(after I said whatever I wanted to say, I stormed down the stairs with anger written all over my face and left Layla standing there trying to function what just happened. Everyone was seated except for the grandparents because they left yesterday)..

Dumi: tumsa are you OK?

Me: yeah I'm fine

(I said sitting down, although I was pissed as fuck, Layla needs to be put in

her place)

Justin: are you sure? you're red in the face (I took a deep breath and closed my eyes)

Me: I'm fine (I opened my eyes and smiled)

Layla walks down with a shocked face and sits down next to Zack.

Zack: OK, can we eat now

Justin: sure...(he says eyeing me and Layla worriedly)

We started eating and indulging into the delicious English breakfast...

Justin: oh tumisani, we've got you a new

school (I let go of the cutlery and looked at him with excitement)

Me: really!!?? (I said smiling from ear to ear)

Justin: yes, you'll start tomorrow, you'll attend the same school as Zack and Layla

Me: wow thank you so much (I said in appreciation)

Zack: geez kiddo you sure love school, like dude I hate school!

(we all laughed except for Layla)

Me: yes I love school, school is fun

Zack: well, we'll see about that (he

chuckled)

Justin: OK, so you'll get your uniform later because aunt Rose went to buy it for you

Me: oh, why didn't aunt wait for me so we could go together? (I said picking up the glass of juice)

Justin: she said she didn't want to disturb your sleep

Me: what if she gets the wrong size

Justin: no she won't, she has a daughter who is the same age as you and I think you guys are the same size too

Me: oh OK

Zack: how about I show you around today tumisani?

Me: you mean like a tour? (he nodded) that would be great, I would love that (I said smiling, my mood changed from 2 to 10)

Justin: you guys have a nice day, (he said standing up and Dumisani followed) we'll see you guys later...

Me: where are you guys going?

Justin: we're going to get Dumisani a job

Me: oh really? wow Dumisani am proud of you (I said standing up and hugging him)

Dumi: I know tumsa, I'll see you later OK?

(he said kissing my cheek)

Me: OK

Justin: bye guys (he kissed Layla's cheek then mine and they left)

It was only the three of us left..

Zack: so tumisani where would you like to go first?

Me: uhmm. hmm where is the best place to go to on a hot Wednesday morning like this? (I asked)

Zack: Cape town is a big city, it has lots of fun places, how about we go to the mall?? do you like shopping?

Me: yeah the mall sounds good

Zack: OK, let me go and get my keys
(he quickly jogged up the stairs to his
room)

I looked over at Layla and I catch her
staring at me, as soon as our eyes meet,
she looks away. I don't regret saying
what I said to her because it felt right.

Zack comes back down with his phone
and keys in hand.

Zack: Layla are you coming with us?

Layla: yeah let's go

(she said standing up, she was wearing
a short red dress with white all stars and
a black leather jacket, her hair was tide
up)

We got into the car and drove off to the mall. I was looking around everywhere. This city is lit!! Its so beautiful, damn!! We got to the mall and got a parking space then stepped into the mall...

Zack: welcome to Cavandish mall,
tumisani

Oh my God!! this place is the bomb!! We started shopping and walking around having fun. I had a great day, time was flying really fast, we went to almost every single shop in the mall. For once Layla wasn't rude towards me, I guess what I said to her touched her, we were actually communicating.

Layla: Zack its getting late and I'm exhausted, let's go get something to eat.

Zack: OK come on, let's go

We decided to go to Wimpy, we settle down, ordered our food, after about 20 minutes they brought it and we started eating...

Zack: so did you have fun tumisani?

Me: yes this mall is amazing, I had so much fun..

We were having a light conversation when two guys and three girls walked up to us. There was one black girl and one black boy, one white girl and one white boy with one colored girl.

Black boy: hey Zack (they look round about our age)

Zack: hey Katlego, hi guys (he greeted them and so did Layla)

Katlego: Queen L, what's up??

Layla: good and yourself?

Katlego: great

White boy: who is this royal beauty over here? (he said smiling at me)

Zack: oh this is tumisani, my half sister, tumisani this is Katlego (black boy), Mike (white boy), Lerato (black girl), Courtney (white girl) and Mia (colored girl).

Me: nice to meet guys (I smiled)

Katlego: did they ever tell you how beautiful you are? (I blushed, he's hot, tall muscular with pink soft lips, damn he's hot!!)

Me: thank you (I smile which was the wrong move because my dimples popped out)

Mike: you have a beautiful smile
(he said drooling over me)

Me: thanks (I blushed a bright red)

Zack: OK guys plz stop drooling over my sister, we all know she's exceptionally beautiful, so please stop making her uncomfortable. (he chuckled)

Mike: damn dude, she's, she's flames

Courtney: I'm still here you know, so please stop admiring another woman's beauty in my presence, you are only allowed to admire my beauty (she pouted)

Mike: yes ma'am (he said kissing her cheek)

We laughed, they look so cute

Mia: may we plz join you guys?

Layla: only if you're paying your own bill, I think Zack is broke, look at all these shopping bags (we laughed)

Lerato: we'll pay sweetie, don't worry..

(they sat down with us)

Katlego: so tumisani what school are you attending?

(he says giving me his full attention)

Me: well I'm only starting tomorrow, the same school as Zack and Layla

Mike: oh great, we're all in the same school

Katlego: do you have a boyfriend?

Layla: woaw dude, what's up with you??

Mbali will kill you if she finds out that you were hitting on another chick, so plz stop.

Katlego: but...

Zack: nah hah dude stay away from my sister, she's innocent

Katlego: and I'm what?? guilty?(he chuckles) I can't help it that she's a beauty Goddess...

Lerato: so what, you saying Mbali ain't pretty??

Katlego: no, I didn't mean it like that guys

Mia: dude, go hit on some other bitch, this one is my best friend from now on, right tumisani?? (she asks smiling, she's really cute, I smiled back)

Me: yeah sure

Courtney: Kat, you know better than to

double cross Mbali, she'll cut your balls out (we laughed)

Me: Geez guys shame mahn, poor guy, let him be

Katlego: yeah guys, you heard the lady, let me be (he said smiling proudly)

We laughed. This group is crazy, they actually seem like really nice and fun people. But one thing I know for sure is that none of them could ever replace Lindiwe, she's simply the best of the best....

.

After we had lunch together with the group, we said our goodbyes and left.

We got home around 18:36, Justin and Dumisani weren't home yet, I wonder where they are.

Layla: gosh I'm so exhausted!! (she said throwing herself onto the couch and dropping her bags on the floor)

Zack: me too and we have school tomorrow (he said sitting down opposite her)

Me: so what's your schools name?

Layla: Claremont High

Me: cool, what time do we wake up?

Zack: 06:30 AM, Justin drops us off at school sometimes or we take my car.

Me: OK, what class am I in?

Layla: unfortunately you're not in the same class as me, you're in 11B and I'm in 11A

Me: oh OK, are they nice people?

Layla: well kinda, you'll see for yourself

Me: sure, I'm gonna go look for Aunt Rose, I wanna see my new uniform

Zack: OK see ya, I'm going to my room

Layla: me too (they took their bags and left)

I went to the kitchen and found Aunt Rose cooking and it smelled great.

Me: hello aunt

Ma Rose: hello mntanam, you're finally back, I was getting worried, I bought your uniform.

Me: really?? (I said while my eyes open wide in excitement) where is it?

Ma Rose: in your room on your bed, go check it out

Me: OK thanks aunt (I said running towards the stairs like a small child who is going to kindergarten for the first time)

I got to my room and found my uniform neatly laid on my bed. It is a blue skirt that will probably stop by my knees, a crisp white school shirt, a blue blazer and white ankle socks with black school

shoes. I immediately fell in love with the uniform. Then on the floor next to my desk was my school bag with brand new covered books in it and text books. Wow, this is great. I put my uniform neatly on a hanger and put it in my closet for tomorrow. I rushed back downstairs and thanked aunt.

Later Justin and Dumisani returned. We had dinner and everyone went to their rooms, it was a long day I guess. I got to my room, took a shower, put on my PJ's, prayed and went to bed because the next day will be a new beginning and a fresh start.

.

.

The next day (Thursday)

I woke up happy and excited, I took a long relaxing shower, lotioned and put on my uniform, it fitted perfectly onto me, the skirt was a little above my knees, I tucked my shirt into skirt, put on my shoes then my blazer. I put a blue band on my hair and I was ready to go. I admired myself while looking into the mirror. I'm the true definition of Royal beauty. I love myself so very much. I smiled, took my bag and made my way down the stairs...

As I was walkind down the stairs

everyone turned their full attention to me,
which gave me butterflies and I instantly
became nervous. I got at the bottom of
the stairs and their jaws
dropped...(what the hell)

Me: good morning family (I smiled)

Dumi: oh my gosh, what did you do to
my sister?

Me: its me silly (I giggled)

Dumi: you look....(he lost words)

Justin: beautiful is the word..

Zack: gorgeous

Layla: cute

(I blushed)

Me: ncooh thanks guys

(I said joining them on the dining table)

Zack was dressed in grey school pants, a white shirt with a blue tie and a blue blazer, Layla was dressed exactly like me.

We had breakfast then it was time to go, aunt Rose came to say goodbye.

Ma Rose: tumisani you look beautiful
(she said smiling and hugging me)

Me: thanks aunt, see you later

Ma Rose: OK mntanam, see you guys later..

We said our goodbyes and got into

Zack's car and drove off. The closer we got to the school, the more nervous I became, butterflies were flying everywhere in my stomach and I all of a sudden was counting myself. Layla noticed my sudden change of mood and gave me a reassuring look then said..

Layla: relax tumisani, we're here for you

Zack: yeah if you need anything, don't hesitate to ask.

Layla: I won't leave your side, I promise
(I smile)

Me: thanks guys

We got to the school and cars were parked everywhere, not just any kind of

cars.... expensive rich cars. Students were walking around in and out the school. This school is hella huge from the outside, it is very beautiful...

Zack: we're here (he said parking the car)

We got out of the car and I saw faces that I've never seen before. All kinds of people were coming in and out.

Layla: come on tumisani, let me go show you your locker (she said taking my hand into hers and walking away from the car)

We got into the school and everyone was looking at me, the school is huge, I

swear I'll get lost in here. We got to the passage where all the lockers are, there was more people staring at me, others with their jaws dropped, and others drooling, I wish I could read their minds, I was nervous. Layla kept on walking with that, " I don't give a fuck" attitude.

Layla: this is your locker (she said stopping at the locker number 360) here is your key (she gave me a key)

Me: thanks (I opened the locker and it was empty, I started packing some of my books into it)

Layla: here is your timetable, your first three lessons are English, Physics and

Maths, each class has a number on the door and on this timetable it has the class number on it so you go to the class with the number on your timetable.

Me: OK cool, so where is your locker?

Layla: this one next to yours (she said opening the locker next to mine, I signed in relieve, she laughed)

Layla: relax, you'll be fine

Me: thanks

I pack my books then waited for Layla to finish with hers. The girls from yesterday (Lerato, Mia and Courtney) walked up to us..

Layla: hey ladies (she said hugging

each one of them)

Mia: hey tumisani (she said hugging me)

Lerato: welcome to Claremont high

(they all hugged me and I relaxed a bit)

Courtney: you need chill tumisani, you look way too nervous

Me: I am nervous

Mia: don't be cute stuff, we're here

Me: thanks (I smile)

Mia: what class are you in? (she said as we walked to God knows where)

Me: 11B

Mia: yay!! you're in my class(she said happily)

Me: great, at least I'm with someone I know

Mia: you're lucky

The guys from yesterday (Mike and Katlego) met up with us at some place that looked like a cafeteria.

Mike: baby (he said kissing Courtney)

Courtney: my love (she smiles)

Katlego: hey ladies (he hugged them all including me) Welcome to Claremont high tumisani

Me: thank you

After a few minutes, the sound of the school bell filled my ears.

Layla: that's the bell, tumisani you'll go with Mia to class, take care of yourself, I'll see you during break.

(she said hugging me for the first time since I came to Cape town)

Mia: OK sure

Everyone parted ways and I was left with Mia

Mia: come on cute stuff, let's go to register class (she took my hand and led the way to classroom number 97, we got inside and once again, I got the unwanted attention from everyone)

Teacher: thank you for bringing her to class Mia, Hell's tumisani, I'm Mrs

Jacobs, your register teacher. (she gave me her hand to shake and I politely did, she clapped her hands to get the class's attention)

Mrs Jacobs: everyone this is tumisani, our new pupil, plz let's welcome her to our class

(They all stood up and said, " Welcome to Claremont high, tumisani ")

Wow, what kind of school policy is this, I turned a bright red...

Comment, comment and comment

guys your comments mean a lot to me

Admin

[06/16, 16:19] Snr: CONTINUATION

- .
- .
- .
- .

Them: "welcome to Claremont high,
tumisani"

wow, what kind of school policy is this.

I turned a bright red....

I just stood there for a minute staring at
them, one by one.

Me: thank you (I smiled, blushing)

Mrs Jacobs: plz take a seat tumisani and make yourself comfortable.

(I took a seat next to Mia, the amount of attention I'm getting right now, is incredible. they are all staring at me as if I come from a different planet or something..)

Mrs Jacobs: hello?? class?? over here??
(she said trying to get the class's attention)

She finally got the class's attention and so the day proceeded. I was with Mia every second of the day, I made sure she was not out of my sight because I

didn't want to get lost. The third period finally ended and I was sitting next to Mia while packing my books into my bag when a cute or should I say handsome good looking dude with nice lips with beautiful yellow bone skin walked up to us...

Dude: hey Mia

Mia: hey thabo (she said smiling shyly)

Thabo: you must be the new girl (he said looking at me)

Me: yes, the name's Tumisani (I said politely)

Thabo: nice to meet you, I'm Thabo
(he offered his hand and I shook it)

Mia: it was nice seeing you Thabo, but we gotta bounce (she said smiling)

Thabo: sure, I'll see you around.

Mia: cool

(she took my hand and I could feel Thabo's eyes piercing through my back as we walked out)

Damn!! he's hot, but those eyes tell a different story, it screams out, " trouble".

Mia: damn, he's flames right?

(she says jokingly)

Me: yeah, kinda

Mia: kinda?? you're crazy tumisani, he's flames!! but word of advice, don't get

yourself fooled but all that sexiness

Me: what you mean?

Mia: he's well known as the biggest fuck boy in Claremont high, apart from Katlego and the rest...

(oh that explains those red sexy eyes...)

Me: wait, so Katlego is a fuck boy?

Mia: most of the hot boys in this school are fuck boys

Me: interesting, so who's your boyfriend?

Mia: (she burst out laughing) me?

boyfriend?? I don't do that dating shit, I just hit and run, relationships are a pain in the ass..

Me: oh I see

Mia: and you?? I'm sure you have a boyfriend because a bitch as beautiful as you, can't be single (I giggled)

Me: its complicated

Mia: oh I understand

(she says and doesn't ask anymore questions. we get to the cafeteria and find the group all seated at a table)

Layla: hey tumisani, how's school so far?

Me: its actually been great, not bad.

Katlego: I hope Mia hasn't been feeding you with shit about us...(he said eyeing Mia who was giggling)

Me: nah, Mia's cool

Courtney: hmm did she tell you that she doesn't do dating??

Mia: of course I did, we're best friends now (she said putting her arm around my shoulders)

Layla: anyway (she rolled her eyes)
here's your lunch tumisani, don't listen to anything these bitches tell you, they're bad news.

Mike: Layla don't act all innocent, you're bad news too

Layla: oh puhlease, I'm innocent baby boy (she said giggling)

Katlego: oh really?? you weren't innocent

when you were riding me all night at Mbali's party (they laughed, damn these people are insane)

Layla: shut the fuck up Katlego (they laughed)

Out of nowhere a pretty girl with loose braids and a skirt that sits right under her ass walks up to our table, sits on Katlego's lap and smashes her lips onto his...

Mia: that's his girlfriend, Mbali (she said whispering into my ear)

Mbali: I missed you babe

Katlego: yeah, me too (he says looking embarrassed and irritated because we

were all staring at them)

Mbali: oh this must be the " beautiful tumisani" everyone can't stop talking about (she says with sarcasm in her voice, she has a smirk on her face)

Me: one and only (I smiled sarcastically)

Mbali: interesting...(we stare at each other for a while, I have a feeling this girl is trouble, she doesn't look like just any ordinary girl.)

Mia: tumisani are you OK? (she says bringing me back to earth)

Me: yeah I'm alright (I gave her a smile)

Mbali: so guys, there's a party at my place this Friday evening, y'all are

coming right?

Courtney: of course I'm coming

Mike: if my girl is coming then I'm in

Lerato: of course babes, I need to get
wasted this weekend

Mia: sure, that's cool

Mbali: Queen L?

Layla: I don't know, I'm not in the mood
for partying.

Mia: come on Layla, when lost did you
go to a party and get wasted, and plus
you can bring Tumisani with you, right
tumisani?

The moment I heard the word, " party" a

flashback of the night at the club comes to my mind and all I want to do is crawl into a corner and cry...

Me: uhmm, no I don't wanna go to a party

(I said getting tensed up)

Mia: its not just any party, its the best hosted party of the year, it'll be fun

(the last time I heard that was the day I got kidnapped)

Me: no thanks (I said letting go of the food I was eating because I suddenly lost my appetite, I could feel my body temperature rising)

Mia: but...

Layla: Mia drop it (she says looking at Mia irritatedly like she senses that something is bothering me)

Mbali: gosh, I knew this girl had that nerdy personality, she just doesn't fit in. (I gave her a death stare and stood up)

Me: I need the restroom

(I took my bag and left before anyone could say anything, I could feel them staring at me as I walked away)

it just hit me that I don't know where the restroom is...

As I was walking to God knows where, I accidentally bumped into Thabo because I was so lost in thought. I was

about to fall cause I tripped over my own foot, he caught me and helped me up..

Thabo: are you OK? (he asked holding me up)

Me: yeah sorry, I was just looking for the, uhm, restroom (I said looking embarrassed)

Thabo: that door over there (he pointed to a brown wooden door to my right)

Me: thanks (I smiled then walked away to the restroom, did my business, rinsed my face because my cheeks were red as fuck)

Whenever I think of the day I went to

that club, it reminds me of how I got kidnapped, that's why I don't like going to parties. I took out my timetable and my next lesson was biology. I left the restroom and started hunting for my next class because I don't want to get lost when the bell rings and plus, I don't wanna go back to Mia and them, that Mbali girl is testing my intelligence. I was walking around when I felt someone walking next to me..

Me: if I didn't know better, I would say you're stalking me.

Thabo: no I'm not, I just want to get to know you

Me: why?

Thabo: you seem like a nice girl, and I want us to be friends.

Me: friends?

Thabo: yeah, friends

Me: ok fine, we can be friends

(I said stopping at the class that looked like the biology class, then the bell rang)

Thabo: OK I'll see you around, friend.

Me: sure, " friend" (I said sarcastically and giggling)

The day proceeded and I kept hunting my classes from one to the next and I got to know the school better, although

it was big. I forgot all about Layla and what happened during break.

It is now the end of the day and I was at my locker packing my homework books into my bag when someone wrapped theirs arms around my waist..

Mia: I'm sorry if I said anything that hurt you (she said letting go of me and standing next to me)

Me: no its OK, don't worry about it, its not your fault

Mia: OK thanks (she said kissing my cheek, if I didn't know better, I could swear Mia is a lesbian)

Me: OK (I smiled) do you know where

my sister is?

Mia: oh she's busy with some dude, its make out session every Thursday afternoon at the storeroom behind the Hall.

Me: what?? so you mean some dudes tongue is down her throat right now?

Mia: yeah, everyone does it every afternoon on thursdays.

Me: who is she making out with?

Mia: well its different boys every different Thursday so today she is making out with Thabo

Me: what?? so this is some kind of thing everyone in this school does?

Mia: not everyone cute stuff, only certain individuals, like for example we put money together and gamble, whoever loses, they have to make out with someone and there's more rules..

Me: oh my gosh, that's insane, where is Zack?

Zack: right here princess (he says coming towards us on the huge open passage)

Me: does he know about it? (I whispered)

Mia: no, don't tell anyone plz (she whispered back)

Zack: are you ready to go?

Me: yeah am ready (I said still trying to put together what I just heard)

Zack: where is Layla?

Me: uh? uhmm

Mia: uhm, she has, uhm, cheerleading practice, so uhm she'll get a lift from one of the cheerleaders (she lied)

Zack: oh OK, come on tumisani let's go

Mia: wait, give me your number tumisani

Me: sure (I gave it to her, and we said our goodbyes and then Zack drove off)

Layla is fucked up, why would she do such a thing?? her family is fucking rich, why would she be gambling?? to gain

what exactly?? I feel like there's more to this than just gambling....

.

.

Sipho's POV

Hi, do y'all remember me?? for those who don't remember me, let me introduce myself properly. I'm Sipho, 22 years of age, I own my own company and 3 hotels. I'm sure you already know my father, the bastard that made my life a living hell, I hope he rots in hell wherever he is. I was just a 10 year old boy with big dreams when my father shot my mother 3 times in the head,

right in front of my very own eyes. I grew up in fear, my father was a devil, he made me suffer all my life. I would never forget the day he murdered my mother. At the age of 13, he made me sell drugs and would beat me to a pulp if I ever dared to object. He turned me into the monster that I am today, I became psycho. I would have mood swings and anger issues, I hate being rejected, I hate knowing that I'm not loved. I became, "crazy" as people called me. When my bastard of a father told me about tumisani, I started falling in love with her, I would secretly stalk her, I became so madly in love with her that

the sight of seeing her with another man angered me, it filled my veins with anger and hatred. I want her all to myself. After I ran away from the church the day I was bound to get married to her, I went into hiding. I rejoiced when I heard that my father was no more. It was the best day of my whole entire life, I felt free. I felt out of prison like a slave let loose. I stayed into hiding for a whole month but I made sure I had people following tumisani and keeping an eye on her. I know I sound like a bad person but I'm not. I love tumisani genuinely with my whole heart, her presence fills my heart with joy. Joy that I can still

find happiness in my life. I told myself I would do anything just to make her mine. So, when I heard that Lindokuhle was out of prison, I got my guys to keep an eye on her, I found out about all her evil plans and I know who she's working with but the only problem with Lindokuhle is that she's smart but doesn't know how to use her brains. I can easily manipulate her into making tumisani mine. The only obstacle is Dumisani. He is like tumisani's personal bodyguard, he will do anything to protect his sister.

I lay in bed with a picture of tumisani in my hand. The picture I took of her the

day we kidnapped her, when we placed her on the bed at the house. I smile while looking at her gorgeous body, those curves drive me insane, that beautiful face and that cute ass, Damn!! this girl will be the end of me. !!

I just want her to love me, I just want her to be mine forever. I feel like we're meant to be together. I will fight for my woman, she's the only one for me.

.

Lindokuhle's POV

I haven't heard anything from Siphos and it's been days, I can't bare the thought of waking up everyday without a plan. We

landed in Soweto this morning and I'm living in Gogo's house, I had the spare key of this house because once upon a time I used to live here too. I didn't want to go to the hotel because I didn't want Cynthia to be suspecting me and monster. I don't need more drama right now. I don't have to worry about Dumisani and tumisani finding me here because they won't be coming here anytime soon. I was in the bath when I heard my phone ringing from tumisani's room because that's where I'll be sleeping. I wrapped a towel around my wet body and quickly went to pick up...

< call convo >

Me: Phakade speaking..

Rachel: babe I'm outside, come open

Me: OK, am coming (I hanged up

< end of convo >

I quickly went to the door and opened it, Rachel got inside with two plastic bags in hand.

Rachel: I thought you might need food (she said as I closed the door and she placed the plastic bags on the tabel)

Me: that's so thoughtful of you, thanks babe

Rachel: its a pleasure

(she said coming closer to me and

wrapping her arms around my waist
then kissed my lips passionately)

She dropped the towel and brought my
wet body closer to her without breaking
the kiss.

Me: babe...

Rachel: I missed you (she said
interrupting me and smashing her lips
back onto mine with her hands rubbing
my ass)

Me: baby I'm exhausted (I said breaking
the kiss)

Rachel: (sighs) OK fine (she bends
down and picks up the towel then wrap
it around me again)

Rachel: I'll start cooking (she says looking disappointed, without making eye contact she walks to the kitchen)

I sigh and walk back to Tumisani's room and put on a gown with nothing underneath. I walk to the lounge and switch on the TV and start channelling through...

Me: Ray!!

Rachel: hmmm?? (she sounds down, well, too bad)

Me: guess what??!! (I shouted from the lounge)

Rachel: what??

Me: Sipho called (she rushed to the

lounge immediately with a shocked expression)

Rachel: Rachel: what does he want??
(she said sitting down and looking at me)

Me: apparently he knows my plans and he has a proposal for me..

Rachel: Lindo why are you so calm??
(she says looking at me concerned) I hope you're not planning on accepting this proposal (she said raising her eyebrow)

Me: what choice do I have Ray?? we're not getting anywhere with this.

Rachel: Lindo do you understand the

fact that we're messing with fire.

Me: I didn't accept the proposal yet, he wants us to team up

Rachel: that's bullshit Lindo, and you know it.

Me: but Ray, we need his help.

Rachel: no we don't Lindokuhle!! gosh, I can't believe you saying this right now.

Me: so what do you suggest we do??

huh?? sit here and waste time?? Rachel

we only have a few months till tumisani

turns 18, she can't sign those papers, I

won't allow that. we need a plan!! damnit

(I said shouting)

Rachel: baby we'll make a plan, we're

risking our lives if we team up with
Sipho (she said holding me hands)

Me: Ray, we don't have any other choice,
plz do this one for me, plz Ray (I said
pleading and looking into her eyes)

She sighes deeply..

Rachel: OK, fine

Me: thank you my love (I said cupping
her face and kissing her, she deepens
the kiss and doesn't want to let go of my
lips....)

Me: the food!!?? (I said stopping her
hand which was on its way to my
breasts)

Rachel: that can wait..(she said

loosening my gown and kissing me)

Me: but Ray, am hungry

Rachel: fuck Lindo what's up with you??

(she said letting go of me, she looks pissed)

Rachel: I could swear you've been fucking some one else, the way you're acting...

Me: no babe, its not like that (I was about to hold her hand but she moved away and stood up)

Rachel: mxm, fuck you (she walked away to the kitchen, Gosh, one thing about Rachel is that she's a sex addict, she also doesn't like taking " no " for an

answer, I just don't feel like sex right now)

After 30 minutes, she dished up and we ate in awkward silence, I went to the room and removed the old sheets and placed new ones, I neatened the place and removed my gown, and I was now fully naked. Now I have to please " queen Rachel " otherwise she'll stay angry forever. I walked to the lounge (still naked) and found her watching TV. I went to her, switched off the TV and sat on her lap then kissed her...

Rachel: I thought you were exhausted (she said breaking the kiss and looking anywhere but my body)

Me: baby I'm sorry (I said biting my lower lip, now I was horny)

She looked at my naked body for a while then smashed her lips onto mine, we walked to the room and things got heated, I quickly underessed her. She squeezed my nipple and I moaned, I sucked on her juicy lips while she squeezed my breast. The pleasure was making my body boil, her lips left mine and went to suck my breast, warm and soft. I moaned and moaned..

The sound of my ringing phone fills my ears, it rings 3 times and I kept moaning...

She inserts her fingers into my jack pot
and I moan..

" ring, ring, ring,ring...."

Rachel: baby pick up.. (she says before I
could climax and she pulls her fingers
out....the anger I experience was
unexplainable..)

Me: nooo!!! Rachel fuck you. I was about
to come damnit!! (I said angrily)

Rachel: sorry my love but maybe its
urgent.

(she gives me my phone and I sulk)

whoever it is, better have a good
explanation..

< call convo >

Me: what??!! (I said fuming)

Sipho: that's no way to answer your
phone Lindo

Me: what do you want?? (I was pissed)

Monster: I'm outside, come open

(my world just crumbled down, shit)

Me: what!!?? what are you doing here?

(I said looking over at Rachel who was
now getting pissed because she knows
who it is)

Monster: I'm here to see you now don't
fucken piss me off, come open (he
hanged up)

< end of convo >

I closed my eyes and took a deep breath then opened it again and looked at Rachel who's face looked like it'll explode any minute now.

Me: babe, I swear I don't know why he's here

Rachel: Lindokuhle Phakade, don't fuck with me (she said through gritted teeth)

Me: I'm sorry babe, I...

Rachel: go to him

Me: what??

Rachel: I said got to him damnit!

(I got up, put on my gown and walked

out)

I opened the door and he was standing outside, I stood outside and locked the door behind me, now we're both outside, there's no way will I ever let him in while Rachel is in there fuming..

Monster: what is wrong with you Lindo??

Me: what do you want Monster?

Monster: I want you (he said holding my waist, and pulling me closer to him)

Monster: mmmhmm I wonder what's under this gown (he says smirking, I pulled his arms off me and looked at him angrily)

Me: you have a fucken wife for God's

sake, please just leave, you're pissing me off..

Monster: no, I'm not going anywhere until, I get what I came for

Me: I'm not giving you anything monster, fuck off and leave me the hell alone.! (I said almost shouting)

Monster: you're drawing unwanted attention Lindokuhle (he said looking around and the neighbours were peeping through their windows)

Me: then leave

Monster: don't test me kuhle
(he said through gritted teeth)

Me: I said leave (I also said through gritted teeth)

Monster: you'll regret this kuhle (he said turning around and walking to his car, got in and drove off)

I sighed and got inside, I found Rachel putting on her shoes while holding her bag...

Me: going somewhere?? (I asked folding my arms)

Rachel: I'm leaving

Me: (sigh) baby plz don't do this

(I said moving closer to her and tempting to kiss her but she moved away)

Rachel: goodbye

(she stared at me for a second and then left)

Fuck, Lindokuhle Phakade, what have you done!!??

Now the two people that I need the most in order to complete this mission are gone. I can't do this on my own. I can't lose Rachel...

This is so fucked up mahn!!

COMMENT, COMMENT, COMMENT

What do you think is happening with

Layla??? is tumisani hanging out with the right crowd?? Does Sipho really love tumisani the way he claims he does??? Does Thabo have good intentions with being friends with tumisani?? Will Rachel leave Lindokuhle?? what do you think will happen next???

Well.....don't mess out on the next one, shit is about to go down my babies!!

Admin

[06/16, 16:19] Snr: INSERT 30

.

.

.

Tumi's POV

I woke up to my annoying alarm, I need to remind myself to change this ring tone. I quickly hopped into the shower because I was somehow running late. Well, I waited for Layla till late but she never returned, I tried calling her but she didn't pick up. I stayed up till 23:00 until I got tired and fell asleep. After putting on my uniform and neatly putting my big afro into place, I was putting on my shoes when someone knocked...

Me: come in!! (I said putting on my shoes)

Layla: morning (she said coming in, fully dressed in her school uniform and a big smile plastered on her face)

Me: morning, where have you been, I was getting worried?

Layla: am here now, don't worry

Me: OK, so where were you?

Layla: I had some things I had to take care of.

Me: Mia said something about make out session thursday.?

Layla: uhm, yeah that..

Me: what's going on Layla? are you in some sort of trouble??

Layla: no tumisani, don't worry am fine.

(she said smiling)

Me: OK, if you say so..

Layla: OK, come, breakfast is ready.

I took my bag and we went down for breakfast.

Us: morning

Justin: good morning ladies

Dumi: how are you guys?

Us: fine thanks

Zack: OK now eat up, we'll be late..

We ate our breakfast then went to school, on our way to school I got a call from Luyanda..

< call convo >

Me: hello

Yanda: good morning beautiful, how are you?

Me: I'm good and yourself?? (I blushed)

Yanda: good my queen, how's Cape town? did you start school already??

Me: yes I started yesterday, cape town is lit, as we speak I'm on my way to school

Yanda: that's nice, so aren't you gonna visit?

Me: I'll have to talk to Dumi about that, I'm not sure.

Yanda: oh OK, I miss you babe (I

blushed and forgot that I was still in the car)

Me: uhm me too

Yanda: I feel like you're blushing (he chuckled) I miss your beautiful face, tumsa you're driving me nuts.

Me: hey you gotta focus, its your last year.

Yanda: I know babe but I miss my queen.

Me: hmmm OK (I smiled) I gotta go, talk later.

Yanda: take care of yourself babe, don't let anyone touch what's mine.

Me: lol take care of yourself too.

Yanda: I love you, bye.

Me: bye!! (I said still smiling then hanged up)

< end of convo >

Damn I miss him so much. I realized that I'm still smiling and blushing to myself and I realized the car has stopped and we're at school...

Layla: damn girl, you're blushing, he must be special (I blushed)

Me: lol, you're nuts

Layla: who is he?

(she asked as we got out of the car and took our bags)

Zack: see you ladies around (he kissed both our cheeks and went his own way)

Layla: come on!! tell me, who is he??

Me: my boyfriend

Layla: what's his name?? is he hot??
how old is he??

Me: geez Layla, one question at a time.
(she giggled) well his name is Luyanda,
he's handsome and he's 18 and stuff...

Layla: wow interesting but that name
sounds familiar, I'm sure I know it from
somewhere.

Me: I'm sure you're mistaken, he lives in
Soweto

Layla: hmmm oh OK

We got inside the school building, went to our lockers, packed our books and then went to the cafeteria and had some coffee..

Me: so Layla do you have a boyfriend?

Layla: nope I just come out from a hectic relationship but life goes on, right now I just have a fuck Buddy.

Me: oh OK, so who's your fuck buddy?

Layla: Thabo, have you met him yet?

Me: yeah I've met him

Layla: cool so are you still a virgin??
have you had sex before?

Me: I'm still a virgin

Layla: damn girl!! you're missing out a lot!! the dick is good Mahn..

Me: lol nope, I'll rather wait till I'm physically and emotionally ready.

Layla: hmm OK, so about yesterday during break, you totally lashed out, don't you like parties?

Me: uhm its a long story..

Layla: OK but whenever you're ready to talk, I'm here for you..

Me: thanks (I smiled)

After a while the rest of the squad arrived and on the day went.

It is now after school and we finished 13:00, I'm at my locker busy packing my books...

Thabo: hey...

(I got such a fright that I banged the locker shut and spun around quickly)

Me: damn don't ever freak me out like that.

Thabo: sorry, I haven't seen you all day, how are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Thabo: great, you coming to Mbali's party tonight??

Me: nope

Thabo: why not

Me: not interested, I don't like parties

Thabo: I would've loved to see you
tonight

Me: hmmm, too bad (I said sarcastically)

Thabo: did they tell you that you're
beautiful?

Me: plenty of times (I pout)

Thabo: are you always so feisty towards
people?

Me: depends on the mood and the
person..

Thabo: I like feisty girls (he said coming
closer to me and I was moving

backwards)

This dude is such an asshole, if he thinks I'm gonna fall for his tricks then he's fucked up..

Me: can you move so I can go look for my sister... (I said crossing my arms on my chest)

Thabo: oh Layla, I can come with you.

Me: uhm no thanks

Thabo: you're so damn cute

Me: can you plz cut the crap and just move.

Thabo: am I making you uncomfortable??
(he said slightly pressing me onto the

lockers and holding my waist)

Me: get your filthy hands off me (I said pushing him away from me)

Thabo: you have a beautiful body, damn I can tap on that ass for days.. (he said licking his lips)

Me: you pervet

(I turned around and walked to the cafeteria where I found Mia, katlego and Mbali, the rest of the school was already gone, I wonder where Layla and Zack are)

Me: hey guys

Mia: hey cute stuff, what's up??

Me: I'm fine (I faked a smile)

Katlego: you don't look fine, what happened??

Me: nah I'm cool

Katlego: you sure?

Mbali: Katlego she said she's fine, geez (she rolled her eyes)

Me: anyway, have you seen Zack?

Mia: he's on his way, we're going out to MacDonalds to get some ice cream

Me: OK cool

(After about 10 mins Zack, Layla, Courtney, Mike and Lerato arrived. We got into separate cars and went to

MacD together, I totally forgot about what happened with Thabo and just enjoyed myself)

Mbali: guys I gotta go, I have a party to organise, I'll see you guys tonight. (she said standing up and kissing Katlego on the lips for about two whole minutes, geez)

Katlego: OK bye babe

(he said breaking the kiss)

Mbali: bye sugar

(she left)

Courtney: Zack you coming tonight right?

Zack: yeah sure, Layla and tumisani are

you guys going to the party?

Layla: yeah I'm coming

Me: no, I'm staying at home.

Zack: its a Friday, you should have fun

Me: I know but I don't wanna go (I
smiled politely)

Zack: oh OK

Mia: tumisani am coming over to your
house tomorrow, I'm taking you out.

Katlego: no way, I was about to say I'm
taking her out tomorrow, fuck you Mia.

Mia: fuck you too, I'm taking her out and
that's final.

Katlego: she's going out with me..

Me: gosh guys chill, Katlego you have a girlfriend for God's sake.

Katlego: that doesn't change anything.

Courtney: kat shut up, take Mbali out, she'll love that, leave tumisani alone

Katlego: fuck y'all

Mia: loollzz gotcha (she laughed)

Katlego: mxm

Mia: guys I gotta bounce, see y'all tonight, gorgeous see you tomorrow (she stood up and kissed my cheek then left)

Mike: is it me or does Mia have a crush on you?? (he said drinking his smoothie)

Me: what!!?? that's crazy, Mia is straight.

Lerato: who's been feeding you with that bullshit.??

Me: what, so what are you trying to say??

Layla: Mia is bisexual

Me: what!??? (I said shocked)

Zack: yeah and plz don't let her get to you

Lerato: yeah, she's a good friend and all but she's crazy

Layla: guys stopl making Mia sound like a bad person, don't listen to them tumisani.

Me: oh OK

(I said digging into my ice cream)

I knew there was something weird about Mia. She's always hugging me and kissing my cheeks. She's a great friend and she's awesome but I gotta watch myself or else She'll turn me bisexual too.

Now I miss my real best friend, I wish she was here with me. I wonder how our baby is doing. I can't wait to be an aunt. Lindiwe is like a sister I've never had, we share everything together. I love her so very much.

.

Layla's POV

Hi I'm Layla Matthews. I'm 17 years old and I'm in grade 11. I'm white in color with long brown hair and curves. You might be wondering a lot of things about me. Well first of all I'm not the typical 17 year old, I lost my virginity at the age of 14 to the guy named Thabo, he's black. I date all color boys, as long as they have a dick. When I first slept with Thabo i was at a party and I was drunk, I met him and his friends and he took me to a room and we had sex, from that day we became friends with benefits. I started doing drugs and gambling. My mother never knew any of this because I was a sweet girl in the house and a little devil

outside the house. Thabo and I continued having sex and he would offer to give me drugs in exchange for sex and life went on. I started doing drugs like cocaine, tik and smoking stuff. But I'm not an addict, I can live without drugs for a few days. I dated all kinds of boys but they all never loved me, they just wanted sex that's why my relationship never lasted. I gamble for drugs, we put money together and gamble, whoever loses will have to fuck one of the guys in the squad. Yeah that's the kind of life I live. My family is stinking rich that's why I don't gamble for money. I've decided to accept

tumisani as my sister because I've got nothing to lose.

I get home, throw my bag on the bed and rush into the shower.

After taking a shower, I check the time and its already 16:45. I look for something to wear and I find a short blue dress that is open on the breast part. The dress hugs my body and shows my legs, ass and boobs. I apply some make up and loosen my hair, the time is now 18:30. I check myself in the mirror and I look the " bomb". I say goodbye to tumisani then take Justin's BMW keys and off I drove to Mbali's party.

I got there and the place is packed as hell. I quickly park the car and get inside, I find Mia, Courtney and Lerato at the bar..

Me: ladies

Courtney: damn girl, you look hot.

Me: thanks honey

I take a shot of vodka to cool me down...

Mia: let's dance!!

We get to the dance floor and start dancing, the music is pumping and I'm twirling for some guy that I don't even know. Next thing I see is the guy squeezing my ass and a punch landed on his face which caused him to fly and

fall to the ground hard. I turned around and my eyes met with Thabo's, he was fuming and people were staring at us.

I took his arm and led him to the back door...

Me: Thabo what the fuck was that!!??

Thabo: don't ask me that fucken question, why were you twirking for him?? why did you let him squeeze your ass??

Me: last time I check, I wasn't owned by anyone..

Thabo: listen here Layla, only I can touch this ass and you're only allowed to twirk for me (he said squeezing my ass with those hands that made me obey to

everything he says. A moan escapes my mouth)

Me: yes my love..

He pressed me against the wall and smashed his lips onto mine, he roughly kissed me as his hands travelled all around my body. It stopped at my open chest and he squeezed my breast...

Thabo: you look so sexy tonight.

Me: hmmm really!! (I moaned as he kissed my neck and squeezed my breast at the same time...)

Thabo: I want to be inside of you right now

Me: but babe, where??

Thabo: right here

Me: you're crazy, you're not fucking me here (I pushed him off me and fixed my dress)

Thabo: fuck Layla you're so stubborn, how am I supposed to go back in there with a boner like this (he said pointing to his erected dick)

Me: that's your problem

(he took my hand and we squeezed through the thick crowd and found ourselves upstairs in an empty room)

Me: was that so hard??

Thabo: shut up and come here

He pulls my waist to him and kissed me, we both undress each other till we were both naked. He pushed me onto the bed and I open my legs widely impatiently waiting for him to enter me but Thabo being the fool that he is, he took his own time, he kissed my thighs then my cookie which made me crave him even more..

Me: Thabo plz come in me already!!

Thabo: OK my queen

He inserted his hard dick inside me and I moaned loudly, he thrusts hard and fast inside me, my legs get numb and my moans are fucken loud.

Me: aaaahagah yes Thabo yes!! (I moaned)

He goes faster and faster, each thrust hard and sweet. We both cum at the same time and my legs are numb, we are both panting as if we've run a race, he collapse on top of me and I hold onto his sexy strong body..

Thabo: did you enjoy that??

Me: every second was amazing..

(I said wrapping my arms around him)

Thabo: good, now let's talk business, I want you to get tumisani into the game...

Me: what!!?? (I said pushing him off me)

Thabo: I want tumisani to replace you,
she's still pure and fragile, I want her..

My heart stopped beating and I just
froze right there.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Admin

[06/16, 16:26] Snr: INSERT 31

.

.

.

Layla's POV

Thabo: I want tumisani to replace you, she's still pure and fragile, I want her.

My heart stopped beating and I just froze right there.

Me: what!!?? are you crazy??

(I said looking for my clothes)

Thabo: don't test me Layla, I said I want you to get tumisani in the game and that is final.

Me: no I'm not going to do that, she's my sister for crying out loud.

Thabo: why the sudden affection Layla, the last time I checked, you hated her, so plz stop giving me fucked up excuses and just do as I say.

Me: I said no Thabo (I said putting on my shoes and tempting to walk out but he pressed me onto the door and made me face him)

Thabo: you will do it, or else....

Me: or else what?? (I said pushing his hard body off me)

Thabo: or else, I'm making this video go viral, I'm sure your dear brother Justin would love to see how his innocent sister is riding me...(he said smiling and showing me a video of us having sex)

Me: what!!?? no, no, Thabo you wouldn't dare.

Thabo: oh trust me baby, I would, now

listen..

(he pressed me onto the wall and seductively sucked on my neck) you will get tumisani into the game or else this video will go viral, am I clear?? (he said grabbing my neck and choking me a little, I gasped for air)

Thabo: don't even think of telling anyone about this, because I'll slit your throat out, understand?

(he let go of me and then opened the door and pushed me out, I breathed heavily)

My mind ran wild and all sorts of thoughts came popping up in my mind. I

rush down the stairs and head straight to the restroom and immediately lock the door. I look in the mirror and I look terrified. what the fuck have you got yourself into Layla. I washed my face and removed all the make up, then Nuzzled my hair a bit. I walk out of the restroom and left the party without even looking back. As I drove, my mind was elsewhere. I can't ruin my family's reputation like this, what if Thabo makes the video go viral, I can't get tumisani in the game, she's innocent, I don't want to ruin her life, she's my sister. I know I never liked her in the beginning but I've accepted her and I want us to bond.

What am I gonna do?? I quickly park the car, take off my heels and barge inside the house which was empty and I ran straight to my room. I remove my clothes and hop into the shower. I feel dirty and intoxicated. I hate Thabo right now, he is so fucken evil, I hate him so much.

I get out of the shower and put on my PJ's then get under covers but I find it hard to sleep, what Thabo said kept ringing in my mind, and the video of us having sex kept haunting me.

I finally fell asleep around 03:20. I woke up the next day around 11:40 and I have a pounding headache. I brush my teeth,

take a bath and put on a pair of white jeans and blue shirt, its Saturday and I don't want to go out, I can't stop thinking about what happened yesterday. I've decided that I'm not gonna let Thabo destroy tumisani's life, I won't allow him to ruin her future. I've decided that I'd tell Dumisani about this because maybe he'll be able to help me, I can't tell Justin about this because he'll kill me, I've already disgraced this family.

I slowly drag my feet to Dumisani's room and my heart is skipping. I feel stupid and scared. I knock on the door.

Dumi: come in!!

(I open the door and he is shirtless with only a pair of jeans on, looks like he just got out of the shower, I can't help but admire his sexy body, he has an 8 pack and muscles, so damn good...)

Me: uhm morning (I smiled)

Dumi: hey Layla, how are you? (he said putting on a black shirt)

Me: uhm I'm fine.

Dumi: you don't look fine, what's wrong?

Tears rolled down my cheeks and I started sobbing, he pulled me into his arms and we sat down on his bed and he rubbed my back.

Me: I didn't mean for this to happen (I

sobbed)

Dumi: its OK, tell me what happened??

(I started explaining everything to him, I told him how I used to gamble for drugs and how I used to sleep with Thabo then I told him how Thabo threatened me yesterday..)

Me: he said if I don't get tumisani into the game then he'll make the video go viral, I don't know what to do Dumisani, he'll kill me if he finds out that I've told you about this, I can't ruin my family's reputation like this Dumisani, tumisani is my sister and, and....(I sobbed)

Dumi: shhhh its OK, we'll make a plan.

Me: but how Dumisani, he'll put the video on social media and I'll become a laughing stock.

Dumi: what's this Guy's name and how old is he?

Me: his name is Thabo Nikelo and he's 18.

Dumi: OK stop crying now (he wiped my tears off and made me look at him)

Dumi: we'll make a plan OK?? (I nodded)

Me: thank you, I don't know what I would've done if you weren't here (I hugged him)

Our chests met and I felt comfortable in his arms, he tightened the grip because I

think he felt the chemistry too. This is such a weird feeling, my heart starts racing and we stay like that for a little longer. My arms are around his neck and his arms holding my waist. This feeling is so warm and natural, I don't want to ever let go, I want to stay in his arms forever. I feel safe.

.

Dumi's POV

This feeling is weird, I've never felt like this before, even when I was with Tebogo. I just want to hold her forever and protect her. I feel relaxed and weak, she makes me weak. But this is not right,

she is like a sister to me. I push the crazy thought out of my mind and let go of her...

Me: uhmm (I cleared my throat) I think uhm breakfast is ready..

Layla: oh uhm I, I'll be downstairs (she blushed and without making eye contact, she walked out)

That was the weirdest moment ever. I pick up my phone and call Luyanda.

I need to sort this Thabo boy out, he doesn't know who he's messing with. He is looking for war, no one should ever even dream of messing with my sister..

< call convo >

Yanda: ntwana!!

Me: hey boyboy, how's it?

Yanda: good good and yourself?

Me: I was perfectly fine until I heard that a loose dog was after my sister ..

Yanda: say what!!?? who is that dog??

Me: the name is Thabo Nikelo, 18 years of age and he is in cape town, same school as tumsa.

Yanda: fuck I know that Nikelo boy, he's got another thing coming down his road, I'll be landing tonight, we'll teach him a lesson he'll never forget.

Me: OK boyboy, sharp.

Yanda: cool see ya

< end of convo >

I thought I would give up the gangster life and start a fresh but you never know what life throws at you. I wanted to live a decent life and be normal but I guess I have to protect my sister, she's my first priority in life and she's all I have. I walk down the stairs and find tumi and Zack watching TV..

Me: good morning

Tumi: good afternoon, it's already 12:30

Me: really?? have you guys eaten?

Zack: yeah your food is in the kitchen.

Me: OK thanks, where's Justin??

(I said now realizing that he was not here)

Zack: he said he had a few things to take care of at Bella Industries.

Me: oh OK

(I took my food and ate then after a while a colored girl barged in with Layla)

Zack: hey mia

Mia: hey Zack, hey cutie (she said hugging tumisani)

Tumi: hey Mia, meet my brother Dumisani

Me: nice to meet you

Mia: likewise (we shook hands)

Mia: are you ready to go Tumisani?

Me: ready to go where?

Tumi:oh mia and I are going out to explore Cape town, I hope you don't mind?

Me: oh of course I don't mind, but plz take care of yourself.

Tumi: I will, don't worry.

(she kissed my cheek then said goodbye to everyone and they left)

I'm worried about my sister, everyone just can't seem to get their hands off her. Now I know why gogo said I should

protect her and be her strength. This girl means the world to me, I would even kill for her, I'll do anything just to make sure she is happy.

.

Luyanda's POV

When tumisani broke up with me, I felt like my life was over, I didn't know how I was going to live without her. I thought I would never see her again. I started drinking and doing drugs, I stopped going to school and I would drink day in and day out. I even tried to commit suicide. Tumisani is the only one for me, she is the love of my life and she's mine

alone. When Dumisani called me and told me that someone is troubling her, I told myself this is the time, it's either now or never, if I don't make her mine now then I never will. The name Dumisani gave me sounds familiar, I'm sure I know that boy from somewhere. Dumisani has been through a lot already, I don't know why life keeps getting worse for her. I truly love Dumisani and I wouldn't hesitate to take a bullet for her. I know what I did to Lindiwe was wrong but I'm trying to make it right with her, the least I can do is support her and my unborn baby. I'm flying to Cape town to sort that Thabo dude out myself, he

doesn't know who he's messing with. I quickly pack my bag and get dressed then head downstairs and find yemi watching TV. poor girl has been stressed lately, its all my fault.

Yemi: Yanda, where are you going?

Me: hey, I have an urgent issue that j have to take care of in cape town.

Yemi: is everything OK?? what will I tell mom and dad?

Me: everything is fine, tell them I just needed space.

Yemi: plz take care of yourself, don't do drugs plz.

Me: don't worry, I'll be fine.

(I hugged her tightly then kissed her cheeks and said goodbye then left)

I drove to Lindiwe's house just to say goodbye. Her tummy is big and she's glowing.

(I knocked)

Lindiwe: hey Luyanda, come in

Me: no I'm not staying, I just came to let you know that I'll be out of town for a while

Lindiwe: oh OK, is everything OK?

Me: yeah everything is fine, plz take this money and take care of yourself and my baby.

Lindiwe: oh OK, thank you (she takes the money)

Me: if you need anything don't hesitate to call me, OK?

Lindiwe: OK sure, take care of yourself

Me: yeah you too, can I kiss my babe plz?

(We went for a scan together and we found out that the baby is a girl)

Lindiwe: uhm sure go ahead (she smiled)

I knelt down and rubbed her tummy then kissed it..

Me: my baby, daddy will be back soon, plz don't trouble mommy too much baby

(Lindiwe giggle and I chuckled)

Lindiwe: aaahha (she held her stomach)

Me: what's wrong?

Lindiwe: she just kicked, she's kicking
(she smiled)

Me: wow she's bonding with her daddy
(I rubbed her belly and kissed it again)

I can't believe I'm gonna be a father, this
baby is the best thing that's ever
happened to me, apart from tumisani.

Brian came out of his car and found me
rubbing Lindiwe's tummy right in front of
the door...

Brian: what on earth is going on here?

(I stood up straight and looked at him)

Me: I should be on my way, Lindiwe plz take care of my baby

Lindiwe: don't worry, we'll be fine (she smile politely)

Me: OK bye

I turned around and left. Now I have to drive to cape town. Here I come....

.

Lindiwe's POV

Me: hey babe

Brian: what the fuck was that?

Me: he came to say goodbye, babe

Brian: so he had to rub your tummy and

kiss it because he came to say goodbye?

Me: babe he was bonding with his child

Brian: mxm, let's go

(he took my hand and led me to the car, I can't believe Brian right now, what was I supposed to do? tell Luyanda that he shouldn't bond with his child because I have a boyfriend?)

I've decided to forgive him, after all this is his child and he is trying.

Me: babe

Brian: what?

(he said driving and not making eye contact)

Me: can we plz not fight about this?

Brian: we're not fighting

Me: then why are you angry?

Brian: I'm not angry (he sighed) I just don't like the sight of seeing another mans arms on you.

Me: I'm sorry my love but he was bonding with his daughter, there is nothing going on

(he puts his hand on my thigh and still doesn't make eye contact)

Brian: I know

We sit in silence as he drives and finally reach the hotel that we were going to, we

check in and head to a room.

I sat on the bed then take my shoes off and lay back on the bed, he comes between my legs and kiss my lips.

Brian: I'm sorry if I was rude babe, I just want you all to myself, I don't want to share you.

Me: you're not sharing me babe, I'm all yours.

Brian: I love you

Me: I love you more

(he passionately kisses me which turns me on, I wrap my arms around his neck and he sucks on my lips)

Brian: you're so beautiful

Me: oh really? (I start unbuttoning his shirt)

Brian: yes you're gorgeous

(he kisses me again and I finally succeed in taking off his shirt, unzips my dress and slowly rips it off)

I'm left in my matching bra and panty, he is left in his jeans. He continues to kiss me and I run my hands all over his gorgeous body. He unclips my bra and strips my panty off me, I unzip his jeans and he removes it himself, he takes his underwear off and we're both naked, he gets off me and takes a good look at my

body then a smile cracks on his lips.

Me: what are you doing?? (I giggle shyly)

Brian: admiring my gorgeous girlfriend

He smiles and goes down to my toes and plants wet kisses from my toes to my legs, my cookie and my tummy the he finally comes to my lips and kisses me deeply, I immediately get wet and his prick is dangling between my legs. He breaks the kiss and goes down to my cookie, he separates my legs then starts eating me. I gasp in shock, his tongue goes in and in, he makes my blood boil, I feel my temperature rising. I find myself moaning. This is the best feeling ever,

he's never done this before. His tongue does wonders to my pussy. I grip onto the sheets and moan loudly. A feeling of pleasure and desires runs through my veins. I hit my second orgasm then he licks me completely clean and looks back up smiling. I'm still in shock..

Brian: babe close your mouth, the flies are gonna get in (he laughs)

Me: where on earth did you learn how to do that? (I gasped)

Brian: did you like it ?? (he said seductively and kissed my cheek, without waiting for my response, he inserts his dick inside of me)

Me: yesssss!!! (I moaned out loud)

He starts slowly then fast and we both go in the same rhythm, he goes faster then before and starts groaning....

Brian: baby I love you!! (he groans)

He goes faster and faster and my legs get numb, we both moaning and groaning loudly. After about 20 minutes we both climax and immediately fall asleep in each others arms. I love him, he's mine alone...

Like, comment and share

What do you think will happen next???

COMMENT, COMMENT AND
COMMENT

Admin

[06/16, 16:26] Snr: CONTINUATION
(crop top)

.

.

.

.

.

Tumi's POV

Cape town is awesome, I had so much fun with Mia today. We went to all kinds of malls like Blue Route mall, Cavendish mall and even the waterfront. We went to the Grand west Arena and went ice skating. I've never had so much fun in my whole life. Mia is funny, smart and just a wonderful person to hang out with. I lost track of time and just enjoyed myself and for once forgot about how horrible life has been. We were at Debonairs having a whole large pizza to our self's, the time was now 18:20, I quickly texted Dumisani and told him I'll be home later.

Me: thank you so much for the great day,

I had so much fun. (I said biting into my pizza)

Mia: I had fun too, you're a fun person to hang around with (she said smiling)

Me: you too, I hope we haven't spent all your money because we've done so much.

Mia: no its cool, I just had fun, that's all that matters.

We ate then got into the car and she drove me home, we hugged and said goodbye then she left and I went inside. I found everyone seated in the lounge and watching TV.

Me: hey guys!! (I said closing the door

behind me)

Them: hey/ hello

Dumi: did you have fun?

Me: lots of fun

Justin: where did you guys go?

Me: we went to different malls,
waterfront and ice skating.

Zack: wow that's great, next time I'm
taking you to table mountain.

Layla: and I'm taking you to the spa.

Me: that would be great, let me go
freshen up and I'll be with you guys in a
few.

I went to my room, took a warm relaxing

bath then wore my PJ's and went downstairs and sat next to Dumi.

Me: what are we watching?

Zack: scary movie 3

Me: hmm its gonna give me nightmares.

Layla: nah its not that bad.

We continued watching and I somehow fell asleep. I woke up the next day in my room, on my bed and the rain was pouring like nobody's business. Its a wet rainy Sunday. I don't understand Cape town weather, yesterday was hot and today its raining. After wearing my tights and black long sleeve shirt, I do my hair and go on my knees and prayed since its

Sunday and we're not going to church. After saying Amen, I looked in the mirror and immediately regretted why I put on a pair of tights. My ass is bombing everywhere. I walk down the stairs and I hear people laughing, there is a familiar voice that I don't often hear every morning. It must be someone else, it can't be him...

Me: Yanda!!! (they all turn around and I stop right in my tracks with my eyes popped out and my mouth wide open)

Yanda: tumisani !! (he stands up and open his arms, I run into his arms and hug him tightly, he lifts me off the ground and spins both of us around.)

Me: how on earth did you get here and what are you doing here?? (I said when he puts me down smiling)

Yanda: I'll explain later (he smiles) well, well take a look at you, you look so beautiful tumsa (I blushed) your hair looks wonderful, gosh you look...

(he hugged me again smiling)

Dumi: uhmmm(he clears his throat) we're still here you know (we laughed)

Justin: break fast is ready, plz join us

Yanda: sure thank you

(we sat down and started to eat)

Me: so when did you get here?

Yanda: I landed last night, damn I missed you (he said smiling at me)

Me: I missed you too, did Dumi introduce you to my brothers and sister?

Yanda: yes he did, you guys have a beautiful home.

Layla: thank you, so how old are you?

Yanda: I'm 18

Layla: are you tumisani's boyfriend?
(she giggled)

Yanda: (he chuckled) yes I'm her boyfriend.

Zack: OK Layla, enough with the 21 questions, let the guy eat in peace.

We ate in silence then Yanda and I went upstairs to the balcony and the view was beautiful, although it was raining...

I held onto the metal bar for support and he stood behind me then wrapped his arms around my waist and breathed on my neck..

Yanda: tumsa I never got the chance to apologize properly, I'm really sorry for what I did, I know I was stupid and I'm trying my best to be there for my child and I hope you can forgive me.

Me: Lu I already told you that I've forgiven you but it won't be easy to forget but hopefully as time goes I'll

eventually forget.

Yanda: thank you.

Me: I heard that you tried to commit suicide (I said with a straight face)

Yanda: (sigh) things were tough tumsa, when you broke up with me I thought life was over for me, my life turned upside down, I had nothing to live for.

Me: what about your unborn baby Lu, if you had committed suicide what was Lindiwe going to tell your baby?? huh??

Yanda: I'm sorry my love, I wasn't thinking.

Me: I hope you've stopped doing drugs

Yanda: I've changed my love, I know it won't be easy to forgive me but trust me, I have changed.

Me: OK, so what are you doing here?

(he tightened the grip on my waist and his body tensed up, something doesn't seem right....)

Yanda: I have uhm, things to take care of.

Me: is everything OK?

Yanda: yes my love, everything is fine.

Me: OK how long are you staying for? Lu are you still going to school?

(I said now facing him and looking into his eyes because seems like everything

he's been telling me are all lies, he
looked anywhere else but my eyes)

Yanda: yes I'm still going to school, I'm
studying this term online, I'll write my
last exams next month.

Me: oh OK

Yanda: I missed you so much (he said
hugging me, he's arms are so warm and
they feel perfect around my waist, I
missed my man...)

Me: I missed you too (I smiled)

He finally looked me in the eyes and
slowly our lips met, I closed my eyes
and go with the rhythm, his warm
tongue enters my mouth and he kisses

me softly. The moment is wonderful and passionate.

Me: where are you staying?? (I said after we've finished indulging each others lips)

Yanda: at a hotel

(he sat down and pulled me onto his lap)

Yanda: babe I love your hair like this, you look so natural and beautiful (I blushed and butterflies kept flying)

Me: thank you

Yanda: God sure took his time when making you.

Me: (I giggled) enough, you silly.

Yanda: I'm admiring my queen, can't I admire my queen?

(I smiled and rested my head onto his chest, and inhaled his lovely scent that drives me nuts)

Layla: sorry to disturb you two love birds, but tumisani our idiot of friends are here.

Me: oh OK, I'll be there in a sec..

(she nodded and left)

Yanda: you've made friends so fast?

Me: they're actually Layla's squad

Yanda: oh OK, let's go meet them

(he took my hand and we walked down the stairs)

We found Mia, Katlego, Lerato, Courtney, Mbali, Mike and the pervert himself, Thabo. He's got some nerve to come here..

Mia: hey cute stuff (she said hugging me)

Me: hey Guys

Them: hey/ hello/ hi

Mia: so tumisani is this your other brother? (she said looking at Yanda weirdly, lol)

Me: no this is my boyfriend, Luyanda (I smiled)

Kat & Mia: what!!??

Mia: I thought your boyfriend was at Soweto?

Me: yeah, he surprised me this morning by coming here

Dumi: uhm, OK Layla plz introduce us to your friends here.

(he said looking at Thabo then Yanda, what the fuck?)

Layla: oh where are my manners, this is Mia, Lerato, Courtney, Mike, Mbali, Katlego and..(she paused) and uhm Thabo.

Yanda: I knew that name was familiar (he mumbled under his breath)

Me: what?

Yanda: no nothing, so if it isn't the one and only Thabo Nikelo (he said referring to Thabo, huh?)

Thabo: so we meet again Luyanda

Layla: you know each other?

Thabo: yes we were once friends.

Yanda: how about we catch up after this.

Thabo: sounds like a plan.

(Yanda looks at Dumi and he nods, the fuck?)

Mia: anyway!!! (she said bursting into the awkward silence) what's new guys!!??

Lerato: the party on Friday was epic!!

Courtney: for real girlfriend, Layla where

did you run off to?

Layla: uh um, I wanted to go home so I left. (she said looking down)

Katlego: that's new, you never leave a party early.

Layla: nothing (she faked a smile)

Mbali: anyway, Luyanda how long have you and tumisani been dating? (gosh, so forward)

Yanda: long enough to fall in love and love each other with all our hearts (we smiled together, great answer babe, that got her, she rolled her eyes)

Katlego: you're in love?

Me: yes we are

Mia: interesting so queen L, where's the food?

Layla: does this look like your Personal restaurant Mia? (she said sarcastically)

Mike: don't talk to your guests like that, go get us some food.

Mia: yeah girl, go get your guests some food.

Layla: fuck y'all (she said standing up)

Layla: tumisani can you plz help me.

Me: sure (I stood up and followed her to the kitchen, we made a few snacks then went back to the lounge)

But Thabo, Yanda and Dumi weren't there anymore. Something doesn't feel right. I wonder what is going on....

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Don't forget to share plz help the page grow.

what do you think will happen now??

Admin

[06/16, 16:27] Snr: INSERT 32

.

.

.

Me: So Thabo, what have you been up to?

Thabo: stuff, you know the gangster life.

Me: you don't give up, do you?

Thabo: never, it runs through my veins

Me: is that why you decided to make your target my girlfriend?

(I said leaning on the wall, we are currently standing outside in the backyard, not too far from the lounge)

Thabo: your girlfriend?

Dumi: don't act dumb boy, we got no time for this bullshit, what are your intentions with my sister?

Thabo: I don't know what you're talking about.

Me: maybe this would make you talk. (I pulled my gun out from the back of my jeans and pointed it on his head, he laughs sarcastically)

Thabo: what do you think you're doing? I knew you were a sissy, even if you try to be like your father, you wouldn't succeed (I throw a punch on his face and he falls)

Dumi: where is the video?

Thabo: (he laughs) what video

Dumi: don't test me boy, where is the video?

(he said kicking him on his stomach)

Thabo: voetsek mahn

Me: OK let's do this the hard way.

(I put my gun away and we start beating him up, he is bleeding on his mouth and his eye is bruised from all the punches)

Dumi: now will you talk?

(he said threatening him with his gun)

Thabo: fuck off (he tempted to pull the trigger and Thabo jumped)

Thabo: OK, OK, I'll talk (he said spitting out blood)

Dumi: I'll repeat, where is the video??

Me: wait... (I searched his pocket and

got hold of his phone, I looked for the video and deleted it then took out his sim card and chew it up then smashed his phone on the floor)

Dumi: I know this motherfucker has more of that video saved on a USB or something..

Me: OK come on boy, let's go pay your house a visit.

Thabo: no, no, I'm not going anywhere.

(he stood up and punched me in the gut, I kicked him and he fell to the floor again)

Me: I wasn't asking you, and don't you ever, ever put your filthy fucked up hands on me, ever!! Now come. (I held

him up roughly and we dragged him to the car)

Dumi: don't say or do anything stupid.

(he pushed him into the car, they sat in the back seat with Dumi pointing a gun on his thigh, we drove off to the direction of his house)

We got to his house and went in, we found his mom and sister in the kitchen.

Me: don't do anything stupid, I can kill you right in front of your mother and sister.

(I pointed a gun behind him and stood close to him so that they don't see anything)

Ntombi (thabo's sister): Luyanda is that you? oh my gosh, long time no see.

Me: hey Ntombi, you've grown,
afternoon Ma.

Thabo's mom: hello mntanam, how are you?

Me: I'm good ma.

Thabo's Ma: Thabo you're bleeding,
what happened?

Thabo: uhm ma, I fell (he's such a fool)

Ma: yoh look at your eye, its bruised.

Thabo: I'll be fine Ma, uhm I'm going to
my room

Ntombi: are you sure everything is fine?

Thabo: I'm fine.

(we went upstairs to his room and pushed him inside then locked the door)

Dumi: where is your laptop and USB's?

Thabo: (I nudged the gun so that he can speak) over there. (he pointed to his cardboard, Dumi went to his laptop and deleted everything then he broke all the USB's and then gave the laptop a virus, so that he won't be able to access the things in there)

Thabo: fuck you, this is not over, Thabo Nikelo gets what he wants and he when he wants!! (he said shouting)

Dumi: shut the fuck up, you sound like

the last nigga I know. (he punched him and he once again fell to the floor, bleeding badly)

Dumi: now listen, and listen very carefully, if I ever and I mean ever!! see you close to my sisters again, I'll make sure you see your ancestors early, don't even come 2cm's close to them or even look at them.

Me: I hope you've learnt your lesson because next time, we won't visit your house, we'll simply just visit your grave, or I'll simply just put your own sister in a grave, how does that sound?

Dumi: I think that sounds perfect dawg.

(he threw him one last punch and we stormed out of the room and without saying anything to his mother or sister, we left)

As soon as we got into the car, we drove off.

Dumi: thanks for your help man.

Me: nah don't sweat, and plus, tumisani is my girlfriend and I was doing myself a favor.

Dumi: OK so how's Lindiwe and the baby?

Me: they fine, I guess

Dumi: I still can't believe she's pregnant with your child.

Me: I know, me too, but don't worry about tumisani, I love her and I want to make things right.

Dumi: my princess has a heart of gold, other bitches would've left your lame ass long time ago boyboy

(we laugh)

Me: I know right, she's one in a million.

Dumi: yep, I know we're not perfect and all but plz just try not to hurt her, she's been through a lot.

Me: I'm trying and I promise I won't hurt her again.

Dumi: good...

We got to the Matthews mansion and stepped out of the car.

Now what?

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Will Thabo seek revenge?? Are Layla and Tumisani now safe?? what do you think Lindokuhle is planning?? what do you think Sipho is planning?? What do you think will happen next??

Goodnight my lovely readers, sweet dreams

#loveyou

[06/17, 09:36] Snr: INSERT 33

.
. .
.

Sipho's POV

Monday morning came too fast, I woke up, did my hygiene process, ate breakfast then called Lindo. My patience is running out and time is not in my hands...

< call convo >

Lindo: Phakade speaking.

Me: have you made your decision yet?

Lindo: siphoh!? uhm, I need more time...

Me: kuhle we don't have enough time, my patience is running out, its either you're in or out, so talk mahn!!

(I said sitting on the bed)

Lindo: OK, I accept your proposal but under one condition..

Me: who said you are allowed to give conditions?

Lindo: then fine, I'm not doing this.

Me: (sigh) OK talk.

Lindo: good, we can work together under the condition that once the plan works

out then you don't get any of her belongings.

Me: who said I was as greedy as you, I don't want her belongings, I want her heart.

Lindo: oh OK then its cool, but one question, what do we do with dumisani?

Me: (laugh) I thought you would never ask, meet me tonight at club Ringo. We'll discuss everything there, around 19:00.

Lindo: cool, see you there. (I hanged up)

< end of convo >

Perfect, now I can finally achieve my plans. I want tumisani all to myself and no one will be able to stop me...

.

Lindokuhle's POV

Well, if I told you that this past few days were good then I would be lying to myself.

Everything is a mess!! Rachel doesn't wanna pick up my calls or answer my messages, on the other hand, Monster is constantly sending me threat messages simply because I refused to sleep with him and I " apparently " disrespected him.

I've decided to accept Siphos proposal because the two most important " friends" in my life are rejecting me. But I

can't do this on my own, I need Rachel. I picked up my phone and tried to call her for the 100th time, it rings...

< call convo >

(she finally picks up)

Me: baby plz don't hang up, plzz babe (I plead)

Rachel: what do you want kuhle? (she says with a husky tone)

Me: babe I'm sorry, can we plz talk, let me explain, plz Ray.

Rachel: there is nothing to explain kuhle, you played me!!

Me: no babe, its not like that, can we at

least meet up and talk about this, can I
plz come over to your place?

Rachel: I'll be waiting (she hangs up)

< end of convo >

I quickly put on a white and red body hugging dress and my assets show. I put on sandal and ruffle my hair a bit, my hair is naturally an afro so it's easy. I look in the mirror and I look beautiful as always. I guess tumisani gets her beauty from me, her mother. I lock the door, get into my car and drive off to the direction of Rachel's house. In less than 15mins, I arrive and knock at her door a few times till she finally opens. My poor baby looks

like a mess. She is still in her PJ's, her hair is all over the place, damn she looks....

Me: babe

(I get in, close the door and hug her, she doesn't respond)

Me: Ray I'm sorry, I'm so sorry (I said as we sat down on the couch in her cosy lounge)

Rachel: you played me kuhle, I thought he was just a one night thing to make him shut up so that our plan could work but...

Me: he was Ray, I'm sorry, he just kept coming and coming and never stopped

and..

Rachel: then why didn't you tell me!??
(she said shouting) you should've told me before!!

Me: babe I'm sorry.

Rachel: did you like it ? did you love the way he fucked you?? the way his hands felt on your body?? huh??

Me: Ray plz don't do this to me, plz
(I said cupping her cheeks and tears rolled out of her eyes, I thought this "thing" between us was a " no strings attached" yoh, this is crazy)

Rachel: I love you kuhle, I fucking love you, I tried to stop myself from loving

you but I just couldn't , but you know what? you have no right to hurt me like this.

(she cried and I hugged her tightly)

Me: I love you too Ray, I'm really sorry, plz forgive me. (I said looking into her watery eyes, she has a weak spot for me. she'll definitely fall for this)

Our lips slowly made their way to each other, we caressed each others lips passionately.

Rachel: do you mean it?? (she said pulling out)

Me: yes, I mean it (I said wiping her tears)

Me: I love you

She smashed her lips onto mine, things got heated and we took it to her room, ripped each others clothes off and the rest is history...

We lay in each others arms after the steamy session, breathing in the same pace, legs intertwined in each other.

Me: Ray (I said breaking the silence)

Rachel: my love (she said kissing my forehead)

Me: I've accepted the proposal

Rachel: (she sighs deeply) ok, I'll support you but I don't like this one bit.

Me: thanks babe (I pulled her into a kiss)

Rachel: when is the meeting?

Me: tonight at Club Ringo, at 19:00.

Rachel: shit!! and you only telling me this now, (she got off the bed and her beautiful breast bounced up, hmmm tempting)

Me: where are you going babe?

Rachel: you need to be prepared kuhle, we need to know if you'll be safe or not, what if its a trap?

Me: shit!! why didn't I think of that.

Rachel: yeah now come, we need to sort out security for you..

Me: OK but, one last kiss (I smiled)

Rachel: don't you get tired of my lips?

Me: mmm never...

(I pressed my lips onto hers and she squeezes my ass while I grab her breast)

Rachel: mmmhm(she moans) you're naughty, you'll be late kuhle (she giggles)

Me: OK, I love you (I smiled)

Rachel: I love you more.

(we quickly get dressed and make a few calls)

What if Sipho is trying to get rid of me??

I can't trust him. The time is already

17:15. We drive back to my house and I put on a black leather tights, black boots, black top and black leather jacket.

Rachel has the same outfit on. Its a gangster thing, black means a lot of things if you're a gangster...

Me: babe is everything settled?

(I said zipping my boots)

Rachel: the men are already at club Ringo.

Me: how many?

Rachel: about 5, here is your gun (she said handing me a gun which I hid in my jacket)

Rachel: stay calm, don't drink anything

he offers you, simply be professional, and just be the beautiful bitch that you are. (she said kissing me one last time as we parted ways outside my house)

Rachel: I'll be driving behind you, don't make it obvious that you're under protection, don't look too nervous, don't smile what so ever, here is your ear piece , don't touch it, he won't be able to see it or hear it but just listen to everything I say to you through it, we'll be watching from far.

Me: thanks babe.

Rachel: pleasure now go get us a plan (she said smiling and she looks totally

different from the Rachel that was crying not so long ago. she got into a black car which came out of nowhere.)

I got into my car and drove off, its 18:25. I still have 35 mins. I slowly drive to club Ringo. I park the car and look myself in the rear view mirror, the ear piece that Rachel gave me beeps and I almost jump...

Rachel: relax Lindo, you're too tense.

Me: plz don't tell me this thing will beep again because he'll start suspecting me.

Rachel: no, it won't beep again. now breath in..

(I breathe in) and out (I breathe out)

Rachel: you're nervous kuhle, lower your shoulders, you look tense, we can't let the enemy know that you're nervous as fuck.

Me: why am I nervous Rachel? (I don't understand why I'm so nervous, I have a bad feeling about this, my heart keeps jumping)

Rachel: you're Lindokuhle Phakade for Gods sake, you've got power running through you veins, you can do this kuhle.

Me: OK (I breathe deeply)

Rachel: now go, its time.

I get out of the car and make sure its locked then slowly model with

confidence to the entrance of the club, I walk up to the VIP section, I look right and left, my men are seated as if they're just temporary guests, with ladies at their table, the club is packed.

Rachel: don't answer or show expression when I'm talking through the ear piece, lower your shoulders a bit and walk to the far left, he's seated there. (I walk to the far left and find Siphos sitting alone on an empty spot)

Siphos: perfect timing (he said checking his watch, and it was exactly 19:00, I sat down)

Siphos: drinks ?? (he said pouring

himself a glass of whiskey)

Me: no thanks, let's get down to business.

Sipho: mmm straight forward, I like. (he drinks the whiskey and looked at me)

Sipho: so you want Tumisani's belongings of right?

Me: yes (I said coldy, so far so good, I'm doing great)

Sipho: mmm, we need to get your son out of the picture (he paused and looked at me coldly) as in, murder him. (he says)

Me: what!!?? (I shouted)

Rachel: keep your cool Lindo (she hissed throw the ear piece)

Sipho: he's got too much authority over her, the only way we'll win is if he's no more.

Me: what's your plan?

Sipho: first we get rid of dumisani, then at tumisani's weakest point, you come into the picture as the " loving mother" you slowly break her down emotionally and I play as the " loving friend", she's too soft, she'll do anything when she's weak, you slowly steal her belongings from right under her nose, I manipulate her broken heart, then Bingo!! (he gulps

down the drink) she becomes our little puppet.

(wow, damn this is awesome)

Me: perfect, when do we begin?

Sipho: now that's the problem, you are the one that will be getting their hands dirty..

Me: what!!?? you want me to murder my own son (he's insane)

Sipho: you murdered his father so it shouldn't be that difficult, its either you do it or you're out and I find someone better, then I benefit from it.

.

As soon as he says the last line, the next thing i hear are gun shots, flying left, right and center. I turn around and my men are standing and shooting to God knows who.

I look around again to where Sipho was seated but he was not there anymore...

Rachel: kuhle watch out!! (I pull my gun out and shoot, there is chaos everywhere...)

Rachel: bend, don't stand up!! (she yells)

I tempt to bend and shoot again but I stop right in my tracks when a bullet hits my shoulder.

All the muscles in my body feel weak,

my legs start shaking, my head is spinning, the sight of blood makes me dizzy...

Rachel: LINDO!!!

(I look around and all I see is blur..)

COMMENT COMMENT AND COMMENT

Make sure you don't miss out on the next insert

Shit is about to go down.....

#loveyou

Admin

[06/17, 09:37] Snr: INSERT 34

- .
- .
- .
- .

Rachel's POV

Me: Lindo!! (I shouted into the ear piece)

I took out my gun and removed all the cables that were connected to the laptop we were watching her from.

Me: Kuda come on let's go, Lindo has been shot.

I said as we left the car and ran to the back exit of the club. We barged into the club to the place where Lindo was

seated and she was laying there in a pool of blood on the floor. There was no more shooting and two of our men were shot and died immediately.

Me: kuhle (I ran to where she was laying and checked her pulse, it was still normal but weak)

Kuda: she'll be fine, its just her shoulder (he lifted her off the floor and took her to the car with me following behind him, we got to the parking lot and placed her into the car)

Me: I'll get the bullet out, find out who did this and also find out where Siphon ran off to, take her car to her house and

let me know when you've got the information..

Kuda: yes boss

(I get into the car and drove to the direction of my house)

My name is Rachel Ndlovu, 36 years of age. I was imprisoned for murder, they sentence me with 15 years. I murdered my ex fiance, Kwezi. He was an abusive bastard, he would come home drunk and start hitting me for God knows why. It went on for 2 whole years and I never told anyone about it. Until one day I was in the kitchen cooking and he came home drunk and smelt like a whole

fucking shebeen. I was only 16 years old when my parents decided to sell me off to a 40 year old man just because we were poor. After two years of enduring all the constant rape and abuse from my ex fiance, one day I said enough is enough. He came into the kitchen and I was busy chopping unions.

Kwezi: bitch! slut, where are you? (he shouted stumbling to the kitchen)

Fear took over my body, like every other night, he came into the kitchen and forced himself onto me, after laying me down on the cold tiled floors, he started punching and kicking me, I screamed and cried for my dear life, I somehow

found the courage and got off the floor and stood up, my eyes landed on the knife that I was using to chop the unions. I quickly grabbed the knife and anger filled my veins, I stabbed him in the stomach and he fell on his knees, my fingers started to shake but anger never left my soul, I stabbed him on his back continuous times until he stopped breathing. I dropped the knife and tears rolled down my cheeks. I remember that day like it just happened yesterday.

when I was in prison, I met Lindo after a few years, she was also sentenced for murder but she was sentenced 25 years. We became best friends and then I

became lesbian when I started catching feelings for her. She told me her plans and her wishes, I promised her that I'll help her achieve her plans, prison is one shit hole. We hanged out with all the bad bitches, we got connection everywhere and I served my 15 years of prison. As soon as I was released I tried by all means to help get Lindo out too because I was in love with her. I got into a gang and after two years of trying to help Lindo out of prison, Monster came into her aid. She got out of prison and I was the first person she contacted, we got back into the gang and we started to explore her plans. The reason why I hate

Monster is because he was my ex fiances friend and he knew that Kwezi was abusing me but he never helped me or talked to Kwezi about his behavior, in fact he contributed to the abuse and they made me their little puppet. My life changed when I murdered that bastard and it's all his fault that I'm here today.

I lay her down onto the bed And took out my medical box, one thing about me is that I'm really smart, I can do anything, I was am blessed with the brain. I carefully took out the bullet, I'm glad it didn't go in too deep, I cleaned up her blood then injected her so that she doesn't feel too much pain. I then

bandage her shoulder and made everything that was stained spotless. After taking a shower, I sat next to her on the bed admiring her beautiful face. I love this woman so much. We've been through thick and thin and I never left her side. My phone interrupted my thoughts....

< call convo >

Me: hello

Kuda: boss, I've dropped her car at her place and found out who was responsible for the attack.

Me: who did it??

Kuda: monster (I knew it) he found out

that boss lady was working with the enemy and he wanted revenge.

Me: fuck (I sighed) and the bullet?

Kuda: the bullet wasn't meant for boss lady, it was meant for Siphho.

Me: did you find out where he is hiding?

Kuda: we're working on it boss

Me: OK, keep me updated.

Kuda: sharp, has boss lady woken up yet?

Me: not yet but I've taken the bullet out.

Kuda: ok sharp boss

Me: sharp (I ended the call)

< end of convo >

Damn it, we're in deep shit. I knew this was a bad idea. Now Monster wants revenge. Fuck.

.

Layla's POV

I've been so stressed lately. I wonder if Dumisani has thought of a plan on how we'll sort Thabo out. He wasn't at school yesterday (Monday) and that's strange because Thabo is never absent but i was glad because I wasn't ready to face him. I don't know what happened on Sunday because he just instantly left with Dumisani and Luyanda but he didn't return and they didn't tell me anything.

It is morning and I'm in my room putting on my school shoes when someone knocked on the door.

Me: come in!! (I said sitting on the bed and tying my hair into a pony tail.

Dumisani walked in)

I've been getting these weird feelings whenever I'm around him or when our skin touch. I have this thing that is just wanting to touch him since the day we hugged.

Dumi: hey (he said giving me his beautiful smile, he's smooth chocolate skin makes me crave him even more.

Damn. Stop it Layla)

Me: good morning (I smiled) how are you?

Dumi: good and yourself?

Me: stressed

Dumi: why? (he said folding his arms on his chest and his muscles popped out through his shirt..)

Me: uhm, Thabo hasn't been at school and I'm worried that he's probably planning something crazy.

Dumi: he wouldn't dare, not after what I've done to him.

Me: what?? (I asked confused)

Dumi: he won't threaten you or bother

you anymore, I've sorted him out.

Me: what about the video?? (I asked shocked)

Dumi: really!!?? (I said in almost excitement)

Dumi: yes (he smiled)

Me: oh my gosh!! thank you so much. (I quickly stood up and rushed into his arms and hugged him tightly)

The feeling of comfort invaded my body, warmth and safe is what I feel when I'm in his arms. I'm on my tippy toes, my arms rapped around his neck, he's taller than me. We stood like that in comfortable silence. His hands holding

my waist, it feels so perfect like that. I lift my head and he lifts his too, our eyes lock and we stare into each others eyes. He has beautiful light brown eyes. Our lips slowly come into contact and we start kissing each other. I close my eyes and enjoy his soft pink lips, I cup his neck and he sucks on my bottom lip, his hands start travelling all around my body till it stops at my ass, I open my eyes, not breaking the kiss. He stops and pulls out, I look into his eyes again but he let's go of me and the warmth of our body's separate.

Dumi: I, I, uhm, I'm.. (he hesitates, he looks at me again and I'm bright red, my

cheeks are as red as a tomatoe)

Dumi: uhm I'm sorry, that shouldn't have happened..

Me: but you liked it..(I said shyly)

Dumi: but this is wrong Layla, you're my sister's sister, I'm your sisters brother.

Me: but we're not related Dumisani.

Dumi: let's stop this before it goes any further, before we hurt each other.

Me: but I want you, I like the way you hold me, the way your hands feel around my waist, the way my lips feel when you're kissing me.

Dumi: I'm not supposed to make you

feel that way Layla, its wrong..

Me: I don't see any wrong in it, I just...

(A knock on the door interrupted me, I sigh)

Me: who is it?? (I say calmly)

Tumi: hey its me, we'll be late for school.

Layla: oh uhm, I'll be down in a minute.

Tumi: OK (then we heard footsteps walking away)

Dumi: you have to go to school, see you later

(he looked at me then walked out the door)

Gosh this is crazy, do I really like him

that much..

.

Tumi's POV

I'm so glad that Luganda and I are back together, I missed my man. I wonder how Lindiwe is doing, she is about 5 months pregnant and my friend is glowing, she send me pics of herself and her scans, she looks so cute when she is pregnant.

I'm at school and it is break time, I'm in the library doing some assignment that we got last week and its due on Thursday...

Mia: hey cute stuff (she said kissing my

cheek and sitting next to me)

Me: hey Mia, what's up?

Mia: nah nothing much, I wanted you to meet my new girlfriend, she'll be here soon.

Me: girlfriend as in you're dating??

(I said shocked because last time I check, she said she don't do dating)

Mia: yes her name is Sphehlehle but you can call her Sphe or Sihle

Me: oh OK, cool (I smiled)

We continued with a brief conversation and later a good looking fine ass girl with big thighs and cute breast walked

up to us, her hair tied up and she is drop dead gorgeous..wow..

Girl: hey baby (she said pecking Mia's lips)

Mia: babe, meet Tumisani my friend, Tumi this is my girlfriend, Sphe.

Me: its nice to meet you (I smiled and we shook hands)

Me: so Sphe what grade are you in?

Sphesihle: I'm in grade 12

Me: oh OK so you're older than Mia? (I asked, I had to ask)

Sphesihle: yes, you're really beautiful, Mia talks about you all the time (oh my

gosh...Weird....)

Me: oh really! thank you (I smiled) that's nice.

Mia: so Tumisani we're hanging out at my place this Thursday afternoon, plz join us and I promise it's not a party.

Me: what do you mean by, " we"?

Mia: uh Lerato, Layla, Mike, Kat, Courtney basically the whole squad, we'll just be chilling maybe swimming too, you could bring your boyfriend along too.

Me: OK that wouldn't be a bad idea.

Mia: great, I can't wait till Thursday already.

Sphesihle: me too (than all of a sudden, they started kissing and I was just sitting there wondering what to do with my eyes)

Thankfully the bell rang and we all went to our separate classes. After school came too soon, Luu came to pick me up and we were driving to the hotel he's staying at to spend some quality time together.

Yanda: so babe, how was school? (he said smiling)

Me: hmm not bad (I said smiling back)

Yanda: I'm sure every guy can't keep theirs yes off you, you're practically like

a walking Goddess.

(I blushed, what he just said is so true, almost every dude in that school wants to be my friend)

Me: something like that...(I smirked)

Yanda: I hope you're telling them to back off because you're taken.

Me: of course babe, so my love, my friend Mia, you remember her right?

Yanda: yes I do

Me: yeah so we're hanging out at her place this Thursday after school, I was wondering if you would like to come with me? (I said lookin at him while he was driving, he looks so concentrated

and so Damn cute when he's focused)

Yanda: I would love to come, so is it like a party or something?

Me: no we'll just be chilling and maybe swimming too since it's a public holiday on Friday.

Yanda: hmm I would love to see you in a bikini . (he said with a naughty smirk on his face)

Me: you keep dreaming my love, who said anything about me swimming?

Yanda: why not babe? you have a gorgeous body.

Me: I know, just that swimming ain't my thing.

Yanda: you don't have to swim, just relax in the water.

Me: mmm OK

(we go to the hotel he's staying at, he got out of the car then came to open the door for me, such a gentleman)

We walked into the hotel, he checked in and we went up to his room with an elevator.

Yanda: welcome to my Hotel room babe.

(he said opening the door and we got in)

The room was a bright white. White bed sheets, two white couches and there was a TV plastered on the wall and plus everything in this room was clean,

impressive.

I sat down on the couch and he sat next to me then wrapped his arms around my waist and pulled me closer, I smiled.

Yanda: are you hungry? I wanna order some pizza, is that cool?

Me: yeah that's perfect.

(he unwrapped his one hand from my waist then pulled his phone out from his pocket and started typing stuff and clicking on stuff, then he put the phone in the small white table that separate the two couches)

Yanda: babe

Me: my love

Yanda: I love you

Me: I love you too (I said smiling then her pressed his lips slowly onto mine and he started kissing me, I responded then closed my eyes and enjoyed his soft creamy lips, I wrap my hands around his neck and he pulls me onto his lap.)

After a while I felt hot, his hands started travelling and travelling, my hands started travelling too. I felt something that I've never felt before, the need to just want him, I don't know what got into me but all of a sudden I started unbuttoning his shirt, he did the same to me, he ripped my shirt off and my breast

were visible, I was left with only my skirt and bra which was colorfully decorated in sunflowers, I pulled his shirt off and he was left shirtless, we continued kissing and things got heated, my hands just couldn't keep still, it kept roaming around his body until it stopped at his six pack, his arms were holding my ass, he squeezed it and a weird beautiful sound that I've never heard before escaped my lips, he deepened the kiss and this burning sensation never left my body, I just wanted him, this is crazy. His hands went under my skirt and it just hit me that I'm fucking wet down there. Wait, did I just pee on myself but it can't

be, this is weird. This is crazy but I never stopped kissing him, his fingers touched the fabric of my wet panty then my cookie and that weird sound came out of my mouth again. He softly touched my cookie then stopped, like literally, he stopped kissing me and pulled his hand out of my skirt, I came back to reality...

Yanda: baby you're not ready (he said softly)

I just sat there turning red out of embarrassment. I feel so embarrassed, I looked away, what is wrong with you Tumisani?? I asked myself.

Yanda: hey, look at me (he said turning

my face towards him but I just felt stupid and embarrassed like, what was I doing?)

Yanda: my love don't feel embarrassed, I love you but I don't want you to feel like I'm taking advantage of you, you're not ready and I won't pressure you into this, take all the time you need, I'm here.

Me: uhm what if you, you... (I hesitated)

Yanda: I won't ever leave you, I would be a fool to even dream of leaving all this (he said smiling and looking at my open body, I blushed)

Yanda: you're so damn beautiful, if I ever think of leaving you for some other girl

than I'm a fool.

(He took my hands and kissed it, I guess I fell even more in love with him because my heart just automatically melted)

He might be bad and all but I'm the luckiest girl on earth. I sat on his lap admiring his sexy body, there was a knock at the door...

Yanda: that must be the pizza delivery, let me go check it out babe (he kissed my exposed breast than placed me on the couch)

After about 4 mins, he came back holding the pizza box in his hands and

he was still shirtless (both of us) which made him look even more sexy. He open the box, took out a slice of pizza then started feeding me and himself too. He's too cute.

Yanda: babe when are you going to have full control over the things your father left under your name?

(he asked pulling me onto his bare chest and as we layed on the couch, eating)

Me: once I've turned 18.

Yanda: hmmm so you'll be a billionaire by next year, wow.

Me: yep but I can only take over once I'm

done with high school because I still have to be trained on how the companies work and plus the hotel.

Yanda: so you'll be busy as hell next year?

Me: yup, but I'll always make time for you my love.

Yanda: I'm glad to hear that, because I'll miss you when you'll become too busy for me.

Me: (I giggled) you just don't like sharing me with anything.

Yanda: exactly (he said placing his hand just under my ass, mmm) I love you Tumisani Phakade.

Me: (I smiled) I love you too Luyanda

Mkisi.

Yanda: you're so beautiful, you'll give me beautiful children that'll be just as gorgeous as you.

Me: (I smiled like a fool) how many Phakade's do you want?

Yanda: you mean Mkisi's, I want 10 children.

Me: no babe I'm keeping my surname and my children will have my surname and Luu, 10 children is way too much, its like having a mini creche.

Yanda: no tumsa, my children are having my surname and so will you once I marry you, and 10 children is perfect

babe, now stop arguing with the father of your future children and just eat babe.

Me: (I laughed) you're crazy Luu.

Yanda: I know, that's why you love me..

Me: Not (I said holding my giggle in)

Yanda: excuse me? (he said looking at me)

Me: nothing my love (I giggled)

Yanda: thought so

He held my chin and made me look at him then he kissed me again, making my heart start dancing)

The things he's doing to me...

He makes me my heart go Ba-dum bood

-up, Biddy Ba-dum, bood up...

Ba-dum, bood- up, hear my heart go Ba-
dum, bood- up.

LIKE, SHARE AND COMMENT

PLZZZ COMMENT PEOPLE

I LOVE YOU

[06/17, 09:37] Snr: INSERT 35

.

.

.

.

Rachel's POV

The time is 16:30 and Lindo still hasn't woken up yet, I'm getting worried now because she hasn't eaten and if I keep injecting her she'll become even more weaker than she already is.

I was watching TV but my mind was elsewhere, sometimes I wish life wasn't this hard on me. I was deep in thought when I saw Lindi limping to the lounge, I quickly stood up and ran to help her.

Me: my love, how do you feel? (I said placing her down on the couch as she held onto her shoulder)

Lindo: I'm starving.

Me: OK, I'll go make you something to eat.

(I left her sitting on the chair than quickly made something for her to eat then brought it to her and started feeding her)

Lindo: what happened last night?

Me: babe don't worry, I'll sort this out, you just focus on getting better.

Lindo: no Ray, I want to know what happened last night because that was crazy, who did it?? (she asked looking at me, I sighed)

Me: Monster, he found out that we're

working with the enemy and the bullet wasn't meant for you kuhle, it was meant for Siphho.

Lindo: damn it, where is Siphho??

Me: Kuda hasn't found him yet.

Lindo: so what now Ray?? is the deal off or what, because he has a perfect fucked up plan, we need him Ray.

Me: baby your life is in danger, Monster is out to get you Kuhle, we need to slow down a little bit. (I said not making eye contact, she's fuming)

Lindo: what!!?? (she laughed sarcastically) you've got to be kidding me Ray, for God's sake we don't have

enough time Ray, we only have about five months till Tumisani turns 18 and they sign the companies under her name.

Me: I know Kuhle, I know, but we've gotta be careful.

Lindo: mxm, I don't care anymore Rachel, this whole thing has been going way too fucking slow!!

Me: baby relax please..

Her phone started ringing...

< call convo >

(she put it on loudspeaker)

Lindo: Phakade speaking.

Monster: Kuhle you betrayed me, after all that I've done for you, is this how you repay me? I should've know better than to trust a piece of shit like you, you're such a bitch!! (he pounded)

Lindo: monster, uhm, uh look its not what you think..

Monster: shut up you bitch, I hope that bullet taught you a lesson, next time it won't be your shoulder, it'll be your dirty stupid fucked up head!! (he said shouting then hanged up)

< end of convo >

Lindo: damn it!! (she said shouting but ended up hurting her shoulder)

Lindo: ouch!! (she screams)

Me: babe take it easy, we'll figure this out (I said holding her hand)

Lindo: call Kuda please

(I dialled Kuda's number and it rang)

< call convo >

Kuda : boss..

Lindo: hey Kuda, its me

Kuda: boss lady, you're awake?

Lindo: yeah mahn, I'm awake, but Kuda too much shit is happening Mann...

Kuda: eish boss lady, it's worse than we thought..

Lindo: talk to me..(I said listening

attentively)

Kuda: eish boss lady, you have to calm down first..(I chuckled)

Rachel: Kuda what's up?

Kuda: boss, Tumisani and Monster's son, Luyanda, are dating and apparently (he paused then said..) they're deeply in love...

Lindo: fuck!! (she screams out loud)

Rachel: what!? don't tell me he's in Cape town too?

Kuda: yes he's in Cape town

Rachel: damn it!! (I snapped)

Kuda: and worst part is that he's just like

his father and he's in the same gang as Dumisani.

Rachel: gosh, way to go Kuhle, you have a whole family of gangsters. (I said sarcastically)

Lindo: shut up Ray (she hissed) Thanks Kuda, keep us updated.

Kuda: Sure boss (I hanged up)

< end of convo >

I looked at her and she's deep in thought...

Me: Kuhle

Lindo: mmmhm (she said looking at me annoyed)

Me: baby you have to calm down plz

Lindo: I'll try (she says taking a deep breath)

Me: I love you and I'm here for you.

Lindo: thanks, I love you too

I kissed her juicy lips softly and her nerves calmed down a bit.

.

Layla's POV

It was finally Thursday, I couldn't wait to go to Mia's house and have some fun.

This week was so slow, I'm so glad tomorrow is a public holiday. After school I quickly came home to fetch my

swimming outfit because I had forgotten it this morning, Tumisani and Zack went there straight after school so its just me alone at home. I put on denim shorts with my blue bikini underneath but I'm shirtless. I took my clutch bag, phone and sandals then walked downstairs but bumped into Tumisani on my way to the lounge, and he was shirtless too...

I stood there for a second admiring all those abs and muscles, hmhhh he's smoking hot...

Me: uh uhm, hey (I smiled shyly but never stopped looking at his perfectly structure body)

Dumi: oh uhm, uh, hi, you look...(he scratched his head) hot!! (he blurted out)

Me: uhm thanks, uh listen, about the kiss, uhm...

Dumi: I liked it

(he cupped my neck with his hands and pulled me closer to him then kissed me, hungrily)

The warmth of his lips made my body crave him, I held onto his waist, our lips dancing to the same tune, till he stopped to breath and held my waist...

Dumi: I don't know what this feeling is or what it means but I also don't know if it is right or wrong, but I just Want to

explore it..

(he said looking into my eyes, I smiled)

Me: I want to explore it too (I said
kissing him passionately, my heart was
skipping, my blood was calm, I want him,
Layla Matthews wants him)

Dumi: you'll be late (he said letting go of
my lips and giggling)

Me: now I wish I could stay home with
you

Dumi: me too but they're waiting for you.

(he said taking my hand as we walked
to Zack's sports car, I'll be driving one
sexy killer beast)

Me: I won't be able to stop thinking about you (I say smiling and holding him in an embrace)

Dumi: me neither

(he said holding my jaw and kissing me softly)

Am I in love?? my stomach had butterflies, my legs got weak, my emotions took over my body. Can this be love?? He let go then kissed my forehead..

Dumi: I'll see you later

(I smiled, unable to speak)

I got into the car and drove off.

Dumisani makes me happy, I really like

him but what will my brother think of me?? He'll be disappointed but I can't control how I feel. All I want is him, I like it when he holds me, Kiss's me, looks at me. The way his eyes light up when he sees me, the way he smiles at me...

Could this be love???

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

Welcome to all our new readers, pls feel comfortable and free to advertise your pages and don't forget the links, thank you all for making it possible for my page to grow, I really appreciate it, I

hope you all know that, I Love Y'all
Guys, I'm starting exams this week
coming week, I'll be a bit busy but plz
bare with me, I'll try to post as much as
possible, but I also have a life and I have
to focus on my books but I'm always
gonna make time for you too, so plz take
care and have a blessed week ahead

Love

Admin

[06/17, 09:38] Snr: .INSERT 36

.

.

.

Guys I'm wanted to write the recap but I don't have much time cuz I have to study plz do go back to the previous chapter if you lost.

.

.

Tumi's POV

I'm at Mia's house with the whole squad except for Layla who is on her way.

Mia's house is beautiful, its colorful and really decorative with all sorts of things.

They have a big swimming pool in the back yard just like ours but the

Matthews mansion has a pool and a

jacuzzi. We're chilling around the pool area, the boys are braaiing and the girls are in the pool. So I guess Yanda influenced me to wear a bikini so here I am, feet dipped in water, sitting on the pool wall, dressed in a pink and white poker dotted bikini. Something that I don't usually do, I feel exposed and naked and worst part is that the bikini is lacy, someone could just basically strip me naked in less than two seconds. Don't even ask where I got the bikini from because my bad ass boyfriend just decided that he'll just buy me a bikini and I'll wear it, and his trick worked. One reason why I don't like exposing my

body is because I've got too much of beautiful assets including the big bomb ass, cute medium breast (Lindiwe's words) and I got a flat tummy with curves in all the right places, so basically I have a great figure and the last thing I want is someone taking advantage of me and doing something bad to me simply because my body was tempting them cuz that's the kind of world we live in. So I don't usually walk around exposing myself, although I feel sexy but I've also got self respect...

Sphesihle (Mia's girlfriend): hey tumi (she said sitting down next to me dripping wet, she just came out of the

pool)

She has a gorgeous body, flat belly, big ass and large breast but not that big.

Me: hey Sphe (I smiled)

Sphe: do you want something to drink??
why aren't you swimming with the girls?

(she asked drying her long braids with a towel)

Me: nah swimming ain't my thing, I think I've had enough cooldrink for one day.

Sphe: you don't drink alcohol?

Me: nope

Sphe: oh OK, so can't you swim or you're afraid of the water?

Me: I can swim but I just don't like swimming.

Sphe: what!!? you're crazy, swimming is fun, come on, get your huge ass up!!
(she said dragging me up, laughing)

Me: no, no, Sphe I'm not getting in there!
(I said giggling, this gril is crazy, just like Mia)

Sphe: don't let the big sharks bite you!!
(next thing I know, she pushes the both of us into the water)

Me: Sphe!! (I said screaming as I was pushed in)

After a while we both blobbed up. My hair falls onto my shoulders and it curls

up.

Sphe: that was awesome!!

(she said as we made our way to the pool stairs, she was busy laughing her ass off)

Me: you're one crazy ass bitch!! (I said laughing)

Sphe: you should've seen your face, you looked as if the earth was crumbling.
(she laughs)

Me: shut up (I giggled)

After a while Kayla finally showed up in a blue bikini bra and blue shorts..

Layla: hey y'all, am here!!

(she said coming through the sliding doors)

Mia: what took you so long?

(she said sitting down on the slouch chair wrapped in a white towel)

Courtney: Girl you're smiling, what's new?

(she said pouring herself a glass of wine)

Lerato: it can only be a boy that makes Queen L smile like that, come on, spill.

Layla: lol, you guys are fucked up, I'm just happy to see my friends and sister.

(she said smiling and bending down to kiss my cheek then walked back to the

drinks table and poured herself wine too)

Mia: Lies, gosh guys look at her, she's glowing all of a sudden.

Courtney: Layla tell us who it is??

Layla: fuck y'all, its no one (she said drinking)

Mbali: bitch go lie to someone else, I bet he's giving you good!!

Lerato: for real girl (they giggled, they are one crazy crew)

Layla: OK whatever, enough about me, Mia who's this beauty face over here??
(she said smiling at Sphesihle)

Mia: oh that's Sphesihle, my girlfriend,

how come you don't know her, we're in the same school, you fool.

Layla: oh, now I remember where I saw you from, I'm Layla, Mia's friend and Tumi's sister.

Sphe: nice to meet you

Layla: likewise

Courtney: guys I'm gonna go get me some love, I miss the dick, Mia....

Mia: no not in my house, you and mike can go fuck your self's in his car.

Courtney: Mia plz, its been a while since I've been pleased, plzzzz, I'll make it up to you plzzz

Mbali: me too, plzzz Mia

(they said with puppy faces)

Lerato: hayibo guys!!

Them: Mia plzzzz!!!

Mia: OK, OK geez, there at two open guest rooms on the far right of downstairs.

Courtney: thanks babe

Mbali: dankie my love

They both stood up and walked to where the boys were standing and braaing.

Yoh my man looks yummy, he's only wearing shorts and all those muscles are visible, hmm, sexy much.

Sphe: yoooh hayi (she giggled)

Lerato: they're crazy right?? (she says sarcastically)

Mia: we're all crazy, don't act all innocent Lerato, just cuz you're on break with the dick.

Lerato: shut up Mia.

Layla: Lol, break with the dick (she laughs)

Sphe: Yoh guys, don't talk like that, some of us are still virgins here, mxm.

Mia: who's still a virgin?? you?? baby I broke your virginity ages ago, unless tumisani is still a virgin?

(they all looked at me and I realise they're looking at me with questing eyes)

Me: what?? (I asked confused)

Mia: don't tell me you're still a virgin??

Me: uh??

Lerato: oh my gosh, you're still a virgin?

Me: yeah (I blushed)

Lerato: are you for real? don't tell me you've been starving the nigga like that

Mia: damn girl, how does he resist you with all those Beautiful assets you've got.

Layla: I don't know how he managed to wait for that long, and on top of that he's

super hot too, don't you wonder if he'll look for pussy elsewhere??

Sphe: so you mean you've been dating for so long and he has never tasted your cookie yet?? with this God damn body you've got??

Them: damn!!

(they all said shocked and all I could do was turn bright red and feel embarrassed.)

The guys came except for Mike and katlego who were busy having sex with their girlfriends so it was only Zack and Yanda. The girls were still looking at me shocked and weirdly..

Zack: why do you all look as if you've seen a gosh!!

(he said placing the meat down onto the table)

Yanda: babe why are you red in the face?
(he asked concerned)

Zack: what are these bitch's telling you tumisani, did they say something rude to you...

Layla: really Zack, really?? (she said sarcastically)

Lerato: we're just talking girls stuff

Mia: yeah, right tumisani??

(she looked at me smiling)

Me: oh uh, yeah right (I said faking a smile and standing up then walk to where they were seated)

Yanda: baby are you sure?

Me: yes I'm sure

(he wrapped his arms around my waist and stood behind me, holding me from behind)

Sphe: are you sure she hasn't put you under a spell Luyanda? (she asked giggling)

Yanda: no its called love (he said kissing my neck)

Zack: can we start eating now?

(he asked, setting the wooden table on the grass and packing plates on it)

Mia: Yoh, you act as if this is your house, mxm.

Zack: oh, so should I leave the table for you ladies to set?

Mia: no carry on my brother (she's rolling her eyes)

Zack: thought as much, now come on, the table is set. (we all went to the table and sat down, Yanda sat next to me holding my hand under the table)

Lerato: if those sex addicts don't hurry up, they'll have to eat peanut butter and bread. (she said as we started eating.

The meat is delicious, it is crispy and tasty)

Sphe: this is good!!

We ate and after a while Mike, Courtney, Kat and Mbali came back than joined us. It was getting late And it was time for us to leave. Honestly, I had so much fun, although this squad is crazy but I had fun. The night was becoming chilly and a bit cold, Yoh Cape Town weather is like period mood swings. Yanda gave me his jacket and I wore it which made me feel small because it was big. We said our goodbyes then got into separate cars, I was driving with Yanda who insisted on taking me home

although I could've gone with Zack or Layla.

Yanda: babe you looked beautiful in that bikini it was hard for me to concentrate. (he said putting his hand on my bare thighs and still driving)

Me: thanks my love (I smiled)

We got to my house and Zack insisted that he sleeps over since there is no school tomorrow so he ended up staying.

We walked into my room and I just realized that its my first time having a boy either than my brother in my room. I all of a sudden become shy.

Me: uh, uh, I'll go take a shower, make yourself comfortable. (I said without eye contact And walking to the bathroom but he held my waist and stopped me from behind)

Yanda: may I plz join you? (He asked kissing my neck then started unzipping the jacket he gave me to wear)

Me: uh, uhm (he fully unzips it then takes it off, I'm once again left in my bikini)

Me: hmmm (I cleared my throat) OK

We walked to the bathroom and he starts undressing himself. I don't know what to do cuz I've never taken a shower

with a boy or simply anyone before, I just watch him as he strips himself naked. My eyes land on his lower body and I shut my eyes And gasp. He's big down there. I feel his arms around me but I still don't open my eyes .

Yanda: babe, open your eyes. (I slowly open them and he's smiling)

Yanda: don't look at it, focus on me, (he said giggling)

Me: you're big!! (I blurted out)

Yanda: you'll get used to it, now come.

We get into the shower and he turns the water on. It heats my skin smoothly and I liked the feeling. He stands behind me

and unties the lace of my bikini bra which falls to the ground then he unties the laces of the bikini's panty and I'm fully exposed to him. He turns me around and I don't dare make eye contact.

Yanda: babe

(he uses his index finger to make me look at him and I finally do)

Yanda: relax, I'm not going to do anything OK?

Me: OK

(he kisses me then puts his hands on my ass and squeezes it which causes me to deepen the kiss)

My arms fly around his neck, I feel his bulge as it touches my thigh and I want to stop but something tells me not to stop. His hands go up to my breast which have rises and squeezes it, a lovely sound escapes my mouth. He breaks the kiss and slightly pushes me in the wall with his hand on my shoulder. He looks at me from bottom to top then a smile breaks free from his cute lips.

Yanda: you're beautiful Tumisani

Phakade (I smiled shyly, the feeling of being exposed to him makes my blood boil)

Yanda: I love you with my whole entire body, heart and soul.

He smashes his lips onto mine and gave me the most intense, emotional, deep, loving, romantic kiss he's ever given me. That's when I realized, he's the one for me. My ride or die, my other half and the love of my life.

Ok, enough with the happy times, let's bring a little twist to the story. Be prepared to expect the unexpected, cuz this next insert will shock the shockers and break the hearts of hearts

Guys you know I love you right, and I hope you love me too but plz don't hate me because of the next inserts, like I've

said before, some will cry, some will laugh but at the end....We'll all rejoice

LIKE COMMENT AND SHARE

[06/17, 09:38] Snr: CONTINUATION

.
. .

OK, I tried to fix the problem with my phone and I think I've fixed it, I felt bad that I left you guys for a while and my hand was itching, I just wanted to write and write but my phone was giving me hell but let's hope its fixed now. This is

my little apology

- .
- .
- .

Tumi's POV

Being I'm his arms feel so great. The warmth of our body's feel like heaven. His breathing in my ear with his arms wrapped around my waist, snoring softly. I'm so glad nothing happened last night, he didn't try anything funny although being naked in front of him made me shy but I felt safe and happy.

I open my eyes and the sun is beaming down and there is light in the room.

Yanda is still sound asleep with almost his whole body on top of me. I loom at him and a smile forms on my lips. He looks so cute and all kinds of adorable, I untangle my arm from his strong hold and I start playing with his hair, still smiling...

Yanda: morning beautiful (he said smiling with his eyes closed)

Me: morning handsome, how did you sleep?

Yanda: I wish we could stay like this for the whole day, being in bed with you is the best thing ever (he opens his eyes and kiss my forehead)

Me: really? (I giggle)

Yanda: yes, really

He pulls me up on top of him and holds my waist, good thing I wore my pajamas last night.

Yanda: you're so beautiful (I smile and press my lips onto his and kiss him slowly)

Me: now come on, time to get up

(I tempt to get off from on top of him but he pulls me back)

Yanda: let's stay like this a little longer.

Me: I wish we could, but babe breakfast in the Matthews house is at 09:30 in

weekends, plz get up, its already 08:45.

Yanda: aaaghh but you're taking a shower with me, right?

(he smiles naughtily)

Me: yeah whatever (I giggled)

We brush our teeth and take a shower together than aunt Rose brings Yanda a pair of white jeans and blue shirt, I wear white jeans and a blue see through blouse with a vest under, we're matching. I do my hair and we go down for breakfast.

Us: good morning

Them: morning

Layla: you guys look so cute, you're matching!

Me: lol, thanks (I smile)

We had breakfast and chilled for a bit till Yanda got a call which made his mood suddenly change. He went up to Dumi's room and after a while they both came down.

Yanda: babe we're going out for a while, we'll be back later.

Me: oh uhm, is everything OK? (I asked worried)

Dumi: everything is fine princess, I'll see you later (he hugged me tightly as if he's going forever, then he kissed my

cheek)

Dumi: I'll see you later.

Something doesn't add up here.

Yanda: don't worry you're self too much, we'll be back.

He kissed my lips and they said bye to everyone then left. But my heart was unsettled.

.

Luyanda's POV

We got into the car and drove off. I don't know why people find the pleasure in messing with the people I love most. Once again someone is messing with

my loved ones. Bino phoned me and told me that Sipho is back in town and he has tricks up his sleeves so I decided that I would get rid of this fool for once and for all. He has to finally pay for what he did to Tumisani and I'll make sure he follows his father in hell.

Me: so the gents said he's landing today with some Lady that I'm not sure about but she's somehow helping him with his evil plans.

Dumi: what are his plans?

Me: He's onto Tumisani, again. (I said through gritted teeth and pressing hard onto the steering wheel)

Dumi: mxm, bastard never learns (he clicks his tongue)

Me: he's landing in about a couple of hours, Tino and Bino are at my fathers warehouse already, they're loading the weapons.

Dumi: I'm gonna make sure I kill the bastard with my own bare hands.

Me: no, I want him to suffer before he dies, we have to teach him a lesson.

We park at the warehouse and walk inside, the place is packed with weapons of all sizes. We do our planning which takes very long because we kept arguing about everything and

because we had to find a way of how to get rid of him at the airport, the minute he lands. Time flies and by the time we knew it, it was already 17:00, the sun is already setting and the cold breeze is welcoming itself. We change to full black outfits, put our weapons in place and drive out.

.

Lindokuhle's POV

The day is finally here. My one biggest obstacle is finally getting out of the picture. Today is the day Dumisani Phakade, dies. We've planned it all, step by step, and I won't be the one doing all

the dirty work alone. The plan is that Siphos begins a physical fight with Dumisani and I know Monsters son, Luyanda will want to fire the gun and aim it at Siphos but as soon as Siphos sees him shooting, he'll replace his position and make Dumisani become the target, I will be watching Luyanda's move from behind, as soon as he pulls the trigger, I will pull mine too so that both bullets hit Dumisani and he'll die immediately and all the blame will be on Luyanda. He will be looked as the murderer of Dumisani Phakade...

hahahaha (evil laugh)

Sipho and I came through different transports, he came by plane and I came by bus. We didn't want people to suspect that we were working together. I haven't heard anything from Monster and I wonder what is his next move. One thing I know about Monster is that, he can try to kill me as many times as he wants but he'll never succeed, we are meant to be together, we are the perfect match. I got to the airport and plan how the attack will go, I hide into the spot that I'll be shooting from. I watch how Sipho's plane land and everyone gets their weapons ready.

.

Dumi's POV

My heart starts racing fast and my palms become sweaty. my breathing quickens and my mind runs wild. This has never happened before, I feel like something bad is about to happen. I'm having doubts about this attack. But I really want to kill the bastard with my own bare hands for what they did to my sister. On that thought, something tells me to take my phone out and call Tumisani, call her and tell her how much you love her, tell her she means the world to you, my subconscious says. As soon as I reach my pocket to take my phone out, I hear gunshots. We are at

the airport in our hiding spots, ready for the attack. There is no turning back now.

.

Luyanda's POV

Sipho's plane lands and its a private jet.

To my surprise, he walks out as if an attack is not about to take place here.

As soon as gun shots are fired, he ducks down and pulls his gun out, I aim my gun at him but I miss my shot, he shoots at my direction and it breaks the car window that I'm hiding against.

Dumisani comes out from behind him and hit him from behind. his gun falls onto the floor and they start having a

physical fight, punches are being thrown around as well as gun shots. Siphon punches Dumi on the stomach and he loses balance and he's about to lose the fight, I pull my gun out and aim at Siphon but they keep moving around and I don't recognize who is who, they are all covered in blood, Dumisani chokes Siphon while they are standing, I finally get my aim right, but as soon as I pull the trigger, Siphon flips Dumisani around and the bullet followed by another bullet that came out of nowhere hits the wrong person. Resulting in two bullets hitting Dumisani at the same time. He collapses on the floor immediately. My heart stops

beating, I drop the gun...

Me: Dumisani nooooo!!!!

.

Tumi's POV

My heart is pounding, my head is ticking and it is about to burst out, my fingers are trembling, my temperature is rising and a fever takes over my body.

Layla: Tumisani are you OK? (she asks concerned)

Me: I'm not feeling well, I , I , I can't breath.. (I feel suffocated and my breathing fastens, my heart feels like it is being stabbed multiple times)

what is happening to me...

Layla: I'll go get you some water, Zack call the doctor. she has a fever. (she rushes to the kitchen, Zack feels my temperature and my forehead is burning hot, my face is red as a tomato's)

Layla brings a glass of water, as I start drinking it my fingers start shaking and the glass falls out of my hand, it clashes to the ground and breaks into pieces, the sound of JTS clash sounds like my heart has been broken into a thousand pieces, I hold onto my chest and unexplainable tears pour down my cheeks..

Me: uh I'm sorry, I'll fix it (I bend down to the shattered pieces)

Justin: Tumisani, no!!

Too late, I touched the broken pieces and one cuts my skin open deeply. The blood in my body feels like it also comes pouring down out of my finger tips.

Blood fills the floor and more tears fall down my cheeks and I still don't know the reason.

Justin: oh my gosh, you're bleeding, let go of those pieces Tumisani (I let it go and my body feels numb)

They clean up the broke pieces and stained floor, Justin bandages up my

hand and still overwhelmed with emotions, I can't stop crying..

Zack: what's wrong Tumisani? plz tell us what's wrong, you're scaring me.

(They all have worried faces, I wish I had the answer to their questions, I just stare at them blankly, tears just flooding my cheeks)

Layla: I think we should call Dumisani, maybe he'll know what to do?

Dumisani!?? Dumisani!!! The sound of his name brings me back to earth, where is Dumisani?? What if something happened to him?? I jumped up quickly and start pacing up and down like a mad

person.

Me: where is Dumisani!!?? (I asked yelling loudly and pacing up and down, they all looked at me confused)

Me: where is my brother!!!?? I want my brother right now, plz call my brother (I cried)

Justin: OK baby relax, plz calm down (he made me sit down but I couldn't help the emotions that I was feeling, my heart was banging hard against my chest)

He dialled Dumisani's number but it continuously sent him to voicemail. He kept trying but still, nothing. He called Luyanda and the same thing happens. I

don't realize that I'm crying out loud now and I don't know why. Layla holds me tightly comforting me although she is confused at all this. After about an hour or so, Luyanda walks through the door and he's covered in blood, he falls onto his knees and starts crying.

Me: Yanda!! Yanda!!

Yanda: tumi, my love ...(he cried)

I ran to where he was sitting on the floor crying, I bent down and looked at him, tears rolling down my cheeks.

Me: Lu where is my brother??!! (I shouted)

Yanda: Tumi, (he cried defeated)

Me: Lu tell me where my brother is??

Yanda: he, he, he's gone Tumisani!!

Dumisani left us, he's dead!!!

Me: WHAT!!!!????

My head started spinning, my body lost control, my feet started shaking, I let go of him and I Fall to the floor. BOOM.

Lights Out.....

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

WELL, WELL, WELL,

Does this mean Lindokuhle wins?? Do you think Luyanda is really the murderer

of Dumisani Phakade or is it Kuhle???

Does this mean Tumisani's protector is no more, will she be safe now?? Does the Phakade legacy still continue???

Goodnight my babies

Admin

[06/17, 09:38] Snr: INSERT 37

.

.

.

I do~

Even if the world turned against you, I would still say, I do.

Even if they abused you both physically

and verbally, I would still say, I do.

Even if my love for you was broken, I would still stand up high and proud and say, I do.

Even if it comes to the end of time, I would still say, I do.

Out of 7 billion people on this earth, I still choose you.

Out of all the good and bad, I would still choose you, with your flaws and ups and downs, your imperfections and your hatred, I would still say....

I do.

~

Tumi's POV

In a dark room filled with darkness and all the wonders of the dark, I sit on the floor, weeping. Tears keep rushing down my cheeks, my heart feels like its just been broken into a thousand pieces and the pieces have been ripped out of my chest.

Why is this world so wicked, why is this world so cruel, Am I not meant to be happy?? Am I not supposed to find happiness.

A white robed lady brings light to the dark filled room, she is fully dressed in white and she is glowing. Her beauty

truly resembles the Phakade's.

Me: Gogo!! (I cried)

Gogo: mntanam

Me: Gogo why?? why have you and Dumisani left me all alone in this wicked world, Gogo please don't take him away from me, Gogo I need him please (I cried, a sharp pain hits my broken heart)

Gogo: mntanam, wipe your tears, this is not the end, the Phakade blood lies in your veins. (she says in that sweet angelic voice)

Me: Gogo no!! who is going to protect me, Gogo I need Dumisani please don't leave me, plz don't abandon me like this

(I wept)

Gogo: mntanam wake up, Don't let the world bring you down, you are the Phakade princess, wipe your tears, stand up mntanam, the Phakade blood lies within you.

With that said, she disappeared.

.

I open my eyes and I'm in my room, laying on the bed, my face is full of sweat. I start crying all over again, I don't remember how I got here, why am I sweating..

I quickly get off the bed and a smile forms on my lips, I want to tell my

brother that I love him, I love him with all my heart and he is the best brother ever. The thought warms my heart, a smile is plastered on my face but tears keep rolling down my red cheeks.

Unexplainable. I run out of my room like a little girl, I run past Luyanda and Layla, they look confused.

Me: Dumi!! (I said smiling like a fool)
Dumisani!!!

(I barged into Hus room, shouting his name)

Me: Dumisani come on, stop playing hide and seek, I've gotta tell you something (I said giggling)

I opened his bathroom and there was no one, I checked his cardboard and walk in closet but still there was no sign of Dumisani, tears kept rushing down but I never paid attention to it, I just want my brother.

Layla, Luyanda, Zack, Justin and Aunt Rose walk into the room and I'm pacing up and down. my chest is tight and painful.

Layla: Tumisani (she says crying)

Me: why are you all standing here looking at me, help me find my brother, I can't seem to find him (I go to the bathroom again looking for him)

Me: Dumisani you can come out now, I don't wanna play anymore, I'm tired. (I whined)

Justin follows me and holds me in his arms, I silently sob but I'm in denial, I just don't stop looking for him, everyone else is crying and looking broken.

Me: why are you guys crying, Aunt Rose why are you crying?? did something happen to your daughter??

I said untangling myself from Justin's arms, I rush to Aunt Rose and she's weeping badly. Why does everyone look so terrible, why aren't they telling me where my brother is? Something's not

right...

Me: Yanda, baby tell me what happened??

(Justin holds me but I pull myself away)

Me: Justin stop holding me, I don't need a hug, there's no time for hugging right now, I wanna find my brother.

(I go to Yanda and he looks....)

Me: why do you look so awful, you are covered in.....(I gasped) Blood!!!!

It all comes pouring down into my heart, soul and body. My brother is no more.

This can't be true, this is a lie, I sit on the floor trying to function everything. My

heart is pounding and my mind is running wild.

Why me?? why does all this bad things happen to me?? is this a curse? First my father, then it was Gogo, now its my brother. Why are they taking away all my loved ones. I can't live without Dumisani. He is my strength, he is the only reason I would wake up in the morning with a smile upon my face ready to take on the world. He is all I have. No, this can't be, he promised me he will live to see me graduate from High school and become my own independent woman. He promised me he would live to see my success. He can't leave me like this, who

would kiss me goodnight and tell me that everything is going to be OK. He is the best brother on this whole earth.

God please bring back my brother.

Dumisani can't leave me like this.

Me: Yanda why would he do this to me??

He promised me he'll be there for me through thick and thin (I cried defeated)

Aunt Rose takes me into her arms and I yearn for that motherly touch, for that motherly warmth. These are the times when I need my mother the most. I cried in her arms. Each tear drop comes with emotions and pain. I don't think I'll ever be able to get over the loss of my brother, my soulmate, my ride or die. My

everything.

Aunt Rose: mntanam, everything is going to be fine, Dumisani loved you dearly, he loved you with all his heart, he will always be with us. (she said comforting me)

It feels like a dream. I wish it was just a terrible nightmare that I could wake up from. I can't lose my brother, who will take care of me, who will call me, "Tumsa and princess" like he does. Who will hug me like he does. The world feels like its coming to an end for me, I feel like the clock has stopped ticking and my heart has stopped beating. I can't live without him, I want God to take me

too, I want to be with him.

He could've at least said goodbye, he could've at least called me and told me that he loves me, I mean the world to him. I just want to at least hear his voice for the last time, I want to at least hold him one last time. He is all I had left....

Love

Admin

[06/17, 09:38] Snr: INSERT 38

.

.

.

3 MONTHS LATER

Tumi's POV

Its funny how life always seems to take away the people we love most. The death of my brother was one of the worst experience of my life. I never seem gain anything in this life, I'm always losing something or someone. I'll never get over the fact that I've lost my brother, he completed me in some kind of way. His funeral was the most saddest day I've ever lived to witness, I made sure that we buried my brother back home in Soweto because that is and always will be our home town. I would wake up every day of this past 3

months and hope that Dumisani is in his room, I wished and prayed that he returns but he never came back. But now I'll just have to live with the fact that my reason to live is no more. What I also found out during this past two months is that Luyanda was the one who pulled the trigger on my brother, my mother made sure that she had a video of the day my brother was murdered. He didn't go to jail simply because his father is the biggest mafia in this city. The pain that I had turned into hatred, I hated Luyanda with every muscle and bone in my body. I became angry and cold hearted. I'm not that happy smiley

Tumisani anymore, I've turned into an angry, hateful and sad child. I cut all ties with Luyanda and the love I had for him turned into hatred. If he hadn't pulled the trigger than my brother would be here holding me every morning. Anger was all I had in my blood, heart and body. A smile only crosses my face once in a blue moon.

Layla: good morning

Me: morning (I said with a straight face as I sat down for breakfast in the dining room)

It is the last day of the school year.

Everyone is getting ready for holidays as

we enter the new month of December. We are going to fetch our reports. But unfortunately for me, I won't be going on holiday because I will be training to become the new CEO and owner of Matthews Industries. I am turning 18 next year, February, and they will be signing the companies into my name so I have to train this holidays.

We eat breakfast and drive to school, my mind is all over the place. I don't know if I passed or failed because while I was busy mourning my brother, I had forgotten that exams were close. We got to the school and fetched our reports then we (squad) all met up at the

cafeteria.

We all opened our reports and to God be the glory, we all passed and I passed with a Bachelors pass, surprisingly.

Mia: Congratulations Tumisani, wow you passed with a Bachelors pass. (she said scanning through my report)

Me: thank you (I tried to smile but It came out as a frown)

Kat: awesome, we've gotta celebrate

Mbali: for sure, come on guys, let's go.

Zack: OK let's go, great idea.

Me: you guys go ahead, I'll catch a taxi home, I'm not in the mood for partying.

(I said taking my bag)

Layla: are you sure? (she said worried)

Me: I'm sure, have fun.

(I said goodbye to everyone and went to catch a taxi but seems like there was none)

Layla confessed to me that she was in love with my brother and they were planning on dating but before they could even start, he died. It all ended way too soon. She would cry all the time just like me but I couldn't comfort her because I was helpless.

I decided to walk and maybe I'll catch a taxi on my way as there was none at the

taxi rank.

Sipho tried to contact me as well as my mother but I hated them, I hated them for some reason that I didn't even understand why the hatred.

As I was walking, a black BMW was following me, I picked up my pace but the car never stopped, I looked left, right and centre but the road was empty. I started to run but then I heard footsteps behind me and the person started calling out my name...

Yanda: Tumisani!! Tumi wait!!!

I got tired of running then stopped to catch my breath.

Me: Luyanda why the fuck are you following me!!?? (I said angrily, anger started to build up in my body)

Yanda: Tumi plz hear me out, plz let me explain.

Me: explain what!!? huh?? tell me Luyanda, explain what!!? (tears pricked my eyes and I tried to fight it back but it came pouring down my cheeks)

Yanda: Tumisani, I know you hate me right now but I swear on my life, I'm innocent. (he walked towards me)

Me: mxm I can't fucking believe you right now, you make me fucking sick, I hate you!! (I throw my bag on the

ground and started punching his chest as tears flooded my cheeks)

Me: I hate you, you killed my brother, I fucking hate you.

(I sat on the floor defeated, I sobbed)

He sits down next to me and takes my hand but I pull it back and fight him again but he holds me tight and brings me to his chest and I just cry.

Yanda: come with me Tumisani, come with me and I'll prove to you that I never killed your brother.

Me: I'm not going anywhere with you.

I pull myself from his arms, as he was making me weak and I don't need that

right now. I stand up and so does he, I take my bag and tempt to walk but he holds my hand.

Yanda: Tumisani I'm begging you, please come with me and see for yourself what I want to show you, and after that you can make your own decisions, please.

I looked into his eyes and I find myself lost in those light brown eyes, I snap back to reality and pull my hand back.

Me: let's go.

We walk back to his car and drive off. I wonder what it is he wants to show me but whatever it is, I know for sure that it

won't bring back my brother.

We get to a place that looks like a decent house from the outside, we get inside and it is indeed a decent house. There is a kitchen and lounge, we sit in the lounge. He plugs something into the TV.

Yanda: babe watch this, I'm doing this to hurt you or remind you of your brothers death. I'm doing this because I'm innocent and because I love you. (he says sincerely)

Me: can you get done already. (I say irritatedly)

He switches on the TV and a full video

of the scene that happens on the day that my brother died, pops up. My heart skips a beat.

It shows all the positions the guards were standing at, the full airport was shown from above, a familiar face shows at the very back of where Luyanda was standing with his gun.

Wait.....That's my Mother!!!

Me: (I gasp) that's, that's.... (I said shocked, no words came out)

Yanda: that's your mother, Tumi look over there....(he points to where Siphos and Dumini started a physical fight)

Tears rolled down my cheeks, it feels

like a movie. I watch as Luyanda position himself properly and pulls out his gun, he aims it at the physical fight. I watch how he struggles to get the perfect aim because Siphos and Dumisani were moving around. How come my mother didn't have all these details, she just showed us how the gun fired.

Yanda: that's when I was trying to get my aim at Siphos.

Dumisani choked Siphos and Luyanda aims his gun in the direction of Siphos but as soon as he pulls the trigger for the bullet to land on Siphos, Siphos turns Dumisani around and the bullet hits

Dumisani but.....another one was fired as well.

Me: wait, rewind that...(I gasped)

Luyanda: look at the person right behind me in the far back, that's your mother!!
(he takes it back a little)

My mother pulls the trigger at exactly the same time and speed Luyanda pulls his, hers was exactly aimed at Dumi.

The bullets both hit him and my heart breaks once again.

Yanda: This was all their plans, look at it, it is all planned, they set us up, they knew our moves And took that to there advantage, did you see Tumisani, my

gun wasn't aimed at Dumisani, my love, I swear I would never hurt you like that. (he said looking at me, tears came down his cheeks and he started crying with me)

Yanda: I would never even dream of killing Dumisani, I swear on my life.

He pulled me into his arms and I sobbed helplessly. Why would my mother do this, why would she kill her own son?? Wasn't she the one begging us for forgiveness. I wipe my tears away and sit up straight.

I want Revenge. I want Justice for my brothers death.

She with pay for this. She killed my father and got away with it but she won't get away with killing my brother. Anger covered my body.

Me: I want revenge. She has to pay for this, she will pay for this!! (I said angrily)

Yanda: she is powerful Tumisani, she is the second biggest mafia in this City including Soweto.

Me: and your father?

Yanda: babe plz let's not involve you in this thing, you're innocent Tumisani, you're too young to be involved in this kind of life.

Me: I don't give a fuck about my age, I

want Justice for my brothers death, will you help me, or not!!?? (I said looking into his eyes coldly, all I feel is anger)

I want to kill her the same way she kill my father and brother. I need to know her game.

Yanda: (sigh) I love you too much to put you in so much danger. (I held his face)

Me: If you love me, you would help me with this.

(he has to help me,he gets weak immediately, I guess I'm his soft spot. I love this wicked side of me, this is such a wonderful feeling, I wish I had discovered this part of me sooner)

Me: you love me right?? (I said sitting on his lap, he nods)

Yanda: with all my heart.

Me: than help me (I put my lips so close to his almost in a seductive way)

Yanda: OK fine (I press my lips onto his, just the answer I needed)

I devoured into his juicy lips, I missed these lips.

The kiss is so emotional, painful and full of anger. I'm angry.

I found another part of me that is dangerous and evil. My hatred turned me into the sweet little beast. I have to use this power that runs within my veins.

I feel powerful and beautiful at the same time. I guess the Phakade blood really runs through my veins. I'll make sure I give Lindokuhle a taste of her own medicine, I'll play her at her own game. She doesn't know what's coming down her road. She just woke up the demon in the Phakade princess. Huhhhh

I'll be the end of Lindokuhle Phakade.

Her very own daughter will defeat her.

Welcome to the new Tumisani Phakade.

As I've said before, beauty and power runs through my veins. I'm gifted with the gift of Beauty and Wisdom.

Let the games begin.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Don't y'all just live this new feisty
Tumisani??? It was about time that
someone ends Kuhle. Now watch how
the war of mother and daughter
unravels itself...

Don't miss out on the next insert....

Shit is about to go down!!!

Love

Admin

[06/17, 09:39] Snr: INSERT 39

.

.

Hello my babies, I'm sorry I left you guys for so long. Exams are finally over!!

I'm back!!!

.

.

.

.

TWO DAYS LATER

Lindiwe's POV

Brian: baby breath, don't panick!!

(he said as he helped me into the back seat of the car)

Me: aaaah babe, aaaah, its painful!!

(I yelled)

It is finally the day I give birth. Life has been good so far on my side. My parents had accepted the fact that I was pregnant as well as my sister who had a sudden change of heart. Everyone has been supporting me especially Brian who's been with me through thick and thin. Even when the pregnancy mood swings kicked in, he never let me go, he was with me through every step of the way. Although I wish my best friend was here with me on this glorious day, but I guess she's also fighting her own demons. She lost her brother and my

friend turned into a totally different person, I visited her for two whole weeks during the funeral and she was a mess. But hopefully through time, she'll move on eventually.

The pain I'm in right now is unexplainable, I'm sweating and doing breathing exercises but seems like its not working. Brian is driving like a bloody maniac, he's stressed and I'm scared he's going to kill all three of us...

Me: aaaah bab-yy slow down!!!

(I screamed gripping hard onto the seat belt while trying to find a position that is comfortable for me but my body felt as

if it was on fire, the pain was just too much)

Brian: my love, we're here.

(he quickly parks the car then rush out to where I was seated screaming)

Brian: somebody help!!!

(he shouted as we got closer to the entrance of the hospital.)

Nurses came out running, I was screaming my lungs out. My water had broke already as we were driving to the hospital.

They put me in a hospital gown and took me straight to the delivery room.

Nurse: madam you're still a bit far.

(what the hell is she talking about, I'm right here for fucking sake)

Brian comes running into the delivery room and I started crying out of pain. I never thought giving birth was this painful.

Me: aaaah I can't take this anymore!!! (I cried)

Brian: babe hold on just a little longer, your parents and sister are on their way.

I want my best friend, I need tumisani the most right now. I want her to be with me.

Me: call tumisani!!! (my voice just keeps

getting higher and higher, I can't seem to stop shouting)

Nurse: you're almost there madam, just breath. (she says trying to calm me down but the pain didn't allow that)

Brian: here babe, its a video call (he held the phone close to me and tumisani's face was there smiling with excitement)

Tumisani: oh my gosh chomma, its really happening!! (she squealed)

Me: babe I'm in so much pain!! (I screamed as tears poured down)

Tumisani: Lindiwe breath, calm down babe.

Me: you think I haven't tried!!

Tumisani: I'm on my way my love, I'll be on the next bus to Soweto right now, I'm so happy for you chommie!!

(this girl Mara...)

Me: fuck you, I'm crying and you're talking about buses, get your ass down here woman!!

Tumisani: (she laughs) you're such a drama queen.

Me: aaaah!! (I scream)

I feel like the lump is getting closer and closer, I think I'm ready...

Nurse: madam its time!! (she puts on a pair of gloves and gets all the necessary stuff)

Tumisani: oh my gosh, Brian, Brian take a video quickly!!! (she says screaming into the phone)

Brian ends the call and starts taking a video.

Nurse: push!!

I hold onto the sheets of the bed tightly as if my life depended on it, I pushed hard and sweat covered my whole face.

Nurse: come on madam, you've got this, push!!

I gave it my all and screamed my lungs out, tears poured down my cheeks like rain.

Brian: come on my love, you can do this!!

(he says taking my hand into his. He looks so happy as if this baby was his, my heart sank)

Nurse: one last time madam!!

I held tightly into his hand and pushed the hardest I have ever pushed.

A loud sound of a baby's cry fills the room. I breathe deeply as I try to catch my breath and keep calm. They clean me up then bring my crying baby to me. This is the most happiest day of my life, my bundle of joy is finally here. She is beautiful, very light in complexion, my baby is a yellow bone just like me, she has small tiny eyes and tiny little fingers

and toes. All sorts of emotions took over my body, she is just perfect.

Nurse: congratulations madam, your baby is really beautiful. (she says smiling as she watched me admire my beautiful princess)

Me: thank you (I kiss my baby's forehead softly, this baby has stolen my heart, she is my everything)

Brian: congratulations my love, I'm proud of you. (he pecked my lips and smiled)

Me: thank you babe, I wouldn't have done this without you. (I smiled looking up at his glowing face)

They put us in a different ward and my parents and sister come rushing in, this is indeed the happiest day of my life. It doesn't matter anymore that my child is a product of rape, what matters is that I love her with all my heart and I will forever love her. I've decided to name my child Thando. I've always wanted to give my first daughter the name, Thando. She came at exactly 18:30 on the 12th of December.

.

Tumi's POV

As soon as the bus arrived at Soweto the very next day around 09:00 in the

morning, my heart started dancing. I was happy that my friend has finally given birth and she is now a mother. Although I don't like the fact that Luyanda is the father but I just have to accept that. Luyanda was so happy that he was a father, he couldn't stop smiling which broke my heart because I wanted to be the first and only person that bares him children. My plan of getting justice for my brothers death is on its shoes. I found out that yanda's father can help me because he somehow has history with my evil mother but I don't know what it is. Knowing the truth of how my brother died somehow calmed me down

a little but I still have pain and anger within me.

We got off the bus and it just hit me that I don't know where to go. I can't go to my old house because it will bring back so many memories and I'll be heartbroken all over again. And I don't want to go to Yanda's house because I don't want to be a burden.

Yanda: babe plz come home with me, you can stay as long as you want. (he says as we got into an uber)

Me: I don't want to be like a burden to your family, Luu.

Yanda: you're not a burden, you're my

girlfriend whom I love with all my heart and I have the right to take care of you, plz don't argue with me about this. (he held my hand and looked me in the eyes)

Me: OK fine but I'm moving to my place after three days.

Yanda: but...

Me: don't argue. (I said stopping him from saying anything else)

We got to his house and it was already around 10:00am. He paid the driver then we took our bags and went inside. The smell of eggs filled our nostrils, he dragged both our bags to the lounge where we met Yemi.

Yemi: oh my gosh tumisani is that you
(she says running towards me and
giving me a tight hug)

Me: yep its really me.

Yemi: oh my gosh how are you? (she
said letting me go)

Me: I've been....hectic and yourself?
(I forced a smile)

Yemi: I missed you so much (she hug
me again)

Me: I missed you too.

Yemi: hey Yanda (she smiled)

Yanda: hey sis, where are the rents
(parents)?

Lady: right here, (she says coming down the stairs) Darling you've lost weight, my love why do you look like shit?

(she says holding his face like a baby)

Yanda: mama relax, I'm fine (he said taking her hands off his face)

Lady: mmmhmm who is this beautiful young lady over here? (I blush)

Yanda: oh ma, this is the girl I've been telling you about, this is my girlfriend tumisani, babe meet my gorgeous mother. (he introduces, smiling)

Me: nice to meet you ma'am (I smile and she examines me from top to bottom like some exam paper that she

forgot about)

Lady: nice to meet you too sweetie, call me Aunt Cynthia. (she smiles warmly) she's beautiful, son.

(Yanda's father comes walking down the stairs).

Monster: indeed she is, makoti, we meet again (he gives me a warm hug, he looks different from the day he saved my life)

Me: we meet again sir.

Monster: call me Monster. (I look at him weirdly)

Yemi: daddy that's weird, not everyone should call you by your gang name.

Yanda: I agree, call him Mr Mkisi.

Monster: that makes me sound old (I giggle)

Cynthia: you guys are rude, our guest hasn't even sat down yet and y'all already talking nonsense, come on sweetie, take a seat.

(she takes my hand then lead me to the couch and I sat down)

Monster: so are you guys here for the holidays??

Yanda: well uhn no, the girl I impregnated gave birth yesterday, I'm now a father.

Cynthia: wow that's great news, I'm a

grandmother, when are we visiting?
(she says excited)

Yanda: I'm going there today, you guys
can go at your own time.

Monster: oh ok, we have to pay the
damages soon tho.

Cynthia: that's right, we have to make a
meeting with her family and pay the
damages. But anyway, I'm sure my
daughter in-law is starving.

Yemi: yes she is, let me go set up the
table. (she left And it was only the four
of us left)

Cynthia: tumisani I want to give you my
condolences for your brothers death,

we're really sincerely sorry. (I fought back tears and simply smiled)

Me: thank you aunt.

Monster: and we also want to say that we're really sorry that our son was stupid to impregnate your bestfriend, we're really sorry.

Cynthia: and you have a heart of gold to still be with him after all he's don't to you, he's really lucky to have you, we're really sorry for all you've been through.

Me: its all in the past now (I smiled)

Monster: you're really a beautiful girl, I wonder where this fool found such an Angel (I giggled)

Yanda: aaaah dad, that's not fair.

Monster: shut up son, don't get me started on you... (they started arguing and believe me it was so funny, lol)

Cynthia: do you see the monkeys that I live with...(we laughed)

Lol, this family is funny. We had breakfast then went to get ready so that we could go and visit Lindiwe and our new born princess.

.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Insert coming up later

Guys, we've finally reached 400 Likes!!!!

Thank you all for your support, I really appreciate it.

Thanks to everyone who likes, comments and shares, you're highly appreciated.

Welcome to all our new readers, keep riding with us through our journey.

Plz don't hesitate to advertise your pages or anything else, feel free.

#loveyou

Admin

[06/17, 09:39] Snr: CONTINUATION

- .
- .
- .

Luyanda's POV

imw so happy that i am a father, i know i've made my mkstakes in the past but this baby means a lot to me although i wish it was tumisani's first baby with me but that doesn't mean i love her any less. I'm so sad that dumisani died and now tumisani is all alone in this wkcked world but as long as I'm still alive, I'll do all i can to protect her. But for the past

few months, she's been angry and heartbroken, she's not the happy jolly tumisani i used to know, she's now full of anger and hatred which scares me. What i also dont like is that she wants revenge. She doesnt know that her mother is the vilest person alive. I dont like her idea of wanting to work with my father so that she can seek revenge because i dont think this will end well.

We got to the hospital and i cant stop smiling, she's happy too but I'm the happiest man alive. We got to the receptionist and they show us where Lindiwe's room is. I hold onto her hand because i cant control my excitement,

she looks at me and smiles but not the smiles she always used to give me but a different kind of smile. We get to Lindiwe's room and find her with Brian and the baby in her arms. My heart melts as i look at this beautiful baby, she is so bright and all sorts of adorable.

We stop at the door admiring this gorgeous angel, i hold onto tumisani's hand tightly and she looks so happy.

Lindiwe: why are you two standing at the door? (she brings us back to reality)

Tumisani: oh my gosh, yanda are you sure this is the right room?

Me: I'm totally sure the nurse said its this room.

Lindiwe: you two are crazy, now get away from the door and come in.

We greeted the both of them and i hugged Lindiwe then all our attention went to the princess.

Tumisani: oh my goodness, she is so beautiful.

Me: she has my nose (i smiled while taking her into my arms)

That very moment, i fell in love with this gorgeous little angel.

Brian: she is beautiful just like her mother.

Tumisani: indeed (she said kissing the babys forehead)

Me: so whats our princesses name? (i asked looking at her tiny little toes)

Lindiwe: Thando, our babys name is Thando.

Me: thay is perfect, hello princess, this is daddy, can you see daddy, can you?? (i said giggling, and she slowly open her beautiful tiny little eyes)

Lindiwe : oh my gosh, she opened her eyes, she hasnt done that yet.

Tumisani: looks like she recognizes her daddy, can i hold her?

Me: of course babe (i gave her the baby and she held her into her arms as if it was her own)

Tumisani: hello baby, this is aunty tumi, we're gonna be best friends right my love (she giggled)

Lindiwe: excuse me...what about me?

Tumisani: nah I'm ditching you, this is my new bestfriend from now on, right princess Thando.

Lindiwe; Thats not fair Tumsa.

Tumisani: no one said it was gonna be fair (we laughed) i missed you chommie.

Lindiwe: i know you did (she giggled)

Me: when are you getting discharged?

Lindiwe: tomorrow morning

Me: ok I'll come and fetch you guys

Lindiwe: oh no, thats ok, Brian will fetch me

Me: no its cool, I'll fetch you

Brian: I'm fetching her, is that a problem
(this dude is working on my nerves)

Tumisani: babe, drop it (she looks at me
irritatedly)

We spent a few hours with them then we had to leave because visiting hours were over. Though i didnt want to leave. I want to hold my baby forever. Those cute eyes and pouty lips just melted my heart, she is just perfect.

I might continue, i planned such a long insert but my phone is being bitchy.

Mxm let me sort this out, I'll be back.

COMMENT COMMENT AND
COMMENT

[06/17, 09:39] Snr: INSERT 40

.

.

.

I saw the mistakes on the previous insert and I'm sorry guys, I got no time to edit it.

.

.

.

Tumi's POV

I'm happy. That baby just put a smile on my face. I wish it was mine, while I was holding her, I just instantly fell in love with her. She looks exactly like Lindiwe but has Yanda's eyes. She is way too cute.

We get to Yanda's house and it was 18:25, we got inside and Yemi was cooking, we greeted her and went upstairs. This house is really nice. I took my shoes off and sat on the bed than called Justin...

< call convo >

Justin: hello?

Me: hey Justin, its tumi.

Justin: oh tumisani, I've been worried sick, I tried phoning you but it took me straight to voicemail.

Me: sorry my battery died, but I'm fine, how's everyone doing?

Layla: hey!! we miss you!! (she shouted into the phone)

Me: Layla (I giggled) lol, I miss you guys too.

Zack: I miss you the most.

Me: lol guys, I miss you all.

Justin: you do know that you have CEO training in 2 weeks time right?? (oh that....I forgot)

Me: oh uhm, yeah that...

Justin: you didn't forget right??

Me: nope don't worry.

Justin: OK cool, I've gotta go, call you later, love you!!

Me: OK, love you all!!

Zack and Layla: love you most!! (I giggled)

< end of convo >

Gosh I can't believe I forgot about the training, I don't know how I forgot but I

did. I miss my fam tho, I really do.

Ever since I got to Soweto something keeps telling me to go to my old house but I just don't think I'm ready.

Yanda: babe! (I snap out of it, I was in deep thoughts)

Me: yes? (I asked confused)

Yanda: we have to go shower then have dinner.

Me: oh OK, go ahead, I'll shower after you.

Yanda: no babe, let's go together, plz (he said with a puppy face, lol, he looks so cute)

Me: (I giggled) you're crazy.

I undressed myself till I was left with only my bra and panty. I neatly folded my clothes, when I turned around I caught Yanda staring at me, for a second I forget he was even here....

Me: what are you looking at?? (I hold my arms on my chest)

Yanda: my gorgeous queen (he walked towards me then put his hands on my ass then pulls me onto his chest)

Yanda: you're so damn beautiful (I smiled)

He quickly undresses and was left with his boxers, then he picked me up. I

wrapped my legs around his waist and held onto his neck. He walked inside the bathroom and put me down once we were in the shower. We washed each other and played like little kids and kissing in between. After taking a shower we got dressed then went down for dinner, which was delicious. After dinner we went to bed. The bed was SK warm because we were together cuddling all night.

I woke up the next day with a smile on my face, its time I find out Lindo's plans. I want her out of this universe for good. I opened my eyes and looked at Yanda's side of the bed but he wasn't there.

Maybe he's downstairs.

I did my hygiene process than after taking a warm bath, I put on a white body hugging dress thats above my knees a little. I've lost weight lately but I'm still beautiful, my figure is still curvaceous. After doing my hair, I put on some sandals then walk down the stairs. I find everyone on the dining table.

Yemi: oh hey tumisani, I was just about to come up and call you.

Me: oh OK, good morning everyone (I smiled)

Them: good morning

Monster: I hope you slept well makoti.

Me: I slept well sir.

Yanda: babe come sit here (he patted on an empty seat next to him, I went there and sat down)

Yanda: have you got any plans for today?
(he said as we started eating)

Me: well I want to go to my house first then go to Lindiwe's house, she's being discharged today.

Monster: are you sure you wanna go to your house? (he asked becoming a bit uneasy)

Me: yes sir, its been a while since I've been home, I wanna maybe clean around a little. I'll come back, don't worry.

Yanda: babe I have a few things to do, so I won't be able to come with you, but I can give you a lift.

Me: no its OK, I'll take a taxi.

Yanda: are you sure?

Me: yes I'm sure

Cynthia: honey do you need cash? if you need anything don't hesitate to ask.

(this is one thing I didn't want. Everyone is now pitying me and feeling sorry for me as if I can't stand on my own two feet)

Me: I'm fine aunt. (I smiled trying to not look sad)

Time was flying and by the time I knew it,

it was already 11:30am. I took my clutch bag then said goodbye to everyone. I took a taxi to my house. I was nervous because this is the first time I'm going home to an empty house. I miss my brother and gogo so much. The taxi dropped me at the taxi rank and I started walking to the direction of my house. My phone started ringing in my bag and I quickly took it out and answered...

< call convo >

Me: hello

Voice: hey tumisani, this is Vuyo, you still remember me right?

Me: oh yes, you're aunt Bella's personal

assistant right?

Vuyo: yes, how are you? I'm so sorry about your brother.

Me: thanks, I'm moving on (I said walking slowly on the street before my house)

Vuyo: I'm happy to hear that, well I'm calling to remind you that the CEO training session begins in about two weeks time, but we have to meet up a week before that so I can show you around the companies and then we have to travel to PE so you can get used to the Matthews hotel.

(wow this sounds like a lot of work for a

17 year old, I don't know if I can do this)

Me: oh ok, thanks for telling me.

Vuyo: pleasure, I know you feel as if you're too young for this, but you've got potential tumisani, I believe in you sweetie.

Me: thank you so much Vuyo, that means a lot to me.

Vuyo: always a pleasure babe, I'll text you the details of when we will be meeting.

Me: ok thanks.

Vuyo: ok bye

Me: bye

< end of convo >

Gosh this is too much to handle.
beginning to doubt my ability. I've never
heard of a 18 year old with two
companies and a hotel.

I got to my house and two cars are
parked outside my house, the gate is
open but the door is closed. These cars
look familiar but I don't remember where
I've seen them. I'm scared to go inside,
what if they are kidnappers or
something. But this is my home, why
would they be here. I gather up my
courage and walk through the gate and
slightly close it behind me.

I walk to the front door, I take my key out, I put it in and turn the handle but to my surprise the door is unlocked, strange. The only people who had a key to this house was Dumisani, gogo and myself.

I walk inside and my eyes meet with Lindo's immediately. Siphon is seated on the couch next to some other woman, they all have shocked expressions written all over their faces.

So this is how they succeeded in killing my brother. They worked as a team.

Anger boiled in my blood, my face turned tomatoes red. I closed my eyes and breathed in and out. Dumisani calm down. Don't do anything stupid. I told

myself. After I felt a bit calm, I opened my eyes and smiled.

Me: Hi (I smiled, kill them with kindness tumsa, I told myself)

Lindo: mntanam (the nerve this woman has, how dare she call me that, mxm)

Sipho: Tumisani (he heaves almost choking on his own breath)

Me: Sipho (I say through gritted teeth, I want to rip their hearts out of their chests, I hate them)

Lindo: tumisani please take a seat (wow she's offering me a seat in my own fucking house, wow, just wow.)

I sat down making sure almost 100 cms

away from them, just looking at them makes me sick but my mission is to find out their game.

Lindo: baby, this is Rachel, my friend

Me: hi (I smiled)

Rachel: hey sweetie, gosh you're so beautiful, I guess the Phakade blood really bares beautiful fruits. (mxm, cut the pretence bitch, I want to say out loud)

Let me just get straight to the point before I kill someone here.

Me: uhm I just came to check on the house since I'm not staying in Soweto for long, I came to clean up a bit, but seems like that won't be necessary.

Lindo: oh I moved here because I didn't have a place, I still had a spare key with me, uhm so you're not here for the holidays?

Me: no I have to go back to Soweto next week, I have business training. (I said not making eye contact)

Rachel: business training? (they all looked at me)

Me: yes, CEO training, I'm taking over the Matthews company next year.

(they all looked shocked, some things definitely not right here, everything I say seems to come as a shock to them)

Lindo: uh oh uh have you signed the

papers yet? (she aks looking at me desperately)

Me: no not yet. (they all sigh.....what the ...??)

Lindo: honey I want us to start over again, on a new page, can we please move on and get to know each other, I want us to be the mother and daughter you've always wanted, plz give me a chance.

(there's a sense of desperation in her c voice, I feel like theres more to this then just being my mother)

Rachel: plz give her a chance tumisani, plz I'm begging you.

(they both kneeled down in front of me and I swear I wanted to laught out loud but I pulled myself together. I have to play this game they're playing.)

Me: uh uhm plz get up, I forgive you
(their mouths open wide in shock) uh I mean its time we all move on, right?

Lindo: right, thank you mntanam (she stood up and hugged me but I didn't hug back, I feel like vomiting on her face)

Sipho: I'm also really sorry tumisani, plz find it I'm your heart to forgive me, I beg your forgiveness (he pleaded, mxm coward)

Me: its ok, its in the past now.

Sipho: thank you (he came to hug me too but I stopped him, what the hell is this)

Me: what are you doing?

Sipho: can I get a hug please. (he says, I let him hug me and I feel like biting his head off, I feel sick right now)

Me: uhm, I have to get going (I stood up)

Lindo: where do you stay sweetie?

Me: at my boyfriend's place.

Lindo: oh you have a boyfriend? (as if she didn't already know, mxm)

Me: yes

Lindo: may I ask who he is?

Me: Luyanda Mkisi. I have to catch a taxi, I'll see you guys around.

I said goodbye then as I was walking out of the door, Siphos stopped me.

Siphos: Tumisani wait!! (I continued walking and he stopped me as I stepped outside the gate)

I hate that I have to pretend. When I look at these people all I see is anger. The way they pretend looks as if it is all natural. The hatred I have for them keeps growing within me.

Me: yes?? (I said annoyed)

Siphos: I want to tell you something

Me: I'm listening (I said looking at him

with a sarcastic smirk on my face)

Sipho: can I drive you to wherever you're going, I can't tell you what I want to tell you here, can I take you out please. (he says nervously)

For a second he sounds so sincerely and I almost forget that this is the man who was fighting with my brother and planned for his death. I have to do all it take me to find justice. Even if it means putting my own life in danger.

Me: you do know I have a boyfriend right?

Sipho: I know, can I take you out as a friend, just to hang out plz.

Me: ok fine, text me the place (I said

starting to walk away and he follows)

Sipho: I don't have your number.

Me: if you can arrange for someones death then surely you can arrange to also get a girl's number, right? (I stopped walking and stood right in his face so close to him and looked deep into his eyes, my face burning with anger, I hate him)

Sipho: I thought we were moving on....(he says putting his filthy hands in my waist. Now I regret wearing this dress. He brought his face closer to mine and I almost forget we're on the street. I push him away from me angrily)

Sipho: you look even more beautiful when you're angry (he chuckles)

Me: fuck you (I want to roar at him and spit out fire but I'm trying to keep my composure)

There's more to this " moving on". I have to play their game wisely. I continued walking and I can feel his eyes on my ass. I can feel his eyes strip me naked. I feel dirty. That bastard touched me. I feel sick.

As I was walking, a white limo beeped behind me and I immediately remembered the vehicle.

I hope he didn't see the stunt Sipho

pulled up. I immediately became nervous. This man scares me. I turned, the driver opened the door and I got in. He looks pissed.

Monster: you're playing with fire tumisani (he says as the car starts moving)

Me: sir, I can explain, it's not what you think..

Monster: start talking...

Me: sir, I want revenge. (I look out the window) I want them all in a coffin. I want to put them in the same place they put my brother. In a fucking coffin!! (I said angrily, tears fell down my cheeks)

Monster: calm down, makoti (he hands me a tissue)

Monster: plan?

Me: I don't understand their game, they all look so clean but they're actually bloody dirty.

Monster: I'll help you...(I smiled)
but...(he pauses and looks at me, I get it)

Me: sir, I'm not gonna do anything with him, relax, I love Yanda and I would never do anything to hurt him.

Monster: you do know that Sipho is my biggest enemies son and I would do anything just to illiminate him.

Me: yes sir, I want kuhle dead first. She

betrayed the Phakade's.

Monster: I want Siphon gone first, he's the devil's son.

Me: we don't have much time, I'm going back to Cape town next week. I have CEO training.

Monster: you're turning 18 next year? (I nodded, he smiles) they're signing your name on the companies?

Me: yes

Monster: (he starts laughing) Kuhle's gonna love this one, she won't know what hit her..

Me: what you mean? (I asked confused)

Monster: patience makoti, patience. (he chuckles) we'll make a great team.

You're feisty. I love this new you.

Me: (I giggled) this is just the beginning, Mr Mkisi.

Monster: this is gonna be awesome.

Welcome to the other side of the world, Phakade princess.....

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Is Tumisani really ready to get into this kinda life?? What do you think will happen next??

ok I'm tired now. I blessed you guys with three inserts. Let's show some appreciation.

Admin

[06/18, 07:05] Snr: INSERT 41

- .
- .
- .
- .

Sipho's POV

A day has passed since the day I met tumisani at her house. She looked breath taking. That beautiful body drove

me nuts. That dress revealed those curves. I fell even more in love with her. Our plan of winning her over is definitely working. Her brother is out of the picture and she says she has forgiven me though she is still upset but hopefully she'll move on. Her so called boyfriend is now the only obstacle. But I can always find something against him that will help me win her over. But what I don't understand is that even after they showed her the video of how her boyfriend shot her brother. she is still with him. Something is not right here. But for now let me just take advantage of the fact that she forgives me. I lie in

bed thinking of that gorgeous face,
that's what I always seem to do
everyday.

I pick up my phone and dialed her
number...

< call convo >

Tumisani: hello?

Me: hey beautiful, how are you?

Tumisani: what do you want?

Me: remember you agreed to go with me.
(she signed deeply)

Tumisani: Siphoh, what do you want?

Me: go out with me today for lunch,
around 13:00, I'll meet you at the mall.

Tumisani: whatever (she hangs up)

< end of convo >

I'll take that as a yes. This girl is so sexy, I could easily eat her up like chocolate cake. She is just so beautiful, intelligent, loving and caring. She is just everything I want in a woman.

The time goes really fast. I quickly take a shower then put on a pair of white jeans, a white short sleeved shirt which pops out my muscles and a pair of white converse. I get my car keys, lock the house and walk out to my car and drive off. I get to the mall and it is 12:45. I patiently wait in the car for any sign of

Tumisani. And finally at around 13:05 she arrives at the entrance of the mall dressed in a blue high waist jeans and a plain V neck white t shirt with blue sandals. Her Afro is tied up in it's perfect place. She looks beautiful.

I get out of the car and walk to the entrance of the mall where I find her looking for me. cute.

Me: hey (I said smiling as I looked down to her beautiful face, I'm taller than her, a little)

Tumisani: hi, can we get going already...

Me: sure, follow me (we walked into the mall, all the way to steers, we sat down

and ordered while drinking. Coo
me for me and Sprite for her)

Me: you look beautiful Tumisani (I said
drooling over her, I can't control myself
when I'm around her, her beauty is just
so extraordinary)

Tumisani: thank you (she says trying to
hold back from blushing but those soft
cheeks betrayed her)

Me: OK, let me get straight to the point,
first of all I want to apologize Tumisani, I
know no amount of sorrys I say to you
will bring back your brother but i just
want to say that I'm truly sorry, I regret
all I've done to you, I was stupid and I

know you hate me right now but I just want you to find it in your heart to forgive me. (I said reaching for her hand across the table and holding it then looked straight into her eyes)

A pang of guilt built inside of me, she has so much pain her eyes, she is emotionally broken. I see hatred in her eyes. Now I sincerely regret what I've done. I've turned this innocent girl's life into a living hell just because of the love I have for her. I feel guilty. I have no one to blame for this but myself. she didn't deserve to lose her brother.

Tumisani: Siphon do you know what you've put me through, the pain I've been

through, the trauma. Do you know what you've turned me into. (she says pulling her hand away from mine)

Me: I know and I would do anything if I could to take the pain away, I'm truly sorry tumisani.

Tumisani: anything?? (she says looking at me with a serious face)

Me: yes, anything, if only you could give me a chance to love you, I really truly love you tumisani, you might not believe me but honestly, I do.

She looks at me weirdly and then pauses for a whole minute. I'm ready to change if it means that's what it'll take

for me to be with her. I don't mind giving up everything just for her. I love her with my whole heart.

.

Tumi's POV

I carefully look at the man seated in front of me. He looks so sincere and apologetic. I hate the fact that I have a soft heart. I hate that I have a soft spot for people. For a second I forgot all the bad things he's done to me. I look at him as a normal person. Not the Sipho that had me kidnapped and killed my brother. I have too much space for love in my heart that hatred doesn't last forever but

I'm not going to allow him to make me weak.

Me: you'll do anything for me, right?

Sipho: anything my love, I can even take a bullet for you, just promise me that you'll be mine. I am a man of my word, I would never lie to you. (perfect, I smirked)

Me: you want me to be your girlfriend, right?

(let me take advantage of this fool, he won't know what hit him)

Sipho: yes babe (he says becoming weak)

Ok, now I know I make him weak, he's

totally drooling over me right now, I need to get him to talk their little secret out.

Me: how about we go somewhere private, there's too much people around here. (I smiled)

Sipho: oh of course (he gets up excited like a little child)

I guess I'm making him go crazy.

Sipho: how about we go to my place. (I want to object but for my plan to work, I have to get him drunk)

Me: sure, let's go (we stood up, paid for our food and left the mall)

We get into his car and he drives off. I made sure that I was seated in the back

seat so that I can text Monster and let him know how the plan is working so he could back me up.

****Message to Monster****

Sir, we're heading to his place, I need you to plan a pizza delivery, sure there is a little pack of an over Doser package coming with the pizza but it must be unseen.

****Tumisani****

After sending the text, I put my phone away. I have a feeling that monster is hiding something from me but he doesn't want to tell me. I feel like he knew about my mother's plans, he keeps

telling me that I have to find out myself.

Sipho: babe we're here.

(we got out of the car and he lives in a very clean area, this place has very well built houses, not that I've lived in ugly houses but I've never been in this area before)

I hope Luyanda forgives me for what might happen right now but I have no choice. If I have to get naked for Sipho to spill his beans than so be it. But over my dead body will I ever dream of giving him my virginity. I'll never ever even dream of sleeping with this pig. We get inside and the place looks really nice. I

get a text back from Monster.

Message from Monster

Ok, I got it. Be careful sweetheart. Don't do anything stupid, he has camera's in that house (shit) but not the kitchen. (I sighed)

****Monster****

Sipho: would you like something to drink or eat? (he asks sitting down next to me on the couch)

Me: I'll drink something later, but for now I really crave some pizza.

Sipho: ok let me order pizza, anything for you my love (he smiles)

He takes his phone out and orders pizza then puts his phone away and gives me his full attention.

Sipho: I love you (he said coming closer to me, I hope he doesn't do anything stupid)

He looks into my eyes and holds my chin with his hand then slowly pulls my face closer to his. I feel sick, he's just about to kiss me. I hold my breath and pray that his phone rings to interrupt this. But to my luck, the door bell rings, I breath out loud and jump up in relieve.

Me: I think thats the pizza delivery, I'll get that. (I quickly stood up before he

did and walked to the door)

As I open the door, I recognize one of monsters men. Its the driver from the day before yesterday, he nods at me then hands me the pizza box with a little plastic package that was placed beneath the box and as I put my hand under the box, he gave it to me. I quickly put the package in my back pocket making sure that I'm not seen. I did it in a way that it would look as if I'm paying for the pizza delivery. After shutting the door behind me, I walked back to the lounge where I found Sipho shirtless. I couldn't help but drool over his sexy well built body. After staring at him for a

while I snap back to business.

Me: where is the kitchen, I want something to drink. (I said putting the box down on the table)

Sipho: oh uhm walk straight down this way. (he points to the direction of the kitchen)

Me: ohk do you want anything? (I said smiling)

Sipho: there's wine in the fridge, please pour me a glass. (he smiles back)

Me: ok sure.

I slowly walk to the kitchen which looks so spotless. He's really clean, I must say. I grab two glasses from the cardboard. I

pour juice in mine than pour wine in his. I look around me before taking the over Doser out of my pocket and putting almost half of the tiny pack into the glass. This will surely make home talk. I shook the glass a bit just to mix it up. I cleaned up everything just to make sure that there is no evidence. I took the glasses including the wine bottle with me back to the lounge where he had already started eating. I gave him the glass and sat down next to him, he slowly drinks the wine and I make sure I watch him with a close eye as I ate the pizza. After about 30 mins, he was already drunk.

Sipho: you're so fucking beautiful (he said in a drunk tone)

Me: so Sipho, tell me, what was your aim in killing my brother? (I said recording him without him knowing but I put the phone on the table then looked at how drunk and crazy he became)

Sipho: (he laughs) you mean what was Lindo's aim in killing your brother. (he blurts) all I wanted was to.....win your heart. your mother is the evil one here (he said almost closing his eyes, I think I put too much of that powder, he'll fall asleep anytime soon, I have to do something to keep him awake)

I sat on his lap and ran my hand down his abs seductively...

Me: what was her plans?? what does she seek?

Sipho: Lindo is greedy, she is obsessed with money, she killed your father for her own selfish reasons, she also planned Bella's car accident which was not actually an accident. (I gasped in shock, what!!!?) she killed your step mother so that she could have your full trust and attention but then she discovered that Dumisani was the main obstacle.

Me: but, what was her aim?? (He started running his hands all over my

body)

Sipho: your inheritance. (I hold my mouth to stop myself from screaming) she wants the two Matthews company and hotel under her own name, that's why she came out of prison. she was greedy and wanted the life of the rich, she killed her own son just to get what she wants. Money. She is after you babe (he moans and I unzip his jeans, then I give him more wine to keep him up but I don't have enough time)

Me: what is her game??

Sipho: she wants to be more closer to you so that she can soften you up and

make you change the name on the papers of the company into hers. (he closes his eyes but, I have one last question!!)

Me: wait, who helped her out of prison!!??
(I shout out loud)

But too late, he was already fast asleep, in a very deep sleep. Damn it. Now I finally know the whole truth. Lindo is really the devils daughter. She doesn't deserve to be alive. She is just a waste of flesh and skin. I took my bag and left Siphos house. He won't even remember what happened today when he wakes up. He wake up with the idea that he was drinking and eating pizza then got drunk

and fell asleep. Before I left, I washed out my glass of juice just to make sure there is no hidden evidence. Its about time I found out what my mothers plans were. I never even thought that she would be after my inheritance, I never even thought about that. I feel so stupid right now. My own mother that gave me life is so evil and heartless. This is unbelievable.

COMMENT COMMENT AND COMMENT

Don't y'all think Tumisani is turning out to be just like her mother used to be. If

you think about it, Lindo killed Mr Matthews with the same technic Tumi used to drug Siphon. She also somehow seduced him to keep him from falling asleep, same way Lindo seduced Mr Matthews and killed him.....

Hmmmm, like mother like daughter.

I guess power does really run in the veins of the Phakade's, hey.

Don't miss out the next INSERT.

Admin

[06/18, 07:06] Snr: CONTINUATION

- .
- .
- .

Sipho's POV

Lindo: How could you be so stupid Sipho mahn!!? (she said banging the table)

Me: I was fucking drunk for God's sake...

Lindo: that's not an excuse you fool!!

Rachel: guys calm down, shouting at each other won't solve the problem.

We were at my house. I woke up drunk yesterday and I didn't know what happened, but I had a feeling someone was here with me. So I decided to check

the camera's I had put in the house and to my surprise, Tumisani was here with me, I think I drank too much and she took advantage of my drunkness and asked me questions that I had answers to each one of them. She didn't look suspicious when I saw the camera's, in fact she looked calm so I don't know if she's going to fight back or drop it but I have a feeling that she's emotionally hurt at the moment.

Lindo: fuck I shouldn't have trusted you, now look the fucking plan is ruined, she knows the truth now, you fool!!

Me: watch your mouth you piece of shit, do you know who you're talking to bitch!!

(I said getting angry)

Rachel: guys please (she said standing between us because I was ready to blow this bitches brains out)

My ringing phone interrupted us, I took it out of my pocket and to my surprise, it was Tumisani...

Me: its tumisani

Rachel: answer it

(I picked up and put it on loud speaker)

< call convo >

Me: hey tumisani (I said trying to keep my cool)

Tumisani: hey Siphon, I'm sorry I left you

the other day, I just got traumatized, so I didn't know what to do so I just left.

Me: its ok babe, I'm sorry I got drunk, did I say anything to you? (I had to ask)

Tumisani: yeah, you said a lot of things but I'm just glad that you told me, I, I, (she started crying) I just don't know who to trust anymore.

Me: hey its ok, stop crying babe, you can trust me, I'm here for you.

Tumisani: thank you Siphos, I dont know what to do, can I please come over, I just need a shoulder to cry on.

Me: of course, you can come anytime you want.

Tumisani: thank you, I'll be there in 20mins (she sniffed).

Me: sure (she hanged up)

<end of convo>

I smiled. She will slowly but surely fall me.

Lindo: you planned this didn't you, you planned that she would go against me and start loving you so that you could be with her.

Me: I didn't plan anything but seems like things are working perfect for me. (I laughed)

Rachel: Sipho we had a deal...

Me: deal my left foot, fuck the deal, we didn't sign it on paper so plz both of you fuck off, leave my house and don't ever return, got it!!?

(I said pointing a gun on the both of them)

Rachel: you'll regret this (she said standing up)

Lindo: this is not over Siphos, you'll die the same way your father died. With 4 fucking bullets.

Me: shut up already...

I kicked them out, hid the gun and cleaned up the place. After a while there was a knock at the door. I went to open

and Tumisani jumped into my arms. I hugged her tightly. I've always yearned for this. I've always craved to hold her.

I closed the door and we walked to the lounge and sat down, she rest her head on my chest and I smiled. Is this not heaven. My heart was dancing.

Me: you must be wondering how I remembered what happened the other day as I was drunk...(she nodded) well I have camera's in the house, I saw the footage and I'm sorry you had to see me in that state.

Tumisani: its ok (she lifted her head and smiled up at me, my heart melted)

Me: so what do you plan on doing?

Tumisani: I hate her, she's the reason I'm here today, so broken and emotional. (I felt bad, I have a soft spot for this girl and seeing her in this state hurts me)

Maybe I should turn the tables a little bit. Maybe if I do as she wants she'll see the love I have for her and maybe she'll want to be with me.

Me: I have an idea but you'll have to trust me, its not going to be easy but I need your trust.

Tumisani: I trust you, I'll do anything if it means making my mother pay for this (she kissed my cheek and I immediately

got hard, I've always dreamt of this, she makes me weak)

Me: I think we should kill Kuhle (I said looking at her)

Tumisani: (she smiles) Perfect, I'll do it, that's the most expensive price she'll ever pay for killing my brother.

(I was a bit shocked but I'm just glad that she's agreeing with it)

Me: so you don't mind killing her?

Tumisani: she doesn't deserve to live, she ruined my life and took away the only person that understood me.

Me: ok, I understand

Tumisani: but I want to be the one that shoots the bullets, I want her to suffer before she dies as well.

Me: meaning??

Tumisani: I want her kidnapped and put in a warehouse, I want her tied up and tortured.

Me: your wish is my command.

Tumisani: but I want to ask you something...

Me: ask me anything and I shall answer.
(I said getting lost in her beautiful eyes)

The way she controls me is so unexplainable. I'm not myself when I'm around her.

Tumisani: who helped her out of prison?

(I froze in my tracks, I can't...)

Me: babe, but I can't tell you this...

Tumisani: you said you'll do anything for me (she said with teary eyes)

It broke my heart.

Me: I'm sorry babe but I can't...

Tumisani: Sipho please....(she sat on my lap and brought her face so close to mine as if she was going to kiss me)

I lost myself and became weaker and weaker...

Me: Monster (I blurted out)

Her eyes popped open and her mouth

grew wider, tears rolled down her cheeks.

.

Tumi's POV

I can't believe what I'm hearing. I won't believe it. The same man who helped my mother out of prison. The same man that saved my life from Bra Skopp. The same man who's son is the boy who has my heart. And its exactly the same man who promised to help me achieve my mission.

What if he's two timing me?? What if he's using me to help my mother's evil plans work. I wiped away my tears and

got off Sipho's lap.

I looked at him with pity and sympathy. His love for me lead him to kidnap me, lead him to get my brother killed just for him to be with me and the same love has him putting his life in danger by telling me the truth. Yet I still look at him with pity.

Me: Thank you Sipho (I said holding his face, if it wasn't for him then I wouldn't have known the truth)

Sipho: I love you (All I see in his eyes is love, I have made him so weak that he doesn't know how to control it)

Me: I know (I smiled, I kissed his cheek

one last time and stood up) I'll call you.

I walked out of the door and never looked back. I don't know why everyone keeps betraying me like this. I don't know what to do. I've turned into a totally different person mixed with so many emotions that I don't even recognize myself. What is this world turning me into. Why me?

.

Luyanda's POV

Ever since Thando came into this world, I couldn't stop thinking about her. Those cute eyes and pouty lips, made me love her even more. A minute without her

feels like 24 hours. I love my daughter so much.

I was at Lindiwe's house visiting my princess. We were sitting in the lounge and it was just me, Lindiwe, Thando and Tebogo. I was playing with my beautiful baby.

Me: baby look at daddy (I said kissing her cute cheeks)

I've been here for the past 2 hours and I just can't get enough of her.

Lindiwe: I think I should feed her, she must be hungry now. (she said taking Thando from my arms)

My phone started to ring and it was an

unknown number, I picked up.

< end of convo >

Me: hello?

Voice: mhmhm it sure is a beautiful sight seeing your girl in someone else's arms.

Me: what!!? who is this?

Voice: doesn't matter, all that matters is that you're slowly but surely losing Tumisani.

Me: what!!? what do you mean?

Voice: oh I'm sure you didn't know that she's cheating on you, do you?

Me: lies, Tumisani would never do that

to me

Voice: how sure are you that she's not cheating on you?? After all you've done to her do you think she'll be silent, obedient and loving, mxm oh please open your eyes Luyanda.

Me: who are you?

Voice: no one, I'm just passing information boy. (they hanged up)

< end of convo >

I immediately got pissed. Who the hell is this?? I don't believe that Tumisani is cheating on me. I mean, she would never do that to me. Would she?? I'm starting to doubt myself. I stood up and

totally forgot where I was...

Lindiwe: is everything ok? (she asked with Thando in her arms)

Me: uh uhm yeah, but I have to go..

Lindiwe: are you sure you're fine?

Me: yeah I'll call you guys later (I said kissing Thando's forehead)

I walked out the door and drove like a maniac to the direction of my house. I barged inside the house and Yemi jumped off the chair in fear..

Yemi: shit, Yanda you scared me (she said startled)

Me: where is Tumisani??

Yemi: why are you so tensed up, what happened??

Me: I asked you a question, where is Tumisani?? (I said angrily)

Yemi: tumisani?? tumisani is...

Just when she was about to answer, tumisani walked in...

Tumisani: hey (she said closing the door behind her)

Me: tumisani where were you!!? (I said shouting)

Tumisani: is everything ok?? why do you look so pissed? what happened?? (she asked concerned, which made me even more angry)

Me: stop with the 21 questions and answer me, where were you!?

Tumisani: uh me?? I, I went to visit Lindiwe... (wow, she's lying to me)

Me: really!!? you went to visit Lindiwe?? (I laughed sarcastically) at what time tumisani? huh? because I had just come from there.

Tumisani: (she gasps) babe, I can, I can explain...

Me: explain what tumisani?? huh? where the fuck were you? (I said getting hold of her shoulders and roughly shaking her)

Tumisani: Yanda please you're hurting

me...(she said trying to get out of my grip but I tightened it)

Me: where were you!?! (I roared)

Tumisani: Yanda please...(she said in pain)

Me: are you cheating on me Tumisani?? (I said looking her straight in the eyes)

Tumisani: what? Yanda no, why would I cheat on you? I'm not cheating on you, I would never....

Me: don't fucking lie to me tumisani!! (I shook her again with anger)

Tumisani: aaaah (she cried)

Yemi: Luu let go of her, you're hurting

her. (she pulled my hands off tumisani's shoulders and hugged her as she cried)

I'm so angry that I didn't even want to look at her, it is evident that she is cheating on me. She even lied to me, she never does that. I know I did wrong to her but cheating on me, isn't right. I love her so much but this hurts.

Tumisani is mine and mine alone. No one can ever take her away from me.

Who do you think made the call??

will Luyanda believe Tumisani??

Will Tumisani start falling for Siphos charms??

Why does Tumisani have such a soft heart??

Lindo is slowly but surely going down.

What will Tumisani do about Monsters betrayal??

Happy Heritage day everyone

Admin

[06/18, 07:06] Snr: INSERT 42

.

.

.

Tumi's POV

I don't know what has gotten into Luyanda. Out of all the things in the world, he suspected me of cheating. I gave him my heart and I would never even dream of cheating on him. I don't know where he got that idea of me cheating on him, but I can't bare to see him like this. He has been tense and distant. He doesn't even look in my direction anymore.

Me: Yanda (I said standing I'm front of him blocking his way)

He hasn't spoken to me since what happened the day before and the silent treatment is killing me. We just woke up, still I'm our PJ's, I want to tell him the

truth but I can't...

Me: baby please look at me (I said holding his face but he pulled my hands off, without making eye contact, he walked to the bathroom and shut the door in my face)

I walked back to the bed and sat down. He's just being childish. I thought he trusted me. He knows I love him and I would never do that to him. I sit there sulking until I hear the bathroom door open and he walks out wrapped in a towel, dripping wet....

Me: Yanda can we please talk about this, just let me explain. (I said walking to

where he was busy applying lotion on his body)

He totally ignored me and carried on with what he was doing, which was pissing me off because I found this really childish and stupid, Gosh I have no time for this...

Me: Luyanda!!! (I said now yelling)

Yanda: Tumisani just shut up, please just leave me the hell alone, I don't even wanna look at you right now, please just leave me alone. (I looked at him for a second and I lost words, if that's what he wants then, fine)

Me: OK, fine (I said)

I got inside the bathroom and took a long shower and I think it was longer than I thought because when I came out, he wasn't there anymore. I got dressed into a body hugging sleeveless knee length dark blue dress with black pumps. I wet my hair and it curled up. I quickly hair sprayed it, took my handbag and walked down the stairs. I found Yemi and Monster sitting on the dining table.

Me: morning

Them: morning (they said looking at me weirdly)

Me: do you know where Yanda is?

Monster: sit down young lady, we need

to talk (now this is not fair, must they always fight for Yanda's battles, for God's sake he's a grown ass man)

I sat down and started fiddling with my fingers. I looked up after a while and they were both starring at me waiting for an explanation..

Me: are you guys serious right now? so you actually think that I would cheat on Yanda?? why would I do that?? to gain what? I thought y'all trusted me?

Monster: then where were you yesterday? (I looked at him with so much questions in my eyes And I knew he had the answers to every single one of them)

Monster: baby please give us some space (he said referring to Yemi, she stood up and left us)

Now I was fuming with anger...

Me: who are you?? are you working against me or with me?? I am so confuse right now that I don't even trust myself anymore.

Monster: what are you talking about?

Me: don't act all dumb with me, you knew all my mothers plans and you even helped her out of prison so that she could complete her plans, and you (I paused and pointed my finger at him) you, were also part taking I'm those

plans, so tell me if she asked you to kill my brother like she did would you have done it? (I said pissed)

Monster: you don't know what you're talking about...(he said without making eye contact)

Me: yeah of course I don't know what I'm talking about, that's why I'm here waiting for you to explain, what were you helping her in return of?? that's what I keep asking myself because my mother has nothing to offer, but then I thought, ohh shit the Phakade queen is so damn sexy, she can make any man go crazy, I'm sure she was so fucking good in bed too!!! (I roared with anger)

Monster: watch your tongue young lady
(he said standing up and looked so
angry as if he was about to kill me)

Monster: you don't know who you're
messing with so I suggest you go and
find out. (I looked at his furious
expression, I stood up and walked back
up to the room)

I can't stay in this place. This people are
intoxicating my mind. I can't do this
anymore. I don't know who to trust. I
was so stupid to think that he was a
good man and he was going to help me,
but I guess I was wrong. Maybe when
both father and son come back to their
fucking senses then they'll let me know.

I started packing.

.

Luyanda's POV

My mind is running wild. Thinking about Tumisani is giving me a headache. I don't even wanna think about it.

I was at the mall shopping. I wanted to buy my baby everything she needed. I am so addicted to Thando that I find it hard to stop thinking about her. I have such a strong connection with her and I wanna keep it that way.

I got into the baby store to buy a few toys for her and as I was shopping, I bumped into the one person I wasn't

expecting..

Me: Amanda

Amanda: oh my gosh, Yanda (she came to me and gave me a hug) wow look at you, how are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Amanda: I'm good, just couldn't get you out my mind after that night at the club..

I took a good look at her from top to bottom. she was wearing black jean shorts which revealed her sexy legs, a white vest that showed her cleavage and sandals. She looks really sexy and I found it hard to control myself..

Amanda: like what you see? (she said

as I admired those gorgeously shaved legs)

Me: uh, uhm, uh (I lost words)

Amanda: how about we do lunch?? (she smiled)

Me: unfortunately I can't, I'm shopping for my baby..

Amanda: oh congratulations, I heard the good news.

Me: thank you

Amanda: I wonder how tumisani feels about you having a baby with her Best friend, ouch that must hurt.

Me: it was nice meeting you Amanda but

I have to carry on with this...(I said totally ignoring what she just said and trying to keep my eyes off her cleavage but she just couldn't stop rubbing it in my face)

Amanda: have much with me and I'm not taking no for an answer, and plus...(she said standing right in my face) I can't leave you like this.....(she bit her lower lip and put her hand on my pants, or should I say my erected dick)

I didn't even realize that I was so hard down there.

Me: uh uhm (I cleared my throat)

Amanda please stop, we're in public (I

said stepping back)

Amanda: I'll be waiting in the car..(she put her hand in my pocket and took out my car keys and without waiting for my response, she turned around and left me there)

This girl is so crazy. I quickly bought everything needed then rushed out of the mall. I got to the parking lot where my car was parked and I found her sitting in the drivers seat, I put my stuff in the boot and tried my best to keep calm.

Me: please get out of the drivers seat, this is my car in case you have forgotten.

Amanda: I'm driving, now please don't cause a scene, just get into the car.

(she said with a serious face, as much as I wanted to object, I also didn't want to cause a scene, I got into the car and she drove off.)

We got to a hotel, she carefully parked the car and switched off the engine..

Me: what are we doing here?

Amanda: follow me (she stepped out the car and started walking to the direction of the entrance of the hotel)

I had no other choice but to follow her.

She checked into a room then we got into a elevator and went up to the room.

As soon as we got into the room, she started to seductively undress herself and I found it extremely hard to control myself.

Me: what are you doing?

Amanda: stop acting dumb Yanda, I know you haven't gotten laid since that time at the club, I'm sure you missed me (she was now fully naked and my man down there was hard as hell)

She walks up to me and started kissing me and I responded immediately, my hands traveling all over her body. She undressed me and we were both naked now. I lifted her up and carry her to the

bed. I can't wait to be inside her. I feel like I'm about to explode. I kiss her hungrily and get on top of her..

Me: condom??

Amanda: I'm on the pill

Me: (I laugh) huh, who are you trying to fool Amanda?

I opened the drawer and pulled out a condom, I ripped the plastic off and took the condom out. She got off from beneath me and layed me down facing her.

Amanda: let me take over..

She puts the condom on my erected dick then gets on top of me. She puts

my dick in her cookie and we both moan at the same time. I hold onto her waist and help her move up and down. We continue having sex till we're both tired and I swear we had more than 4 rounds. This girl is a fucking sex Goddess.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

I might continue, battery low

#Admin

[06/18, 07:29] Snr: CONTINUATION

-
-
-
-

I've never been pleased like this in my whole entire life.

Amanda: That was amazing...(she said as I collapsed next to her on the bed after our last round)

We both lie naked on the bed facing the ceiling. All sorts of thoughts pop into my mind as well as guilt.

Amanda: baby can't you see we're meant to be together, we're meant for

each other, you see, we always have a way of getting back into each others arms...(she said kissing my cheek and resting her head on my chest)

I felt guilty. I've once again let my emotions control me. I've once again cheated on Tumisani with the same girl I cheated on her before. I felt really guilty because I love tumisani with my whole heart.

Me: this shouldn't have happened (I said still looking up at the ceiling)

Amanda: no, no I'll act like I didn't hear that, Hands for fucking sake why do you always say that after we've had some

good sex, I mean seriously, you wanted this as much as I did, babe, can't you see that I love you, I can't get you out of my head, my love for you is driving me crazy Yanda, I love you, I want you all to myself. (she said kissing me all over my body like a mad woman)

Me: Amanda stop it (I said sitting up and reaching for my boxer shorts) I love tumisani with my whole heart and this is totally wrong.

Amanda: oh Yanda for fucking sake, you're always tumisani this, tumisani that, what the fuck does she have that I don't?? huh?

We kept arguing while we were both getting dressed and she was honestly pissing me off. I mean, the sex was good and it wasn't our first time doing it but I don't love her, my heart is with tumisani although I'm angry that she might be cheating on me but I still love her.

Amanda: so what now? (she said standing in front of me after she had put on her shoes)

Me: we forget all this ever happened
And we move on.

Amanda: you think its that easy, you think it's that easy to easily get you out

of my head, heart and body, Yanda I fucking love you for God's sake (she started crying and it took me by surprise, she was sobbing badly and it kinda made me feel bad because I had just had sex with her and I'm being nasty right now)

Me: hey, Amanda please don't cry (I said wiping her tears and holding her face)

Amanda: I love you Yanda, I want you. (she cried)

Me: OK, let's make a deal, we carry on with this but under one condition (she looked up at me with teary eyes) under

the condition that we put our feelings aside, so basically no strings attached, like the old days.

Amanda: oh so you want me to be your fuck buddy again. (she smiled)

Me: yeah, something like that.

Amanda: of course (she held onto my waist and kissed me)

I don't know how this will be like but I've been craving a pussy. I've never stayed for so long without a pussy, and I'll have to do this till Tumisani is ready to finally sleep with me. I know I'll regret this later but I have to take the risk. My dick needs some sugar too, I'm a man and I've got

needs too.

.

Tumi's POV

After packing my bags, I took a cab to a hotel. I asked Layla to transfer some cash into my account because I needed money to pay for my stay at the hotel.

The cab dropped me at the hotel, I got off then took my suitcase from the boot then paid the driver. As I was walking to the entrance of the hotel when I noticed a car that looked exactly like Yanda's car and I thought maybe he would be here but I pushed the thought out of my mind because there are so many people in

this place with cars that looked exactly like his, so it was merely impossible.

I checked into the hotel And paid for a week. They gave me my keys, I got into the elevator and went up to where my room was. I was busy on my phone, as soon as the elevator dinged open, I dragged my suitcase with me, still busy on my phone and started walking down the passage. All of a sudden I bumped into someone and my phone fell but as it was falling, the person caught it before it could land on the floor, it happened so quick that I didn't understand what happened. When I looked up, my eyes met with two

people...

Me: Yanda (I said in shock, I paused and looked at the girl next to him)

Amanda.

Even a fool could've done one plus one and still get the answer two. Amanda held onto his hand tightly claiming him. I looked at the both of them and laughed sarcastically, not those " hell no" kinda laughs but those " I don't believe this" kinda laugh.

Yanda: Tumisani, what are you doing here? (he said shocked and embarrassed, he tried to get Amanda's hand off his but the bitch didn't quite get

the message)

Me: oh, what am I doing here? how about what are you two doing here?? (I said trying to not look pissed)

Yanda: what you mean what are we two doing here? we, we came to visit an ill friend...(wow, the audacity he has, he thinks I'm a fool)

Amanda: long time no see tumisani, how are you? (she said smiling like the little bitch she is)

Me: you know what?? I don't have time for this (I smiled calmly, and took my phone from Yanda's hands)

Yanda: what are you doing here with a

suitcase?

Me: what does it look like?? I mean even a fool can tell that I'm moving here, and I'll be staying here till I leave for Cape Town.

Amanda: babe, I'll be waiting for you in the car (she held his face and without shame, she kissed him right in front of me)

It took everything within me for me not to smack her. I closed my eyes and breathed, I opened my eyes again and pushed the both of them out of my way then walked to my room which was not too far from the elevator.

To say I am hurt would be an understatement but I'm not going to cry or waste any tears on him. Just when I was about to close the door, he stopped me and invited himself inside. I blankly stared at him with any emotions, because that's how I felt, emotionless. I wanted to shout, scream and even hit him but I won't allow him to make me weak.

Me: what do you want? (I said breaking the silence)

Yanda: tumsa, why are you moving out??
(the nerve he has to ask me that)

Me: I don't want to live with you or your

hypocrite of a father under the same roof, I don't want to see you or ever talk to you ever again, I curse the day I ever set my eyes on you, I thought you loved me, I thought you trusted me but I guess I was wrong, I gave you my heart and look what you did, stabbed me right through multiple times but I never left your wack ass (I said calmly) now please do me a favor, walk out of my life and this room the same way you walked in. (I said pointing to the door)

I'm surprised I'm not angry. I'm done. I'm done with people hurting me all the time. I'm tired of always being the one who always gets hurt, others must also

sometimes experience what I feel
sometimes. These demons keep
following me everywhere I go, I wanted
to start all over when I went to Cape
Town but I guess I was wrong...

Yanda: what!!?? (he roared angrily)

Me: you heard what I just said, I'm -done.
(he laughed as if I just made the biggest
joke of the century)

Yanda: you keep lying to yourself, you're
not done with me and you never will
until I say so (he said grabbing my neck
roughly, anger written all over his face)

Yanda: do you know why?? (he said
angrily with red eyes and I immediately

got scared) because you're mine and mine alone!!

He started undressing me roughly and tears rolled down my cheeks and I cried my lungs out, I tried to fight him but he was too strong, he stripped me naked.

Me: Luyanda please, don't do this to me (I begged pleadingly, tears rolling down my cheeks)

Yanda: I'll show you who you belong to Tumisani!!

He threw me on the bed and got on top of me, he unzipped his pants, I fought him but he gripped me tightly and I was helpless. I screamed and cried but no

one came to my help. The man I loved with all my heart is doing this to me. The Yanda I knew was not the one doing this to me, he looked totally different from the man I fell in love with.

He separated my legs roughly and I cried. All of sudden, someone barged into the room and the next thing I see is Yanda falling onto the floor.

Then Boom****

Lights out....

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Has it gotten to this extent that Yanda would want to molest the girl he claims to love???

Do you think this behavior of Yanda's is normal??

what do you think will happen next??

What is Amanda's plans, does she really love Yanda??

Who do you think has come to Tumisani's help this time???

Well.....we'll just have to wait and see...

I'll continue later but it'll be short.

Admin

[06/18, 07:29] Snr: CONTINUATION #2

.

.

.

When I opened my eyes again, I was not at the hotel room anymore. It was dark outside and the room was bright white. I looked under the covers and I was fully dressed in the clothes that I was wearing earlier. I got out from under the covers bare feet because I couldn't find my shoes, I went to the bathroom and looked in the mirror and I looked a mess. Just by looking at myself in the mirror made me cry, I felt sorry for myself. I

wiped my tears then washed my face, I fixed my hair a bit then left the room. As I walked down the stairs, the smell of food welcomed itself to my nose. I got down the stairs and recognized my surroundings. But what I didn't understand was how I got here and how he knew where I was...

Sipho: oh you're awake, how do you feel, are you OK?? (he asked with concern in his voice, he had an apron on which meant that he was the one cooking)

Me: I'm OK, but...

Sipho: let's sit down, I'll explain (he held my shoulders and we walked to the

kitchen, which he suggested as he didn't want to burn the food)

I sat on the counter and he was standing at the stove checking the pots. He looks so innocent and so handsome when he's busy with pots.

Me: do you need help? (I asked smiling)

Sipho: no I've got this (he smiles back)

OK, so you're wondering how I got at the hotel earlier on?

Me: yes and please don't lie to me, I'm tired of lies.

Sipho: I won't lie to you, trust me, well honestly I was worried about you, the way you left the other day and then you

didn't call so i got worried, I decided to follow you today and I found out you were moving to a hotel so I thought I should pay you a visit but then I saw Amanda in Luyanda's car so I decided to come up then I heard you screaming (he paused and looked worried) are you sure you're OK?? did he hurt you??

Me: no I'm fine, thank you for your help, I really appreciate it (I smiled in appreciation)

Sipho: its a pleasure, I'm just glad that you're OK

He finished cooking and dished up for the two of us and we sat down and

started eating. He kept stealing glances at me and that made me blush. I guess he's not that bad. Apart from his dark side and constant mood swings. While we were eating the deliciously prepared food, my phone started ringing. I went to fetch it in the lounge on the table. I picked up and it was Zack.

< call convo >

Me: hey Zack, how are you?

Zack: I'm not fine tumisani, Justin has been in an accident and he was rushed into ICU.

Me: what!!?? what happened? how? when? (I panicked)

Zack: He got hit by a truck this afternoon and the doctors have been running up and down, they haven't told us anything.

Me: OK, OK, please take care of yourself and Layla, Justin needs us, I'll be on the next bus to Cape Town, please don't worry, he'll be fine.

Zack: OK thanks, see you tomorrow.

Me: OK, please be strong

Zack: OK bye (he hanged up)

<end of convo>

I don't know why all this is happening to me. I feel like I'm cursed or something.

Sipho: is everything OK?

Me: no (I sat down defeated) I, I have to be on the next bus to Cape Town, my step brother has been in an accident and its serious (I stood up and started panicking, pacing up and down) plz book me a bus ticket to Cape Town, my family needs me right now.

Sipho: sure I'll do that but please calm down, I'll find out who the truck driver was.

Me: what are you saying?? it was an accident.

Sipho: you think?? baby you have so many enemies, more than you'll ever

imagine, and I'm coming with you to Cape Town.

Me: so you're saying the accident was planned?

Sipho: it seems suspicious, I'll get my guys to check it out, now please go take a shower and get dressed, the bus leaves in an hour.

Me: you don't have to come with me but Thank you so much, I know I hate you but if it weren't for you then I would've gotten molested today and if it weren't for you then I wouldn't have found out about my mother's plans, Thank you Sipho. (I said hugging him tightly)

I'm grateful for what he's done for me, I know he's bad and all but I couldn't have found out the truth without him. He has a point about this accident being a set up but by who?? I know I have enemies now a days but why would they go after my family and not me? I'll just have to keep using Siphon a little bit longer because he's the only one who can help me torture Lindokuhle then I'll get my revenge on Monster and as for his bastard of a son Yanda, huh, I'll make sure he regrets the day he set his filthy eyes on me.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

I wrote Lindo's POV down and that's the next POV I was planning to write but I thought maybe it'll hurt you guys even more so I'll let your hearts rest a bit. But let me warn you guys, the next insert is also gonna be heartbreaking but like I've said before, Some will cry, some will laugh but at the end we'll all rejoice.

I love you guys

Goodnight

Admin

[06/18, 07:30] Snr: INSERT 43

.

- .
- .
- .

Lindokuhle's POV

I curse the day I agreed to Siphos stupid plans, I curse the day he was born and I curse him for making all my plans impossible to accomplish. If it weren't for him then I would be on the bridge of signing those papers under my name. Now that all my plans are impossible to accomplish, I'll just have to eliminate everyone that made it impossible to complete. I'll get rid of them one by one and I've began with Justin, Tumisani's

step brother. The accident was just to warn her that the war hasn't even started. After hurting everyone close to her, I'll threaten her with the life of her best friends baby. I'll kidnap the baby and threaten her to sign the companies under my name. Great plan hey?

I'm a motherfucking genius. You thought I wouldn't strike back? oh sweetie you thought wrong. You forgot my name is Lindokuhle Phakade and no one and I mean NO ONE can ever fight against me and still get a chance to win.

Rachel: morning beautiful... (she said kissing my cheek and I opened my eyes smiling)

Me: my love

Rachel: wake up, breakfast is ready.

We were at her house and it was finally morning. I found out that Tumisani is on her way to Cape Town, I'm sure she's going to her step brother..

Me: has she landed yet? (I said sitting on the chair as I stepped into the kitchen)

Rachel: its 11:25, she's landing in about half an hour.

Me: perfect

We started eating breakfast And I couldn't get my mind off my evil plans. I had it all planned. I can't wait to finally strike. There was a knock at the door..

Rachel: I'll get it (she stood up and went to open the door)

After a few minutes, I heard her arguing with someone so I decided to check it out, I walked to the door and she was arguing with none other than Monster...

Monster: Kuhle (he said as he saw me standing behind Rachel)

Me: what do you want?

Monster: can we talk in private please...

Me: say whatever you want to say here or simply just leave.

Monster: Kuhle please (he pleaded)

Me: Ray, please give us a moment (I

said looking at her and she didn't look too happy, but she left us)

We stepped outside as I didn't want Rachel to eavesdrop on our conversation, I don't want her to get mad at me.

Me: I don't have all day. (I said breaking the silence)

Monster: Kuhle there's trouble and it doesn't look very good..

Me: yet you forget my second name is trouble..

Monster: I know but Kuhle your daughter...

Me: is weak (I interrupted) she is very

weak, I've realized.

Monster: no Kuhle you've got it all wrong, that child is fire, look into her eyes Kuhle, she's dangerous, she doesn't know how much power she holds in her hands, she doesn't know how to control it.

Me: she found out about us right?

Monster: more than that, but if she tells Cyntia about us then I'm doomed.

Me: and what is my business in this?

Monster: don't ask me that bullshit, its all your fucking fault, if you hadn't worked with the enemy than we wouldn't be here and I'm still not done with taking my revenge on you yet.

Me: what choice did I have? mxm, but now I've realized you were right, the bastard messed up my plans completely (I said angrily)

Monster: you see, damn it you're such a fool Kuhle, this daughter of yours is stronger than I thought, she's got that " Bang!!" in her veins, she can crush us easily, imagine how she stood up to me the other day, you Phakade's are...

Me: powerful, if we know how to control the power, that's one thing Tumisani doesn't know, we can beat her at it and take advantage of that..

Monster: I'm not going to involve myself

in this mess again, I'm going to find a way to get rid of Skopp's son and maybe...(he said holding my waist seductively) I could forgive you if you give me some sugar. (he smiled)

Me: you are such an idiot (I said pushing him away) you'll be in deep shit with Cynthia if Tumisani decides to spill the beans but here you are seducing me to sleep with you, I suggest you go find a way for your wife not to find out about your little affair.

I left him standing there and went inside then closed the door behind me. Its time I make the call because this daughter of mine is stronger than I thought. She has

way too much power running through her veins. I guess this is really my daughter.

.

.

Tumi's POV

The bus landed in Cape Town and I was exhausted as hell. My body was sore because I was sleeping on these hard seats. I opened my eyes and I was leaning on siphos shoulder and his head was on my head as well.

Me: Siphos (I said trying to get my head off his shoulder)

Siphos: mmmhmm

Me: wake up, we're here (I said as he took his head back and I stood up stretching)

He stood up and stretched then took both our suitcases and we exited the bus. We got into a cab and he instructed the driver to go to a nearby restaurant, but I didn't want to go there.

Me: please take me to the hospital, I want to go visit my brother.

Sipho: let's get something to eat first, you must be hungry.

Me: no please take me to the hospital, am not hungry.

Sipho: but...

Me: please Siphon (I said interrupting him)

He told the driver to take us to Groote Schuur hospital which was where Justin is hospitalized. We drove in silence as everyone was in their own minds. We got to the hospital and the driver parked the car, Siphon looked at me..

Me: I'll call you later hey (I smiled faintly)

Siphon: OK please take care of yourself, I love you.

(I smiled and hugged him then said goodbye and stepped out of the car)

I got inside the hospital and went to the receptionist where they told me where

Justin's ward was. I rushed up to where he was and found Zack and Layla standing beside his hospital bed.

Me: Justin!!! (He's awake!!! I rushed to him and gave him a tight hug)

Justin: whooah baby relax, you'll break my ribs (he laughed)

Me: Gosh I was so worried about you, don't you ever scare me like that again (I said sitting at his feet on the bed)

Justin: I won't sweetheart, I promise (he said smiling)

Me: (I smiled) hey Layla, Zack

Zack: hey tumisani

Layla: hey sis

Me: whoah look at you two, you guys look a mess

Justin: that's because they slept here

Layla: we were worried about you Justin, you got me scared as fuck dude.

Zack: yeah man, when you were rushed in here I almost got a heart attack.

Justin: ncoooh guys that's so cute of you, but I'm fine now, I won't be going anywhere anytime soon.

We continued with a light conversation and I was just glad that he was OK, I don't wanna lose him too, time flies really quick now a days hey. After a

while my phone started ringing and it was an unknown number, I picked up and put it on loudspeaker.

< call convo >

Me: hello. tumisani speaking

Voice: hhhmm Tumisani Phakade, how does it feel seeing your loved ones in such a condition? (the voice was deep and I couldn't make out whose voice it was)

Me: who is this??

Voice: ooh you don't wanna know sweetie, I'm just here to warn you little girl, you better watch your back because when thunder strikes, it doesn't come

with a warning, it'll hit unexpectedly.

Me: what are you talking about?? who are you??

Voice: no one tumisani, listen, I know all about you, I watch you all the time, I know your moves, you better be careful because the war has just begun, watch how I eliminate all your loved ones one by one, you'll never know what hit you.
(they hanged up)

< end of convo >

I gasped in shock. I didn't understand what just happened. Justin, Layla and Zack stared at me with fear written all over their faces. My mind didn't allow

me to think straight, fear controlled my body, my lips got dry as well as my throat.

Justin: tumisani what is going on? (he said worried)

Me: I don't know Justin, I don't know (I said confused)

Layla: did that person just threaten you??

Zack: are we in danger tumisani??

Me: guys, I don't know, I, I , I don't know what just happened..

Justin: did anything happen in Soweto?

Me: (I sighed) a lot happened Justin, I found out my mothers plans to steal my

inheritance and then I found out that my boyfriends father was helping her and then my boyfriend almost raped me and the person who planned my brothers death came to my rescue and...(I sighed, tears rolling down my cheeks as I spoke)

Layla came to hug me and comforted me

Me: guys I'm sorry, this is all my fault, I just put your life's in danger and I'm sorry, I didn't mean for this to happen, I'm so sorry.

Justin: hey please don't say that, we're a family, we stick together and help each other as a family.

Zack: yeah Justin is right, we're here for you.

Layla: yes babe, we'll fight this together.

I looked at the three of them and thanked God for the family he gave me.

Me: thank you guys, (I smiled) you're the best family one could ever ask for (I smiled and gave everyone a hug)

Zack: now we have to find a way to protect our self's because whoever is after you will not rest till they've hurt us.

Me: yeah you've right, I bought someone with me and maybe he'll be able to help.

Layla: please don't tell me its the same bastard who killed Dumisani.

Me: Layla (I paused and looked down) I had no choice.

Layla: (she throws her hands up) gosh tumisani, I can't believe this

Me: Layla please trust me, I know what I'm doing.

Layla: no tumisani, if he could kill your brother so easily then surely he can kill you easier than that.

Zack: Layla please, let's not argue, we have to work together.

Justin: right, tumisani do you fully trust this guy, are you sure about this?

Me: I'm sure Justin, trust me

Layla: how do you know you can trust him?

Me: because (I paused) he's in love with me and I'm his weakness.

Layla: oh I get it, you using this to your advantage right?

Me: right

Justin: OK please be careful, I can't have you risking your life like this.

Me: I won't (I smile) but for now, we need security protection in the house and body guards with us at all times.

Layla: what!!? what about privacy?

Zack: it's for your own safety Layla

Layla: gosh, OK whatever

Justin: OK, I think you guys should go home and rest, I'll ask the doctor if he could discharge me tomorrow and I'll have a nurse take care of me from home.

Me: OK, take care of yourself and plz get well soon (I kissed his cheek)

We said our goodbyes and got into Zack's car and he drove off to the direction of the mansion. I couldn't stop thinking about the call and I kept wondering if it could be Lindokuhle.

Because right now I could suspect her for anything simply because she's been the cause of all my problems. We got

home and it was already late, Aunt Rose had already cooked dinner so we just ate and went to our rooms because we were all exhausted. I got to my room and found my suitcase there, I think Siphos bought it to the house. I took a shower then put on my PJ's and got under covers. I decided to call Siphos..

<call convo>

Me: hey

Siphos: hey tumisani, how are you?

Me: I'm fine, thanks for dropping off my suitcase I totally forgot about it.

Siphos: sure no problem, how's your brother doing?

Me: he's recovering, but there's something I have to tell you..

Sipho: what is it? (he said worried)

Me: while I was at the hospital, I got a call from an unknown number, I couldn't make out the voice but they threatened me and told me that my brothers accident was just a warning and that this is just the beginning, they said they'll eliminate my loved ones one by one (I said worried)

Sipho: what!!? oh my gosh, your family needs to be put under security protection, your life's are in danger especially you, tumisani.

Me: yeah, I wonder who it is.

Sipho: don't worry, I'll figure this out, you just rest and don't go anywhere tomorrow please, I'll be at your house first thing tomorrow morning.

Me: OK, thank you so much

Sipho: sure, get some rest, Goodnight.

Me: Goodnight (he hanged up)

< end of Convo >

I really hope this ends quickly because I'm honestly tired. I just want to live in peace. I didn't even want to think about Yanda because I would only be hurting myself. It's about time I let go of him.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Hmmm is it me or does it smell like love here???

Will Tumisani really fall for Siphoo??

Will Kuhle finally get her sweet revenge??

Is tumisani really that powerful??

What do you think will happen next??

ADMIN

[06/18, 07:30] Snr: INSERT 44

.

- .
- .
- .

Sipho's POV

I knew Lindo was going to get her revenge. I just knew it, she's pissing me off now. I just want to get rid of her so badly. She's putting Tumisani's life in danger for her own selfish reasons.

What frustrates me the most is that Tumisani's so called boyfriend tried to rape her, yet she loved him whole hearted and unconditionally. Even when he impregnated her best friend and cheated on her, she still loved him but

he found the courage to want to rape her. It makes my blood boil when I think of the day I saw him trying to rape her, her innocent face breaks my heart.

I wake up the next day, take a shower, put on a pair of black jeans, a black shirt with black DSL's. I felt like wearing all black today. I called the guys that will be in protection of Tumisani's house and a few body guards then we drove to her place. We got there and the house maid opened the door and we went inside..

Girl: oh the devil himself in person...(she said rudely)

Boy: Layla watch your mouth

Me: Good morning.

Layla: what's so good about the morning?

Me: I'm Siphon (I said ignoring her)

Boy: Hi I'm Zack, tumisani's brother (we shook hands)

Zack: she'll be down in a minute, plz take a seat.

I sat down as well as the guys I bought with me, they were about 6. After a short while Tumisani came down looking beautiful as always dressed in black jeans, with a white top and her beautiful caramel hair in curls. Sometimes I forget that she's a coloured, her beautiful resembles a true African woman.

Tumisani: Good morning everyone (she smiles warmly greeting everyone in the room)

Zack: so do you guys have a plan? (they all look at me)

Me: we're getting there, I've bought you guys protection, they'll be three guys who will be protecting the mansion from outside and the other three will be separated, one with the girl (I said pointing to tumisani's sister) and you (the brother), the last guard will be with the other brother who is in hospital.

Layla: so basically they'll be with us 24/7?

Me: yes but only when you're going out,

as in public.

Zack: wait, I didn't hear you mention a bodyguard for Tumisani, she needs the most protection.

Me: that is why I'm here, I'm her bodyguard.

(they all looked at me shocked)

Layla: you can't be serious, Gosh!!

Zack: how do we know we can trust you?

Layla: yeah dude, we don't trust you

(she says clearly)

Me: I can assure you that you can trust me and I know its not gonna be easy because of the decisions I've made in

the past but plz just trust me (I said looking at tumisani who was standing with her arms folded on her chest)

Layla: no, I don't trust this guy what if he's tricking us?

Zack: me too, I can't trust you with my sisters life. (I look at tumisani in defeat and hope she saves me right here)

Tumisani: uhm (she clears her throat) guys please don't worry about me, we've got this.

Layla: why are you so sure?? are you in love with him too??

She gasps in surprise and her cheeks heat up, she's blushing. Everyone turns

there full attention at her and she's embarrassed. It warms my heart.

Tumisani: Layla...(she fades) don't talk like that.

Layla: then why do you trust him so much?

Zack: Layla enough, OK thank you for your help Sipho, we've gotta get to the hospital now.

Me: OK sure, the two body guards are coming with you guys.

Zack: sure, tumisani see you later (he kisses her cheek)

Layla: take care of yourself (she hugs her and eyes me weirdly)

Tumisani: plz greet Justin for me.

They leave and I instruct the guys that were left to surround the building. It was only tumisani and I left in the house. She sat down on one of the coaches not far from me...

Tumisani: would you like something?

Me: I want a hug (she giggles and those beautiful dimples show)

Tumisani: you're crazy, I meant do you want something to drink?

Me: I want to devour your juicy lips (I smile)

Tumisani: seriously?? (she says sarcastically)

Me: I'm serious, I love you tumisani.

Tumisani: I know but Siphos, look, I ...

Me: you won't be able to date me because I'm the cause of your brothers death, I understand.

Tumisani: its complicated, the boy I fell in love with and gave my heart to has hurt me and now my brothers death planner is in love with me, it's too much for now, I'm too young for this drama.

Me: I understand how you feel but I'm not forcing you into anything, take your time but just keep in mind that someone in this world loves you with all his heart and he's willing to wait for you (I smile)

Tumisani: thank you (she smiles back)
now about my mom..

Me: she's the one behind all this, but I've
got a plan.

Tumisani: but??

Me: but it requires for us to go back to
Soweto.

Tumisani: what's the plan?

Me: OK so we go back to Soweto and
you act as the good daughter you are,
you call a date with your mom, you guys
meet up and you ask her if you guys can
still fix things and move on from the
past and as she agrees, we strike, gun
shots are being fired, it goes as a fake

kidnap but of course you will be aware of what will be happening, we break into the restaurant, we kidnap Kuhle and you included but we separate the two of you, all you have to make sure of is that you act as if you're really being kidnapped. Then we'll take it from there...

Tumisani: Damn!!! (she yells happily) did I ever tell you that you're a motherfucking genius (she said standing up and jumping into my arms smiling)

Me: I know right (I chuckled)

Tumisani: damn Siphos, you've got the brains!! but one problem...

Me: what's up?

Tumisani: I have CEO training in two days time.

Me: than I guess we have to catch a bus back to Soweto tonight then plan the kidnap tomorrow night, but you've gotta be strong because you'll be excited from all the ups and downs.

Tumisani: Gosh, OK good thing I didn't unpack my suitcase.

Me: good, OK I have to be on my way, I'll come pick you up later, take care for now.

(I said standing up and she followed)

Tumisani: let me walk you out.

We walked to my car and I instructed the guys that I'll be out of the city for a few days and that they should keep an eye on this family.

Tumisani: OK, so I'll see you later.

Me: yeah

I lean against the door of the car and we looked into each others eyes, smiling. She came closer to me and for a second I thought she was going to kiss me. But instead she stood on her toes and wrapped her arms around my neck and hugged me tightly. I held her waist and hug her back. I inhale her lovely scent and the hug feels so emotional and

warm. We stay like that for longer than usual. I feel so happy when I'm holding her, my heart beats faster than usual and my lips just forms into a smile. She pulls out after a while smiling. I get into the car and start the engine. I wave at her as I drive away. God knows how much I love this girl.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Yohhh.....if you miss out on the next insert that you'll be missing out on a lot of drama..

Its time we send Kuhle six feet deep into

the ground.

Admin

[06/18, 07:30] Snr: INSERT 45

.

.

.

.

Luyanda's POV

I slowly opened my eyes and I didn't recognize my surroundings. I looked around and the annoying beeping sound fills my ears when assures me that I was in hospital. I felt like something heavy

was on me, I looked down and Amanda was sleeping on my thighs. I didn't understand any of what I was seeing.

Me: Amanda (I said in a scratchy voice)

She slowly opened her eyes and sat up straight.

Amanda: Yanda you're awake, I was worried sick..

Me: what am I doing here? (I asked confused)

I followed her eyes and she was looking at my head, I reached up to my head and touched the fabric of the bandage that was wrapped around my head.

It all came pouring down into my mind. I

remembered everything that happened that day. I cheated on Tumisani with Amanda and we bumped into each other at the hotel. I remembered she watched Amanda kiss me and she broke up with me, I couldn't take it and I ended up almost raping her. Guilt and pain poked a deep hole within my heart. I'm disappointed in myself, I'm ashamed of myself. I promised her brother that I would take care of her but all I've been doing lately is hurting her. I'll never forgive myself for this and I doubt she'll ever forgive me.

Me: how long have I been in here?

Amanda: almost three days, Siphos hit

you on the head with the back of a gun,
you were unconscious for all two days.

Me: is tumisani alright? (I asked worried)

Amanda: she fainted after you got
knocked out.

Me: where is she?

Amanda: I don't know, but you'll find out
once you're discharged.

Me: does my family even know that I'm
here?

Amanda: yes they were here yesterday,
although they are very disappointed in
you.

Me: (sigh) I'm disappointed in myself,

please get the doctor.

She walked out and came back with the doctor.

Doctor: Mr Mkisi, its good to see that you're awake.

Me: Thank you Doctor, but I'm fine now, I just want to ask you for a favor.

Doctor: what is it?

Me: I want you to discharge me, I have to get out of here now.

Doctor: oh OK, I'll check you first and prescribe some meds for you.

Me: thank you

He checked me and everything was

perfectly fine, he prescribe some medicine to ease the pain a bit then I signed my discharge papers. I got dressed and left the hospital. We got into Amanda's car and drove to my house. She's quite and I'm sure she can't get over the fact that I almost raped the woman I claimed to love. We got to my house and she parked the car.

Me: thank you so much for your help.

Amanda: its a pleasure (she smiles faintly without making eye contact)

Me: I'll call you.

I opened the car door and got out. She drove off then I walked inside the house

only to find my family having lunch. The time was 14:25.

Yemi: Yanda (they all stood up and walked to where I was standing, in the lounge)

Monster: son

Me: I would be dead by now and you Gus wouldn't even notice because you're too busy enjoying yourself, mxm. (I started walking towards the stairs)

Mom: Luyanda come here now (she commanded)

Me: not now mom. (I continued walking)

I got into my room, took a long shower, got dressed than made a few calls and

after about two hours, I decided to go downstairs. They were seated in the lounge watching TV. I decided to make myself something to eat And I avoided them because I didn't have energy to listen to their lectures. I sat on the kitchen counter and started eating my sandwich when mom walked in and stood at the sink facing me with her hands folded on her chest.

Me: mom, please I don't have the energy for this right now.

Mom: well too bad you will listen to what I have to say and you will not interrupt me (she said pissed)

Me: so you'll also going to rub it in my face?? (I said irritated)

Mom: oh so am I supposed to give you a hand of applause and say, " well done son you did a great job by almost raping an innocent girl" mxm, I'm disappointed in you young man, I didn't raise you like this Luyanda, my son would never be so stupid and so fucking ignorant. That poor girl has gone through so much already and hell boy Luyanda Mkisi had to add fuel to the fire. Instead of you supporting that poor child and being a good friend to her, you decided to impregnate her friend, yet she still loved you, you cheated on her God knows how

many times but still she was a fool for your love, she loved you unconditionally and this is how you repay her. Yanda don't you have a heart or are you just pure evil?

The truth hurts. I've hurt tumisani so much already and I don't know what got into me to make me want to rape her. I was now in tears.

Me: mom, I'm sorry

Mom: to hell with your fucking sorrys, you never mean it, and I'm not the one you should be apologizing to.

Me: she's never gonna forgive me.

Mom: and I don't blame her, its your own

fault. Now listen, you're gonna find out where that girl is, you're going to apologize to her and seek forgive which I doubt she'll grant you and then once all this done, you're gonna stay the hell away from her. (she said with a straight face)

Me: mama no, I can't stay away from her, she's the only girl I love.

Mom: you don't hurt the ones you love, you don't love her Yanda, you love the thought of being in love, you love the fact that you're dating this beautiful girl with a gorgeous body and an ass for days and that's something you would love to boast about, and plus she's a

virgin.

Me: no ma, I love tumisani, I can't stay away from her.

Mom: Yanda!! (she said through gritted teeth) I've spoken. I don't want this poor girl to live a sad life because of a stupid boy. If I ever see you close to her again I'll cut those things between your legs and I'll forget that you're my own flesh and blood. (she said seriously) let her live her life in peace, she's had too much pain for a 17 year old.

(with that said, she exits the room)

I silently sob. What have you done Yanda?? what have you done?

I can't live without her. I know she deserves better but I can't change how my heart feels. I'm such a bad person, a bad brother, a bad boyfriend and much more. But I would never doubt my love for Tumisani. She has my heart.

.

.

Tumisani's POV

Time flies really quick when you're busy. We came back to Soweto and I must say, I really didn't want to come back. I called my mother and asked her if we could meet up for dinner and she agreed, though she sounded shocked and

unsurely. I went to visit Lindiwe and my princess Thanks and they were both perfectly fine. She heard about what Yanda did to me and she was feeling pity for me but I didn't want anyone to pity me because I am trying to move on. I spent some time with them till it was 17:25 and I took a taxi back to Siphos house where I'm currently staying. I made sure that when I'm walking in the streets no one should recognize me because I needed to stay undercover. Lindo shouldn't know that I'm working with Siphos. I got to Siphos house and made sure that I looked behind me. I got in and the house was full of men. They

were all dressed differently but five of them were dressed in all black, the table was packed with weapons. My eyes scanned around the room and I couldn't find Siphho. Until someone wrapped their arms around my tiny waist and I turned around immediately..

Siphho: relax tumisani (he held me)

Me: fuck you scared me, this place is full of men, I feel uncomfortable.

Siphho: they won't harm you, they are here to help and protect you

Me: oh OK when are we leaving?

Siphho: soon, come (he took my hand and we walked to the room I slept in the

other day)

There was a black outfit neatly folded on the bed.

Sipho: I didn't like the idea of you wearing all black but I had no choice, its the only way we'll be able to recognize who is who between you and your mother.

Me: are you serious? do we really look that alike? (I said kicking off my shoes)

Sipho: very much alike.

Me: mmmhm interesting..

(I said pulling my top off right in his presence)

What!!?? Don't look at me like that, its not like he's never seen breast before.

Its a new habit I've discovered in myself. I now find it normal to dress in front of people I trust. The old tumisani would be running to the bathroom but the new tumisani is different.

Me: what are you staring at? (I said bringing him back to planet earth as if I wasnt just standing half naked in front of him)

I put the freshly iron black vest over my head and onto my body.

Sipho: uh, uh sorry

Me: (I giggled) have you never seen

boobs before?

Sipho: uh of course I have, just not as beautiful as yours.

I laughed.

Me: you're crazy (I pulled my pants off)
turn around, don't look at me.

Sipho: yes ma'am (he chuckled and did as told)

I took the leather tights and put it on...

Me: Sipho...(my voice trailed off)

Sipho: yes (he turned around)

Me: can't I just wear my own black jeans.

Father lord, my ass is popping right out of this tights. Gosh so much for having a

huge ass. I stand in the mirror and pull up the leather tights..

Sipho: you look beautiful

Me: my whole ass is practically bombing out dude, I can't wear this.

Sipho: but you have no choice baby, its the outfit that we wear on days like these..

Me: you mean its the color you wear when going on a mission, not outfit.

Sipho: you look gorgeous tumisani, trust me, now come on, we don't have much time.

Me: but my ass...

Sipho: is beautiful. (he said making me wear a black leather jacket)

I put on a black pair of takkies and fix my curls a bit. Other than my ass bombing this tights, I actually look great in all black.

He holds my hand and we walk down the stairs.

Me: you do know that you don't have to hold my hand.

Sipho: I don't want them to give you any funny looks.

As soon as we got to the bottom of the stairs, all eyes were on me. Oh my Gosh. Don't you just love attention tumisani, I

said sarcastically in my head.

Guy 1: Damn dude!!! you hit the jack pot.

Guy 2: she's hella fine!!

Sipho: you idiots, get your eyes off her.

Guy 1: fuck, look at that ass, shooo (I gave Sipho the " I told you so" look but he just tightened the grip on my hand)

Guy 2: she's one sexy Goddess

Sipho: guys stop it.

Guy 1: introduce us you fool.

Sipho: maybe next time, but now we've gotta get going.

He instructed all the men and told them what to do, yet he still didn't want to let

go of my hand so I justet him be.

We get into different cars and drove off. I got into a car that looked like a cab so that Lindo doesn't suspect anything.

I got to the restaurant and looked around, Sipho's men were seated into different corners as if they are just there to eat like a normal customer. I spotted my mother at a seat close to the window, she had no clue of what was about to go down. She was dressed in a knee length floral dress with flowers on it.

Me: mother (I smiled as I stood next to the table, she stood up)

Lindo: tumisani, hey (she hugged me

nervously)

Me: you look beautiful (I complimented while sitting down)

Lindo: oh thank you baby, you look great too, black suits you. (she said smiling, revealing her dimples)

Me: thanks, have you ordered?

Lindo: yeah I hope you don't mind, I ordered chicken salad.

Me: I don't mind at all.

Now I realize why Siphosaid we looked very much alike. She is just like me, her light brown eyes, those soft pink lips and those deep dimples. This here right in front of me is the older version of

myself. Don't let me get started on that gorgeous body. But one thing we don't have in common is our hearts.

Me: so uhm mom, u wanted to talk to you about us, I've lived without a mother figure in my life for so long and it wasn't easy but now that you're back, I was thinking that maybe we should start all over again, let's forget about the past and move on, I've realized that I need you and I want you back into my life.

Lindo: oh mntanam (she had tears in her eyes, mxm, such a drama queen)

Lindo: Thank you so much my baby, I want you into my life too, I want my baby

too. (she came and hugged me)

Me: so does this mean you're my mother again?

Lindo: I was always your mother, tumisani.

A tear escaped my eye and for a second I almost believed that. I wish this was all real and not just some pretence. If I could change the hands of time, I would. I quickly wiped my tear and looked into her eyes. All I see is greed and desire. This woman is so cruel to the extent that she would kill to meet her desires. The waiter brought our food and I dug in. We conversed in a short conversation

and she wanted to get to know me but I was distracted. I couldn't wait for Siphos men to come and kidnap us already. Looking at her face sickened me. Her presence intoxicated me. When I looked up three men dressed in black barged in and my acting skills leveled up. I screamed and Lindo turned around to look at what I was looking at. They had guns in their hands, she whipped her gun out from under the table and...

Lindo: duck tumisani!!! (I ducked and gunshots were being thrown left, right and center)

All of a sudden someone punched Lindo and her gun fell into the floor...

Lindo: Tumisani run!! (I stood up and tempted to run but someone pulled my waist and tied up my hands with a rope, they did the same to Lindo, fake tears streamed down my cheeks.

Me: mom!!! (they dragged her away from me)

Lindo: don't worry baby, I'll sort this out. (they took us to the back exit of the restaurant and separated us.)

I watched how they covered her eyes and got her into a black car. They dragged me to a different car and Sipho was pacing up and down, the second he saw us approaching, he ran to me...

Sipho: motherfucker untie her!!(he yelled)

The rope was tight and it was hurting me.

Me: aaaah (I screamed in pain as the guy untied me)

Sipho: be careful you fool (he was fuming) you know what, just move (he pushed the dude aside and untied it himself)

Guy: I'm sorry sir but you told us to tie them up

Sipho: dude just shut up, follow the other guys, I follow shortly.

Guy: yes sir (he left us)

Sipho: are you OK? (he said as he finished untying me)

I grab my wrist and it was red and swollen.

Me: damn that niggah is good at tying people up (I said massaging my wrists)

Sipho: I'm sorry, I was so worried, I thought you would get hurt.

Me: hey (I held his face) chill, I'm fine.

Sipho: sure?? (he said holding my hands)

Me: very, now let's go

We got into the car and he drove to the direction of the warehouse that they're

keeping my mother captive in. The place was a real junkie. Boxes everywhere, mxm. We got to a neat room that had a office table and a chair. I could hear my mother's voice from the other room because the office was one door apart from the room that they tied her up in and blind folded her. I took the leather jacket off and wrapped it around the chair, Siphos closed the door behind him and I sat on the table. The scene of what just happened played in my mind.

Siphos: you look exhausted, maybe we should go home and come back tomorrow (he said standing in front of me and looking down at me)

Me: no I'll be fine, I want to watch as she suffers (I said without any emotion)

Sipho: do you want her blind folded as that happens?

Me: yes, I won't be able to look into her eyes, I don't want to feel sorry for her.

Sipho: when are you coming back to kill her?

Me: what do you think?

Sipho: I want to finish this, I don't want to wake up tomorrow morning and remind myself that I've still got unfinished business.

Me: yeah I know right, OK come on, let's go pay my mom a visit (I got off the

table)

Sipho: are you sure about this?? (he said holding my waist, he likes doing that)

Me: 1000% (I smiled) give me a gun

Sipho: do you know how to use it?

Me: yep it runs in the Phakade blood (I took the gun from him and we model our way to the next room)

They had her tied up and blind folded sitting on a chair in the center of the room. I looked at Sipho and nodded, signaling for them to beat her up. They kicked and punched her all over her body. She screams which gave joy to my

heart, seeing her in pain made me happy.

One has to be heartless sometimes.

After beating her up for almost an hour,

they stopped. I signaled for them to

bring a bucket of cold water because

dear mother thought it was nap time. I

took off her blind fold and she was

asleep, I poured the water on her body...

Me: surprise!!!! (I said smiling from ear

to ear)

She screams as the cold water brings

her alive, as her eyes land on me, her

face turns into a shocked expression.

Me: hell my dearest mother, you look

even more beau tied up. (I said waving

at her)

Lindi: Tumisani (she gasped in a weak tone)

Me: yes mommy dearest, wait let's start from the beginning. Hello you must be Lindokuhke Phakade, I am Tumisani Phakade, daughter of Keigan Matthews and Lindokuhle Phakade, oh wait that's you (I giggled) the little mistress.

Lindo: wow you've finally put the puzzles together, congratulations!! (she says sarcastically) let's not waste each others time here, kill me already.

Me: oh dear mother why the rush. You thought I was dumb right, you thought "

oh she's such a fool", but guess what mother, you were wrong!!! Do you see what your greed got you into?? you killed my father, you killed my step mother, and you killed my beloved Dumisani. (a tear escapes my eye and I quickly wipe it away, she laughs)

Lindo: never show the enemy that you're weak Tumisani.

Me: shut up.

Lindo: fuck you're so weak, just give me the gun I'll shoot myself, because clearly you won't be able to do it.

Me: how are you so sure mommy?? (I pointed the gun towards her and I gave

her three hot slaps, damn it felt good)

Me: say hello to my fathers and my brother because one thing I know for sure is that a Phakade will never see the gates of heaven.

Sipho: Tumisani you might never get over the fact that you've killed someone for all your life, let me do this.

Me: no my love, I've got this, (I said smiling at him, I would how I still managed to smile at a time like this) I'd rather live knowing that this devil is no more than live in fear all my life.

Lindo: before I die, I want you to know that you are really a true Phakade. I

failed as a mother and a daughter to Gogo. I don't regret what I've done in this life time because I've always know that I would die some day, The Phakade name now rests in your blood mntanam.

You've just proven to me that you're stronger and better than me in so many ways, your brother would be very proud of you. I love you.

(I looked at her with anger and hatred)

Me: this is for my father (BOOM:

gunshot 1) this is for failing Gogo

(BOOM: gunshot 2) this is for Aunt Bella

(BOOM: gunshot 3) this is for Dumisani

(BOOM: gunshot 4)

Tears flooded down my cheeks as each shot hit her body. Blood was everywhere.

Me: and this is for making my life a living hell (BOOM: gunshot 5)

I dropped the gun and stormed out of that room, tears rolling down my cheeks. I don't regret what I did, she deserved everything that I did to her. I barged into the office and cried my heart out.

Sipho came in and hugged me tightly. My heart felt as if it was left free. I felt like a big mountain has been taken off of my shoulders. I wasn't crying because I had killed my own mother but because of the life's she had taken away. If I have

to live like a heartless girl for all my life then so be it, but as long as I'll know that I've gotten justice for the death of my loved ones.

No one deserves to die, I know, but some people don't deserve to live either.

- .
- .

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Admin

[06/18, 07:30] Snr: INSERT 46

- .
- .

.

TWO YEARS LATER

Tumisani's POV

Hhmmm where do I even begin?

OK let me start in the beginning.

Things have been hectic for this past two years. A lot has happened. After I killed my mother, I moved back to Cape Town. I passed my grade 11 as well as my matric with a Bachelors pass with 4 distinctions. I moved out of the Matthews mansion as suggested in my fathers will. I bought myself a new house with the money I got from being the owner of two companies and a hotel.

I still am in contact with Lindiwe and our princess Thando who is turning two years old this year, she's grown into a beautiful little girl. I haven't heard from Luyanda since the day he tried to rape me and i made sure that I exposed Monster. I gathered all the needed information to prove to Cynthia that he was cheating on her with Lindokuhle. Cynthia divorced him and filed full custody over Yemi and Yanda. Lindiwe and Luyanda both passed their matric and Luyanda moved to Cape Town where he is studying law in the University of Cape Town. I made sure I cut all ties with him, I made my heart

forget him though it wasn't easy. My family has been very supportive and caring towards me as I tried to pick up the broken pieces of my heart.

Me: Phakade speaking, hello? (I said picking up the ringing phone)

Here I am seated on the chair labeled for the boss in Matthews Industries. I signed the company papers into my name as well as the hotel in Port Elizabeth. My life has been a roller coaster ever since I put my signature on those papers. I've turned into a workaholic and I never have time for myself. So here I am two years after struggles and pain, Tumisani Phakade

owner of two companies and a hotel.

Voice: you sound very sexy Miss
Phakade (I smiled)

Me: Siphos (I said leaning back into the
chair)

Hhmm, what can i say? Siphos has been
nothing but a great friend, brother and
father to me. He has been with me
through thick and thin. The hatred that I
had for him all vanished into thin air, he
has changed and has become a totally
different man.

Siphos: Beautiful (I blushed)

Me: what do you want? I'm busy.

Siphos: you're always busy now a days,

can i take you out for lunch? I miss you.

Me: have you seen the time? its 13:25, don't you think its already lunch time.

Sipho: (sigh) you need to get out of that office sometimes tumisani, its not good for your health, you're only 20 well not even 20 yet.

Me: hhmm come to think of it, I won't have time to cook tonight, how about dinner?

Sipho: how about I drive to your place and cook dinner for you. When last did you have a home cooked meal?

Me: you're such a sweetheart, Thank you.

Sipho: its a pleasure, don't be home

later than 18:00.

Me: (sigh) I'll try.

Sipho: if you're late, I'll eat all the food by myself.

Me: (I laughed) you wouldn't dare

Sipho: try me (he chuckled)

Me: OK Sipho, I have a meeting to attend, see you later right

Sipho: OK boss, sharp.

(I hanged up)

Sipho has been asking me to be his girlfriend so many times but I keep rejecting him. I know he loves me but I don't think I'm ready. Though I have

been slowly catching feelings for him but I haven't paid much attention to it, I can't seem to get over my past. I've tried but it seems impossible.

I walk out of my office to the boardroom and it is packed with people, about 10 of them.

Vuyo: Tumisani finally, I thought you forgot about this meeting.

Me: no I didn't.

Vuyo: OK, meet Mr Daniels, owner of Daniels Industries (she introduces)

Vuyo is a really wonderful woman. She's kind, beautiful and really smart. She's been appointed as the Matthews family

personal assistant and she has been helping me understand these companies and fit in with the business style. Without her help in this company, I would be nothing.

Me: nice to meet you Mr Daniels (I said shaking his hand)

Mr Daniels looks like a man in his early 30's. He's really handsome with a buffed body and very muscular. He looks like a real gentleman.

Mr Daniels: pleasure to meet you Miss Phakade (he smiles with those gorgeous teeth)

Vuyo introduced me to everyone in the

room and she explained the purpose of the meeting and so on it proceeded. I guess I was the youngest of them all because they looked in their 30's or maybe 40's apart from Vuyo who is 25. I liked this company better than the other two because I understood most of the things in this company and I know most of the people that work here.

The meeting went on for almost two hours and I couldn't wait to get out of that boardroom. My shoes were killing me. I was wearing a blue knee length body hugging dress with black heels. I had little make up on and my hair was in box braids neatly tie up. I decided to

braid my afro because it was giving me a hard time when I had early meetings, because it took time to neaten it up. Plus, I had to look the part, I couldn't be a boss and look like a 18 year old teenage girl.

Finally the meeting ended and the day went really quick which I was grateful for. I checked the clock and it was 17:15, I packed up my files neatly then took the things I needed and locked the office before I left.

I personally advised the employees in this company to address me by my name because I felt weird when they kept calling me, " ma'am" or "madam",

like seriously, that's too much and on top of that they are older than me, I feel like its disrespectful. I have people taking care of the other company and hotel but I do go there once in a while just to check if everything was in order.

I got into my car and drove off. I bought myself a Mercedes Benz and got a drivers license. I've been through a lot this past two years but it was all worth it. Gogo and Dumisani are very proud of me right now wherever they are, though I wish they were here to witness my success.

I opened the gate to my 5 bedroom house and I notice Siphos car parked

outside the one garage. I carefully park my car in the other garage and step out. I gave Siphso full access to my house because I trusted him and I know I can rely on him for anything.

Me: I'm home!!! (I said closing the door behind me as I got inside)

Siphso: I'm in the kitchen!! (he yelled back)

The smell of roast chicken filled my nostrils as I got closer to the kitchen, which was close to the lounge. I put my bag on the table and kick off my shoes before I make my way to the kitchen....

Me: Mary mother of Jesus!!! what have

you done to my kitchen (I said as I stopped in my tracks when I entered the kitchen)

The place was a real mess, there were pots everywhere and bowls in the sink, the counter was full of cooking ingredients and I had to laugh when he turned around. He was wearing an apron and he had all kinds of sauce on his face as well as the white apron which turned into the rainbow nation..

Sipho: don't get mad, I promise I'll clean up.

Me: yeah you better, look at you, you're a mess, gosh remind me next time never

to allow you to come to my house, my kitchen specifically without my presence.

Sipho: you won't be saying that once you've tasted the food (he smiled as he stirred the sauce in the pan on the stove)

Me: it does really smell good in here actually, I'm gonna go take a shower quickly then I'm gonna come back down and help you clean up, alright?

Sipho: sure, don't take too long.

Me: OK

I went back to the lounge, took my heels and handbag then went up to my room. I stripped myself naked and got into the shower. I showered for almost an hour

then put on my pajamas without any under garments then walked back downstairs when I heard my phone ringing...

< call convo >

Me: Phakade speaking, hello? (I said answering without checking the caller)

Layla: fuck, don't sound so professional, yet sexy.

Me: Layla!!! (I yelled happily)

Layla: did you miss me that much?

Me: like crazy, sis

Layla: what does a sister got do to get a simple call from her own sister?? and

please don't give me that, " I was busy"
kinda bullshit.

Me: baby don't do that to me, do you
know how hard it is taking care of two
companies at the same time, I miss you
sis (I smiled)

Layla: damn tumisani, you don't even
have time for yourself anymore, do you
even know that today is Friday?

Me: fuck, you're kidding right?

Gosh what day is it, better yet, what
month are we in?? I'm so caught up in
work that I don't know what day of the
week we're living in...

Layla: its Friday tumisani, you need to

relax baby girl.

Me: I'll try.

Layla: bitch don't give me that, " I'll try " shit, anyway, I'm just letting you know that you still have a family and we love you, that's why we have a family lunch tomorrow, Saturday, you still remember that day of the week right? (she says giggling)

Me: and you're only telling me this now, what if I was w...

Layla: you're not working tomorrow, you're the boss for crying out loud, don't make yourself a slave in your own company.

Me: OK fine, I'll try.

Layla: don't try baby, just do, I gotta bounce, take care of huge ass please

Me: (I giggled) I will, you too, kisses

Layla: love you, mwaaah (she hanged up)

<end of convo>

Damn, I love my sister. I walked to the kitchen and the handsome dude here actually cleaned up. It was spotless now...

Me: you cleaned.

Sipho: you sure know how to take your time, I cleaned cuz someone took longer

than expected.

Me: thanks (I smiled)

Sipho: take a seat, I'm just dishing up.

I sat down on the stool and watched as he dished up the deliciously cooked food. He served and sat down next to me. We did a small prayer and dug in.

Me: this is delicious... (I said biting into the chicken)

Sipho: I told you I'm a better cook than you

Me: liar.....well..maybe a little (he chuckled)

Sipho: I made desert.

He said as he cleared the table after we finished dinner.

Me: you're too nice, I owe you big time.

Sipho: I'll decide on that later (he said as he took out the chocolate pudding from the fridge)

Me: you're gonna kill me with all this food.

Sipho: you work too much, you deserve it baby.

He neatly dishes up for the both of us in a bowl and he instructs me to go to the lounge. I did as told, I switched on the TV and lie back on the couch with my feet up. He brings the desert and sits up

next to me than pull my feet onto his lap.
He starts massaging my feet as I
enjoyed the desert.

Me: aaah that feels good.

Sipho: you're too tense babe, relax.

Me: I have a feeling you're gonna ask for
something in return. (I said sitting up
and he looked away nervously)

Sipho: well.....kinda

Me: I knew there was more to this
delicious dinner and creamy desert,
shoot.

Sipho: well my sister is coming back
from London..

Me: wait, you have a sister? (I asked shocked)

Sipho: yeah, but she didn't want anything to do with me as long as I was still attached to my father, she hated him and everything close to him.

Me: oh OK, how old is she?

Sipho: she's 28.

Me: she's older than you?

Sipho: yeah, she's coming back on Sunday and I'm planning a welcome back surprise party for her, we haven't met for almost 7 years, she left when I was still in high school.

Me: oh OK and I'm guessing you want

me to help you with this surprise party?

Sipho: yes please, that's if you don't mind (he asked nervously)

Me: why are you so nervous? (I asked clearing my bowl. this pudding was delicious)

Sipho: because I know you'll tell me that you have a meeting on Monday and you would need to sleep early on Sunday evening.

Me: (sigh) you know me too well (I smiled) I have a family lunch tomorrow which Layla would kill me if I don't attend, I'll probably only be available around 16:00, how many people are

coming to this party?

Sipho: its not really a big party, just my friends and her old friends, about 15 people maximum.

Me: OK, I'll help.

Sipho: are you serious?? (he asked shocked yet happy)

Me: yeah, I would love to meet this sister of yours

I said washing the two bowls in the sink then drying my hands on the cloth.

Sipho: wow thank you, I though you would say no.

Me: than you thought wrong, Mr.

He held my waist and looked into my eyes as I lean against the sink with my ass pressed on it. I looked up into his eyes as well and I felt butterflies in my tummy, my legs got weak and I couldn't utter a word, I got nervous...

Sipho: you're so beautiful Tumisani (I blushed)

Our faces came slowly together and our lips were not even a centimeter apart. I realized what was about to happen and I desperately wanted to stop but something kept holding me back...

Maybe I should give the poor guy a chance, he's been here for me all this

while. I know I shouldn't feel as though I owe him but I can't help but feel bad for rejecting him multiple times. Maybe I should let him be.

I closed my eyes as his lips touched mine and the warmth of his lips warmed mine as well.

He slowly kissed me And I kissed him back after a while. Our lips felt so perfect together. He knew how to move it and I felt really good inside.

Our first kiss feels so emotional with love, peace and joy. I wrapped my hands around his neck as the kiss heated up. He sucked on my bottom lip and I

moaned. His lips were so soft and very juicy. I felt hot and heated. The need to be touched took over my body, his hands started roaming around my body as the kiss intensified.

My hands somehow made its way to his buttons and I started unbuttoning his shirt until I took it off and threw it to the floor without breaking the kiss. He pulled my pajama top off and threw it to the ground as well. My virgin breast rose up as it seek for attention, he lifted me off the ground and I wrapped my legs around his waist, still not breaking the kiss.

He walked up the stairs to my room with

me in his arms, he placed me on the bed and it just hit me that I'm soaking wet down there. He carefully pulls my pajama pants off and I was now fully exposed to him. He teased me by kissing my toes, my thighs, my wet cookie, my tummy then my twins, he sucked on my right breast slowly and it brought a wave of pleasure all over me. He separated my thighs and inserted a finger inside of my cookie and I moaned in pleasure. His finger thrust slowly inside of me and the pleasure is beyond understanding. I hit my first orgasm then my second till he pulls his finger out and just looked at me as I tried to

control the pleasure i

am feeling. He comes up to my face and peck my lips.

I want him inside of me but I don't think I am ready. I never thought of giving anyone else my virginity either than Yanda, but I guess life has a way of changing things. He kissed me passionately as his hands couldn't keep still, he softly squeezed my breast and I moaned out loud. He's eyes has so much love in it and I swear this man could give his life away just for me. But am I ready for this again, I don't wanna get hurt again.

Me: Siphos... (I said softly as a pang of guilt hit me)

I feel really guilty because he loves me and I think I might still be stuck in the past...

Siphos: I'm sorry, I, I got carried away (he said turning his back on me and sitting up straight with his face in his hands)

Me: no, I'm sorry, I just, I just don't think I'm ready yet.

Siphos: I'm sorry, I, I,...

Me: please look at me (i said taking his hand off his face) stop apologizing, I want this too but I'm not ready yet.

Siphos: i understand, I'll go sleep in the

other room (he stood up and tempted to walk but I held his hand)

Me: please don't go. (I pleaded)

Sipho: are you sure? (I nodded) OK, than I'll take a shower first (he said without making eye contact, he looked hurt and disappointed)

Me: OK (I smiled faintly)

He went into the bathroom and took a shower then after about 20 mins, he came back. Note I was still fully naked, he was wearing only his boxers.

He snuggled next to me And pulled me onto his chest and I folded myself into his muscular body.

He wrapped his arms around me entirely and I liked the warmth though I felt small being in his arms. I took the blanket and covered the both of us then pecked his lips.

Me: Goodnight..

Sipho: I love this, I've always dreamt of us being in each other's arms like this. (I felt as lips curving into a smile)

Me: well I think your dream has just come true.

Sipho: so at what stage are we at? I mean, are you my girlfriend now?

Me: tomorrow is another day Sipho, sleep.

Sipho: OK, Goodnight babe, I love you.

I smiled and held his hand under the blanket.

I had to avoid that question because I really don't know where we're at. I don't want to rush things but whatever this is, I hope it doesn't hurt me in the end. I'm willing to give him a chance and experience whatever this is. I have to learn to move on. I can't keep my past in my heart forever, Yanda is my past now and I pray to God that I learn to forget him.

Maybe Sipho is the one, who knows?

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Ok, you guys are really luck to be reading this insert right now because you wouldn't believe what happened today.

So as long as this insert is, I was typing it earlier on and it disappeared, I was close to giving up and not give you guys an insert today, consider your selfs lucky. A " thank you Admin". would do but I hope you enjoyed.

My fingers are tired, yoh.

Admin

[06/18, 07:30] Snr: INSERT 47

.

.

.

.

Luyanda's POV

Zinhle: wakey, wakey sleepy face.

Me: Zee please, its Saturday, let me rest.

Two years has passed since I last saw Tumisani.

My parents divorced and I moved to Cape Town to study Law. I've tried to forget about Tumisani but it seems impossible. The more I think about her,

the more I keep missing her. I heard she signed the papers of her inheritance and she is now a successful young lady. It breaks my heart when I think of all the good times we've spent together, but now it's all over and there is no one else to blame but myself. I let a real treasure slip right out of my very own hands....

Zinhle: Yanda come on please.

I met Zee (short for Zinhle) in my first year at the university of Cape Town, she is also studying Law. She is the same age as me and we started dating at the end of last year. I've tried to replace tumisani with her, I've even tried to make her look like tumisani but I've failed.

Zinhle is a really nice girl, she's beautiful, intelligent and very bubbly but she could never replace Tumisani. I really like Zinhle but maybe its just because i miss tumisani or maybe I need someone to hold...

Me: what time is it? (i asked rubbing my eyes)

Zinhle: 10am and please explain to me why there is a girl in your lounge with a baby?

Me: what!!!??

I quickly threw the covers off me and ran to the lounge where I found Lindiwe standing and Thando standing right

beside her, holding her hand.

Thando: Dada, Dada!! (she screamed while running up to me)

Me: hey princess, how are you? (I said bending down and she ran into my arms)

Zinhle: what is going on here?

I noticed that we were both still in our pajama's, she was wearing her pajama shorts with my shirt ant and I had only my boxers on, shirtless.

Me: uh, uhm babe, this is...

Lindiwe: Hi I'm Lindiwe and that is Than do, Luyanda's baby.

Single: what, you have a baby and a

girlfriend? (she said hurt with teary eyes)

Lindiwe: whoah no, no, I'm not his girlfriend.

Me: she's my baby mama, Zee, we're not together.

Lindiwe: never were and never will be.

Me: uhm Zee listen, I've gotta sort this out, uhm can we talk later, i promise I'll explain.

Zinhle: oh uhm OK, I'm gonna go change. (she walked to the room with confusion written all over her cute little face)

Me: what the fuck Lindiwe?? (I said pissed)

Lindiwe: Language Luyanda, we have a child here.

Me: sorry, but what are you doing here?
In Cape town with my one year old baby?

Thando: Dada, Dada!! (she says hugging me as we sat down on the couch and I place her on my lap)

Lindiwe: are you serious right now, weren't you the one who told me if Varsity closes for the holidays, I should come with Thando, don't you remember you asked me to come two days ago?

Gosh, I totally forgot about that. i don't know how I forgot but I did.

Me: gosh, I'm so sorry, I forgot.

Lindiwe: mxm you're such an idiot
anyway I need your help.

Me: with what?

Lindiwe: well since your house is
occupied and seems like you have a
girlfriend that clearly lives here, I think I
should go and live with Tumisani, she
bought a house and moved out of the
Matthews mansion .

Me: really? wow, that's great but you
know how things are not right between
me and tumisani at the moment, how
am I gonna be able to see my daughter?

Lindiwe: I'll bring her over if you want to
see her.

Me: oh OK, what exactly do you need help with?

Lindiwe: I wanna surprise tumisani by going to her place, I need her address.

Me: oh unfortunately, I don't know where she lives but you can contact her sister or brothers, I'm sure they'll be able to help.

Lindiwe: oh OK

Zinhle came back to the lounge fully dressed now with her hand bag.

Single: I'll be on my way now (she smiles faintly, totally calm)

Me: oh uhm OK babe, I'll call you (I stood up and lightly pecked her lips)

Then she left.

Thando: Dada, Dada, chuchie, chuchie!!
(she said looking up at me)

Me: what's wrong princess?

Thando: chuchie, chuchie!!

She looks so cute with her hair in two pony tails, she's wearing a pink dress with sparkles and sandal.

Me: chuchie? what the heck is a chuchie?

Thando: chuchie, chuchie (sh said clapping her hands together)

Lindiwe: she wants cookies.

Me: oh cookies, come on princess, let's go get a " chuchie"

I carried her to the kitchen and opened the cookie jar and gave her one.

Thando: Thantii Dada (she smiled and bit into the cookie)

Me: pleasure princess (I kissed her forehead) have you guys had breakfast yet? (I asked Lindiwe who was now channelling through the channels on my TV)

Lindiwe: yeah we went to Mugg and Bean before we came here, when the bus landed.

Me: OK, I'm gonna go take a shower, make yourself comfortable (I placed Thando on the couch) princess Dada

will be right back, OK? (she kept chewing on the cookie with amusement, I kissed her head and smiled)

I went to my room, took a shower then got dressed into jeans with a plain black shirt with sneakers. I think I should take my little princess out for some ice cream. I really missed my baby, she's the only reason I smiled now a days.

.

.

Tumisani's POV

After having lunch with the family which I missed so much, I drove to Sipho's house. His house was not really far from

the Matthews mansion, it was only about a 20 min drive.

What I love about Sipho's house is that its really big yet open. Meaning, it has space for anything and everything. He has a huge garden in his back yard, including a swimming pool.

I got there and opened the gate with the remote he gave me, he gave me full access to his house because we trust each other. I parked my car next to his Ferrari and I stepped out.

I was wearing a blue high waist jeans which hugged my body and show cased my assets, with a pink vest and silver

sandals, I plait my hair into two plaits and I didn't have make up on because I looked gorgeous from top to bottom.

Me: I'm here!!! (I shouted as I walked into the house without bothering to knock)

Sipho: hey babe (he came running down the stairs wearing a track pants with a grey vest)

I admired his gorgeous muscles and how his six pack pops out of that vest, hmhhh...

Sipho: its rude to stare (he said taking my hand and walking me to the lounge where it was fully decorated)

There were balloons everywhere and a banner held up saying, " Welcome Back To Cape Town ". It was really beautiful since Siphos has a very large lounge.

Me: this is beautiful (I said walking up to the vase with red roses)

Siphos: do you like it?

Me: I love it, your sister is gonna be so happy, wow look at these curtains (it was a mixture of African elephant footprints and lots of African stuff with an arrow pointing from the London flag to Africa's mixture)

So basically what it was symbolizing is that you can go everywhere around the

world but you will always come back to your home.

Sipho: OK come on, let's go upstairs, I haven't told you why I needed your help.

He took my hand once again and led me upstairs to a full big room with everything needed in a girls room but it felt like it was missing something ..

Me: I feel like there is something missing here..

Sipho: A woman's touch.

I looked around the room and I knew exactly what to do. I removed the curtains and asked him for fresh silver curtains then removed the bed sheets

and replaced it with light pink sheets with plain creamy white pillows. I made sure I rearranged everything that needed to be rearrange, I made the room look girly yet matured. By the time I was done, it was already getting late.

I went downstairs and the place looked really nice, people came earlier on and fixed it up perfectly.

Me: I have to get going, its getting late.
(I said sitting down next to him on the couch)

Sipho: can't you stay just a little longer, please (he said pulling me into his arms)

Me: don't you ever get tired of me?

Sipho: never (he kissed my forehead)

Me: but I'll be here tomorrow.

Sipho: I miss you already.

Me: you're silly, I really gotta go, its already 17:30.

Sipho: OK, let me walk you out, I don't want you to drive at night.

He stood up and we walked to my car, he pressed me against the car and wrapped his arms around my waist than kissed me passionately.

Every time I kiss him it always comes as a surprise which makes the kiss even more sweeter...

Sipho: drive safely please

Me: I will (I smiled)

I got into my car and waved goodbye then drove home carefully, still thinking about last night. The way it felt being in his arms, the way his lips felt on my lips, the way he touches me, it really feels good...

I got home, took a shower then put on shorts with a large shirt. I went to the kitchen and started preparing dinner. There was a knock on the door and I quickly took off the apron and went to open...

Thando: Tantii, Tantii (she shouted

smiling from ear to ear)

Me: oh my gosh, my baby!!! (I quickly picked her up and kissed her all over her face)

Me: Chommie!! (I hugged her tightly and welcomed them inside)

Lindiwe: yoooh chommie, this house is so beautiful.

Me: thank you, but this is a big surprise, when did you guys get here?? (I said as I led them to the lounge carrying Thando in my arms)

Lindiwe: oh wait, Surprise!!! (she shouted opening her arms out)

Me: lol, am really surprised, hello baby,

did you miss Aunty, did you (I said tickling her)

Thando: Tantii, tantii (she said laughing)

Lindiwe: I came to spend the holidays, Varsity is closed and plus baby daddy wanted to see his princess.

Me: wow that's nice, make yourself comfortable, I'm just glad that I have at least someone here with me.

Lindiwe: you mean you live here all alone?

Me: yep, all alone.

Lindiwe: Father Lord, this is heaven.
(she said looking around)

Me: I'm making dinner, let me go check on the pots.

I went to the kitchen and finished cooking then dished up for all of us and we ate together.

After dinner I showed them their room and I decided to go to my room after we've finished catching up and rest because I was really exhausted but someone decided to disturb me before I even closed my eyes...

Me: Siphos....(I whined into the phone)

Siphos: I can't sleep tumisani, I can't seem to get you outta my mind (I smiled like an idiot)

Me: but I'm exhausted I want to sleep.

Sipho: but I can't sleep.

Me: what am I supposed to do? sing you a lullaby or something? You not being able to sleep is none of my business...

Sipho: like hell it is, you're the cause of it.

Me: mxm, babe please I wanna sleep.

Sipho: mxm, OK fine, goodnight.

Me: Goodnight (I smiled)

He hanged up and I smiled to myself while thinking about him then I fell asleep with a smile on my face.

I woke up the next day to someone's tiny fingers holding my face..

Thando: Tantii wakey, Tanti (she says smiling, that cute smile made my day)

Me: Good morning beautiful (I sat up and kissed her cute chubby cheeks)

Thando: Tanti, Tanti

Me: wait for Tanti to brush her teeth, then we'll go downstairs and have breakfast.

I went to the bathroom and brushed my teeth then washed my face. I went back to where Thando was patiently sitting on the bed...

Me: Thando come, let's pray first.

Its Sunday today and I made sure that I prayed every Sunday just to Thank God

for the week he has blessed me with.

After praying I carried Thando and we went down to the lounge and it smelt delicious.

Lindiwe: Good morning my beauty's (she said kissing both mine and Thando's cheeks)

Me: morning babe

Lindiwe: breakfast is ready

Me: Thanks chomma

We went to the dining table and started having breakfast.

Lindiwe: chomma what are your plans for the day?

Me: oh I forgot to tell you, Sipho has invited me to his sisters welcome back party.

Lindiwe: oh OK, but chomma you've been spending so much time with that dude, do you have feelings for him?

Me: no chomma, we're just really good friends, that's all.

Lindiwe: hmmm look at you, you're blushing.

Me: (I smiled) you're silly.

Thando: mama, mama

Lindiwe: yes my love (she said giving Thando her full attention)

Thando: Bubu, Bubu (she said pointing to the bread on the table)

Lindiwe: do you want some bread (she nodded) OK here you go.

After breakfast I took a shower then put on a white body hugging knee length dress that had red roses all over it, it had open shoulders and it hugged my figure perfectly. I tied up my braids into a neat pony tail then put on white sandals. I looked in the mirror and I looked gorgeous.

I went back downstairs and Lindiwe and Thando were fully dressed, I wonder where they are going....

Lindiwe: Lord have mercy, chomma you look beautiful (she gasped in shock)

Me: thanks babe, you look beautiful too, and you look very cute (I said kissing Thando's cheek)

Thando: Tantii look pwetty (she smiled clapping her hands together while giggling)

Me: Thank you princess (I smiled)

Lindiwe: your figure is on point, damn those curves can turn a gay man, straight. (she giggled)

Me: oh please, look at that gorgeous ass of yours (we laughed) where are you two off to?

Thando: Dada, Dada.

Lindiwe: oh baby daddy wants to take us shopping, but we'll be back early since he said he has to attend something tonight, and you, where are you off to looking so hot?

Me: oh, I'm just going to hang out with a friend then go to the welcoming party.

Lindiwe: oh OK, have fun, I've gotta go.

Me: OK, take care (I kissed both their cheeks and they left)

After a while I also left and went to Mia's house and we hanged out till it was time for me to go to Sipho's place. He didn't even call me today but I guess he's busy

with the party arrangements and stuff.

The time was 18:30 when I parked into his parking lot which was packed with all sorts of cars but the one that caught my attention was the red car that looked very familiar...

I got to the door and knocked since it was locked, some guy came to open and the place was packed. I thought he said there were only about 15 people coming.

Guy: hey, you must be Tumisani, remember me? (he looked really familiar but I didn't remember)

Me: Hi, uhm you look very familiar.

Guy: that's because Sipho never got

time to introduce us, I'm Lwazi, the guy from the mission, two years ago. (I smiled, I remembered him)

Me: we meet again.

Lwazi: you're still so beautiful (I smiled and we shook hands)

Lwazi: Siphso has gone to fetch our special guest, they'll be here shortly, he told me to take care of his queen (he said as he poured a glass of juice for me, we were in the kitchen)

Me: oh thank you but I can take care of myself.

Lwazi: I insist, let me introduce you to our guests.

He introduced me to a few people and after about 30 mins, we had to switch off all the lights because our special guests just arrived. They switched off the lights and everyone hid behind something or somewhere and when the door opened and the lights flicked back on, we all went...

Everyone: SURPRISE!!! WELCOME BACK TO AFRICA!!!!

Lady: oh my gosh, guys!!!

Sipho's sister was really beautiful, I don't think I've met someone as beautiful as her. She had a fucking gorgeous body, big breast, big booty, curves in all the

right places. Lord have mercy!! Is this not some kind of angel...

Sipho: welcome back home sis, I missed you (he gave her a hug and she smiled brightly)

Lady: I'm happy to be home bro, thank you everyone for this beautiful surprise, I really appreciate it (she said smiling) now please enjoy yourself, get the party started!!! (The music started pumping and everyone was just having a good time)

I was standing all by myself sipping on my orange juice when Sipho and his sister approached me.

Sipho: hey babe (he said hugging me)

Me: Hi (I smiled)

Sipho: sis this is the beautiful girl I told you about, her name is Tumisani, babe meet my sister, Buhle. (he introduced)

Buhle: damn you're so beautiful, nice to meet you (she said hugging me)

Me: nice to meet you too (I smiling shyly)

Then all of a sudden a girl round the same age as me barged into the house and all three of us turned our attention to her direction...

Girl: Buhle!!!! (she screamed running towards us)

Buhle: Zeee!!! (they ran into each other's arms and hugged tightly)

Zee: Girl you look beautiful, look at you all yummy and sexy.

Buhle: nah look at you, all grown up (they hugged again squealing)

Zee: where's Michael?

Buhle: I didn't bring him with me but maybe next time.

Zee: ncooh I really wanted to meet the man that took my sisters/ best friends heart.

Buhle: hey, just keep in mind that I'm still older than you.

Zee: yes sister, I want you to meet someone.

Buhle: oh really, is it a he or a she?

Zee: its a he (she blushed shyly) let me go get him, I'll be right back don't move, oh Hi Siphoh (wow, this girl is incredible, he has been standing her for so long and she only decides to greet him now and she does that with so much sarcasm in her voice)

Siphoh: hey Zinhle (he smiled)

She went outside.

Buhle: so tumisani how old are you?

Me: I'm 20 (I said politely)

Buhle: oh you're really beautiful (she complimented)

Me: thank you. I must say you look like a Goddess, so beautiful.

Buhle: oh thank you (she giggled a little)

The girl from earlier on, her name is Zinhle I believe, came back inside holding someone's hand.

I couldn't believe my eyes when I saw whose hand she was holding. My legs got wobbly and my fingers got shaky. My heart was banging against my chest. I rubbed my eyes a few times but I kept seeing the same person.

Zee: Buhle, meet my boyfriend Luyanda

(she said smiling like a bloody retard)

The expression on Luyanda's face was both shock and pain. I felt my legs getting weak and my head getting dizzy. Siphos looked at me and held my hand tightly...

Buhle: its a pleasure to meet you, Luyanda.

Yanda: Likewise, ma'am. (he said shaking her hand but his full attention was on both me and Siphos)

Siphos: are you OK? (he asked looking at me with concern)

My chest was tight, my legs and whole body was shaking. I tried to keep my

composure but my legs failed me, my eyes rolled to the back...

Yanda: Tumisani!!

Sipho: Tumisani!!

Then it all went Blank.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

OK now I want real comments.

I really appreciate all the " Thank you's" I got on the previous Insert. Thank you all for liking and commenting.

Plz feel free to share your pages. (I would personally love to go read them, I

love reading) .

What do you think is happening??

what do you think will happen next??

Admin

[06/18, 07:31] Snr: INSERT 48

- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV

I slowly open my eyes and i recognize my surroundings, I know this room so well because I've been here more than 10 times. All four of them are staring at

me as if I was gonna die, Buhle was now wearing a doctors coat.

Buhle: give her some water (Sipho passed me a glass of water which was on the dressing table)

I gulped down the water and sat up straight...

Buhle: are you alright sweety?

Me: I'm fine, I'm really sorry for ruining your welcoming party, I'm so sorry.

Buhle: its OK, all that matters is that you're fine now but you have to stop stressing, you fainted because you were under a lot of stress, you need to take care of yourself and learn to relax.

Me: Thank you, I will (I smiled)

Sipho: the guests have just left so...

Me: what!? they didn't have to leave all because of me, I'm really sorry.

Buhle: no its OK, it was getting late anyways, I'm gonna go rest, I'm really exhausted (she stood up and looked at me smiling)

Me: thank you so much for your help.

Buhle: no, I have to Thank you, i saw how beautiful my room looks, Sipho told me that its all your doings, I really appreciate it, thank you.

Me: oh its a pleasure.

Buhle: OK, Goodnight everyone. (she hugged all of us and left the room)

It was only Siphos, Luyanda, Single and myself remaining in the room. We all looked at each other and no one dared to say a word until...

Zinhle: OK, what is going on here? (she said clearing the air)

Luyanda stood with his hands in his pockets and his eyes were fixed on me. I tried to look anywhere else but him.

Siphos sat next to me on the bed, he looked tense and pissed at the same time...

Zinhle: do you all know each other? (she

asked looking at Yanda then me) Yanda
answer me!!

Yanda: uhm (he cleared his throat) uh
uhm babe.

Sipho: yes we do know each other and
we'd rather not talk about it at a time like
this.

Zinhle: no, I wanna know everything
now!! (she demanded with audacity)

Me: uhm (I cleared my throat) excuse
me, as much as I would like to do this, I
also have work tomorrow, so please if
you would excuse me...(I said standing
up)

Zinhle: no!!! (she said blocking the door)

no one is going anywhere, I want to know and I want to know it all right now, the way you people look at each other is so suspicious, so start talking.

Me: gosh (I sighed) Siphon please tell your friend, sister or whatever to move so I can get out of here (I said now getting pissed)

Siphon: babe please relax.

Luyanda: what!!? Babe!? who the hell are you calling babe!?

Zinhle: why do you care? what is going on here!!?

Siphon: OK enough!! we've got to sort this out here and now, no one is going

anywhere, we're gonna sort out our differences and say whatever we feel inside.

Zinhle: and that starts by telling me how you guys know each other.

Me: OK (I sat down pissed) since you desperately wanna know then let's begin, I'll start. Do you see this man over here (I pointed at Luyanda) the man you call your boyfriend is my first lover. He is the man I gave my heart to, I gave him my heart and he smashed it onto the ground like some kind of piece of shit, he cheated on me multiple times and even wanted to rape me, he wanted to damage me and take away the one thing

I can call mine. My Virginity. I broke up with his lame ass two years ago. Oh and this man over here (I pointed at Siphos) is the man that killed my brother with the help of my own mother, just because of his love for me, he did all within his power to make me his. I ended up doing things that I never thought I would ever do just to put my life back on a straight line. If it weren't for these two bastards then maybe my past would've been a little bit different. But you know what? Its all in the past now, I've moved on, I've forgiven them and I'm still trying to forget about my terrible past. (I sighed) now, Zinhle, is there anything else you

wanna know? (I said looking at all of them with a sarcastic smile on my face)

I'm not about to just break down in front of these people. I've forgiven my past and I want to move on.

Luyanda: Tumisani I'm...

Me: save it Yanda (I held up my hand to stop him, I didn't want to hear anything that came out of his mouth)

Luyanda: Tumsa just let me at least apologize..

Me: you could've done that two years ago, its too late now (I said standing up)

Zinhle: uhm can I just ask a question?
(we all looked at her)

Zinhle: Yanda do you still love Tumisani?
(she said with tears rolling down her cheeks)

I felt sorry for her.

Yanda: babe, uh no, look at me (he said cupping her cheeks) its all in the past now, I'm with you now. (he said looking deep into my eyes)

If I said I was hurt, it would be an understatement. The feeling I feel right now is unexplainable.

Zinhle: promise?

Yanda: I, uhm, I promise (he hesitated)

Me: I'll be on my way now (I turned around and looked at Sipho then

stormed out of the room)

I rushed down the stairs and out of the door.

Sipho: Tumisani wait!!! (he said as I got to my car)

I turned around and he pulled me into his arms, embracing me with his warm body. I wanted to cry but I guess my eyes were dry because not even a single tear left my eyes.

Sipho: Tumisani please don't hurt yourself like this, please.

Me: I'm fine Sipho.

Sipho: you're not fine, please don't go, its late.

Me: no, I wanna go home, I'll be fine.

I hugged him then got into my car and drove off. I really thought Yanda would still want me, I thought he still loved me. I'm so shocked right now but what did I expect? This was bound to happen anyway. I don't know why I find it so hard to just move on. I really want to forget about him.

.

Luyanda's POV

Seeing Tumisani with another man broke my heart, and what makes it worse is that the man is none other than Siphoh.

It broke my heart when he held her hand and I couldn't do anything about it.

When I saw her beautiful face, her gorgeous body, it warmed my heart. I really wish I made the right decisions in the past. I hate the fact that she's now closer to that bastard, the way he looks at her makes me sick. I can't bare to see her with another man. I really miss her.

I had to lie to Zinhle when she asked that question because I really didn't want to hurt her, I didn't want her to feel as though I've been playing her. She's a really nice girl and I know I hurt Tumisani in the past but maybe I should do right by not hurting someone else.

Me: Good morning (I said as I watched her as she woke up)

It was a Monday and there was no school because Varsity closed for the holidays.

Zinhle: morning babe (she smiled and kissed me passionately)

We lie in bed in each others arms, it feels wrong because my heart is elsewhere.

Me: baby

Zinhle: my love.

Me: how do you know Siphho?

Zinhle: Buhle and I share the same

mother but different fathers, Siphon and Buhle share the same father but different mothers. But Buhle used to hate her father because he was a drunk and very abusive, he raped her and used to make her and Siphon sell drugs but when she refused he would beat her up and Siphon as well, one day she had enough and ran away from home with her father's black card. He searched for her everywhere but never found her because she had moved to London. He found out and took his frustrations out on Siphon and his mother, he ended up killing her and abusing Siphon. Siphon became depressed and some how

thought that it was right for him to also take his anger out on me so he also started hitting me too, but we were young back then. But whenever I look at him, I still feel like he's the same.

Me: oh I'm really sorry babe (I said kissing her forehead)

Zinhle: its OK, tell me what happened between you and tumisani that made you want to rape her?

Me: (sigh) I loved Tumisani with all my heart and I never saw anyone that would ever be able to replace her in my heart. I cheated on her one day and bumped into her at the hotel I was at and she

broke up with me but I couldn't accept it and I ended up almost raping her, that was the worst day of my life.

Zinhle: Yanda please promise me that you won't ever hurt me. (she said looking into my eyes)

Me: I'm not perfect Zee, but I'll try my best not to hurt you or do anything that'll hurt you. (I kissed her cheek and she smiled)

I really like Zinhle and it would break my heart if I hurt her.

I wish I could fix things with Tumisani but that would only make things worse. She looks happy being with Sipho and it

really hurts. Losing her was painful and heartbreaking but losing her to Sipho is another thing.

.

Tumisani's POV

I woke up late for work so I decided to call Vuyo and told her to cancel all my meetings for the day and I told her that I wasn't coming in today. After calling Vuyo I took a shower and put on some jeans with a crop top and flip flops. I went downstairs and I was all alone because Lindiwe and Thando went out to do their hair. Lindiwe really loves her daughter, they are really cute together.

I plumped onto the couch and dug into my cereal as the images of last night played in my head. If only life was more easier for me...

Sipho: Tumisani, look what you're doing?!!!!

Sipho's voice brought me back to reality as I was too deep in my thoughts to notice that I had poured almost half of the cereal onto my crop top...

Me: shit!!! (I stood up and immediately took my crop top off because the milk was running all over my breast)

Sipho: you sure know how to think deeply (he chuckled staring at my

exposed breast)

Me: hello to you too (I smiled) I'll be right back.

I went back upstairs and changed into a different crop top then I walked back downstairs where I find Siphos channelling through my TV channels.

Siphos: why didn't you go to work today?

Me: how did you know I was at home?

Siphos: I wanted to surprise you this morning but the receptionist told me you didn't come to the office.

Me: oh OK (I said sitting down next to him)

Sipho: I'm sorry about last night.

Me: its OK (I smiled) its not your fault.

Sipho: babe can I ask you something?

Me: sure

Sipho: are you still in love with Luyanda?

That question was the last question I ever wanted to hear. I don't wanna think about Yanda right now, I looked into his eyes an the love in his eyes makes me guilty.

Me: no, I don't love him anymore. (I said with a heavy heart)

I don't wanna hurt him. He's been there for me and I can't hurt him. He smiled

faintly and I know he doesn't believe me. I sat on his lap and looked into his eyes with my hands around his neck.

Me: I wanna move on.

I press my lips onto his and kissed him. He kisses back passionately and I deepen the kiss. He puts his hands on my ass and smile between the kiss.

He puts his one hand in my crop top and he reaches for my breast which he squeezes and then unclip my bra, he pulls my crop top off and throws it including my bra to the floor, I removed his shirt and we continue kissing as our hands roam around each others body's.

I suck on his lips as he squeezes my ass, I pull his hair as the kiss gets heated, he breaks the kiss and suck onto my twins and I moan out loud in pleasure...

Lindiwe: Mary Mother of Jesus!!!

Me: aaaah!! (I scream and grab Sipho's shirt to cover myself)

Lindiwe: seriously guys, please get a room.

Me: fuck, don't freak me out like that (I said putting on Sipho's shirt)

Lindiwe: chomma damn, what if I walked in here with Thando and I saw all that...

Me: sorry, I totally forgot that I don't live alone anymore.

Lindiwe: hmmm sure, hey Siphos.

Siphos: Hi Lindiwe (he smiled, totally embarrassed)

Me: uhm where is Thando? (I said following her to the kitchen)

Lindiwe: baby daddy picked her up after we did our hair.

Me: oh, your hair looks really great babe. (she had her hair braided in twists and it was really lovely and long)

Lindiwe: Thanks babe, I heard what happened last night.

Me: aaagh I don't wanna talk about that.

Lindiwe: sure, so is this what you too do

when you're alone?

Me: Lindiwe!!! (I blushed) stop it.

lindiwe: hmm I'm sure he's really good in bed, aah.

Me: you're crazy, we haven't gotten there yet.

Lindiwe: what!!? you're kidding right?

Gosh Tumisani you're missing out, but as for me, I love the dick.

Me: you're are crazy and I'm not.

Lindiwe: you'll become crazy when you've had a taste of the pussy, damn you guys looked so cute together (she laughed as she drank the juice she just poured for herself)

Me: what!!!? you saw everything?

Lindiwe: everything (she giggled)

Me: fuck!!! eeeww (I said in a disgusted tone)

Lindiwe: I'm kidding baby (I sighed in relief) but don't starve him for too long, I'm sure he's really hungry. (she winked and left me there confused)

I poured a glass of juice for Sipho and walked back to the lounge, I gave him the glass and realize he was still shirtless...

Sipho: you look very sexy in my shirt (he smiled)

Me: I know right (I giggled)

I quickly took off his shirt and gave it to him then put on my bra and crop top again.

Me: don't worry about Lindiwe, she didn't see anything

Sipho: (he sighed deeply) Thank God, that was really weird.

Me: really weird? yet you liked it.

Sipho: no, I love every bit of your body

Me: really?? (I said teasing him)

Sipho: really

He grabbed my waist and brought me closer to him and we cuddled.

He makes me smile and that's all that

matters. I'm done crying, its time I smile more and forget about everything. But do you know what's funny? I say that now but when I see Yanda again, it all changes. That's the kinda effect he has on me.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

Do you think Tumisani and Yanda will be able to stay away from each other for that long?

Admin

[06/18, 07:31] Snr: INSERT 49

- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV

A week later I was called to come to PE because there was a function at the hotel and they needed my presence. I arrived there two days before the function so that I could take a good look at the hotel and explore the city a bit.

It was a bright Wednesday morning, I decided to take a jog around the block since I was staying at the hotel and it gets too busy and crowded at times but

I was lucky because Vuyo decided to come with me.

Sipho didn't like the idea of me coming to PE for a few days but too bad, he'll be strong. It doesn't mean that because I'm the boss I could do anything I want to, nope, it doesn't work that way.

I woke up put on a pair of black tights with a sports bra and some running shoes then tie up my braids and left the hotel. I started jogging and the fresh air made me feel alive. The wind hit my face in a way that gave me energy. I jogged around the quite area a bit far from the hotel, I didn't realize I was that far until I tripped on my shoe laces and

fell hard on my knees...

Me: aaaah!! (I screamed in pain)

I hurt my ankle and my knees were burning in pain since I was running on tar...

Voice: are you OK? (I quickly spun around still seated on the hard ground)

My eyes met with the eyes of a very hot or should I say super sexy dark chocolate young man. His eyes were so beautiful and those pink lips looked so yummy. He was very fit. He was wearing running shorts, a black vest with running shoes. His hair is neatly cut and he looks round about in his early 20's. I got

lost in his eyes for a while and I totally forgot that I was in pain...

Guy: hello!!! (he waved his hand in my face and brought me back to my senses)

Me: oh uhm yeah I, I'm uh fine (I rubbed my knees and tried to stand up again but my ankle was in pain and I ended up falling again but he caught me just before I fell)

Guy: careful (he said holding me hard against his strong body)

Me: uh uhm Thank you (I let go of his arms and try to stand up straight but the pain is unbearable)

Guy: I don't think you'll be able to walk,

you've twisted your ankle...

Me: I'll be fine, Thank you.

Guy: I insist, let me take you home.

Me: no I don't actually stay around here, and plus we're total strangers and I can't just trust anyone I meet on the side of the road.

Guy: oh sorry, where are my manners, my name is Ndumiso, and you are?

Me: I'm Tumisani.

Ndumiso: nice to meet you, now can I please take you home, you need to take care of your twisted ankle.

Me: I'll be fine, don't worry and plus, you

don't have a car here to take me home, how are you gonna take me home? (I said dusting myself making sure that I don't press too hard on my ankle, it was painful)

Ndumiso: I really don't mind carrying you, I'm sure you're not that heavy.

Me: (I chuckled) uh, no Thanks.

Ndumiso: damn are you always this stubborn? woman for crying out loud you're in pain, let me help you (he clicked)

I looked at him and he looked really serious. I figured he wasn't gonna give up and plus I wouldn't be able to walk all

the way to the hotel with this twisted ankle...

Me: OK fine.

He didn't look like he would harm me, he looked like a gentleman but I still didn't trust him. I mean its not everyday that you wake up and go jogging then you fall and a handsome dude comes to your rescue..

Ndumiso: where to? (he said after I got on his back and he carried me)

Me: uhm Matthews Hotel, please.

He carried me and we walked all the way to the Matthews hotel with me on his back. It was really weird but we kinda

spoke and got to know each other. We got to the hotel and we were met by Vuyo at the entrance...

Vuyo: Tumisani?? Ndumiso? (what!!?? they know each other?)

Ndumiso: Oh hey sis (what!!)

He put me down and I looked at the both of them confused.

Vuyo: Tumisani are you OK?

Me: uh yeah, I mean no, I was jogging then fell and twisted my ankle but I think I'll be fine.

Vuyo: oh I hope so, and how did you two meet?

Ndumiso: I was jogging and I heard her screaming then I went to help her..

Vuyo: oh OK, Tumisani this is my brother Ndumiso, bro this is Mr Matthew's daughter.

Ndumiso: oh so you're the famous Tumisani I've been hearing about, wow

Me: I hope its good things you've been hearing.

Ndumiso: oh don't worry, its very good things.

Me: OK (I smiled) Vuyo are you going somewhere?

Vuyo: I was actually going to the restaurant that we ordered employees

from to check if they've they are all ready for the function.

Me: oh I wish I could come with you but my ankle...

Vuyo: its OK, you go rest, I've got this, Bro please take her to her room, I catch up with you two later (she smiled at him weirdly)

Ndumiso: sure

Vuyo: I'll see you guys later (she hugged us and left with a bright smile on her face, which was really weird)

Ndumiso: shall we get going? (he asked and I nodded in response)

He helped me walk to the elevator then

up we went to my room. Though it was really awkward but my focus was on my twisted ankle and how it'll be able to heal in just two days because the function was on Friday and very important guests will be attending.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

What do you think of our new character so far.....ZINHLE AND NDUMISO???

This is just a little something to apologize for disappearing.

Admin

[06/18, 07:31] Snr: INSERT 50

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV

It was finally Friday, the day of the function. My leg was healed and I am now perfectly fine. I really enjoyed being at the hotel and taking care of things here. I've become really good friends with Ndumiso and he's really fun to hang out with. He's shown me around PE and

I learnt a lot about him, like his personality, his likes and dislikes, where he stays and stuff like that. I've also learnt that he's a very calm guy and a great gentleman.

I woke up did my hygiene process and after taking a shower I put on a white soft puffy gown with slippers then sat on the bed till I heard my phone ringing...

< call convo >

Me: hello?

Sipho: babe, how are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Sipho: I miss you Tumisani (he sounded down)

Me: ncooh I miss you too babe (I smiled)

Sipho: I can't wait for you to come back,
when are you coming back?

Me: I'll be there Sunday evening.

Sipho: I can't wait for Sunday already.

Me: me too, how's Buhle? I hope she's
enjoying Cape Town?

Sipho: she's loving it here, she loves
going to the mall and the beach
especially.

Me: wow that's lovely.

(there was a knock at the door, I wonder
who that might be...)

Me: uhm babe, there's a knock at the

door, I'll call you later (I said standing up and walking towards the door)

Sipho: OK my love, take care of yourself.

Me: will do, bye!!

Sipho: bye. (I hanged up)

< end of convo >

I opened the door and to my surprise, it was Ndumiso standing there with a bouquet of flowers in his right hand with a gift bag on the other hand.

Me: I think you're at the wrong room sir.
(I smiled naughtily)

Ndumiso: nope, I'm certain this is Tumisani Phakade's room, are you

gonna let me in or stand here and smile at my handsome face all day...

Me: oh (I laughed) sorry, please come in (I moved out of the way and let him in)

Ndumiso: so I figured you have a function tonight and I'm one of the special guests, I thought how about I buy the lady of honour a gift.

Me: wow you're so thoughtful (I said taking the gift bag from him and opened it)

I opened it and took out a beautiful black sparkly dress. It was really beautiful and very shiny, I explored the bag more and there was a pair of black

heels inside with silver earrings and a black choker..

Me: you're kidding right? (I said looking at him surprised and he just smiled at me)

Ndumiso: I'm very serious.

Me: dude, how did you know my size?

Ndumiso: I have my ways.

Me: nope I'm not accepting this, it's too much for someone you've only know for what? not even a week.

Ndumiso: no please don't be like that, I would really like for you to wear this tonight.

Me: nah I'm sorry but I can't, with all due respect. I really can't accept this, look at this, it's too expensive.

Ndumiso: please don't reject my gift. Take it as a friend buying something for his friend, please I'm begging you. (he pleaded)

Me: are you sure? just friends?

Ndumiso: yes, just friends.

I looked at him for a moment and he looked innocent, I really don't want to seem rude by rejecting his gift but it just doesn't seem normal.

Me: OK fine. Thank you (I smiled then took the things and neatly sat it on the

bed)

Ndumiso: pleasure, so have you had breakfast yet?

Me: nah not yet, I was actually going to order in.

Ndumiso: how about we go out for breakfast, I'll pay.

Me: no thanks, you've done way too much as a friend, I'll just order in.

Ndumiso: no I insist, get dressed, I'm taking you out (he said stubbornly)

Me: you're not taking no for an answer are you? (I said defeated)

Ndumiso: nope (I chuckled)

I walked to the closet and pull out a pair of jeans with a black top. I went to the bathroom and got dressed then come back out and put on some flip flops then take my purse.

Me: let's get going.

We walked to the door and I locked it after we stepped out of the room.

We got to some fancy restaurant and it was really busy. We walked inside then sat down at a seat close to the window because it was really hot, or maybe I was the only one feeling the heat. After we ordered our food, we conversed in a very light conversation...

Ndumiso: don't turn around or freak out but there's someone who's been following us and he is looking right at us right now. (he said keeping his eyes on the menu without looking up or at me, I got scared.)

Me: what!!? (I heaved)

Ndumiso: don't panic, the waiter is coming with the food now, as she arrives you can turn a bit and take a look.

Me: uh uhm OK. (I said trying to keep calm)

The waiter came with our food and as she was busy putting it down on our table, I turned around a bit and look

behind me. I saw a man wearing all black and his gaze was straight at us. Maybe it's one of Siphos people but why are they following me?

I took my phone out of my purse and dialed his number...

< call convo >

Sipho: baby..(he said calmly)

Me: don't " baby" me, why are your people following me?

Sipho: what! what people?

Me: don't play dumb with me Sipho, why is there a guy dressed in full black staring right at me and I believe he has been following me.

Sipho: how do you know that he was following you?

Me: Sipho please just tell them to get away from me.

Sipho: babe I'm serious, I don't know them, I didn't send anyone to follow you.

Me: are you sure? (I said worried)

Sipho: I promise you, you're not safe at the moment, don't move please, I'm gonna get someone to protect you, please just don't move.

Me: uh uhm OK.

Sipho: don't panic Tumisani, stay calm.

Me: I'm trying.

Sipho: who are you with? (I looked up at Ndumiso and he looked confused, I swallowed hard)

Me: uhm does that really matter right now?

Sipho: who are you with Tumisani? don't answer me with a question (he said getting pissed)

Me: a friend (I heaved)

Sipho: its a guy right? (he said disappointed)

Me: Sipho not right now please, I'm in danger and I don't need this right now.

Sipho: there are two men dressed in dark blue standing outside a BMW, get

in the car with them. (he said then
hanged up)

< end of convo >

Gosh this is so fucked up. So I shouldn't
have male friends because my so called
lover doesn't approve of it.

Me: I'll explain some other time, we've
gotta go now.

I stood up and put some cash on the
table then we walked out without
making eye contact with the man that
was staring at us. I spotted the men
dressed in dark blue and we walked
towards them. Ndumiso looked
confused and tensed up yet calm.

Me: what is going on Lwazi? (I asked the guy I recognized as Sipho's friend)

Lwazi: I'll explain later, let's just get going.

Ndumiso: my car? (we both looked at Lwazi waiting for the answer)

Lwazi: Trigger please follow up, give him the keys.

Ndumiso gave Trigger the keys and we all three got into the BMW and he drove off. We drove back to the hotel and he parked the car.

Me: I'll call you. (I said as we left him (Ndumiso) at the parking lot and Lwazi and Trigger both followed me to my

hotel room)

We got to the elevator and pressed the button to my room floor. As the elevator opened we walked to my room, I inserted the key but to my surprise, the room wasn't locked. Strange, I made sure I locked it before I left. I opened the door and my eyes met with Sipho's eyes. He looked pissed as hell. Fuck.

Sipho: I knew this was a bad idea. (he said as I closed the door)

Me: how did you get here?? (he sat down and looked down) wait, don't tell me you followed me here.

Sipho: which was a good thing because I

knew something like this was gonna happen, who is he??

Me: don't piss me off Sipho, that has nothing to do with you, I want to know who the hell is after me?? (I said pissed)

Sipho: who is he?? (he repeated)

Gosh, I don't need this right now. I really don't know why life is being so fucking hard on me. This can't be happening right now, I don't have enough energy to fight these demons anymore. After one problem closes down, another one opens up. Am I cursed or something....

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

Who do you think is after Tumisani now??

Could it be that Monster wants revenge because Tumisani has split his family apart??

Could it be that Lindokuhle's " Friends" want revenge for the murder of their beloved Queen Lindo??

What could it be now??

Admin

[06/18, 07:31] Snr: CONTINUATION

.

- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV

Me: Good evening ladies and Gentleman,
Welcome to the Matthews Hotel...

The night was finally here. The hotel was fully packed with all kinds of people. They all looked stinking rich and had very strong rich colognes. I was busy throughout the whole night, meeting all kinds of businessmen and very important people. Vuyo made sure that she kept me on my feet throughout the whole night. I am the boss after all so I

had to make sure my guests were well taken care of. After the welcoming speech and the introductions, I checked the reception, security, the food as well as everything that needed checking...

I wore the dress that Ndumiso bought me and it fitted onto me perfectly, all I've only seen him once during the night.

Sipho was still upset with me but I didn't give a rats ass for his nonsense. He's being childish and insecure. And plus, I didn't officially make him my boyfriend so he had no right to be angry of who I see and who I went out with. Although the whole issue of someone being after me scared me but I really don't wanna

bother to stress myself. I'll get at the bottom of it all once I've gone back to Cape Town but for now, Siphos men are digging into it...

Vuyo: you look exhausted (she said as we stepped into the restroom away from the big hall where the function was taking place.)

Me: Gosh, I am.

Vuyo: we're not even half way through the night yet and plus there is one more very important guest who hasn't arrived yet, I have to introduce you to him.

Me: do I really have to meet him? (I said fixing my make up as I looked into the

big mirrors plastered on the wall)

Vuyo: yes, he's very important. He has been doing business with the Matthews family for quite a while now. (she said washing her hands and drying them)

Me: when is he coming? (I asked looking at the watch on my left hand. It was already 21:15)

Vuyo: he should be here in about 15 mins or so.

Me: OK, I'm gonna go get me something to eat, I'm starving, are you coming with me? (I asked walking to the door)

Vuyo: nah go ahead, I'll just finish up with the touch up of my make up then

go check the reception.

Me: OK, let me know when the guest arrives.

I walked out of the restroom and towards the big hall again. I got into the hall and went straight to where the delicious food was nicely set out on the beautiful white clothed tables. The band was playing and people were just enjoying them self's. After filling my plate with enough food I took a seat and dug into my food quietly, watching as the people moved to the music...

Sipho: Tumisani...(he said as he stood next to my table)

He looked really sexy in that suit. It was a black suit with a white shirt and a black tie. His muscles popped out of the suit and his cologne intoxicated my nostrils.

Me: hey (I said after swallowing the food that was in my mouth)

Sipho: there is something that I have to tell you and...

Vuyo: Tumisani..

Vuyo came out of nowhere and interrupted Sipho but that wasn't the thing that shocked me, what shocked me was the man standing next to her..

Vuyo: Tumisani this is Mr Mkisi (I slowly

stood up and everything felt like it was going in slow motion)

Sipho and I both looked deep into his eyes and he looked right back at us, yet calm.

Vuyo: Mr Mkisi from Mkisi Industries, Mr Mkisi please meet Tumisani Phakade the new owner of all three Matthews properties.(she introduced)

We all stared at each other with no one daring to say a word. My heart was thumping in my chest and my palms got sweaty..

Monster: It's good to finally meet you Miss Phakade. (he said stretching his

hand for me to shake with an evil smirk on his face)

Me: The pleasure is all mine. (I said shaking his hand without making eye contact with him)

Vuyo: Tumisani, Mr Mkisi is a very potential client of the Matthews family, he is the one that offers contracts to the Matthews companies and we always accept his contracts because of the good relation he has with the elders of the Matthews family.

Me: oh I see (I said faking a smile)

Vuyo: although this year he has something different in mind.

Me: oh is that so, how about we set a date for a meeting something around next week. (I said trying to keep it professional)

Monster: I'm sure my PA will be able to fit that into my schedule (he said with his eyes fixed on Sipho)

Me: great, Vuyo please schedule a date for a meeting for me and Mr Mkisi.

Vuyo: I will do just that, but I've really got to go attend to other guests now, so please excuse me.

Me: sure

Vuyo left us staring deep into each others souls, I wanted to just disappear

right on the spot. He changed from calm to evil and I didn't like what I was seeing.

Monster: like mother like daughter, you both have a way of betraying me with the help of my enemies. (he said coldly)

Me: God, I don't have time for this, Listen. Whatever you've come here to do, please do it and leave because I really don't want to deal with you right now.

Monster: you really think you're smart just because you've managed to kill Kuhle. Wow you're really pathetic, you even managed to split my family apart but do you know what? This is not yet over, its just the beginning.

Me: are you done? (I said sarcastically)
are you done making threats?

Monster: I don't make threats baby girl, I
make promises.

With that said, he turned around and left.

Me: Gosh (I sank into the chair and
buried my face into my hands)

Sipho sat down on the chair opposite
me and he looked tensed.

Me: what did you want to tell me? (I
said after taking a deep breath and
looking up at him)

Sipho: I wanted to inform you that
Monster was on his way but I guess I
was a little too late.

Me: did you find out who was after me?

Sipho: Rachel, Kuhle's friend. And now we've just discovered that the other enemy is Mr Mkisi.

Me: (sigh) what does Rachel want?

Sipho: revenge for the death of Kuhle. you're not safe anymore.

Me: can I leave the country for a while until all this cools down?

Sipho: running away from your problems isn't exactly solving it.

Me: I know but just for a while (I said defeated)

Sipho: you have three companies that

need your presence at all times, you can't afford to have a bad reputation (he said calmly)

I checked the clock and it was already really late, I was exhausted beyond explanation. I'm mixed with emotions and I just want to run away.

Me: babe can we not talk about the Ndumiso thing or about anything else. can you please just hold me. (I said in a very low voice, I'm tired of life)

Sipho: relax, come here. (he took me into his arms and held me tightly)

I kindly asked Vuyo to conclude the evening and Thank the guests for

coming. We went up to my room and I immediately fell asleep in Siphos arms. If only I could run away from all my problems, just for a day.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

Admin

[06/18, 07:31] Snr: INSERT 51

- .
- .
- .

Rachel's POV

Me: Baba not now please, just leave me

alone.

Papa: Rachel you better stop this nonsense of yours, Let Kuhle rest.

Me: not until they pay for her death.

I banged the door behind me and walked out of the house fuming.

The death of Kuhle made me angry. I mourned her for almost a whole year. I hated the fact that she died and it made me turn into a cold hearted person.

She was the love of my life and I couldn't believe that she was really gone. It left a deep hole in my heart and I would only have peace once I've gotten my revenge. I promise Kuhle that I would

do anything within my power to accomplish her goals for her. She was more than a sister to me and I would do anything for her.

I got to the warehouse and found the gents smoking.

Me: Gents

Them: ooh boss lady (they greeted)

Me: have they got the kid?

Ginger: yes bozza, stitch has her right now.

Me: perfect, I need you to book me a bus ticket to Cape Town.

Ginger: sure Bozza.

It's time the second Queen steps into the real game. I wouldn't mind replacing Queen Lindo on the seat of the Royals.

.

Luyanda's POV

Me: what do you mean she's not with you Lindiwe?? (i shout loudly into the phone)

I drove like a maniac on the N1 towards Cavendish Square. My mind was running wild and my heart was thumping hard into my chest.

Lindiwe: she, she was just here a minute ago and then when I turned around, she was not there anymore (she cried into

the phone)

Me: OK, OK, I'm here now, what shop are you in? (I said quickly parking the car)

Lindiwe: uhm uhm (she sniffed)

Foschini.

I stormed out of the car and ran into the mall, up the escalators and looked around for a store that had the name Foschini on it. After almost five minutes of strolling around, I finally found it and ran towards it like a maniac. I saw people surrounding around the security guards and the Manager standing next to a sobbing Lindiwe. I pushed into the crowd and my eyes landed on Lindiwe...

Lindiwe: Yanda!! (she sobbed and I hugged her tightly trying to be strong)

My heart was breaking slowly inside of me but I had to be strong.

Lindiwe: they took my baby Yanda, my baby!!! (she cried)

Me: did you check the camera's? (I asked the manager)

Manager: we checked the camera's but we didn't see the footage of the lady with the baby.

Me: how can that be possible when they were right here in this motherfucking shop!! (I said getting pissed)

Manager: sir but we checked the

footage and...

Me: fuck the footage, you!! (I pointed at the security guard) didn't you see this lady come in here with a baby, weren't you standing at the fucking door?? (I roared angrily)

Security Guard: I didn't see this lady come in and plus many customers come here daily and I don't take note of everyone single person that enters here.

Me: mxm just shut up, I'll make sure I sue this shop because it can't be possible that a child disappears in here without anyone noticing.

I clicked my tongue and took Lindiwe

with me as we left the mall. She continuously sobbed and I was just as helpless.

Me: Bino hello, dude my daughter has been kidnapped, I need you to find her. (I said as we got into the car with the phone on my ear)

Bino: what!!? that's crazy, who do you think is after you?

Me: I have no idea man, I really don't know, please just update me. I'm not in the right state of mind right now.

Bino: sure boyboy, keep strong.

I can't believe going back to my old days again but its for my daughter. I

would do anything for my baby.

Me: where is Tumisani's house? (I asked Lindiwe who was now really quite with an traumatized expression on her face)

She directed me and we got there, I parked the car and we both went inside. I can't leave her at a time like this. She needs me right now. I called Zinhle and informed her about the situation, she said she was on her way. I feel broken and sad. Could my enemies be after me?

.

Tumisani's POV

It was now 18:30. I just parked into my

drive way and I saw a familiar car parked in my parking lot. What on earth is he doing here??

I just landed in Cape Town And I missed my very own bed. I was really exhausted. Siphso decided to come with me all the way to my house though it wasn't necessary. I opened the door and walk in my house and I see a sobbing Lindiwe with a worried Zinhle and an exhausted Luyanda sitting in my lounge all deep in their thoughts except Lindiwe who is sobbing uncontrollably.

Me: what is going on here? (I said breaking the silence) babe why are you crying? (I said getting worried now, I sat

down next to her and looked at her)

Lindiwe: my baby!! (she sobbed) they took my baby.

Tears pricked the side of my eyes and my heart sank.

Me: what!! what do, what do you mean? (I said trying not to break down)

Lindiwe: they, they kidnapped my baby! tumi my baby, I want my baby back. (tears fell down my cheeks and I held her tightly in a strong embrace)

Why would someone be so cruel to the extent of kidnapping an innocent child. Why are people so cruel. What has an innocent child done to deserve this?

I cried helplessly with Lindiwe in my arms. How could I even begin to imagine how she is feeling right now.

She is broken, her only source of happiness is now gone. She went through a lot because of this baby. How do I even begin to imagine how a mother feels when they have lost their daughter.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

[06/18, 07:32] Snr: INSERT 52

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV

Me: hello!!?? (I said into the phone after gulping down the glass of water)

Voice: did you like your little surprise?
(it was the same deep voice that had called me at the hospital when Justin got into an accident)

I remember that voice very well. I looked at Siphon and Yanda who both had their eyes fixed on me. We were on the dining table forcing ourselves to eat because it was difficult to eat at a time like this.

I signaled Sipho to track the number and location then I put the phone on loudspeaker.

Me: who is this?? who are you?

Voice: I'm someone very special. Making Kuhle disappear was only making your life a living hell. This cute face right next to me is really beautiful, yet can't seem to shut up...(then we heard a baby's cry in the background)

Lindiwe: my baby!! (she gasped and started crying)

Tears fell down my cheeks but I quickly wiped them away.

Voice: oh I'm on loudspeaker, great.

Listen here little girl, you murdered my best friend, my sister and my lover. You took away my joy and now I want revenge. You will pay for what you've done and believe me when I say, this is only the beginning

Me: what do you want?? (I sniffed)

Voice: I want your dead body in the same place you put your mother but before I do that I will hurt you in the kind of way that you will even make my job easier by killing yourself. Now listen, I could easily sell this baby and make use of her by making her my object, if you want her her alive....(they laughed)

Me: continue.

Voice: change the name of all three Matthews properties into my name. I want all those papers to be signed out of your name and into my name within two days. I will give you the name once I've heard that the papers are ready to be signed. Understand!!??

No!! I can't do this. This is my families legacy. The Matthews family will disown me. No, this can't be happening...

Me: no!! (I cried)

Voice: then I'll just have to get rid of our little princess Thando.

Lindiwe: no, my baby!!! (she cried loudly)

Luyanda looked at me with pleading eyes. Tears fell from the corners of his eyes and onto his cheeks and my heart shattered into a million pieces.

Voice: will you do it, or not. The choice is yours.

I thought deeply. This is my rightful possession. This is my family's legacy. My father left this for me and me alone. I will be a disgrace to the Matthews family. My fathers Will specifically stated that anyone that misuses or sells these inheritance shall be punished. But this is a innocent child's life that is on the line. Not just anyone's child but my best friends child. This is like my own

child as well. I can't do this to this innocent child. I would never forgive myself...

Me: uhm OK, I will do it. I'll sign the papers into your name.

I broke down but tried to keep my composure. They all looked at me in shock. Zinhle also started crying while holding Lindiwe.

Voice: good girl. How I wish it was as this easy when Kuhle was still alive. I'll call you once I know that you've finalized the papers oh, and use these two days wisely little girl. This baby is really cute.

With that said, they hanged up. I buried

my face into the palms of my hands and cried. I can't take this, it's too much.

Lindiwe: you killed your mother?? (she sniffed)

I wiped my tears and looked up. How do I explain all this to these people. How do I tell them what I've been through.

Zinhle: is that why they kidnapped Thando??

Lindiwe: so its all your fault that they took my baby, my poor innocent baby (she cried) they are using my child as your weakness. You killed your mother now they want revenge and the best way to get closer to you is to hurt the people

you love. Its all your fault, if only you didn't kill your mother then this wouldn't have happened. How do you live with yourself knowing that you're a murderer. How can you kill the person that carried you for 9 whole months, couldn't you just appreciate the fact that she gave you life.

Yanda: Tumisani I warned you about this. I warned you not to mess with her but you didnt listen, your stubbornness got us into this mess. Now they've taken my daughter, do you see what you've done.

Me: I can explain...(I sobbed)

Yanda: explain what!!?? huh?! that you

wanted revenge for your brotbers death??
but look at what that fucking revenge
put my daughter into. Its all your fucking
fault, all your fault?!! (he said angrily)

He's expression changed from sad to
angry. Anger was written all over his
face.

Lindiwe: I want my baby. Tell these
people to bring back my baby, tumisani
please if you have a heart please just do
as they say. Give them what they want.
Please for the sake of my baby. (she
sobbed)

As if it's so easy to give it all away.

What my father has built all his life, they

want me to give it all away.

Sipho: I can't believe you call these people " friends " tumisani (he said defeated) like seriously. The person y'all are blaming, look at her, does she look like she is capable of hurting a fly. Don't you all ask your self what has turned her this way. Do you all know what she's been through. Yet you sit here with your filthy mouth and talk nonsense. Did you even ask her why she did what she did. you call yourselves friends yet you judge her as if she was someone you only met yesterday. Do you know the kind of sacrifice she is making by giving her rightful inheritance to some kind of

stranger??

Zinhle: whose fault is that?? she's the one that killed her mother.

Sipho: shut up Zinhle!! you don't know what you're saying.

Me: Sipho, leave it. (I said tired)

Sipho: no tumisani, this people are all so fake. This best friend of yours, you've been friends for so long yet she doesn't know the pain you've been through. I can't believe you are saying it's her fault yet all she's done is be a good friend to you.

Me: Sipho, stop please.

I don't want him to remind them about

any it. I won't explain myself to anyone. There's no use because they'll always see me as a murderer but that doesn't matter. I'll do all I can to get Thando back, even if it means signing off my properties. Maybe one day they'll find out the truth of why I did all I did.

I stood up. Went up to my room, took a shower then put on a black tracksuit with sleepers. I put some few clothes in a small bag with toiletries. After packing a few things, I went downstairs and they were all still seated there giving each other evil looks.

Me: I'll be back with Thando. Siphos let's go.

I took my phone and car keys then we walked out, got into my car and drove off.

We got to Sipho's house and I went straight to his room, he followed. I lie on the bed and he pulled me into his arms from behind.

Me: I'm signing those papers tomorrow.

Tears rolled down my cheeks. Maybe I should just give them what they want. I mean, they've always wanted it so, I don't see any reason to fight. I'm done fighting. If the Matthews family decide to disown me than so be it.

Sipho: baby let me find her and we'll deal

with her.

Me: no, I'm tired of spilling blood. One body was enough.

Sipho: so you'll sacrifice everything for the sake of friendship.

Me: that child is innocent.

Sipho: your friend is selfish. This is your legacy you're throwing away. Your family might disown you.

Me: I don't have a choice.

Sipho: let's kill her.

Me: no, I'm already a murderer. I don't want to be part of such a life. I want to have a good life for the sake of my

future and my children. (I sniffed)

Sipho: (sigh) I love you, I'm here for you.

Me: Thank you.

I closed my eyes And fell asleep.

These companies are all just worldly possessions. I won't go with these companies to my grave. I'll give them what they want. I know they'll rejoice over it, my mother's probably dancing happily in hell. After all this was what she always dreamt of.

.

.

.

.

TWO DAYS LATER

Them: what!!!!???

They all looked at me with shock written all over them.

The whole Matthews family was present. As well as Vuyo. I've told them that I've decided to change the Matthews property name to someone else and that person is not part of the Matthews family.

The elders looked like they all wanted to cut my throat out and feed it to the birds. My fathers mother was in tears yet she was fuming and so was Layla. They all

looked disappointed.

I kept my confidence and tried to not break down. I feel as if I'm betraying my father, I feel like I have just closed all doors for my future. This is the time where I need my brother the most.

Dumisani would always stand with me through thick and thin.

Mr Matthews (senior): my child do you know what you're saying??

Me: yes Grandpa, I've decided to give away my inheritance. (I looked deep into his eyes)

Mrs Matthews: no, my son built you a legacy and now you want to shame the

Matthews name, you are a disgrace. No such nonsense will happen.

Me: it is written in the Will of my father that I may do as I please with my inheritance....

Vuyo: but if you ever consider giving it away of misusing it before you have written your own will after marriage then you shall be punished.

Mr Matthews: And disowned my the Matthews family. You will no longer uphold the Matthews name.

Mrs Matthews: do you accept those conditions?? Speak now or forever hold your peace young lady (she looked at

me with hatred)

I closed my eyes and breathed deeply. I fought back tears and opened my eyes.

Me: yes, I accept.

I look at all of them with confidence.

They pass me a few papers to sign and I do so with confidence. After signing all the papers that claim that I am no longer a Matthews child, they passed me the most important paper of them all. The paper that I write the name of the new owner of Matthews Industries.

Mr Matthews: are you sure about this?

I looked at him and then at Layla, Zack and Justin. They all looked at me with

hatred and no mercy. I wish things were different.

Me: yes.

I signed it, tears descended down my cheeks as it turned red.

Mr Matthews: Tumisani Phakade from this day forward you are no longer a part of the Matthews generation. You are no longer our blood. We shall have no contact with you and whoever is found doing so, shall be punished as well.

From today onwards, we disown you.

(he said coldly)

I looked at them carefully. They have just sold me away. The people I call my

family have just disown me. This is the kind of people that would choose money and worldly materials over a persons life. I, Tumisani Phakade am now declared an orphan. It's so funny how life seems to treat certain people.

Sometimes I wonder if things would've been different if Dumisani was here with me. Would he have let them Disown me? Where is he when I need him the most. I want to be in his arms and just cry on his shoulder. He was my pillar of strength. Now I am once again left alone in such a cruel world. I thought I had found me a place to call home but I guess I was wrong.

Does such a family exist??

What do you think of Lindiwe's behavior?

Admin

[06/18, 07:32] Snr: INSERT 53

.

.

.

.

Sipho's POV

What is happening to Tumisani is not right. I know Rachel is behind all of this.

Rachel is being really selfish, we killed Lindo because of her evil deeds and now all of a sudden Rachel wants revenge. And what a better way to do it is by threatening Tumisani with the life of an innocent child. She knows Tumisani was going to do as she wants because Tumisani is really soft and she would never do anything to hurt an innocent child. Now Tumisani's family has disowned her. She has already given up hope and has signed the properties into Rachel's name, all that is left to be done is to personally hand it over to Rachel. Tumisani has refused for me to kill Rachel, though I won't listen to her.

I'll kill Rachel even after she has the properties in her hands. I know she doesn't want me to kill Rachel because she is now being called a murderer and now she thinks she's a bad person but who are we to judge her. No one has the right to judge her for what she did because only she knows the pain she holds within her heart.

Me: have you found anything?

I was standing in my pajamas at the balcony of my room, talking on the phone. Tumisani was still asleep and I tried to talk softly so that she doesn't wake up.

Lwazi: dude this woman is untraceable, we can't seem to find her brah.

Me: do all you can Lwazi, I want her dead, do everything you can to bring her to me.

Lwazi: brah there is no information linked to her, we don't even know whether she's in the country or not.

Me: she is in this city, she has instructed Tumisani to bring the papers tonight but she hasn't sent an address yet, how about we do an attack at the place that we'll do the exchange with her.

Lwazi: dude this woman has skills, she knows her way in and out. Let's just give

her what she wants.

Me: no, I want her dead! (I turned around and my eyes met with the eyes of Tumisani's)

She was leaning against the sliding door with her arms folded on her chest. She was still in her pajamas. I immediately hanged up.

Me: babe...

Tumisani: Siphon I told you to drop it, you didn't listen to me did you? I don't want to be involved in any of this, why can't you just accept that.

Me: babe I can't bare to see you being broken down like this, they are slowly

breaking you and...

Tumisani: no Siphon, I don't care anymore, they have won, they've finally succeeded in ruining me.

Me: you're disappointing the Phakade ancestors. That's the only name you can still uphold. They left your blood in this world for a reason and right now you're disappointing your brother and grandmother.

Tumisani: I've disappointed both my family's already so that's why there is no use of fighting. Please just drop it, I beg of you.

She looks me deeply in the eyes then

walk away. I can't bare to see a Phakade so weak. The Phakade blood is the most powerful blood I've ever come across and Tumisani is betraying them.

.

.

Tumisani's POV

I don't know why Siphon finds it so hard to just accept the fact that I'm screwed. They have finally proved it to me that I'm weaker than I thought. If I continue living like this then it will never stop. I don't want to fight all my life, I don't want to grown up being a fighter all my life. If I keep living like this then it'll never end.

Giving them what they want doesn't mean that I'm stupid, it just shows that sometimes you've gotta let go. I can always start over again. Starting over again isn't such a bad idea. I know I'll only have my house and car left under my name because it's my only personal possession. I can always find a job because I've got the qualifications, they gave me a Certificate when I was doing CEO training so I can always use that and feed myself once I've got a job, it's not a bad idea at all.

Sipho: are you ready?

We were at the place they instructed us to come to with the papers so we could

take Thando home. Siphso insisted we brought extra security in case all of this is a set up.

Me: I'm ready. (I smiled faintly)

We got out of the car with me holding the paper. We were at an open field.

There were no house, cars or anywhere to hide. Our men positioned themselves and pointed their guns towards Rachel's men who were pointing theirs towards us as well. Rachel walked out of the car with Thando in her arms, sh still looked healthy and well taken care of. We slowly walked towards each other till we were close enough.

Rachel: hand over the papers first, we still have to check if these papers are really signed.

Me: no, we had a deal. You hand over the child and I hand over the papers.

Rachel: do I look like a fool to you, those papers might be fake, I want to check if myself.

I looked at her, then at Thando who was now looking at me in excitement. I passed the papers to her and she gave Thando to her guards while she examined the papers. She smiled when she was finally satisfied with what she was reading.

Rachel: It was nice doing business with you. Give the child to her.

They handed Thando to me and I carried her tightly in my arms.

Me: I hope we will never cross each others paths again.

Rachel: never say never.

She turned around and walked away, her guards followed and they drove off. I sighed in relieve and quickly walked to the car and got in with Thando still in my arms.

Me: Thando, my love are you OK?? (I asked holding her cute cheeks and Checking if she was hurt)

Thando: tanti, tanti, mama, mama.

Me: you want mama ? (she nodded) OK
baby we'll go to mama OK.

I hugged her and we drove to my house even though it was really late. The time was 23:18, the poor child was exhausted. She had even lost weight.

We got to my house and it was now only me, Siphos and Thando who was sucking her thumb. After Siphos parked the car, I carried Thando and we walked to the door. I opened the door and we went inside and found Lindiwe and Zinhle. As soon as Lindiwe saw us with Thando, she stood up and ran to us..

Lindiwe: my baby!! (she sries)

Thando: mama, mama

They run into each others arms and Lindiwe picks her up and kiss her cheeks. Luyanda comes running down the stairs and spots Thando then excitement and joy take over his body..

Yanda: princess!!! (he pulled her out of Lindiwe's arms and hugs her tightly)

Thando: Dada, dada.

Looking at them so happy made me smile. They love their daughter so much.

Lindiwe: Thank you tumisani, thank you for bringing my baby back to me (she said in a scratchy voice)

Anger took over my body and my bitch mode switched on. The audacity she has. The nerve Lindiwe has to thank me. After judging me and turning against me she still has the nerve to thank me.

Yanda: Tumisani we're sorry, I'm so so...

Me: stop (I held up my hand to stop him)

Looking at them was pissing me off)

Me: I didn't do it for any of you. I did it because this child is innocent. I don't want your filthy apologies. Keep it to yourself.

Yanda: tumisani I....

Me: shut up, (I interrupted him) now all of you listen and listen very carefully. I'm

not the kind to explain myself to people, I don't even think you people deserve an explanation. I lost everything I ever called mine. My family disowned me, the family I thought I finally found disowned me and now I'm officially an orphan just because of my kindness to save this child. Now listen, first of all, I want you all out of my life, my house and my life the same way you got in. I don't ever want to set eyes on any of you ever again. If you see me in the streets in need of help or I'm being attacked, please do yourself a favour and walk away and never look back. Don't ever come near me again, forget me. (I said

coldly)

Lindiwe: Tumi please...

Me: save it Lindiwe, I suggest you start packing because I want you all out of my house now.

Yanda: so you're kicking us out of your house at a time like this?

Me: does it look like I care? or doesn't any of you understand the words that have just come out of my mouth.

Lindiwe: I'm sorry Tumisani, pleas...

Me: you're wasting my time, you have ten minutes to pack and make sure you pack everything because I don't want anything that will remind me of you in

my house. You're just an ungrateful friend.

I looked at her with anger and walk to the kitchen. I just remembered that I haven't eaten all day. I poured myself a glass of juice then made myself a sandwich and started eating. Siphon came into the kitchen and held me from behind as I was standing.

I silently ate my sandwich in peace and when I was done I washed my glass and looked at Siphon who looked drained out.

Me: you should go sleep, it's late.

Siphon: chasing them out at a time like this is not safe.

Me: I don't care.

I walked back to the lounge and Lindiwe was done packing. She had her suitcase in her hand and Yanda was holding Thando. I walked to Thando and kissed her cheek.

Me: tanti loves you princess (I smiled)

I opened the door for them and Zinhle walked out first. Yanda looked at me deeply and I could sense the pain he had but I didn't care because my heart held more pain than he could imagine. He walked out and Lindiwe dragged her suitcase, A tear escaped my eye and more poured down. She also

started crying. She hugged me and I didn't even bother to hug back. After she let go, she walked out. I closed the door and folded myself into Siphos arms on the couch. I never thought Lindiwe and I's friendship would ever end but I guess all good things come to an end at some point.

.

.

Comment, comment and comment.

I might continue later but it depends on the amount of likes and comments because this is the second time I'm

typing this insert, there's a second part but I'm really tired.

Admin

[06/18, 07:32] Snr: CONTINUATION
(short)

- .
- .
- .
- .

TWO DAYS LATER.

Tumisani's POV

Today is Friday. I have nothing to do since I don't have a job anymore. Now a days all I do is sleep, eat, sleep and eat

again. It's boring but I've sent my CV to certain companies and I'm just waiting for their reply. Good thing I bought this house in my own name or else I would be homeless right now. I woke up took a shower then lotion and put on a pair of high rise jeans with a violet top tucked in and sandals. I plait my hair into two plaits then went downstairs. I was all alone as Sipho had left yesterday because he had work to do. I made myself breakfast then sat down and started eating. I was enjoying my food when my phone decided to interrupt my peace..

Me: Phakade speaking, hello.

Voice: hello stranger, well you sound sexy.

Me: Ndumiso (I smiled)

Ndumiso: you disappeared and never called, you left me worried.

Me: ncooh I'm sorry, just had a lot going on.

Ndumiso: that you even forgot you ever met me?

Me: no I would never forget you.

Ndumiso: hmm ok, I'm in Cape Town (I screamed, he laughed) how about lunch, please.

Me: oh what a surprise, I would love to.

Ndumiso: great, I'll text you the location.
For now, take care of your beautiful self.

Me: (I smiled) sure.

He hanged up.

Gosh I even forgot he still existed. I promised to call him but I totally forgot because of all that happened this week. Time went really fast and it was already 13: 15. He sent the location and I was on my way to the place. It was a fast food restaurant and the place was really busy. It took me five whole minutes to finally get a parking space. I walked into the restaurant and spotted him seated alone looking all yummy in all White. I walked

towards him and he stood up when he saw me.

Ndumiso: hey, you look beautiful. (he said hugging me)

Me: thank you (I smiled)

Ndumiso: so how are you? I heard what happened with the Matthews family and I'm really sorry.

Me: nah it's OK. I'm fine now. (I smiled)

Ndumiso: you left me puzzled that other day...

Me: oh yeah, I'm sorry. You deserve an explanation.

I narrated the whole story to him. From

my mother killing my father and brother and then I explained to him why I killed my mother and then what happened to my best friend and my ex boyfriend and their baby. Basically I told him everything.

Me: yeah and that's why they were following us the other day...

Ndumiso: wow (he was shocked) you're really a brave girl, you're so strong.

Me: thank you.

Ndumiso: you've been through a lot and I could never imagine the pain you've been through. But your family shouldn't have disowned you, you were being

threatened.

Me: yeah I know but there's no turning back now, I've lost everything and now I'm jobless oh and also an orphan. (I smiled faintly)

Ndumiso: don't worry, you'll always find a job because you're qualified.

Me: that's the only good thing.

We ordered and they brought our food and we dug in.

Ndumiso: you know Tumisani, I have a company and I need an employee but it's not the best positions, I mean you're more experienced then that position I'm offering.

Me: I really don't mind, I just need a job to fulfill my needs. What's the position?
(I asked curiously)

Ndumiso: I need a PA. (personal assistant)

Me: oh really, that's perfect. I wouldn't mind being your PA.

Ndumiso: but I'll feel guilty because you can do more than that and plus you're my friend.

Me: I know but I've got no choice.

Ndumiso: OK so do you really want the job?

Me: yes of course. I would love to get the job. I mean beggars aren't choosers.

Ndumiso: don't say that and plus you're too beautiful to be a beggar (I giggled) so can you bring your CV on Monday at Langa Industries around 09:00, just tell the receptionist your name and they'll let you in.

Me: thank you so much Ndumiso, I really appreciate it. I don't know what to do to show you my gratitude.

Ndumiso: its a pleasure. You're my friend. What are friends for. (he smiled)

I really appreciate Ndumiso's offer. I know it's not such a big position but I can always start small and grow big. It's a new beginning after all. Ndumiso has

just saved me, I really owe him that much.

COMMENT, LIKE, AND SHARE.

OK, I just had to write because I love writing and I couldn't wait to get to this chapter because things are gonna get more heated now.

Goodnight.

Admin

[06/18, 07:32] Snr: INSERT 54

.

.

.

.

Ndumiso's POV

Hi, my name is Ndumiso Langa, or should I say Dumisani Phakade. Yeah, it is me Dumisani, Tumisani's brother. I'm sure you have a lot of questions and I'm going to tell you everything.

Well, when I was shot two years ago I got into a coma for almost a whole year and a half. When I finally woke up I had short term memory loss. I was saved that day by Yemi (yanda's sister).

The truth is I got shot on my heart and my body totally broke down, the only

way to save me was to do a heart transplant. So they took my heart out from my real body and put it into another man's body, and that man happened to be Ndumiso Langa who is Vuyo's brother. Ndumiso was also shot on that same day I was shot but he died and they had to put my heart in his body.

Vuyo believes that I, Dumisani Phakade am her brother Ndumiso Langa because I am in her brothers body. Yemi found me at the airport after the attack because I was left there, she had a private jet club party that she was attending at night and she found me at the airport as she landed. All the

funerals and everything was a fake because my body was in the coffin but it wasn't really me as in heart and soul. That body was the body they gave to my family after they took out my heart and it was all a fake. They weren't mourning me but they were actually mourning someone who was actually still alive. When I woke up from the coma I didn't understand why I was in that body and why was Vuyo constantly visiting me. I was confused for two whole months until Sipho came into the picture And told me everything that happened. He made me understand why I was in another mans body and also told me

that if it weren't for him I would be dead because after they shot me he felt guilty and felt like he betrayed Tumisani because he had fallen in love with her, so he looked for my body until he found out that I was not dead, he made the doctors do a heart transplant on me because he wanted to save me and make right for his mistake.

Everyone thought I died even Yemi because when she dropped me at the hospital she never came back because she thought I was dead, but my heart was just swapped to another mans body. When I found out that my sister killed my mother, it brought great joy to my

heart. I was proud of my sister and I wished I could come out of hospital sooner but I couldn't because Vuyo thought I was her brother and till today she still believes that I'm her brother that got shot and survived but actually her brother died. I had to learn to be like Ndumiso and with the help of Siphon I managed to do it. I was instructed to stay away from Tumisani for a while but I couldn't because I missed my sister. I had to act like a stranger to her because she shouldn't find out the truth yet, the time to tell her will come but just not yet. When Siphon found out I had met with Tumisani he was really angry because

we had an agreement and I messed up the plan. He knows that if the truth comes out Tumisani will hate him because he kept it away from her and she trusted him with her life because she has now forgiven him but all that will change when the truth comes out. What hurt me the most was when she sacrificed her family's legacy over her best friend's baby. I was watching her from far and I knew everything that happened to her though I couldn't do anything because I was helpless. I still can't believe how much my sister went through in my absence. But you know what? Dumisani Phakade is back and he

is back to stay. Life thought it had gotten rid of me but my time was just not yet.

.

Luyanda's POV

I still don't understand what is going on in my life. I don't know why I said all those things to Tumisani because I know for a fact that I still love her. When I found out that she killed her mother I couldn't believe it because the Tumisani I know would never be able to even hold a gun. I know I was wrong to judge her and accuse her of my baby's kidnap but I was stressed. What made me more

angry was the fact that that bastard was in her life. I hate seeing them together and I hate the way he looks at her.

Zinhle: morning my love

Me: morning babe.

It was Saturday and Lindiwe and Thanks went back to Soweto yesterday. She didn't want to stay here because of what happened and seb lost her best friend in the process.

Zinhle: what do you have planned for today? (she asked sitting on my lap still in her PJ's)

Me: I don't know, how about you?

Zinhle: hmm how about we stay indoors

and....(she smiles naughtily as she unbuttons my pajama top)

Me: and....

Zinhle: and do some adult stuff (I smirked)

Me: sounds like a plan.

I smashed my lips onto hers and passionately kiss her. Things get heated and I undressed her fully. I carried her to the room without breaking the kiss. I placed her on the bed and quickly undress myself then lie next to her on the bed and press my lips onto hers again. I squeezes her breast and she moans, I get on top of her and insert

myself inside her...

Me: fuck, you're so wet...(I groan)

I thrust slowly inside her and then speed up, she moans loudly and screams out my name..

Zinhle: aaahh yesss baby, aah deeper...aaah Yanda yes.

She moans and I go faster and deeper into her. I look at her and Tumisani's face pops up. I smile and thrust deeper...

Zinhle: yess baby, fuck!! (she moans)

Her voice somehow sounds like Tumisani's and I find myself lost in the pleasure. The voice of a Goddess.

Me: aaah baby, Tumisani do you see the things you're doing to me... (I groan)

I keep fucking her and it feels wonderful and beautiful..

Me: Tumisani, y-e-s, I love you baby!!

The next thing I feel is a slap across my face. I stop fucking her and open my eyes. Tumisani's face is no more but a teary Zinhle. I pull out of her and she runs to the bathroom with teary eyes...

What have I done??

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

Guys do you know what's sad? I'm on insert 54 and the page only has 433 or so likes. Like really guys?? some pages are only on insert 5 and I see there's like a 1000 likes on a insert. It hurts guys, like is my work not good enough?? But do you know what? I won't stop writing because I personally love writing, if the page won't grow then its OK. I'll just keep writing. Tho it hurts. I'm not going to be like the other admins who wait for a 1.5k likes before they type an insert, I'm nice and if I don't reach that 1K then its OK. I don't know for how long I've started writing here, I think 4 months now, look at other pages and you'll see

in less than 2 months its past 1k likes.

Anyway.

LIKE, SHARE AND COMMENT.

[06/18, 07:33] Snr: INSERT 55

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV

It has been a week since I got the job in the Langa company and honestly speaking I love my new job. I know it's not a big position but am still grateful

for the position. Being Ndumiso's PA is really great and sometimes it feels weird because I'm his friend but tho it feels like I've known him for a long time. I've gotten to learn a lot about him and we actually have a lot in common and it sometimes feel like I know everything about him and sometimes I would finish his sentences for him and it would even surprise me when he tells me things I've already heard a lot about from someone I know. I try my best not to get too attached with him but it's so difficult because I feel like I know him but that's merely impossible because I've just only met him.

Me: Phakade speaking, hello.

Ndumiso: hey, its me. Please come to my office.

Me: OK sir (he chuckled and hanged up)

I was at the office working because it was a Thursday. I had my own personal office tho it wasn't necessary because I'm just a PA but Ndumiso insisted on getting me a office which made the rest of the staff envy me because the treated me different from them. I've told him continues times to keep it professional but he insisted and told me he'll treat me however he wants to. I knocked on his door and he instructed me to come in. I

walked in and his desk was a royal mess indeed, his tie was on his desk and his shirt was unbuttoned at the top. He looked really stressed and confused at the same time, which was really weird because there's only one person that I know who always does that...

Me: Is everything OK sir? (I asked confused as well)

Ndumiso: I've told you to stop calling me that, you make me sound like a stranger to you. (he chuckled)

Me: I can't help it, after all you're my boss. (I smiled)

He sighed deeply and looked at his desk

puzzled.

Me: I bet you need help with all that (I grinned)

Ndumiso: all these papers are so confusing (he said picking up a pile of papers) what is this? A contract from Matthews Industries? (he said scanning through it)

I came forward and started clearing his desk and putting the papers in order. I knew how to do it because once upon a time I was a CEO.

Me: you have to sign that contract, it was sent a month ago. We've been waiting for it, uh uhm (I paused to

rephrase) I mean they've been waiting for it.

I said ashamed. It was indeed a contract The Matthews Company sent to Langa Industries. They've been waiting for it and I now understand why we hadn't gotten it back which was because Ndumiso simply never had a PA at that time. He looked really confused with all these papers which makes me wonder if he really knows his job...

Ndumiso: oh, uhm what is that? (he said pointing to the papers I was reading)

Me: you have a business trip this weekend. There's an event happening at

Daniels Industries in Pretoria.

Ndumiso: oh my gosh this is too much, I've only just got to Cape Town, now I must go to Pretoria. (he threw his head onto the desk and rested it there)

Me: are you sure you're really a CEO? (I said out of curiosity and it realized it was a bad question) uh uhm I mean now you know how hard it was for me to juggle all three companies at the same time.

Ndumiso: can you please come with me on this trip, Please. I could really need your help. (he said with pleading eyes)

Me: uh uhm I would have to think about

that.

Ndumiso: please I beg of you, I can't take care of this company alone and it would be wrong of me to ask my sister Vuyo because she's working with the Matthews Family. Please. (he pleaded)

Me: uhm I'll think about it. I'm done now.

I really didn't want to disappoint him by saying no to his offer but I don't know what Sipho would think about this, he'll think that I'm maybe fooling him because I know he really loves me.

Ndumiso: oh Thank you so much, I really appreciate this.

Me: it's a pleasure (I smiled)

Ndumiso: have you had lunch yet?

I looked at the time and it was already 14:30, my stomach decided to embarrass me by grumbling. I guess he heard it too because he started laughing at me...

Ndumiso: I'll take that as a no. How about I order some pizza. I know you love Pizza. (he said smiling and typing on his phone)

Wait a minute, Pizza is my favorite. How does he know that I love pizza. I look at him shocked and that makes him stop smiling...

Ndumiso: uh uhm I mean, I know

everyone loves pizza. (he said trying to keep calm)

Me: oh uhm yeah sure, Pizza is cool.

Ndumiso: OK

He ordered pizza and we conversed in a light conversation of me teaching him the little that I know about Business, because he looked really confused but I didn't take it to mind.

Ndumiso: you know Tumsa, I was in an accident and got short term memory loss that's why I don't remember most of the things here.

I opened my eyes out in shock and my mouth out wide. I wasn't shocked about

his short term memory loss but because he called me, " Tumsa". I know many people call me that but the way he says it just makes it even more unique. The way he emphasizes on my name makes it feel as if my brother was the one calling me that..

Ndumiso: are you OK? (he asked worried)

Me: oh uh yeah I'm fine (I smiled faintly)

My heart had a sharp pain and it all of a sudden started beating weirdly. I looked at him and he somehow looked different for a while.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Admin

[06/18, 07:33] Snr: INSERT 56

.

.

.

.

18SLN (please don't read if it's too inappropriate, tho its not that deep tho)

Tumisani's POV

I got home and parked the car in the garage where I also found Siphos car, I guess he'll be sleeping over. I was really exhausted, my shoes were killing me

and I just wanted a long relaxing bath. I took my things from the boot and then locked the garage.

I really miss Layla, Zack and Justin though none of them have contacted me yet, I guess they are all scared of the punishment.

It was really hot in Cape Town and the sun stays up till 18:00 which is really cool. Yet irritating because when its hot my skin becomes warm and it makes me feel like I'm burning which causes me to feel like walking naked.

I kick off my shoes and take off my blouse and vest leaving me with only my

jeans and bra. I walk to the kitchen and there is No one there, which is really strange. I thought he would be cooking dinner. I check all the other rooms and still there was no one. I walk back to the lounge where I was dialing his number when I felt warm hands wrap around my tiny waist.

Me: I was about to call you (I said turning around and standing on my toes then wrapping my arms around his neck)

Sipho: Is that so? (he said smiling then kissed me lightly)

Me: you haven't cooked? (I whined)

Sipho: I have a surprise for you (he said

sweeping me off my feet and carrying me on his back)

Me: what is it? (I said as he started walking towards the backyard door)

Sipho: it's a surprise babe

Me: but I'm in my bra, let me go get my top. (I giggled as he put his hands on my ass)

Sipho: you look beautiful even in your bra.

He pushed the backyard sliding door open and stepped out then pushed it closed again. He walked to the far end of the verandah and there I saw a lovely table set with food and two glasses with

wine. It almost looked like a little pic nic which was really cute because the sun was almost setting.

Me: oh my gosh (I said shocked)

Sipho: surprise (he shouted smiling)

Me: wow, when did you do all this (I said nuzzling off his back and onto my feet then stood in front of him facing the table)

Sipho: I came here about two hours ago. (he said putting a single rose in my hair which was so adorable)

Me: ncooh you too cute, what are we celebrating?

Sipho: You (he said smiling) I want us to

celebrate on your bravery and courage. Babe you've been through a lot yet you've stood up tall and strong. I want to show you how proud I am of you, you're really a brave woman and I've never met someone as brave and beautiful as you in my whole entire life and I want you to know that you're the queen of my heart and I'll forever love you.

I was blushing this whole time. He looks so cute and he sounds so sincere.

Me: oh my gosh (I smiled shyly) I don't even know what to say...

Sipho: don't say anything, just kiss me.

He held me close to him and

passionately kissed me. The kiss was intense and so beautiful, with so much love and warmth.

Sipho: let's start eating before I change my mind and eat you right here on the spot. (I giggle)

Me: Thank you babe, I really appreciate this (I smiled)

We sat down and started eating. He poured a glass of wine for him then looked at me still holding the bottle.

Me: do you think I should try? (I said referring to the wine)

I've never drank alcohol before and I didn't plan to because I never knew the

reason why people drank it in the first place. I just never get it.

Sipho: do you want to? I don't wanna force you.

Me: maybe next time.

He smiled and poured juice for me.

Sipho: how's work? (he said chewing)

Me: work is good and you?

Sipho: just a lot of contracts and stuff.

I just remembered that I had to talk to him about the business trip, I don't know how he'll take it but I have to try and plus it's work related.

Me: oh that reminds me, there's a

business trip that my boss wants us to attend, its in Pretoria. (I said chewing and looked at him)

Sipho: when?

Me: this weekend.

Sipho: should I be worried?

Me: no, not at all, it's work related babe.

Sipho: baby....(he sighed) OK, fine but please take care of yourself. (he said without eye contact which made him look guilty. His eyes were just wandering around like there was something he wasn't telling me.)

Me: are you OK? (I said placing my hand on his across the table, he looked at me

and faked a smile)

Sipho: uh yeah I'm fine. (he said then squeezed my hand)

Me: is there something that you're not telling me?

I said looking into his eyes and he looked troubled.

Sipho: uh no, nothing my love.

I didn't believe him so I just dropped it. We ate in comfortable silence then we took the plates to the kitchen and we washed it together. Then I went to take a shower, when I was done I walked out with a towel wrapped around my body and I was soaking wet. Sipho was busy

on his phone but as soon as he saw me he stopped. I sat next to him and lotion my body without minding him. I dropped the towel when I was done than walked to my closet where I was looking for my PJ's when I felt his arms around my waist and I flinched....

Sipho: how do you expect me to react when you're shaking your gorgeous ass all over the place. (I giggled and he kissed me neck)

Me: control yourself Sipho man.

Sipho: that is merely possible, your body is driving me nuts!!

He turned me to face him then smashed

his lips onto mine while he grabbed my ass and I moaned..

Sipho: I can't wait for the day I explore this beautiful treasure of yours (he said sucking my bottom lip)

Me: patience is a good virtue. (I said pressing myself hard onto him)

My cookie was really wet and I could feel Sipho's man poking my thighs. I wish I could pleasure him but I just couldn't. I don't know how to pleasure him without giving him my cookie.

Me: I know you want me....(that came out as a moan yet seductively)

Sipho: like hell I want you so badly! (he

said sucking my neck in hunger)

Me: I want you too (I moaned)

He picked me up and I wrapped my legs around his waist without breaking the kiss. He place me slowly on the bed and took off his shirt and pants. I sat up and he was on his knees in front of me, I looked into his horny eyes and smiled. He was really hungry for me. I softly kissed him as my hands roamed around his bare body. I leave wet kisses all over his chest, he looks so yummy and I'm so wet down there.

Sipho: aaah tumi you're driving me crazy

He slightly grabs my jaw and kisses me

roughly yet passionately, he picked me up and put me on top of him as we lie on the bed. His bulge was poking me so hard and he started to grind under me, he grabbed my bare ass without breaking the kiss and squeeze it roughly which brought pleasure as a moan escaped my mouth. I dug my nails into his chest out of pleasure and he groaned. I felt helpless because I didn't know how to pleasure him yet I was keen to learn...

Me: how do I pleasure you? (I said breaking the kiss shyly)

He looked down at me and smiled seductively, I felt like he was tryna tease

me.

Sipho: are you sure you wanna do that?

Me: yes (I blushed)

Sipho: OK, suck me (he chuckle)

I wanted to ask how but than I told myself I was going to find out my own way. I smiled and kissed his chest then six pack, my eyes landed on his bulge and I got scared, I looked at him and he gave me a reassuring smile. I undressed him fully and his stick sprung out freely. He was big and long.

I swallowed my pride and kissed the tip of his cock. I took the whole stick into my mouth like a lollipop and started to

suck him. He helped me by fucking my mouth as he groan out in pleasure. I continued sucking him as he grabbed my head and shouted my name cursing under his breath...

Sipho: aaahh baby I'm cumming.. (he shouted)

I didn't know what it was until I felt a liquid fill my mouth and he held my head still between his legs. After he finished pouring himself inside my mouth, I ran to the bathroom and immediately threw up. After throwing up, I washed my Face and exited the room where he was seated looking worried.

Sipho: are you OK? I'm sorry I...

Me: I'm fine babe, chill. (he pulled me into his arms and carried me like a baby)

Sipho: Thank you.

Me: don't thank me, you sound stupid right now (I laughed)

Sipho: you're amazing, I can't help it. (he chuckled)

Me: shut up and sleep. (I smiled)

Sipho: kiss me first.

Me: no

Sipho: don't make me do it by force

Me: I said no (I said teasingly)

He lifts my head up and I run off the bed

and he starts chasing me around the room laughing...

Me: Siphos stop (I giggled running around)

Siphos: first kiss me

He catches me and starts tickling me, I laugh out loud like a bloody animal until I can't take the tickling any more and I surrender..

Me: OK, OK

I said standing up And he picked me up and kissed me smiling.

Siphos: was that so hard?

He said putting me and the bed on his

chest.

Me: (I smiled) Goodnight.

Sipho: Goodnight my Queen.

It felt great to be able to pleasure him. I felt good that he didn't starve any longer tho it was weird when his sperm entered my mouth but I'll get used to it. I feel comfortable in his arms. I could easily saying I'm falling head over hills for him.

.

.

NARRATED

MEANWHILE IN THE CITY OF

JOHANNESBURG AT A CLUB.

Guy: I could tap that ass for days..

Busi: money is your solution (she said positioning her thick body right in front of his erected dick)

Guy: how about you Come home with me (he said running his fingers down her arm)

Busi: I don't follow my clients to their places, a hotel would be better (she said grinding on him, moving to the rhythm of the music)

Guy: I've been watching you for quite a while now, I like you.

Busi: I don't mix business with....

Guy: with pleasure yet your job is to pleasure men with desires.

Busi: only for one night (she said breathing down his neck)

Guy: is that you agreeing to go home with me?

Busi: only for tonight, you better pay well. I'm not one of those cheap sluts, I'm an expensive daughter of a bitch.

Guy: no wonder that ass is so bitchy. Money is not an issue.

They walked out of the club to the parking lot.

Nicole: Busi!!! (she shouted before Busi could enter the car)

Busi: Niki

Nicole: where are you going? you're working a double shit tonight.

Busi: girl please cover for me, it's a special client.

Nicole: the boss will be pissed. You better bring half the moola tomorrow, I'm not covering up for you for nothing.

Busi: I'll make it up to you babe.

She got into the car and it drove off.

Guy: you're really beautiful, uh Busi, these thick thighs and huge ass could drive any man straight to heaven.

Busi: keep your focus on the road sir.

Guy: call me Calvin.

Busi: yet I never asked you (she said sternly)

Calvin: one minute you're grinding on my dick and the next you're cold, I don't understand you.

Busi: most people don't.

He parked the car and they both stepped out of it and walked into the big mansion.

Calvin: welcome to my mansion Busi.

Busi: nice place. Now let's get down to business...

She unbuttoned her jacket and took it

off leaving her in her pink and black lacy lingerie.

Calvin: straight to the point, I see.

Busi: Let me do the talking and action. Speak when spoken to, you allow me to control and pleasure you. Let the magic of Busi do it's job.

She said getting him naked in less than a second...

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

New characters: Busi, Nicole and Calvin.

Shit is about to go down. More secrets

are going to reveal itself and more hearts are going to break. After all this is hidden secrets.

Sorry for the sex and stuff but the next few inserts will have sex parts and stuff and I'm sorry. If you can't read please don't, I don't want my page to get reported please guys.

Admin

[06/18, 07:33] Snr: INSERT 57

.

.

.

.

Ndumiso's POV

The weekend had finally arrived and Tumisani and I were already in Pretoria. We had different meetings at different places and it felt good to spend time with my sister even though it's not the same as it used to be but I appreciate it still.

It was a Saturday and we had just finished with our last meeting for the day, we were heading to the hotel we were currently staying at. She looked exhausted, if the circumstances were different I wouldn't allow her to work so hard though I try to make it easier for her but Tumisani being as stubborn as

she is, she didn't bother to listen to me which is understandable because in her mind I'm still her boss.

Me: are you OK? (I asked in my deep yet sexy new voice)

Tumi: yeah I'm fine just a bit tired. (she smiled)

Me: maybe we should grab something to eat before we get to the hotel.

I instructed the driver to drive to MacDonalds and we went to the Drive-Thru because we were too tired to step out of the car. We took our food and i paid then drove straight to the hotel.

Being in Ndumiso's body makes me feel

really weird because his body is two times bigger than my real body and his body attracts too much attention from the ladies as well as my own sister (real) because I know for a fact Tumisani loves guys with built bodies.

Tumi: oh I just got a message saying we have to be in Johannesburg tomorrow because we have a meeting with some construction company.

Me: oh (I sighed) do we really have to go?

Tumi: yeah it's important.

We got to the hotel and went to our separate rooms. I sometimes wish I

could live a different life. I mean, who could've ever imagined that Dumisani Phakade would one day end up in another mans body, it sounds crazy hey. And the worst part is that I don't know everything that happened in this mans life, what if he was some kind of serial killer and his enemy's want revenge and they come after me yet I'm innocent. The reason why I haven't told Tumisani the truth is because Siphos is still finding out everything about Ndumiso so that I know what to expect but for now, I'm an Imposter.

.

Tumisani's POV

The next day was Sunday and we were going to Johannesburg. I woke up early around 06:00am took a shower, lotion then put on a black body hugging off the shoulder knee length dress with silver sandals. My curves were revealed and my ass popped out, I tied up my braids into a pony tail, I put some lip gloss and I looked simple but fabulous. I was a bit early because we were leaving at 08:30 and it was only 07:45 now so I decided to call Siphho.

It rang three times before he answered and I'm sure I woke him woke...

<call convo>

Sipho: hello (he yawned)

Me: Good morning my love.

Sipho: babe, how are you?

Me: I'm good babe, sorry for waking you up.

Sipho: its OK at least your sweet angelic voice is the first one I hear when I wake up. (I giggle)

Me: I miss you.

Honestly speaking I really did miss him. I'm so used to being around him all the time that when he's not around me than I feel incomplete.

Sipho: I miss you more my love. You

coming home tonight right?

Me: no babe we have another meeting in Johannesburg so I might only be home tomorrow.

Sipho: (sighs) I wanna hold you and kiss you forever.

Me: (I smiled) me too my love but don't worry I'll be home soon then you can kiss me forever.

Sipho: I miss your soft pink lips.

I can feel him smiling right through the phone which makes me blush...

Me: I miss your stupid face (I teased)

Sipho: don't get me started and plus you

love that stupid face (he chuckled)

Me: oh really?

Sipho: yeah even though you don't like to admit it but I know you love me.

Me: hmmm (I blushed) OK my love, take care of yourself plz.

Sipho: take care of my beautiful ass.

There was a knock at the door and I was sure that it was Ndumiso. I took my suitcase...

Me: babe (I laughed) I've gotta go now, I'll call you later, bye.

I said walking towards the door.

Sipho: OK sweetheart, bye.

I hanged up and open the door Ndumiso was about to knock again. He looked really hot in a pair of jeans and a Nike shirt with Nike takkies.

Ndumiso: Good morning, are you ready to go?

Me: morning, yeah I'm ready.

Ndumiso: You look beautiful.

Me: Thank you (I smiled)

I dragged my suitcase and we left the hotel. The drive to Johannesburg wasn't that tiring because we were listening to Music and chatting. We got there just in time for the meeting and the time flew really fast. The meeting finally ended

and it was already 16:30 so we decided to go to Spur for late lunch. We got there, ordered and conversed while waiting for our order.

Me: Pretoria is really great, I like it here. I would love to come here with Siphosome time round about December.

Ndumiso: yeah I like it here too. its cool.

Our order came and we ate in comfortable silence, when we were done Ndumiso insisted on paying once again so I just let him be. We walked out of the restaurant and got to the parking lot, before we could enter the car...

Voice: NDUMISO!!!

We both turned around and looked in the direction of the voice. It was a beautiful young girl who look not too older than me, she was thick and really beautiful.

.

Busi's POV

Hello, my name is Busiswa Mpondo. I am 23 years of age. My parents died when I was only 10 years old so I had to live with my aunt. My aunt believed in me and treated me like her very own child because she couldn't have children. She sent me to school and made sure I lived a good life even though we were poor. She made me the woman that I

am today but God had to take her away from me when I turned 18. I had to struggle through my matric year because I had no family. I had to work as a cleaner at a rich woman's house and I would sometimes miss school just so that I could feed myself and pay rent. When I passed my matric I tried to find a decent job but it wasn't easy. I would sometimes sleep on an empty stomach because I had no money to buy food. I had no friends or anyone to turn to. The landlord kicked me out of the house because I couldn't pay rent for two whole months. I lost my job as a cleaner because the lady thought I was

seducing her husband.

I roamed around the streets of the city of Johannesburg for two days without finding a place to stay. I had to beg for food but one day I lacked energy and got dehydrated. I fainted in the middle of the road and the sweetest man I've ever met in my whole entire life came to my rescue. Ndumiso picked me up from the streets of Johannesburg's and cleaned me up. I would forever be grateful for his kindness and care. He helped me and changed my life for the better. He gave me everything, a home, clothing, food and the most important thing of them all, love. He fell in love with everything

about me, whether it be good or bad. We started dating and we were head over hills in love with each other. I gave him my heart, soul and body, and he did the same as well. He vowed he would never love any other woman as much as he loved me. We dated for two years and I fell pregnant when I was 20 years old. His family hated me especially his sister who thought I was only after his money. His mother died of a heart attack when she found out that I was pregnant with Ndymiso's child. They hated me even more when Ndumiso's mother died but Ndumiso never let me go. He never blamed me for anything. He loved me

through thick and thin. His father committed suicide on the day of his mothers funeral. His sister hated me with passion. she did everything within her power to separate us yet failed. Our love was unbreakable. I gave birth to a handsome baby boy by the name of Sihle, he looks identical to his father. Ndumiso loved his son with all his heart, he did everything to protect his son, he gave him everything the world could ever offer. The day I found out that Ndumiso was in an accident, I went crazy. I cried my heart out and Vuyo made me believe that the love of my life was no more. She told me Ndumiso died

in the accident. I lost myself while mourning him. I wasn't allow to see him and I couldn't attend the funeral because our son fell ill. Yet something within told me that Ndumiso would never leave me. Vuyo kicked me and my son out of the Ndumiso's house and blocked us out of her life. All this happened in Cape Town. I then had to return to Johannesburg and start all over again. I looked for a job and it only lasted for a month but I was still able to pay the rent and the daycare my son went to when I went to work. I struggled until one day while roaming the streets of Johannesburg I got myself a job as a

female bartender at a club, I started off as a bartender and then things changed when I met Nicole (best friend) and the salary I earned wasn't enough. Nicole was working as a prostitute at the club. I moved over to live with her when they kicked us out of the room I rented and she got me into the game. I became a prostitute and the best one of them all because of my thick body and well shaped huge ass. I sold myself just to put food on the table and to give my son the life he deserves.

But what I can't believe is the same Ndumiso Langa who died two years ago is standing right here in front of my very

own two naked eyes. Tears streamed down my cheeks and I got emotional...

Me: Ndumiso...(I cried)

He stood there confused and worried at the same time. I started doubting myself. What if I'm just imagining things, what if this is not him. But he looks identical to the man I fell in love with??

Ndumiso: uh uh uhm excuse me, who are you? (he said confused)

I still remember that deep voice. That voice that made my skin crawl and my blood boil. No, this is definitely the man I fell in love with. But why is he asking me who I am. Why does he look so

confused?

Me: my love (he heaved) It's me, my love. It's your Busi. (I cried)

Ndumiso: Busi!!! (he said shocked, his eyes popped out and mouth wide open)

Me: Babeee (I cried)

He opened his arms and I ran into his arms emotionally. He hugged me tightly and squeezed me. I cried in his arms and we stayed in that position. I held onto him for dear life. I missed being in his arms. I longed for this for two whole years.

Ndumiso: my love...(he cries)

Me: babe, I, i, I....(I hesitated and tears

poured down)

Ndumiso: babe, I'll explain everything later. I promise we'll talk. Plz get in the car.

I turned around and I realized he was with a very beautiful girl. Her beauty was not just any kind of beauty but real beauty. It resembled some sort of power and it made me feel insecure. She smiled shyly when she saw me looking at her. Her dimples popped out and her eyes glowed out. She was the meaning of true beauty.

We got in the car and everyone was silent. My mind was elsewhere and my

heart was beating really fast. I got worried because Ndumiso didn't ask about our son. He would always ask about our son whenever he saw me without him. But I'm sure there is some sort or explanation but what troubled me was this girl who held so much beauty yet she was so young. She was very curvaceous and beautiful. I got jealous. I feared that the love of my life would be taken away from me. All sorts of thoughts popped in my brain. I looked at Ndumiso and he was deep in thought while driving. I felt lost. Yet happy that the love of my life was brought back to me....

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

OK, so I might be too busy to post this week and I'm not sure when I'll post again. Maybe Tomorrow, Wednesday and Friday but I'll try to post everything. I'm not posting.

But for now, let's get to know each other. I've realized that I've got a great group of readers and I love you all. So do ask and I shall answer.

Admin

[06/18, 07:33] Snr: INSERT 58

-
-
-
-

Ndumiso's POV

I've never been this confused in my whole entire life. Just when I thought things were getting easy for me then a bomb shell had to explode on me.

I have no idea who this beautiful woman in and from where I'm standing I think she might be Ndumiso Langa's girlfriend and that just makes everything complicated. What makes me even more angry is that Sipho had never told

me that Ndumiso had a girlfriend, I thought Ndumiso was some kind of single guy with no girlfriend , with a fit body and a handsome face, but I guess I was wrong.

We got to the hotel and I took her to my hotel room. I had to pretend like I knew her because she looked hurt and out of place so I had to act like she was my long lost lover or something and seeing such a beautiful lady in tears broke my heart.

Me: babe could you please excuse me, I'll be back.

Busi: sure (she smiled and sat down on

my bed)

She was indeed beautiful with a thick body and a fine ass. She looked in her early 20's and very attractive.

I stepped out of my hotel room and charged towards the elevator dialing Siphos number. His phone rang a few times before he finally answered...

< call convo >

Siphos: before you shout at me, let me explain first. (he said sounding restless)

Me: what the fuck is going on here Siphos? man, I've never felt so useless in my whole entire life like this before.

Siphos: I know man but you have to calm

down, I can't explain this to you while you're shouting your lungs out.

Me: OK, I'm calm.

The elevator dinged open and I stepped into it and pressed the first floor button.

Sipho: OK, well I didn't know that this was going to happen. I only found out today that Ndumiso Langa had a girlfriend and a son.

Me: what!!?? (I said shocked) a son!!??

Sipho: his son's name is Sihle, three years of age and born on the 16th of February. I need you to know these things because you might get questioned about it by anyone close to

you. I'm watching you from far and I wanted to inform you sooner but you were in a meeting.

Me: so you're saying I have to play happy family with another mans girlfriend and son?

Sipho: I still need to gather more information because it seems like there is more behind all this. (I sigh deeply)

Me: dude this mans life is complicated, how long do I keeping living like this. Why can't I just tell them the truth man?

Sipho: do you know the amount of damage that will cause? That woman has no family and Ndumiso was her only

family. Vuyo would break if she found out that her brother is actually dead. I don't know why Busi wasn't with Vuyo and living with her because of her nephew but we'll have to find out. That woman has been through hell as far as I'm concerned and she has a son on top of that, I wonder how she takes care of that poor child because she only has a matric certificate.

Me: how do you think my sister felt when she lost all her loved ones. She's human too Siphos and my sister deserves better than that as well. How do you think she'll feel when she finds out the truth.

Sipho: I know man, I know but please hang in there for just a little longer. We will tell Tumisani the truth when the time is right. I'll protect her, don't worry.

Me: (sigh) OK, so what do I do about Busi?

Sipho: tell her you have short term memory loss and you only remember certain people. She's a great woman, take care of her. Love her if you have to but please just don't let her go.

Me: OK, sharp. Bye

Sipho: Bye. (I hanged up)

<end of convo>

After buying food for Busi, I walked back

to the hotel room and she was seated on my bed deep in her thoughts. I took a look at her for a moment and she took my heart away. Her beauty drew me closer to her in some kind of way.

Busi: you're back (she brought me back to my senses and her eyes were red as if she has been crying)

Me: babe, you've been crying? (I said sounding concerned)

Busi: I, I,....(she broke down)

I walked up to her and pulled her into my arms and onto my lap. I was carrying her like a baby and my heart broke seeing her in such a condition. I mean, for

crying out loud the poor girl thought she had lost her lover and the father of her son. Only God knows what she's been through.

Busi: Ndu...

Me: shhhh I'm here now, I won't ever leave you again (I kissed her forehead)

I don't know what I'm saying but it sounds so real and I somehow wanted her to believe it.

Busi: promise? (she sniffed)

Me: I promise. I'm sorry for leaving you for so long, I'm sorry for abandoning you and our son, I'm sorry my love.

Busi: its OK my love, its not your fault,

you were in an accident and it's understandable.

Me: I was in an coma for almost two years and when I finally woke up, I had memory loss. I didn't understand anything for quite a while.

Busi: what? your sister told me that you died, she kicked me and Sihle out of your house claiming that I was only with you for your money.

Me: What!! (I looked at her shocked)

Busi: yeah, I had to move back to Jo'burg and life wasn't easy...(she looked down ashamed)

Me: wait, wait, so you mean Vuyo kicked

you and our son out of my house while I was still in hospital?

Busi: yes, I mean I knew from the beginning that Vuyo never liked me but to kick her own Nephew out of her brothers house, that was insane. Uhm, babe do you really not remember our son? (she looked at me disappointed)

Me: yes my love. I lost my memory and I asked Vuyo about my past but she never told me anything, she told me it was better if I didn't find out.

Busi: your sister is really evil, no offence Ndu.

She looked pissed and I was hurt

because Vuyo looked so innocent and so kind. I could never imagine her throwing an innocent child out of her house and that child is her own blood.

Me: babe, I need you and Sihle to come with me to Cape Town.

I had to get to the bottom of this and I'm sure Ndumiso would appreciate it too. I mean, Vuyo had no right to lie to Busi about Ndumiso being dead when she knew very well that he was still alive and she had no right to treat Busi and Sihle like rubbish.

Busi: babe, I can't....(she looks away and got off my lap with teary eyes)

She looked stressed and I could tell she was hiding something.

Me: why not Busi? (I stood up)

Busi: because.... (she hesitate) uh I just can't.... (she took her bag) I have to get going, I have to fetch my son from school.

Me: Busi what is going on? talk to me my love...

I held her hands...

Busi: no Ndumiso, stop it. I mean, how can you just come out of nowhere after all I've been through and you expect us to just continue from where we left off. No, it doesn't work like that. (she looked

anywhere else but me)

Me: have you moved on? (I said sounding hurt)

Busi: no but it's clear that you have. Like seriously that girl is really beautiful and looks so perfect. Like who would want a piece of trash like me, I come from the dumpster and I'm a mess.

Me: stop it!!! (I yelled, I hate it when woman think so low of themselves) you are beautiful Busi, I like you with your mess and I love you even more. That girl is not my girlfriend, she is my sis...I mean Personal Assistant.

Busi: what? (she said shocked)

Me: baby she is too young for me and please don't you ever speak bad about yourself like that in my presence or anywhere else ever again.

Busi: Ndu...

Me: ssshh (I interrupted) I know I've been gone for a very long time but I've never stopped loving you Busi, I miss you and my son now please could you stop pushing me away and let me love you. (I held her waist)

Busi: (sigh) I missed you too and I love you with all my heart Ndumiso.

She wrapped her arms around my neck and kissed me. I responded to the kiss

and I loved every inch of her lips. I kissed her passionately. I know what I'm doing is wrong but if it makes her happy then, fine. I'm starting to like her and I know it sounds crazy but this woman is incredibly amazing. I want her to be happy and I don't like the fact that I'm lying to her but I have no other choice. I have to find a way to tell Tumisani the truth because it hurts me when I see my sister struggling with no one by her side, I know Sipho is with her but she needs someone who knows her inside out and that person is me. I will make sure I deal with Vuyo because she isn't the sweet innocent girl I thought she was.

LIKE, COMMENT AND SHARE.

OK Welcome to all our new readers, I hope you are enjoying the story. please feel free to communicate with me, I'm not that bad. I'm actually very nice.

Guys, I would like to finish Hidden secrets and write a new story. I'm trying to find a way to end Hidden secrets but it seems impossible.

But anyway, I need your opinion, should I write the new story on this page and change the page name or should I make a new page?

Your opinion matters but please comment with what you think of this insert. I appreciate the "thank you"s but I think we should get realistic and comment about the story.

Admin

[06/18, 07:33] Snr: INSERT 59

- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV

We were on a plane to Cape Town and I was really confused of what was

happening. Ndumiso instructed me to pack my bag in a hurry as if we were in trouble. He instructed the driver to drive me to the airport while he went with the beautiful lady from earlier on. I met up with them at the airport and they arrived with a very cute young child who looked exactly like Ndumiso, I mean you could swear that it was the younger version of Ndumiso.

I was really confused, could it be that Ndumiso had a son? But how can that be possible, he never told me anything about him having a son and a girlfriend. We never spoke much about his personal life but he didn't have to hide

the fact that he had a family. But why didn't he recognize her at the restaurant and why are they coming with us? I sighed deeply. Thousands of thoughts popped up in my mind and I was really lost. We were very quiet in the plane, the only person that was talking was Ndumiso's supposed son. He kept telling him how he missed Ndumiso and he kept calling him Daddy and smiling a lot. The young lady was sleeping with her head on Ndumiso's shoulder. I looked at them seated together and they looked like a cute happy family. I smiled to myself looking at how the young boy kept smiling and Ndumiso was smiling

as well. The sight was amazing, but I still needed answers.

Boy: daddy where are we going? (he said looking up at Ndumiso with questioning eyes)

Ndumiso: boy boy we're going home. Daddy is taking us home, champ. (he said tickling him)

The boy laughed out loud in amusement.

Boy: Daddy!!!! (he giggled) I missed you daddy. (he said as Ndumiso stopped tickling him)

Ndumiso: I missed you too champ. I promise I won't ever leave you again.

Boy: promise? because I don't want

mama to cry anymore daddy, mama used to cry all the time daddy.

Ndumiso: I promise champ, mama won't cry anymore.

He said kissing the lady's forehead.

Even a fool could see that this is Ndumiso's little family. They warmed my heart and I kept smiling.

Boy: daddy who is this lady? (he said pointing at me)

Ndumiso: uhh (he turned to my direction and caught me smiling at them, I blushed embarrassed.)

Ndumiso: oh son this is Aunt tumisani, daddy's friend. Sorry for my bad

manners Tumisani, this is my son Sihle and my girlfriend Busi.

Me: hey Sihle, nice to meet you (I smiled at his cute face)

Sihle: hi aunty, can I please call you aunty Tumsa?

Me: sure sweetheart, you can call me anything.

I smiled once again and this boy just stole my heart right from out of my chest. I love kids so much and I believe I have a soft spot for children.

Sihle: OK aunty Tumsa, you're really pretty aunty, just like my mama. (he giggled shyly)

Me: oh really (I laughed) Thank you And you're a very handsome young man.

Sihle: (he smiled) Daddy does aunty have a boyfriend?

He said looking serious. My eyes grew wide out of shock, like really...

Ndumiso: uh uh I don't think so, why?

Sihle: because I want to make her my girlfriend because she's really beautiful. I want to be just like you and mama.

I laughed at what he just said. He's just so innocent and really cute.

Ndumiso: but son you're still very young and who is filling all this nonsense in your head about girlfriends?

Sihle: this is serious daddy, it's not nonsense. Aunty Tumsa could you please explain to daddy that every man deserves a beautiful woman.

I was laughing my heart out, this little Man has got brains...

Me: wait, wait, how old are you again? (I laughed)

Sihle: I'm three aunty (he smiled showing me three fingers)

Ndumiso: and way too young to be talking about girlfriends.

Sihle: daddy, daddy, daddy (he sighed) aunty my dad doesn't understand, please just marry me so we could live

happily ever after...

We all laughed and were interrupted by the intercom saying that the plane was landing. Ndumiso woke Busi up and she looked really exhausted, poor girl. She seemed like a really nice girl yet troubled. Her eyes say a lot and it makes me even more interested in her. The plane landed and we all stood up and departure.

We fetched our luggage and walked to the parking lot. I didn't tell Sipho that I was coming, I wanted to surprise him.

Ndumiso: We'll take you home Tumisani, I asked one of my drivers to bring the car and I'm sure he's on his way.

Me: no, there's no need. I'll take a cab home. I'm sure y'all are exhausted don't worry about me. (I smiled)

Ndumiso: no, I insist. I'm taking you home.

Me: no sir, please take your family home. I'll be fine, please.

Ndumiso: are you sure?

He said as a BMW pulled up in front of us.

Me: I'm sure. don't worry.

Ndumiso: OK, I'll see you tomorrow at the office then.

He let go of Busi's hand and hugged me.

Me: sure (I said after letting go of him)

Sihle: Daddy when will I see aunty again?

Ndumiso: uhhh (he looked at me)

Me: I'll come visit you sweetheart, don't worry, we'll surely meet again.

Sihle: promise?

Me: I promise.

He smiled and hugged me then hopped into the car where Busi was also seated.

Ndumiso packed their luggage into the booth and I waved goodbye as they drove away. I called a cab and it drove me to my place. It dropped me at the gate and I dragged my suitcase to the door. I opened the door...

Sipho: baby!!!

He was on his way up the stairs when he saw me enter the house. He ran down the stairs as I closed the door behind me and he hugged me tightly and lifted me off the ground and spin me around.

Me: Geez bae, did you miss me that much. (I said after he had put me down)

Sipho: what a great surprise, I thought you were only coming tomorrow.

He said as he dragged my suitcase up the stairs as we walked...

Me: I wanted to surprise you.

Sipho: and indeed I am surprised. (he took my hand into his)

We got to my room and I lie down on the bed, tired.

Me: I'm so tired! (I sigh)

He helped me remove my shoes then my jeans and my top. I was left in my under garments only. He came in between my thighs and lie on top of me then kiss me.

I missed his lips so I deepened the kiss and sucked his lips hungrily. He put his hand on my VJ and started massaging it with my panty still on. I moaned into his mouth. I held his waist as he lie on top of me, I gripped his shirt as the pleasure intensified and I was wet yet very tired. I

broke the kiss and smiled looking into his eyes. He took his hand away from my nunu and touched my lips with his thumb.

Sipho: I missed you (he peck my lips lightly)

Me: I missed you more.

He got off me and I sat up straight. He took my feet onto his lap and started massaging my feet.

Me: hmmm that feels great.

Sipho: you're tense my love.

Me: I need a shower, wanna join me? (I said with a naughty grin on my face)

Sipho: with pleasure. (he picked me up
bridal style and walked into the
bathroom)

He placed me down and undressed. We
took a shower together, kissing in
between and being all lovey dovey. After
we fried ourselves up, I wore my PJ's
with no under wear and he ordered pizza.

Sipho: my love, how was work?

He pulled me onto his chest as we sat
on the couch in front of the TV, waiting
for the pizza.

Me: Busy, Jo'burg is beautiful and
Pretoria too. We should go there in
December.

Sipho: how about on your birthday

Me: that's before December, I wanna go during December..

Sihle: anything you want my queen.

Me: yoh baby a lot happened this weekend. I met my boss's son and his girlfriend. It was very confusing but I must say his son looks identical to him, yet very cute but something seemed wrong. (I smiled as I remembered what Sihle told me in the plane)

Sipho: hmm really? I can't wait for us to make our own son as well. (he said holding my stomach as if I was pregnant, I giggled shyly)

Me: I can't wait either (I smiled shyly)

Sipho: wait, did you just say yes to being the mother of my future kids? (he said happily)

Me: I think I just did, wait, what did you think? that I was going to break up with you some time in life?

Sipho: yeah, I mean, you haven't told me how you feel about us, so I don't know if you wanna be with me forever or not.

I sat up straight on his lap and held his face.

Me: baby I wanna be with you, I'm not leaving you, I'm here to stay (I pecked his lips)

Sipho: Do you love me Tumisani? (he says looking into my eyes deeply, and he looked very worried)

Me: (sigh) baby, I'm ready. I'm ready to move on with you. I'm ready to give you my heart, soul and body. I want to be yours. I want to love you. (I smiled) I love you, Sipho (I said with teary eyes)

I didn't understand why I was emotional. I've finally moved on and decided to give my heart to another man. I'm ready to love again. I think I've finally found my soul mate. They say love comes at unexpected times and circumstances. I fell in love with my brothers murderer. Love is unexplainable. I love him and

that's all that matters. He looked shocked but calm. He pressed my lips onto his and our lips locked into a passionate kiss. Tears rolled down my cheeks as I felt my heart being freed. I felt free and loved in his arms. This is the man I want to love with all my heart. I've finally told him that I love him and I feel joy.

.

Luyanda's POV

Life hasn't been easy on my side. I felt lost and I didn't know what I wanted anymore. Zinhle told me she wanted space and I couldn't bare being with

someone to hold. We've been apart for almost two weeks now and I miss her. I know I just her and she thinks I am still in love with Tumisani which is true but I'm trying to move on. I've tried to get a hold of Zinhle but she never picks up my calls. I've been lonely and I missed home. I missed my mom and sister, we haven't spoke for quite a while now and I really miss them. My dad calls but I never pick up because I'm still mad at him for cheating on my mom with Tumisani's mother. Now I know how Tumi felt when I used to cheat on her multiple times...

Me: Zinhle please don't close the door...

I put my foot between the door to stop her from closing it. I was at her apartment to apologize but seems like she didn't want to even see me..

Zinhle: what do you want Luyanda? (she said pissed)

Me: baby can I please come in, can we please just talk about this please (I pleaded)

Sh opened the door after looking at me for a while. I went in and we sat down in the lounge, she was looking at the floor playing with her fingers...

Zinhle: Yanda, did you ever love me?
(she spoke up and looked at me pissed)

I looked into her sad eyes and she looked like she's been crying all day...

Zinhle: why did you try to make me like her, all this while we've been together all you've been doing is talk about tumisani this, tumisani that, you even tried to make me look like her and do the things she did. My love for you made me a fool and Zinhle the idiot listened to you. You fucking played me all this while because of your damn Tumisani!!! (she roared angrily)

.

.

To be continued...

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

What do you think of our new couple?

Sipho and Tumsa

What do you think will happen next??

Admin

[06/18, 07:34] Snr: INSERT 60

.

.

.

Busi's POV

I was very nervous because I was going

back to that same house that held so many unwanted memories. That same house that I was kicked out of. I was really scared that maybe Vuyo would hate me even more again once she sees me with her brother again. I held onto Ndumiso's hand tightly as we got closer to the house.

The driver parked the car outside the big beautiful mansion. The outside was still the same as I had left it. Another car was parked in the drive way. We got out of the car and Ndumiso took our luggage out of the booth, he held my hand as I held Sihle's as well. He opened the door to the big mansion and it

looked different. They had changed every single thing and even removed the pictures of Ndumiso and I. We walked to the lounge and it had soft brown sofas. I looked around the place and Vuyo came out of the kitchen wearing an apron. Her eyes popped open and mouth grew wider as soon as she saw us. She instantly became angry and I could sense the tension in the room.

Sihle: Aunty!! (he ran to Vuyo who looked pissed)

Vuyo: don't touch me!! (she rudely yelled at my innocent son)

Sihle stopped and his face dropped with

a sad expression. My heart sank and tears threatened my eyes. Sihle stood there with sad eyes, Ndumiso looked at Vuyo with both a surprised and angry expression.

Me: baby, come here. (I said referring to Sihle)

He came to me and I hugged him tightly. Being rejected by your own family hurts. Sihle is an innocent child and doesn't deserve this kind of treatment.

Vuyo: Ndumiso what the hell are they doing here and how the fuck did you find them? (she said angrily)

Ndumiso: mind your language, Vuyo!!!

(he shouted) What did you think? huh? that you were going to hide them away from me forever? How evil can you be Vuyo, your own blood and you treat him like this?

Vuyo: shut up, stop talking rubbish, this thing is the reason why mom died and dad committed suicide, it's because of them that I lost my parents and you stand here and talk about being evil yet the devil itself is standing right here in front of your very own eyes. (she said getting emotional)

Ndumiso: don't you ever and I mean ever, call her a devil again, you have no right to call her names. Our parents death

wasn't caused by her, she didn't do anything and you have to accept that and the fact that this boy is your nephew.

Vuyo: over my dead body, this is not my nephew and never will be. They are the reason why my mother died and I will never forgive them for it. (she looked at us with hatred and disgust in her eyes)

Tears rolled down my cheeks and I broke down as those words pierced through my heart.

Ndumiso: you hold too much hatred in your heart Vuyo, forget the past and move on. This is your family here, hating them won't bring back our parents Vuyo.

Vuyo: please just shut up, whatever you say won't make any difference. I'm leaving this house, I can't stand being in the presence of this woman.

Ndumiso: Vuyo!! (he said through gritted teeth.)

Vuyo: leave me alone Ndumiso, you lost your mother and father just because of this woman and now you're about to lose your sister just because of the same woman as well. Mxm you're so useless, maybe one day you'll understand.

She stormed up the stairs angrily and she banged the door once she was

inside her room. I sat down defeated and seeped with Sihle in my arms.

Ndumiso pulled us into his arms and hugged us tightly. After a while of silence I stopped crying and wiped my tears...

Me: Ndu...

Ndumiso: don't worry my love. I'm here and nothing will happen to you two, I love you guys with all my heart. (he kissed mine and Sihle's foreheads)

Ndumiso: come on champ, let me go show you your room. (he stood up)

Sihle: am I getting my own room daddy?

He said excited as if he wasn't just

rejected by his only aunt.

Ndumiso: of course son, why not.

He said as he dragged our suitcases up the stairs and I helped him.

Sihle: wow that's awesome, I never had my own room back home daddy, me and mama slept on the...

Me: that's enough Sihle (I said getting irritated)

I didn't want his father to know that we slept on the floor in a shack. I was embarrassed and I didn't want to talk about it. Ndumiso gave me a weird look and then turned around the passage as we walked to Sihle's room.

Sihle: mama...

Me: baby (I looked at him trying to keep calm)

Sihle: I'm sorry for upsetting you mama.
(he looked up at me and I stopped walking and stooped down to his level)

Me: my baby mama is not upset. I'm sorry for shouting at you, I'm just (I sighed) mama is tired.

Sihle: OK mama (he kissed my cheek and I smiled)

This is my bundle of joy. I love my son with all my heart and I would gladly give my life for him.

Ndumiso: this is your room son. (he

smiled)

He opened the door and we stepped into the big room with a perfect king sized bed and a big plasma TV. I looked at Sihle and he looked really happy. He jumped on the bed and ran all over the place.

Sihle: wow, wow thank you daddy, this room is so gigantic!! (he shouted happily)

I smiled as I watched my son being so happy.

Ndumiso: this is all yours my son, everything.

Sihle: I love it, thank you. (he got off the

bed and hug his father, Ndumiso picked him up and tickled him)

Ndumiso: anything for my only son

They laughed and Ndumiso put him down on the bed.

Ndumiso: boy, mama and I will be next door, so we'll see you later, we'll be back. You stay here and enjoy your room, if you need anything come ask. Mama will make you something to eat now, OK.

Sihle: OK daddy.

We left him and walked to Ndumiso's room. I looked around the room and it was still the same. I was relieved, tho all our pictures were gone. I sat down on

the bed and removed my shoes.

Me: babe....(I patted the bed and directed him to come sit next to me. I held his hands and looked at him)

Me: baby you don't have to do all this for us, you don't have to lose your sister because of us.

Ndumiso: what are you saying Busi? you and Sihle are my family. I am his father and I want to be in my sons life.

Me: babe your sister...

Ndumiso: my sister is selfish and stubborn. I don't care if she doesn't like you and my son, all that matters is that I love you guys.

I looked into his beautiful light brown eyes and my heart just melted. I love this man with my life. I remembered about the life I had to live just to provide for my son. I had to use my body to put food on the table. I felt ashamed of myself. If Ndumiso ever found out I doubt he'd ever forgive me. I felt his lips onto mine and he started kissing me, I responded as I craved for his lips, I sucked onto his lips and he stuck his tongue into my mouth. His hands roamed around my body and I missed how his hands felt on my body. He slowly unbuttoned my shirt and removed it, I also removed his shirt, he takes off

my bra and my breast rise in surprise, my hands explore his perfectly shaped body, he removed my jeans and make me sit on his lap. He strips me fully naked and kissed my breast before he circles his tongue around my nipples then begins to suck it, I moan about loud in pleasure. He sucks me till I was wet as fuck, I could sense that I had wet his pants because the way I was wet, it was unexplainable. I kissed his hungrily and removed his pants and boxers. He was hard as a rock and I was wet down there as well. He made me lie down as he got on top if me and in between my thighs. I wrapped my legs around his waist as he

enters me and I shout out loud as the pleasure hits me. He slowly thrusts into me, he groans out loud and then thrusts deep and fast. The pleasure is beyond understanding and I love how his dick expands my vaginal walls. He groans out loud and shuts the both of us up by kissing me, I grip his back with my long nails and I'm sure I left a few marks on his back. After what felt like eternity, we both climaxed and orgasmed at the same time. His sperm felt great as it entered my vagina and mixed with my juices. We both lie in that position as we tried to catch our breath, he pecked my lips and carried me to the bathroom. We

took a steamy shower and it felt great to be in my mans arms. I missed him and I was glad that I had got my lover back but what scared me was if Ndumiso ever found out about my prostitute life then he would hate me, but I had no choice. I had to find a way to provide for my son and myself.

.

Sipho's POV

If I knew life would be like this then I would definitely not mind to repeat this life. Waking up next to the person you love feels great. When Tumisani told me that she felt the same for me, it gave joy

to my heart. I thought she would never say those three words but I guess I was wrong. This is the woman I've always dreamt of being with, my dream has finally come true, hey. I watched as she peacefully slept next to me. Her lips perfectly shaped and she looked so beautiful in her sleep. I smiled at myself as I admired God's beautiful creation. My phone disturbed my peace, I quickly picked up so that it wouldn't wake tumisani up. The sun was shining bright and it was only 06:30am. I stood in the balcony and picked up the call..

Me: hello?

Lwazi: dude, there's trouble...

Me: what's wrong? (I said worried)

Lwazi: Portia is back

Me: what!!!??? (I screamed into the phone)

Lwazi: yeah man, I just saw her right now at the gym man (he said in panic)

Me: Lwazi are you sure about this? I mean are you serious? (I said pacing up and down)

Lwazi: fuck Sipho I'm not fucking crazy, I said I just saw her mfethu, what are we gonna do? I mean her father is still alive and he might come after us man, I can't die man, my kid needs me.

I could sense that he was panicking and

so was I, I stopped pacing and stood up facing towards the sun rise.

Me: dude calm the fuck down, stop panicking, dig more info and call me when you've got the info and please don't do anything stupid Lwazi, please man.

Lwazi: (sigh) sure.

I felt warm hands wrapped around me and I immediately hanged up. I turned around and saw a naked Tumisani right in front of me, smiling. I kissed her and forced a smile, she hugged me without saying anything and I wrapped my arms around her naked body trying hard to

concentrate yet it seemed impossible
with this beautiful girl in my arms.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

Trouble in paradise...

Who do you think is our new character:
Portia??

[06/19, 11:43] Snr: INSERT 61

- .
- .
- .

·
Portia's POV

Me: daddy I want him dead.

Razor: baby calm down..

Me: don't tell me to fucking calm down damn it.

I said pacing up and down, pissed as fuck.

Razor: babe...

Me: no dad, I want him dead. I went through a lot because of those motherfuckers and it would be best if they had died!! (I shouted on top of my lungs)

Razor: I know baby, but...(he was interrupted by his phone ringing) excuse me.

He excused himself and exited the room, leaving me pacing up and down, pissed.

My name is Portia Patkins. I am an African American from New York. We moved to South Africa when I was 16 because of my dad who is the third biggest gangster/ mafia in the whole of South Africa. First in line is Monster, second is Bra Skopp, who is lucky that he died and third is my father. When I was 18, I got kidnapped by my dad's biggest enemy, Bra Skopp. He kidnapped me and wanted to make me a

proustite to get revenge on my father for killing his brother back in the past. When he kidnapped me, they exported me like a package to Mexico where they train all their prostitutes. They drugged me multiple times and used me. My father tracked me down for years and finally found me and rescued me. It took me a very long time to recover from all those drugs they injected into me and when I finally recovered, I heard that Bra Skopp was dead. He left his son in charge of all his businesses and to think that I had fallen in love with that boy sickens me. Siphon and I used to date back then and he never really loved me, he was just

using me to make his fathers job easier to kidnap me. He would help his father by drugging me when were went to Mexico, the bastard would sometimes sell me for a one night stand to some rich old men. I was happy when I heard that Bra Skopp was dead, which gave me the advantage to get rid of his son. I wish I had recovered sooner so that I could kill them both at once. Like father like daughter, I am the third biggest female gangster in the whole of South Africa. The first is that bitch Lindokuhle, who am glad is also dead, the second is her side kick Rachel which makes me the third. The way I hate Siphos makes

my blood boil. I'm also coming after Lwazi (Siphos friend) because that motherfucker raped me and used me. I can't wait to suck their blood and cut out their hearts. My gang name is blood and my fathers gang name is Razor. Portia Patkins is back and here comes sweet revenge.

.

Tumisani's POV

The sun is shining, the birds are chirping, my heart is beating to the rhythm of someone who is in love. I am happy because my heart has finally settled. Today is really a beautiful day. I was on

my way to work when I decided to pop into a cafe and have some coffee and a muffin as I was a bit early. I parked my car and step out. My mood was bright just like the colors of my dress. I was wearing a white dress with different color flowers on it with black sandals. My hair was neatly plaited down the side. I took my handbag and entered the cafe. I ordered a cup of coffee with a chocolate chip muffin. My face was bright and smiley and I could sense the attention I was getting from the guys. My order came and I indulged into my muffin with pleasure. An incoming message came through my phone and it

was from Siphho.

~

Baby, the day is beautiful, just like you.

How about lunch, please.

~ your idiot. Siphho~

I smiled and texted back...

~

That would be great my love. Have a great day. I love you.

~

After sending the message, I locked my phone and place it on the table then looked up. I couldn't believe my beautiful brown eyes. There right in front of me, at

the entrance of the cafe stood Yanda and Zinhle. They were holding hands wearing all white and they looked so cute. My cheeks heated up and I prayed to God that they wouldn't see me but, you know how Bra G is, he didn't bother to listen to me, hey. Yanda noticed me and said something to Single and she also saw me then smiled and I fakely smiled back. I took a sip of my coffee as they started walking towards my table.

OK, breath Tumisani, breath. You're over his dumb ass, you don't love him anymore. I repeated to myself.

Zinhle: hey Tumisani (she smiled)

Me: hi Single (I smile back politely)

Yanda: how are you Tumisani? (he said looking straight into my eyes)

Those eyes used to make my heart melt and my legs weak.

Me: I'm great, how are you guys doing?

Them: we're good.

Zinhle: baby, why don't we sit here with Tumisani, I hope she won't mind, is that OK with you tumisani (she said looking at me)

Yanda: Zee I don't think that's a good idea...

Zinhle: why not, she's all alone here,

tumisani...

Me: it's OK, you guys can sit, though I'm not staying for long, I'm going to work.

(I smiled)

Zinhle: Thank you.

They sat down and ordered. This is really awkward. I feel so weird, like, my ex is sitting right here with my boyfriend's half sister.

Zinhle: so tumisani I heard you lost your companies with the Matthews family, so what do you do now? (she asked with audacity)

Me: I got a job as a PA at Langa Industries.

Yanda: wow really, that's one of the biggest companies in the whole of Cape Town.

Zinhle: how does it feel losing everything, I mean once upon a time Tumisani Phakade had it all now all of a sudden you drop to the bottom, from big to small. (she smiled sarcastically)

I don't know if its me but I feel like this girl is provoking me but as sweet and kind Tumisani Phakade is, I'll kill her with kindness. Kindness is the best reaction you could ever offer someone.

Me: uh well you know, I feel stronger and much more powerful than I was when I "

had it all". I mean it's not everyday you will find a rich mans daughter being disowned by her family and losing her inheritance. It made me realize that falling down is not the end of the world, being able to get back up on your feet makes you even stronger.

Yanda: I'm really proud of you tumisani, you're really a strong girl. (he smiled)

Fa-da Laws please make him stop smiling...

Me: thank you (I blushed)

I checked the time and it was already 08:15, I have to get going or else big boss Ndumiso will go crazy.

Me: uhm, I have to be on my way Now, it was nice seeing you guys. (I smiled and stood up)

Zinhle: nice seeing you too tumisani.

I placed some cash on the table and took my handbag...

Yanda: don't worry about the money Tumisani, I'll pay.

Me: no, it's OK. Don't worry about...

Yanda: I insist (he took my money off the table and gave it to me)

Me: Luu no...

Yanda: you're so stubborn tumisani, I'm paying..

Me: no, I...

Zinhle: yanda for fuck sake, if she wants to pay, let her pay damn it (she said irritated and pissed) she came here with the intention of paying her bill so let her pay.

I looked at Yanda and he looked annoyed by what Single just said.

Me: bye (I placed the money on the table and walked away)

I won't let this people ruin my mood or my day. I put a big smile on my face and drove to the direction of Langa Industries listening to music. It sure is a beautiful day.

.

Busi's POV

I was in the shower when I heard Sihle calling out my name. Ndumiso had already left for work and Vuyo moved out of the house because our presence intoxicates her. I turned off the shower and wrapped my body with a white soft towel.

Me: baby what is it?

I said as I saw Sihle seated on my bed still in his Pajama's.

Sihle: your phone is ringing mama. (he hand me my phone and it was an unknown number)

Me: thanks my prince, go brush your teeth, I'll come down and make breakfast now now.

He left and I answered the call..

Me: Busi's Phone hello?

Voice: my bitch (wait that voice sounds familiar)

Me: uh sorry, who is this?

Voice: you even forgot my voice, bitch it's me, Portia.

I screamed out loud into the phone.

Me: aaah bitch where the fuck have you been?!!

Portia: I've been around, I've looked

everywhere for you B, I finally got your number from tracking you.

Me: oh my gosh Portia, I can't believe this is really you, after so long...

Portia: me too, hey listen, I'm in town, maybe we should meet up some time.

Me: definitely babe, I would love that.

Portia: OK how about Friday, we could go shopping, I miss the old days.

Me: Friday is perfect, so see you Friday.

Portia: sharp, I'll message you, my bitchy Busi (she laughed)

Me: (I giggled) damn I missed that accent, my crazy Portia, bye love.

Portia: by babe (she hanged up)

Oh my gosh. I can't believe she's back. Portia is an old friend of mine. Back in the years we went to the same school when my aunt was still alive but one day she just disappeared and we lost contact. Her family was loaded and they moved to South Africa but her dad lived in Cape Town and her mom lived in Johannesburg and that's where we met. We used to be great friend. I really missed my friend, yoh.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Is it me or does everyone else also see this triangle or should I say Rectangle.

Sipho - Portia

Ndumiso- Busi - Portia

Hmmm there's some kind of connection here.

What do you think will happen next???

The more Likes and Comments, the more inspired and I motivated I get to write the next insert.

Admin

[06/19, 11:43] Snr: INSERT 62

.

.

.

FRIDAY

Ndumiso's POV

Today is Friday and I am glad that the week has finally come to an end. I've been busy the whole week trying to take care of this company and acting happy family with Ndumiso's kid and girlfriend whom I think am falling in love with. I'm getting used to them being around and its not that hard as I thought it would be. Busi is really a wonderful girl with everything a man could ever ask for. I wouldn't mind being with her forever and it scares me because soon the truth

would come out and i would hate myself if I hurt her.

Busi said something about going out with an old friend so I decided that it would be best that she spoil herself for a while so I gave her my black card. I decided to take Sihle with me to work so that we could give his mama a break.

Sihle: dad is my wife gonna be there?

He said as we were driving to the office.

Me: (chuckled) yes she's gonna be there.

Sihle: good, can we please pop into the store and buy Mrs Langa a chocolate. (I looked at him confused)

Me: are you talking about your mom as in my Mrs Langa?

Sihle: no that's your Mrs Langa, I'm talking about my wife, Tumisani Langa.

Me: wish boy boy (I laughed)

This young man is still way too young and very cute.

Before we went to the office, we first drove to Pick n Pay to get Sihle's " wife" a chocolate then we drove to the office.

We arrived and I parked the car then took my laptop bag and we walked to the entrance of my company. We walked to the receptionist and I signed in, everyone was looking at Sihle who was

looking around as if he had lost something.

Melisa: sir is this your son? (she asked smiling)

Melisa is the receptionist at the front desk.

Me: yes this is my son, Sihle.

Melisa: wow he is really cute, he looks just like you, Hey Sihle.

Sihle: hi aunty (he smiled then kept looking around)

Me: I'll be in my office Melisa.

I held Sihle's hand and we walked to the elevator and got in, I pressed the

number to my floor and it went up. We got out and walked towards my office.

Sihle: dad this company is huge!! (he shouted)

Me: do you like it? (he nodded) one day this will be all yours.

Sihle: really!!? I can't wait..

We bumped into Tumisani who was coming out of my office with a file in her hand.

Sihle: my wife!!! (he let go of my hand and ran towards Tumisani with his hands up in the air, smiling)

Tumisani: hey sweetie (she bent down to his level and they hugged tightly)

Sihle: I missed you so much, I thought you forgot about me.

Tumisani: no never, you're my prince charming, I would never forget about you (she smiled revealing her cute dimples)

Me: uhmm (I cleared my throat)

Tumisani: oh good morning sir.

Me: morning tumisani, are you good?

Tumisani: yes sir, uhm I need you to read this file and sign it please. (she gave me the file that was in her hand)

Me: sure.

Tumisani: oh and sir you have a meeting

in half an hour.

Me: oh OK, do you have to sit in at the meeting?

Tumisani: no, not really.

Me: OK cool, could you please look after Sihle for me, please.

Tumisani: sure of course, I wouldn't mind taking care of this cute face (she smiled and kissed Sihle's cheek)

Sihle: yaaay!!! do it again, do it again (he screamed giving Tumisani his cheek again)

We both looked at each other and laughed at him.

Me: son, you be a good boy, don't give aunty a hard time.

Sihle: OK daddy, where is the chocolate?

Me: oh here (I gave him the chocolate and said my goodbyes)

I watched as they walked away hand in hand talking like old buddies. They look so cute together and seeing my sister so happy with kids warmed my heart. She was even glowing. I wish Gogo was here to see how her princess has grown.

.

Busi's POV

After Ndumiso and Sihle left, I took a shower, lotion and got dressed into a

blue high waist jean with a black crop top that almost covers my stomach and black DSL's, I tied my braids and took my purse with Ndumiso's black card that we fought over. I told him I didn't need it but he kept insisting so I just ended up taking it, he said I should think of him too so I have an idea in mind.

I took a taxi to the mall and it dropped me right at the mall. I spotted Portia at the entrance and my friend looked gorgeous. She was wearing a white crop vest with black jeans and white sandals. She looks so hot with that great figure of hers. Portia has a gorgeous body, she's not too thin or too fat, just medium,

with medium boobs and a great ass that look big in jeans. She has an African American accent because she is an African American of course, so you could imagine how she sounds.

Me: Portia!!! (I shouted excited)

Portia: Busi!!!

We hugged each other tightly with so much excitement and I really missed my friend.

Portia: damn girl you look beautiful, fuck that ass is still big as fuck (we giggled)

Me: nah look at you, all sexy in white and black, I missed you bitch.

Portia: I missed you too my bitch. Now

come, let's go bomb this mall with moola.

We walked into the mall holding hands. Portia is a very bubbly girl and she takes no shit from anyone. She fucks both men and women and this bitch loves them Dicks and VJ's. She's naturally crazy and I love that about her.

Portia: so Busi what happened in my absence, you look different girl. (she asked as we got into Foschini)

Me: you girl, a lot has happened And I've been through a lot. When my aunt died and you disappeared, I ended up on the streets and got saved by this sexy

gentleman whom I fell in love with and we started dating but his family hated me, I fell pregnant and his parents died because I was pregnant with his child, they couldn't take it because I was poor and thought I was only after his moola. His sister hated me with passion. Yeah, I have a son.

Portia: say what!!?? (she said shocked)

Me: yeah I gave birth to a baby boy named Sihle, he is three years old Now...

I narrated the whole story to her and she looked hurt at how Vuyo treated us and also pissed.

Portia: damn girl, you've been through a

lot, even being a prostitute, girl, you're strong. I'm proud of you Busi (she smiled and hugged me)

We shopped around buying everything our eyes could see, she told me about what happened to her but I felt like she wasn't telling me everything. She looked really pissed at some of the things she told me and I felt like she still wasn't over the fact that she was kidnapped.

Me: Gosh look at the time, we haven't even eaten yet..

We were at a lingerie store, I was looking for something sexy for the love of my life.

Portia: how about this one? we've been walking around for almost 5 hours or more, pick an outfit already, is the niggah that hot?

I smiled looking at the pink and white poke dotted lingerie in her hand.

Me: my man is over the level of hotness, he is flames!

Portia: damn you really love him, hey..

Me: with all my heart, that one is perfect.

I took the lingerie and we walked to the cashier who was busy with her nails. We paid and went to Spur for late lunch. It was already 16:45. We sat down and ordered our food.

Me: so babe, any man in your life? (I said taking a sip of my apple juice)

Portia: not yet....very soon..(I looked up at her and her eyes were fixed on the guy who had just walked into the restaurant)

He was very cute, wearing black jeans and white top with a Nike cap. He looked really yummy with pink lips but my man is even hotter. Portia was drooling over him...

Portia: fuck he's sexy (she said licking her lips)

Me: go for it girl.

Portia: watch and learn.

The guy started walking toward the seats on our direction busy on his phone when all of a sudden, as soon as he was passing our table, he tripped and fell as well as his phone..

Portia: oh my gosh, I am so sorry (she stood up and picked up the guy's phone and helped the sexy hunk up)

Guy: uh its OK, I wasn't looking at where I was going.

Portia: no it's my fault, my really sorry (she blushed pink)

People were looking at us and it was so embarrassing but as crazy as Portia is, she didn't give a fuck.

Guy: its OK madam.

Portia: no I feel really bad, what can I do to get your forgiveness, sir (she smiled naughtily)

Guy: such a beautiful girl like you shouldn't feel bad about anything, I am Luyanda. (he extended his hand and smiled with those sexy lips)

Portia: I'm Portia and this is my friend, Busi.

Luyanda: nice to meet you (we shook hands, smiling)

Portia: how about you join us, I'll pay, just to get your forgiveness for tripping you.

Luyanda: I'll Join you under one condition.

Portia: I'll do anything for you...(she mumbled under her breath with puppy eyes) uh I mean, what condition?

Luyanda: you give me your number and agree to go on a date with me.

Oh.my. Gosh. These two are seriously flirting right in front of me.

Portia: I'll even agree to marry to... (she mumbled smiling like an idiot) uh of course, why not.

Luyanda: great

He sat down and we enjoyed lunch together, I could sense that Portia really

liked this guy and she has a reason to, I mean he's really handsome, I must say. They kept flirting and stealing glances at each other and it was really funny. I can't believe that the almighty Portia Patkins has finally got her heart melted...

.

Tumisani's POV

Hanging around with Sihle is really awesome. He is a very adorable gentleman just like his father. I can't believe they actually bought me a chocolate. We spent the whole day together and even had pizza for lunch, while I was working and he was playing

around. It was getting late and I think Sihle was also getting tired so I packed my things and took my bag.

Me: come on baby, it's time to go.

Sihle: aaah aunty, I miss you already, I had so much fun today. (he smiled and took my hand)

Me: me too baby but I think your mama misses you too.

I opened the door and Ndumiso was about to knock..

Ndumiso: hey guys..

Sihle: hey dad, I had so much fun today, I wanna do this again, every single day!!
(he said excited)

Ndumiso: Tumisani what have you done to my son?

We laughed and I locked my office and we headed to the elevator.

Me: oh uh sir I was thinking maybe you guys could join my boyfriend and I for dinner tonight, it would be really nice to have dinner together and get to know each other.

Ndumiso: oh that would be great, I'll talk to Busi and I'll text you later, I'm sure Sihle would love that, right champ

Sihle: I love everything about my wife, dad. (he smiled)

Ncooh this boy is just too cute, he just

made my day. I can't wait to host them for dinner.

COMMENT, LIKE AND SHARE

[06/19, 11:44] Snr: INSERT 63

-
-
-
-

Busi's POV

I got home and my two handsomeness were busy playing together and they looked so cute. I closed the door and carried my bags to the lounge where

they were playing.

Me: my babies

Sihle: mama!! (he ran to me and hugged me, I kissed his head and smiled)

Ndumiso: my love (he stood up and came to me then pecked my lips)

Sihle: mama I had so much fun today, I met my wife and she kissed me and we had pizza and, and....(he said fast and excitedly)

Me: whooah easy tiger, what wife are you talking about? (I said confused)

Sihle: aunty tumisani, mama she is my wife mama.

Me: uh uh (I looked at Ndumiso confused and he was busy laughing) care to explain?

Ndumiso: I'll explain later, son go take a bath now, we going to your wife remember...

Sihle: of course, I've got a date tonight man.

He said running up the stairs excited. I looked at Ndumiso confused at why my son is calling his PA his wife. He kissed me again then took my bags, smiling.

Ndumiso: come babe (we walked upstairs to our room and he placed the bags on the floor)

Me: babe...

Ndumiso: relax babe, he just likes Tumisani a lot, Tumisani and I were friends before she became my PA, so we cool.

Me: oh OK and where are we going?

Ndumiso: Tumisani has invited us to her place for dinner, I was thinking we should go, as you can see Sihle really likes her and they are really fond of each other.

Me: oh OK that sounds great, let me go take a shower so we can go...(I said undressing myself)

Ndumiso: so how was shopping? (he

said also undressing as if I invited him to join me)

Me: it was great, oh babe can my friend tag along as well, please, I'm sure Tumisani wouldn't mind.

Ndumiso: sure, why not. The more the merrier.

Me: Thanks.

I called Portia and she was really keen to come so she agreed. Ndumiso and I took a innocent shower, I told him to wait till tonight, though he was really hungry for me, shame. I put on a dark blue floral dress which is just a centimeter above the knees with black

pumps and my new gold necklace which I had bought today during the shopping, I didn't bother with make up because I looked perfect so I just styled my braids.

Me: baby how do I look? (I said as he walked into the room)

Ndumiso: beautiful as always. (he kissed my cheek)

Me: Thanks my king, you look handsome.

He was wearing all white. White jeans, white shirt and white all stars, with this sexy built body, he could turn any girl wet by just looking at him. But too bad he's mine. I kissed him lightly but he deepened the kiss and held my waist,

the moment was beautiful, until....

Sihle: mama!! eeeeeww yuck, siies (he barged into our room without knocking and covered his eyes with his hands as he saw us kissing and his fathers hands was on my ass)

We looked at him and laughed.

Sihle: mama, how do I look? Do you think she will like it,?

Oh my gosh, what has that woman done to my son? Sihle has never asked of how he looked when we dressed him up and he has never like someone this much, especially when they've just met.

Me: my love you look handsome babe

don't worry, mama loves you just like this (I bent down and kissed his cheek and he smiled)

He was also dressed in all white just like his father and you could swear that this is the younger version of Ndumiso. They looked identical, I guess he is the real son of his father.

Sihle: OK now daddy, let's go and buy her flowers first. (we both looked at him shocked)

Me: haaaaiii no no, Ndumiso what has this woman done to my son, no I can't take this anymore. Deal with him yourself.

I took my phone and purse and walked downstairs leaving them arguing as Sihle kept telling his father what kind of flowers he wanted to get this, "tumisani" chick who has stolen my sons heart. I'm actually really jealous right now, I mean Sihle has never given me a present, just simply kisses and hugs which are so cute but I want my son back all to myself. They finally came downstairs and we got to the car and drove off to fetch Portia but first headed to the store for white roses and a box of Lindt chocolate. Don't even ask who's idea was it to get the chocolates as well. Sihle was all smiles as if he had just

seen God opening the gates of heaven.

.

Tumisani's POV

I was really happy that Ndumiso, Busi and Sihle were coming. I really wanted us to get along so I thought why not invite them over for dinner. I cooked up a storm. I made chicken stew, Lasagne and a few salads and of course desert as well. I really wanted us to have a good night together, its Friday after all.

After setting up the table and everything, I took a shower while Sipho was getting dressed as well. I wore a soft pink floral dress above the knees with black

sandals, I tied up my braids and I looked simple but gorgeous.

Sipho: you look beautiful my love. (he kissed my forehead)

Me: Thanks babe, you look super sexy.

He was wearing black jeans and a grey T shirt that hugged his muscles and it popped out. We walked downstairs together and he helped me place the glasses on the table. After a while, there was a knock at the door and I went to open up. They all stood there smiling at me. It was Ndumiso, Busi, Sihle and some other beautiful girl who looked like she wasn't from around here...

Me: good evening everyone, please come in.

Sihle: hi aunty (he smiled cutely)

I welcomed them in and hugged them all. I took them to the lounge and they sat down, Sihle looked really adorable, he was matching his father.

Sihle: you look beautiful my wife, and these are for you and you only. (he said giving me that bunch of flowers and Box of chocolates that he was holding)

Me: oh thank you my little dandelion (I smiled and kissed his cheek, he blushed so bright)

Busi: oh Tumisani this is my friend,

Portia. Chommie this is Tumisani.

Ndumiso's friend/ PA.

Portia: nice to meet you. Wow you're really beautiful (she smiled and I knew immediately that she was African American)

Me: oh thank you, its a pleasure to meet you. (I smiled back)

Busi: you have a beautiful home

Tumisani, I love the deco and everything (she said looking around, amused)

Me: thanks

Ndumiso: uh son, why the quietness, aren't you happy to see your wife? (he chuckled)

Sihle: oh don't worry dad, I'm saving the talk for later. (he smiled naughtily)

We all looked at him shocked, I giggled at his cuteness. Damn this boy is too good to be true.

Portia: oh my gosh Busi, how old is your son again?

Busi: sometimes I even forget..

Sihle: I'm three aunty (he chuckled)

Sipho walked into the room coming from the kitchen and as soon as his eyes landed on Portia, he stopped walking and looked around shocked

Me: oh uhm everyone, this is my boyfriend, Sipho. (I stood up and

introduced him)

He looked at me then Portia then everyone else. He totally zoned out for a few seconds as if he was confused about something.

Me: are you OK? (I whispered into his ear and nudged him)

Sipho: uhm (he cleared his throat) Hello everyone, nice to finally meet you all (he said shaking everyone's hands and they greeted each other, but hesitated when he got to Portia)

Sihle: so this is the Man that wants to steal my wife from me. No, no Dad this is unacceptable.

He frowned and crossed his arms on his chest looking cute as ever. The sight of him melted my heart, immediately.

.

Portia's POV

Life couldn't have been better, hey? I can't believe I'm seated right here in front of the devils son himself. For a second I thought it wasn't him but when he kept looking at me, it just hit me that it really is him. What makes this even more interesting is that after he had ruined my life, he still finds the courage to get another girlfriend and not just any kind of girl. This girl right here is really

beautiful with assets all in the right places, he got himself a real African Queen right here. I was shocked for a second because she looks exactly like Lindokuhle Phakade, the first biggest female gangster in SA. Could this be her daughter? I just want to rip Sophi's heart out of his chest right now. The way I am angry, it makes my blood boil.

Busi: babe are you OK? (she said looking at me concerned)

We are currently at the dinner table and the tension in this place is suffocating me.

Me: I'm fine love (I faked a smile)

I looked at Sipho who had his eyes fixed on me, I looked back at him with red blood shot eyes, my blood boiling and my chest pounding.

We started eating and they kept conversing in a conversation that I knew nothing about because I was stuck in my own little bubble. I was wondering if I should pull out my gun and shoot him or call my dad for advice. The anger running through my veins is unexplainable and I wonder how such an innocent girl ended up with a beast like him.

.

Sipho's POV

If the heavens could just open up and swallow me up right now, I wouldn't mind. I can't believe this is really her. I can't believe the one and only Portia Parking is sitting right here in front of me. I mean, the biggest female gangster that I used to date is right here my girlfriends house.

Now that she knows I'm here, she wouldn't hesitate to kill me. The hatred in her eyes says it all. I know my past was bad and all but I've moved on and I've changed to a better man. I don't like that my past is following me everywhere I go.

Tumisani: come with me (she whispered into my ear as she was clearing the table after dinner)

I followed her to the kitchen after excusing myself. She placed the dishes in the sink and looked at me with questioning eyes..

Tumisani: babe what the hell was going on in there? (she pointed towards the dinner room, irritated) and please don't tell me its nothing because that didn't look like nothing.

I sighed and pulled her into my arms and hugged her tightly, defeated.

Me: baby please just hold me. (I said

folding myself into her shoulder)

Tumisani: my love what is going on?
please talk to me (she said softly with a
worried tone)

She looked up at with her arms around
my neck. I desperately wanted to tell her
the truth but I don't want to put her life in
danger. I can't risk to put her in so much
danger, Portia is not one to mess with.
She will surely want revenge now that
she has seen me living a happy life.

Me: we have guests, can we just pretend
like nothing happened till they go, please.
(I said holding her waist and pecking
her lips, to calm her down)

Tumisani: if that's what you want.

She kissed my cheek and I smiled to assure her that I'm fine though she still looked worried. I helped her with Desert and we served it together. The night went smoothly and I felt much better when it was time for them to leave.

Sihle: Thanks for dinner aunty, I really enjoyed your cooking. (he said taking Tumisani's hand as we walked to their car)

Tumisani: it's always a pleasure my little munchkin (she smiled and kissed his cute little fingers)

Sihle: I hope you won't disappear on me

after this, I still want to see you my wife, even though you have another man in your life..(he said referring to me, I chuckled and everyone laughed except for Portia)

Tumisani: I can always leave him for you, baba.

Sihle: I would definitely love to have you all to myself.

Me: you two keep dreaming, she's mine and mine alone little man.

Sihle: we'll see about that, big man.

Busi: haaaii tumisani what magic have you used on my son, he can't stop talking about you.

Tumisani: ncooh I just have a good connection with kids.

Portia: how about you get your own...(she mumbled under her breath but I heard her)

Ndumiso: you said something Portia?
(he asked)

Portia: no, nothing, thanks for dinner, miss...uh...

Tumisani: Phakade (she smiled)

Shit!!!!!!

Portia: rightmiss Phakade and Sipho
(she said a bit shocked but stayed calm)

Tumisani has just made the biggest

mistake of her life right now, she has just sold herself to the devil. Now Portia knows everything about us. Shit.

She looked at me and smiled fakely then hugged Tumisani with an evil smirk then she hugged me but longer then expected and whispered into my ear..." this is only the beginning ". I almost choked on my own saliva, I tried to keep calm but I felt like I was suffocating. As soon as their car drove out of the driveway, I ran straight into the house. I just want to drown my sorrows in alcohol. I hate it when one problem is solved then another comes barking at your door. Can't I just have peace. Her voice kept

ringing in my head continuously, " this is only the beginning ". I drank the vodka straight from the bottle as I went crazy, this woman brings out the beast in me. I remembered how my father used to make me sell drugs and beat me up when I refused. The picture of my mothers dead body popped up in my mind. I just wanna be happy, don't I deserve happiness.

Tumisani: baby please stop!!!! (she cried as I kept stabbing the broken glasses of the bottle into my hand)

Blood was everywhere and I had lost my mind. She sat on the floor weeping as she saw the blood all over the floor.

Now I know why people used to call me crazy.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

I suggest y'all go read back on the insert that Tumisani was kidnapped by Bra Skopp, there's a link between the inserts. Remember Siphon had a brain disorder.... That's the only clue I'm giving you guys. It's Hidden secrets after all.

Admin

[06/19, 11:44] Snr: CONTINUATION

- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV

I sat there crying as I watched him destroying himself, watching as he stabbed deep into his hand. Blood gushing everywhere. I cried for him to stop but he never listened to me. He kept stabbing himself until he lost conscious and collapsed to the floor.

Me: Siphos!!! (I cried)

Fear overtook my body and I started shaking. My heart was pounding hard in my chest. I rushed to his unconscious

body covered in a pool of blood and cried my heart out. Why would he do this to me? Who shall I call? What do I do? I sat on the floor and put his head on my thighs, crying.

Me: baby please don't do this to me (I cried)

My heart was heavy, my hands were stained with his blood and my dress as well. He can't leave me too, I have no one left in this world but him. Why is God punishing me like this? What have I done...

Me: babe please open your eyes (I sniffed) waa, wait here, I'll, I'll call the

ambulance.

I quickly stood up and took my phone from the table, tears streaming down my cheeks and my hands blood shot red... I quickly dialed 911..

After the ambulance had assured me that they were on their way, I hanged up and sat back on the floor with him in my arms, both of us in a pool of blood. I silently cried, my body trembling. They barged into the house and took his unconscious body into the ambulance, my heart broke when they put him on that stretcher and into the van...

Me: I'm coming with you (I said walking

towards the van to one of the lady's that came with the van)

Lady: no madam, we'll take it from here, you need to freshen up, you're covered in blood.

Me: no I'm coming with you, he needs me right now.

Lady: don't worry about him, we'll take care of him.

Me: no, please just let me come with you (I said in a scratchy voice, ready to break down)

Lady: madam you're not mentally stable at the moment and I'm sure he wouldn't like to see you like this when he wakes

up.

I look into the van and he is lying there
lifeless.

I'll cont..

[06/19, 11:44] Snr: CONTINUATION

#2

.
.br/>.

I look into the van and he is lying there
lifeless with an oxygen mask on, I feel
like my heart just broke into a million
pieces. Tears rush down my cheeks and

I just want to die.

Me: uh OK (I sniffed) what, what hospital are you taking him to? (I said to the lady, wiping my tears)

Lady: Groote Schuur hospital, you can come see him tomorrow, we'll do all we can for him, please take care of yourself.

I gave them the necessary details that they needed and they took off and left. I rushed back into the house and looked at the pool of blood on the floor, I broke down and cried. Why did he do that to himself? What was so bad that he decided to hurt himself like this? How am I going to tell Buhle (his sister) this?

What will I tell her? I have to tell her what happened, its her brother after all. I need a friend now, I need a shoulder to cry on. The scene of him stabbing himself kept playing in my mind. Watching him being so angry and aggressive scared me. I never want to experience that ever again. After crying myself to sleep, I woke up the next day hoping that it was all a dream. I fell asleep on the couch still in my blood stained dress, I looked around and the sun was shining, there was still blood on the floor. I looked at the time and it was 08:30, I had 3 missed calls from Ndumiso and two messages as well. I decided to clean up the place and

take a shower. After I finished with the cleaning then took a shower, I wore my grey Nike tracksuits and tied my hair into a messy bun. I went downstairs took my phone and car keys then left. I connected my phone with the Bluetooth in the car and dialed Buhle's number, I started the car as her phone started to ring and I drove out of the driveway..

Buhle: Buhle speaking, hello.

Me: uhm hey Buhle, it's me Tumisani.

Buhle: oh Tumisani, how are you?

I wanted to lie and say I was fine but my heart was heavy.

Me: (sigh) I'm not fine Buhle, (my voice

got scratchy and tears were close to coming down)

Buhle: tumisani are you OK? you're driving please park the car and talk to me?

I pulled up on the side of the road not too far from my house and stopped the car, tears came rushing down my cheeks.

Buhle: talk to me tumisani, you're making me worried.

Me: S, s, siph... (I cried)

Buhle: (gasp) what? did anything happen to my brother? Tumisani please tell me (she said panicking)

Me: Sipho has been hospitalised. (I heaved)

Buhle: what!!?? (she screamed) what, what happened?

Me: please come to Groote Schuur hospital, I'm on my way there (I sniffed and wiped my tears)

Buhle: is he OK? (she said worried)

Me: I don't know Buhle, I really don't know but please don't worry (I said trying to convince her yet I'm not convinced myself)

Buhle: OK I'm on my way.

She hanged up and I started the car again and kept driving towards Groote

Schuur. I phoned Ndumiso and told him that I wasn't coming in at the office and he was worried but I told him I'll explain later because I wasn't thinking straight at the moment. I got to the hospital and asked where Sipho's room was, she told me where it was but she said I couldn't go see him because I wasn't family and I was panicking.

Me: can you please just let me speak to the doctor at least, please.

Receptionist: madam we can't let anyone who is not family see or have any information about the patient.

Me: but I'm not just anyone!! (I shouted

on top of my voice) I'm his girlfriend for crying out loud! (I shouted)

" Tumisani, I've got this"

I turned around and saw Buhle standing not too far from me, I sighed in relieve and hugged her tightly. She talked to the receptionist and they finally allowed us to see him because Buhle was family.

We rushed up the stairs to ward 16 and my heart was pounding in my chest. We got to his ward but I couldn't take it. I couldn't bare to go in that room and see him like that.

Me: uh Buhle, you go ahead, I'll wait for you here.

I said sitting down on the bench outside the room.

Buhle: no Tumisani, why are you not going with me?

She looked at me and I just wanted to cry. That picture of him stabbing himself was stuck in my mind and I couldn't take it.

Me: I, I just need some air, go ahead.

She hugged me then walked into the room. I sat down with my head in my hands. I can't believe all this really happened, it feels like a dream that I wish I could wake up from. After a while Buhle came back out again.

Buhle: he wants to see you Tumi.

I sighed. I can't do this, I feel scared that I might break down in front of him, looking at him might bring back that horrible image of him lying dead in a pool of blood.

Me: I, I can't...

Buhle: please, Tumisani he needs you.

I looked at her and she looked exhausted. I stood up and walked to the door, I opened the door and stepped in. I breathed deeply and looked up. He was lying on the bed in a hospital gown and his hand bandaged attached to a drip. He looked at me standing at the door

and it broke my heart to see him like that.

Sipho: babe (he said in a low voice)

I walked towards his bed and sat on the chair next to the bed. Tears pricked my eyes and he took my hand into his..

Should I be angry at him or should I feel pity for him? I don't know what I should feel

Sipho: babe I'm sorry, I'm sorry for scaring you like that, I'm so sorry my love.

Me: why did you do it? (I said looking down at our hands)

Sipho: I, I, (he hesitate) babe I promise

I'll explain as soon as I get out of here, please don't worry about me, I'm sorry for scaring you.

Me: did I do something wrong? was it something I said or was it because I invited people for dinner?

Sipho: babe, its not you, don't beat yourself up, its me.

Me: Sipho why the fuck would you do this to yourself? (I said getting pissed now)

Sipho: babe I'm not in the right state of mind right now..

Me: which gave you more reason to stab yourself, do you know how scared I was!?

(I shouted) I was so scared I thought I had lost you (I said in a scratchy tone, my voice breaking) Siphos why are you doing this to me? what if you died? do you also want to leave me here all by myself? I don't have anyone else in this world Babe..(I cried)

Siphos: my love, I'm sorry (he said squeezing my hand) I promise it won't ever happen again, please forgive me, I won't do it again.

I looked up at him with teary eyes, he wiped my tears and kissed my hand.

Siphos: I love you.

I looked at him deep in the eyes and I

feel like the same old Siphos is slowly rising within him. I think of how he continuously stabbed himself and he looked like the old Siphos that had me kidnapped. I fear him and I don't know if I'm safe around him but I can't help the fact that I love him. I want to be with him but I'm scared.

Me: I'm scared (I blurt out and break the eye contact)

Siphos: babe, no, no, Tumisani I'm not gonna hurt you (he said hurt, I looked down as a tear escaped my eye) you don't trust me anymore?

Me: I, I do..

Sipho: but you're scared of me (sigh)
I'm sorry that you had to see that side of
me babe, I'm sorry for scaring you baby,
please don't be scared of me, I won't
hurt you Tumisani (he looked at me
with teary eyes and a tear escaped his
eye, my heart sank)

I sat down on his bed and cupped his
cheeks.

Me: I trust you my love (I pecked his lips
and he held my waist) I love you so
much that seeing you like this breaks
my heart (I said softly)

Sipho: I promise I will tell you everything
as soon as I get out of here, I promise

(he kissed my forehead) but Tumisani please, please just don't leave me, I know I'm crazy but just don't leave me. (he pulled me into his arms and I rest my head on his chest)

Sipho: I'm nothing without you, if you leave me I'll go crazy. (he said shaking)

I looked at him shocked and I somehow believe that Sipho needs help, mentally.

My heart bleeds to see the person I've learnt to love, in this state. Can't I just find happiness. I need peace, God.

Please.

I silently prayed.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

[06/19, 11:44] Snr: INSERT 64

-
-
-

TWO DAYS LATER

Portia's POV

Its been two days since the day of the dinner and its been the heaviest two days of my life. I've been digging more about Siphos and I've come to realize that he has been working under cover. I've found out that he hasn't killed anyone in

two years and seems like he's changed to a different man. Since I left that house that night I can't stop thinking about him, the way that girl looks at him pisses me off and gives me more reason to revenge. I've also realized that I haven't fully gotten over him. I might hate him and stuff but he will always be my first love. I gave him my virginity and I would do anything just to be in his arms again. But that doesn't mean I should not make him pay for what he had done to me. I hate him with passion but what do I do with the little love that I still have for him. I heard that after we left that night he went crazy and

stabbed his arm multiple times. That is not new because even when I was with him, he won't go crazy for every little thing. I thought he need help too but I never took him serious because be was over protective of me when we used to date but little did I know that he was using me. I decided to pay him a visit at the hospital today since he's getting discharged, I know everything about this man, I started stalking him since the day my father rescued, which also made me become more angry with him yet I didn't know he had a girlfriend and worked under cover.

I walked into his hospital ward and he is

sleeping peacefully on the bed. I stand next to his bed and just stare down at him, he still looks handsome as always with his buffed body and sexy lips. But the hatred in me is telling me to choke him and kill him right here, I want to desperately pull out my gun and shoot him right now. The way I hate this man sickens me.

Me: I hate you so much Sipho. (I said sitting down next to him and watched as he slept)

Me: you ruined my life, you took my heart and my virginity, I hate you with passion.

He moved and opened his eyes slowly. The shock on his face when he saw me was priceless, he quickly sat up straight and looked right into my eyes, as he knows I always get weak when I look into his eyes but that was when I was stupid, I am much more than smart right now.

Me: baby (I smiled brightly)

Sipho: Portia...(he said trying to keep calm yet failed)

Me: Babe you know, I really missed you so much. (I said holding his hand seductively, I went closer to him and sat on his lap)

Sipho: Portia....(he said trying to get me off of him)

Me: oh you didn't miss me, well of course you didn't, I'm a prostitute after all. I'm a " one night stand" just like you used to call me.

Sipho: what, what are you doing here?
please get off of me...(he said irritated now)

Me: don't create a scene now S. (that's what I used to call him because I couldn't pronounce his name properly. Imagine a African American saying, " Sipho" , it would sound weird)

Sipho: Portia can we not do this right

now please, can we talk like civilized people, I beg of you.

Me: oh you want to be civilized, (I giggled sarcastically) he wants to be civilized (I laughed out loud) the niggah wants to be civilized when all he's done to me was turn me uncivilized. Are you serious right now?

Sipho: Portia please....

Me: shut up, I'll show you what's civilized, (I kissed his cheeks and all over his face)

Sipho: Portia, stop. (he pulled me away)

Me: oh are you scared of little Tumisani, ncooh how cute, she's really beautiful

hey. I could eat her up any day, if only she was bisexual.

Sipho: shut up (he said angrily)

Me: do you ever raise you voice at me again, now listen and listen very carefully. I've come back for revenge but looks like I'll go back to New York with two things. (I smiled)

Sipho: what do you mean?

Me: oh babe, I want to kill you but I've realized that I actually still kinda like you, so if you don't wanna die along with your little bitch " tumisani", you better do as I say because that's the only thing that will make me feel better about my

revenge. So now you have to choose, either you break up with her and come home with me to New York or I kill her And take over your properties.

Sipho: what!!!?? that's fucking crazy, I'm not going anywhere with you ...

Me: oh really? let me tell you something new, Dad's here with me and I'm sure you know what that means. Since your dead is out of the line, Monster is also breaking down with her family issues that leaves my dad the only one in line. He's the number one mafia now, so it's either we do this the hard way or....

Sipho: you will have to kill me first

before you kill Tumisani. (he said pushing me off his lap)

Me: no, I think its better that you live, I missed you so I think I'll keep you and kill her and plus, that she doesn't really satisfy you like I used to do. So Siphobreak up with her And come home with me or else I'm taking her body to New York, your choice.

I heard footsteps coming towards his ward And I knew it was Tumisani, so I quickly sat on his lap and smashed my lips onto his and kissed him. The door spun open and Tumisani walked in...

Tumi: babe I bought you some

muff....aaah.auh. (she looked at us shocked and I pulled out and stood up quickly)

Sipho's eyes were wide open out of shock and our poor Phakade had tears in her eyes....

Tumi: uh uhm I'm sorry for interrupting....(she turned around to leave).

Sipho: no babe, its not what you think....

Some lady also came in and Tumisani gave her the things that were in her hands And then she barged out of room, with tears rolling down her cheeks.

Perfect.

Lady: what is going on here? (she looked at us shocked)

Sipho: Bbbbuuh....(he hesitated and got off the bed quickly).

Lady: Who the fuck is this And why is Tumisani crying?

Sipho: Buhle I need you to go sign the discharge papers now, I need to sort this out immediately. Please she can't leave me, please....(he said panicking)

Me: I'll be on my way. (I smirked)

Buhle: you're not going anywhere, who are you?

Me: that's for me to know and for you to find out. Bye babe (I kissed his cheek)

I walked out of the room smiling, perfect. Now all my plans will slowly unfold itself into it's rightful places. My plan of making Siphon break up with Tumisani is working just good. I want him to come with me back to New York so that I can take over his companies and kill him in New York tho I'm having second thoughts about the killing him, maybe I should have him all to myself. I would do anything just to have my sweet revenge. I'm Portia Patkins after all.

.

Ndumiso's POV

I feel so restless now a days and it's

making me worried. Tumisani hasn't been coming to work for the past few days and it's making me worried. I can't get a hold Siphos and that's even worse. Tumisani hasn't told me anything which also makes me worried. I can't do anything because she sees me as her boss and Busi might think that I have a thing for her. Yet I can't keep the idea of my sister being in danger out of my head.

I had just finished with work and I was driving home when I got a call from Tumisani.

Me: hello, Tumisani.

Tumisani: uh uhm Hey, how are you?
(she said in a scratchy voice and that
broke my heart immediately)

Me: tumisani are you OK? (I said
worried)

Tumi: uh uhm y- yeah I'm fine, I, I'm just
tired.

Me: no you're not OK, I'm coming over to
you place (I said taking a turn to the
direction of her house)

Tumi: no there's no need for that, I just
wanted to ask if I can take the few days
off please.

Me: I'm on my way.

I hanged up And drove like a maniac

down Claremont. I got to her house and ran to her door. I knocked and she opened the door and her eyes were red and puffy as if she has been crying. I got in and closed the door.

Me: what happened? (I said as we sat down and I hugged her tightly)

Tumi: nothing, I'm fine.

Me: you can't lie to me Tumisani, I can see that you're not well.

Tumi: (sigh) who is Portia?

I looked at her confused. For a second I almost didn't recognize the name but then I remembered that it was Busi's friend. But why is she asking about

Portia...

Me: Portia is Busi's friend, why?

Tumi: no, I shouldn't be bombarding you with my problems, you shouldn't have come. I'm fine, I can solve this on my own. I'm sorry for worrying you.

Me: what are you talking about Tumisani, I'm your brother....(I blurted out And stopped myself before I could say anything else)

She looked at me shocked and tears welled up in her eyes

Me: uhm I'm sorry, I meant you're like a sister to me and I'm like a brother you so it's OK for you to uhm bombard me with

your problems.

She looked at me for a long time then let her tears down. Gosh I just opened up old wounds. I don't know why I just said that but I just felt the need to.

Me: Tumisani please talk to me... (I pulled her onto my chest And she cried)

Tumisani: don't do that please, you sound just like him, why do you sound like him, don't do that to me please, I need him more than anything right now.

Hearing my sister saying that broke me deeply, I didn't realize that she needed me that much And hearing her say that broke my heart really deep. I don't like

seeing her like this, who did this to her?
where the hell is Siphon. I can't take this
anymore, I have to tell her the truth and I
don't care who it hurts as long as my
sister is happy....

Me: Tumsa, I have to tell you
something....

She wiped her tears and looked up at
me.

Me: The truth is...

Siphon barged into the house along with
some lady and he looked worried, his
hand was bandaged as if he was in
hospital. He looked straight at me and I
know he heard everything I was about to

say.

Sipho: Tumisani, please its not what you think, let me explain, we have to talk about what happened.

What is he talking about, did he hurt my sister. I looked at him then his hand and then Tumisani. If this idiot laid his hand on my sister I swear I'll kill him. I

immediately tensed up and I was now pissed. Tumi: I saw what I saw Sipho, there is nothing to talk about.. (she said through sobs)

Buhle: it's not what you think Tumi, let him explain.

Tumi: of course you'll take his side, he's

your brother after all. (she said wiping her tears)

Me: what the fuck is going on here? (I said pissed)

Sipho: babe please, I beg you let me explain. (he came closer to her And touch her arm but she yanked it away)

Tumi: don't touch me...(she said annoyed)

I stood up and took Sipho's arm, pissed, I walked him to the back yard which I don't know how my legs found the way but we ended up at the backyard.

Sipho: dude what the fuck were you thinking by going to tell her the truth!!??

(he said pissed)

Me: don't fucking shout at me, why the fuck is my sister crying man!? what have you done to her? (he said looking at him ready to hit the shit out of him)

Sipho: dude relax I haven't done anything, man that Portia bitch, nxeh (he clicked his tongue)

Me: wait, you know her?

Sipho: man my dad has got me into serious shit with the Americans man, I'm in deep shit.

Me: what!!?

Sipho: back in the days my dad made me Kidnap Portia when she moved to

SA, her father is the biggest mafia alive after my father. We kidnapped her and exported her to Mexico for prostitution and then her father rescued her and they disappeared, now they are back and she wants revenge, she wants me back because I dated her to make my fathers plans succeed, she wants to kill us Man.

Me: shit motherfucker what shit have you gotten my sister into, wait, by "us" what do you mean?

Sipho: she wants to kill Me And Tumisani to get her revenge and I think she has also found out that Tumi is Lindo's daughter And she and Lindo used to hate each other back then but

Then Lindo was in prison.

Me: shit man, we have to tell Tumi the truth, but why is she crying?

Sipho: mxm Portia came to visit me at the hospital and created a scene And kissed me, Tumi caught us and now she thinks I'm cheating on her with your girlfriends friend.

Me: Gosh, no, I'm taking my sister somewhere far until you sort yourself out, I can't have her risking her life like this man.

Sipho: no dude, I need this woman more than anything right now.

Me: and she needs her brother more

than anything right now, I'm planning a business trip to France. I can't have her here risking her life because your past is haunting you, no that's not fair.

Sipho: but...just let me think about it at least please, I just need to find a way to explain to her that I'm not cheating on her.

Me: I'm giving you till Tomorrow.

Sipho: haaii but you know her stubborn your sister is, I need more time.

Me: Time is what I don't have when it comes to the safety of my sister.

I opened the door and walked in, leaving him there thinking hard. I walked to the

lounge and Tumisani was sitting there deep in her thoughts.

Me: Tumi (I sat next to her and held her hands) I need you to let him explain plz, hear him out, I'm not saying he was right but just let him explain, there is always two sides of a story, please.

Tumi: OK

Me: OK, I'm giving you a few days off but we have a business trip this weekend.

Tumi: OK Thanks, I would love a business trip right now. (she rolled her eyes, a habit I've recognized since I came back from the dead, lol. She never used to do that)

Me: take care of yourself please and don't hesitate to call.

I hugged her And kissed her forehead. I've been dying to do that, I miss kissing my princess. She looked at me weirdly and I smiled. I swear I would give my life away for this girl, any day. She is the only reason I live. Now I have to find a way to get this Portia chick out of the picture. Any one that hurts my sister goes nowhere else but six feet deep. I don't care if she's the daughter of the devil himself, as long as my sister comes first. I took a bullet for her and died yet came back to life and I would do it again if I have to. She is my life.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

I'm sorry for leaving y'all hungry. I'm trying my best to make time for you guys.

Admin

[06/19, 11:44] Snr: INSERT 65

- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV

I look over at him seated across me, looking worried and scared. If hurt is the word to explain how I feel, then that is a lie. I'm over the limit of hurt, my heart feels broken. I can't believe that I caught them kissing, I mean he only met the girl a few days ago and now his tongue is down her throat. I tried to tell myself it was all a lie but I can't keep lying to myself too. I don't know what explanation or lie he wants to tell me but I pray to God he tells me the truth because I'm sick of people lying to me.

Me: Don't even think of lying to me, because I swear I will never forgive you if you lie to me.

I said looking at him pissed, I had finally calmed down and I could now think straight. I don't know why there is some sort of connection between me and Ndumiso but it feels real. I feel like my heart is connected to him in some sort of way. When I'm in his arms I feel safe just like I used to feel when I was in Dumi's arms, or maybe its just my mind playing games with me, maybe I'm just hallucinating..

Sioho: babe, it's not what you thought.

Me: no that's not how you gonna start explaining, how about you start by why you stabbed yourself two days ago?

Sipho tell me the truth, I deserve to know

what's going on in the life of the man I've fallen in love with, don't you think I deserve to know?

He looked at him with a serious expression and he just sighed and scratched his head, nervously.

Sipho: I, I,...(he hesitated) Long time ago when I was still young, I told you my father used to make me sell drugs and live the gangster life, one day he came home and told me that he has a job for me. That time I had just met Portia, we attended different schools but one day we met and we started dating, I had fallen in love with her the same way she fell for me. Then my father crushed all

my dreams by telling me that Portia is his worst enemies daughter and he wants his revenge using her. He made me kidnap Portia and we exported her to Mexico for prostitution. Her father is one of the biggest Mafia's in America and he rescued her after we sold her off to prostitution. I did some pretty bad things to get by injecting her body with drugs , all this was done under my fathers influence tho I really loved her back then. But after she was rescued by her father, they disappeared and we never saw them again. But now the Americans are back and they are after me. Portia wants revenge for what I did to her and her

father is now the most powerful since my father is dead and Monster is slowly fading. So yeah, she is after us, but I think she still has feelings for me but babe what you saw was a misunderstanding, she forced herself onto me, I swear I never intended to kiss her, Tumisani trust me, I would never hurt you like that. I stabbed myself that day I saw her because she was my first love and I gave her my heart before my father made me kidnap her but what I didn't know was that she was sleeping with my bestfriend behind my back, he was blackmailing her and because she loved me, she decided to accept

sleeping with him, so I went crazy when I saw her and she's the reason why I'm crazy today...

I looked at him shocked with my mouth open and my eyes popped out. I can't believe what I'm hearing, I want to believe him but it's just too much to comprehend. I lie back on the couch and sigh. How do I get past this? How do I move on knowing that some American woman is after him or maybe us?

Sipho: babe I'm sorry, I'm so sorry for putting you into this, I swear if there's a way for me to change all this then I'll definitely do it. I'm sorry.

He sat next to me and pulled me onto his chest. I'm speechless, I don't even know what to say, my mouth is dry, totally.

Sipho: baby please say something, please just say something, shout at me, hit me, I don't care just talk to me. (he said hugging me tighter.)

I don't understand why God keeps throwing all sorts of problems in my way, I just want peace.

Me: Sipho when am I gonna get peace? (he said softly) when will I ever rest, does this world want me to die so I can have peace?

Sipho: babe don't say that, we'll get through this.

He kiss my head and I sit up straight.

Me: what's your plan? (I said seriously)

Sipho: what do you mean?

Me: I mean what's are you gonna do about her? unless she's here to have you back as her lover? Then maybe we wouldn't have to worry about that.

Sipho: babe what are you saying, I'm not getting back with her, I already have you (he kissed my cheek) She has conditions tho.

Me: babe, I'm ready to support you through every step of the way, I own you

that much because you were with me when I was dealing with my mom, i don't care if we have to die in the process well after all I have no one that will attend my funeral, as long as I'll die with you.

I smiled and he pulled me onto his lap smiling.

Sipho: I love you so much, I don't know what I'll be without you.

I wrapped my arms around him and kissed him passionately. It's time I stand my ground and stand by him, he was with me when I asked him to help me with killing my mom, I won't let him go especially when I know he needs help

mentally. I'll get him into therapy because he is still traumatised about all that's happened in his life. He needs me and I can't leave him. I know what he did to Portia was wrong but who am I to judge, his father made him do all those things, I'm sure we all know how evil Bra Skopp is.

Me: I love you too. (I kissed his cheek and got off his lap)

Sipho: I missed you...(he pulled me back into his lap and wrapped his arms around me)

Me: babe....(I smiled) I wanna cook, I'm sure you're hungry.

Sipho: I'm hungry for you (he planted kisses all over my face and smiled)

Me: you smell like hospital Sipho, go take a bath first..

Sipho: haaww baby (he chuckled)
Thank you Tumisani.

Me: for?

Sipho: for being here for me, thank you for supporting me, your presence means a lot to me babe.

Me: don't thank me, I love you and I care about you, but I need you to promise me something.

Sipho: what is it?

Me: promise me that once all of this is over, you'll go to therapy, you haven't fully healed my love.

Sipho: you're right, I'll go. (he smiled)

Me: Thank you (I hugged him)

If life keeps throwing all these problems at me, the only way to solve it is by fighting it, I have to stand my ground and be strong. I can't break every time a rock is thrown at me, I have to stand up and overcome all my obstacles. I love this man and the best thing to do is to stand by him. He needs me.

.

THE NEXT DAY

Yanda's POV

Me: I like this...

Portia: oh you do (she sat on my lap facing me and kissed me hungrily)

I held her big ass and perfect figure and squeezed her ass. We were at my house, enjoying our self's. Portia and I have become friends since she accidentally tripped me. She's a bubbly person in nature and I like that about her. We've kept it at a no strings attached level and I don't mind playing around with a beautiful African American like her.

Portia: aaahh aahh (she moaned as I sucked her breasts and squeezed her

ass)

I stripped her naked and she started riding me on the couch. She moved up and down on my dick and the sensation is amazing. She is so warm and it feels good.

Portia: yes, aaahh oouhh (she moaned and went faster and faster)

Our skin clapping against each other, her nails deep in my skin and my hands squeezing her huge juicy ass. Our moans and groans made music in the house. I could sense that her legs were shaking so I switched the position and lie her on the couch facing me, I get on

top of her and fuck the shit out of her sweet wet pussy. She moans louder as my dick goes deeper into her, I groan in pleasure and I'm sweating heavily....

Portia: aaahh you're so fucking good, yes!!! (she screamed)

I held her waist and thrust deep as I feel that I'm almost ready to come...

Portia: I'm cumming baby...

Me: me too!!

I thrust one more time and we both cum at the same time...

Us: aaaaahh (we breath deeply)

I fall on top of her, still inside her and

kiss her cheek, she wraps her arms around my body and kiss my chest.

Me: That was amazing.

Portia: yeah that was awesome, ready for round two (she smirks seductively)

Me: Maybe we should take this to the room.

I smash my lips onto hers and kiss her softly. Her hand travels down my body to my erected shaft, she starts massaging it and I groan in her mouth. I keep kissing her and finger her as she massages my dick still laying on the couch. All of a sudden the door busts open and Zinhle barges in, I jump up in

shock and cover my lower body with a pillow, I pass Portia two pillows as well and she covers herself too. Zinhle stands there with a shocked expression yet pissed.

Zinhle: you son of a bitch!! (she said pissed)

Me: Zee...

Zinhle: don't fucken call me, am I not enough for you Yanda, how many times do you wanna hurt me, huh? (she said pissed without a single tear)

I was glad that she wasn't crying because her tears make me weak, the last thing I need right now is her crying

in front of Portia.

Me: Zee,I, I...

Zinhle: who is this bitch? (she said looking at Portia who was now half dressed.)

Portia: call me bitch one more time and see what I'll do to you.

She said putting on her top and was calm as if my girlfriend had not just caught us having sex on the couch.

Zinhle: the audacity you have to still talk, you slut, you sleep with my man and still show me attitude, you bitch!!

The next thing I see is Portia's hand slapping Zinhle, she looked at her

angrily and slapped Portia back.

Zinhle: who the fuck gave you the right to smack me..

Portia: you don't know me bitch (she gave her two hot slaps and looked at her with red furious eyes)

Zinhle: well you don't know me, either (she pushed her back onto the couch and started throwing punches at her, I stood there like a helpless Man and watched how these two woman were fighting each other over me. I quickly got dressed and pulled them apart as I saw Portia's nose was bleeding. I pulled Zinhle off of her, damn my girl fights like

a man, lol.

Zinhle: leave me alone Yanda, let me show this bitch what I'm capable of, you think this is " America" (she said trying to sound like an american) bitch this is South Africa, you don't just walk up here with your thin ass and steal peoples boyfriends.

She pushed me and charged towards Portia and gave her three smacks which sounded like fire, Portia pushed her and I pulled Zinhle into my arms...

Me: enough!!!! (I shouted)

Zinhle: Shut up, listen here and listen very carefully. Bitch this is my

hometown, I don't give a fuck who you are, this is just a piece of my mind just to show you how not to mess with a Kasi girl, I hope you've learnt your lesson. Oh and Yanda, we're done. It's over. I'm sick of you always hurting me, fuck you, fuck your sick ass and fuck this bitch. nxeh (she clicked her tongue and barged out)

I looked over at Portia and her nose was bleeding, her hair was all over the place and she looked pissed.

Me: babe ...(I said tempting to touch her)

Portia: don't fucking touch me (she stood up and took her bag)

Me: babe please calm down..

Portia: You fool, do you know who I am (she said in that african american accent) do you fucking know who my daddy is? Well you've just played with fire. Now here's some news for you, my name is Portia Patkins. Go look it up.

She pushed me aside and walked out as well.

What the fuck? Wait, that name sounds familiar. I'm sure I've heard it somewhere or maybe seen it in my dads office once or twice....

.

Busi's POV

Ndumiso has been acting weird lately and I'm worried about him. He now works till late and is always tired. On the other hand, Sihle can't stop talking about Tumisani. I don't know what that woman has given my son but whatever it is, its really strong. It's Thursday today and I have a date with Portia which means, Sihle is going to work with Ndumiso but he's angry that Tumisani isn't working, because she took a few days off work. I wonder why, Ndumiso doesn't wanna tell me anything and he's been stressed lately.

Sihle: but dad why isn't she working today? (he whined)

We are at the breakfast table and Sihle keeps complaining, while his dad is busy in his own mind.

Ndumiso: son aunty isn't feel well, she needs to rest.

Sihle: but can't we at least go visit her.

Ndumiso: I don't think that's a good idea.

Sihle: but daddy it's gonna be boring at the office without her, I want aunty!!

He whined and I could sense that Ndumiso was getting irritated. I looked at him and he was really annoyed, I wonder what's wrong with him.

Me: baby do you rather wanna come with me, I'm going to meet aunty Portia.

I smiled at him, Ndumiso looked at me as if he has seen a ghost.

Sihle: it's better than going to work with daddy when Aunty is working so yeah, I'll come with you.

Me: OK go put on your shoes.

Ndumiso: I'll be on my way, bye son have fun (he gave him a high five)

Sihle ran up the stairs and I turned my attention to Ndumiso, I stood in front of him and fiddled with his tie...

Me: babe what's wrong with you ? (I said worried)

Ndumiso: nothing my love, I'm just tired.

Me: you're not yourself these days and I'm worried.

Ndumiso: I'm fine babe (he pecked my lips) I'm just stressed because of work, I need Tumisani back.

Me: is she alright?

Ndumiso: uh yeah she's just going through a lot, I guess. I have to go

He hugged me and kissed my cheek, then walked out. I wonder why Tumisani is so important to everyone, it's like she's some kind of diamond. I just hope Ndumiso won't be stressed like this all the time.

We got to the mall and met up with

Portia, we walked to her and hugged her.

Me: babe what happened?

I said referring to her nose that had a plaster on it.

Portia: oh it's nothing serious, I just knocked myself, how are you ? (she smiled)

We walked to Spur and sat down, Sihle went to the kids section to play.

Me: I'm fine, how are you? How's things with that dude? (I smiled naughtily)

Portia: aagh please that asshole, we were doing fine until his bitch caught us having sex on his couch.

Me: what!!?? he has a girlfriend? (I said shocked)

Portia: yeah the bitch had the nerve to start a fight with me, mxxm. (she rolled her eyes)

Me: oh my gosh, that's crazy...

We ordered and I called Sihle to come eat, we started eating and talking more about her so called, " I knocked myself" ...

Sihle: Aunty!!!! (she pointed at the direction of where Tumisani and her boyfriend were walking towards)

Sihle: My wife!!!! (he shouted alarming the whole restaurant)

He moved me out of the way and ran to

Tumisani...

Oh my gosh, this child of mine. I watched at a distance how he hugged and kissed her, smiling. He pulled them all the way to us smiling as if he just saw Mary mother of Jesus.

Sihle: mama look, my wife is here (he said smiling and holding her hand)

Me: hey Tumisani, hey Siphso. (I smiled)

Tumisani: Hi Busi (she smiled)

Siphso: Hi (he looked at Portia and she was turning red)

Sihle: mama can aunty join us, I missed her so much!! (he said excited)

Tumisani: I don't think that's such a good idea, Sihle. (she said looking at Portia)

Sihle: but why aunty, (he said sad)

Tumisani: maybe next time baby. (she knelt down and kissed his cheek)

Me: babe don't be sad, aunty has lots to do.

Sihle: aaah OK (he let go of her hand disappointed and sat down next to me with teary eyes)

Tumisani: baby don't be sad, I'll come fetch you this weekend then we can spend the whole day together, OK? (she said trying to lighten up his mood)

Sihle: I would like that (he smiles)

Portia: Sihle what is so special about her?
why do you like her so much? (she said
irritated and I was taken aback)

Sihle: she's the best aunty in the whole
wide world (he smiled)

Portia: you've only met this bitch for a
couple of weeks and you already like her
this much...

Tumisani: I don't see no bitches here but
you so I suggest you look in the mirror
and think about what you see in it...

Whoaah what is going on here? why are
they so tensed around each other?

Portia: shut up no one was talking to you.

Tumisani: mxm you're waste of my time, you're nothing but a boyfriend snatcher.

Portia: you don't know me. (she said sternly)

Tumisani: and you don't know me either. (she said with furious eyes, they both looked deep into each others eyes)

The moment was weird, like really weird.

Sipho: babe don't mind her.

He took her hand and they walked away.

I can't believe my son just witnessed this drama. I looked at Portia and she was fuming. What the fuck?

Me: what the hell was all that about??

Portia: I need some time alone. These people keep messing with me, they don't know me.

She stood up and barged out of the restaurant. I looked at Sihle and he looked scared, I hugged him and kissed his head.

Ndumiso has a lot of explaining to do. I know he knows what's going on here. This explains his behavior.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Not edited.

Hmm, what do you think will happen next?

Is the Phakade blood more powerful than the Patkins blood?

We'll just have to wait and see....

Admin

[06/19, 11:44] Snr: INSERT 66

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV

In a dark room filled with darkness, black was the famous color. I couldn't

even see my hand in the dark. The darkness was so dark that even with your eyes open, you would still not see anything. At a time like this, I feel blind. Fear was not one of my emotions right now but I expected myself to feel scared tho my heart was in peace, I felt alive and settled. My breathing was at a slow pace and I could even hear my heart beat because of the silence.

Voice: mntanam....

The sweet angelic voice filled the dark room, that voice that gave me comfort immediately, my heart felt at peace. i searched around the room but still could not find the owner of the voice. I turned

around the whole dark filled room like a snake searching for comfort...

Voice: Tumisani stop, I'm here.

Her beautiful shadow crept up I'm the room and gave light to the darkness.

Me: Gogo (I smiled happily)

Gogo: mntanam, smile, your days of sadness are almost over. Smile Tumisani, smile.

Me: Gogo...(I smiled happily)

Gogo: my baby I want you to stay strong, I need you to stay strong for the sake of your brother, he needs you.

I looked at her beauty glowing in the

dark, I can't comprehend what she is saying because it sounds like a foreign language.

Gogo: Phakade listen to me, open your eyes mntanam, you need to see the light, the cloud of darkness is slowly fading. Open your eyes, the future is bright Phakade.

Me: Gogo what are you saying, I don't understand.

Gogo: your brother. Search for him Tumisani, his blood still dwells, search for him mntanam.

Me: Gogo Dumisani is dead, he left us Gogo. (I said with tears in my eyes)

Gogo: He is always with you Tumisani, open your eyes, he is dwelling in your midst, look for him my child, the Gods have given him another chance in life, search and you shall find..

Me: Gogo I don't understand, Dumisani is dead Gogo, he left me alone Gogo, it's been two years...

Gogo: open your eyes Tumisani, your heart has seen him but your eyes has not seen him, your heart is stronger than anything my child. He is with you.

Tears rolled down my cheeks and I cried. Gogo was lying to me, and why does she sound so far away when i can see her.

Me: Gogo please come back, please just come hold your princess just one last time, let me just feel your touch gogo. (I cried)

Gogo: mntanam you have to be strong, there will be blood shedding from now on but I can promise you the future is bright. You will have to be strong my baby, you will have to face your demons, listen to your heart my Phakade princess. Blood is what you will see from now.

All of a sudden her white clothing turned into blood, the room was filled with blood and I was screaming my lungs out. I cried but all I saw was blood. Her

shadow slowly faded as well as the blood but i kept crying....

Voice: Tumisani!!! baby wake up, please, Tumisani!!

I opened my eyes and looked around me, I was sweating heavily and the bed felt like it was poured with water. I quickly jump off the bed shaking, I looked at Siphos and he looked scared. I looked around me and the room looked normal, there was no blood, but how.

Me: Gogo, gogo. (I fell on my knees and cried) I saw Gogo. (I cried)

Siphos scooped me into his arms and hugged me tightly.

The sun was shining already and it looked like a bright day. Yet, I couldn't stop thinking about my dream, Gogo's voice kept ringing in my head. I kept thinking about what she said about Dumisani. I don't understand anything about what she said. How can I search for someone who is dead? How does Gogo expect me to look for him when I know he is far far away.

Sipho: babe (he said as we got out of the shower)

We had just finished taking a shower and fixing myself because I was sweating badly. I looked at him and he looked really worried.

Sipho: are you OK? (he held my waist and looked into my eyes)

Me: I'm fine (I smiled faintly)

Sipho: do you wanna talk about it?

I started lotioning my body and getting dressed.

Me: no, it's just a bad dream.

I got dressed into a pair of jeans and a blue T-shirt and sandals. He also got dressed and we went downstairs to make breakfast.

Sipho: I'll make breakfast.

Me: I'll help you.

Sipho: no babe sit down, I can do this.

Me: baby I'm not disabled, just let me help you.

Sipho: no, I insist.

Me: Sipho please stop, stop arguing with me.

We walked to the kitchen and made breakfast together but my mind and heart were elsewhere, I couldn't stop thinking about the dream. What if Dumisani is really still alive? But how can that be possible when I was there at the funeral. Wait, come to think of it, the funeral was really weird, we weren't allowed to see the corpse even tho I'm his family, wait this doesn't make any

sense, I really don't understand, my head is spinning like crazy...

Sipho: Tumisani!!!! (I snapped out of it and looked at him, with confusion)

Sipho: baby you're spilling coffee on yourself.

I looked down at my cup and I realised that I have just poured half the cup onto myself. The heat hits me and I jump up as I feel my skin being burnt by coffee. I quickly take my top off and looked at it, frustrated.

Sipho: you should stop thinking like this babe, you're making me worried.

He took the shirt and pulled me into his

arms, I rest my head on his chest as he unclips my bra and leaves my breast loose. I looked at him confused, he plants his lips onto mine and kisses me. I kiss him back and hold onto his waist and his hands start rubbing my ass. I forget everything and just enjoy the moment, allowing my mind to run wild. He squeezes my ass and I rub my chest against his and my virgin breasts rise in surprise.

Sipho: are you feeling better now? (he said holding my tiny waist.)

Me: I want you (I smash my lips onto his and kiss him hungrily)

He lifts me up and I wrap my legs around his waist, I moan as he squeezes my twins and play with my nipples. He starts walking up the stairs with me in his arms, kissing him hungrily.

He starts walking but stops as the knock at the door interrupts us, he breaks the kiss and looks at me, half way up the stairs. He smiles as he looks into my hungry eyes. I want him inside me so badly but I guess destiny still wants me to enjoy my virgin days. Mxxmm.

Sipho: go put on a top and I'll go get the door. He puts me down and kisses my cheeks. I looked at him biting my bottom lip, gosh he is so hot, damn. I

walk up the stairs and quickly open my wardrobe, I put on a grey vest and check my ass and see how it pops through my jeans. I'm blessed, I admire myself before I go back downstairs. I slowly walk down the stairs but before I even get to the bottom I see someone in all black pointing a gun to Siphos head. I looked at them shocked but they didn't see me, I tried to see who it might be but all I saw was black boots that looked like a ladies. I slowly walked back up the stairs making sure that I didn't make a single sound. I locked the door and looked for my phone. My heart was racing fast and I didn't know what to do...

Ndumiso: Ndumiso speaking hello?

Me: hello, Ndumiso, listen I need help right now (I said pacing up and down the room, panicking)

Ndumiso: whoaah calm down Tumisani, please, talk to me.

Me: Ndumiso there is someone downstairs in my house pointing a gun at Sipho, I don't know what to do, what if they kill him, I'm scared Ndumiso, I don't know who it is...(I said panicking)

Ndumiso: OK calm down, Tumisani I need you to listen to me and listen very carefully. are you listening?

Me: yes, yes...

Ndumiso: I need you to lock the door,
first calm down, breath baby breath.

I breathed trying to calm down but I was
shaking.

Ndumiso: I need you to look around in
your cardboards, looking everywhere
Tumisani, there is a gun in one of your
cardboards, look for the gun. Are you
looking for it?

I was pacing up and down, looking in
every single cardboard, I took out all the
things in all the cardboards. my hands
were shaking.

Me: I'm looking for it.

I opened the last cardboard right at the

top and stood on my toes because I was too short, I saw the gun and took it from the cardboard.

Ndumiso: don't hang up Tumisani, I'm almost there, have you found the gun?

Me: yes I found it, I've got it. (I said into the phone)

Ndumiso: OK, how many people do you think is down there?

Me: I don't know, I really don't know, all I saw was a lady's black boots and a gun pointed at Siphho.

Ndumiso: I need you to sneak down there and count how many people there is down there, but please be careful, I

need you to be really careful.

Me: uh uh OK. I won't hang up.

Ndumiso: yeah don't hang up.

I slowly unlocked the door and tippy toed towards the stairs, I could here them talking....

Voice: I told you, I was going to come back for my revenge.

Sipho: what do you want Portia?

I knew it was that bitch, I just fucking knew it, I tippy toed closer towards the stairs and started counting all the men in black. There were about 10 of them..

Portia: where is that bitch? Where is the

so called Phakade? (she said charging towards the stairs and I quickly ran back to the room and locked the door)

I went to the bathroom and locked the bathroom door as well.

Me: There are about 10 of them down there and Portia is looking for me.

Ndumiso: OK, I'm gonna hang up now but I want you to stay in the room, don't move Tumisani, keep the gun with you, I'm coming for you.

Me: but....

Ndumiso: I'll explain everything to you Tumisani, I promise. Uhm uh just know that I love you and whatever happens

now I just want you to trust me.

What!!!??? What is he saying? What on earth has gotten into him?

Me: what???

Ndumiso: yes Tumisani, I love you and I promise to tell you everything. I love you so much, Tumsa.

Tears rolled down my cheeks and I couldn't understand why I was crying. He hanged up and my heart started beating really fast. Why is he saying that? Why does he sound like Dumisani? It feels like Dumisani is the one telling me all these things. Maybe I'm just hallucinating. I mean how can my boss

be in love with me? I mean, he told me that I'm like a sister to him or maybe that's what I believe. I looked in the mirror and tears kept streaming down my cheeks, Gogo's words banging in my head, heart and soul.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Does the secret finally come out?

Will she finally find out about her brother?

I really want to make this story longer but I also have another story in mind. So

I guess, we're almost at the end but not yet.

I hope you enjoyed.

Admin

[06/19, 11:45] Snr: CONTINUATION

.

.

.

.

Portia's POV

Hmm y'all thought that I was kidding when I said, " you don't know me"? You thought, oh nah Portia Patkins was just

telling a joke and all she does is blah, blah, blah. Huh, you thought wrong. They don't call me Portia for nothing. It's time people pay for hurting others. I mean, look at it from my point of view, how many times has men hurt woman and left them heart broken and still get away with it. In my case, it was worse, this man used me And made me a prostitute. I was just an innocent little American Girl until I met this guy and my life changed. But now that I want revenge, people judge me. Fuck this world and fuck everyone who hurt me. If I don't kill this man then my heart will never have peace.

Me: daddy I'm not letting him go, I've worked so hard just to get here and now you want me to drop everything. Never.

I was still in Tumisani house, I've locked the whole house and tied Siphon up on a chair. I was on the phone with my father because he didn't want me to take this bastard to the warehouse.

Dad (Razor): baby, he has people ready to fire back, we have to plan this carefully.

Me: I'm sick of planning and never getting anywhere, I'm bringing him to the warehouse and that is final.

I hanged up and looked at him pissed.

I've been trying to get him to tell me where Tumisani is but he's not budging. One of the rooms upstairs are locked and he doesn't wanna say where the key is.

Me: boys, beat him up.

They started beating him up and there was blood everywhere. His eyes were big and swollen and there was blood coming out of his nose and mouth. The pleasure I was feeling, watching him in pain, it was extraordinary.

Me: are you gonna talk, or not?

I said as they beat the living day lights out of him.

Sipho: I'd rather die than tell you (he said breathing heavily)

Me: Damn babe, you never loved me as much as you loved her.

I said sarcastically, I gave him three hot slaps and pulled out my gun.

Me: start talking, you bastard.

I hit him with the back of the gun on his head, blood spilled onto his shirt and he winced in pain. Blood is my middle name.

Me: aaahh baby I love seeing you like this.

I sat on his lap facing him, I hold his face in my hands as his blood stains me.

I looked into his eyes and enjoy how he makes me weak in an instant. I smash my lips onto his and suck his juicy sexy lips.

Sipho: fuck you. (he said pulling out of the kiss)

Me: I know you like it, that could be your last kiss before you die so I hope you enjoyed it.

Sipho: fuck you, fuck you and fuck you. (he spat out blood)

I smiled, I pointed my gun towards his leg and shot his thigh.

Sipho: aaaahhh!!! (he screamed in pain)

I watched out he suffered the pain as

the bullet reaped through his skin. Pain is what I felt when he kidnapped me and let those dogs rape me.

Me: how does it feel my love?

Sipho: aaaahhhh,!!! (he screamed as the pain took over his body)

I watched as he struggled to breath, the floor was stained with blood. My favorite kind of blood. He kept screaming in pain and my heart was bouncing in pleasure.

Me: boys check if the house is safe to leave, Ringo untie him and walk him to the car.

They did as told and the coast was clear,

we quickly got him into the car and drove off. He kept looking back upstairs and I kept wondering why? It's time I get my revenge and become the next Lindokuhle Phakade.

.

Ndumiso's POV

I rushed into the house and up the stairs. The lounge was filled with blood and I feared for the worst. I barged up the stairs and banged the door but it was locked...

Me: Tumisani open up, its me.

I heard quick footsteps rushing to the door, she quickly opened the door and

jumped into my arms crying.

Tumisani: they killed him Ndumiso, they killed him (she cried)

I held her into my arms as she broke down and poured her heart out.

Tumisani: I, I heard the gun shots, they shot him, they shot him Ndumiso. (she cried)

Me: sssh it's OK, don't cry.

I hugged her tightly and walked her down the stairs, shaking. As soon as she saw the blood, she scream her lungs out and cried. I quickly walked her to the car and help her inside. I started the car and drove off.

Tumisani: I could've helped him, I could've saved him, it's all my fault. I left him when he needed me the most. (she cried)

Me: no Tumisani, it's not your fault, if you had to come down then they would've killed the both of you and we don't know if he's really dead, he's body is not there so please calm down.

I said driving to God knows where.

Tumisani: He can't leave me, I don't have anyone in this world, why are they all leaving me like this. (she cried)

I looked at her and my heart broke. I can't do this any longer. Wherever Siph

is, I hope he forgives me for this. I stopped the car on the side of the road and she looked at me as I tried to gather my thoughts.

Tumisani: why are you stopping? (she said with teary eyes)

Me: I can't take this any longer, I can't keep watching you getting hurt all the time and not doing anything about it, no, I can't.

Tumisani: what are you saying, Ndumiso, we don't have time for this, we have to find Portia, she has to tell me what she has done to Sipho, please just start the car...

Me: no, I have to tell you the truth. It time you find out the truth of what really happened to your brother. (I looked at her)

Tumisani: what?? (she said confused)

Me: Tumsa, look at me, look into my eyes, its me, Tumisani, its me. I'm here Tumsa, its me, Dumisani.

She looked at me shocked and then laughed out loud.

Tumisani: you're really full of jokes (she laughed) On a serious note Ndumiso, this is not time to play. Please start the car

Me: Tumisani you're not listening to me,

I'm sorry , I'm sorry for leaving you, I'm back now, its me your brother. Your Dumsa, your best friend, its me babe , its me.

Tumisani: Ndumiso this is not a joke, please stop it. (she said with teary eyes)

Me: I was shot that day by mom and they left my body at the airport. Siphos felt bad for killing me and then he came back for me and took me to the hospital but my body had already failed me, I died. But on that same day a man was also rushed in into hospital. His body also broke down and died but my heart was still strong enough to live. So Siphos made the doctors do surgery on me and

swap bodies with Ndumiso Langa. I had to live a double life just to protect you, I had to lie to Vuyo that I was her brother but the truth is, I was only her brother by flesh not by heart. I'm sorry Tumisani, I had to do it, imagine the trauma Busi went through when she thought Ndumiso Langa was dead. I'm sorry Tumsa, Its me. It's really me, your brother. In heart and spirit.

I watched how her lips became cold and dry, her fingers started shaking and the expression on her face was shocked and anger....

Tumisani: No, no, no, you're lying. My Dumisani died two years ago. stop it,

stop it. (she cried)

Me: its me. I didn't die Tumisani, its me.

She buried her head in her hands and cried.

Tumisani: no, this is just another nightmare, I have to wake up, I must be dreaming, Dumisani left me two years ago. I was even at his funeral so please stop lying to me, if you want to be my brothers clone then do it far away from me, just don't lie to me.

She said in denial. My heart shattered into to pieces.

Me: 18 July, Gogo's death. 12 November, your birthday. 23 December, my birthday.

Her head shot up in shock and looked at me.

Me: Florence Phakade, Gogo's name.

Lindokuhle Phakade, our mothers name.

Tears slowly rolled down her cheeks and she looked at me in disbelief. Tears rolled down my cheeks as I held her hands into mine.

Me: Its me, Tumsa, it's me.

Tumisani: B, b, but you left me....(she asked with trembling lips)

Me: I would never leave you, Tumisani, I love you with all my heart, I made a promise to you that I would never leave you. Even death would never do us apart.

Tumisani: is it really you? (she cried)

Me: It's me. Dumisani Phakade. Your brother.

She ran out of the car to my side and opened the door and attacked me with a hug. She cried in my arms as I hugged her tightly. This is my bundle of joy.

Tumisani: Dumisani I suffered..

Me: sssshh I know baby, I know, I'm here now, I'm sorry for abandoning you like that. I'm back.

Tumisani: how come you only considered the Langa families feelings, why didn't you consider my feelings, didn't you think that I would be broken

after your death. I lost myself trying to mourn you Dumisani, for two whole years I tried to find myself. I had to grow into a young woman, Dumisani, I called myself an orphan. (she cried)

Me: I'm sorry babe, I'm so sorry. I did consider your feelings, I know you were hurt but how was I going to approach you in another mans body, look I'm in Ndumiso Langa's body. (I said with my arms wrapped around her)

Tumisani: I believe you, I missed you so much Dumisani, I couldn't live without you. I cried for you every night. I thought the world had come to an end

Me: don't worry, I'm here. (I kissed her cheeks and hugged her tightly again)

Tumisani: you have a family now

Dumisani, what are you gonna tell that poor woman, that innocent child, imagine him living without a father at such a age. I know we lived without parents all our lives but that child deserves a happy family at least.

Me: I know, I'm trying all I can to find a way to solve this mess. I just glad that you believe me.

Tumisani: I'm scared Dumisani, they took him. (she said breaking down again)

Me: I'm here now, trust me. I'm never letting anything happen to you ever again. You are my life.

I kissed her face once again. God couldn't have given me a better sister. This is m life, heart and soul in human form. If destiny doesn't have a good ending planned for this angel then life is a joke. I have finally got my soulmate back. Now the Phakade blood and stand tall and fight together. I love her with my life.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

Watch how all the pieces fall back into their rightfully places.

What do you think will happen now?

your opinion counts.

Admin

[06/19, 11:45] Snr: INSERT 67

- .
- .
- .
- .

" Yeah, yeah I got my gun, call her already, I'm getting worried Dumsa."

To say I'm happy would be an understatement tho I'm still sad about

what happened to Sipho. I still can't believe my brother is back, I don't even know what to say but I'm just grateful that he's back. I'm just happy to have him back by my side again, I know the truth might hurt a lot of people but I needed my brother the most, even tho Busi needed her boyfriend too and Sihle needs a father as well but I also need my brother. I don't know how Dumisani/ Ndumiso managed to live in another mans body but I'm sure it is hard. Now I can finally stand on my feet again as my pillar of strength is with me. Dumi took a bullet for me and I pray to God that he lives a long life to see my babies and

their babies as well. The love I have for my brother is out of this world. He is the first man in my life and if I had to chose between giving my life away for him and living then I would definitely give my life away for him, that's how much I love him. I don't know how he'll break the truth to Busi, Vuyo and everyone else, I mean they'll be hurt and that innocent child, Gosh, I won't be able to deal. What made me love Sipho even more is that he changed his mind after he let them shoot Dumi and he even helped my brother come back to life, I don't want to be angry with him for keeping the secret away from me for two years because I

know he was only trying to protect. I've now come to realize that he really loves me and now I think its high time to go save my man. I'll deal with life after this is over.

Dumi: I still don't like the idea that you're coming with us.

He said packing the guns into it's places.

Me: if I can Kill Lindokuhle Phakade then surely I can tackle the world.

I said putting my gun in my jeans back pocket.

Dumi: I don't like it that you are feisty at times, you hold too much power in your hands, you are just like her. But better.

Me: She was evil, I am good, I don't kill for greed, I kill to save.

Dumi: I never imagined you being this strong tumsa, I'm proud of you.

He said smiling at me, brightly.

Me: I'm proud of myself, and I'm happy to have my brother back.

Dumi: I'm happy to have my princess back too, but it's all thanks to God and Siphso, that man loves you, Tumsa.

Me: I know, (I smiled) if that bitch kills him then I'll make sure I destroy her myself, the Phakade blood is much stronger than any kind of blood.

Dumi: that's my princess, (he said

kissing my cheek)

I missed his touch, his kisses and his smile. Gosh, I really missed him. Even tho he's in another mans body he's still the same to me.

Dumi: Busi's calling. (he said looking at his phone)

Me: I feel so guilty right now, that kid is innocent Dumisani.

Dumi: I know, me too.

Me: answer it.

He answered and put it on loud speaker...

Dumi: babe

Busi: baby where are you? its getting late, I'm getting worried. Where are you?
(she said worried)

Dumi: my love, I'll be home late, please tuck Sihle in and kiss him for me. I'm sorry for not calling, I'm just....held up in work.

I looked at the clock and it is 21:34, her v worried voice breaks my heart as I know how she feels.

Busi: baby are you OK? I'm worried Ndu. Please take care of yourself.

Dumi: don't worry my love, I'm fine, take care of yourself and my boy, I love you.

Busi: I love you too, bye.

She hanged up and he sighed deeply. I looked at him and my brother is drained. For sake of being soft, he chose to be a father and a boyfriend to total strangers.

Dumi: you know Tumsa, I really love this girl. I've come to fall in love with her but it scares me.

Me: I know, I can see it in your eyes dumi, I'm scared too, imagine how she'll react when she finds out, she'll be in denial And heartbroken.

Dumi: can we just pretend for a little longer, I can't bring it upon myself to hurt them like this. I've come to love that boy as my own. I don't want to be in a

situation where I will have to choose.

Me: I'll support you through it all, I'm here Dumsa, I'm not going anywhere. I'll do it for the sake of that innocent child, I love him so very much.

Dumi: I know hey, he talks about you all the time.

Me: he's cute (I smiled) hey, enough Now, stop making Me soft we have a battle to fight. My lover is in danger, let's go.

Dumi: yes my princess.

We called the gents and told them the plan and we all agreed to surround the Patkins warehouse. We drove to the

warehouse and our people his around bushes and buildings, surrounding the building.

Dumi: I'm with you tumsa, don't show her any emotions. I'm coming in to get you as soon as you enter.

I hug him and kiss his cheek. I step out of the car from afar and walk towards the warehouse. I dialed her number and called her...

Me: I'm here.

Guards barge out of the building with guns and they all point at me, I lift my hands up in surrender And the devils daughter herself walks out of the

building.

Portia: Tumisani Phakade (she said with an evil smirk) the Phakade princess herself.

Me: one And only. (I smiled sarcastically)

The instructed me to follow her into the warehouse and I did as told. They took me to room in the warehouse, I immediately recognize Sipho's body on the floor, blood was everywhere. Tears pricked my eyes and I forced myself not to cry.

Portia: like what you see? (she said as I froze looking at his lifeless body on the

floor)

Me: you killed him...

I said in disbelief. Anger took over my body and my heart pounded in my chest. My eyes felt like fire and my hands grew in big fists. My eyes pierced into her soul deeply and I wanted to rip her throat out of her neck. Guards pointing their guns towards me as I started breathing heavily.

Portia: oh baby relax, he's not dead, just unconscious, anyway I'm just here for revenge.

Me: you're heartless..

Portia: oh no sweety you don't know

what's heartless (she said angrily)
heartless is when a man makes you believe he loves you then he uses you. and sells you for prostitution, imagine being injected every single fucking day with different drugs in your body. How do you think I feel? Its all his fault. He made me fall for him and go against my father yet I didn't know that he was the devil himself.

Me: I empathize with you Portia but he didn't do it willingly, he was forced. He was forced to do it by his father. He told me everything Portia, he really did love you. (I confessed to her)

I looked at her and she had a chance of

facial expression, she became silent and her face said hurt.

Me: He told me, he loved you and you were his first love but you gave him no choice when you cheated on him with his best friend.

Her head shot up and looked at me shocked, she gasped in disbelief. Tears threatened her eyes and I knew she really did love this man....

Me: you cheated on him and he was angry, he let his father influence him because he was weak, hurt and broken. How do you expect him to feel when you cheated him first and still claim to love

him. huh, tell me Portia, tell me?!?!?? (I shouted out of frustration)

Portia: stop!!!! (she shouted) I will not allow you to manipulate me emotionally, you don't know what I went through and you can stand here and fucking question me, he hurt me and that's final. Guards, get out.

They all left and it was now only me, Portia and Sipho's unconscious body.

Me: He's changed Portia, he's a different man, you don't have to do this, you can move on and live a better life.

Manipulation is sometimes helpful.

Portia: no, I won't ever rest if I don't get

my revenge, I know I cheated him but he had no right make me something I never even dreamt of becoming. No, I won't spare him.

Me: You don't have to do this...

Portia: shut up, I have to, it's either you leave him for me or her dies or I kill both of you.

She tilted her gun towards me and I pulled my gun out too and pointed it towards her.

Me: no one is dying here, I'm not just about to lose the man I've fallen in love with over someone like you, I love him and here I am fighting for him. He saved

me and I'm willing to do anything for him.

Portia: so you'd rather allow him to die just because you love him and you're not willing to give him up to anyone else.

Mxm, listen Tumisani I loved this man since the day I set my eyes on here so please save me some slack and let me take what's mine.

Me: over my dead body.

Portia: then you leave me with no choice but to kill him since we both can't have him

She pointed her gun towards him and I wanted to scream. I'd rather die than watch him being killed. I can't let him die

but I also can't bare to see another woman with him. I want him all to myself. Gun shots were being fired from outside and I knew Dumisani was in action.

Portia: I see you've bought company (she said referring to the gunshots) so what's it gonna be Phakade, are you going to sacrifice your love for him for his life or are you going to give him up to me and let me make him mine.

Tears threatened my eyes and she brought the gun to his chest and was ready to shoot. I can't do this to him, I love him but his life is more important. I look at him lying on the floor and

memories of our old times together
flash in my head....

****Flashback****

Sipho: I love you so much Tumisani, I
didn't mean to kidnap you, I just can't
bare to see you in another mans arms.
You're driving me Crazy Tumisani....

.

Sipho: I love you my idiot.

Me: you're the idiot, not me.

Sipho: but you love this idiot.

He held my waist and pulled me against
his body and kissed me passionately.
our lips dancing to the same music.

.

Me: how do I pleasure you? (I blushed shyly)

He chuckled and looked at me with seductive eyes.

Sipho: suck me (he chuckled)

I kissed his lips, chest, six pack and came into contact with his beast down there, I looked up at him and he gave me a reasurring smile...

.

Me: baby I'm home!!

Sipho: I'm in the kitchen!! (he shouted back)

I kick off my shoes and walk towards the kitchen and as soon as I step into the kitchen my eyes widen in shock...

Me: Mary mother of Jesus what have you done to my kitchen?

The place was a royal mess. He himself was a mess as well with sauce all over his face. I giggled at a sight of him wearing an apron..

.

Sipho: you look beautiful babe.

He said holding me from behind and kissing my neck.

Me: Thanks babe. you look sexy.

I turned around and kiss him lightly but he deepens the kiss and hold me tight against his body.

Sipho: I love you Tumisani Phakade.

End of Flashback

I look at this woman who wants to take my joy away from me. Does she know what I've been through with this man, the ups and downstairs we've been through, and she thinks she can just barge up here and do as she wants. This is my man and mine alone. I shoot her shoulder and she screams in pain, she falls onto the floor as blood spill down. I barged towards her and take her gun out

of her hand. I take out the drugged cloth that Dumi gave me and place it on her mouth. She falls unconscious immediately.

Me: Siphos!!! (I scream and shake him)

Me: baby please hang in there, I'm here Now, I'm never letting you go, I promise babe.

I said as I tried to lift him up, tears gushing down my cheeks. I love him And I'm willing to sacrifice anything for him.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

Admin

[06/19, 11:45] Snr: INSERT 68

- .
- .
- .
- .

Ndumiso's POV

It's a been a week since the incident with Portia and I'm glad I haven't seen them since then, we've come to make an agreement with the Americans I agreed to give them the Langa family's big equipment shop in Mexico and I haven't told Vuyo about it yet. But I did it to save my sister tho Portia is still angry that she couldn't get what she want, she had

to accept it because it was her fathers choice. Sipheri has been in a coma since the day he was shot because he lost a lot of blood and the bullet went deep into his leg, they say he might be crippled but I'm just praying that he doesn't become crippled. The doctors also say he has bipolar and brain damage. He has to be taken to a therapist because he needs help mentally. Tumisani has been stressed and very busy with all the arrangements of Siphos surgery and she's trying to get him the best therapist to help him once he has waken up. On the other hand I have Busi who has been on my neck and

thinks that I am cheating on her because I am always home late and I'm always busy, but I don't do that on purpose, I have to be there for my sister as well. Busi has been upset with me for a few days now and the tension in this house is killing me. Its even harder living in another mans body now that the truth is on the edge of coming out. I can't seem to find the best way to tell them the truth.

It is Saturday today And I want to take my mini Family out, I want to spoil them just to clear the air because the tension is too much for me. I wake up and sit up straight on the bed, she gets out of the bathroom with a towel wrapped around

her body and she is dripping wet. I carefully admire her beautiful body and she wiggles her sexy ass all over the room.

Me: babe...(I said looking at her as she lotion her body)

She doesn't look at me or say anything. I get off the bed and walk towards her but she walks past me to the closet. I walk towards her again and she tries to do it again but I pull her back into my arms with her back against me, I hold her waist.

Busi: Ndumiso please let go of me.

Me: no, I'm not letting you go, babe we

have to talk about this, please.

Busi: we have nothing to talk about.

(she said trying to wiggle herself out of my grip, I hold her even tighter against me)

Me: babe the tension in this house is not healthy, I don't like it that you're angry all the time, I don't even know what I've done, babe please talk to me.

Busi: you don't know what you have done so it's better it stays that way

Me: no baby, tell me what I've done, maybe I can fix it but just don't kill me with silence, talk to me Busi. (I said planting kisses on her shoulders and

neck, I feel myself getting hard.)

Busi: don't kiss me Ndumiso, (she said moving her head and trying to pull herself out of my arms) you're cheating on me, Ndumiso. (she said softly)

Me: (I chuckled) seriously!??babe why the hell would I cheat on you? I mean, I love you with all my heart, you have everything that a woman needs, why the fuck would I cheat on you? (I said getting offended now)

Busi: don't lie to me Ndumiso, I know I'm a mess and you have every reason to cheat on me, I mean look at me...

Me: ssshh please just shut up, you're not

anyone's mess, you're my mess And I love this mess I don't give a fuck about what people say about my mess as long as this mess and the queen of my heart. I love you with your mess and baby for God's sake please stop saying you're a mess, I've told you multiple times that you're perfect and I love you, Busi. (I said turning her to face me, I hold her chin and make her look up at me)

Busi: Ndu do you perhaps have feelings for Tumisani? (she said looking at me with glassy eyes)

I chuckled and laughed out loud. Like, the fuck? I laughed my lungs out and tears were close to coming out of my

eyes. Damn, she sure can joke. Why the fuck would I be in love with my own sister?? I laughed and even ended up sweeping her off her cute feet and made her wrap her legs around my waist, she was now naked. I had a strong boner, damn.

Me: Lol, babe what the hell was that? (I laughed) Tumisani is my sis....I mean PA, why would I have feelings for her? (I chuckled)

Busi: I mean she's beautiful, has a banging hot body, an ass for days, she can turn any gay man straight within a second. I can't help but wonder....(she said embarrassed)

I can't believe some woman are actually threatened by Tumisani's beauty. I mean, Busi's right tho, Tumisani is like a walking goddess, she's way to beautiful. But what can I say, she's a Phakade after all.

Me: babe I only have eyes for you, you're my one and only, my mother of my many more coming kids and my future wife.

Her smash my lips onto hers and kiss her hungrily, I hold her big ass and squeeze it, she moans softly on my lips...

Busi: babe I don't wanna lose you...(she said breaking the kiss)

Me: I'm all yours Busi, my dick is all yours....(I said into her mouth as m lips sucked hers)

I placed her on the bed and got in between her legs, my man down there was hard as fuck. I don't know when last I was inside of her, she hasn't been granting me access.

We had a steamy session then took a shower with another steamy session until she reminded me that we have a son. So we got dressed after the steamy sex, we wore matching white and black outfits and went to look for Sihle only to find him watching cartoons in his Pajama's.

Busi: morning my prince. (she kissed his cheek)

Sihle: Good morning my lovely parents. (he high five me and looked at his mother weirdly)

Me: champ go take a bath, we going out for breakfast and then spend the day together having fun.

Sihle: yaaaayy!! (he said jumping up and down) can aunty Tumi come with us daddy, I miss her so much...

Me: that's not a good idea champ, aunty has been really busy lately...

Sihle: can we go visit her then?

Me: I'll call her and find out, now go take

a bath boy boy .

Sihle: hmm OK (he started walking up the stairs but then stopped and turned) oh mama why were you screaming when you were upstairs, I heard you screaming like a cat??

Busi and I both looked at each other shocked. I closed my eyes and took a breathe, this child will be the end of me. He was probably referring to Busi's loud moans...

Me: uh uh son uh...

Busi: uh uhm baby, mama was just singing, it's uhm a song my love. (she blushed shyly)

Sihle: oh OK, mama can you please teach me the song I wanna learn it, please mama.

Busi looked at him embarrassed and I just laughed.

Me: uh OK son that's enough, go bath now. (I chuckled)

Sihle: uh OK...

He ran up the stairs and I bust out laughing, Busi looked at me embarrassed and hit me with a pillow, I laughed even harder...

Me: " mama why were you screaming upstairs, you sounded like a cat" (I said imitating Sihle, I laughed out loud)

Busi: fuck you, Ndumiso. (she said shyly hitting me with a pillow)

Me: you like it when I fuck you (I said pulling her waist towards me and kissing her neck then ear)

Busi: get away from me you seducer, you teaching my son bad manners. (she said walking away from me)

I pulled her back and softly pushed her down on the couch on her back, I got on top of her and sucked her lips. I can't get enough of her.

Busi: Ndu what if Sihle comes down here, don't you get enough....

Me: you're so attractive I can't keep my

hands to myself when I'm around you.

I said lying on top of her and kissing her sexy, juicy lips.

Busi: baby you're heavy. (she said holding my waist and kissing my cheeks)

I kissed her neck, cheeks ears and then lips, she giggles as my hands start exploring her body...

Voice: so this is what you do all day? spending your money on this hoe?

I looked up and my eyes met with Vuyo's, I immediately sat up straight and so did Busi.

Me: Vuyo how dare you barge into my

house like that? This is my house and not just a parking area that you can drive into any time you please...

Vuyo: what is this shit that I'm hearing Ndumiso? what the fuck have you done?

Me: what are you talking about? (I said confused)

Vuyo: what is this? (she threw her tablet at me and I scanned through what was written on it)

I looked as it clearly stated, " The South African Langa family equipment shop sold to a drug lord/ Mafia/ gangster."

I read through the shit written on these tabloids and I was pissed. We made an

agreement that we would keep that deal undercover. That bastard tricked me. Now my "family's" name is flying on the news.

Vuyo: what kind of shit is this Ndumiso, you sold fathers company, for God's sake what the hell were you thinking??

She looked at me pissed and I was pissed as well. It also clearly states that the person I sold the company to is an American. I can't believe this man tricked me like this. I looked at Busi and she was shocked.

Vuyo: why did you do it? Father specifically told us not to sell that

fucking shop, do you think he was bluffing or something??

Me: V, I'm sorry, just....

Vuyo: shut up Ndumiso, I can't believe you right now. And the only person you could ever think of was the drug lord himself. Do you know the kind of shit you've just put us through? Do you know why that bastard took that offer?

I looked at her confused now, there seems to be more behind this...

Vuyo: he took that offer because father had some problems with him too, they knew each other and he stole fathers companies in Mexico and left father

with the equipment shop, and that's one of the biggest weapon shop in Mexico, now you've just caused trouble with the devil. He will now rule over, our family business Ndumiso. Ours.!!! (she shouted angrily)

That explains why that bastard was so keen to take the offer. Now what do I do? That man will do all within his power to ruin the Langa family name. I feel so stupid right now and I can't explain this to them without them knowing the truth.

Me: Vuyo I'll fix it, I'm so sorry...

Vuyo: how will you fix it Ndumiso, huh?

Mxm, fuck.

She sat down with her head in her hands. Busi was really confused now but she was silent. I went and sat next to Vuyo and pulled her into my arms...

Me: I'll fix it sis, I promise..

Vuyo: you can't Ndumiso, that man is dangerous, I don't want him to hurt you. (she said defeated) I'm your elder sister, I'll fix it myself.

Me: now, I'm the man in this family, I caused this mess and I'll fix it. I'm sorry for doing this, I really am.

Vuyo: why did you do it in the first place? (she said irritated) mxm never mind, I have to ask the Matthews family for help,

we can't do this on our own, it's only the two of us and many of the Americans.

Me: no Vuyo, no..

Vuyo: no Ndumiso, we have to ask them for help. They were good friends with dad so I'm sure they'll be able to help, and plus, Tumisani....

Me: no we're not gonna use Tumisani for our matters...

Vuyo: we have no choice Ndumiso, The Matthews family owe us a favour, I haven't been working my ass off for that family for nothing, they owe me big time and father as well.

Me: we can't use Tumisani as a source

Vuyo, I refuse..

Vuyo: this is your mess Ndumiso and I'm trying to fix it so shut up and help me here, (she stood up) I'm scheduling a meeting with them for Monday, be there at the Matthews company. Its time to manipulate these people.

She walked out and I watched as she walked out of that door pissed as hell. I've never seen this selfish side of her before, she's being so selfish but what can I say? This is her family name she's trying to protect, the same way Tumisani was protecting our family name. I hope I won't end up in that situation where I would have to choose

between my real family and the Langa family. I won't be able to betray the Phakade name. Never.

.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

[06/19, 11:45] Snr: CONTINUATION

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV

The stress that I'm going through is driving me crazy. I feel like I'm walking around with the whole world on my shoulders. I can't bare to live like this anymore.

Sipho's condition at the hospital hasn't changed, he's been in a coma for a week now and he lost so much blood, the bullet surgery cost me a lot of money because it was on his leg and they say he might become crippled, I had to pay for the surgery and Buhle helped pay for the medicine that they giving him and the treatment. We took him to a private hospital so that he gets the best treatment. Every time I see him, I just

want to break down because he might not make it or he might become crippled. That dream of us being a happy family is slowly being crushed down. I've been looking for a suitable therapist for him and trust me, its more then your school fees or whatever fees. Its so expensive and I'm glad that I've been saving or else I would be begging on the street right Now. I don't know what I'm gonna do once my savings are up, what makes it worse is that my job won't be able to pay for all these things and I can't take money out of his (Siphos) account because he has a personal bank account and he's the only one that has

access to his cards. I feel so lost right now and I'm honestly tired. I'm just praying that the doctor doesn't talk about donating blood because I don't know what I would have to do then.

I watched through the glass frame how his body is connected to all those machines, his face is plastered with bandages and I want to cry. I won't be able to live with myself if he dies. I watch how his heart beat is racing. I've been standing here for the past two hours and the nurses keep telling me that visiting time is over, but I don't listen to them. Tears gush down my cheeks. Buhle has become an emotional

wreck, she hasn't visited in a few days because she says seeing him like that makes her weak. Her boyfriend from Canada has also come down to SA and he's been her source of strength. I won't lose hope in him, I won't allow him to leave me just like that.

Nurse: madam he's under good hands, we'll take care of him, please go home and rest.

She says holding me into a hug, I nodded and wiped my tears. I need to go to church tomorrow. I need to pray for him, he can't die on me. I thanked the nurse and stood up, I slowly walked towards the exit of the hospital and

bumped into Zinhle on my way out, her shoulders bumped and she dropped the things in her hands...

Me: oh sorry...(I bent down to pick it up and my eyes landed on the words, "Abortion")

She quickly grabbed it out of my hands as I stood up on my feet.

Zinhle: hey Tumisani (she smiled embarrassed)

Me: hi Zee, what brings you here?

Zinhle: oh uh uhm I've come to see an old friend. (she said hiding the papers in her hands)

Me: oh ok , do you know that your

brother is in hospital?

Zinhle: what!!?? you mean Siphho? (she asked shocked)

Me: yes him, you should pay more attention to your family members, family is important.

I turned around and walked out, leaving her standing there, thinking hard. I have no time to entertain her but what troubled me was the papers in her hands. Why did those papers say, "Abortion"? Could it be that Zinhle is pregnant? Ugh but anyway that is the least of my worries right now, anything that concerns Luyanda is just nothing to

me.

I get into my car and connect my phone to the Bluetooth. I start the engine and start driving. My phone starts ringing and a particular name pops up on my screen, " Layla". Should I pick up or not? Should I end the call without picking up or should I pick up. I keep debating with myself as I leave the phone ringing but then it stops and rings again, it does that three times until I get irritated and just decided to answer...

Me: Phakade speaking, hello? (I said in my most formal sexiest, kindest voice)

Layla: uh uh uh, uhm h-h-hello (she

hesitated)

Her voice sickens me and my bitch mode switches on. I want to scream and swear at her but my kindness won't allow me. After rejecting me for so long, they finally decide to call me. I wonder what the almighty Matthews family want now...

Me: can I help you? (I said in attitude)

Layla: Tumisani....

Me: speaking...

Layla: i- i- I don't know what to begin with...

Me: if you have nothing to say then please can you not waste both of our

time and just hang up. You would be doing yourself a favor.

Layla: Can we please meet? please I beg of you.

Me: Gosh, the audacity you have, so after disowning me you still have the courage to call me, aren't you scared that they might disown you too?? (I said irritated)

Voice: Tumisani please, I know you have every right to be angry right now but please we're begging you now, can we please meet, please.

I recognize the voice and it is Justin. I want to just vomit in my car. I didn't

know the sound of their voice would sicken me this much. The way I'm angry, I don't think I know how to control it.

Justin: please Tumisani.

Zack: Tumi... (he said softly)

Layla: I'm sorry, I can't do this...(she broke down and I heard ruffling in the back ground and the sound of a door closing.)

I wonder what is going on there.

Zack: Tumisani please just agree to meet with us, let us explain. Please can we talk.

Me: (I laughed silently) the nerve you have to ask me to met you explain, did

you give me a chance to explain what I did, you all just lashed out on me and disowned me, now you want me to allow you to explain. Mxm, you're wasting my time I have bigger problems than this.

Justin: Tumi, I'm still your elder brother, please I beg of you just meet up with us.

Me: oh so now you remember that you're my elder brother, can you please just hang up, you're intoxicating my mind.

Zack: I'm sorry, I'll give you time to think about you.

They hanged up and I parked into my driveway. They think they can hurt me

and still coming running to me for forgiveness. Hell no, it doesn't work like that. Sometimes you've gotta be heartless....

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

OK so guys I start exams on Monday and I have to study now, I don't think I'll be available to post, I might post only on weekends but I'm not sure. I have to study guys and please understand. I hope you enjoyed these two inserts.

Admin

[06/19, 11:45] Snr: INSERT 69

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV

I throw myself on the couch after a long day of hard work. I've gone back to work and it's been two days now. Siphos condition hasn't changed, he's still in a coma and I'm very worried. I'm just praying for a miracle because honestly, I have no strength left, I want to fight for him but I don't know how, I've already spent all the money I had to get him a

therapist for when he recovers and the money we had to pay for his treatment was more than what I had. I'm over the word exhausted. I've agreed to meet with my family member after they called me and from the look of things, I think they might be in some kind of trouble but that's the least of my worries right now.

After taking a long relaxing shower, I wear my gown And the walk downstairs to make something to eat. I made myself a salad and silently ate while watching TV but I was deep in my thoughts. After eating I switched off all the lights in the house and went to bed,

it took me a long time to fall sleep tho. I just lay on the bed thinking about life and what I've been through. Not too long ago I was a 17 year old who had a bright future and wished nothing but success in her life. But I guess life took a twist and now my life is twisted around. My brother is in another mans body because he wanted to save me, my boyfriend is lying in the hospital bed because of his past and now I have no best friend as well. Although I really miss Lindiwe a lot. I would really want to fix things with her but pride is getting in my way. I feel like she should be the one wanting to fix things because if she

hadn't judged me the other day then I wouldn't have ended our friendship. I miss Thando as well, my poor baby. I wish I could change the hands of time to make it go back to the past. To the past where I was happy with Gogo and Dumisani, just the three of us, having fun together. I smiled to myself thinking about the good times we shared.

I finally managed to fall asleep and woke up the next day with a smile on my face. It's a new day, a new beginning and a new start. Gogo always told me, a new day always brings new beginnings. So it's better I start my day with a smile so that each day can bring a smile and a

new beginning for me.

I took a shower and got dressed in a pink poke dotted floral dress. I styled my curly afro as it rested onto my shoulders. Oh, I decided to take my braids out because it was irritating me so I decided to go natural with my hair, as all of you know I'm a colored so you could imagine a girl with caramel afro curls. I put on my sandals and take a long look in the mirror before I took my clutch bag.

Sometimes I just don't take note of my body, like damn I have a gorgeous body, I fit perfectly in this dress, my curves look great and my ass gives the dress some kind of shape at the back since

the top part is open. I walk down the stairs, grab my car keys from the coffee table and drive out of the drive way.

They (Matthews family) said something about meeting in the boardroom of the Matthews company. I really thought they called me back to apologize for what they did to me, but I guess I was wrong.

What sickened me was the fact that I would be seated in the same room as Rachel, the bitch makes my blood boil. I parked into the parking lot and make my way to the entrance of the Matthews company. I never thought I would find my way back to this place but I missed it tho. I make my way to the receptionist

and I recognize the many faces that were smiling at me, my ex colleagues. I walked to the reception and Christina is seated there with a sad expression on her face as if she wants to disappear. As she sees me approaching her her sadness is replaced with a big bright smile, it somehow warms my heart. She gets up from behind the desk and attack me with a hug.

Christina: oh my gosh, Tumisani, oh my gosh.

She hugs me tightly and I return the hug, smiling.

Me: Christina (I smiled)

Christina: oh my word, I can't believe this is really you, I mean how come, wow its been a while, oh my word.

Me: it's really me, (I smiled) long time no see.

Christina: hey I missed you so much, I had no one to smile to every morning, I always thought you would come back and here you are (she smiled happily)

Me: I missed you too Tina, how's life, how's work, is it good?

Christina: uh eh (her expression changes And she becomes sad again) uh well no, things haven't been good ever since you left Tumisani, uh uh the

thing is the new boss, uh....(she stares at the floor sadly)

That is just about the reaction I was expecting, I knew Rachel wasn't gonna treat her staff well.

Me: oh is it that bad?

Christina: it's really over the edge of bad, it's terrible (she whispers)

Me: oh I'm really sorry for putting you guys in this position, I really didn't have a choice.

Christina: I understand Tumisani and I'm sorry too about your family disowning you, I'm really sorry.

Me: its in the past now, tell me, are you

comfortable in your workplace, I mean do you feel fine here? (I said worried)

She keeps looking behind me as if someone will come up here and threaten to shoot her. She looks scared and I'm worried about her.

Christina: uh uhm I, I really don't have a choice, I have a son to take care of and I need the money...(she says now looking down sadly) although the boss.....

" Tumisani"

A voice interrupts her and I turn around to see who the owner of the voice is, only to be met by Layla, Zack and Justin. They all looked at me with different

emotions on their faces and my stomach grumbles. I didn't realized how much I missed them until I saw them standing right in front of me. I so badly wanted to smile but my heart never allowed me to.

Me: uh Christina I'll catch up with you later, (I smiled politely at her)

Christina: sure (she blushed as she looked at Justin)

How weird was that?

Me: Hi (I said trying to sound nice but sarcasm was stuck in my voice)

Justin: hey (he forced a smile)

Zack: you look great. (he said checking

me out)

Me: thank you (I finally managed to smile but it was not one of my happy smiles)

Justin: uhm follow me, please.

I followed them to one of the offices up stairs and I was thinking, " what the hell is going on here, didn't they say we were going to have the meeting in the boardroom"?

I spot Justin's picture on the desk and I'm thinking he has finally agreed to work in his fathers company but not as the owner, wow.

Justin: uhm ok, so first of all Tumisani,

we would like to apologize, I'm sincerely sorry Tumisani, I'm sorry for all we've done to you, every single pain we've caused you. From the bottom of my heart we're sorry. For allow grandfather to disown you, I'm so sorry. (he said with a shaking voice)

That stabbed me right through the heart but I just looked at them quietly.

Zack: check Tumisani, I know we were wrong to not ask you why you did what you did, I know we wrong you as a family and right now we should be here as a family to ask you for forgiveness, we've realized our mistake Tumisani, us disowning was not the right decision, we

should've stood by your side and supported you through whatever you were going through. We should've been there for you as a family. I'm sorry Tumisani, please find it in your heart to forgive us, you know when you told us. (he said looking straight into my eyes)

Layla: You know Tumisani, when you told us you were giving away fathers properties, I was angry, I was angry that you would even consider doing such a thing. It boiled my blood to hear you say that, like, how could you want to give away fathers legacy like that, the legacy that he spent all his life to build, you wanted to give it all away, I was angry

and I'm sure you can relate because its not easy giving up with what's important to you, father left that company under your name for a reason but then you gave it away, that's why I was angry but that still didn't mean I wasn't supposed to ask you why you did it. I know I was supposed to ask you for your reasons but I guess anger got the best of me. I'm sorry too. (she said with tears rolling down her cheeks)

I looked at their sad faces and I wanted to cry, if only I wasn't in such a situation. If only they gave me time to explain then this wouldn't have happened. I want to forgive them but I need time to think. So

much is happening in my life and I really don't know what to do.

Me: I need time, I need time to think And process all of this. I have a lot on my plate right Now and I just need space.

Justin: We will give you time to forgive us but Tumisani we need you urgently.

I looked at him confused.

Zack: grandfather had mixed business with Rachel and now this company as well as the other Mathews Company have lost investors And this company is filled with fraud. They have made a deal with some rich American and they are into prostitution exporting and stuff.

They sell drugs to mafias and they are doing illegal businesses in our fathers company Tumisani.

Me: What!!!?? (I shouted in shock)

I never thought it would get to this point. I looked at their sad traumatized faces and my heart shatters into pieces. This is all my fault. But I couldn't let an innocent child die. Gosh this is too much.

" Sir the meeting is starting right now"

The young lady who had walked in said politely.

Justin: thank you Stella.

We all stood up and walked towards the boardroom while I tried to process what

I was just hearing here. My mind was spinning and I think I was going crazy. Like why would Mr Matthews do that? Just because he wanted to still have power over the company?

As soon as we walked into the boardroom, my heart skipped a beat when my eyes landed on Ndumiso, Vuyo And Rachel. Now I was confused as fuck. Why were they here, I could understand that Vuyo worked here but why is Ndumiso here?

Mr Matthews (senior): what on earth is she doing here?? (he said sternly)

Justin: Grandpa please, not now.

Rachel: I will not allow this woman to come here into my company without my permission.

Layla: yet you forget this was once upon a time our company. (she said sitting down irritated)

I looked at Ndumiso And I was confused, he looked back at me as if he wanted to tell me something.

Rachel: you keep that mouth closed young lady.

Layla: make me.

Mr Matthews: Layla, that's enough. Somebody tell me why this traitor is here, why is she here interfering in our

family matters.

Vuyo: I suggest you all sit down and keep quite so the meeting shall proceed.
(she said irritated)

Everybody looked at her shocked. Who could ever thought that Vuyo would stand up to the Matthews family, I guess everyone grew balls.

Rachel: who gave you the audacity to speak?

Vuyo: shut up, sit down and listen.

Surely Vuyo doesn't know who she's messing with. But what shocked me was that Mr Matthews obeyed and sat down quitely. After everyone finally

agreed to, " shut up, sit down and listen.", the room was silent. Vuyo stood up and took the podium and all attention was on her.

Vuyo: Hmm, so as you all know that I've been working for the Matthews family all my life, I've worked for this family longer than you could imagine and I know their secrets and companies inside out, this family gave right of authority, our late Mr Matthews made me the Matthews family Personal asset and I've been doing my job accordingly as always. You people always turned to Vuyo whenever there was a problem, I was always the solution to your

problems. Vuyo made magic in this family. Your mother was my boss and best friend, she left me in this family to take care of this family businesses and make sure that it stays under the Matthews name.

Rachel: can't the crap and get straight to the point. (she says looking at me with evil eyes, and as sweet and beautiful Tumisani is, she smiled brightly)

Yes guys, I smiled, assuring this bitch that I can always smile even though she took everything away from me.

Vuyo: shut up, as I was saying, this family used me in many kind of ways,

that's why I hereby stand before to tell you that from today onwards, I will also do my part and use you people. (she smiled) I need help mr Matthews. My family business is at stake and the Americans are Now running my fathers equipment shop in Mexico, my father and you were very good friends that shop means a lot to my father and my family and I know for sure you are the only one that can get my family's shop back.

I looked at Ndumiso and he looked down.

Wait, what??? Is that not the same shop Ndumiso sold to the Americans and

made a deal with them so they could leave us alone and stay away from us. Why didn't he tell me that this shop was very important. That's the Langa family's property. Oh my gosh.

Mr Matthews: what!!?? (he said with his eyes wide open)

Rachel: wait by Americans do you mean as in, the Patkins?? (Vuyo nodded, Rachel burst out laughing) you can't be serious (she laughed)

Vuyo: Mr Matthews you owe my family big time and this is a way you could prove your loyalty to my family. (she said in a persuasive way)

Mr Matthews looked at Rachel with pleading eyes and her laughed turned into anger.

Rachel: no, no, no and no. (she said pissed) We are not helping her with my money.

Me: our money. (I spoke up)

She looked at me, irritated and I looked at her with my eyes burning like fire.

Mr Matthews: Rachel this is not only your property but mine too, both our names are on those documents, I signed half of this companies shares into the Matthews Family name.

Rachel: that still makes me the owner.

Justin: not if we bring the shares into the company, we bring most of the investors. So we basically own this company and the rest of the properties.

Rachel: you people are messing with me aren't you, do you know who I am?

Vuyo: do you know they can actually sue you?

We all looked at her confused?

Vuyo: wait you guys didn't know you could sue her? (she laughs) you're all a bunch of fools. You know in law it states that if properties of inheritance is sold and the new owner uses the properties in illegal matters then you as a family

can sue her and she could lose all these properties.

Rachel: not if that same family is part of those illegal matters.

Mr Matthews: Damn it !!! (he banged the desk)

Justin: you see grandfather if only you hadn't gotten yourself mixed with her evil ways then we could've sued this bitch. (he said pissed)

Rachel: you can do all you can go get rid of me but those papers have my signature on it and for as long as I live this properties belong to me. (she stood up)

Me: not for long, Rachel, mark my words.
(I said sternly)

Rachel: shut up little Phakade, you're no longer a part of this stupid family. They threw away a very helpful jewel in their family, they don't know your importance in this family, you may try to help them in any type of way but those documents state that they have disowned you.

Ndumiso's head shot up and anger filled his eyes, he looked at Rachel with fire filled eyes and I feared he would do something bad to her.

Rachel: sometimes I wonder if that really is your brother, Vuyo. He's just

way too calm for a man from the Langa family.

With that said she stormed out of the room and left us all looking at each other puzzled.

Mr Matthews: is there any other thing I could do either then having to compensate with this woman please, Vuyo I would really like to help your family business but my hands are tied.

Vuyo: the same way I had to handle your family business during stormy times is the same way you will help me get my family business back Mr Matthews.

Justin: I never knew you had this selfish

side of you Vuyo. (he said coldly)

Vuyo: selfish is when you disowned your own blood sister, Justin.

I like this fire within Vuyo, this evil side of her is attractive. This is how I tried to lift the Phakade name. She is strong and feisty.

Layla: Grandpa you sicken me right now, if only you did this business in a fucking clean way.

She looked pissed and so was the rest of the people in this room but I was calm. Like I'm not part of this family anymore like Rachel just stated so my hands are tied. They can't reown me so I

don't think I am able to help.

Mr Matthews: Tumisani, I....

Me: I don't want your apologies sir, I'm not part of the family so I don't think it's necessary for you to apologize.

Vuyo laughs.

Vuyo: damn girl, you're as stubborn as your mother (she giggles) but Tumisani you can actually help. (she smiles) like I said I know everything about this family, since your name was on the inheritance papers, you can actually get these properties back into your name.

Zack: really?? (he said surprised)

Vuyo: of course babe, all you people

have to do is adopt her and....(she looks at me) I'm sure those Phakade brains of hers will know what she should do after the adoption. Take back your inheritance girl. (she smiled)

Me: that's if I still want to be in this family. (I said looking at the table)

Vuyo: that's totally up to you baby, I said what I had to say, Bro let's bounce. Mr Matthews you owe me big time, I want my family's business back, its under you now. you owe me.

They stood up and left with Ndumiso fuming, I guess he was angry about his stupid reasons.

I looked at the rest of this family. They all looked at me with pleading eyes. I love seeing them like this. Maybe they should beg me a little because they put me in this position and now they need my help. How wonderful. I would love to see them pleading for me to come back to their family.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

I just had to bless you guys, I miss y'all.

I hope you enjoyed this insert.

Admin

[06/19, 11:45] Snr: INSERT 70

.

.

.

.

Busi's POV

" Busiswe"

I turned around and I almost screamed my lungs out.

" sexy as always, I missed that ass, I haven't seen you in a very long time, the club misses you"

I looked at the man standing in front of

me and fear overtook my body. Rian. One of the very rich customers I entertained at the club. What feared me was that he still recognized me but how did he know my name, I made sure I never gave any of my clients my name or personal details. What was he doing here? I can't take this right now, my past can't be following up on me like this.

Me: R-rian (I stuttered)

He stood there checking me out from top to bottom.

Sihle: mama who is this? (he asked holding onto my hand tightly)

Me: no one baby (I said looking at Rian

sternly)

Rian: oh you have a son, wow how lovely.
Hello little man.

Me: I don't know you, who are you and
what do you want?

I had to play that card. I have to act like I
don't know him so that he can leave me
alone. I can't have him messing up my
life, Ndumiso would kill me if he found
out about the kind of life I was living.

Rian: oh don't act all smart with me here
Babe, I know you know me. But let me
remind you. Rian. Does that ring a bell?
(he smirked)

I looked left right and center but there

was no where to hide.

Me: what do you want from me? (I said irritated)

Rian: I want you, I missed you, I've been looking for you everywhere...(he said rubbing his fingers against my arm, I yanked my arm away and moved backwards)

Me: stay away from me.

I said walking towards the exit of the shop, he smiled and blew a kiss to me.

Rian: I will find you Busi, don't worry. I miss that ass tho.

I stormed out of that shop holding Sihle's hand. I guess we ended up

running because Sihle kept complaining and telling me to slow down.

Sihle: mama you're hurting my hand, please slow down.

He said as we stormed out of the mall and I hushed down a taxi at the taxi rank.

Me: I'm so sorry my baby, are you OK? (I said looking down at him and holding his face with tears in my eyes)

I don't know what to do. I really don't know if Rian meant what he said or was he just bluffing. I can't stand to lose Ndumiso, I can't lose him, he is all I have. I know the decisions I made in the past were wrong but what choice did I have? I

had to do something to feed my child, I had no one and nothing to turn to. We were even sleeping on the floor in a shack because I had no money so what was I supposed to do when Ndumiso left us. Tears streamed down my cheeks as we got into the taxi, I tried to calm myself down but tears kept gushing down till I felt tiny hands on my face wiping my tears...

Sihle: please don't cry mama, please...(I said with a sad expression written all over his face, wiping my tears)

I smiled and pulled him into my arms.

Me: I'm OK baby. (I kissed his cheek

and forced a smile.)

This is the reason why I live, my son deserves a better life. I don't care what the world will think about what I did in the past but I did it for my son. I hope Ndumiso will forgive me when he finds out.

Sihle: if you want I won't tell daddy about what happened at the mall but you have to promise me that you will never cry again.

He said as we slowly walked to the house when the taxi dropped us off.

Me: I won't cry anymore baby.

We got to the house and found Ndumiso

pacing up and down. My heart skipped a beat. He was stressed and veins popping out of his forehead, he kept drinking from that Whiskey bottle and I got scared.

Sihle: Daddy (he smiled and ran to his father)

Ndumiso: hey champ (he forced a smile and picked him up)

Ndumiso: how was your day?

Sihle: it was great but I missed you.

He said as if he had not just experienced

[06/19, 11:46] Snr: CONTINUATION

.

.

.

Even tho the amount of likes and comments are disappointing, I won't stop writing. Silent readers, I won't beg anymore. I'm also human.

.

Tumisani's POV

I went back into Sipho's ward after talking to the hot Doc. I'm still thinking of how I'm going to get 25k to pay for his surgery.

Me: babe (I said sitting down next to

him and he looked worried)

Sipho: Tumsa what is going on, please talk to me babe?

Me: my love the truth is, you were shot on the leg and lost a lot of blood, the doctors also found other impurities in your body. Uhm, you are diagnosed with Bipolar babe and emotional disorder, they took out the bullet in your leg but it caused a lot of harm, it cost us a lot of money lately and I used for every penny that I had with me, for the treatment and stuff as well as the surgeries to take the bullet out, I also paid advanced therapy so that you could go to therapy as soon as you heal but now the doctor has just

told me that we have to do another surgery on your leg otherwise you'll....
(tears rushed down my cheeks and my heart broke into a million pieces)

Me: or else you'll become crippled.

He looked at me in disbelief and he was in tears as well. I can't bare to see him like this, how am I supposed to be strong for him if he's making me weak like this.

Me: baby please don't cry (I said holding his hands)

Sipho: so I might not walk again (he said in a shaky voice)

Me: you'll walk my love don't worry, you'll

walk OK. (I wiped his tears and kissed his cheek)

Sipho: you should've left me to die, I can't do this anymore. I knew I was crazy but why is God taking my legs away as well (he cried)

Me: my love we have to be strong for each other, please don't cry I need you babe.

Sipho: how am I going to carry our children Tumisani, how? (he cried and I hugged him)

Me: babe I'll do anything just for you to get this surgery OK, I don't care how much it costs, your health comes first.

Sipho: why do you love me so much Tumisani? I don't deserve to live, I'm a monster, you don't deserve this kind of life, you should've left me there to die.

Me: no plz stop it, I love you for you. I want you, we gonna fight this together, baby promise me you won't leave me, promise me we gonna stick together. (I held his face in my hands)

Sipho: I, I can't Tumisani, look at me, I'm crippled, I can't even feel my legs. I can't make a promise I can't keep baby please...

Me: Sipho you gonna be fine, I believe in you. (I planted a kiss on his lips and

hugged him)

Sipho: you won't leave me right? you won't ever leave me right? you gonna stay with me right? (he said shaking, I tried to calm him but...)

Me: babe relax, I'm not going anywhere I'm here with you, relax....

Sipho: you can't leave me, I need you. You won't leave me. Never.

He started shaking tremendously and repeating the same thing over and over again, I was really scared and I didn't know what to do. He held me tight against his body and I wanted to call the doctor but his grip on me was too tight.

Me: Siphos please calm down you're scaring me (I said scared)

Siphos: Tumisani won't leave me, you love me, you're mine. You can't leave me.

He said shaking, I was in tears and I was shaking in fear as well. I screamed for help but no one came. I pressed the button and cried while waiting for someone to come help me. He kept repeating the same words and shaking, his eyes rolled back and I screamed....

" madam you have to leave the room"

The nurse and doctors came rushing in and Siphos kept saying " don't leave me".

Siphos: Tumisani please I beg you, don't

leave me. (he cried)

Me: I'm not leaving you my love. (I cried)

They instructed me to leave the room and I sat outside on the bench and watched through the glass window how they tried to calm him down. The doctor injected him and then he fall asleep instantly. I cried as I watched him lying there in that state. Doctor Ronald came out of the ward and I rushed to him almost knocking the poor man down.

Me: what is wrong with him? is he gonna be OK? please talk to me?? (I cried)

Doc: you have to calm down first, please follow me.

I wiped my tears and followed him to the office. We sat down and he looked at me worried.

Doc: I don't like seeing you in this state Miss Phakade.

Me: I don't like seeing myself like this either (I said defeated)

Doc: well, his brain is over stressed. He needs rests that's why the sooner we do the surgery, the sooner you can get him into therapy or else his mental state will get worse and I'm afraid they will have to take him to the mental asylum.

Me: no you can't do that, please, I'll be the money, just give me time please

Doc: I gave him an injection to calm him down and for his brain to rest, please make sure you don't say anything hurtful to him or anything that will cause him to have a breakdown.

Me: OK OK, I'm sorry, thank you.

Doc: take care of yourself Miss Phakade, go home and rest, he's in good hands.

Me: thank you.

I left his office and left the building driving like a crazy woman, I connected my phone to the Bluetooth and dialled Lwazi's number....

Me: hello, Lwazi...

Lwazi: boss lady, how are you?

Me: yo I'm not good at all man, I need a favor.

Lwazi: what's up?

Me: I need you to hack Sipho's bank accounts.

Lwazi: what?? why would I do that?

Me: it's a long story. Portia found him and now he's in hospital. We need to save him Lwazi.

Lwazi: what???

Me: yeah, the surgery requires 25k and I've already spent every penny I had on his treatment and I have no other choice then using his money.

Lwazi: OK relax, I'm on it. I'll gonna transfer 25k into your account in 2 hours time.

Me: thank you, thank you so much.

Lwazi: no prob, take care boss.

Me: sharp .

I hanged up and drove to my fathers personal office. Oh I didn't tell you guys about that. Well I discovered that my Father (mr Matthews junior) had a secret office. I found a letter in their room back when I still lived in the Matthews mansion. I went into their room and their was a box under their bed, I opened it and there was a letter in

the box, and lucky me, it was for me. There was a set of keys and an address. That's how I found out where my fathers secret office was. I drove to the place and it was like a secret warehouse. I used the key to unlock the front door and I haven't been here in such a long time. I went to the office and opened the drawer and took out the pile of papers. It's time I get my inheritance back.

[06/19, 11:46] Snr: INSERT 71

-
-
-

Tumisani's POV

I walked into Mrs Dlamini's office and she is startled to see me. Do y'all remember her? The Mrs Dlamini that read my fathers will as well as Aunt Bella's will. The Matthews family personal Lawyer.

Mrs Dlamini: Miss Phakade, what a surprise, I wasn't expecting you. (she stood up)

Me: long time no see Mrs Dlamini.

Mrs Dlamini: I'm a busy woman. (she says shaking my hand)

I place the huge file filled with papers on her desk and she looked at me confused, I invited myself on her chairs and she

sat down as well.

Mrs Dlamini: what can I do for you, Miss Phakade.

Me: well.....a lot has to be done, madam Lawyer.

Mrs Dlamini: I heard you sold your inheritance.

Me: good start, now I don't have to do much explaining. (I looked at her with serious eyes)

Mrs Dlamini: is there a problem miss Phakade? (she said looking at the pile of papers)

Me: there are lots of problems. But first I would like for you to explain to me why,

my fathers will that you read to us was not renewed?

Her head shot up in disbelieve. I looked at her sternly and I meant business. I did some digging and I found some unpleasant information.

Mrs Dlamini: uh uh what are you saying Miss Phakade, certainly Mr Matthews' will is always renewed every single year. His father always signs those documents.

Me: lying won't get you anywhere Dora. (I said using her first name now) I suggest you start telling the truth, look, I'm not as stupid and naive as the rest of

the Matthews family, I'm a Phakade and I know how to stand my ground.

Mrs Dlamini: I don't quite follow, I'm telling you the truth, your fathers will is always renewed every single year.

Me: oh is that so? OK bring out the file, I want to check it, myself.

I looked straight into her eyes and I sensed fear.

Mrs Dlamini: uh uh, I I don't have the file here with me, but I can assure you miss Phakade that will is always renewed by Mr Matthews senior.

Me: I'm losing my patience Dora....(I said lying back into the chair)

Mrs Dlamini: you're wasting my time young lady and I suggest you say what you came here to say and leave. (she said sternly yet scared)

Me: take a very good look at this.

I threw one of the files to her. The will. My fathers will. It was last renewed on the 13 of July 2006 and what year are we again?? Maybe I'm the one living in the past, or are we not in the 21st century. She slowly looked at the file and licked her lips as they turned dry.

Me: do you know that we can actually sue you for not doing your job, this family pays you to be their personal

Lawyer. You are responsible for this file. If this will papers aren't renewed then I guess my inheritance papers are all a fake as well. Because with the will comes the inheritance so please Mrs Dora Dlamini explain to me what the hell is going on here? (I said calmly)

I come in peace. I have all my tricks up in my sleeve. I made sure every single information I got was accurately perfect. Thanks to the information I found in my fathers office, I can now get my inheritance back but I have to pull a few strings first.

Mrs Dlamini: this is none of your concern because you are no longer a

part of this family, they disowned you so you have no say in any of this.

Me: yes I do. (I laughed) yes I do Dora. You and me both know that those papers were a fake, you made them sign fake papers, for what?? that's what I keep asking myself?? Why??

Mrs Dlamini: shut up, those papers aren't fake, they are all real.

I threw another stack of papers to her. My inheritance papers. The original copies with a fucking stamp in it. The papers that I gave to Rachel did not have a single stamp in it meaning that they were never originally my inheritance.

This right here is my real inheritance forms that Mrs Dlamini never gave us to sign. Her eyes grew wide in shock and she was both shocked and astonished.

Me: So tell me, what were those papers that you made us sign, if this is the original will and inheritance papers than what were those papers!!!?? (I said shouting now)

Mrs Dlamini: wh-whe- where did you get these? who gave you these papers?
(she said with hesitation and stuttering)

Me: that doesn't matter Dora, (I threw her another set of file)

She screamed in disbelief. She pushed

all those files back at me and stood up without even reading the third file half way.

Mrs Dlamini: you're a bloody liar, get out of my office.

Me: no until I finish what I came here to do. Sit your ass down. (I commanded)

Mrs Dlamini: get out of my office or else I'll call security. (she said walking towards the door)

Me: you dare touch that door just know that you're going straight to jail and I'm sure your husband would love to know the lovely affair you've been having with his elder brother.

She stopped right in her tracks and turned to look at me.

Me: I suggest you sit down. (I pointed to her seat)

She hesitantly walked to her seat and sat down with fear in her eyes.

Me: now listen and listen very careful. I know everything about you, I know all your affairs and whoring around. I feel sorry for your kids because those girls are still very innocent and young to have a mother who is a bitch. But you know what? who am I to judge, I once upon a time had a mother who was a bitch as well. But the reason why I am here is to

tell you, not ask you, but tell you to remake those disown papers. I want you to make a new set of adoption papers. The only way for me to get my inheritance fully back is for me to get back into the Matthews family again. So Aunty Dora do me a favor and get me Adoption papers. I'll have mercy on you because you have kids but by law I'm supposed to sue you for false information, I'm sure the Matthews family will sue you once they find out what you did.

Mrs Dlamini: i- I'm sorry (she stuttered) I didn't mean to do that, I'm sorry.

Me: why did you do it?

Mrs Dlamini: I was forced to, I was threatened. Your mother threatened me, she said if I didn't forged those papers then she would kill my family. I couldn't let my family die, I'm sorry.

I looked at her shocked and I'm glad I killed that bitch whom I called mother. How could she be so evil, gosh.

Me: what about you sleeping with your husbands brother? were you threatened as well?

Mrs Dlamini: I I, I'm...no. (she was now in tears)

Me: you disgust me, honestly. (I stood up) I want those adoption papers by the

end of tomorrow. But wait, is it possible for me to sue Rachel for using my fathers properties as a drug ring?

Mrs Dlamini: yes but your grandfather is involved as well which means he can go to prison as well.

Me: hmmm OK, it was nice meeting you Mrs Dlamini, my mission here is done.

I collected my files and left her office. I left the building, got into my car and left. Siphos surgery had started two hours ago. Lwazi hacked into Siphos bank account and took 25k for me to pay for his surgery. I pray it goes successfully.

But for now, let me get my company back.

I drove to the police and explained everything to them. Every single thing but I made sure I kept Mr Matthews under cover. I made sure the police saw the files that I had with me and they were convinced that Rachel had stole my inheritance. I also had proof of what I brought to the police, Christina was my witness. She told the police everything that Rachel had been exporting in and out of the business. I took the police straight to the Matthews company and we barged into the meeting of Rachel talking to her human trafficking

investors.

Rachel: what the hell is going on here?

Police: Miss Rachel, you're under arrest for bringing drugs in and out of the Matthews family as well as making this a human trafficking center as well as prostitution and more, the judge will deal with you in court.

Rachel: what!!!?? this is insane.

Police: all these people are also getting arrested because they are also part of this human trafficking nonsense that you are a part of.

Detective: We've always tried to get you where you belong, we always tried to

find a way for us to finally get you behind bars and now that we've got you, we're never letting you go.

They hand cuffed her as well as the many men that were part of the meeting.

The media arrived and they were busy taking pictures and asking for interviews.

The police took care of everything and Rachel was taken to Prison.

Journalist: Miss Phakade we have to ask you a few questions, can you please give us a moment of your time.

They all came running towards me and it was hectic, I felt like a celebrity, the police tried to calm the journalists but it

seemed impossible. Until I felt strong arms grabbing my waist and pulling me towards a black car.

Lwazi: don't answer them Tumisani, keep walking.

I looked at his worried face and kept walking. We got into his car and the media kept following us, gosh what the hell. The car drove off and they kept shouting my name.

Lwazi: shit Tumisani, shit!!!

Me: I had to do it Lwazi, that bitch had to go to prison.

Lwazi: her people are onto us, check here, the Americans are angry.

He passed me his tablet and they had tabloids of this all over the news. Razor Patkins wants his diamonds back that Rachel had taken and it says she's working with Mr Matthews, they were even talking about my mothers disappearance as if she's not dead. I threw him back his tablet after reading the last line. The whole Mexican and American gangs are after me. Well they should bring it on, I'm ready. I don't give a fuck who they are, I'm Tumisani Phakade and I don't fear them.

Me: I need you to organize 50 men, don't tell Sipho about this please, book me a flight ticket to Mexico, or a private jet or

whatever but just keep it undercover. I need to sort these motherfuckers out myself. I'm sick of people messing with me all the time.

He looked at me and I kept my eyes straight on the road. Its time I become what my mother has always wanted me to become. The second Phakade female Gangster. Maybe it runs in the blood, who knows.

< call convo >

Me: Dumisani Shut the fuck up and let me explain mahn!!!?? (I shouted into the phone)

Ndumiso/ Dumisani: explain what

Tumisani!!!?? huh?? I told you not to do this, you're all over the news Tumisani, the hell is this??

Me: fuck the news, I need you to meet me at the airport. We're going to Mexico.

Ndumiso: Tumisani are you crazy? I have a girlfriend and a kid here in case you have forgotten, these people might come after them I can't risk them getting hurt because of me, Tumisani why the hell did you do this?

Me: Dumisani I need you to trust me, I beg you. Trust me. I'm sending three body guards to your house, please just meet me at the airport in two hours

please.

Ndumiso: (sigh) OK fine, but you better have a good explanation young lady.

Me: I do, OK. Thank you, I love you.

< end of convo >

I had to do it. People need to learn how to respect me sometimes. I hate it how people look at me as a small little girl but look at what that small little girl has done. I've sent the female gangster herself straight to prison and I pray they have mercy on her in there. I've planned a lovely surprise for her in prison. Those ladies will make her realize that gold isn't all that glitters. Money is just an

earthly possession, she shouldn't love money more than people.

I drove straight to the hospital. Sipho will hate me for this but I had to do it. I've already told Buhle that I'm going to Mexico for a few weeks. I don't know when I'll come back but surely when I've killed all those mobster And mafias, I'll come back. Now do you believe me when they say the Phakade blood is not to be messed with. Razor has another thing coming down his way. Portia better pray her ancestors don't accept her in hell. This is the other me. Get used to it.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

I smell blood.

Watch how our little Phakade princess grow into a Phakade queen. I love this feisty side of her. There's still more to come my babies, keep riding.

Admin

[06/19, 11:46] Snr: INSERT 72

.

.

.

.

.

Sipho's POV

I slowly open my eyes and pulled myself to a sitting position. My legs feel numb and I can now move them but I'm in pain. I look at a worried Buhle and my eyes search for Tumisani. She has an envelope in her hand and she looks scared.

Me: Buhle (I said in a husky voice)

She passes me a glass of water and I gulp it down. I look up at her again and she looks down worried.

Me: is everything OK Buhle? why do you look so worried? Did anything happen to Tumisani?? (I said almost panicking)

Buhle: no relax, uhm nothing happened,
uhm you're getting discharged today.
(she fakes a smile) the surgery was
successful. You're going home.

Me: oh that's great, but who paid for the
surgery, I remember Tumisani telling me
that it was very expensive?

Buhle: uh don't worry about that, we just
have to focus on your health, forget
about the money.

Me: uh OK, where is Tumisani? (I looked
at her, she looked away sadly)

Buhle: she's fine Siphos, Come on, I've
already signed your discharge papers, I
wanna get you out of here...

She stands up and walks up to me. I sense something bad. I feel like something is not right here

Me: Buhle you're not answering my question, where is Tumisani?

Buhle: she, she is busy, she's at work, that's why she can't be here.

Me: oh OK, where's my phone? I wanna call her.

Buhle: no, uhm I mean we have to get home first Siphoh, Tumisani is fine, let's get home first and freshen up, you must be hungry.

Me: oh OK, are you sure everything is OK?

Buhle: everything is perfectly fine. (she

smiles)

She helps me out of the hospital bed and onto my feet but my legs feel painful. I try to walk but the pain is unbelievable. I push myself to walk until we get to the bathroom and Buhle walks in with me...

Me: what are you doing? (I said looking at her confused)

Buhle: I'm gonna help you get dressed (she said tired from holding onto me)

Me: no B, its cool, I'm not crippled, I can still get dressed by myself

Buhle: are you sure?

Me: I'm sure. Now please get out so I

can get dressed

Buhle: just shout if you need me.

She walks out and I carefully get dressed making sure that I don't touch my bruised sores. Portia's men really did a number on me. They beat me up badly. I wonder how Tumisani took care of them, I'm worried about her.

After getting dressed, I force myself to walk back to the room. Buhle runs to me as if I'm gonna fall.

Me: Buhle no, relax, I'm fine .

Buhle: no Sipho, you're not.

She helps me out of the hospital and we leave that place silently. I feel like some

things eating Buhle and she doesn't wanna talk to me. So I just drop it. We get to my own place and she once again helps me into the house. I sit down on the couch and she hands me the white envelope she had in her hands. She sat next to me and held my hand.

Buhle: I'm sorry I had to lie to you, I don't want you to freak out when you read this, just know that she loves you and she's doing this because she loves you with all her.

Me: Buhle what are you talking about. (I said worried)

Buhle: open it.

I slowly open the envelope and read my name on the first line.

* Siphho*

My love, I'm sorry. I had to go, I'm sorry that I'm not there with you right now, I wish I was there with you to hold you and kiss you. I had to leave. I promise I'll come back. I promise I'll be back, I would never leave you forever. I love you so much.

I'm doing this for us. Rachel is in prison. I got my inheritance back and now the Americans and Mexicans are after me. I have to take control now Siphho, if I don't make a name for myself these people

will never respect me. They all want to kill me and I want to be with them face to face. I want to look them in the eyes and see if they really want to kill me. I'm doing this for me, for you, for us and our future. I want you get well so that when I come back, I'll be with you forever. I want to come back to a happy man and a happy home. Baby you promised me you would go to Therapy, please go my love. I'm not leaving you. I never will. You have my heart Siphho. I'll come back, I promise. Don't look for me, Siphho please. Don't try and look for me, I got this, I can do this. I am a Phakade and I can concur anything within my power. I

love you babe. Be safe and just get well.
Go to therapy, take care of yourself. I'll
always be with you, I promise.

* Love*

Your idiot.

Tears rolled down my cheeks and I cried
in Buhle's arms. What if they kill her?
She's too young for this. Why would
Tumisani do this to me? She should've
let me handle this.

Buhle: sssshh bro, I've never met anyone
as courageous as Tumisani. She knows
what she's doing, don't worry. I trust her.
shhh.

She hugged me tightly.

I want to make her happy. I want her to be proud of me when she comes back, I want her to be happy with the man I'll become. I'll go to therapy as I promised her. I'll get through this. I have to bury the monster in me. I want her to come back home and smile when she looks at me. I know I'm mentally crazy. She's the best woman I've ever come across.

Some woman would left me because of my state but she stayed with me. I love her so much. I'll make her proud and I know wherever she is, she's gonna be safe, I trust her. She's building a better future for us. Our children.

.

Tumisani's POV

Mexico is one sick shit hole. All these peoples faces look as if they are some kind of gangsters or drug addicts. This is not the kind of place I would ever want to live in. Lwazi organised me a private jet and also 50 men and weapons. He also came with me on this mission saying that he can't leave me alone especially without Siphos supervision. We landed in Mexico about two hours ago and we've been driving for the past hour. I'm exhausted because it is almost dawn here and the plane ride was not the best because we

had to plan our surroundings and how we were going to get about this mission. We finally got to some abandoned warehouse in the forest, Oh and Ndumiso is following us in the other car. We had to keep him undercover because I'm sure we all know that he's actually Dumisani and not Ndumiso, the Americans might come after him if they find out that he's working with me, especially now that we are in the same country that the Langa business is situated.

I got off the car and looked up at the building, it was clean tho. Lwazi put the men in patrol and positioned them in

their rightful places. He took two guards inside with me as my, " bodyguard". He's way too protective. We walked into the warehouse and headed straight to the computer room where we found a young man round about 26 sitting in front of the many computers that had camera footages on.

Me: Does every room in this place have a camera.

Lwazi: no, not the one that you're gonna sleep in.

Me: OK cool, and this is?

Guy: Ziggler

Me: wait, I know you from somewhere.

Ziggler: Monster?

Me: yes, you work with Monster, what are you doing here?

Lwazi: he is one of our best computer men, he works for us now not with Monster anymore.

I looked at him with suspicious eyes. I don't trust this guy.

Me: what happened to Trigger? why can't we work with Trigger.

Lwazi: we couldn't possibly only have one computer guy now can we? Trigger is doing another duty.

Me: how do we know that we can trust this guy? Does Sipho know that you

hired him?

Ziggler: you can trust me boss lady,
Bozza knows. I've been working with
them for a while now. (he smiled)

This guy is somehow working on my
nerves. I just don't trust him. Maybe its
because he used to work with Monster.
But how are we sure that he won't betray
us?

Ndumiso: Tumsa.

I turned around and he came in the
room looking worried yet pissed at the
same time. I wonder how he does it.

Me: hey (I briefly hugged him) I'm sure
you already know who these people are.

Ndumiso: yes I do. Lwazi sup.

Lwazi: Bra Miso. chilled bro, chilled.

Me: are we starting tonight or tomorrow?

Ndumiso: we're not starting anything until you explain to me what is going on here?

Me: gosh Dumisani I don't have time for this right now OK. (sigh) I got Rachel into prison and also got my inheritance back, and because Rachel is a gangster, her people are onto me as well as the Americans because they used to work with her and also the Mexicans. Razor Patkins wants his diamonds back that Rachel took. But he thinks now that I

have the company , I also have the diamonds but I don't. She his very far and I'm sure you know Diamonds can't talk so we won't know where it is. The Mexicans use to do drug exporting and importing with her as well as Human trafficking but they also are onto me because I stopped their trade and now they want me dead.

Ndumiso: fuck Tumisani, why didn't you just do this the legal way, do you know how dangerous this is?

Me: for a person who has powerful blood you shouldn't talk such shit.

Ndumiso: this is not about powerful

blood Tumisani, do you know what this is making you become?

Me: I'm becoming what mother has always wanted me to become. A gangster. The Phakade gangster. It runs in the blood Dumisani, let's not try to deny it. I need you to support me Dumisani, without you I won't be able to do this on my own. (I looked at him in the eyes)

Ndumiso: Tumisani you know I would always support you, I'm with you all the way but let me take over, this is too much for you.

Me: no. If it is me they want then it is me

they'll get. I want them all dead, one by one.

Ndumiso: and how are you gonna do that?

I smiled.

Me: oh dear brother, God did bless me with a banging body for no reason. Its time I make my body useful.

Ndumiso: you're joking right? I'm not gonna let my sister use her body to kill these men, no way, think of another plan. Over my dead body will I let you expose your body, never.

Me: Gosh Dumi relax. Ziggler, get me the address of one of the famous Mexican

rich peoples club. I'm sure I will find an idiot who knows lots about the americans there.

Ziggler: I actually have someone in mind.
(he smiled)

Maybe he isn't that bad after all.

Me: who is it?

Ziggler: there is a man who goes by the name of Roberto, he is a drunkard and he has problems with the Americans, he goes to the Astra Mexican club every day and drinks his sorrows away. Maybe you can use him to get info about the Americans so we can find out where Mr Patkins live.

Me: hmm interesting. Schedule 10 men to come with me, Tomorrow night.

Lwazi: done. but Tumisani you need training.

I looked at him confused like, seriously? I've killed someone before and I know how to make use of myself so what training is he talking about?

Me: what do you mean? I'm perfectly fit to kill.

Lwazi: (laughs) don't lie to yourself. You need to know a few fighting techniques, you're too girly.

They laugh, and I punch him in the stomach and he screams.

Me: is that too girly?

Lwazi: fuck Tumisani, are you tryna kill me? (he coughs)

Ndumiso and Ziggler laughed at him.

Ziggler: that didn't look painful to me, You're a sissy man. (he laughs)

Me: oh do you also want a punch?

Ndumiso: (laughs) Tumsa stop, you really do need training, honestly. (he laughs)

I gave him too hot punches and he stumbles backwards and scream in pain.

Me: how about that for training?

Ndumiso: shittt ouch, Tumisani the hell?

(he said holding his stomach)

Ziggler: y'all are just babies, I'm sure its not that bad.

I walked towards him and punched him on his face and he jumps off the chair like a girl, his nose starts bleeding.

Ziggler: fuck, my nose (he said holding his bleeding nose)

Lwazi: (laughs) how does that feel my man? Sipho's cheek sure knows how to punch (he laughs)

Ndumiso: Tumsa shit, the niggah is bleeding, look what you've done.

Me : I didn't tell you guys to make fun of me, now you know that I'm not to be

messed with. (I smiled)

Ziggler: damn woman!!! (I passed him toilet paper to wipe his bleeding nose)

I'm sure its not that bad. He'll be fine.

Me: do I still need training?

Lwazi: yes woman, (I gave him a warning look) you're not that bad but on a serious note, we have to train you.

Me: ok whatever. (I rolled my eyes)

Ndumiso: wait, so she won't have to sleep with these men right?

Lwazi: no never, she just has to drug them into making them tell her the truth and information. Besides Siphos would

kill us all if he finds out that we let his
cheek sleep with other men. (he laughs)

Ziggler: he'll cut our balls out.

We laughed. They so stupid.

Me: I gotta sleep, I'm tired. Where's my
room?

Lwazi: come with me.

He walked towards the door...

Me: see ya bro (I kissed his cheek) I'm
sorry about your nose.

Ziggler: nah it's cool, it's nothing I can't
handle. (he smiled)

I followed Lwazi to the room upstairs
and there was my bodyguard following

us up to the room.

Me: he's not coming in my room right?
(I said walking up the stairs)

Lwazi: no, unless you want him to? (he smirks)

Me: eeeww no.

He left me at the room and I got inside.

My suitcase was already on my bed. I

first looked around and found a

bathroom, I took a shower and wore the

fresh towels. I was lotioning my body

when there was a knock at the door...

Me: who is it?

Voice: Its me. (it was Lwazi)

Me: I'm naked, could you please wait.

Lwazi: I have your food.

My stomach rumbled at the sound of that. I didn't realize i was that hungry.

Me: close your eyes and come in.

Lwazi: how on earth am I gonna walk with my eyes closed...

Me: gosh...(I walked to the door, opened the door and he was standing there with a plate of food in his hands)

Me: Thank you

I took the plate and he examined me from top to bottom. I shut the door in his face when he kept staring at me for too

long. I felt uncomfortable. I put on my PJ's and sat down on the bed and indulged into my food. I switched on my phone and switched off the location then called Layla....

Layla: Layla's phone hello?

Me: hey Layla, its me, Tumisani.

Layla: oh my gosh, Tumisani where the hell are you? Do you see the news, you're all over the news Tumisani?

Me: I know, I know , I need a favor.

Layla: what's up?

Me: I need you to go to Mrs Dlamini's office and ask her for the adoption papers.

Layla: wait what? Mrs Dlamini as in the lawyer?

Me: yes, tell grandpa to sign those adoption papers, I've gotten my inheritance back but I can't get back the business unless grandpa signs those papers, tell him to sign those papers please.

Layla: OK I hear you, but where are you?

Me: I can't tell you where I am but just know that I'll be back.

Layla: I'm worried Tumisani, I'm sorry about everything, honestly, I am.

Me: its OK, I understand, I have to go.
Bye.

Layla: bye, I love you.

Me: I love you too.

I hanged up. I silently ate my food and then started walking down the stairs to gave the plate back when my phone rang, it was an unknown number.

Me: speaking...

Voice: bitch if I find you I swear I'm gonna kill you....

I ran to the computer room and found the gents busy on the computer. I signalled Ziggler to track the call, Lwazi also tried to get the location...

Me: Portia.

Portia: listen Tumisani, I suggest you stop whatever you're doing, getting Rachel in prison is not a threat to us, bring back our diamonds and then we'll place far from you.

Me: that's not happening, I'm not giving you anything but a funeral and mark my words, this war is not gonna be easy.

Portia: you are messing with fire baby girl, I'm warning you Tumisani bring back those diamonds.

She ended the call.

Me: did you get the location.

Lwazi: yeah, give me a pen.

Ziggler gave him pen and paper. He

jotted down the location and looked at me.

Me: that's one problem solved.

Ndumiso: do you know where those diamonds are?

Me: no, but I think I've just got an idea of where those diamonds are.

I looked at them deep in the eyes. I have to go back to SA. I know Rachel never stole those diamonds. My father did.

She probably lied to the Americans that she has the diamonds that's why they're so keen on the diamonds. I know those diamonds are somewhere in my fathers office. I'm very sure of it. I need to read

that Will again. I'm sure there's something missing in that will.

Me: something doesn't add up here, there's something missing in my father's will. Dumitru, I have a feeling those diamonds belonged to my father.

They all looked at me shocked. My head was pounding as well as my heart.

Those diamonds are not the Americans's diamonds. They are not Rachel's diamonds. They are my father's diamonds and I'm sure they cost a fortune that's why the Americans want it so badly. And I'm sure Rachel was looking for those diamonds and lied to the Americans that she has it. But why

didn't my mother know about these diamonds? How did Rachel find out that my father owned Diamonds?

I questioned myself.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

I hope you all enjoyed the Inserts this weekend. I hope y'all are satisfied. I'll see you all this coming weekend, so next week we'll get another set of Inserts. I'll see you all Friday.

Admin

[06/19, 12:12] Snr: INSERT 73

.

.

.

Guys y'all are bad, I can't get y'all out of my mind. I want to study, I really do, but something keeps telling me to post for you guys. I decided to listen to my inner self. But if I fail Accounting tomorrow, I'm blaming y'all.

Just Kidding.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV

I walk into the fully packed club. The smell of alcohol stings my nose, sweaty bodies are dancing around. Some sitting in corners as if they are selling drugs and some are contemplating. I hold onto my clutch bag and check myself out one more time.

I'm a bitch for tonight. I'm wearing a tight black mini skirt that hugs my thighs and pops my ass, with a light blue crop top that leaves my cleavage exposed and heels. My curls fall onto my shoulders and cover the earpiece that I have on my ear, that's how I'm gonna be communicating with the boys. It took us the whole day to convince Dumisani that

I have to dress the part, though he was still furious when I left. My poor brother. Siphos would kill me if he saw me walk into this club half naked like this. The attention I'm receiving right now is unbelievable, even the ladies have their eyes on me. I guess they've never seen such beauty in this place.

I walk up to the bartender and slide the piece of paper that I had in my hand to him. He reads it and smiles when he looks at me.

Bartender: well well well, how beautiful can a woman get. Are you from around here?

Me: are you gonna do as the paper says or should I find him myself? (I say sternly)

Bartender: feisty. I like.

He instructs the other bartender to take his place And instructs me to follow him. I follow him to the VIP section and he stops then looks at me.

Bartender: Name?

" Don't tell him your real name" Lwazi says through the earpiece and the sound annoys me but I keep my cool.

Me: Jennifer.

Bartender: surname?

" Fabrigues" Lwazi says once again.

Me: Fabrigues

The bartender walks away from me and my eyes follow him to where he's walking. He stops at a far table packed with men and prostitutes, he whispers into the man's ear and the man looks up and smiles at my direction. The bartender walks back to me and points at the table.

Bartender: that table over there.

Without saying a word to the bartender, I slowly make my way to the many men seated at the table. I feel people's eyes pierce through every corner of my body.

As I get closer to the table, the guy stands up and takes his drink with him.

Guy: Jennifer Fabrigues. (he smirks)

" Roberto Maratus"

Me: Mr Maratus (I said in my new found accent)

When Lwazi said I needed training, he sure did mean training. He made me change my accent and learn the Mexican accent, tho I sounded funny.

Roberto: I'm flattered you know my name...

Me: who doesn't know the handsome man that owns the heart of Mexico. (I smiled seductively)

Roberto: hmmm (he groans) you make me hard just by looking at you (he places his arm around my shoulder and I want to smack it off me but I stop myself)

This guy disgusts me. He's a man in his early 30's and I don't know much about him but I'm about to find out.

Me: I wouldn't mind being in your bed tonight....(I whispered into his ear seductively)

Roberto: (groans and fixes his pants, I look down And the idiot is hard as fuck) Hmmm, woman...

Guy1: are you gonna introduce us or are

you gonna have sex right here in front of us.

Guy2: its rare to find such a jewel at a place like this, she doesn't look like she's from around here. (he smirks and the woman on top of him looks at me with evil eyes)

Like bitch what are you looking at? your man just complimented me in your fucking presence, what are you gonna do about it?? I want to rub in her face but I have to keep my cool.

" Lower your shoulder Tumisani, you're giving position" Lwazi says and I almost jump, for a second I forgot I had that

thing in my ear. How does he expect me to not show position when this man that smells like a shebeen is holding me so close to him.

Roberto: her name is Jennifer, she's our new....(he looks at me for an answer)

Me: I don't like being titled Mr Maratus. (I say keeping my composure)

Roberto: you're gonna get titled any day from now but for now, you're my precious Jewel. (he smirks)

Guy1: what do you do Miss Jennifer?

Roberto: shut up Joe, she's here to talk to me. Come precious....

He pulls me towards him and starts

walking then he places his hand on my hips. I so badly want to punch this guy. We walk to some office and he pressed a button then the desk disappeared and it was replaced by a bed.

Roberto: so what did you say you do?

Me: I need a job, I want to work for you.

He sits on the bed and I place my bag on the coffee table then slowly model towards him, every step that I took made him nervous, I could sense his nervousness.

Roberto: I feel like I know you from somewhere, why does your face look familiar.

I walk up to him and place my right leg in between his legs. He groans. I didn't even touch him yet and he's already groaning. Fool.

Me: I've never met you before but once I'm done with you, I'm sure you'll find out who I really am.

Roberto: strip for me baby. (he smirks)

" He's already drunk Tumisani, don't waste too much time on him". I hear Ndumiso say into the ear piece and I want to laugh.

Me: let's have a little drink Mr Maratus, you have me for the whole night, I'm all yours.

I turn and my ass is right in his face, he screams. I walk to where the whiskey is and bend over the table so that he gets a perfect view of my body. As I pour the whiskey, I also take out the little satchel of drugs from my breast and I look back at he is lusting over my huge ass. I pour the whiskey as well as the drug then hide it back into my breast. I walk back to him with the glass and give it to him, he takes it all in one gulp.

Roberto: you're driving me crazy woman....(he said in a drunkard moan)

I watch as he gets dizzy, then I walk to my bag and take out the white cloth, I walk bag to him and stuff it into his

mouth then after two minutes I take it back out. He lies back on his back and roams around the bed then holds his head.

Me: talk to me baby, talk to me, Roberto.
(I said as my hands roamed around his pockets looking for his wallet)

Roberto: Decita, baby is that you? Decita, my baby.

I'm confused. Who the hell is Decita?

" keep talking to him"

Me: yes it's me, its me.

Roberto: Decita my daughter, papa is here, I'll save you, baby where are you?
(he cried)

Me: papa!! (I softly shouted)

While all that was happening, I undressed him and found his wallet, there was a picture of a young girl that almost looked like him and also a number that said " Patkins" on it, I took both of them and before I could put back the wallet, he shouted...

Roberto: if that mother fucker Razor does anything to you, I'll make sure I kill him, Decita baby I'm coming.

" Don't leave the wallet Tumisani, take it with you"

Me: what if he comes after me? (I said into the earpiece but Roberto thought I

said it to him)

Roberto: he wouldn't dare harm you, we made a deal and he decided to kidnap you baby, I'll find him and kill him.

Me: what about the number dad....uh papa?

Roberto: I've been meaning to call him for a long time but I haven't found the courage, he'll kill me Decita (he cried) I just want my daughter back. (he cried)

" Take it all Tumisani, make quick, he's getting back to his normal self, there's a red button attached to the wall, press it and it will lead you to the back exit, there's a black Audi parked outside,

Ziggler will meet you there"

I quickly packed up everything and took the wallet then cleaned the glass and put it back to where it was, then I took my bag and checked if everything was set perfectly. I looked for the red button then pressed it and it showed me a stair way which took me exactly where Lwazi said it will take me.

I walked out of the parking and searched for a black Audi but I found none. I held the earpiece but I felt like there was no sound to it.

Me: Lwazi where the hell is he?? (I shouted into the earpiece) Hello, Lwazii!!

(it was disconnected) Damn it.

I stood there looking around for a black car but there was fucking none. Are they crazy to leave me out here all alone, what if Roberto's people find me.

Voice: Gotcha!!

He pulled my waist and I screamed in fear. I was so scared I smacked him.

Me: fuck Ziggler, don't ever do that shit again, do you know how scared I was (I said breathing heavily)

Ziggler: (laughs) for someone who had just drugged a dangerous man, you shouldn't be this scared.

Me: but I am, and why did you take so

long to come and where is the Audi that Lwazi was talking about? And, and....

Ziggler: gosh woman one question at a time...

I realized we were still standing on the same spot and he was still holding my waist. I pushed him backwards and got his hands off me

Me: why are you holding me?

Ziggler: uh in case you have forgotten you just said you're scared And if you haven't realized you're shaking and you've got goosebumps.

I look down at myself and yes I'm really shaking And yes I do have goosebumps.

Me: maybe if you hadn't kept me here in the cold for too long then I bet you I wouldn't be shaking right now. (I said with attitude)

Ziggler: sorry (he took off his jacket and covered me, mxm now he's being thoughtful)

Me: where's the car? (I said hugging the jacket to my cold body)

Ziggler: over there (he started walking towards the black Audi that I've been looking for, for almost ten minutes. I feel stupid)

We got in the car and he drove off, it was only the two of us and it was silent.

I miss my man so much. Gosh, in a weather like this I could be cuddled up into his big arms and I would be warm. I look out the window and let it all sink in.

Ziggler: are you OK? (he asks focused on the road)

Me: I'm fine.

Ziggler: (sighs) you know maybe if you aren't this cold towards me then I'm sure we could be great friends.

I look at him, like seriously? I have no time for friends right now, the only friend I had, is now not my friend, so I don't think I have room for friends anymore.

Me: I'm not cold towards you.

Ziggler: uh don't lie to yourself, you've been rude to me since you got here, but that's cool, I'm used to beautiful ladies being rude to me. (he smiles)

OK maybe I've been rude to him but still, I just don't trust him.

Me: should I be apologizing?

Ziggler: it wouldn't hurt to apologize.

Me: hmm (sigh) ok, I'm sorry, Ziggler, sorry for being rude to you.

He laughs.

Ziggler: you sound so cute when you're apologizing.(he laughs)

Me: fuck you.

Ziggler: there we go again, you're being rude to me again, damn if you weren't Siphos chick I would've spanked that sexy ass of yours long time ago.

Me: and if he doesn't kill you then I don't know what kinda man I'm living with.

He laughs. I smiled.

Me: stop provoking me then maybe I wouldn't be so rude, I'm nice, I don't bite, you're turning me nasty.

Ziggler: that sounds so cute, I want to eat you up. Does Siphos know you're so adorable. (he laughs)

I playfully hit him on his arm.

Me: stop it... (I giggled) you're provoking

me on purpose, I'm sure you don't want me to make your nose bleed again right?

Ziggler: hmMMM

Me: I thought so. (I smiled)

Ziggler: on a serious note Tumisani, you're really beautiful, you're just so.....I don't know how to describe you but you're beautiful.

I blushed.

Me: Thank you. (I smiled) see sometimes you are really sweet but sometimes you're a demon.

I said getting out of the car because we were already at the warehouse. He got out too.

Ziggler: I'm not a demon, you picture me as a demon in your head. I'm just this sexy hot guy whose got brains for days.

I laughed.

Me: damn you've got an ego brah.

We walked into the warehouse and walked straight to the computer room. Ndumiso and Lwazi were seated there typing on the computer that had letters and numbers that made me so confused just by looking at it.

Lwazi: that's step one, complete. You were great in there.

Ndumiso: go get dressed, I don't like the way these idiots keep looking at you.

We laughed and I walked up to my room and got dressed. Now I can meet up with the so called Razor face to face and he better shoot me because I'm not leaving that place till I kill him with my own bare hands. Oh And I also would like to find out who this Decita girl is. I'm sure Razor is also planning on using her for prostitution but that ain't happening.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT.

Give me some real comments guys.
your opinion matters. Tell me what you think.

Admin

[06/19, 12:13] Snr: INSERT 74

.

.

.

.

Sipho's POV

I never thought I would find myself at this place. I always thought that I was brave and strong both physically and emotionally but I guess life took a straight turn. Life hasn't been easy but with Tumisani in my life, I knew I was

going to achieve many goals. The woman brought light to my life and I don't know why God keeps bringing storms in her way. She deserves much more than happiness. I wish I could give her the life she deserves but how do I start giving her happiness when I'm messed up.

I walked to the receptionist and find a blond girl behind the desk with glasses on, she smiles when she sees me.

Me: Good afternoon, I'm Mr Ndlovu, I'm here for the uh uh...

Receptionist: Nice to meet you Mr Ndlovu, Doctor Davids is waiting for you.

(she smiles warmly)

Me: uh oh thank you uh...

Receptionist: I'm Natalie, Doctor Davids office is just straight down there and the door on your right is her office.

Me: ohk thank you once again. (I smiled)

I slowly walked to the office. My heart pumping in my chest and my mind running wild. I so badly want to turn around and run away And never look back but I'm doing this for Tumisani.

She deserves a better and healthy man. I stop at the door and softly knock. My fingers start sweating and I'm nervous. A sweet angelic voice tells me to come

in and I slowly opened the door. I walk in and there is a beautiful lady in her early 30's standing next to a coach that had soft white pillows and it looked so welcome yet I felt uncomfortable. Like who would ever thought that Sipho Ndlovu would be here standing right in front of a therapist.

Doctor Davids: Good afternoon Mr Ndlovu (she smiles warmly and offers a handshake)

Me: Good day Doc. (I said shaking her hand)

I look at her note pad on her hand and she smiles welcoming at me. I've never

expressed my feelings to anything either than Tumisani and I doubt I'll be able to talk to this woman. Whenever I try to express my feelings to someone I always end up getting overwhelmed with anger. Because whenever I think of my past, I am consumed with anger and hatred.

Doctor Davids: Now, Mr Ndlovu, for our first session I want us to first get to know each other. I want you to tell me about yourself and tell me you are possibly here? Tell me about your childhood your past and how you grew up. Don't be scared of me, I'm not here to judge you, I'm here to help you and I

can only do that if you cooperate with me and talk to me and tell me how you feel.

She says calmly with a wide smile on her face. Her mother expression makes me think about the relationship I had with my mother. We were very close and I loved her with all my heart. I just stared at her and wondered what to say because I don't know how to tell her how I feel. It's just not easy.

.

Tumisani's POV

I wake up to a bright new day. The sun is shining and the birds are singing. I yawn

and stretch my arms out wide before I get out of the bed and strip myself naked then brush my teeth and hop into the shower. The warm water hits my skin and comforts me in a kind of way. I stand under the shower and slowly play the beautiful memories I've shared with Siphon in my mind. I imagined how he used to hug me from behind when we stood under the shower like I am standing right now. How he would kiss me out of nowhere and tease me. How he would squeeze my ass and carry me on the kitchen counter. I miss him so much. I wish he was here with me so I could just hold him and kiss him. I miss

how his hands feel on my body, I miss how he would act all protective over me and how he would mess up my kitchen whenever he cooks. I smiled to myself thinking about the man who brought a smile to my face and gave me a reason to move on from what I've been through. If it weren't for him then I wouldn't have been able to get where I am today. I holds my heart. I thought I had found my soulmate when I met Yanda but I guess I was wrong.

I dried myself and lotion then put on my black tracksuit pants that hugs my lower body and a black vest then tie up my curls and put on my slippers. I walk

down the stairs and my bodyguard follows me, I walk to the kitchen and find Ziggler sitting on the counter eating a sandwich.

Ziggler: you sure know how to sleep princess, Good morning.

Me: Morning.

I said opening the fridge and taking out a the juice bottle then found a glass and poured some for myself.

Me: where's my brother and Lwazi?? (I said turning around and caught him staring at me)

Ziggler: they gone out to figure out how they were going to get back the Langa

Equipment shop.

Me: what?? what on earth is Dumisani thinking? what if they find them and kill them?

Ziggler: relax princess, This is all planned. You just wait And see, they'll bring back a beautiful surprise for you.
(he smiled)

Me: are you sure they're not in danger?
(I asked worried)

Ziggler: no babe, they're fine.

Me: so it's just the two of us? well apart from the many guards surrounding this place?

Ziggler: yeah it's just us two. Follow me.

He hopped off the counter and I now got a perfect picture of his well built muscles, he was also wearing a black vest and Grey jeans. We walked to the computer room and he typed some stuff in there then a picture of the girl Roberto was calling his daughter popped up.

Ziggler: Decita Maratus.

Me: his daughter?

Ziggler: yes, she's 20, kidnapped by Razor Patkins. Her father and Razor made a deal so they could export and import prostitutes but Roberto back out and Razor lost lots of money so he kidnapped his daughter and killed his

wife. She's now working as Razor's prostitute and is always drugged so she could do the job properly.

Me: have you found out how I can get to Portia?

Ziggler: that's where the surprise comes in, wait for your brother and Lwazi to come back. You'll love this surprise (he smiled)

Me: hmmm cool, so do we have to go to America any time soon?

Ziggler: we won't have to go there anymore because all the drug lords already know you're here, they want to meet the newly found queen that dared

to disrupt the work of the kings.

Me: hmm they should bring it on, how many of them are there?

Ziggler: you're lucky there are only 5 of them including Razor, oh and Monster wants to speak to you.

Me: wait don't tell me you're still in contact with him? (I said irritated)

Ziggler: is that how little you trust me? You're all over the news in SA, so I'm sure he knows what you're up to.

Me: then what does he want?

Ziggler: he probably found out about the diamonds, are you sure you know where those diamonds are, they are quite

expensive and could cost a lot of lives, its dangerous.

Me: I'm sure of it but what worries me is why all these men are so interesting in these diamonds. (I said sitting next to him on the one chair)

Ziggler: I searched up on the diamonds and it reads that they are very deadly. Those diamonds belong to the King of diamonds and it carries a curse. If they are in the hands of someone who does not have authority than that person might die.

Me: Ziggler I don't understand the shit you're saying, this sounds like some kind

of movie.

Ziggler: I also don't believe in that shit but wherever those diamonds are make sure its always under your hands because I have a feeling those diamonds belong to your father and it is very powerful.

Me: gosh this is too much for my brain. How much can a person take in, lord. (I roll my eyes and sit into the chair comfortably)

Me: how come you so smart, why do you live this life? (I said out of curiosity)

Ziggler: what life? I love this life. It's better than living at a orphanage and

waiting for someone to adopt you. (he said sadly)

Me: what do you mean?

Ziggler: I never knew my parents, I was left at a orphanage, then someone adopted me and I grew up but I was very naughty. tho that family gave me everything, I still found comfort in robbing people and stealing, I was a gangster at the age of 10, I ran away from that foster family when I turned 15 and I ended up on the streets living the street life. I became a hacker and hacked peoples Bank cards, I hanged out with the bad guys and that's where it took me today but I love this life. I don't

mind repeating the same life because it made me who I am today. I have money and cars and I've got brains.

He said smiling. This guy. I feel sorry for him but I also feel sorry for myself. I guess everyone has their own problems. The room fell silent and I could feel him staring at me.

Ziggler: why so quite?

Me: I'm thinking, life is crazy hey, like who could ever imagine, me Tumisani, murdering someone. (I giggled) it sounds so crazy

Ziggler: I guess that's life. (he kept looking at me and smiling)

Me: dude fuck, don't do that (I nudged him)

Ziggler: do what?

Me: staring at me whole time, what? is there something on my face? (I held my face in search of something)

Ziggler: yes there is something on your face

Me: what?

Ziggler: beauty. you're so God damn beautiful, I just can't stop looking at you.

I looked at him concerned. I mean, the niggah is hot but like, I don't need him. I've got someone that I love.

Me: are you tryna hit on your boss's chick?

Ziggler: what? no, no, I'm just....complimenting you and admiring Gods creations. (he smiled)

Me: hmmm let's hope so. (I giggled)
have you eaten? what's the time in this place? Geez I feel like everything is so fast in this country.

Ziggler: indeed it is, it's already past one.

Me: what, how long did I sleep, I'm starving.

Ziggler: you saw me eating in the kitchen, remember?

Me: oh yeah. I'll go make something

before Ndumiso and Lwazi come with the so called surprise.

Ziggler: sharp. You gonna love it, trust me

I nodded and walk out of the room and headed to the kitchen. I wonder what the surprise is. Now that I know how many drug lords and gangsters I'm gonna deal with, I have to plan my moves. I have to take them down one by one. Maybe I was really destined for this. I just hope Siphos is doing well. I miss my idiot so much..

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Admin

[06/19, 12:13] Snr: CONTINUATION

.

.

.

.

I open my eyes and I find myself on my bed, in my room. I guess I somehow fell asleep while reading the magazine. I looked out the window and it's dark outside, I take my phone from the bedside table and check the time. 21:34 it reads. Damn, time flies in this country. I quickly hop off the bed and head

towards the door, as soon as I open the door Dumi was about to knock..

Me: bro

Ndumiso: princess (he hugged me and smiled)

Me: where have you been all day?

Ndumiso: I have a surprise for you, follow me.

He took my hand and led me down the stairs then took a right turn to a room that I've never been before, he opens the door smiling, weird. He walks in and I walk in after him. My eyes pop out in shock as it lands on a not so pleasant face covered in blood and seated on a

chair, tied up for behind. An evil smile rises up on my lips.

Me: damn brother, what a pleasant surprise, thank you, thank you so much.

I kissed his cheek and hugged him tightly. I walked towards the sleeping Portia who looks drained out. Her pretty little face is bruised, she is breathly heavily in a deep sleep, father lord, I love the sight.

Me: bring me a bucket of cold water.

Ziggler walks towards me the bucket and hands it over to me then heads back to where the gents are standing, not too far from us. The room is big and dark

even tho the lights are turned on.

I take a very good look at her, one more time before I throw the cold water over her head and she wakes up screaming....

Portia: fuck, shittttt!!! (she screams)

She starts shaking out of cold before she opens her eyes And they land on me, I smiled wicked crossing my hands on my chest.

Me: damn you look beautiful. (I smiled wickedly)

Portia: you bitch, I knew it was all your plans, (she spat at me)

Me: well hello to you too Portia Patkins.

Portia: you better let me go you slut, my father is onto you and I'm sure he already knows that I'm missing so you better let me go bitch!! (she shouted)

Me: lower your voice baby girl, don't shout at me. (I said irritated)

Portia: I'm gonna kill you, I swear I'm gonna kill you bitch.

Me: not if I kill you first (I walk over to Lwazi and grab the gun in his hands and walk back to Portia)

Me: now, we're gonna play a little game. OK. If you lie to me that costs you a bullet that goes through you body so you better think carefully before you

answer because bitch i won't hesitate to shoot, so Portia , lie and I the bullet hits you, sure you still want to leave here alive, that's if I don't decide to kill you.

Portia: shut up I'm not answering to anything bitch.

I putted the gun towards her and tempted to pull the trigger.

Me: Question number one, where is your father? (I said still holding the gun)

Portia: I'm not telling you anything bitch, fuck off.

Me: that's the wrong answer Portia, I'm giving you one last chance, where is Razor?

I riffled the gun and it made that sound that it always makes when you are ready to shoot.

Portia: you're not brave enough to shoot me, I'm not telling you anything...

I smiled and shot straight past her and she screamed but I didn't shoot her, I shot the wall.

Portia: aaaahhh fuck are you tryna kill me (she screamed)

Me: start talking Portia, the next bullet is going through your leg, you tried to make Sipho paralyzed but your plans never succeeded, how about I make you paralyzed, how about that?

I aimed for her leg and she screamed.

Portia: OK OK, stop please, I'll I'll tell you, stop please.

Me: good now start fucking talking and stop messing with me, where the hell is your father? (I said impatient)

Portia: he, he, my dad is uhm, he....(she stuttered and swallowed hard) he is here in Mexico. (she looked down)

Me: give me an address bitch?

I got comfortable And pulled a chair and sat down facing her, still pointing my gun at her.

Portia: I don't know you bitch, how the fuck am I supposed to know? (she said

with attitude)

I gave her two hot slaps and she turned red.

Me: call me bitch one more time, I dare you. (I said pissed)

She kept quite, immediately. I smiled.

Me: a little discipline doesn't hurt, does it?
Good now give me an address.

Portia: uh uh 15 Alguarze street.....

She said the address and Ziggler wrote it down carefully.

Me: now, does he keep these girls at that place as well?

Portia: what fucking girls are you talking

about, bitch, I just sold my father out to you (she said with a shaky voice)

Me: you don't learn do you, (I slapped her again and she winced in pain as her face is already bruised)

Portia: ouch ouch plz stop, plzzz (she cried)

Me: good, now listen, where does Razor keep all those poor girls?

Portia: there's a club close to the address I just gave you, it's actually a place where my father brings all these rich men and they sleep with those girls and we make money out of it.

Me: you people disgust me (I spat in her

face angrily)

Portia: eeewww fuck, (she whined)
you're gonna pay for this I swear you will,
my father is not weak, he will come after
you and when he does, you and your
stupid men are going six feet under, I'll
make sure of that.

Me: shut up already, Anyway, Does the
name, Decita Maratus ring a bell.

She chuckled and started laughing. She
laughed her lungs out as if I had just
made a joke.

Me: did I say something funny guys? (I
looked at the gents And Ndumiso
walked towards us)

Ndumiso: I think it's the drugs we injected into her that's working her up...

Me: what!!?? you injected her??

Ndumiso: we had to, why do you think she's telling you the truth?

Me: fuck Dumisani man, now look how she's acting, why the hell is she laughing like a crazy woman.

Lwazi: the drugs are wearing out, I told you not to inject her before we got here, I knew she was not going to finish telling us anything because we injected her too soon.

Me: Gosh lord have mercy (I sighed)

Portia kept laughing as if she was losing

her mind. She was even talking to herself. Ziggler was typing on his computer this whole time.

Me: are you sure it's just an injection that you drugged her with? (I said concerned)

Ndumiso: she wasn't obeying me so I increased the dose...(he said guilty)

Me: fuck Dumisani, the hell is that??

Aaaagghh mahn. Now how do I find out where this girl could be and how does she look like now because the place changes people both physically and all that.

Ziggler: peeps relax, Tumisani come

look here.

I walked over to the computer and there it was, the whole plan of how we were going to get into that big house. He even found the club where they kept the girls.

Me: damn boy, did I ever tell you how smart you are. (I giggled)

Ziggler: tell me something I don't know, (he laughed) so this is the whole plan.

There is a function at this place tonight and all the mafias are coming together to have a meeting about this sudden close in trade. Rachel had connections everywhere, all these people are coming together just to get you out of the

picture and Rachel out of prison. They are all going to work out their differences just to bring you down.

Me: well I'm quite flattered that they going through so much trouble just for me.

Ziggler: and I'm sure Razor already knows that you the one who has his daughter, the meeting is taking place at this huge mansion.

Lwazi: how can she go in there knowing very well that they are planning against her? She's gonna get killed Ziggler.

Me: don't worry about me, I'm ready for this shit.

Ndumiso: no you're not Tumisani, I'm not letting you go in there where there are about 20 powerful mafias who are ready to kill you.

Me: I don't care Dumisani, I'm ready for this, I've always wanted to look those people in the eyes, I don't care if it'll cost me my life but at the end of the day I'll die happy knowing that I tried to at least make a name for myself.

Ndumiso: are you listening to yourself Tumisani, do you think I wanna lose you in this whole mess, no never, I'm not letting you go in there.

Me: Dumisani plz stop being so

stubborn, I want to do this. I'm ready. If my mother can stand up to kill all those people just to get what she wants then surely me her daughter can do better than that.

Ndumiso: see, see what I hate about all this, your fucking mindset has changed tumisani, this whole thing has changed you, you think like that evil woman now, you're becoming just like her. (he said furious)

Me: Dumi....

Ndumiso: no Tumisani just shut up, I'm not letting you risk your life like this.

Me: I'm not losing my life Dumi....(I

walked up to him and held his arms, he was so angry that he was even shaking)

Me: I'm not going anywhere, I have to do this Dumisani or else people won't respect our name, they'll keep taking advantage of us and I won't let that happen to me or my future kids and neither will I let that happen to your kids. if I don't build this legacy today, then no one will. Gogo left me to continue building this name and I'm not gonna disappoint her. It's either you're with me or you're out. Choose.

I looked him deep in the eyes and he's eyes were turning wet. I broke the eye contact and turned around because I

could feel myself getting weak too.

Me: boys get the guards ready. Clean up this mess and be ready by 23:30

I rushed out the room and charged up the stairs, tears rolling down my cheeks.

I quickly got into the shower And cried my lungs out. Dumisani can't do this to me, I need him the most right now. He

can't keep making me so weak when I have to be strong. Its now or never. I

have to take over this name with my whole heart, blood and soul. This is who

I am, I know he is with me through every step but I feel like he's losing hope in our

family name. He can't be so weak when we have to be strong. It's time I concur.

.

.

I take deep breaths as the car gets closer to the the big mansion. I breath in and out as I feel my lungs suffocating, my heart keeps beating like the thunder and my palms are sweaty.

Ndumiso: please be careful Tumisani, I beg of you, if you feel things are getting out of hand, talk into the ear piece I'm right behind you. Please be careful, I can't lose you. I love you so much.

He pulls me into his arms and hugs me tightly as if I'm going forever, I hug him tightly as well and kiss his cheek.

Me: I love you too. (I smiled, as he kissed my forehead and squeezed my hands)

Ndumiso: take care, don't hesitate to shout Tumsa.

Me: OK, are you sure you guys have her? You know, just in case things don't go as planned.

Ndumiso: don't say that I'm already worried.

Lwazi: it's time, boss lady, take care of yourself please, there's a body guard that's inside there with a red tie, he's with you, make eye contact. Don't smile, keep your shoulders up and breath, you'll

be fine oh and please don't die in there,
Sipho will kill us all if you die in there.

Ziggler: true, oh and keep out on the
watch for my signal, remember my code
is when I wink.

Me: got it, thank you guys. (I fist pump
all of them) make sure all the girls are
out before one o'clock , look for Decita
please.

Lwazi: don't worry about them. Now go,
we're already running late. Don't get
scared when you hear gun shots plz, I
already know your reaction when you
hear it. You lose focus.

Me: then why didn't you bring Silencers

so that it would be more quite.

Lwazi: the gunshots make the bosses also distracted more reason for you to attack. now go.

Me: see yah whenever

I hopped out of the car and walked to the gate where I pressed the security code that Ziggler gave me and lucky us they had no guards at the gate. I got in and signaled for them to drive through as well. I walked straight heading for the big wooden door filled with guards.

Lwazi drove the car to the back of the big building and the guards thought it was one of the bosses so they didn't pay

much attention. Did I tell you guys, they made me look formal?

Oh yeah, I'm wearing a black body hugging dress that still shows my assets but makes me feel sexy, I don't know how Lwazi expects me to shoot to kill in this dress. The guards opened up for me as soon as I gave them my so called name, " Jennifer Fabrigues". I also gave them my pass paper that I don't know how Ziggler got and I was free to enter. So much for tight security. I walked into the house and put on my sunglasses. Did I tell you it was 3-D, ask Ziggler how he does it, the glasses instructed me to walk up the stairs

because apparently I was in the basement but what amazed me was that there was no security. Maybe this is a trap. What if it's a trap. My mind ran wild and hesitated to walk up those stairs. What if they already know our plans and they are planning to kill me up there, I questioned myself. ...

" It's not a trap Tumisani, keep walking" I hear Lwazi say into the ear piece and I sigh in relieve. I walk up the stairs and take a turn on my right where Lwazi says I take the glasses off because he had already examined the whole building when I had the glasses on. He instructs me to turn and just as I turned

again , my eyes land on the many men sitting around a big fat round desk. They were all smoking whatever shit they were smoking. I stood right there is watched them until I felt someone looking at me. He dropped his cigarette and threw his glass onto the floor when his eyes landed on me. He was really a sexy looking old man. The whole mob stopped with whatever they were doing and everyone's attention fell to me. Now who wants to shoot me first? I thought to myself. Razor's eyes pierced through me and so did the rest of the mob, then a black door opened and a man wearing a red tie entered. He placed all the

druggs on the table as well as all the money. I guess that's my cue to sit down. I walked toward the empty seat and sat down, next thing I hear is many footsteps charging towards the stairs and many guards barging into the room. I sat down comfortably as the many dangerous men wondered what a woman would be doing at such a dangerous place. I looked into Razor's eyes and I could feel my eyes burning in anger.

Razor: well well well (he smirked)

Me: why so many guards for only one person Mr Patkins.

I said with so much calmness. I mean, he brought the whole Zoo just for me, I must feel flattered.

Razor: If it isn't the powerful Tumisani Phakade.

Me: one and only. (I said with no emotion) Razor Patkins.

Razor: I must say you're a tough cookie, you're hard to catch and also you're powerful as a woman.

Me: yet you try to test my intelligence by messing with me.

Razor: I would watch my tongue if I was you, young lady, you're sitting with the biggest mafia's in town.

Me: yet I still don't fear any of you. (I smirked) How wonderful is that Mr Patkins.

Man 1: so you really do have the audacity to fight us?

Me: I wouldn't mind doing every day of my life for as long as I live.

Man 2: who said you're leaving here alive. You think you can mess with our businesses And get away with it alive

Man 1: relax Fadrigo, she's just a kid, I'm sure one of our clubs would love new fresh meat.

They all laughed.

Me: I come in peace Mr Patkins, I want

you out of my life.

Razor: I want my diamonds you bitch.

Man 3: your diamonds, motherfucker
don't try me, those diamonds belong to
me.

Razor shot him dead on the spot
immediately And all the other men stood
up and pointed their guns at each other.
The sight was beautiful. One man down.
Leaves me with four.

Man 1: Little girl you better tell us where
those diamonds are or else....

Me: or else what?? (I said sternly)

Razor: those are my diamonds you sick
Mexicans think you own everything,

those diamonds and drugs and prostitutes are all mine.

Man 2: you better be fucking with your mother if you think those diamonds belong to you.

Razor shot him and he also died. Three men left.

Razor: Where are my diamonds Phakade?
(he said furiously?

Me: fuck you.

I felt a gun being pointed to my head.

" Tumisani you have a weapon, make use of it, there's only 10 people in that room, those guards won't do anything without instructions from Razor"

Man 1: I've always know you to be a coward razor you can't even get a little girl to give the diamonds.

He got so frustrated he shot five of the guards down. They keep making my job easier by killing each other.

Razor: guards now.

" duck Tumisani"

I ducked down and all I hear is gunshots in the room and men falling to the floor.

All the mafias are out and it is only

Razor and his two guards. I get up and

shoot the two guards down and point

my gun towards him and throw him over,

the Langa family business papers.

Me: sign those papers back into their names.

Razor: why would I do such a thing, I'm the most powerful man on earth (he muttered)

Me: you would sacrifice your own daughter for money?

His eyes grew wide and mouth open, he got pissed immediately.

Me: sign over those papers and we forget this ever happened.

The guy with red tie barges into the room and Razor throws himself onto me and gets hold of my gun and holds me at gun point. Damn it.

Razor: come closer and I shoot her, I dare you...

Ziggler walks into the room with two guns in his hands...

ziggler: let go of her man...

Razor: not until you bring back my daughter, I'm not signing those papers.

He starts to slowly walk backwards till he gets to the door, Ziggler winks signalling me to hit his gun out of his hand but he notices...

Razor: dare move and I'll shoot you (he instructs)

" Tumisani don't move, our guards are out, he's people took us down, your

brother has been shot, don't move"

Me: what!!!!!!!!??? (I screamed)

Razor runs out of the room pulling me at gun point, he runs down the stairs and we are met by his many guards.

Razor: Two upstairs

They all run up the stairs and the whole house is surrounded..

Razor: where is my daughter...

Me: I'm not telling you, shoot me. (I cried)

Razor: where is my daughter.

Me: fuck you (I spat)

He runs out the house and as soon as

he opens the door we are met by a bleeding Ndumiso shot on the leg and he is limping with Portia held at gun point, the same way I am being held at gun point.

Portia: Daddy!!!! (she cries)

Razor: baby don't move

Ndumiso tries to pull the trigger and so does Razor...

Razor: my daughter for your sister, an eye for an eye....

Me: makes the whole world blind, let go of me you fool...

I try to pull myself out of his strong grip but he pulls me back...

Ndumiso: let go of her, I'll give you your daughter.

Me: no Ndumiso kill her, I don't care if I die as long as I'll know that I tried to defeat this devil and saved those innocent girls, shoot her Ndumiso. (I cried)

Ndumiso: I'm not letting you die Tumisani.

Me: you're losing a lot of blood Dumisani, shoot her.

Razor: let me put an end to this stupidity....

He was about to pull the trigger on me when I heard a gun shot and I screamed,

I looked down at myself and there was no blood on me, I looked at Ndumiso and Portia and they were still standing, all of a sudden someone fell behind me.....

Portia: Dadddyyy!!!! (she cried)

I turned around and Razor was laying on the floor, dead.

Ziggler: game over. (he whistled)

I looked at him standing there smiling with a gun on his hand and the guy with the tie as well....

Ndumiso: he's not your father Portia.

He let go of her and she ran towards us.

She knelt on the floor and cried her

lungs out. All of a sudden she stood up with a gun in her hand pointing at me.

Ziggler: don't you dare shoot young lady.

Portia: fuck you (she positioned the gun at my stomach)

Portia: I hate you with every fibre in my body.

Boom.

Lights out for me. How many bullets does a girl need to survive. I've already survived one, now this is the second bullet that hits my body. Do I live or do I die?

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Admin

[06/19, 12:13] Snr: INSERT 75

.

.

.

.

.

TWO WEEKS LATER

Sipho's POV

"Tumsa you have to wake up, babe please don't leave me, you promised that you would never leave me, I need

you Tumisani, please I beg of you. Don't leave me like this please. I won't be able to live without you, my life will become miserable without you. Baby, you have my heart, please babe, don't go."

Tears rolled down my cheeks as those words came out of my mouth. Every day felt like a struggle, I struggled to find myself again. It was hard to express the burden I carried in my heart. I felt broken.

When they brought Tumisani back to SA and told me she was in hospital, my whole world just crumbled. I blamed myself for this, if only I hadn't put her in a situation where she would take a bullet just because my past had haunted

me. She risked her whole life and future all because of me. Now here she is lying on this hospital bed, lifeless. This is the second bullet that has entered her body in 21 years of living. She has turned 21 today and she's in hospital. My heart sinks as I see her lying here with machines connected to her. The doctors say she might wake up but if she does she probably won't be able to have children because two bullets both hit her in the same place and she might not be able to hav children. Her womb might be damaged but they can only tell once she has woken up. Why did this have to happen? why her? That's what I keep

asking myself. She had always wished to have her own children and now what will I tell her once the results are confirmed? what will I say to her? They can't do this to her, she deserves better than this. She deserves a happy life. I feel like ever since I entered her life, all the bad things has been happening to her. I love this woman so much. Why does bad things always happen to good people. I mean, if this would've happen to me then it would've been fine because I deserve it but why her, she doesn't deserve this.

I'm glad Portia decided to commit suicide after she found out that her

father wasn't really Razor Patkins but Roberto Maratus. She committed suicide and her father went into a coma out of shock. If she had to be alive, I would've killed her with my own bare hands. She's the reason the love of my life is lying here today lifeless.

Therapy has been good but how do I contain myself and allow myself to heal when my heart is broken like this. How do I heal mentally when Tumisani is in hospital lying lifeless?

I squeeze her hand and kiss it as I cried my sorrows away.

" babe you have to wake up, you have to

wake up for me, my love I miss you. My bed is cold without you, I feel empty without you. I miss you scolding me for messing your kitchen, I miss you playing with my hair and kissing me, baby please come back to your idiot. I need you Tumisani Phakade. Wake up, please, I know you can hear me Tumisani, I won't allow you to leave me like this. Open your eyes woman, open it, Phakade if you dare die on me, I swear I'll..... "

beep, beep, beep.....

The sound of the machines started beeping and her heart beat was racing fast. I stood there helplessly watching

as the machines beep.

I ran out of the room and called the doctor. They came in rushing and instructed me to leave the room but I couldn't, why was those machines racing so fast...

Nurse: sir you have to leave the room

Me: no I'm staying right here, she needs me

Nurse: sir we have everything under control, please leave...

They push me out of the room and I so badly wanted to be in there for her, just to hold her.

I called Ndumiso and he came rushing

into the hospital with his tie and hair all over the place.

Ndumiso: where is she? what happened??

Me: the, the machines...

I stuttered as tears rushed down my cheeks, helplessly.

Ndumiso: what?? what's wrong with the machines (he said panicking)

Me: it started beeping and her heart was racing fast, Ndumiso I can't lose her, I can't..(I cried as I sank into the bench)

Ndumiso: I'm not losing my sister, stop saying that, Tumisani is strong, I know she would never give up, she would

never just give up like this.

Me: she can't leave me, I need her. (I cried defeated)

Ndumiso: she's not going anywhere dude, stop saying that shit.

He banged the wall with his fists as anger took over his body and his veins were popping out of his forehead.

We sat there helplessly waiting for the doctor and I swear it felt like a month of waiting. Buhle and Busi came rushing down in the hospital and they were both panicking. Buhle came to hug me and Busi held Ndumiso with a confused expression on her face of why he cared

so much. Maybe it's time we tell these people the truth. I'm tired of lying to people. They deserve to know. I have to talk to Ndumiso about it.

The doctor came out with a document in his hand and with no emotion in his face. We all stood up and rushed to him.

Doc: Phakade?

Ndumiso: yes I'm her brother

Busi: What!!!?? (she shouted)

Ndumiso: I mean, uh uh

Me: we're her family (I looked at Ndumiso and then Busi who looked confused)

Doc: OK I need to talk to someone who is very close to her (he looked at us as if he doesn't believe us)

Me: doc you can talk to me, I mean you know me right

Doc: OK please follow me

Ndumiso: I'm coming with you

Me: no man I've got this

I gave him reassuring eyes and followed the doctor to his office.

Doc: so I have good news today.

I almost screamed out of excitement.

Me: really???

Doc: yes, well her body has finally

reacted to the treatment and her life is finally out of danger, the results are back and her womb is perfectly fine, though she has to be careful of what she eats and what she does, one more bullet and her womb is gone. Her heart beat is a little fast at the moment as she is still in shock but hopefully she'll be fine, she is not allowed to do any hard movements at the moment because her abdominal muscles are still not fully healed but hopefully she'll be fine. You know, that woman in there is really strong, I can't believe she survived this bullet, many people lose their womb in the process of being shot twice in the same place.

Me: uh uh wow, thank you Doc, thank you so much. Oh my gosh, thank you I stood up and shook the doctors hand happily.

Me: can can we see her? is she awake?

Doc: yes she's awake but she's still in shock and I don't think she'll be able to talk for a while.

Me: oh OK thank you, when can we take her home?

Doc: it deepens on how she's healing, if the treatments works perfectly well for the next two days then she can go home in less than three days.

Me: ohk thank you, I'll go see her now.

I ran out of the doctors office and back to the rest of the guys.

Me: we can go see her now.

We went in and she was lying there looking around the room as if she had lost something. Her beauty shone bright like the sun, her curls were all over the place but she still looked beautiful.

Ndumiso: Tumi (he hugged her and held her hands then kissed it)

Me: my love

Tears rolled down the corners of her eyes and down her cheeks. Her lip started trembling as she cried.

Me: baby don't cry, please

I tried to contain myself tho it was hard.
I sat down next to her and kissed her
cheeks.

Buhle: tumisani how are you?

She opened her mouth but no words
came out, she closed it and opened it
again but nothing came out.

Buhle: give her some water, she's still in
shock.

Me: that's what the doctor said, she
won't be able to talk for a while.

I gave her some water and she gulped it
down slowly, she cleared her throat and
opened her mouth again but no words
came out again. She just cried.

Ndumiso: Tumsa it's OK, don't cry please, everything's gonna be OK.

He kissed her forehead which was the wrong move because Busi tensed up and you could feel the tension. She cleared her throat and looked down.

Busi: I hope you get well soon Tumisani, take care, uhm I have to get going. It was nice seeing you.

She ran out of the room in less than a second, with tears and anger in her eyes.

Ndumiso: fuck, tumsa I'll see you later, I'll be back.

He kissed her hands and ran after Busi. He shouldn't have done that but maybe

it's time to reveal all the secrets.

Buhle: what's going on here? Siphos?
(she looked at me confused)

Me: I'll explain later B.

I looked at Tumisani who was very silent.

Buhle: I'm getting her discharged right now, we need to sort this shit out, this secrets are intoxicating me

Me: the doctor said that she...

Buhle: I'm a doctor too and I know how to take care of patients so I'll talk to the doc and tell him that I'll take over at home.

She walked out of the room and it was

only me and Tumisani left. Buhle is really stubborn

Me: my love, thank you for not leaving me. Thank you so much, I missed you my love.

Tumisani: I missed you more (she spoke up)

I smiled and hugged her tightly. This woman is my life in human form.

Me: don't you ever scare me like that Tumisani, you scared the shit out of me, but I'm proud of you

Tumisani: I'm proud of myself, did you go to therapy?

Me: I've been going, I'm slowly getting

there.

She smiled and pulled my hand to her lips and kissed it softly.

Tumisani: I'm proud of you my love. Get me out of here so I can kiss you for ever.

I chuckled and pecked her beautiful pink soft lips.

Me: even in a hospital bed you still look like a queen.

She smiled.

Tumisani: Siphos, I know the truth now, I know that Ndumiso is Dumisani, he told me the truth so you don't have to worry about it anymore, I understand what you did and I forgive you. And thank you for

bringing my brother back to me

I looked at her shocked, I thought she would be angry with me. I never imagined it to be like this.

Me: I must say I'm shocked but thank you for understand, I just want us to focus on the future now and move on from what happened, I want us to be happy my love. Happy birthday Tumisani.

Tumisani: you remembered? (she said with teary eyes)

Me: how can I forget this beautiful day that a beautiful queen was born. Your gifts are in the car.

Tumisani: come here, (she pulled me

down and kissed me passionately) I love you so much Sipho.

Me: I love you more

Someone cleared their voice in the background and we both looked towards the door....

Tumisani: Yanda

She said shocked with a shaky voice.

There stood my worst nightmare.

Luyanda Mkisi himself in person. He stood there with a bouquet of red roses and a box of chocolates with a gift bag in his hands. I wanted to choke the living day lights out of him.

Yanda: Happy birthday Tumisani

He said smiling. Anger built up in my veins as tears rolled down her cheeks. Has she really gotten over him? Thoughts popped in my head. I know Tumisani loves me but it's not easy forgetting your first love.

COMMENT COMMENT AND COMMENT

[06/19, 12:14] Snr: INSERT 76

.
. .
. .

TWO DAYS LATER

Ndumiso's POV

Busi: I still can't believe you're not Ndumiso, I don't even know why I'm still here with you, I mean you lied to me, us. She said as she stood at our room balcony And looked at the beautiful sunset. My heart ached to hear her say that. For someone I've only known for a couple of months, I've fallen deeply in love with her.

Me: I know you might not believe me right now but Busi, ever since I've set my eyes on you I immediately fell deep in love with you, I love you Busi and I would really like it if you guys us a chance, I know Ndumiso was your first love and the love of your life but even if I'm in his

body that doesn't mean I don't love you. I know I don't make any sense right now but believe me when I tell you. I love you Busiswe.

I held her waiste from behind and she flinched but remained in that same position.

Busi: Ndumiso....uh I mean Dumisani, you lied to me, I thought I was in love with the man I thought I lost but I guess I was wrong, you lied to Vuyo, I mean she doesn't deserve this. I mean I know she's rude and all but how do you think she'll feel when she discovers that her real brother is actually dead.

Me: she doesn't have to find out

Busi: don't you think you've kept enough secrets already

Me: I just....(sigh) I don't wanna lose you, please just don't leave me I've never felt this way in my whole entire life, being a father to Sihle was rhe best thing that's ever happened to me, even tho he's not my son, I still love him as my own. Busi please don't take this joy away from me please.

I turned her around to face me and she was silently crying. I wiped her tears and held her waist again.

Me: give us a chance, I know you love

me and I love you too, things took a wrong turn but that doesn't mean we shouldn't be happy.

Busi: so Tumisani is your biological sister?

Me: yes

Busi: why didn't you tell her the truth from the beginning?

Me: because some people were after me, her life was in danger And I couldn't let her go through that, people didn't know that I had died so they tried going after Tumisani but her boyfriend protected her that's why she wasn't aware of it. That kid has been through

so much Busi, she's gone through things you've never imagine, I love her with my life. She's all I have left.

Busi: I'm sorry

Me: no, I'm sorry, I know I did wrong by living a double life but I just wanted you people to be happy. I mean I know how it feels to lose a loved one, maybe me living a double lif wasn't such a bad idea, because you were happy to have me back and Sihle was happy to have a father again and Vuyo was happy to have a brother again but how do you think Tumisani felt? I was all she had and she thought I had died while you Guys were living happy with her brother

thinking its Ndumiso. I never intended on hurting anyone. I would understand if you decide to leave me, but just don't forget to at least contact because I would love to see Sihle again

I let go of her waist and turned around to walk away. This was harder than I thought, losing something you've learnt to love is hard...

Busi: Ndu wait...

I stopped at the sliding door and turned around.

Busi: If I said I didn't love you then I would be lying. I love you so much and o want us to give this a chance. Be

yourself, be Dumisani not Ndumiso,
don't live to make me happy, live to
make you happy. I wanna give us a
chance and see where all this goes.
(she smiled)

Me: you don't know how much this
means to me (I pulled her into my arms
and smashed my lips onto hers)

I kissed her passionately and the kiss
was filled with so much love and
meaning.

Busi: Ndu....(she broke the kiss) there is
something I have to tell you too

Me: oh what is it ?

She looked down embarrassed And

nervous

Busi: before you came back into my life, I, I, I, uh (she stuttered) I used to work as a prostitute.

My eyes grew wide and my mouth was open out of shock. I let go of her And just looked at her as if I've seen a ghost.

Busi: I couldn't find a job to take care of Sihle and I didn't have any work experience, I had to take the offer and pay for all the debt I was in. I had no other choice. I'm sorry. (she cried)

Me: uh I can't say I'm not shocked but I really wasn't expecting this. Thank you for your honesty, I really appreciate it.

Now we can have peace without any secrets or problems.

I hugged her tightly And kissed her head. I was still in shock about what she had just told me. I wasn't really expecting that.

.

Tumisani's POV

Me: Siphos you're heavy, get off of me...

I said trying to push him off me as he held me captive under him in the bath tub.

Sigh. What can I say. I'm proud of myself, I really am. I can't believe I survived it all but I'm happy. Maybe this is what Gogo

was talking about, there was blood, lots of blood spilt but at the end there is sunshine. I was discharged from the hospital yesterday and I was happy to be back home. Home to my man. Home to a new beginning and home to the beginning of a bright future. I want to focus on my future and my life right now. Now that I have my inheritance back and my family, I'm happy to finally say that.....I'm happy. Now that all these mobsters are dead and out of my life, I can focus on my man. The man that brings a smile to my beautiful face.

Sipho: babe just let me kiss you, one last time.

Me: you've been kissing me ever since I got home, baby you're hurting me.

He got off of me and I stood up, wrapped a towel around my body and left him there.

Sipho: I love you!!!

He shouted as I walked to my closets and dropped the towel and giggled. I put on my pink silk night dress and slippers then walk downstairs.

I get into the kitchen and check my Lasagne. Smells great. I set the table and dish up for Sipho and I then as I was about to go call him, he came down soaking wet with a towel wrapped

around his lower body. I stood there admiring all those abs and muscles, I licked my lips and bit my bottom lip...

Sipho: take a pic babe, it lasts longer

Me: mxxxmm

Sipho: do that again and I'll spank that ass, you look beautiful in a silky night dress tho

Me: mxxxm (I teased)

He pulled me and bent me over on the counter and spanked me twice. I forgot I didn't have any undies on so it hurt..

Me: ouch Sipho, the fuck?

I moved away from him and sat down at

the dining table, rubbing my ass.

Sipho: you've got an attitude ever since you came back from Mexico

Me: I know you like it so stop complaining, now sit down my love (I smiled naughtily)

Sipho: (chuckled) you're testing me, hey (he sat down)

We said a small prayer then dug in, it was delicious.

Sipho: this tastes so good babe

Me: I know , I know (I giggled)

Sipho: so babe I was thinking.....

Me: about?

Sipho: remember I promised you we would go to Pretoria for your birthday but then things took a wrong turn, you know.

Me: yup

Sipho: so how about we go this weekend?

I looked at him like he was crazy.

Me: babe do you know how broke I am at the moment? I have a long week prepared for me next week, I'm getting my seat back as the CEO and there's a special meeting being held, I have a lot of work to do and I have to fix the damages Rachel caused.

Sipho: when will I have time alone with my woman, in peace?

Me: we're together now babe, in peace.
(I giggled)

Sipho: Tumisani I mean as in, romantic dates, exploring the world and having fun, without having to worry about work or the other life

Me: (sigh) babe, I have a three companies to take care of now and I don't know....

Sipho: so when you didn't have that three companies you had time for me but now that you have it, I'm not important anymore?

Me: no babe that's not what I meant...

Sipho: what did you mean Tumisani!!!

huh!!?? (he said pissed)

Me: don't raise your voice at me like that, we're talking not fighting. (I said irritated)

Sipho: sorry, but Tumisani you're pissing me off, like seriously, can't we spend time together as a couple anymore without people and work and stuff

Me: k so I'm pissing you off? (I said now annoyed) now I piss you off? is that it?

Sipho: babe that's not what I meant, listen....

Me: no it's cool, it's chilled. We can go

on this vacation what what, if that's what makes you happy...

Sipho: Tumisani you're the one who suggested it in the first place, now you're being hard headed and stubborn

Me: I know I suggested it but what don't you understand about me being busy!!! huh?? (I shouted)

Sipho: babe relax, please. I'm sorry, OK, I'm sorry

Me: (sigh) no I'm sorry, I just overreacted. we'll go, if that's what you want. I'm sorry.

Sipho: Tumsa no, don't talk like that plz, it's supposed to be what we want not

just me. We'll go whenever you want OK,
just don't get angry plz.

He held my hand and squeezed it..

Me: I'm not angry (I said annoyed)

Sipho: yeah it's cool (he said not
believing me)

I stood up and washed the dishes. I
don't get why I'm so annoyed. I know I
wanted us to go together to Pretoria but
how can I be having fun and stuff when I
have a lot of work to do. I know I'm
supposed to be making time for the
both of us but it just seems too hard and
Sipho is making it hard for me. I'm trying.

Sipho: babe (he held my waist as I

stood at the kitchen sink).

Me: hmmm

Sipho: are you OK?

Me: I'm fine

He turned me around to face him and I just put my head on his chest.

Me: my love I'm sorry, I just don't know what to do. I want us to spend as much time as possible but I know it won't be easy since I'm getting these companies back and it'll require my full attention.

Sipho: we'll figure something out my love. I can always come here daily

Me: thank you for understanding, I'm

sorry for shouting at you.

Sipho: I love you.

He held my cheeks and made me look at him, then our lips locked and he kissed me slowly and softly. The kiss got heated And his hands started roaming around my body and squeezing every part of my body that can be squeezed. He lift me off the ground and I wrapped my legs around his waist. He placed me on the counter and stripped me naked, for a second I forgot he was only wearing a towel. I held his strong arms and he kissed my neck and sucked it as well. Small moans escaped my mouth. He sucked my left breast and I

screamed in pleasure, throwing my head back and holding him tightly. I so badly wanted him to be in me, I wanted to experience how it felt to be fucked. He slightly pulled me toward and took me to muff town. He chowed my cookie like a cupcake. He licked And sucked me so deep and so sweet. The whole house was filled with moans, I dug my nails deep into his skin and he groan. I threw my head back as a orgasm hit me And he sucked me clean. He kissed my nunu and pulled out, I lie back on the kitchen counter as I tried to catch my breath. This was so good yet so weird because it was in my fucking kitchen.

Me: fuck(I said as he squeezed my ass)

Sipho: you're killing me Tumsa, I don't know how long I'll be able to control myself.

I felt bad. I wanted to Cry, like really I wanted to cry. I've been starving the poor guy for too long now. I want him inside me so badly but yoh I'm scared.

Me: I'm sorry my love...I...

Sipho: it's OK, I understand.

He looked disappointed and heartbroken. He helped me off the counter and put on my gown for me.

Me: babe, I...

Sipho: I'll see you in the room. Good night.

He left me there and walked up the stairs with a heavy heart. I felt like a terrible person. Why is it so hard for me to give him the cookie? I asked myself. I mean I love him so much and I wanna be with him so why haven't I given him my virginity yet? I felt selfish and stupid. I hate it when he looks like that. Gosh Tumisani, what's wrong with you.....

COMMENT

[06/19, 12:15] Snr: INSERT 77

.

- .
- .

Tumisani's POV

I walk back to my office after the long meeting that had just happened. I feel great to finally have my companies back, the feeling just makes me feel like I'm on top of the world. Everyone is happy to have me back and so am, I'm just happy and I haven't been so happy in my whole life. Tho i have a lot of work and companies to sort out because Rachel really made a mess in this company. Can you imagine some company called me and ask if the drugs were still being

transported, like serious? But apart from that I'm just happy to have my inheritance and life back on track.

Me: Phakade speaking, hello?

I said answering the company phone with a smile on my face, I missed saying that. My professional self was back.

Layla: did I ever tell you how sexy you sound when you answer the phone like that?

Me: (giggled) sister

Layla: my love (she giggles) I miss my sister and I want her back

Me: I'm all yours my love

Layla: liar, I'm taking you out for lunch and I'm not taking no for an answer, I'm already on my way

Me: Layla do you know I....

Layla: see you later bitch

She hanged up and I just sighed. I missed that crazy girl. I was in deep thoughts when Ndumiso barged into my office..

Ndumiso: baby sis

Me: ever heard of knocking? did you forget I'm not working for you anymore?

Ndumiso: whatever (he walked up to me and kissed my cheek and pulled me off the chair and onto his lap as he sat

on my desk)

Me: Dumisani what's up with you? Put me down

Ndumiso: I missed carrying you
Tumisani, I just wanted you in my arms
once again

Me: Is that why you drove all the way
from the Langa company to my office?

Ndumiso: kind of

He said walking with me in his arms to
my couch and sat down then pulled me
head onto his chest and rested it there.

Me: you're crazy, do you know that?

Ndumiso: if loving you is what makes

me crazy then so be it

I giggled.

Me: I missed you too bro, I don't know what I'll ever do without you

Ndumiso: me too (he kissed my cheek)

Me: would you stop kissing me already, go Kiss Busi, not me

Ndumiso: I'll kiss you whenever I want to, you're my princess

I started tickling me and I burst out laughter...

Me: Dumisani- S-top (I giggled)

He kept tickling and I was laughing like a hyena the whole time forgetting that I

was still in the office....Until I felt someone barge into my office and I was still busy laughing....

Me: Dumisani stop it....

I laughed sat up straight only to be met by a confused Layla and a worried Ndumiso...

Me: uh uh uh Layla

I stood up and fixed myself.

Layla: did you just say, uh Dumisani?

Me: no, noo!! (I shouted)

Ndumiso: Tumsa I think we should tell her, there's no use lying to them. Busi knows already.

Me: Dumi I mean Ndumiso....

Ndumiso: Tumsa stop, Hi Layla, it's me Dumisani.

Layla: what??

Me: layla I think we should sit down first.

We all sat down and Layla looked really confused. Dumisani started explaining everything from the part where he was shot to where he was taken to the hospital and till now. Layla was in tears and so was I. I couldnt hold my tears when she started crying, it made me emotional.

Layla: so you mean, this is you, I mean you're Dumisani? (she said sniffing)

Ndumiso: yes but people now know me as Ndumiso Langa.

Layla: I don't know what to say but I must say I'm happy to see you, I mean....you know what I mean

She hopped into his arms and hugged him tightly. She held him so tight as she cried and I was really worried now. I feel like this is all going to back fire.

Layla: I missed you so much, Dumisani, I really did, (she said holding his Face and kissing him)

Oh my gosh. Ndumiso just sat there helplessly. They kept kissing and I felt really guilty and uncomfortable. I

cleared my throat and they stopped.
Now what will Ndumiso tell Busi? Gosh this is a mess. I thought Layla was over that little thing they had. I have to talk to her about it. I won't allow them to hurt Busi like this, they have a son for crying out loud.

Me: uh Layla I think we should get going, we having lunch remember?

Layla: oh yes, uhm Dumi when can I see you again, I wanna see you and spend time with you, and maybe we could continue from where we left off (she blushed)

Me: sis uh, I'll give you his uh number

than you can talk all you want, let's go.

I stood up and went to my desk where I packed my files and took my handbag, I turned around and Layla was all over Ndumiso's face And kissing him. I felt really disgusted that my sister was making out with my brother. I felt like we were betraying Busi and Sihle. I looked at Ndumiso embarrassed and he tried to keep his composure as he felt uncomfortable as well.

Me: I'll see you around Bro.

I hugged him and we left my office, got into the elevator and head down.

Layla: I can't believe he's alive, did you

know about this?

Me: I only just found out not so long ago

Layla: Tumi you do know I've never stopped loving your brother right, I loved him so much and I still do. I want us to be together.

Me: there's something I have to tell you but I'll tell you once we're at the restaurant.

Layla: oh OK

We got into her car and she drove off to Spur. We sat down and ordered. I was really unsettled because I feared how she would take the news. I was quite the whole time till our order arrived and we

started eating.

Layla: is something wrong Tumisani?
did I say something wrong?

Me: no, no, I'm just thinking,

Layla: you've been silent

Me: I'm OK, don't worry

I wanted to tell her the truth but I also didn't want to hurt her. My phone rang and I answered it without checking the caller...

Me: yeah?

Sipho: yohhh babe...

Me: oh sorry my love, I didn't check who was calling.

Sipho: but that's no way to answer your phone my love

Me: sorry babe I'm just not thinking straight at the moment.

Sipho: what's wrong? are you OK? did anything happen?

Me: no my love, I'm fine, I'm just.....

Voice: aunty aunty, mama look there, Aunty's here...

I turned around with the phone still pressed on my ear and my eyes landed on a running Sihle. Could things get any worse?

Sipho: is everything OK Tumisani?

Me: uh babe, let me call you back. I love you.

I hanged up and Sihle jumped into my arms smiling.

Sihle: my wife (he said kissing my cheeks)

Me: ooh hello my prince

Busi came walking up to us with a smile on her face.

Busi: hey Tumisani (we shared a short hug)

Me: hey Busi, uh uh

I looked at Layla who kept her eyes glued to Sihle, she had tears building up

in her eyes and I felt like dying. I wished the ground could open up and swallow me whole.

Me: Busi meet my sister Layla, sis this is....

Sihle: Aunty your sister is really pretty just like you

Busi: Sihle shh, nice to meet you Layla (she held out her hand for Layla to shake and Layla took it hesistantly)

Layla: nice to meet you too (she looked at Sihle again, carefully)

Busi: Tumisani, have you seen your brother? I went to Dumisani's office and I couldn't find him?

I breathed deeply and prayed that the lord makes me disappear right here, right now...

Sihle: Daddy and I miss you so much Aunty (he smiled while seated on my lap)

Layla: wait, what!!??? (tears rolled down her cheeks) Dumisani has a child?

Me: Layla I...

Layla: is this true Tumisani? Dumisani has a wife and a kid? It's only been Two years of his absence and he's already.... (she gasped and cried)

Me: Layla let me....

Busi: what's going on here Tumisani,

who is she? (she said worried) Why is she crying?

Me: Busi, this this is uhm....

Layla: I'm his girlfriend woman, this is not his son, this must be a dream, Dumisani would never do this to me...

Busi: excuse me??

Layla: this is all a dream, right Tumisani? Two years couldn't have gotten him a son who can walk and talk, could it? No never, this is not his son, he could look like the new Dumisani but this can never be his son, you (she pointed at Busi) stop lying to him, this is not his son!! (she cried)

Busi: shut up, you don't know what you're saying...(tears graced her cheeks as she sank down next to me)

Me: guys let me explain, please stop crying, look everyone is looking at us and this is not good for Sihle, he's only a child.

Layla: all I know is that this boy is not Dumisani's child, he's a bastard.

A slap landed on Layla's and she held it in shock...

Busi: call my son a bastard one more time and i swear that white face of yours will turn blue. I dare you.

Me: Guys please calm down...(I was

helpless, they just sat there giving each other evil eyes)

Sihle was scared, he just buried himself into my arms and kept quite. Dumisani has to fix this mess, I can't bare to see them like this. This is too much.

Me: I don't know if it's my place to tell you all this, I think Dumisani has to be here himself. Can we go somewhere more private please, Sihle is scared and this is not good for him, theres too much tension here.

Layla: I'm not going anyone with this woman

Busi: who said I wanted to go with you

anyway.

Me: come on guys, please, think about this child for gods sake...

Layla: he's not your nephew Tumisani, this woman is just trying to trap Dumisani with this child just because he looks like him.

Me: don't make accusations you can't prove Layla, we have to sort this out as adults. Dumisani has to explain this himself.

Busi: Tumisani, you know I love your brother and you know me very well....

Layla: don't try and blackmail her with your sweet nonsense (she interrupted)

Busi: I will slap you again little girl, don't mess with me

Voice: OK that's enough

We all turned around and Ndumiso/
Dumisani was standing right there in front of us.

Sihle: daddy (he ran off my lap and into Dumisani's arms)

I sighed in relieve. I don't care how he got here but I want him to sort out his mess. I don't even want to interfere in this. I don't want to have to choose sides because Layla is my sister and Busi has been through a lot with Sihle and I wouldn't Want her to get hurt again.

COMMENT COMMENT AND COMMENT

OK so we have 715 likes on the page and only 100 and something people like and less than 30 people comment. I'm hurt guys. Like is my writing not good enough? The posts reach more than 500 people but very few like and comment. I don't write because I just want to waste my time, I write because I love writing guys. I don't like having to address this likes and comments issue because I really don't like begging. I don't like having to beg people to help me but

Thank you to those who appreciate my time and efforts. Thank you so much. I love you guys. Silent readers, y'all are breaking my already broken heart.

Admin

[06/19, 12:16] Snr: INSERT 78

.

.

.

.

.

Ndumiso's POV

" Layla can you like shut up and let me explain"

I said sitting next to Tumisani. This girl has been talking shit ever since I got here and she's pissing me off. The feelings that I had once had for her are now all gone and I can't explain how I feel about her because I don't really feel anything. After I heard that the Matthews family disowned Tumisani, I was really pissed and I wanted to get revenge on all of them for what they did but then I thought again, because they're still Tumisani's family after all.

Layla: Dumisani who the hell is this?
What nonsense am I hearing hear about you having a son? (she said pissed)

Me: Tone your voice down, you're

scaring my son. (I said irritated)

I knew this was gonna happen today so after they left with Tumisani at the office I decided to follow them and I knew Busi was gonna end up bumping into them as well.

Busi: babe....

Layla: don't you dare call my man that you....

Tumisani: Layla! (she said through gritting teeth)

Me: y'all are causing a scene and I don't want any drama right now, it's either you shut up and listen and walk out of here the same way you walked in and maybe

we can do this when y'all are sane.

I looked at all of them irritated that I had to leave very important work for this shit. I wish Layla had moved on when she found out that I was dead. Because I really don't love her anymore, I love Busi now, things changed.

Me: so babe this is Dumisani's girlfriend, the Dumisani that had died two years ago. Layla what you're looking at right now is Ndumiso Langa and this is his girlfriend and kid. I already explained to you what happened to me, the surgery and shit, so can we like leave everything in the past and move on as if nothing happened.

Layla: over my dead body, Dumisani I'm not giving you up for this bitch, like come on look around you, what does she have to offer? A kid? Like seriously, mxm you are mine and mine alone, this woman is just an imposter, baby she's using you, I don't give a rats ass if you're in another mans body, that heart inside of you beats for me and me alone, I know you love me Dumi, you're just excited about the fact that you have a kid, if a baby is what you want, I'll give you a child, we'll make beautiful caramel babies, since you're black and I'm white, don't you want colored babies, look how beautiful Tumisani is coming from a

black mother and a white father, that could be us, don't listen to this (she looked at Busi disgusted) tramp...

Me: Layla!!! (I said pissed)

Tumisani: Layla I can't believe you right now, is this my sister or some bitch we found on the streets? (she chuckled)

Layla: Dumi we're meant for each other, please look at me (she held my hands across the table and kissed them) I love you Dumi...

I snatched my hands away and looked at her as if she's going crazy cuz clearly she's changed. She's become even more bitchy than she was before.

Busi: so Ndumiso what's it gonna be?
Me? or this....thing here? (she said with
so much pain in her voice)

My heart sank. Layla stood up and she
was now standing at the edge of the
table.

Layla: Babe, don't mind her. (she
pecked my cheek) I have to bounce, I
know you.....

" Layla, hey baby "

We all turned around and there walked a
white dude round about Layla's age, he
was wearing all white and he was well
built. He pulled Layla into his arms and
kissed her on the lips.

" Baby, I've been calling you, you don't pick up, what's up? "

Layla: uh uh uhm Ethan....

Me: you're something else woman. Baby let's go...(I stood up)

Layla: Dumisani you're not going anywhere, we need to talk.

Tumisani: Hi, I'm Tumisani, Layla's sister...(she held up her hand for him to shake)

Ethan: hey I'm Ethan, Layla's boyfriend. Nice to meet you.

Tumisani: likewise. (she smiled and winked at me)

This sister of mine is something else.
She has just made it a lot easier for me.

Me: it's funny you say you loved me but
you had just moved on, take care of
yourself Layla. Busi...

Busi: uh yeah sure, Bitch keep your
hands to yourself please. Sihle come my
love...

Tumisani: can I take him home with me,
please....(she smiled at him)

Sihle: please mama I wanna go with
aunty. Please!!!

Ndumiso: son your clothes.

Busi: it's OK babe, you can go drop it off
later. Bye Tumi, bye baby

She hugged both of them and we left the restaurant, Kayla look really embarrassed but that's the least of my worries right now.

Busi: is she the only one I have to worry about? (she said as we got into the car)

Me: you don't have to worry about anyone, I'm all yours babe (I kissed her cheek)

Busi: she's so dramatic gosh, how did you end up with her anyway?

Me: it's life babe.

I started the car and drove off to my office. At least I don't have to worry about Layla anymore but as for Vuyo....I

don't know how I'm gonna tell her.

Me: baby I'm just gonna grab some files then we can go home, OK.

Busi: sure

I parked the car outside Langa Industries and ran inside and up to my office, got a few files and asked my new PA to cancel all my meetings for the day. I have to spend some time for my woman before.

.

Tumisani's POV

Sihle: aunty you have a lovely house.

Me: oh thanks baby

I kissed his forehead as I kicked off my shoes. Such a dramatic day. Layla is something else. I thought she changed. Gosh. At least that's one problem out of the way. I really have no time for drama in my life anymore, I just want to be happy and smile more often from now on, I'm tired of fighting and crying.

I put on my denim shorts and my white vest.

Me: come on champ, let's go make something to eat.

I put him on my back as we walked down the stairs.

Sihle: aunty what was daddy talking

about when he said Ndumiso's son And
kid? who is Dumisani?

Damn this boy is smart as fuck. .

Me: uhh nothing baby, he was making
an example about something, it's
nothing serious my love.

I placed him on the counter and took out
a bar of chocolate from the cardboard
and gave it to him.

Sihle: Thank you, but aunty why was
daddy angry? He looked really upset. .

Me: no baby Daddy wasn't angry, he was
just.....uh Acting, he was acting out
something. .

Don't look at me like that, I don't know

how to lie. I'm trying here.

Sihle: OK so aunty when are we getting married?

I giggled. This boy is too cute mahn.

Me: anytime you want my prince (I smiled)

Sihle: even tomorrow?

Me: yup, now tell me, what would you like to eat for dinner?

It was already getting late. After I left the restaurant I went to my office to get my things and then I took Sihle for some ice cream and it was so fun. We played around, teasing each other, and messing each others faces with ice cream. It was

awesome

Sihle: aunty can we make some Pizza, it's my favorite. (he smiled)

Me: oh really, now we have something in common, We both love pizza.

Sihle: really, mama also loves Pizza, we used to make it together but we didn't have all the ingredients so she just tried..

Me: oh OK, you'll help me right?

Sihle: of course (he said biting into the chocolate again)

I took out all the ingredients and started making the pizza. We played around with the flour and we were both a mess, especially Sihle who had a moustache

of chocolate around his mouth, my face and hair were covered in flour and my apron was full of sauce.

Sihle: aunty look.....(he said pointing at the door, giggling)

I turned around and looked at where he was pointing to a smiling Siphon leaning on the door with his hands crossed on his chest. I giggled and pulled a strand of hair that was in my, face behind my ear...

Me: oh hey babe (I smiled)

Siphon: you guys look so cute (he said walking up to me And kissing my cheek)

Hey Sihle (they fist pumped)

Sihle: hi uncle, Aunty and I are getting married Tomorrow so I suggest you kiss her for the last time right now.

We all laughed at his silliness.

Sipho: is that so? (he said smiling at me and trying to remove the flour on my face)

Me: yup, this is my husband to me (I giggled)

Sipho: I thought I was the one who is messy when cooking....(he said looking around the messy kitchen) I guess I was wrong.

Me: hey, only I can mess my kitchen, no one else.

Sipho: yes ma'am, what are we cooking?

Sihle: Pizza, look there, it's already in the oven, aunty is a great cook.

Me: of course I am, now come little man, let me show you your room then you can take a shower so long as the pizza is being prepared..

I took his hand into mine and took off his cute little apron, I could just eat this boy up, he's so adorable. Gosh I can't wait to have kids.

Sipho: I guess I'll clean this place, as you guys take a bath.

Me: did I ever tell you how much I love you? (I giggled and pecked his lips)

Sipho: nah, you're just using me.

I smiled naughtily and held Sihle's tiny hand as we walked upstairs. I got him settled into one of the room that were perfectly set, I get him into the bath and leave him there as I walk to my own room and strip naked then hop into the shower.

I switch off the tap and ran to the bedroom as I hear my phone ringing...

Me: hello? (I answered quickly)

Dumi: hey sis, I'm on my way with Sihle's clothes.

Me: oh OK, cool

Dumi: I hope he's not giving you a hard

time?

Me: nope, not at all we're having so much fun together (I smiled as I walked to my closet)

Dumi: I'm glad to hear that, he likes a lot.

Me: I know hey, and I love my little nephew too, you should start proposing to Busi already, I want this boy all to myself already.

Dumi: aaah Tumsa, not so soon, and plus, you have a man, get your own kids, that's my child.

Me: not anymore, he's mine now, I can always take him away from you since he loves me more.

Dumi: in your dreams sis, let me hang up, I'm close to your place.

Me: sharp, see ya

He hanged up and I put on my PJ's with no undergarments. It feels more comfortable like this. I walk to Sihle's room and the is still in the water, playing with the bubbles.

Sihle: aunty you look cute (he said playing)

Me: just like you, daddy's on his way with your clothes, so should I leave you here till he comes or should I get you out and wrap a towel around you so long?

Sihle: I'll stay in here till he comes, you

can come call me.

Me: OK, shout if you need anything.

Sihle: OK (I kissed his cheek)

I walked downstairs and Sipho was seated in front of the TV watching a romance movie and they were kissing. I sat on his lap and kissed him as well, he deepened the kiss and squeezed my ass. A soft moan escaped my lips.

Sipho: baby you're not wearing any underwear? (I shook my head shyly)

He smiled and kissed me again, he started unbuttoning my PJ top and he took it off, my breast rose up in excitement once again, as it always do

whenever I'm horny. I've thought about giving Siphos my virginity and I've come to the conclusion that I'm ready. I've starved him long enough and I'm gonna give it to him. I mean, what is there to lose, I love this Man with my life so, why not give him my all.

He kissed my neck down to my breast as I took off his shirt and buried myself in his chest. He rests his hands on my waist and I sat comfortably facing him. He sucks my twins and I moan out loud. He finds my lips and kisses me hungrily, he stands up with me still in his arms and starts walking towards the stairs. I forget about everything and let the

moment take over me. He holds my ass and I wrap my hands around his neck as we kiss while he walks up the stairs. I press my chest onto his as I feel myself getting wet down there. I feel the desperate need for him to make love to me. My blood is boiling and my body is on fire.

Half way up the stairs, there is a knock at the door. He stops without breaking the kiss and my hands roam around his body, strong and built. I close my eyes and I feel like I'm in heaven. I leave his lips and kiss his chest, wondering why he's stopping....

Sipho: my love...

Me: mhmm (I moaned as I filled his face with deep kisses)

Sipho: there's a knock at the door.

I continue kissing him forgetting that the world hasn't stopped turning, I so badly want him. I don't know what's wrong with me but I just want him, my honey pot is dripping wet.

Me: fuck the door, (I moaned again)

I hear the door banging and I jump into my senses. Damn whoever that is, is gonna get a piece of my mind.

Me: Damn, can't a girl lose her virginity in peace? (I said annoyed, Sipho laughs)
I'll give them a piece of my mind.

I hopped off Siphos arms and headed for the door, forgetting that I'm half naked...

Siphos: baby you're naked (I stop before I could open the door and look down at myself)

Siphos laughs and hands me my PJ top and I quickly wear it. I opened the door and I was about to shout at the person when I saw Ndumiso...

Me: what are you doing here? (I said annoyed)

Dumi: Tumsa are you high on something? we just spoke not too long ago, I was bring Sihle's clothes remember?

I looked at the bag he was carrying and I felt stupid.

Me: oh shit, sorry....I I

Dumi: are you OK sis? (he said worried)

Me: I'm fine bro, sorry

The things Siphos is doing to me is driving me crazy.

They greeted each other and I directed Dumi to Sihle's room, he went up and left me with this crazy dude. He was busy laughing at me here.

Me: it's not funny Siphos.

Siphos: (laughs) can't a girl lose her virginity in peace?? (he said laughing

trying to sound like me)

I threw a pillow at him and he was laughing even harder now. He was pissing me off so I jump on him and started hitting him but he kept laughing and holding my hands.

Me: let me go you idiot

Sipho: you're so wet down here babe
(he said teasing me and touching my
nunu)

I started crying. Yeah. I'm a cry baby. He keeps teasing me and I really wanted to get fucked right now, it's not even funny. Now I know how he feels whenever I get him hard. I was literally sobbing.

Sipho: aaahh baby I'm sorry, plz don't cry
(he said pulling me into his arms)

Me: you keep laughing at me and I'm so
wet (I cried)

Sipho: I'm sorry my princess, I'm very
sorry (he looked hurt, ncooh my poor
cupcake)

He wiped my tears and kissed my cheek.
I can't wait for Ndumiso to leave already,
gosh. I want some so badly.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

Exams are ending on Thursday for me

and I can't wait to bomb you guys with more inserts.

I'm thinking of making a new page for a new story but I'm scared it will take long to grow just like this pay.

My new story is gonna be great but yoh, the likes on this page disappoints me and discourages me on whether to start a new page or not.

Admin

[06/19, 12:16] Snr: INSERT 79

.

.

.

.

Lindiwe's POV

Me: Thando!! (i shouted from the bottom of the stairs)

Thando: mama!! (she squeak running down the stairs)

Me: come baby uncle B is here.

She jumped into my arms and I carried her walking towards the stairs.

Well what can I say? Life has been a mess. From Thando falling sick after she was kidnapped from that Bitch Rachel, then Tebogo falling pregnant from some guy she met at the club, to me losing my best friend and my

shoulder to cry on. When Tumisani and I broke our friendship I was a mess and I still am. I can't even forgive myself for what I did. I feel like the worst person on earth, after all she's done for me, being with me and holding onto me through dark days, I still went and judged her. The way I miss my best friend right now is on another level. I wish I wasn't in that situation and if I could change the hands of time I would definitely go back and fix things. I want my best friend back. Life without Tumisani is just like an ever coming storm. She's the realest and truest friend I've ever come across and I'm not gonna

allow life to let me lose her.

Sigh. Brian. If it weren't for his love, support and care I wouldn't be myself today. The love we share is ever growing and the way he loves my daughter is just crazy. He loves her as his own and that just warms my heart.

Brian: hey my love (he kisses my cheek)
Princess Thando. (he picks her up and kiss her cheeks)

Thando: Uncle B (she giggles)

My baby has started talking and it amazes me because she so young, like really, but I'm glad she's growing. We pack our bags into the car and he drives

off.

Brian: did you say goodbye to your mom?

Me: yeah I did.

Brian: are you nervous? (he said putting his hand on my thigh)

Me: very, I don't know if she's gonna reject me or forgive me, I'm scared. I'm a bad friend Brian. (I said with a shaky voice)

Brian: baby we've been through this, Tumisani loves you and I'm sure she will never reject her bestfriend, I'm sure she misses you too.

He took my hand and kissed it. I smiled faintly. This man is sent from above.

Thando: mama where are we going again?

Me: baby we going to aunty Tumi.

Thando: aaah really, i missed aunty pretty Tumi (she giggled) but what about dada? when are we visiting Dada?

Me: we'll go to daddy too if you want. (I smiled at her cute little face)

We drove to the airport and got into the plane with Thando squealing at every little thing she saw. My baby is turning out to be so dramatic, I could say just like me but nope, she's worse then me.

A couple of hours later the plane lands and Cape Town here we are, once again.

Brian called a cab and we put all our luggage in the boot before it drives off. The cab drops us at some place that doesn't look like a guest house but its really beautiful from the outside but what I didn't get was why it was by the beach. I looked at Brian confused.

Brian: welcome to my beach house, my love

He pecks my lips as we step out of the car.

Me: you're kidding right?

Brian: nope, this is ours.

He picks up a sleeping Thando and carries her towards the house. The cab

driver helps us with the luggage and Brian pays him and he leaves.

If I said this was lovely, it would be an understatement. This house is the bomb. Close to the sea and the breeze hits onto your skin softly. The stairs are wooden white stairs with a kitchen attached to the sitting room as well as the dining table. There is a big plasma TV in the centre of the room, the view from the kitchen is beautiful. Gosh, this is breathtaking.

Brian: baby close your mouth, the flies are gonna make a house in there.

I looked around astonished at all this

royalty. My mouth is hanging open and I'm just speechless. The house is a comfortably painted soft white and so are the furry couches.

Me: B-brian when did you do all this?

Brian: I had it long time ago, I was just waiting for the perfect time to show it to you.

Me: wow, I'm surprised, this is beautiful babe.

Brian: I'm glad you like it.

Me: Like it? baby I love this.

I said moving towards the lounge and switching on the TV. I just felt comfortable already.

Brian: let me put this princess in bed then come back to you.

Me: OK

I said walking towards the kitchen and admiring how clean and new everything in this house looked. I opened the fridge and it is fully packed with new food stuff. I pour us two glasses of juice and make myself comfortable on the kitchen counter. This house is way too cosy. I look out the kitchen window and the sun is setting on the sea. The view is just wonderful.

Brian: you look comfortable, (he said coming in between my legs and

positioning himself there, holding my waist)

Me: it's just beautiful here, how often do you come here?

Brian: a few times, sometimes when I'm stressed or just need to get away, I come here. It's kinda like my comfort space.

Me: oh I see, is this the only house you have here?

Brian: I'm working on a new project in Pretoria, that one is a surprise. I won't tell you till it's done.

Me: you just made me curious dude, now you gotta tell me. (I said wrapping

my arms around his neck)

Brian: if I tell you then it won't be a surprise anymore. Be patient, babe.

Me: (sigh) kiss me.

I pressed my lips onto his and kissed him softly and slowly. Allowing the kiss to grow deeper and more passionate. I love this man with all my heart. Love is just so unpredictable.

Me: so I'm planning on going to Tumisani tomorrow.

Brian: I'm coming with you.

Me: no, you're dropping me off, I'll need time alone with her, I messed up big time.

Brian: don't beat yourself up my love,
you weren't at the right state of mind.
(he pecked my lips) what do you wanna
eat for dinner?

Me: I'll cook.

Brian: you sure?

Me: yup, now get out of here and let my
ass work around this kitchen

Brian: hmmm I wouldn't mind that ass
for dinner (he smirked)

Me: you dirty minded, he out of here.

i hopped off the counter and pushed him
out the kitchen. i started cooking and
humming to Tumisani and I's favorite
song. The way I miss my bestfriend, yoh.

I miss her cute ass like crazy.

.

Tumisani's POV

Sihle: aunty please tell daddy to fetch me only on Friday, I wanna stay here with you.

I looked at him and giggled. Fada Lawd when are my own kids coming. Yoh, the way I love children, it's just crazy. I put him into his freshly ironed shirt and jeans with sneakers.

Me: baby you know aunty has to work right? you've been with me since the day before yesterday, don't you get tired of this crazy face.

Sihle: woman, you keep forgetting how much I love that crazy face.

I laughed. Gosh this kid is just something else.

Me: OK, OK, little man you're way too smart for your age.

Sihle: I'm my daddy's son what do you expect, (he chuckled)

Me: ohk daddys boy, let's go grab some breakfast.

We walked down the stairs holding hands and i locked the house behind me.

So yeah once again I didn't get the opportunity to get laid. When Ndumiso left after dropping Sihles clothes we had

dinner and Sipho ended up drinking too much wine and guess what he did to me...

Right after I sucked him dry in bed, he came and just dosed off on me. I was so pissed I haven't talked to him since then and he's been calling me but I haven't picked up. He's been worried sick but I'm punishing him for leaving me hanging like that. He was being unfair, I really wanted him to make love to me that night, I was horny as fuck. But I guess niggah had other plans. Mxm.

We (Sihle and I) drove to Wimpy and ordered our breakfast and I listened to Sihle telling me how he so badly wants

to go to school but his mama keeps telling him his too young. I have to talk to Ndumi about this, this kid is really smart, and I see he really wants to learn.

Me: babe how about I talk to mama about that, I can convince her to allow you go to grade R but you're really young babe.

Sihle: I'm almost six aunty.

Me: I know and you're so smart my love.

He smiled and our food came. We started eating and my little munchkin was feeding me. Yoh haai guys this boy is way too cute. I have to tell Ndumi to let me adopt him. I want him all to

myself.

Voice: wow, look who's here

I turned around and looked at the direction that voice was coming from. That familiar voice of some idiot.

Me: Ziggler (I smiled)

Ziggler: Boss Lady, sup (he said hugging me)

Me: I'm great and yourself?

Ziggler: I'm chilled, who's this little champ here? wait, he looks so familiar to someone I know.

Me: (giggled) That's Ndumiso's son you fool

Ziggler: oohhh hey champ

Sihle: Hi uncle.

Ziggler: what's your name boy boy?

Sihle: Sihle.

Ziggler: I'm uncle Ziggler, great name Sihle.

Sihle: thank you uncle.

Ziggler: sure champ, I thought I saw you from far so i had to com check it out, you looking all smashing and all sorts of sexy and beautiful.

Me: oh Thank you (I smiled) what are you doing here?

Ziggler: stupid question, what else do

people do in Wimpy woman?

Me: they sit their ass down and compensate.

Ziggler: (laugh) you all crazy and laughing, I like seeing you smile, you have a beautiful smile.

I blushed.

Me: ok, you can stop washing me with compliments now, I know I'm beautiful niggah.

Ziggler: ohk OK, I'm just hear to leave a message my lady.

Me: I knew you were here for a reason.

Ziggler: well your ex's father is in

desperate need to talk to you.

Me: oh you mean, Monster?

Ziggler: yup, he needs to talk to you,

Me: I thought you said you don't work with him anymore? Do you know what Siphon would do to you if he finds out you're still working with the enemy?

Ziggler: I'm not working with him, he just asked me to tell you that he needs to talk to you. Urgently.

Me: Tell him I don't wanna talk to him.

Ziggler: Tumisani it's serious

Me: ugh he can go fuck himself for all I care.

Ziggler: Think about it. It's between life and death. (he stood up)

Me: you're leaving without paying my bill (I joked)

Ziggler: oh sorry my love i forgot I had a wife to take care of. (he laughed)

Me: get out of here.

Ziggler: I'm kidding, let me pay.

Me: nah I was just joking, I'll pay my own bill.

Ziggler: you sure?

Me: yebo, now bye, let me eat in peace

Ziggler: sure boss, oh and please pick up Siphos calls the niggah is going crazy,

he's drinking too much because you don't wanna talk to him.

Me: Tell him to get his ass to my house and if he doesn't stop drinking, he should consider us done.

Ziggler: you're nasty woman. Bye Tumisani.

Me: Bye Ziggler (I smiled)

I don't give a rats ass about what Monster wants. I don't wanna talk to him, and I'm sure he also wants those diamonds, but he ain't getting anything. I don't have time for drama.

After having breakfast I drive back with Sihle to my house and as soon as we

park in the driveway, I recognize a unfamiliar car parked in my driveway. The person steps out of the car and I almost choke on my own breath.

Me: Lindiwe.

I said stepping out of my car.

Thando: Aunty!!!

She squealed and jumped into my arms. i stand there shocked at what I'm seeing. Maybe I just never expected this.

COMMENT, COMMENT and COMMENT

Admin

[06/19, 12:16] Snr: CONTINUATION

-
-
-
-

Lindiwe's POV

Me: Tumisani (I said with a shaky voice)

Thando ran into her arms and she picked her up with a smile on her face and kissed her cheeks happily. My heart shattered into a million pieces. How could I ever ruin a friendship like this, this girl has been through hell yet she stood up with her head held up high. I

feel so stupid right now. I stand there watching them talking like old friends with Thando giggling the whole time while Tumisani kissed her cute chubby cheeks continuously, I guess she missed her.

A cute little boy gets out of her car and she bends down with Than do in her arms.

Tumisani: hey Sihle look I got you a new friend, say hello to Thando, she's my adorable princess.

Sihle: hi Thando, I'm Sihle, Aunty's husband. (he smiles)

I almost laugh out loud but I keep my

composure. I always knew that Tumisani loved kids, she's so good with them and I know one day she'll make a wonderful mother.

Thando: (giggles) aunty is that true?
(she says laughing)

Tumisani: (smiles) yep, he's my baby
(she said kissing his cheeks)

Thando: aunty you said I was your baby
(she said whining)

Tumisani: uh of course you're all my babies, now Sihle go open the door and you guys go get some chocolate in the kitchen while I talk with uh...(she looked at me)

Thando: ok aunty, come Sihle I want some chocolate

They ran inside giggling to each other as if they hadn't just met today. She stands up and walk towards me looking beautiful as always with her lovely curves and her curly afro.

Tumisani: Lindiwe (she says coldly)

Me: Tumisani, I came to talk to you about what happened, I..

Tumisani: what is there to talk about?
(she said with an annoyed expression)

Me: Tumisani i want to apologize, I want to ask for forgiveness, Tumisani you're my best friend, my only friend, I don't

know what to do without you, I regret what I did, I don't even know what to say, I'm sorry Tumisani please forgive me, I, I,...

Tumisani: Lindiwe honestly speaking, I forgave you long time ago, I forgave you since the day that whole thing happened. I just want to move on, I want to be happy, I want to smile more often and live my life like everybody else, losing my inheritance made me realize that Life out there is not easy, you have to hustle to live, and reality hits very hard. But it's up to you if you want to be happy, I choose to be happy and I'm tired of all the crying, suffering and basically I'm

tired of being unhappy. Please can we like just move on and forget about the past.

She said defeated and tired, this is a new type of Tumisani, it feels like she's given up fighting and she's drained. She doesn't look like the Tumisani who was ongoing and ready to take on the world. I guess she's just been through a lot that she's realized it's not worth it.

Me: so, uhm you forgive me?

Tumisani: yes (she walked towards me and held my hands) I missed you

Lindiwe and you're like a sister to me, I understand why you did what you did,

you were stressed and any mother in your position would've gone crazy if their child had disappeared.

Me: but that didn't give me any right to judge you, I'm sorry tumisani (I said with tears in my eyes)

Tumisani: it's OK, it's all in the past now. enough crying, I missed you bitch (she said hugging me, smiling)

Me: I missed you too Tumsa, (I said giggling) so you really....

Tumisani: yes woman I forgive you, now let's go inside before these kids mess my kitchen.

We held hands and walked inside, I'm

just glad to have my best friend back. I didn't expect her to be so calm but I'm glad she was calm, I really missed my Tumsa. This girl is my world, my sister from another mother.

.

TWO DAYS LATER

Tumisani's POV

Sipho: baby you've been upset with me for almost five days now, Tumsa you don't pick up my calls, you don't answer my texts and you are never home when I come here, babe what did I do? I'm worried Tumisani.

He said sitting on my office desk facing

me. I wanted to hold him and hug him but now he knows that when I finally give him my cookie then he shouldn't leave me hanging when I'm horny. I don't care if he had 10 shots of vodka or whatever but he will satisfy me when I need him same way I'll satisfy him when he needs me.

Me: so you really don't remember what happened that night?

Sipho: no all I remember was us having pizza with Sihle and then I was drinking wine and we fell asleep together.

Me: you're ridiculous, you know that? (I laughed sarcastically) you left me

hanging Siphho.

Siphho: what you mean babe?

Me: you drank too much wine and made me suck you and you promised you would eat me but right when you came, you fell asleep on me, do you know how frustrating that is?

Siphho: is that why you haven't talk to me for five days? (he said hurt)

Me: yes (I said sulking)

Siphho: gosh Tumisani, you got me worried I thought I was gonna lose you, I even drank myself sick when you weren't picking up my calls.

Me: I heard, and I told you not to drink

when you're stressed but you don't listen.

Sipho: I was I not to be stressed, my queen wasn't picking up my calls

He said sweeping me off my feet and picking me up. He carried me to the couch and lies me down.

Me: have you been going to Therapy.

Sipho: I have a session at 14:00

Me: may I accompany you?

I said playing with his hair, he died it caramel and he looks super cute, well he has cut his hair into a neat upper cut and he died the tips caramel.

Sipho: of course, why not (he said

kissing me)

Me: babe I love your hair like this, you look hmhmmm....sexy

Sipho: no wonder all these chicks been looking at me in the mall, do I look that hot? (he said with a smirk on his face)

I pushed him off of me and sat up straight, my bitch mode switched on.

Me: say what!!?? what bitch set their eyes on my man?

Sipho: yeah baby, and your receptionist.

Me: what!!??!! (I stood up and kicked off my shoes) I'm gonna give her a piece of my mind, (I started walking towards the door)

Sipho jumped off the couch and pulled my waist.

Sipho: whooah my love relax, Tumsa chill (he said pulling me)

Me: no let me go, I'm gonna go talk to her and tell her to keep her eyes closed when you walk past her

He started laughing and holding my waist tight.

Sipho: you look so sexy when you're jealous Tumsa

Me: me? jealous? you're crazy, why would I be jealous of your bitches?

Sipho: oh please, you're jelly my sugar cakes, but I like it.

Me: fuck you

Sipho: Tumisani Phakade (he said sternly, getting pissed)

Me: daddy?? (I said testing him)

Sipho: swear at me one more time and I'm gonna spank that huge sexy ass of yours that every man can't stop looking at.

Me: tsek (I yanked my arms away and walked to my desk)

All of a sudden I felt I was being bent over my desk with my stomach flat on the desk and my ass high in the high.

Me: Sipho what the hell are you doing?

Sipho: I told you not to swear at me again, and you disobeyed me.

Me: ba...

I felt his hand land on my ass hard, sore and sour yet sweet at the same time. I find myself closing my eyes and moaning softly. Another spank lands on my ass and it's sore but I like it, it makes him seem so sexy and manly.

Me: baby....

He pulls me off the desk and carry me to the couch once again and he sits with me on his lap.

Sipho: this skirt is so short Tumisani

I look down at my skirt and its about

6cm's above my knees.

Me: my love what are you saying? this skirt is fine

Sipho: I don't like the idea of you walking around like this, imagine how many men will get a boner just by looking at your legs.

Me: but I only love you,

Sipho: I'm scared of losing you Tumsa, I love you so much that your beauty scares me .

Me: (I smile) babe please don't become insecure, I'm yours and you're mine, I love you alone babe don't worry.

Sipho: promise me you won't ever lose

me.

Me: Siphos what are you saying, it seems like there's more behind this than just you being insecure. (I said worried)

Siphos: I, I...

My phone rang and I stood up, walked to my desk and picked it up, it's an unknown number.

Me: Phakade speaking, hello.

Voice: you're such a rare jewel, it took me such a long time to get your number.

I rolled my eyes and went back to sit on Siphos's lap, he started fiddling with my hair.

Me: monster, what can I do for you?

Sipho looked at me worried and stopped playing with my hair.

Monster: I need to talk to you, it's urgent.

Me: what's it about? last time I checked, I cut all contact with you and I never wanted to come across you again.

Monster: it's serious Tumisani, your, your family members are uh uhm, did you check your fathers office properly?
(he said concerned)

Me: what do you mean? how do you know about my father's office?

I said getting off Sipho's lap and pacing up and down.

Monster: there's a secret the Matthews family haven't told you yet, go check your fathers personal office, there's a drawer that has a letter for you, I was once your fathers best friend and I knew everything about him. That letter is going to change your life, not for the best but for the worst, your family has been keeping this from you but in two years time, your life will change completely, I'm telling you this because I care, I've realized that getting revenge on you is useless. You've turned out to be just like your mother, brave, beautiful and fearless. Tumisani that letter is important, don't let that man change you.

Your family has sold you.

Me: wait what? what are you saying?

Hello, hello!!

He hanged up on me. I stood there with so many questions popping in my head, my heart pumping and my skin crawling.

Sipho: my love, what's going on?

He said making me face him.

Me: I don't know babe, he said there's a letter in my dads personal office and it's for me, in two years time my life will change for the worst and not for the better once that letter has been read, but I don't understand.

Sipho: let's go to the office, and read the

letter, maybe it's important. He wouldn't just call you and lie about something like this.

Me: but, what if this is a trap?

Sipho: baby trust me, let me call Lwazi and ask him to follow us in case it's a trap.

Me: no, no, this office is sacred. I'm not even supposed to show you where that office is, I, I have to go, I'll call you later. I have to go check that place out again.

Sipho: no Tumisani I'm not letting you go there alone,

Me: my love I'll be fine, (I said putting on my shoes)

Sipho: Tumisani please don't be stubborn.

Me: I can't show you where that office is or anyone else, I found out a lot in that office, that's why my father specifically said I should be the only one who keeps those diamonds.

Sipho: so you do know where those diamonds are? (he said shocked).

Me: yeah,

Sipho: Tumsa do you know those diamonds are deadly?

Me: yeah babe I know (I took my bag and my gun in my drawer then walked out with Sipho holding me as if I was

gonna disappear)

Me: you do know that you don't have to hold me, right?

Sipho: I'm worried About you, those diamonds killed a lot of people

Me: Sipho keep your voice down, please and I'm fine, those diamonds are mine, don't tell anyone I beg you.

Sipho: what?? Tumisani you're not making any sense, those diamonds belong to your father and not just anyone can handle it, your life is in danger my love.

Me: I'll explain when we get there, I have no other choice but to take you with me

since you keep asking too much questions. Do you think Monster knows where the office is?

Sipho: I don't think so cuz if he knew then he wouldn't have called you.

Me: Sipho promise me you'll stick with me, I have a feeling a lot is gonna be revealed right now but I need you to stick with me babe please.

I said as we got into the car and I drove off towards, Stellenbosch.

Sipho: my love I got you, I'm not letting you go. I promise.

Me: thank you.

So, yeah I found out a lot about my

father (Mr Matthews jnr). I went to his office after I came out of the hospital and I did some research about those diamonds and I found out, he was the king of Diamonds, he wasn't into Diamonds exporting around the world and he was well know as the king of diamonds by the under world, under cover. The trade stopped when he died and he left them onto me but the whole Matthews family don't know about it, but I know they're keeping something away from me. I know there's a secret that they're not telling me. So, yeah I'm now the Queen of Diamonds. I'm sure he wants me to continue the trade but how

do I do that with only three diamonds?
I'm confused and I have a strong feeling
that soon I'll be hitting a bumpy road.

COMMENT COMMENT AND COMMENT

[06/19, 12:25] Snr: INSERT 80

-
-
-
-

Tumisani's POV

I'm so used to all these secrets revealing
themselves. Like, im at a point in my life
that just wants to embrace everything to

comes onto me. I don't care whatever secrets is about to reveal itself, but I won't let it break me down again. I'm not letting anything destroy my life and my happiness. I'm even thinking of throwing those diamonds deep into the sea and not give a fuck about the consequences or what the world will think. I'm even thinking of running away from this country, city and continent just for a while so I can find myself again. I'm not gonna stop smiling if the world keeps throwing rocks at me, I'll hold my head up high and walk through those thrown rocks. I'm done crying, it's time I give my enemies what they've always wanted.

My life. If it is me they want then me they'll get. I don't care if I live for only a month bit but hopefully wherever I go, I'll be happy.

Sipho: baby open the drawer

I stood there looking at the drawer with my hands shaking with the key in my hand. I have such a bad taste in my mouth which means this papers or whatever in the drawer is not good.

I breath and slowly enter the key into the drawer, I slowly pulled it open and there lies a video tape and a ring and a picture of a little boy as well as a stack of papers. I carefully examine the items

with my eyes until I feel my hands taking them out without my body noticing. I place the items on the desk which had a computer on it but it looked so old, I doubt it still works.

Me: baby please get my laptop in the car. I said making myself comfortable on the chair and my eyes focused on the items on my desk. My head bombing with questions. Why is there a ring here?? who is this boy? Why does his face resemble someone I know? What do those papers say? I even scared to read those papers because I know whatever it is, it's gonna hit me real hard. I don't know why my father choose me out of

all the children he had, why did he have to make me his target and his little slave. i can barely live a normal life with all these secrets bombarding me at all times. Why couldn't he make Layla be the one to discover these secrets? Is it because I'm a child that came from an affair? Maybe because he had an affair with my mother, so he thought oh why not make my first daughter my little puppet. Mxm, such bullshit.

Sipho: here (he said handing the laptop to me)

I switched on the laptop and inserted the video tape. I looked at Sipho and he looked freaked out, yet calm at the same

time, I always fucking wonder how Sipho and Dumisani do that. How can you show two emotions at the same time? It's crazy!!

Sipho: my love , relax, you're turning red from all the stress. (he said as the video was loading)

He unbuttoned my shirt and started fanning me, I was really scared of the secret that was about to reveal. I mean, what is a ring supposed to be in this whole thing? who's ring is this?

Me: I'm fine babe (he pecked my lips)

The tape fully loaded and I almost screamed at the man who inserted his

sperm in my moms VJ. My eyes got teary and my voice broke completely.

Me: dad....(I said as if he was really in front of me)

I felt his presence in the room, the man I never got to meet. The man I always wanted to have a father and daughter time with. The man I wished for his love and affection.

Me: daddy....(I said with tears rolling down my cheeks)

Mr Matthews: hello my child. (he said in a deep demanding voice) I know you're shocked at what you're seeing. If it so believed that you are my first daughter

than I'm proud of you for finding this tape. I'm proud of you for being brave and strong. I know you have a lot of questions and I'm sorry unfortunately I can't answer them because I'm dead but I've left clues for you to figure things out. I know you probably hate me right now for making your life a living hell but I'm sorry, I had to do it. My child i love you even if you werent born yet when I was alive but I loved you even in your mothers womb. Let me get to the point. Those Diamonds belonged to me, I'm sure you've figured that out already. you're smart my baby. But now they belong to you. You're the queen of

diamonds, I once was a diamond trader in the under world and I was known as the king of diamonds. I know you're wondering how you'll be able to trade three diamonds only. But you'll figure that out by your husband.

I looked at him shocked, as if he was going crazy or maybe he was high when he made this tape.

Mr Matthews: You're married my child. That ring belongs to you, that boy is your husband. Long time ago I had accidentally bumped a pregnant woman and she died but her son survived. I took the lady to the hospital and phoned her family members and her husband

wanted to kill me for killing his wife. But then I didn't want to die because I had a family to take care of, he was a black man from America. I was in America back then, so he made me get you and his son that was operated out of his mother stomach, married. I had to get you guys married even though you were still in your mothers womb and not even a month old, the baby was born and he made a ceremony for you guys to be married, his son is your husband and his only a year older than you. I'm sorry my child, I had no choice. That boy is your husband and I promised them as soon as you turn 22 or 23 his son would come

fetch you from our home and you would live with him as his wife. I, I'm so sorry, I had no choice. (he paused) Those papers are your marriage certificates signed by me and his father, those papers legally states that you're his wife. I hope you find it in your heart to forgive me. He has the other three diamonds. I love you.

Ppppoooff!! it went off.

I sat there with my body numb and my heart paining, my mind spinning and my lips trembling. My tears were dried up and my throat was dry. I couldn't bring it to myself to cry. I just couldn't cry.

Me: he's lying right?? Baby this is a dream right!?? Siphos wake me up, this gotta be a dream, my dad would never sell me off like this, daddy loves me (I said without crying but drained with a heavy heart)

I pulled myself together and stood up, Siphos was just sitting on the opposite chair with his head in his hands. My heart broke seeing him like that.

Me: dad would never do this to me, Gogo didn't show me this so I'm sure this is a lie, Gogo told me I'll see the light at the end of the tunnel, I was about to see that light when all of this just decided to jump onto me, Gogo show

me a way, you promised me light Gogo.

I said packing the laptop and putting the ring back into the drawer as well as the tape and I took a good look at the picture of the little baby boy. This face resembles someone I know, but who? I shove everything in the drawer but hesitate when it came to the Marriage papers and the marriage certificates.

Sipho: don't even think of opening those papers (he said now with an angry tone)

I shoved them in the drawer and buttoned up my top. I grabbed the laptop and took his hand into mine.

Me: let's go.

We walked out of that office and got into the car. I drove off and headed towards the Matthews mansion. These people keep hurting me, they have once again betrayed me. I know they all knew about the marriage shit and I know they all planned to keep this away from me. How could they do this to me? I mean, after all I've been through, they still want to hur me like this.

Mxm, they can all kiss my ass for all I care, fuck those diamonds and fuck that marriage shit, I ain't doing no shit that man just said, clearly he never loved me, he chose everything else above his daughter. I don't even think he's my

father. I'm throwing those diamonds away and that man will never find me.

Sipho: Tumisani wait, please calm down baby

He said pulling me as I parked outside the Matthews mansion.

Me: let me go Sipho, let me go damn it.

I yanked my arm away and ran out of that car, I barged into their house and found them all having lunch as a big whole happy family. I stood at the dining room door and watched how they all kept smiling and laughing as a happy family, with no care in the world that they sold me.

Me: oh so this is how you guys play
happy family behind my back

They all stopped and looked at me.

Layla: oh Tumisani, hey

Justin: Tumi, long time no see, how are
you? (he said standing up and coming
to hug me)

I moved aside and pushed him away
from me.

Me: don't touch me, you people disgust
me, honestly. Is this what you people
call family? family? oh my gosh what
does that even mean right now? (I said
holding my head and pacing up and
down)

Zack: Tumisani are you OK?

Me: don't fucking ask me that, you traitor, you betrayer. How can you people do this to me? Don't you think I have a life too? How long are you people gonna keep making me suffer? (I said pissed)

Mr Matthews (senior): my child what is the problem?

Me: don't fucking call me your child old man (I said looking at him with red fury eyes)

Mrs Matthews: I suggest you watch your mouth young lady, this is my sons house and I suggest you watch how you talk to

your elder

Justin: Tumisani what has gotten into you, are you OK?

Me: you people are such good actors, y'all should get a bronze or a gold medal or whatever for acting (I chuckled)

Grandma how could you let him sell me off like this? didn't you ever love me?

Was it to get revenge on my mother for ruining aunt Bella's marriage? (I said defeated)

Mr Matthews: oh you finally found out, who told you?

I looked at him shocked, I can't believe my eyes nor my ears.

Justin: Tumisani it's not what you think
(he said tempting to touch me)

Me: don't touch me!! (I said moving
backwards).

Layla: Tumisani, if you weren't the first
born then I would've gladly taken the guy,
I mean, geez girl have you seen the
niggah, he's flames.

She said biting into her food with no sort
of care. So they were all just pretending
to love me and care for me.

Zack: Grandpa you never told her, you
promised dad you would tell her, do you
know how much pain this girl has been
through because of this family?

He said standing up d
furiously. He threw the plate onto the
floor and it shattered.

Zack: I hate you all, I hated you since the
day you stopped being a true family, I
hate your fake love and affection, your
fake images and all your evil ways, from
now on consider me as an outsider. I'm
done with this family's evilness, I don't
belong in such a family. Tumisani I hope
you will find it in your heart to forgive me
for keeping it away from you, they
blackmailed me, God knows how many
times I wanted to tell you but they
threatened to kill my girlfriend and my
unborn baby, I'm sorry.

He walked out of the room and left me there shocked. So this people are really that evil.

Layla: I'm sorry I had to act in front of you Tumisani, so you really thought I had accepted you into our life's, oh no baby girl. You're the reason my mother died and your bitch of a mother killed my father, so I hate you with every fibre in my body, your face disgusts me.

I felt like my feet was stuck to the ground, like my heart had stopped beating and the world had stopped spinning, I felt weak.

Justin: Tumisani, you have no choice but

to do as dad say's you're married, that man is coming in two months time to see you and....

Me: shut up, I'm not married to anyone, fuck you, fuck this family, fuck your father and fuck that marriage. I'm sure you don't know anything about me, you don't know me Justin, I'm braver then you think I am.

I stormed out of that room and bumped into Zack by the door, who had his suitcase with him. I looked at him with anger and pity.

Me: I feel sorry for you, I feel so sorry for you that God gave you to this evil family,

the way I hate this family is more than you hate them. Don't hate me for what I'm about to do to them. I also hope you will find it in your heart to forgive me.

I opened the door and ran out. Got into my car with Siphos looking at me with red eyes as if he was crying.

Me: don't tell me you were crying Mr Ndlovu (I said smiling and driving)

Siphos: it feels like a nightmare Mrs Ndlovu (he took my hand and I giggled)

Me: I am never taking your name when we get married, I'm keeping my surname. It's part of my life.

Siphos: that's if we will ever get the

chance to get married.

Me: don't talk like that baby, I'm not his wife, I'm gonna be your wife, fuck that niggah. I love you

Sipho: I love you more.

He kissed my hand.

Now let's see who this Matthews family is tryna mess with.

Me: I need you to find out who that boy is.

Sipho: I already did

Me: who is it?

Sipho: Jack Patkins

I stopped the car on the side of the road

and got out, and threw up right on the spot. He held my hair back as I vomited.

Me: you're joking right?

Sipho: I'll drive.

I left me and got into the car, fuming.

COMMENT, COMMENT AND COMMENT

[06/20, 05:16] Snr: INSERT 81

.

.

.

.

ONE WEEK LATER

Layla's POV

Lesley: Ma'am I'm serious, all the family bank cards have been blocked and filled into her name.

Me: what the hell do you mean filled into her name?

I said getting up from my desk fuming. Anger written all over my face.

Lesley: Ma'am that means she has power over all those bank accounts now, it is legally hers now.

Me: What!!!?? (I shouted on top of my lungs)

I started pacing up and down, trying to figure out what he had just said. How

the hell did she manage to get that right?
Why wasn't Dlamini stopping her? That
was not part of fathers will.

Me: get me through a conference call
with the whole family.

Lesley: OK madam.

He left the room and closed the door
behind him. I sat down fuming and
debating with myself if I should call that
bitch or not.

The phone rang and I picked up
immediately.

Me: How did this happen Grandpa how??

Grandpa: how am I supposed to know,
that little girl is playing with me, she's

testing me.

Justin: does Zack know all the passwords of the bank cards?

Me: shit!!! (I shouted)

Grandpa: you told him? how the fuck did you tell him? why the fuck did you tell him Layla? Here we are trying to get all Tumisani's inheritance back into our hands and there you are closing doors for us, the fuck were you think damn it. I told you not to trust that brothers of yours with your brain.

Me: Grandpa he was asking for it when we once when shopping and I gave him one of the family cards, I don't know

how he figured out the rest.

Justin: and now we're going bankrupt all because of you Layla damn you.

Me: I'm sorry OK, I'm sorry. We have to find Zack and tell him to switch those accounts.

Grandpa: that stupid boy disowned himself, he signed the disown papers, he will never help us

Justin: and how do we know where he is in the first place. Nxah fuck you Layla, fuck you. Now all my hard work is going to waste.

Me: Justin please calm down, I'll fix this

Justin: how damn it? are you gonna put

a gun to Tumisani's head and tell her to sign those bank accounts back into our names? Nxah vutsek

They all hanged up on me and I sat there thinking about what he had just said.

Maybe that could actually work. I mean, how easy could that be? I'm sure she values her life so she might as well sign those papers when I point a gun to her head. I can't believe Zack is my brother, that fool as no brain in his head, how could he betray us like this. I will never let my family go bankrupt, over my dead body. I won't let that bitch take all my fathers money. Never.

.

Sipho's POV

Tumisani: is he coming?

She said pacing up and down and panicking.

Me: my love, relax, we'll just talk to him and see if he'll agree to this. I mean, he came all the way from America to SA just to see you so he has to agree and I'm sure he has a girlfriend back there and this arranged marriage shit won't work for him

Tumisani: baby I'm worried, what if he has other plans in mind.

Me: Tumisani.....(I sighed and held her shoulders to stop her from moving)

Tumisani: Siphso, I don't know but I have a bad feeling about this, I feel like he'll want revenge for me killing his father. And also his fake sister who is not actually his real sister. But she was kidnapped.

Me: God where did I find this woman...(I said closing my eyes)

Tumisani: in the bush (she giggled)

Me: no wonder you're so fucked up (I chuckled)

Tumisani: kiss me already

I pulled her into my arms and kissed her deeply and passionately, sucking on her sweet rose lips.

We were at a park and it is half way through the day. We called Jack Patkins to meet with us and fly down to SA so we can talk about this marriage nonsense. He was very calm for a man that had just lost his father over his so called wife. The reason why it's at the park is because people will be around so he won't be able to try any funny movements because we also have security hidden behind these bushes. If he tries anything funny we'll simply just kill him. Although he didn't sound dangerous over the phone. This is all Tumisani's idea tho I just wanted to end things and kill the niggah but we all

know how soft Tumisani is, he thinks too much about, " what if he's innocent?"

. But I don't care because he wants to take away my woman, and that ain't happening without a fight.

" Uhummm" Someone cleared there throat And we stopped kissing and turned around.

There stood Jack Patkins. He looked exactly like his father but more muscular with a jaw line and a nicely cut beard and he was in a black suit with his muscles and all popping out of their skin. I looked at Tumisani and she just stood there with her mouth hanging open. If she's drooling over this American niggah

then I'm gonna spank that sexy ass of hers. She's mine and mine alone.

Jack: Tumisani Phakade (he said in that American accent)

He had a bad boy smirk on his face and he kept checking my woman out. I told her not to wear that dress that revealed all my assets and her sexy legs. Mxm.

Tumisani: uh hhm Jack (she smiled faintly as they shook hands)

He looked at me afterwards and he looked irritated. Like niggah, what are you looking at? I'm her man.

Jack: aren't you gonna introduce me?

Tumisani: oh uh sorry this is Siphos, my

boyfriend.

Jack: oh so you're cheating on me (he said offended)

Tumisani: so you're serious about this marriage Shit? (she said now getting pissed)

My baby gets angry to quick especially when she has a mission and she wants to do things her way. She's too feisty. Yet sexy.

Jack: we talk in private.

He said demanding. This guy is way too intimidating gosh he's scent intoxicates my nostrils and his accent is so American. How boring can he be. Mxm

Me: if you want to say something, say it right here.

Jack: I don't remember asking you,
Sispho (I looked at him irritated as he couldn't pronounce my name)

Me: it's Siphon, idiot (I mumbled)

Jack: come again? (he looked at me annoyed now)

Tumisani: baby relax (she said holding my hand)

Jack: let go of his hand, you're a married woman. (he said in his demanding voice)

Tumisani immediately let go of my hand and I took it back forcefully.

Me: she belongs to me, she is not your wife, understood?

Jack: in your world she is yours, legally she is mine. Now young man I suggest you let go of her hand, or else.....

Me: or else what??

Tumisani: my love, can.....(she looked at me worried and she's swearing already)

Like wow, Tumisani, wow. How can he simply make you sweat and he's not even two centimeters close to you. I looked at her pissed and she gets the message but pulls her hand back and looks down.

Me: over the phone you're so calm and

holy but here you are being rude and stupid.

Jack: say that one more time, I dare you.
(he said angrily looking at me with red eyes)

Clearly this man doesn't know me .

Me: you look st.....

Tumisani: stop it (she yelled)

Jack: here is my business card, call me when you've sorted your dog out, I'm here now and I'm wifeing you in three days time, traditional. You're married Tumisani and I suggest you sort yourself out because I'm not one who plays games, your uncles are coming

tomorrow. Tell your brother his brother in law demands to see him immediately.

He hands her the card and walks away. I look at Tumisani who is sweating heavily.

Me: the fuxk was that Tumisani, why are you fucking scared of him?

Tumisani: baby, you were being rude, maybe if you were more nice then this wouldn't have happened.

Me: mxm I knew this was gonna happen, I knew he also wanted you, I won't let him have you, you're my wife, not his. (I said angrily)

Tumisani: what are we gonna do Siphos?

I didn't even know I had uncles. Fuck this is too much. Where the hell is Dumisani? (she said irritated) I've been calling him for the past few days and he doesn't pick up. where is he?

Me: he's on a business trip in Mexico. The Langa business needs him there.

Tumisani: I need him too, tell him to get his ass down here now, I'm not getting married to this intimidating man, his presence makes me shiver.

She clicks her tongue pissed and walks towards the car. I signal the security to drop and I follow Tumisani to the car. I won't let her marry this man. To me,

she's not married but to the world she's married but that's shit to me. I've been with this girl for so long and I'm never letting her go so easily.

COMMENT COMMENT AND COMMENT.

[06/20, 05:16] Snr: INSERT 82

- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV

I get in the house fuming. I was really pissed because I didn't expect that

meeting to go like that, I wanted it to go smoothly. That man is so intimidating and strong yet sexy at the same time but I don't love him and I'll never be his wife. He's pissing me off real hard. I just want to cut his head off and sell it to the dogs, same way I killed his damn father. But he doesn't look so bad, he's one fine ass hot American. I was even sweating when I saw him. He has that effect, you know. But I got no time to fantasize about the enemy. Mxm Dumisani better here and tell me where the hell these so called uncles are coming from because Gogo never said anything about uncles. I hop in the shower and come after half

an hour and wrap a towel around my soaking wet body and cover my hair with a white towel cuz I just washed my hair and its in a curly mess, one thing about being a colored with an curly afro.

Sipho: baby

Me: mmhm (I said standing in front of my closet, dripping wet)

Sipho: Zack's on the phone.

He said passing my phone over to me. I took it and pressed it onto my ear.

Me: speaking...

Zack: Tumisani what the fuxk did you do? I said take half not turn my family bankrupt. (he said yelling)

Me: stop yelling at me, I told you I'm not playing games with your so called family. They have to learn that money doesn't make the world spin, take care of your baby and your girlfriend wherever you are and forget this stupid family of yours.

Zack: don't talk like that Tumisani, they're our family.

Me: bullshit, they never loved me in the first place. I'm just doing them a favor, once I'm done with them, they'll be begging at my feet, and all the money they had will be gone, especially that evil sister of yours, she'll regret she came out of her mothers stomach.

I hanged up and threw the phone on the bed.

Me: tell Ziggler to clear all their personal accounts.

I said dropping the towel and putting on a pair of jeans with no underwear and a black vest.

Sipho: baby don't you think you're being too hard on them.

I looked at him pissed.

Me: Sipho don't even start with me, I can't believe you're saying that, weren't you with me when I was suffering and shooting people that I never imagined I would kill, weren't you with me when I

killed my mother because of this shit and you fucken stand there and tell me that I'm being hard on them, mxm don't piss me off please.

I put on my sneakers and take off the towel on my head and my curls fall onto my shoulders. I put some hairspray on my hair and fix it a bit then as I'm walking towards the door, he gets a hold of my waist and holds me tight.

Sipho: baby please don't be angry. I'm sorry OK, I'm sorry, you've been through a lot and I should understand how you feel, I'm sorry my love.

He kisses my cheek and cups my neck, I

look into his eyes and it's blood shot red. He's been drinking. He looks sleepy and tired at the same time. I want to cry just by looking at him. He's been with me through every step of the way. I doubt he's still going to therapy. We've been too busy focused about this marriage thing and I haven't given him my full attention. I should be taking care of him at a time like this, not the other way around. He needs me more than I need him.

Sigh. I held his hand and led him to the bed, he lies down and pulls me onto his chest.

Me: I love you so much Siph

I said almost in a shaky whisper. I was close to tears. I just want peace. I'm tired, honestly I'm really tired of this up and down kinda life. I'm really tired of this fighting and hustling kinda life.

Sipho: I love you with my life Tumisani, we'll go through this together. I won't let you go, I'm here for you my love.

He kisses my cheek And I just cry. I break down and cry. I just wanna be happy. Don't I deserve happiness? Can't I just live and be happy, even if it's for two minutes.

After a while I sit up, wipe my tears and look at him.

Me: Siphos take me to a club.

He looks at me shocked and worried.

Siphos: are you sure?

Me: I just wanna forget, even if it's just for tonight. I wanna get drunk, really drunk, I wanna drink then my bladder is full, I wanna sing and dance like it's my last day on earth. I just wanna be happy right now. please just do this for me, please my love. (I said pulling him to sit straight)

Siphos: OK (he kisses my lips lightly) I'll take a shower quickly.

Me: I'll call Lindiwe, and change.

He gets into the shower and I call

Lindiwe. She agrees to go and says she'll leave Thando with Brian who wanted to stay at home. I put on a short sleeveless blue dress which shows my cleavage and hugs my ass. I put on light make up and wear my hills. I looked in the mirror and I was ready to go. I leave my hair loose and spray some perfume on myself.

Sipho: you're not wearing that right? (he said dripping wet from the shower)

Me: don't spoil my mood please.

Sipho: I guess you're telling me we sitting in the VIP section.

Me: I'm gonna enjoy this night, I'm

gonna drink for the first time and(I looked at him and blushed) get dressed, I'll be downstairs.

I went down, blushing hard as fuck.

Tonight is the night. He'll finally have me.

All of me.

.

We walk into the club and the place is packed. I look at Lindiwe who is already dancing. Sipho is holding onto my waist and telling them niggahs that he owns me. Lol. We walk to the bar and order Vodka's for starters. We all count at the same time and gulp down the shot.

Me: aaaahhh (I said closing my eyes as

the drink burns down my through)

It felt good to drink.

Sipho: Whiskey please, your most expensive one.

He says to the barman.

Lindiwe: how does it feel to have your first drink chommie? (she says shouting over the music)

Me: it feels good in some weird kinda way (I giggle)

We keep gulping down drinks after drinks and Lindiwe disappears in the dancing crowd. I hope she'll be good today, she has man and a kid waiting for her at home.

I'm dancing as well, twerking on Sipho's dick and he's hard as fuck. The drinks start working me up and I'm becoming crazy. My head is high and I have so much energy. I'm dancing like there's no tomorrow and I'm in the middle of the circle. I hit the dance floor and worked what my mama gave me, she misbehaved me. There's cheering and I'm just dancing. The place feels good and I'm just happy. It feels good to be happy. Happiness looks beautiful on my face.

COMMENT COMMENT COMMENT.

Dedicated to someone

[06/20, 05:16] Snr: CONTINUATION

.

.

.

18SNL(don't read if you can't handle it please)

Tumisani's POV

Me: baby I need to pee (I shouted into his ear as we were dancing)

Sipho: OK, come (he shouted back and got a hold of my hand)

I was still sober and Lindiwe was already drunk. Yet calm. The night was still young and the party was on fire, I felt good and I forgot all my problems for once. I felt like all the stress on my shoulders kinda lifted off. I feel so stress free. If my life was like this more often then I would've been the happiest girl on earth.

Sipho held my hand as we squeezed through the thick crowd and made our way to the restrooms. There was a long cue so he took me upstairs to a room that had a bed and it was decorated as if someone had booked the room. My bladder was tight and I really needed to

pee badly. I ran to the toilet and it felt good to release all that alcohol. I did my business and washed my hands then walked out of the toilet.

Me: I'm done (I said walking towards him and he had his back turned away from me)

I wrapped my hands around his waist from the back and stood on my toes to kiss his neck.

Sipho: you OK? (he asked turning around and pecking my lips)

Me: oh I'm super. I think we should get going, Lindiwe has to get home.

Sipho: yeah, your friend is already drunk

as fuck, Brian will be pissed.

Me: He'll be strong.

He turned me around and pulled me hard against him with my back towards him. I felt his hard erection against my ass. I blushed.

Sipho: you're driving me crazy tonight. Looking at you in this dress makes me hard as fuck. (he groans in my ear as he sucks my ear lobe)

Me: (I giggled) you're a bad boy, can we get going already?

Sipho: baby....?? (he looked down at his erected dick and growing pants and sighed hard) let's go.

He fixed himself and walked out annoyed. What? I'm not gonna lose my virginity in a club, hell to the no. This is my most treasured thing so I'm not giving it to him in a place and bed that many people had their stuff on. I have some pride. I'm sure he's pissed, but he'll be strong shem.

I followed him down and we searched everywhere for Lindiwe, yoh she can really party, nxah. We found her dancing and twerking on some ugly guy with thick lips. I pushed him aside and got a hold of Lindiwe's hand.

Lindiwe: Tumisani what are you doing?
(she said trying to balance herself)

Guy: hey bitch let go of her, we're still dancing (he said drunk)

Sipho pulled him by his collar and held him up, pissed.

Sipho: call her bitch one more time and I'll show you what a bitch is...(he said fuming)

Me: baby let go of him, please, let's not cause a scene here my love please.

He threw the guy onto the floor and picked Lindiwe up, we walked out of the club with Lindiwe singing to herself as if she was going mad. It was funny tho, but I couldn't laugh because Mr Ndlovu here was all serious and angry. He didn't

bother making eye contact with me, if only he knew, mxm.

We drove to Brian's beach house and dropped Lindiwe off and she had fallen asleep which was a good thing because then she wouldn't have to embarrass herself in front of her boyfriend, Thando was already sleeping too because it was late, around Mid night. We drove home in silence and I was wet because my man looked hot guys, he was rocking Redbat like there's no tomorrow. Those lips just made me even more horny. He parked the car and I stepped out first.

Me: don't come up till I say so.

I said modeling my way up the stairs.

Sipho: baby I'm not in the mood please just let me go sleep, it's been a long night tumsa. (he said mumbling)

I ignored him and walked up the stairs and locked the door. I stripped myself naked and opened my closet to look for the most sexiest lingerie I found in the most expensive foschini. I bought this black and pink poke dotted Lingerie when I went shopping once and it grabbed my attention. It was a full set with a silk poke dotted see through night dress when hugged my curves and revealed my ass in the most perfect shape ever. I fixed my hair and checked

myself in the mirror and I got wet just looking at myself in the mirror. I don't know why but I feel like my ass keeps growing every second that passes. Let's not get started on how my curves look on this lingerie. I open my drawer and find rose petals that I also bought for this special day. I fixed my soft white linen bed and throw the red roses all over the bed and trailing it from the door to the bed. I check everything and it looks perfect, Tonight is the night.

I unlock the door and text Siphso to come up. I walk to the bathroom and check myself out in the mirror. The nerves start kicking. Am I really ready? I asked

myself. Is he the one?

Yes yes Tumisani he's the one, you love him, he loves you. You're meant for each other. I assure myself. I smile as I heard him open the door and choke on his breath when I feel him see the bed. The room is dark and only the lamp light is on. I can feel the roses glittering up the room. Give it to him Tumisani, he's waited long enough. I fiddle with the silky lace and model my way out of the bathroom and stood in front of the bathroom door. I blushed as he looked at me shocked and gave his full attention to me. He stood there with his mouth hanging open and his eyes filled

with love and lust. He chokes on his breath and lick his lips as he gets nervous...

Sipho: uh uhuhm ah baby.....(he stutters)

I smiled and modelled towards him with each step I took, my heart filled with joy. I stand in front of him and looked up into his eyes. I find myself lost in. his brown eyes, the gaze is strong and meaningful.

Me: babe, I'm ready. I want you to take me fully, today I give you my all. My heart, my soul, my body, my innocence and my virginity. I give you all of me, Tonight. I love you so much Sipho. (I said smiling shyly)

Sipho: uh uh gosh you look so beautiful, I don't even know what to say. (he chuckles)

Me: you don't have to say anything babe.

He holds my waist and pulled me towards him, he smashes his lips onto mine and gives me the most passionate, loving and sweetest kiss I've ever had in my entire life. He kisses me deeply and I find myself melting in his arms and embrace. I feel myself burning with so much sensations running through my veins. My blood boiling and my skin crawling, my heart beat is so slow and fast at the same time. I feel myself needing him, needing his touch and

needing his presence. I feel like I'm on fire. The kiss leads to him grabbing my ass and me moaning softly in his mouth as I closed my eyes. He squeezes my ass and I get a hold of his shirt collar, I rip his shirt off his muscular body and he continues to suck my lips and squeezing my booty. He breaks the kiss and lifts me up, I wrapped my legs around his waist and kiss his chest as I tried to reach his lips, i feel small and cute in his arms. He lies me down on the bed and lies next to me, he holds my breast as he plants kisses all over my face. I unbutton his jeans and he helps me by pulling it off himself, he was left

in his boxers. He pulls off my silk see through dress and I'm left in my poke dotted lingerie. I feel sexy and treasured. He kisses my toes, thighs, my nunu, my stomach, my breast till he reaches my lips and sucks them hungrily. I moan in pleasure as his hands start ripping my lingerie off my body, he takes off my lingerie and leaves me fully exposed to him. He gets off the bed and leaves me there and he stands at the edge of the bed, smiling as he admired my nakedness, I blushed shyly.

Sipho: you're beyond beautiful Tumisani.
(he smiled)

He comes back onto the bed and

separates my legs, he kisses my thighs softly and my nunu. He licks my pussy and I moan as his wet tongue sends shivers down my spine. He holds my waist as he goes down between my legs and I scream in pleasure as he inserts his tongue inside my pussy. My moans fill up the room and I arch my back as the pleasure hits me hard. He eats my pussy to a point where my moans can be heard from the driveway or maybe further. He sure can eat a girls pussy. He takes me on a ride to muff town and the experience is beyond control. I keep moaning and arching my back till I feel myself cum for the second time and he

licks me clean, all my juices clean. He comes up with a smile on his face and I'm breathing heavily. He sucks my breast and sinks two fingers into my punani and I moaned out very loud as the pleasure can kill. If I'm able to wake up tomorrow then this man is a genius. He finger fucks me and sucks my breast till I find myself screaming out his name and surnames. I cum thrice and he pulls out his fingers and pecks me on the lips. Siphho: I love you so much Tumsa (he said kissing me on the lips)

I taste myself in his mouth and it is salty and sweet at the same time.

Me: I love you more Mr Ndlovu.

He positions himself on top of me and pulls off his boxers. I'm dripping wet and I can feel it wetting the covers. I looked down at his long anaconda and I'm surprised at how big his grown. I shut my eyes and breath. I always new this man was gonna rip me open with his long thing. I hear him chuckle and I blushed.

Sipho: are you ready?

I nodded with my eyes closed.

Sipho: open your eyes and look at me

Tumsa

I do as told and he lies on top of me and

kisses me softly.

Sipho: if you want me to stop just say so, I'm not promising that this won't hurt but I'm also not forcing you, it's going to hurt for a while but you'll get used to it, I'll try my utter most best to be gentle, I promise.

I nodded as I couldn't speak anymore. I was nervous yet ready. I want him to fuck me right now. I was really wet and my pussy was tingling.

He kissed me deeply and got me lost in the kiss till I felt something enter me and I screamed my lungs out as the pain consumed me. It felt like he was ripping

me apart. The pain was just too much, I really wanted to cry. I grabbed the sheets and held onto it tightly as I shut my eyes.

Sipho: baby open your eyes, look at me
Tumsa (I objected and shook my head as the pain kicked me hard) My love, open your eyes

Me: it hurts Sipho (I said breathing heavily, close to tears)

Sipho: I know my love but I'm almost in, if I pull out now, it's gonna hurt you even more. Look at me and don't close your eyes

I slowly open my eyes and looked into

his eyes. I was breathing heavily and I was sweating. I found myself getting lost in his beautiful eyes and the eye contact was strong. His eyes was filled with so much love, passion and loyalty. I love this man so much.

" aaaahhhhaah" I screamed as he inserted his full length inside of me, yet I never stopped the eye contact. I felt our souls bonding, my heart was bearing slow and fast and I just felt home in his arms. The pain subsided and the pleasure slowly kicked in after a while but it was still painful. He thrust softly and slowly. I felt myself burning with sensation as the pleasure slowly crept in.

My vaginal walls expanded and I felt it slowly break apart. He groaned out loud and I felt myself moaning...

Sipho: aaahh uhmm ahemm baby!!! (he groan)

I held his waist as he started thrusting a bit faster than before, I moaned out loud as he fuxked me to the moan and back. I shut my eyes and moaned out his name. Sex was not what we were doing. We were making love. The bond is too strong and I felt connected to him in some kind of way.

Me: aaahh Sipho!!! aaaaauhhb (I moan out loud)

Sipho: ahh you're so fucking tight, and sweet aaahh (he groans as he started thrusting faster)

The pain mixed with pleasure And it felt good to lose my virginity to a man I love with my life. I was official a non virgin. I gave it away with love to my love.

He thruster deeper and faster and it was so fucking painful yet good at the same time. He hit my spot and I dug my nails deep into his skin and he moan. He held my waist and groaned as my nails went deep into his back.

Sipho: I love you Tumisani Phakade!!!
(he groaned out loud)

Me: I love you Sipho Ndlovu!!! (I moaned)

I felt myself build up with a strong orgasm and I felt the need to cum.

US: I'm coming!!!!!!

We both shouted at the same time and we both climaxed at the exact same time. He collapsed on top of me and I held his back softly. The moment was beautiful. He kissed me deeply and he was still in me. I smiled and we rubbed our noses together.

Sipho: thank you

Me: no, thank you (I kissed his shoulder)

We lie like that till I find myself slowly falling asleep into a deep slumber. My

heart felt at ease. This man is my soulmate. He has my heart in one full package.

COMMENT, COMMENT COMMENT

Guys, I beg of you if this is too toxic for you, please just don't read at all because I really don't have time to address people who report my page. We only have 700 and something likes on this page and I'll get a heart attack if I hear my page is reported. If you feel this is too much then just don't read, please. I beg you

~well I don't know bout you guys but after writing this insert, I was wet and horny.

[06/20, 05:17] Snr: INSERT 83

- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV

Kisses trailing down my bare back which makes shivers run down my spine. My skin feels soft and the kisses bring a smile to my face as the flashbacks of

last night play on repeat in my mind. The most beautiful night of my life. I blush with my eyes closed and my lips form into a happy smile. He kisses my bare ass and I giggled, he chuckled.

Sipho: Good morning beautiful (he said now kissing my cheek)

I turn on my back and slowly open my eyes with a huge smile plastered on my face. It feels good to wake up next to him.

Me: Good morning my love. (I smiled shyly)

He gives me the most beautiful smile I've ever seen on his face and I just find

myself lost in his beautiful light brown eyes. If I could start it all over again, I would. He lays on top of me and put his head on my stomach while wrapping his arm around my waist. I kiss his head and start playing with his caramel tips. The rain is pouring outside and the weather just explains my mood. The way I love the rain is on another level. His kisses my tummy and we intertwine our fingers together.

Sipho: baby...

Me: my love (I smiled)

Sipho: don't be upset with what I'm about to tell you please.

Me: if it's gonna upset me then don't tell me, I don't wanna be upset today.

Sipho: my love but it's very important.

He looks up at me and I sit up straight with my back against the headboard. He sits up straight too and hands me his shirt, I look at him confused.

Sipho: you're making me hard...

He said looking at my naked body. I blush and grab the shirt out of his hand. I even forgot I was still naked, that's how comfortable I feel right now. I put on his shirt and look at him, he chuckles.

Sipho: you look super sexy in my shirt.

Me: baby can you just get straight to the

point (I said blushing shyly)

Sipho: OK, OK, so last night.....(I blush and look away from him, he chuckles) It was amazing, wait no, that's an understatement, last night was the best night of my life. I don't even know what to say but thank you, thank you for accepting me into your life, heart and soul. I'm not promising the world in a click of a finger, there'll be ups and downs and many obstacles but just know that my love for you is never a mistake or a joke, my love for you is ever growing and ever flowing never doubt my love Tumisani I love you with my heart, soul and body. Me and you

together forever. Not even death can stop me from loving you Tumsa.

I look at him smiling. Did I tell you guys I have the best man on earth? Well yeah, this is my heart in human form.

Me: baby....(I pulled him into my arms and kissed him softly) I love you too my love, I'm happy that I gave my virginity to the man I love. We met at not so good circumstances but look where we are, deeply in love, I wouldn't mind starting over all again with you, I love you Siphos.

He kissed me deeply and hugged me tightly.

US: one problem.....

We said at the same time and laughed.

Sipho: you go first.

Me: no you go first.

Sipho: I'm scared you're gonna be upset because it's my fault.

I looked at him and he looked at me.

Me: so I guess we're on the same page because like hell it's your damn fault. (I said irritated)

Sipho: I was so last in the moment babe, I couldn't help it.

Me: how the fuck do you forget to put on a condom Sipho? Like the hell? (he looked down)

Yoh guys am I that scary? Why is he being so soft now? Am I a scary hard headed girlfriend?

Me: baby relax, why are you so worried?

Sipho: cuz I knew you were gonna get upset with me for forgetting to put on a condom.

Me: my love it's both our fault, I should've known as well, but there's nothing we can do now, it's done. Am I that scary?

Sipho: like hell you are (I pouted) not in that way baby, (he sighs)

Me: I'm joking my love, chill (I pecked his lips)

Sipho: so you wouldn't mind a Lil Sipho growing inside of you right? (he smiles brightly)

Me: in your latest dreams, you're going to the clinic in this pouring rain and getting me morning after pills. I mean when you were fucking me you weren't thinking about the consequences so....

Sipho: gosh you're so nasty

Me: but you love my nasty ass.

Sipho: like hell I do (he said kissing my thighs, I smiled)

My punani was burning in pain but I had to be strong. That's what you get for having a boyfriend with an anaconda for

a dick. He picked me up and we had an innocent shower together yet he was so tempting, I had to stand my ground because my nunu won't be able to handle sex sex all the time. It's painful. Tho sex is good I have to admit, now I know why Lindiwe is so head over heels in love with sex. The feeling is great.

Sipho: your friend and sister in law are coming over, I'll go to the clinic so long, alright? (he said putting on his pants)

Me: sure

I put on a pair of night waist blue jeans and a black vest with slippers. The house gets warm when it's raining which

is a good thing because then I wouldn't have to feel the cold. He kisses my cheek and leaves me in the kitchen as I made myself a bowl of cereal and sit on the couching, thinking about last night. It keeps playing in my mind and it makes me wet every second I think about it. I feel like a lot of burdens have been lifted off my shoulders yet they haven't disappeared but right now I just wanna be happy.

My ringing phone brings me back to my senses.

Me: Phakade speaking hello?

Jack: Good morning wifey.

My mood immediately drops from 100% to 10%. I frown and close my eyes hoping that this all was just a dream, I open my eyes again and sigh deeply.

Me: Jack.

Jack: you sound so sexy saying my name. Anyway, I want us to meet up.

Is he telling me or asking me?

Me: I'm busy with work, I can't leave work just to meet up with you.

I lied. I have no energy for him right now. I just need this day to myself. I need to just not think about the reality today.

Jack: I'm not asking you, I'm telling you. I'm your husband and I demand to see

you.

Me: well I'm not your wife and I'm telling you that I'm not going to meet up with you. (I said with attitude)

Jack: ohhh how I would love to spank that sexy ass of yours (he groans) listen here Tumisani, you're my wife and I'm not taking no for an answer so do as I say or else.

Me: or else what?

Jack: you do know that I can end you any minute now because you killed my father, right? (I choked on my breath and coughed) oh relax sweetie you're too beautiful to die, and plus you're not

dying till I have a piece of you.

He groans loudly because he hangs up and I just sit there breathing heavily.

This man is going to be the end of me.

After all he knows? why hasn't he killed me already? I ask myself.

10 minutes later a message pops up on my screen and it's from the ass hole himself.

* Jack Patkins*

Meet me atrestaurant and be there at 13:30. I'm not a very patient man so don't keep me waiting.

Your husband.

Jack

The nerve this man has. I throw the phone onto the coffee table and sink into the couch and slowly eat my cereal. I don't know what to do with this man but what I know for sure is that he is not very angry with me for killing his father, I feel like he doesn't really care.

They barge into my house shouting like mad people.

Busi: we're home!!!! (she shouted without knocking)

Lindiwe: hey bitch

They closed the door and took off their jackets and welcomed themselves into

my house. These people are crazy.

Me: Lindiwe mind your language, my babies!! (I said to Thando and Sihle)

Sihle: aunty!!!!

Thando: my mamacita

They both came running into my arms and hugged and kissed me. I have the best babies in the whole wide world.

Me: you guys know each other? (I said looking at Lindiwe and Busi)

Lindiwe: no we just met now on your driveway, Thando and Sihle introduced us.....(she looked at me weirdly then her eyes popped out after a while)

noooooo!!!!!!! wait, shut the fucking front

door, no Tumisani!!!!!! (she said with her eyes popped out like some kind of idiot)

Me: what!?

Busi: oh my gosh, oh my fada lawd!!!!!!.
(she squealed with her eyes popped out as well)

The fuxk is wrong with these people??

Lindiwe: Nooo!!!!

Busi: yesssssss!!!!

Me: guys whats wrong with you two?? (I said confused)

Lindiwe: Busi catch me, I think I'm about to fall (she said dramatically)

Busi: no you catch me because I can't

believe what I'm seeing.

They both squealed and jumped onto me screaming!!

Me: aaahh guys y'all are hurting me (I said confused at their craziness)

Lindiwe: I'm definitely popping champagne for this one, Sihle and Thando go play

They ran upstairs and Busi was nudging me and furrowing her eyebrows. The fuck?? Lindiwe went to my kitchen and came back with three glasses and champagne. How did this girl know where I keep my alcohol? I looked at them confused.

Busi: ooohhh Ndumiso's gonna be so mad at you!!

Me: for what?? (I said confused)

Lindiwe: girl stop acting, how does it feel down there?? (she said giggling)

Busi: I'm sure he gave it to you good, you're even glowing over night!!!

ooohhh (they laughed out loud)

I blushed and I was all of a sudden shy. Gosh these people are crazy.

Lindiwe: Busi look at this bitch, she's blushing, oh my fuck!!!

They poured champagne and gave me a glass.

Me: y'all are crazy, gosh

Busi: how was it girl?? was he rough??
was he soft??? (she said eagerly)

Lindiwe: I'm sure you were like, aaaahhh
owwhha uuuh Siphos yes baby that's my
spot, aahah baby yes!!!

I hit her with a pillow and they burst out
laughing loudly.

Busi: gosh you look even more beautiful
than usual, he sure did a number on you ,
tell her Tumisani!!! how was it??

Me: eeewww Busi I'm not telling you
guys how me and my man had sex,
that's crazy.

Busi: nah you have to tell us, he's your

virginity breaker so it had to be special.

I blushed as I took a sip of the champagne.

Lindiwe: damn I never thought this day would come, our virgin Mary as finally gotten laid. I'm sure your pussy is burning down there, Brian told me....

Me: no shut up Lindiwe, I don't wanna hear it.

Lindiwe: what let me finish (she giggled) or are you gonna tell us how he ripped you apart??

They laughed and I threw a pillow at the both of them

Me: fuck y'all.

Busi: damn girl, what are you gonna tell your brother when he finds out that you lost your virginity before marriage.

Me: ahh what was he expecting? I'm 21 for crying out loud, I can't possible be a virgin till marriage. I would never do that to Siphoh.

Lindiwe: no wonder when we drove past him on the road, he was singing to himself in his car. He was in a good mood.

Me: lol, the niggah forgot to wear a condom. So I sent him to the clinic to go get Morning after pills.

Busi: haibo Tumi in the rain?

Me: I'm too young to fall pregnant and also under the circumstances (I sighed)

Busi: I heard, so the guy is serious about you guys being married.?

Me: very.

Lindiwe: don't worry chommie, Siphos will fight for you, he loves you.

Me: I know but eish I'm tired of fighting. It's just too much

Busi: I know but in life you have to fight to live, you'll get through this.

Lindiwe: you have a great man Tumsa and he loves you a lot, so don't worry, you're not gonna lose each other.

Me: Thank you guys, you're the best. (I said hugging them) he called and demanded me to have lunch with him. .

Busi: if Ndumiso was here he would knock the living day lights out of that niggah gosh he's pissing me off.

Me: and I haven't told him yet, I don't wanna ruin his business trip.

Lindiwe: but you need him, talk to him Tumsa.

Me: After this lunch meeting then I'll call Dumisani. Anyway enough about my nightmare of a life. How's your life's going?

Busi: I miss my man, my bed is cold at

night, and worse part is today is raining,
makes me so horny (she pouts)

Me: lol shame, you'll fuck him all you
want once he's back.

Lindiwe: yep, yoh Tumisani, I almost got
myself in serious shit last night. Brian
was fuming when I woke up in the
middle of the night and I was moaning
his name, I was still drunk and he was
pissed. I drank lots of water and woke
up the next day sober with a light
hangover. He was very angry and didn't
talk to me for the whole morning. But
you know what I did??

Busi: what?? (she said giggling)

Lindiwe: I fucked the anger out of him.

We laughed at her craziness.

Lindiwe: I'm serious guys, I gave it to him on the kitchen counter (she smiled like a love struck puppy)

Me: yoh haaiai Lindiwe, you've been dickmatised.

Lindiwe: oh please, I love me some dick.

We kept talking and drinking champagne. It felt good to communicate with people I felt comfortable around, not some fake family who only pretend to love you. .

HOPE YOU ENJOYED.

FASTEN YOUR SEATBELTS.

Soon there will be drama.

Admin

[06/20, 05:17] Snr: CONTINUATION

-
-
-
-

Tumisani's POV

I walk into the restaurant that screams out, "rich" and all eyes are on me. I don't mind them and walk straight to sexy

looking man on the far left of the restaurant.

After Lindiwe and Busi had left, Siphobought the morning after pills and I took them then change and told him about Jacks call tho he wanted to come with me but I stopped him and told him that I had to do this myself. He was pissed but he had to be strong. I called Dumisani and once again it took me straight to voicemail. I'm so pissed at Dumisani right now but I'll deal with him when he gets his ass down here.

Jack: you came.

He said standing up and tempting to

hug me but I stepped back and gave him that, " don't!! " kinda look and he stepped back and sat his sexy american ass down. I'm actually kinda calm. I'm very calm right now.

Jack: you look beautiful. (he said smiling at me)

I sat down opposite him and gave him my most fakest smile ever.

Me: thank you (I said sarcastically)

Jack: do you want anything to drink, eat??
(he said looking at the menu)

Me: I'd rather get straight to the point. I have....

Jack: you don't have any work to do

since you didn't even go to work, you don't have to lie to me. (he said offended)

I looked deep into his eyes and he had lovely eyes. A lovely kinda greyish, brownish eyes. I stared at him for a good two minutes and he is really handsome, I must say.

Jack: I'm all yours, you don't have to stare.

I chuckled and broke the eye contact. He hushed down a waiter and ordered the most expensive wine on the menu, I just stared at him and watched how he did all his crazy rich shit.

Jack: so.....(he said looking at me after the waiter had left) are you more calmer now?

Me: Jack, tell me something....so after you found out I killed your father, why didn't you plan to revenge on me? why don't you wanna kill me?

Jack: well that's simple, because I really appreciated what you did. I was meaning to thank you for what you did. You actually made my wish come true.

I looked at him confused and he just smirked at me.

Me: what u mean?

Jack: see, I wasn't really a fan of my dad,

he was the worst father in the whole wide world. He hated me to a point where he beat me up badly and I ended up in hospital then after that I woke up in a boarding school. All my primary school years and high school years I was in boarding school. Never had any contact with him or any of my family members. After I did my matric, I didn't know where to go. I didn't know where my family was, cuz I never had any contact with them. I had to hustle to live. I ended up working as a barman and living on the streets of New York. I tried by all means to get me where I am today. When I heard that Jack Patkins was

dead, that was the happiest day of my life.

Me: but, but so how did you know that I was married to you?

Jack: Growing up as a child he always reminded me and told me every day of my life that I was a married man, he sent me to boarding school with those marriage papers and that wedding ring and I told myself that I would do everything within my power to get my so called wife back since we're legally married and back in America, all my so called family members know me as a married man.

Me: this is all so confusing, gosh, do you know how much this marriage Shit is ruining my life. Have you ever been in love Jack, do you know what I've been through all my life? Yet you come up here and talk about, " Tumisani is a married woman", do you know how it feels to fall in love and be with the one you love?

Jack: yes Tumisani, yes, I know how it feels. I know how it feels to fall in love, because I've fallen so madly in love with you. I fell in love with you without knowing who you are, I loved you by just looking at your pictures. Yes I know what you've been through because I've

been watching you from America. I know you killed your mother and I know your life like the back of my palms, Tumisani, I'm not a evil man and I don't want you to see the evil side of me. I'm married to you and I want you to accept it the same way I accepted it.

I looked at him shocked. From the look of things, he was damn right serious. He was so serious that no words could come out of my mouth. I sighed.

Me: Jack, please I beg of you, I don't want to marry you please move on and forge about me, forget about the picture you've put in your head of us being together because that will never happen.

I don't love you and I doubt I ever will,
please can we like just move on and act
like this shit never happened?

Jack: Never. I worked too damn hard to
just up and leave. I learned to love you
the hard way and you will learn to love
me the damn same way, I don't think you
want me to do this the hard way
because I would hate to hurt you so
please can you just accept this and we
can arrange the white wedding and shit
already? I already told you I love you and
I'm willing you marry you even if this shit
was arranged but I don't care, I love you
and that's all that matters.

I stood up irritated.

Me: you're delusional.

I started walking out of the restaurant and he was walking right behind me.

The rain was still pouring hard outside and he had just ruined my mood.

Jack: Your uncles are landing Tomorrow morning, Your brother has to be here by tomorrow. I don't want to make you upset or hurt you so please woman stop being so stubborn.

I walked in the rain and I was wet since my car was parked a bit far from the restaurant.

Me: (chuckled) you really think my brother will allow me to marry you? (I

laughed) Niggah you don't know who Dumisani is.

Jack: he has no choice.

We got to my car and he pressed me against the car with my back and held my waist.

Me: let go of me (I said trying to push him off of me)

Jack: you're so beautiful Tumisani, just give me a chance and let me love you, I've been through too much and I just want to be loved. I know you're Able to give me that love I deserve. I've never fallen so deeply in love with someone like I've fallen for you, just let me love

you.

I got lost in his seductive eyes for a moment and my body was failing me. I felt his hands warming me as the rain poured onto us and my hair was made into a curly mess on my head. Our faces came closer slowly and slowly until our noses touched. His eyes fell on my lips and he stared at it for a moment. I couldn't move, I felt like my legs were glued to the floor and my hands couldn't move either. His lips were an inch closer to mine and that's when I realized what was happening. I pushed him off of me and turned to unlock my car door. The keys were slippery in my hands because

of the rain.

Jack: just give me a chance Tumisani, I really do love you.

He said removing my hair from off my face before I unlocked the door and got in quickly. I started the engine and drove off leaving him shouting my name like a mad man. He can fuxk off for all I care. Why the hell does he keep making me weak. Why am I always so tempted and controlled when he's holding me!!??? I questioned myself. I dialled Dumisani's number and it took me to voicemail, I dialled it again and he answer almost after the 10th ring.

Dumi: Hello??

Me: Dumisani.....(I said breathing heavily)

I didn't realize I was keeping my breath in for so long. Mxm. .

Dumi: Tumsa are you OK? (he said worried)

Me: how can I be OK, when I'm getting married to a stranger I hardly know!!! (I said now in tears)

I was crying and driving in the rain, not caring what in the world will happen next.

Dumi: Tumisani if you're driving you better stop that car right now, if

something happens to you, I'll never
forgive myself tumsa (he said panicking)

I parked the car on the side of the road
and cried.

Dumi: Tumsa where are you?

Me: don't fucking ask me that, where
the hell are you Dumisani!!?? (I said
sobbing)

Dumi: I'm sorry for leaving you baby,
please don't cry, my love stop crying,
you're stressing me out.

Me: Dumisani where are you?

Dumi: I just landed today, I'm on my way
driving home.

Me: meet me at my house. (I said
wiping my tears and starting the car)

Dumi: don't drive if you're still crying, let
me come fetch you, where are you?

Me: I'm fine, relax. Meet me at my house.
I hanged up and drove off.

I got to my house and parked in the
driveway, I ran inside the house since it
was raining and I was already soaking
wet. I got inside and Sipho was seated
on the couch fuming. I guess he was
following me. Fada Lawd, I don't have
energy for this right now.

COMMENT COMMENT COMMENT

I tried.

[06/20, 05:17] Snr: INSERT 84

-
-
-
-

Dumisani's POV

I quickly park into her driveway and rushed out of the car. I'm worried and scared at the same time. What's happening?

I had a two week trip in Mexico, the

equipment shop needed my attention after all that's happened with the Patkins and shit and I couldn't afford for Vuyo to start scolding me about the company not running in control so I had to go down there. Which also was a bad idea because my baby needed me and I wasn't here for her. She's the most important thing in my life and I would drop everything just to give her my full attention. I had to switch my phone off because I was in the office till late and I would often get to my hotel room very late and just sleep. Same routine for the whole two weeks.

Me: baby....

I said walking into her house without knocking, it's a habit I've gotten used to. She runs into my arms and I just hold her tightly, she's shivering and her clothes are wet from the pouring rain outside.

Me: princess go change your clothes you'll catch a cold.

She nods and walks upstairs with those wet clothes making her shiver. I looked at Siphon seated on the couch and he was fuming. What the hell is going on here?? I sat down opposite him and he was lost in his own world.

Me: dude what is going on here?? (I said

confused)

He sighed deeply and kept quite.

Me: Siphon man, talk to me.

Siphon: I'm gonna lose her man, I'm losing Tumisani. (he said staring at the blank TV screen)

Me: what you mean? did you guys have a fight? What did you do to my sister?

I said getting irritated now. Does this explain why she was crying and driving in that pouring rain? I looked at him losing my patience because if he's the cause of my sisters tears again then I'm gonna kill him right here, right now.

Siphon: no man, I didn't do anything to her

dawg, chill (he said in a silent voice)

Me: then what is wrong with her? why is she crying? (I said trying to keep my cool)

Sipho: she's married. Her father sold her off.

I looked at him shocked.

Me: what!!??? (I shouted)

Sipho: we found out that she's married to an american guy and that guy is none other then Jack Patkins. That bastard of a father sold her out because of his own selfish reasons.

I shot up, panicking and stressing. I was pacing up and down. I was both pissed

and worried.

Sipho: what I can't believe is that the Matthews family knew about this and they all kept this away from her, they too sold her out, that family is the most vilest family I've ever come across.

I pressed on my chaw and closed my eyes as my fists grew bigger and stronger. That motherfucking family !!! They'll get a piece of my mind. I was breathing flames with my eyes closed, anger consumed my veins and I was ready to kill.

I felt soft tiny hands holding my face.

Tumisani: Dumisani.....(she said in a

whisper)

I slowly opened my eyes and she got a fright and jumped letting go of my face. My eyes were probably blood shot red and my head had veins popping out of it.

Tumisani: Dumsa please calm down you're scaring me, please.

She said moving backwards, I was breathing heavily and I couldn't control it. Hatred, anger and pain took over my veins. I looked into her scared eyes and a tear escaped her eye. I exhaled and breathed out. Letting the oxygen with take my nostrils. I loosen up and pulled her into my arms.

Me: I'll fix this, I'll fix it. You're not getting married to him.

I kissed her forehead and we sat down with her on my lap, her head buried in my chest.

Tumisani: Dumi, do we have uncles?

Me: yes, I cut all contact with them when Gogo died because they were selfish and evil, they only care about themselves And I'm sure they're probably digging their big heads into this marriage shit.

Tumisani: they're on their way here, Jack said they're coming tomorrow, they're giving me off. He wants to talk to you.

Me: like hell, i need to talk to that fool.
How can he just come here And demand
to take your hand in marriage. This is
bullshit. I'll sort this out Tumsa, don't
worry about those fools of uncles,
they're not giving you off. I'm the only
man that's allowed to give you off. No
one else but me.

I said holding her even tighter than
before. These people are crazy if they
want to take her away from me just like
this. I'm not allowing any bastard to give
my precious pearl away.

Tumisani: Dumi...

Me: Tumsa just let me handle everything.

I got this. I'm not letting them give you away, I'm your parent. I've been a mother, a father and a brother to you so they can't do nothing. I'll handle this, as for that sick family of yours, I'll deal with them later.

Tumisani: no, I'm dealing with them myself. I want them to suffer. I've blocked all their bank accounts and also signed the family bank account into my name. What's next is going to hit them hard and painful.

Me: That's my girl. (I kissed her cheek) I need you to send me the details of your family lawyer. And also Jacks number. Dude get the team ready, oh and also

get that image of you losing Tumisani out of your head, you're not losing her.

I said standing up and comfortably laying Tumisani down on the couch.

Me: my love, I have to go. send me what I just asked you and I'll see you tomorrow.

I kissed her forehead and hugged her.

Tumisani: K, Dumisani don't ever leave me hanging like that again, please.

Me: I won't princess, trust me. I love you.

Tumisani: I love you too.

I said my goodbyes and headed home. I missed my son, especially my beautiful

busi. These Americans better not be fucking with m because if anything happens to my sister, they'll regret the day they came out of their mother's pussy. I mean business when it comes to my sister.

.

Luyanda's POV

Thando: daddy when are you picking me up?

Me: princess I'll come pick you up tomorrow, I couldn't come today because of the rain and the beach house is quite far from where I stay.

I said into the phone, parking into my

garage.

Thando: OK daddy, I want chocolate please and also a teddy bear.

Me: anything for you my beautiful princess.

I said getting out of the car.

Thando: thank you daddy, bye daddy. Mama is calling me.

Me: OK good night princess. Bye.

She hanged up, as I walked into my house. I switched on the lights and almost got the biggest fright of my life.

Me: fuck Yemi why the hell are you sitting in the dark?

I said scared.

Yemi came to visit my house because she was on holiday from University and she had nothing to do back home since mom is always traveling and stuff and since we don't have a father anymore. The bastard gave up trying.

Life hasn't been easy. I left the gangster life after Zinhle dumped me and she was pregnant with another man's Child. I forgot about her and the mysterious Portia who just disappeared after Zinhle caught us having sex on the couch. I haven't seen her since then. I've tried to put my life back together but seems like nothing is going my way. Tumisani left a

very big hole in my heart and my life. I feel empty without her and each day that passes feels like a nightmare without her. I regret what I ever did to her, I wish I handled things differently. She's now a very happy and successful lady taking care of three rich companies. Yet I'm here a student studying law and I don't know where it's taking me. I got a job as a bartender at one of the clubs. I had to start a I've in order to move on, I work night shifts and study during the day. It's better than staying at home And just staring at the walls. And plus I couldn't rely on my mom all the time, I had to pay my rent myself as well.

Yemi: sorry bro, I was getting worried you took long.

Me: sorry, it was busy there. I'm starving. I said walking towards the kitchen.

Yemi: I cooked, your food is in the microwave.

Me: thanks sis.

I opened the microwave and took my food and walked back to the lounge.

Yemi: you look like a mess Yanda, I hate seeing you like this.

She said looking at me with pity. I was a mess. I hadn't cut my hair for such a long time and I have facial hair as well. I

work like a mad person and I come home late. My heart is constantly aching and it's hard to live. My eyes have bags under it and I don't get enough sleep. I pity myself. I dug into my food and just ate silently.

Yemi: gosh, I'm taking you to the barber tomorrow and I'm not taking no for an answer and we gonna change your wardrobe as well, you don't look like the Yanda that used to be my favorite brother in the whole wide world. Where is that Yanda that was always smiling?

Me: that Yanda died two years ago. I'll go to the barber with you tomorrow, can you stop whining now please.

Yemi: I'm worried about you Yanda, everything is falling apart and I don't want to lose you, you're my only source of strength.

Me: I'm here for you Yemi, relax. I'm not going anywhere.

Yemi: I know but.....(sigh) I miss us Yanda. Me and you, smiling with no care in the world.

Me: I don't know how you do it Yemi, your mother and father just got divorced and we lost everything, all we have left is that house you live in and the cars mom is driving because its her own possessions. How do you go around

smiling like a happy child? I can't, I just can't pretend. Not after the heartbreak I've been through.

Yemi: you think I'm not hurt by all this? you think I'm happy that mom and dad broke up, no Yanda no, I'm not happy but does that mean it's the end of the world? No, it's not. I'm not gonna let that stop me from smiling. I don't wanna be sad all my life. I have a reason to live so I'm living for it.

Me: I'm happy to hear that you're happy but not everything goes my way, and I can't smile everyday like you do.

Yemi: because you're still hooked up in

the past Yanda, (sigh) do you still love her?

She said softly. I kept quiet and ate my food silently.

Yemi: Yanda?

Me: Yemi go to bed, it's getting late.

Yemi: but....

Me: Yemi (I said sternly)

Yemi: good night. (she stood up)

Me: night.

She left me there wondering where my life is going and what I'm doing with myself. Tumisani has really stolen my heart. How can I not be able to replace

her?

.

COMMENT COMMENT AND COMMENT

[06/20, 05:17] Snr: INSERT 85

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV

" Vuka, vuka Tumisani. Vuka mntanam"

Me: Gogo....(I said as a pang of pain hit my temple)

I screamed in pain.

Me: Gogo!!! (I cried)

Gogo: stop fighting Tumisani, stop fighting everything that comes your way. Sometimes you just have to let go and let destiny do it's job.

I felt myself fall onto the floor and screaming holding my head and kicking the ground.

Gogo: Tumisani, he is a good man, he needs you. They need you. Tumisani you're the only one who can bring them back to themselves and stand on their own two feet. Mntanam open your eyes and stop fighting the truth.

Me: Gogo, it hurts!!!! (I screamed)

Gogo: Love hurts more than a headache mtanam, let your heart free. Don't allow anger to control you. They need you Tumisani. All three of them. Your brother may try and protect you but he's closing your doors, I understand he's worried but don't allow Dumisani to fight all your battles. You're stronger than you think my baby.

Me: Gogo, I can't take it!!! Gogo!!! I'm gonna die!! (I cried even louder)

Gogo: If you don't save them, you're gonna lose all three of them. They need you more than you need them. I know

you might think they here to ruin you but they're actually here to make you smile and free your heart. Let them in Tumisani. Love can concur anything.

There was rain in the background and I could hear stomping feet then the pain slowly faded away. But my heart was beating fast.

Gogo: I'll let this marriage slide, but Tumisani you have to save them. One heart can free many hearts. Take each one as they come. Lovers can turn into brothers and family.

Her voice slowly faded in the background and the rain was pouring

hard. My body was cold and I could feel someone shaking me.

Voice: Tumisani!!!! (the voice said panicking)

I slowly tried to get into my original form. I shot up straight breathing heavily. My clothes were wet and so was the bed. The rain was still pouring but I could feel the morning breeze. I held my head and there was no pain, I looked around and everything was still normal. I looked at his worried face and a tear escaped his eye.

Sipho: Tumsa don't you ever do that to me again. Please don't ever do that.

He said sobbing and I pulled him into my arms.

Me: I'm sorry, I'm so sorry it won't happen again. ssshhh.

I said holding him tightly and breathing heavily. Tho my heart was at ease and I was very calm. My ancestors were upset. Gogo was going to let me get married to that man. They freed me. But why was she saying that I shouldn't fight them. Why shouldn't I fight them and what did she mean that they needed me. By " they " what did she mean? I thought to myself.

Sipho: what was the dream about?

He said after we had taken a shower and he couldn't get his hands off of me. Thinking that what happened would happen again. He said I was shaking vigorously with my eyes rolled to the back and I was holding my head kicking and screaming in pain.

Me: it was just a dream, babe forget it.

I said putting on jeans and boots.

Sipho: I'm worried about you Tumisani, I'm scared of losing you.

He said with a low voice and I could feel that hurt in his voice. I walked up to him and held his waist, forcing him to look into my eyes.

Me: babe, I made you a promise that I would never leave you and I'll never break that promise. Babe I'm with you through the end. I love you too much to even think that we're ever gonna separate.

Sipho: I love you too.

He pulled me into his arms and hugging me, breathing into my neck. I felt at home and warm in his arms.

Yet I couldn't get what Gogo said out of my head, I was worried. But I have to do as she says even though I don't know what she means and how to begin. I know she only means well. I fully trust

her when she said she'll let the marriage thing slide. I trust her fully. But I hope the ancestors weren't really going to sell me off to Jack like that. I pray that that wasn't their intention. I trust Gogo with my life.

A few hours later, after having breakfast with Siphos in Spur, he had to rush to a meeting so he paid the bill and left me. I wanted to go to the office and check everything because I haven't gone to work in a few days and I'm sure I've missed a lot of meetings with the investors but hopefully they'll understand.

I took my coffee and started walking out

of the restaurant. I was busy texting Natalie while walking and asking her what I have for the day and if I have very important meetings because I wasn't going to spend a lot of time in the office. I have Uncles to attend to. Jack texted me and told me the Uncles are landing in a few hours. But unfortunately there'll be no wedding because my dream clearly stated that Gogo won't let me get married just yet, but I guess I'm the only one that knows cuz I was the one with the dream. I don't know what miracle will happen but all I know is that I'm not getting married.

All of a sudden my coffee dropped and

someone screamed. I had accidentally bumped into someone and the coffee burnt them. I looked away from my phone apologizing...

Me: oh my gosh I'm so sorry, I'm really sorry.....

I slowly looked up and almost got the biggest shock of my life.

Me: Yanda (I said in a soft whisper)

Thando: hello aunty

Yanda: Tumisani.....

He said looking into my eyes.

Me: are you OK? I'm so sorry, your shirt.....

I said looking at his stained shirt. It had a big coffee stain on it since it was a white shirt

Yemi: Tumisani!?? (she said appearing behind Yanda)

I looked at all of them and I was really surprised. I hugged Yemi and kissed Thando's cheek who was in her fathers arms, luckily the coffee didn't hit her.

Yanda: uh uhm how are you!!?? (he said still looking at me weirdly)

Me: I'm fine, I'm sorry about your shirt, I....

Yanda: nah it's OK. it's fine...(he smiled faintly)

Me: no it's not OK, I feel really bad, come let's go get you a new shirt.

I said turning around and starting walking towards Mr Price since we were in the mall.

Yanda: no Tumisani there's no need, I can just...

Me: no I insist, you can't walk around like this, your shirt is really stained and I would feel much better if I get you a new one, so please let's go.

Yemi: well in that case I'll just take Thando to spur with me so long.

She said taking Thando away from Yanda's arms.

Yemi: it was nice seeing you Tumisani, I have to talk to you so I'll call you maybe we can do lunch some time.

Me: sure no problem. See you guys.

Thando: bye aunty (she said smiling)

Me: bye princess , come on Yanda.

I said walking away from him and towards Mr Price. We got into the store And everyone was looking at his stained shirt, I felt bad, really bad. The least I could do is get him a new shirt.

Yanda: you know you don't have to do this..

Me: I have to, I mean I wasn't looking where I was going and it's my fault.

I said walking to the male section of clothing.

Yanda: you look beautiful by the way.

I turned around and looked at him very well since we bumped into each other. He was a mess. I wanted to cry. I really wanted to break down and cry. His hair was all over the place and he had bags under his eyes and he looked like he hasn't slept for days. I felt my eyes build up with tears. I fought them back and looked away from him.

Me: Thank you.

I searched around till I found his size which I still remembered from the time

we used to go shopping together.

Yanda: you still remember my size? (he said shocked)

Me: duhh, how can I forget...I mean, yah I'm good at remembering sizes so yah.

Yanda: Tumisani I need to talk to you, really , I do. (he said with a low voice)

I could feel that it took him a lot of balls to say that and I was hurt just by looking at him like this. He lost weight and he looked like a mess. Even tho he's well dressed but I knew deep down that there's something wrong with him.

Me: Yanda, I, I have a lot going on at the moment, can....

Yanda: yeah I get it, (he sighed) you're a busy successful woman, I get it but just one hour of your time, please I beg of you.

He said with those eyes that used to make me melt. Just looking at him made shivers go down my spine. He really hurt me. I broke the eye contact and walked past him.

Me: I'll think about it.

If only he knew what I'm going through. If only he knew I wasn't really that busy successful woman but actually a troubled woman with a lot of challenges. I paid for his shirt and he changed

immediately and came out looking fresh and a bit neater than before.

Yanda: thank you, Tumisani

He said as we were walking back towards Spur.

Me: don't sweat, (I breathed in) Yanda?

Yanda: yeah? (he said looking at me)

Me: are you back on drugs? (I said softly)

Yanda: no no I'm not and I swear I'm not lying. It's been tough without you. I regret everything I did Tumsa, I just need to talk to you. Maybe that way I can find my feet again, maybe get closure to move on.

Me: I understand. Do me a favor, cut your hair and look like the best daddy in the world for Thando's sake please I beg of you. That child deserves more, she's too young to see you like this. Give her the best any father could offer. Please, for her sake.

Yanda: OK, I hear you. Thank you for caring.

Me: I care about her a lot.

I said slowing down since we were at Spur again. I looked at him and I was really feeling sorry for him. I pitied him a lot.

Yanda: Thank you, so I'll call you right.

Me: yeah sure. See you.

I said my goodbyes and turned and left.

All I was glad about was that I had no feelings for him anymore. The old

Tumisani would be crying and wanting

to hold him but the new Tumisani has moved on. I loved him but that's the past.

I love Siphos and I have no doubt in that.

I got to the office and attended all my meetings which was actually really

quick, I got a call from Jack telling me to come to Dumisani's house. I called

Siphos and informed him and he was

really hurt but I have trust in what Gogo

said. I need to stop fighting and let

Destiny do it's job.

COMMENT COMMENT COMMENT

[06/20, 05:17] Snr: INSERT 86

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV

I slowly walked into the house filled with people. From the Matthews family to Jacks relatives which I recognized by their american looks and Sipho who was seated next to Dumisani, Busi, Buhle and there sat my ugly old evil uncles as well

as Mrs Dlamini the lawyer. I looked around me and watched how they all communicated to each other with eye contact. The table was set with alcohol and the old uncles kept chewing that traditional what what they were chewing. I checked my watch and it was still morning, just before noon.

Me: Good afternoon (I greeted politely)

My uncle: child of the Phakade, our blood and sweat. Our joy and pride. The shining star of the Phakade clan.

He said rising from his seat.

My uncle 2: You've Youv grown Tumisani, the last time I saw you you

were still a very small baby.

My uncle 3: The beauty of your mother still reigns within you. Beauty and power is in your veins Phakade.

They all sat down after saying whatever they just said. Jack stood up as well as Busi. He walked up to m and whispered in my ear with his hand on my wrist.

Jack: There is a problem. (he whispered)
I looked at him confused.

Busi: we have to go get you dressed
Tumisani.

She said appearing behind Jack, I looked at her than Jack and I was really confused.

Jack: I have to get you out of here now, you're in danger.

Me: what are you talking about?

He said confused and whispering back. I looked at Sipho who had his head bowed down and Dumisani was lost in his own world. The Matthews family looked way too comfortable for my liking. Jack looked at Layla and she smiled back at him.

Uncle 1: We know you guys want to get married already but please get your hands off each other and Makoti go get dressed.

Everyone looked at us in the th most

awkward position. Jack now had his back turned against them with his hand on my wrist as if he was hugging me or kissing me. It looked really weird. Siphon looked at me for a long time then stood up. I moved back and Jack turned around to face them.

Siphon: I'll be on my way now.

He said walking towards the door.

Me: ba....

Before I could finish Jack gave me a warning look and I just shut up immediately. How does he make me do that? I ask myself.

Siphon storms out the house and I so

badly want to run after him yet I have a lot on my chest and I know everyone is waiting for me to run after him so their instincts can be right.

I breath and walk up the stairs with Busi following behind me. We get in the room and I throw my bag on the bed breathing heavily, trying to get my breath in place.

Busi: calm down Tumisani please relax.

She said holding onto me, tightly.

Me: I want to speak to Dumisani, now. (I said getting pissed)

Busi: the uncles won't allow any man to com come up here right now, I hate this so much. That guy gives me the creeps.

I catch my breath and get dressed into a long black dress which hugs my body and exposes my figure. Busi ties a doek on my head and instructs me to walk bare feet, the hell? I look in the mirror and I looked great despite the circumstances.

We slowly walk down the stairs and everyone stops talking and looks at me. I felt myself building up with anger every time I looked at those uncles. Jack was also dressed in all black now as well. I stand next to the couch Dumisani was seated on and look at him. He doesn't dare make eye contact. Gogo show me a sign. You said you'll let the marriage

slide. Show me a sign. Or have you changed your mind?

I thought to myself hard and deep. My heart was thumping and these uncles were pissing me off.

Jack introduce his so called relatives as his grandparents and aunt. They flew here just for the wedding. Yet they abandoned him. How stupid.

Uncle 1: we know this is an arranged marriage and all that but as a normal marriage we still have to perform this as tradition. We have to tell you what we seek for our daughters hand in marriage.

Dumisani chuckled with anger written all

over his face. I remember what Gogo said, I shouldn't allow my brother to fight all my battles, I should let destiny do its job but how do I start? Will Gogo allow this marriage to continue.

I looked at Jack was looked worried. What is wrong with him?

Jacks Grandfather: we shall provide everything you ask. We are willing to pay.

Uncle 2: first these papers have to be signed by the both of them (he said referring to Jack and I)

They instructed us to come forward and we did. Mrs Dlamini took out a set of forms and it looked familiar. Wait,

what!!?? I looked at Layla who had a huge smile on her face. Justin had a smirk on his face and the Matthews senior himself was smiling.

They've got to be kidding.

Me: I'm not signing these.

Uncle 3: your father instructed us that you'll be a wife to your husband and that includes you not having to work so that you can fulfill all your duties as a wife. You'll be a home wife not some kind of career based woman.

Uncle 1: your properties have to be signed into your family's names and not yours, my Child this is for your own good.

Please sign those papers.

Me: over my dead body. I'm not signing those papers and that is final. (I said sternly)

Dumisani: wait, Uncle where were you people all these years when we were suffering and going through hell? where were you when I had to basically raise this Child up all by myself? Where were you when she lost her grandmother? yet you come here and want to give her away. That will not happen. She won't sign those papers and you all can just fuck the hell out of my house right now.

Uncle 3: you watch your mouth young

man. You're not considered as part of this family, you're a disgrace to the Phakade name, how dare you talk to us like that.

Dumisani: I will talk to you however I want this, I'm her brother, her father and her parent and I'm the only one who has a right to give her away in marriage so please do us all a favour and leave.

He said standing up.

Jack: Dumisani sit down, we had a deal.

Dumisani: on second thought count me out on that deal. I'm not allowing my sister to lose her rights once again.

Justin: Tumisani sign those papers right

now!! (he roared)

Me: never !!

Uncle 2: you're a married woman and that is final. Sign those papers right now Tumisani Phakade.

Jack: Tumisani please. (he pleaded)

Me: Jack it doesn't have to be this way, we can start all over again, we can always end this marriage thing and start off as friends, it doesn't have to be this way, please.

Jack: But I love you Tumisani, I really do.

Me: no, you're in love with the the idea of loving me please, don't do this.

I said holding his hands and looking into his eyes. I felt in power. I felt myself getting more and more powerful. He was becoming weak. How do I do that?

Layla: Stop!!!! (she shouted angrily)

We all looked at her and she had a gun in her hands. The next thing I see is Jack Pulling me hard against him, holding me tight onto him, protecting me.

Jack: I was going to warn you about her.
(he whispered)

Layla: now all this madness ends here, bitch you're gonna marry him whether you like it or not, if you don't sign those papers I'm gonna blow all your brains.

Justin also took out his gun and they all pointed at us, now I wish I brought my gun with me.

Uncle 1: please put down your gun, it doesn't have to be like this.

Layla: you got your chance and you blew it old man now let me handle this.

Justin: Sign Tumisani.

He said pointing his gun at Dumisani who was instructed to lift his hands up in surrender.

Dumisani: don't sign Baby, don't.

Busi was in tears and Jacks relatives were scared. Mr Matthews just sat that smiling at his children's well done job.

Me: Dumisani, no...

Dumisani: don't even think of signing those papers Tumsa, let them kill me.

Busi: Dumisani what are you saying
(she cried)

Me: These papers are not worth your life
Dumisani.

Jack: Layla I'll give you anything, if you want money just name the amount, if you want my company just say it and it's all yours, just....just don't harm them.

i looked at Jack and i really didn't know what to say. Why was he saying that?

Me: Jack...

Jack: Tumisani just let them take from me, not you. You worked too damn hard for these properties.

Layla: I don't want your stinky money
Jack I want my family's properties, my family's legacy. I'm counting to five, if you don't sign these papers, your brother will die for the last time, this time I'll make sure the bullet hits hard and painful.

Me: I'll si....

Dumisani: no Tumisani, don't sign them.

Me: they'll kill me anyways whether I sign them or not just let me sign them
Dumisani.

Jack: I'm not allowing you to sign these papers Tumisani. You didn't fully read them yet.

Me: what do you mean?

Mrs Dlamini: are you people done talking, can I get to the point of why I'm here?

We all looked at a relaxed Dlamini. The way this woman angers me. dear lord...

Me: shut up you snake, you bitch, you traitor.

Mrs Dlamini: call me all you like babe, you're dying anyways.

She stood up and walked to the door.

She opened the door and then in walked

five men with guns and ropes. They pulled Jack and I apart and tied us up. Then they injected Busi and Buhle and also tied Dumisani up and injected the uncles. They all fell asleep, including Jacks relatives. Layla slapped me and anger rose up within me, I wanted to smack her back and kill her with my bare hands. The guys with guns beat Dumisani and jack Up and I shut my eyes as they cried in pain. Anger consumed my body.

She slapped me again and I turned the other way.

Me: don't you wanna smack me on this cheek as well bitch (I said pissed)

Layla: with pleasure.

She slapped me again and I spat in her face. She laughed like a witch.

Layla: how does it feel not being in power Tumisani? (she smiled)

Me: kill me already, what are you waiting for slut, kill me.

Layla: not until you sign those papers.

Me: over my dead body. I'm not signing these papers I worked too damn hard for them .

Dlamini: anyway....

Me: oh Dora you wouldn't wanna know what I'll do to you once I get out of here.

...(I said shaking my head)

I was both pissed and calm. I'm not dying anytime soon. These people clearly don't know who I am.

.

Sipho's POV

My heart is shattered to another level. If Tumisani marries him then I'm never gonna forgive her or myself for this. This cannot be happening. I can't lose her, no, never.

I parked the car on the side of the road and thought deep about my miserable life. Why me? why can't I have all her to myself. Doesn't God understand that I

love her with all my heart. Is my love not enough?

I bang the steering wheel and shouted in anger. I was hurt. Really hurt. She can't marry him. No, never. Tumisani is mine and mine allow. She'll never marry that man. Never. I started the car and made a U turn. It's time I show the world that I can do anything for my woman. I drove fast like a maniac. My ringing phone disturbed my thoughts, I connected the phone to the car and answer the call still driving fast.

Ziggler: fuxk dude, where the hell are you?? (he said panicking)

Me: Zigs this is not the time, I have to be somewhere call back later.

Ziggler: dude listen to me, man your chick is in danger.

Me: What!!?? (I shouted)

Ziggler: dawg do you have your gun with you? Go back to that house, we're on our way, I'll explain later.

Me: Ziggler what is happening, what do you mean, she's in danger?

Ziggler: dude her sister is one sick ass bitch, so this is what I found out. So when we were still in Mexico with Tumisani I connected her necklace that she is always wearing to our security

code so that I would know when she's in danger. But after the mission in Mexico I forgot to take it off her necklace but that was a good thing because now I know she's in danger and I have a feeling they're in danger. The necklace has a red jewel on it and right now the security code is beeping which means she's in danger. I've already informed the gents and instructed them to surround the house, get your ass down there and save your woman man. I'm on my way, Lwazi is trying to see if he can get the camera in the house to work so he can see their moves.

Me: Fuck, OK OK thanks dawg, I'm on my

way.

Ziggler: Sure, just don't enter without us being there, they're probably surrounded.

Me: sure I'm gonna wait for you guys outside the house.

Ziggler: Lwazi will get their first so, he'll enter with you.

Me: sharp. Thanks bro.

He hanged up and I sped up towards Ndumiso's house. These people are really messing up with me. Tumisani has made me so soft that it's hard to even fight a battle without her being my source of strength. Gosh Tumisani, what am I gonna do with you

I parked my car a bit far from the big house and saw Lwazi marching up to me.

Lwazi: we have to get rolling, so there's seven of them with a gun in hand. I'm not sure about the rest, our men have surrounded the house and three can enter with us.

Me: ohk sure man, let's roll.

We took out our guns and marched towards the house. Our men barged the door open and shot three other men down. Leaving only Two men with guns as well as Layla and Justin.

Layla: oh look Tumi, your boyfriend has

come to save you. Ncooh...how cute
(she giggled)

Tumisani: Siphoo..

Me: I'm here my love relax baby, did
she....(I looked at her red face)

This bitch hit my woman.

Me: how dare you touch her you bitch!!!
(I said pissed)

Lwazi shot all her men down and the
fool of a lawyer pulled her small gun out.
I almost laughed my ass off. She was
even shaking, Tumisani laughed. My
baby tho, she's being held captive but
still finds the courage to laugh. Lol. Only
Tumsa will do that.

Tumisani: Dora have you ever held a gun in your life before (she said laughing)

Dumisani chuckled.

Me: untie them now.

Justin: if anyone moves, I'll shoot her, i promise I'll shoot her.

He said pointing his gun at Tumisani.

Tumisani: babe don't shoot.

She know me too well. I was already aiming my gun. I don't miss a single shot.

Layla: if we let her go, you let us leave in peace.

Me: oh now you're scared. When you

were busy opening that big ass mouth of yours you weren't scared huh?

Dumisani: fools, untie me.

He said irritated.

Justin: first cool your men down and let us leave in peace.

Me: you came here with war and you shall leave here with war.....(I looked at Jack who had his eyes fixed on the ground)

Me: do you still wanna marry her Mr Patkins? Do you see our reality? This is us. Us. Me and Tumisani. This is what we have to go through on a daily basis but we're used to these challenges, do

you wanna put yourself in between this
Mr Patkins? This strong love we share,
do you wanna come between us?

Tumisani: Siphos...

She said looking at Jack with pity,
boiling my blood.

Jack: I love her.

I shot the air and Tumisani screamed in
fear.

Dumisani: dude my roof!! (he said
looking at the ceiling that now had a
hole in it.)

Me: what did you just say? Do you know
the meaning of love? Mxm niggah stop
talking bullshit.

I instructed my men to untie them and they did as told.

Lwazi: and I'm taking these three with me.

Mr Matthews was silent as hell but finally got the courage to speak.

Mr Matthews: if I were you, I would watch my back Tumisani.

He said as they exited.

Tumisani: where are you taking them?

Lwazi: ask no questions, hear no lies

He left. She looked at me with questioning eyes.

Me: don't. (I was pissed)

I woke those stupid uncles up and got them a flight ticket back to whatever hole they came out from and Jack took his so called relatives to the car.

Jack: Tumisani...

He said as we were standing outside. I looked at Tumisani who was looking at him.

Jack: we need to talk, but in private.

Tumisani: can we do this so other time, not right now, I have a lot on my mind.

Jack: I'll call you.

They left and Tumisani walked into the car without saying anything to me. I got in the car and started the engine.

Tumisani: Siphho...

Me: Tumisani, please just, don't say anything. I don't wanna say anything that will hurt you right now. I'm angry and I might not be able to control my anger.

She kept quiet and looked out the window. The ride was silent and heart breaking.

COMMENT COMMENT AND COMMENT

[06/20, 05:18] Snr: CONTINUATION

.

- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV

I get out of the shower and wrap a creamy white towel around my body. I walk out the bathroom and wrap a towel around my wet long curls.

Two days has passed since the so called wedding thing and it's been a peaceful two days. No drama, no stress. Siphos hasn't been himself lately and I'm worried about him. I'm meeting up with Yanda today. I have a feeling that the reason why he's such a mess is me. I

feel like I'm the reason he's still in the past. Maybe if I talk to him then he'll be able to move on. I haven't spoken to Jack either and I'm willing to talk to him and get him to move on. There's more to life than falling in love with the wrong girl.

Sipho hasn't told me where they're keeping the Matthews family and I really don't care. I have a business trip this weekend and I have to be at the hotel for the whole weekend. I miss Sipho. I really do miss him but I'm not calling him till he calls me. His pride is getting in his way, I don't know if he blames me for this wedding thing or if he's upset that

I'm talking to Yanda and Jack. Maybe he thinks I'll leave him for them but I don't know how else i should assure him that I truly love him.

I put on a pink creamy body hugging knee length off the shoulder dress with pumps and I leave my curls loose.

A half an hour later, I'm sitting at a table in Spur waiting for Yanda. I don't know why I'm doing this but I feel like there's a lot of things I need to get past with this new challenges.

Yanda: Hey, you look beautiful.

He said hugging me with a smile on his face, I hugged him back and smiled.

Me: Thanks, you don't look too bad yourself.

I said looking at his newly fresh cut hair and beard. He's wearing a black shirt with grey freshly ironed jeans and Nike kicks. He looks even more handsome from the time i saw him.

Yanda: thank you, I took your advice.

Me: glad you did, let's order (I said smiling)

We ordered and started off with Juice as we waited for our breakfast.

Me: so how have you been?

Yanda: well, it hasn't been easy as I said before. My parents divorced after

finding out the truth, My life was a mess, I didn't know what I wanted with myself anymore, I dated Zinhle and almost made the poor girl turn into you, I slept with someone I barely knew for a day. (sigh) it's been hectic without you Tumisani. But the good thing is that I gave up the Gangster life, it was hard but I finally did it. I tried to stop drinking and smoking and I'm slowly getting there. I'm trying to forget about you yet it seems impossible. I feel like you've locked my heart to you and I can't seem to stop loving you.

He looked up from the table and our eyes locked.

Me: Yanda, you do know that you can move on from all this is you push yourself forward?

Yanda: I know tumsa but it's not easy. You don't know how many times I told myself I'm over you but still wake up and start looking at our old pictures and wish I hadn't messed up that good thing we once had. It hurts Tumisani, it really does. I regret it all and I really want to apologize for what I've done to you. Honestly I'm sorry, I'm really sorry. I know it doesnt mean anything now because you're happily in a relationship but please forgive me and I don't know but maybe we can still be friends. I

mean, I don't know how I'll get you out of my heart but just friends would be better than nothing

I smiled warmly at him as my heart felt at ease.

Me: Yanda I forgave you long time ago, honestly I did. I want you to move on. Be happy, you have a long life ahead of you and I'm glad you've given up your bad habits. I want you to grow up and be a good father for Thando. I loved you, yes but that's all in the past now. Move on Yanda, don't hold onto the past. There's more fish in the sea, you're young, handsome and I'm sure many girls would die to be with you, just don't rush

things, take your time. OK ?

Yanda: I hear you, speaking to you somehow made me feel relaxed. I feel good. Thank you Tumisani, Siphos really a lucky man, I hate that I blew up my chance but all the best with your relationship.

Me: thank you. And don't worry you'll find someone who will love you more than I loved you. Just look on the bright side (I smiled)

Yanda: thank you. (he smiled back)

Me: so, friends? (I said shyly)

Yanda: yeah sure, friends.

Me: and don't worry i got your back, I'm

here for you if you wanna talk, I'm just a call away.

Yanda: that applies to you too, I'm here for you Tumsa.

Me: I'll keep that in mind.

Our order came and we dug in talking about random things, like the old days. It feels good to see him smiling. He looks good with a smile on his face. Maybe us talking gave him closure and helped him in some kind of way. As long as he gets the idea that we will never get back together again. I've moved on and I would appreciate it if he did too.

Now how will I convince Sipho that he

doesn't mean any harm, Siphos thinks that any guy who comes close to me wants to take me away from him but it's not like that. I know he loves me but he shouldn't be so insecure.

I walk into my house and smell delicious food being cooked in my kitchen. So he's finally come back to his senses. I kick off my shoes and walk to the kitchen slowly unzipping my dress.

Me: my love.

Siphos: you're home (I kissed his cheek)

Me: baby, I missed you.

Siphos: I missed you more

He switched off the stove and gave me

his full attention. I kissed his lips and he pulled my dress off over my head. I was left in my bra and my panty. I take off his shirt as he hungrily kissed me. I grabbed a fistful of his hair as he sucked on my neck. He takes off my bra and cups my breast and suck it, I throw my head back as he sucks me sweetly. The pleasure is lovely. I want him right now. I'm too horny to even wait for him.

Me: Baby....(I whined)

I bring his lips to me and kiss him. He gets the message and pulls his pants down. He lifts me up and place me on the kitchen counter. He comes between my legs and before he could enter me I

stop him .

Me: condom.

Sipho: fuxk Tumsa, where?

Me: it's upstairs babe.

He picks me up and Kisses me as we start walking towards the stairs. I'm horny. The rest is history.

COMMENT COMMENT.

I'M tryna find a way to end the story. But I don't know how. Insert 100 is the last one. Hopefully.

Admin

[06/20, 05:18] Snr: INSERT 87

.

.

.

.

FEW DAYS LATER

Sipho's POV

" come on babe, look at the stars, it looks beautiful my love"

She said wrapping her arms around me as I carried her on my back.

The ocean breeze hitting us and the soft sand warms my feet. The night is beautiful with her in my arms, especially

when she has such a beautiful smile on her face.

I kiss her arms and smiled as we walked through the sandy beach of this beautiful city.

She was on a business trip but it turned out to be a little get away trip. I had to influence her that the hotel was perfectly fine and that she needed a break from all that's happened to her.

This woman is truly a blessing from God. She is just the meaning of perfect.

" aaaahhh, noooo, Siphos stop running!!"

She squealed and giggled as I ran into the darkness of the night with my feet

now in the sea and her hopping up and down my back, hoping that I don't put her down because the water is freezing cold. I chuckled and turned her to face me, still with her in my arms and her legs wrapped around my waist.

Me: I'm gonna drop you any minute now..(I said teasing)

Tumisani: dare do that and I swear I'm gonna kill you...(she said holding onto me tightly)

Me: oh you dare me?

I said with my eye brow raised up, she put on her puppy face knowing very well what I'm capable of. Lol, she looks so

cute right now. I slowly bent down watching her reaction.

Tumisani: no, babe no please, don't.

Sipho!!!! aaahh!!

She screamed as I dropped the both of us into the water and we were both wet. Her hair immediately curled up and she looked even more beautiful. She let go of me and ran out of the water, shivering. I chuckled and chased after her.

Tumisani: no, don't touch me...

She giggled as I ran after her trying to catch her.

Me: come back here woman.

I said laughing as her cute little legs ran

around with her ass bouncing up and down as she ran.

Tumisani: you're wet Siphon and I'm freezing cold, don't touch me...

She ran and I kept chasing her

Me: then stop running and let me warm you up

She was about to say something till I heard her scream and trip over and fall on her butt, I laughed.

Tumisani: fuck!!

Me: (laughing) I told you to stop running now look...

I bent down and scooped her up and

carried her bridal style.

Tumisani: no, put me down now!!

She wiggled in my arms stubbornly. This woman of mine.....

Me: babe you're shivering, let me hold you.

Tumisani: it's your fault cuz you threw me in the water, now put me down (she whined)

I put her down and took off my white crisp shirt that was also wet, squeezed the water out and put it on her. She was only in her pink bikini bra and I had shorts on only because I just gave her my shirt.

Me: better now?

Tumisani: please take us home

She said holding her arms together and brushing them, shivering. I pulled her into my chest and wrapped my one arm over her shoulder then we started walking towards the parking lot.

This was indeed a beautiful day. Seeing her smile makes me happy and when she's happy, I'm happy. After all she's the queen of my heart and I love her too much. And I love teasing her as well. I know I'm insecure and over protective and it annoys her but I'm just tryna protect her because I care about her a

lot and I would hate myself if anything happens to her.

She's been through a lot And I don't want her to get hurt again. I kiss her forehead before I open the door for her and she enters and I walk to the other side and enter as well. I turn on the heater and she calms down a bit. She looks super sexy in that bikini, with her fine ass and that breast that just rises up as if it's looking at me. I couldn't help but get jealous whenever a man looked at her, because my queen is beautiful guys. The true meaning of beauty.

When we landed in Pretoria, I decided that we wouldn't live at her hotel

because I wanted some privacy and not her staff to come knocking at her door every time they pleased. So I got us a little apartment for the time being. I'm even considering buying the apartment for every time we come here. But I'm not gonna tell her yet.

She had so much fun, throwing me with water and us building a sandcastle together like little kids. She really is good company.

I looked over at her side with a smile on my face and she was slowly falling asleep, it's been a long day.

I park the car and walk over to her side

and carry her then lock the car and start walking towards the door with her in my arms, drifting into a deep sleep.

After getting her in her PJ's which was a struggle because I couldn't resist her gorgeous body, I kiss her a few times and she moaned and mumbled something that sounded like, "leave me alone Siphoh" in her sleep. I couldn't help it, she's just way too gorgeous. I took a quick shower and hopped into the covers naked because it was really hot. I removed her curly caramel hair out of her face and watched as she slept, I smiled to myself and thanked God for this royal beauty. She looks beautiful in her sleep

even. I pecked her lips and switched off the lights, smiling. I'm gonna wife her soon.

.

Tumisani's POV

I open my eyes and look on my left side where my adorable baby is asleep with his hand on my ass and his leg around my body. This man sure can cover someone up. He loves my ass way too much, I mean, who doesn't love Tumsa's ass? Lol.

I looked under the covers and he's naked and I have my PJ's fully on.

The feeling of waking up next to him

brings a smile to my face. Maybe it's time for me to be happy. And this is my comforter. I pecked his lips and he groaned brings me closer to him with his eyes still closed. I watched how he peacefully slept. The sun is blasting through the curtains and it feels great to wake up in another city, in another bed but with the same man, that I love.

A naughty idea popped up in my head and I smirked. I slowly untangled myself out of his arms and went under the sheets. I kissed the tip of his dick and he groan. I took his full length into my hand and he groaned even louder with his eyes still closed. His man was becoming

hard so I kissed it again and he groaned and I could feel him grabbing the sheets.

I close my eyes and take his full length into my mouth and I feel his hands holding my hand with him gasping. I slowly go up and down, up and down, up and down with his groaning and moaning, cursing and holding my head. I sucked him hard until all he could utter was my name and mine alone. I sucked him so good that he forgot all about life and only sang praises to his queen.

Sipho: Baby!!! aaahhh Tumi, Tumsa, aaahh my queen, my love, my everything!!!! (he groaned)

He was groaning and moaning holding and pulling onto my hair and it felt good. The feeling of him being in my mouth was great and I loved every moment of it. I sucked him for almost 20 mins and I know he was stopping himself from cumming because it was amazing.

Sipho: I'm cumming babe!! (he shouted)
I sucked him one last time and he came in my mouth. I allowed him to pour himself inside me, I've gotten used to it. I swallowed him and kissed the tip of his dick again, he groaned deeply. I came up from under the covers with a naughty smirk on my face, I wanted to laugh at how his face looked. He was pink and

still shocked at the morning glory I just have him.

Me: Good morning, Mr Ndlovu.

I said kissing his chest and he pulled me up and kissed me fully on the lips, he tasted himself in my mouth and I loved every second of the heated kiss. He brought his hands up to my ass and squeezed it, I moaned with a smile on my face. .

Sipho: Good morning Ms Phakade. The queen of my castle and the love of my life.

He smiled pecking his sexy pink lips. I lied on his chest and listened to his

heartbeat.

Me: I love you, Mr Ndlovu.

I said smiling and holding onto him tightly with my heart bouncing in joy and excitement.

Sipho: I love you more Mrs Phakade Ndlovu.

I giggled and pecked his lips. Eish I'm gonna have to husband this sexy caramel cake of mine. Lol.

I was lost in my own mind until I felt him poke my nipples and I screamed in pain. I quickly hopped off him and held my breast, painfully.

Me: fuck Sipho what was that for?

Sipho: you weren't even listening to me
Tumi, I was saying something.

Me: doesn't mean you have to poke my
nipple, do you know how sore that shit is.

I was close to tears because it was
really painful. I took my top off and
looked at my painful breast. I was now
crying, call me a drama queen and I
would gladly take the gold medal.

Sipho: no come on Tumsa, it can't be
that sore, let me see.

He said coming closer to me, worried.

Me: don't touch me, that was fucking
painful

I said in tears. I held my breast and he

was panicking. I almost laughed guys.

Sipho: ba- b- babe I'm so sorry, my love I'm very sorry. Is it really painful? (I nodded) let me see babe, can I kiss it better? (I nodded)

Deep down my heart was doing the vosho. It's good to see him so worried. He bent over my boob and kissed it, niggah was licking my boob making me wet down there. I almost giggled watching him licking me. I had to moan when he took my boob into his mouth and started sucking it. I was moaning like there's no tomorrow. Until he stopped and looked at my hungry eyes.

Sipho: so you just wanted me to suck your breast, shit Tumsa I thought I hurt you.

Me: you did,

Sipho: no you wanted me to suck you and you didn't know how to ask.

Me: oh please niggah I can get you to suck me anytime I wanted. (I said confidently)

Sipho: oh really?

He said with that sexy deep voice of his. He was really testing me today, yohh. I licked my lips looking at his sexy gorgeous body. God damn, Brah G, my man is hot.

Sipho: I'm not fucking you till we get back to Cape Town.

Me: What!!!!?!

I said getting back to reality. He left me sitting there and he went to the bathroom.

He's got to be kidding me. Oh hell nah, he won't survive without my pussy. I'm sure he'll come back running to his queen.

COMMENT COMMENT AND COMMENT

[06/20, 05:18] Snr: INSERT 88

.

-
-
-
-

Tumisani's POV

" did you check the decorations and setting of the room and also the catering?"

I said walking over to my desk and sitting comfortably on my black leathered office chair.

Katy: yes madam, I've check everything and it'll be in for observation in about an hour or two.

She said looking into her tablet and fixing her glasses as her hair fell into her face.

Me: OK, do me a favor and get my finance team up here please, I need a word with them.

I said taking out the business financial book. I place it on the desk as Katy, my hotel PA scribbled down thing on her tablet.

Katy: yes madam, uhm madam, I was meaning to tell you something for quite a while now but since you're hardly here I didn't get the opportunity to tell you.

She said a bit worried.

Me: oh really, is anything wrong?

Katy: well madam it's about the hotel and what has been happening here behind your back.

Me: what you mean behind my back?

Katy: well madam actually, there's this group clients who have been coming here often and when they come here, they book the whole casino area as well as the top floor of the hotel and I've realized that they come here with drugs and prostitutes and they are involved in illegal business. I've talked to Tyla about it but he says they're potential clients and we should respect them the same

way we respect the others customers and clients. But madam I'm not sure if this is how the hotel runs but I think there's something wrong with what these people do. We've contacted the police one or two because of them but the police keep saying that they can't do anything without the presence of the owner of the company. So Tyla has advised us to drop it. But I've decided to talk to you about it because it's affecting the business.

I looked at her shocked and pissed at the same time.

I knew this was gonna happen. I just pray that this is not Rachel's people. I

hope that it's not them.

As for Tyla, he'll get a piece of my mind. Oh Tyla is the hotel HR that I put in charge when I wasn't here. He was in charge to make sure that everything is in order but that changed when he didn't do that anymore. He never reported anything back to me anymore and so I trusted that everything was fine and perfectly placed, but I guess I was wrong.

Me: what!?

I said in disbelief with my mind playing games on me.

Katy: madam I was hoping to inform you

sooner but....

She looked down.

Me: it's OK Katy, thanks for telling me. I need you to arrange a meeting with the whole broad staff in fifteen minutes time. Tell them to bring the company file with them as well as the finance books.

She nodded and excused herself. I sat there wondering what on earth is Tyla up to. He better not be bringing fraudsters into my company, I've had enough of people playing with me and thinking I'm dumb.

Apart from that, Pretoria has been great. Thanks to Sipho, we've extended the trip

and we're staying here for a week more or so, which is a good thing because if he hadn't forced me to stay then I wouldn't have found out that my company had fraudsters.

I love being in Pretoria because it gives me some kind of peace of mind. And it has lovely people and stuff, so it wasn't that bad. Even though I'm mostly in the hotel but I still enjoy it here especially that Sipho is here with me. He's been nothing but the best and I'm having lots of fun waking up next to him every morning.

He has stopped going to Therapy for a while because he says he needs some

peace of mind for a while to think about his life and try to put himself back together before he talks to the therapist about his feelings and his experiences. The Therapist is totally fine with that but she says he has to come back soon because it might not be easy getting yourself back together when you've gone through a lot. And I totally understand her but as stubborn as Sipho is, he keeps assuring the Therapist that I'm here and I can help him move on. I don't mind but he also needs therapy in order for him to follow heal but I won't force if he doesn't want to, if being around me is what makes him

comfortable then I have no say in that.

I step into the boarding room and greet everyone then take my seat next to Katy. They all keep quite and look at me with worried faces, especially Tyla.

I trusted this guy to look after this place when I was in Cape Town and he assured me that he would take care of everything since Vuyo doesn't work with us anymore but look what he's doing. He better have a very good reason of where my 2,5 million rand has gone too because I've just read the finance book and it doesn't say anywhere in it that we used 2,5 million rand. I'm pissed and I swear I could kill him right now.

Me: OK, first of all I want you all to explain, why on earth I wasn't told that there are drug lords and whatever in my company?

I said looking at all of them, trying my best not to look Tyla. I was already losing my mind. Katy looked down as Tyla looked at her angrily.

They all kept quite and bowed their heads down, scared.

Me: are you people gonna talk or should I start taking action, maybe we'll get somewhere when I do that.

I said sitting back on my chair and taking my hair off my face.

Lauren: what do you mean Madam?

Me: what do I mean? oh OK, what do I mean.....well what I mean is that there's a group of " potential clients " that come here often and when they come here they do illegal business in this hotel. So what I want to know is that, why do I pay people to work in this hotel if they can't do their jobs right?

Tyla: there is no such things, Miss Phakade, there is no client that brings any illegal business in this hotel. Where exactly have you heard that?

I looked at him irritated as he had just lied in my face. I closed my eyes and

breathed in.

Me: so you think I'm a fool Tyla, does it look like I'm a fool here? huh?? (I said looking at him straight in the eyes)

Tyla: uh uh no Miss Phakade I did not say that, the thing is these people are clients and customers the sane way everyone that comes here are clients as well and I don't know why you people have an issue with these clients if they are attending this hotel to do their business and they do pay for their reservation just like other clients so what wrong have they done?

Katy: what you don't understand Tyla is

that they are involved in illegal business and they bring in illegal stuff and when this company's goes down, we go down as well. We lose our jobs as well as this company, same way we lost it in the beginning.

She said looking irritated as well.

Tyla: shut up Katy. (he said looking uneasy)

Me: enough!!! (I shouted) I want the truth and we're not leaving this room till someone tells me what the hell is going on in my company?? Start explaining.

Tyla: as I've already said, there is nothing wrong going on in here Miss

Phakade. They are just clients and nothing more.

Me: oh really? so if they are just clients then why is the budget of this company dropping every single day? why is it that there's more clients coming in but less money? If I'm not mistaken, isn't it supposed to be, the more clients, the more money? So tell me Tyla, where does all the money that the clients pay, go to?!!

I said now yelling at him, pissed. The rest of the staff is dead quite and some of them even look guilty.

Tyla: Miss Phakade, the money goes to

all the stock that we purchase from all the factories and stuff.

Me: then why are they not recorded in these books?

I said pushing the book towards him, he takes the book and slowly opens it.

Me: Now tell me Tyla, Mr Dominic (finance Manager) where is the two point five million rand that just disappeared out of the company account without even being recorded into the book and also, (I sighed) I wasn't informed about it??

Some of them gasped and there was chanting in the room. Shock was written

all over their faces. I looked at Tyla and Mr Dominic who were both scratching their heads and giving each other weird looks.

Me: where is my damn money!!?? (I yelled and everyone shut up immediately)

Tyla: uh uh Tumisani....

Mr Dominic: Miss Phakadr the truth is....

Tyla gave him a warning look and he shut up immediately.

Tyla: that money was used to pay tax and also the insurance company and there was a function that took place here that didn't need your presence so I handled it and paid for all the costs and

damages using the company budget.

He said breathing heavily and fiddling with his tie.

I gripped my teeth together and my face was hot as hell. This guy really thinks I'm a fool right?

Me: Tyla

Tyla: Miss Phakade

He said without making eye contact. I looked straight at him and the fool next to him.

Me: you're fired.

Tyla: what!!?? For what exactly? what have I done???

He said fuming.

Me: oh honey you haven't done anything wrong, I'm just firing you because I have the pleasure to (I said sarcastically)

Tyla: I'm not gonna allow you do to do that, this is my job, do you know how long I've been working here??

Me: long enough for me to be sured that you're a liar and a thief.

Tyla: you can't proof that woman, but you know what? this is not over, I'm taking you to court, you have no right to fire me with no proof of the wrong I've done.

Me: well I've just did so please stop

wasting my time and get out of my company.

Tyla: be ready to meet my lawyers. And I want my salary before the end of today.

He said standing up.

Me: I think that 2,5 million that you stole will cover up your whole life time. I'm not giving you a cent.

I said clearly stating what I've just said.

Tyla: well, we'll see about that.

Me get out, security!!

They took him with him arguing with them. Well, I don't care. I'll be waiting for his so called Lawyer. I looked at Mr

Dominic.

Me: Dominic, you're suspended. I don't want to see you at work for the next two months, until I say you can come back.

Mr Dominic: Miss Phakade I'm really sorry, please don't do that to me, I beg of you. I'm so sorry please, I have a family to feed. I beg of you.

Me: you should've thought about that before you betrayed me, I should've fired you as well but because I'm not that heartless, I'm suspending you. It's either you're suspended or fired. Your choice.

I said looking at him.

Mr Dominic: OK. OK, I'll go. But please

do forgive me. I'm really sorry.

Me: you may leave.

He stood up and left the room. I cleared my voice and looked at the rest of them.

Me: now all of you, listen and listen very carefully. I suggest you take that example as a warning. I will not tolerate this nonsense in my company, if you all want to keep your jobs then I suggest you do your work correctly. Am I understood?

Them: yes ma'am.

Me: right. From now on, I want to know every single thing that happens in this hotel. I want to know how much money

enters and leaves this hotel on a daily basis, I want it all recorded in the business accounting book, I want you all to inform me when there is a problem of when something doesn't seem unclear to you. I don't want to come here after a month or so and discover that there's corrupting in my company. Understood?

Them: Yes ma'am

Me: Good. Katy get me a new HR and a new Finance manager for the time being, let me know when they're ready for the interviews and stuff.

Katy: OK madam (she smiled)

Me: ok the rest of you, you can go.

Thank you. And be warned people. I'm not afraid of firing anyone, I can do it when I want and how I want, just don't cross the line, don't think that because I'm quite it means that I'm stupid, no it doesn't work that way.

Them: Yes ma'am.

Me: Y'all are excused.

They all stood up and left with worried, shocked and all sorts of expressions in their faces.

Yeah. When it comes to business, I don't play games. They should know their places and learn to keep their shoes on.

The rest of the day wasn't that bad tho. I

want to do the observation for the function that will be happening tonight but it didn't need my Presence because it was a private formal business function. So they just book the hotel hall area. I made sure to do a background check on them and they were clear. I put extra security in the hotel and more cameras.

After doing all the check ins and check outs of the day. I pack my stuff and headed out. I was starving. What was weird is that Sipho hadn't called me the whole day. He never does that, even when he's busy. But what could he possibly be busy with when all his

companies are in Cape Town.

I got into the cab and ask them to take me to the apartment we were living in. I hadn't eaten for the whole day and my stomach was doing all sorts of dance moves. I was too busy that I didn't even have time to have lunch.

After paying the cab, I took my laptop bag and headed towards the door. I opened the door and there was so much noise in the house. Loud music, horrible singing and the smell of home made popcorn. What the hell?

I placed my laptop bag on the kitchen counter and the kitchen was a fucken

mess. I was breathing flames already. I walked to the lounge and there they were drinking and making jokes like there was no tomorrow.

It was Sipho, Lwazi, Ziggler, three girls and this other dude. The girls were dancing and having the time of their lives while the guys were drinking and laughing with the volume of the TV high as if it was some kind of club in here.

I looked at all of them pisseed then looked at my wrist watch and the time read 16:45. I walked over to the TV without them noticing and switched the TV off. They all stopped what they were doing and looked at me as if I was some

kind of crazy woman.

Me: what the fuck is going on here? (I said pissed)

Sipho: baby....

He said getting up, looking at me shocked as if he had lost his mind.

Girl: who the hell is she?

I looked at the skinny bitch and I was fuming as hell. Like really now? I come home in a city I don't know anyone except my colleagues, after a long day of work and firing people, I'm hungry my stomach is doing the gwara gwara and I get home only to find people having some kind of pens down party in my

apartment. I so badly wanted to strangle that bitch.

Ziggler: boss lady?

I looked at his drunk self and he looked like he had just drunk the whole bar alone. There was a girl sitting on his lap and also another one on Lwazi's lap, she looked more presentable from then the other two. I looked at the guy who had a really cute face with a buff body.

Then I fixed my attention back on Siphos.

Me: are you gonna answer my question or just stare at me?

I said putting my hands on my hips.

There were bottles everywhere on the

floor and pizza boxes on the table.

Sipho: babe can I just talk to you in the room please.

He said stepping in front of me and taking my hand. I looked at him angrily and yanked my hand away, I folded my arms on my chest and started walking past him.

Girl: geeeezzz Sipho your girl has anger issues.

Sipho: shut up Lee, Ziggler keep your chicks mouth shut please.

Lee: I was just stating the facts, no need to bite my head off.

Ziggler: Aliyah!!

I turned around and looked at the bitch who no manners. She was cute yet thin with no ass. I shook my head. Bitxh has some nerves.

I got in the room and sat down on the bed, carefully taking my jacket off, without giving him eye contact.

Sipho: baby

He said walking towards me, I stood up from the bed and walked to the cardboard. I folded my jacket and placed it in the cardboard then started undressing myself. I was really pissed. Mxm.

Sipho: my love please talk to me.

He said standing behind me and putting his hands on my waist, I was in my bra and panty.

Me: what the hell is going on here Siphos?

I said turning around and taking his hands off me. He was tempting me and I'm not gonna allow him to take over my body with just his touch. I'm too weak.

Siphos: babe, I had no idea you were gonna come home this time, I thought you were gonna stay at the hotel till late so I got bored and Lwazi called and told me they were around here in Pretoria so I invited them over for some drinks. I hope you don't mind.

He said with so much guilt in his voice. I sighed and walked away from him.

Wrapped a towel around my body and put on my slippers.

Me: whatever, they're your friends.

Sipho: baby you're angry. I'm sorry my love, sorry for not calling you and letting you know. Please don't be upset.

He said following me into the bathroom.

Me: I'm not upset, just do me a favor and clean up after the mess you people made in the lounge and kitchen, tell those bitches to put on some decent clothes as well.

I said pushing him out of the bathroom

and locking the door.

I got into the shower and as soon as the water hit my skin, I felt calm.

I stood under the shower tap and just let the water take over my body. It felt good.

I don't even wanna think about what I just saw out there. Those girls were practically naked. I thought Ziggler and Lwazi were normal people but clearly they not. I hope they clean that house, I'm not in the mood to clean after peoples mess.

COMMENT COMMENT AND COMMENT.

[06/20, 05:18] Snr: CONTINUATION

- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV

After taking a long relaxing shower, I put on a pair of jeans and a black and white crop top then tie up my hair into a messy bun, since it was wet and curly. I don't lie straightening my hair and blowing it out because it takes a lot of effort and since it's long, it'll make it even difficult.

So I headed downstairs and the place was now much more cleaner and quieter tho they were still here. I walked to the kitchen and it was spotless. Great.

I took some meat out from the fridge and put it in water while I started chopping the vegetables.

My mind was very far, really far. So far that I was even missing my brother and my handsome nephew, I hadn't talked to them for quite a while and I really missed them a lot. I'll make sure to call them later on.

What I keep getting angry about is the fact that my 2,5 million rand from my

company business has been stolen from my very own trusted employee. I don't know how he stole that money because I never gave him the password, the only person who knew the password was Mr Dominic and he promised me never to tell anyone about it but I guess he was a traitor after all. From now on I'll never trust anyone with these accounts ever again. I've also got the Matthews family personal joint account and I've blocked it so that they don't get any money from it. Now they'll learn that family is more important than money and worldly possessions. Call me evil and I wouldn't care. I can't wait to get the Matthews

mansion out of their hands. They'll surely suffer for all they've put me through. Sometimes you've gotta be cruel to be kind. It's my turn to revenge.

I felt warm arms wrapping around my waist, I snapped out of it and loosened up as I was so used to those warm arms. I felt more relaxed than earlier on.

Sipho: babe (he said breathing down my neck)

Me: hmmm

I said letting go of the knife that I was using to chop the vegetables and turning around to face him, I wrap my arms around his neck and peck his

cheek. I missed his warmth.

Sipho: are you still upset my love? (he said worried)

Me: no babe, I'm not upset. (I smiled faintly)

Sipho: did you have a rough day at work? (he said kissing my neck)

Me: (sigh) you can say that, but it's nothing I can't handle.

Sipho: are you sure? if you need anything just let me know, I'm here for you babe don't fight alone.

Me: I'm sure babe, I can handle this.

I said intertwining our fingers together

and he smiled, those sexy lips, I felt myself licking my lips.

Sipho: if you say so, come on let's go, let me introduce you to our guests.

Me: ohk but have those girl's changed their attitude yet? (I said sarcastically)

Sipho: (chuckled) yes ma'am

He kissed my forehead and we started walking towards the lounge. We got there and there were no pizza boxes or beer bottles on the floor, my lounge was clean and they looked more sane more. I guess Sipho put some sense into their heads. The three girls were now sitting on their asses and talking with the guys

in some kind of conversation that only they understood.

Sipho: OK guys, let's start again. Ladies, dude, this is Tumisani, my girlfriend. (he said smiling referring to the three girls and the cute looking calm guy)

Guy: Hey Tumisani, My name is Thaps short for Thapelo.

Me: nice to meet you. (I smiled)

Girl 1: Hi (she waved shyly, oh she's shy how cute) I'm Karabo.

Me: nice to meet you

She looked really cute and shy but I have a feeling there's a crazy girl under that cuteness. She was wearing a short

black dress with sandals.

I looked at the girl with that bitchy attitude and I knew immediately she is a bitch.

Girl 2: I'm Aliyah (she said sarcastically)

Plus she's a colored. I could just braai her like meat right now.

Me: nice to meet you (I rolled my eyes and smiled at the other girl who also looked bitchy)

Girl 3: Sindiswa is the name (she said looking at Lwazi and playing with his fingers)

Me: cool (I said not interested)

I guess Sindiswa is Lwazi's girlfriend and Aliyah is Ziggler's girlfriend and I'm not sure about Thaps and Karabo, they don't look like an item. They look like they don't even know each other.

Me: hi y'all (I smiled awkwardly)

Lwazi: so we meet again Miss Fabriguez (he said jokingly)

Me: shut up (I giggled)

Ziggler: (laughing) dude you still remember that name, lol, she was like, " Mr Alberto, I'm Jennifer Fabriguez and I'm here to give you the time of your life"

They both bursted out laughing and I hit him with a pillow k

jokingly.

Me: liar, it wasn't even like that

I said sitting next to Siphos and he pulled my head onto his chest.

Siphos: baby what the hell are these idiots talking about? (he said confused)

Lwazi: ask no questions, here no lies.

Ziggler: yeah man, we ain't telling you anything. What happens on a mission stays at the mission. Right boss lady? (he smiled)

Me: right, we ain't telling you.

Aliyah: wait, you're into the gangster life too? (she asked looking shocked) well, I

never thought you had it in you.

Me: oh really? meaning?

Thaps: I also thought you were innocent when I saw you walk through that door, pissed yet calm at the same time. I never thought you'd be one of us.

Me: (smiled) you'd be surprised at what I've done so far in my life.

Karabo: you seem so interesting

Tumisani, can we be friends? (she said smiling)

Me: sure (I returned the smile)

Lwazi: baby, you're quiet?

Sindiswa: I'm hungry boo

Aliyah: me too, Sips you gonna let your guests starve in your house?

Me: when I got in here I saw pizza boxes, didn't y'all eat?

Sindiswa: about four hours ago, (she chuckled)

Me: hmm, Karabo would you like to help me in the kitchen?

I said standing up.

Karabo: yeah sure (she said smiling)

I guess I underestimated this one. She smiles too much. We went to the kitchen and she was just standing their shyly, the hell? This isn't the girl I saw dancing when I got in here.

Me: you OK?

Karabo: yeah I'm great, what do you want me to do?

Me: uhm just help me with those vegetables, I hadn't finished cutting them.

Karabo: cool, I must say you're really beautiful Tumisani.

Me: oh thank you, you're really cute too.
(I smiled cutting the meat)

Karabo: Thanks, so I hear you're here on a business trip?

Me: yeah

Karabo: so what do you do?

Me: Wait, you don't know me?

Karabo: Sipho keeps his chicks hidden, he never tells us about his girlfriends, he's strange sometimes. (she chuckles)

Me: well I'm the Matthews daughter and also the Phakade princess. (I said smiling)

Karabo: you lie....(she said with her mouth open) you mean you're Lindokuhle's daughter? Keagan Matthews daughter?

She said shocked. I guess everyone knows me just by hearing my background.

Me: yup, I guess my life is all over the

news and shit.

Karabo: no, no, how did Siphos end up with you? His father hated your mother and your mother and him had a little thing back then. Mr Matthews as in Keagan Matthews the rich white guy?

Me: yeah, how do you know so much about them?

Karabo: well Siphos and I have been friends for a very long time now, since kindergarten but we lost contact when his father died. My father and his father were actually really close. Well, I'm a gangster too.

I looked at her with my eyes wide open. I

couldn't believe it.

Me: you mean this cute face is a gangster?

Karabo: yeah, (she smiled shyly) my fathers blood runs through me. But he's dead now.

She said sadly.

Me: wow I'm sorry for your loss, this is all just shocking.

Karabo: I know but enough about me, tell me how did you and Sipho click? My niggah has been through shit hey.

Me: It's a very long story for another day, you're a really nice girl maybe we can go out some time.

Karabo: I would love that and plus you're my only friend. I didn't have any friends till I met you. (she smiled)

Me: meaning?

Karabo: well I lost all my friends since I became a gangster, they feared me and their parents advised them to not hang out with me.

Me: oh OK, don't worry I'm hear now. So are you and Thaps dating?

Karabo: what!!? no!! (she laughed)

Thaps and I are just friends, I'm married.

Me: what!!!!? (I shouted)

Karabo: lol, keep your voice down

Tumisani. (she giggled)

Me: you're married? but you look so young Karabo? (I said shocked)

Karabo: I'm 26, I got married two years ago.

Me: oh wow congratulations, so is your husband a gangster too?

Karabo: no, well he doesn't know that I'm a gangster. I'm an underground kinda gangster.

Me: oh I get it, so aren't you planning on telling him? what if you're in danger or something?

Karabo: I have eyes and ears everywhere, I didn't have choice. My father left everything under my name since I was

the only child so I had no choice but to accept.

Me: oh I get it.

Karabo: so what about you? are you really a gangster or have you just had a crazy journey?

Me: I've just had a crazy journey, I don't know if I should consider myself a gangster or not.

I said putting the meat in the pot.

Karabo: I get it. And oh Tumisani, don't mind Sindiswa and Aliyah they're just bitches, I don't like them either. They have stinky attitudes. Be careful around them tho.

Me: ohk thanks for the warning. I can smell a bitch from far away, I know how to handle them.

Karabo: I like you already, you've got that power kinda thing. Siphoh used to have that too then all of a sudden my niggah became weak. I'm sure that's when he met you, you melted him girl.

We laughed. I knew there was this crazy side of her.

Me: so what are you guys doing here?

Karabo: oh Lwazi had this mission that we were attending here but then he said it was canceled so then he remembered that Siphoh said he'll be here in Pretoria

so we gave him a call and came to waste some time around here. I hope you don't mind, sorry for messing your place (she said guilty)

Me: no it's OK. I was just pissed caused I had a long day at work and stuff. So what did you tell your husband?

Karabo: I told him I'm here to visit my sick aunt but actually my aunt is perfectly fine, I even bought her a bottle of wine to shut her up.

We laughed. This girl is crazy.

Me: so every time you have a mission, you make up a lie? (I said giggling)

Karabo: not every time because he

sometimes flies to KZN because of business trips and stuff so I don't always lie. I'm not really a bad girl you know. I'm just a crazy gangster wife to a dick of a husband

She said now getting a little angry. I looked at her and her cheeks were heating up.

Me: what you mean!? are you OK? (I said worried)

Karabo: I'm fine sorry, can I use your restroom for a second? (she said unsettled)

Me: sure, walk straight down this hall and turn on your left.

Karabo: thanks.

She stormed out without making eye contact and she didn't look like that cute girl anymore. I wonder what's wrong with her? She looks like a happy rich girl with a happy gangster life.

I continued cooking and Karabo came back looking more calmer than before. We cooked in silence and it wasn't that bad. After cooking we set the table and dished up for everyone and I called them to join us on the dinner table.

Sipho: it smells great, ladies.

He said smiling to Karabo and I.

Ziggler: let's hope it tastes as good as it

smells

Me: of course it tastes good, I know my way around the kitchen

Sipho: in bed too (he said whispering into my ear)

He just turned me on, I pinched him and he just chuckled. He hadn't touched me since he told me that he's not fucking me till we get back in Cape Town. But I haven't been giving him any justice either. I walk around here almost naked, he gets hard when he sees me but y'all know how stubborn Sipho is, he keeps to his word. But that won't last any longer. I'm gonna make him want me

like he's never wanted me before.

Sometimes I don't know what to do with him, like, I've been sleeping naked, walking around the house naked, cooking naked but I guess he just wants to punish himself. The other day I woke up naked and his hands were roaming around my body and he was still asleep tho, he was mumbling sweet nothings in his sleep and under the blanket his dick was dripping wet and hard, he was having a wet dream. But when I woke him up he denied it all. If he falls sick then he shouldn't blame me. Because I offered and he was being a dick.

We had dinner and Karabo helped me

clear the table, it was getting dark so they asked if they could sleep over. Siphos rejected immediately and told them to drive to the hotel (Matthews hotel). They kept arguing until the nasty bitch (Aliyah) spoke up and forced Ziggler to take them to the hotel.

Ziggler: we won't pay for reservation right Tumisani, we're friends, almost family. (he said smiling at me)

Me: you're fucked up Honey, of course you're paying for sleeping in my hotel, it's not a free for all.

Lwazi: but Tumisani you're I'm friend

Siphos: come on guys don't be like that,

my woman is working hard for these hotels, don't take advantage of her because she's the owner.

Karabo: yeah y'all let's go, I'll pay, leave Tumisani alone.

She winked at me and smiled, I smiled as well. They said their goodbyes and left. I locked the house and switched off the kitchen lights and walked to the lounge where Siphos was seated watching TV.

We'll see how he'll get out of this one.

I switched off the TV and sat on his lap with my legs on each side of him. He looked up at me and I swear he wanted

to smile. I almost laughed, he knows me too well.

Me: baby

Sipho: my love

He wasn't even touching me. Damn.

Niggah knows how to play his game well.

I pecked his lips three times then ran my fingers through his soft hair. He chuckled

Sipho: Tumisani....

I shut him up by pressing my lips onto his. I kissed him and he kissed me back, passionately. One point for me. I ran my hands through his denim shirt and slowly unbuttoned it, I left his lips and

started planting sweet wet kisses down his chest. I was already wet. He was now holding my waist. Two points for me. I'm having so much fun dominating him. I fully unbuttoned his shirt and took a good look of his sexy abs. I almost melted just looking at him, I bit my lower lip. I can't believe all this is mine. I kissed his chest and licked him hungrily. He cupped my neck and pulled my lips to his, kissing me with so much love and affection. Our lips felt so good together. He pulled me deeper into his body and our chests met, my nipples were hard as fuck and it felt like it was going to rip through this crop top. Without leaving

his lips, I pulled the crop top above my head since he wasn't going to do it for me , I kissed his lips, neck, chest and he ripped my bra off my body and threw it to the floor. This is gonna be a good night. He sucked my left breast hard and sweetly. I moaned softly like a horny dog. He sucked it so good that I held his head hard against my breast, I could already feel his erected dick poking my entrance but I had my jeans still on. He left my breast and sucked my neck I moaned sweetly. He held me tightly against him as our lips met again, I indulged into the deep kiss and he squeezed my ass, I softly moaned in his moan. I felt my

hands unzipping his jeans and his hands unzipping mine as well. My hands left his jeans and started roaming around his well built strong body. I swear the way I was so wet it already made his pants wet as well. I wanted him in me so badly. All of a sudden he stood up with me still in his arms my legs wrapped around his waist and his jeans was almost falling off. He sucked my lips and I sucked his soft pink lips. He walked to the room and pulled my jeans and panty off with me still in his arms. After stripping me naked, he threw me onto the bed and he stood there with those small red horny eyes. I blushed.

Damn, he looks so sexy. If he dares to leave me hanging right now, I'll never forgive him. He looks at me with a corny smile on his face, he's making me even more hungrier.

Sipho: let's do something different.

He said in a now commanding voice. He sounded different yet sexy. He sounded like some kind of sex genius or something. But I wanted him in me already. Can he make quick and fuxk me already.

Me: I'll do anything for you baby....(I found myself moaning that out)

My hand was holding my boob hard and

I liked the pleasure, I felt myself becoming different in some kind of way yet sexy. What is Siphos doing to me. He stood there groaning and watching my reaction.

siphos: I'm gonna tie you up to the corners of the bed and spank your ass red. I moaned as my hand came into contact with my nunu. It felt like I was burning. Is this even normal?

Siphos: Then I'm gonna dominate you and make you understand that I own that pussy. He said in a totally different voice. But I found myself liking his dominating voice. He walked over to the cardboard and came back with a rope.

He put it on my side and attached my hungry lips with a kiss, a kiss I found myself desiring. He broke the kiss and tied my hands up. What on earth? After tying my hands up he goes down and ties up my feet as well. I find myself allowing him to control me. I don't have any energy to object his actions. He comes back up to my lips and kisses me deeply, I lose myself in the kiss and allow him to dominate me. The feeling is new but I love it, I feel the need to be confident, I don't have any fear because I trust that he won't hurt me.

He breaks the kiss and goes down to my legs and separate them slowly. He

kisses my nunu and lick it with so much audacity. I feel him pushing his tongue in my nunu and I moan out loud grabbing the sheets. He takes me on a trip to muff town and eats my cookie with pleasure. The whole room is filled my moans and I love the way my legs start shaking. After cumming almost three times, he pulls out his tongue and I want him to so badly fuck me right now. The way am horny right now is like a pregnant woman. He plants kisses all over my body before he turns me around and takes me by surprise when his hands lands hard on my ass. I scream and it comes out as a moan. I feel my

ass burning and I like the way it feels. He comes again hard on my ass and this time it is more painful. My ass feel like it is on fire and I want him to stop but I also want him to continue. He spans me ten times and by the time he's done there's tears on my cheeks, my ass is burning but the pleasure keeps hitting me more than the pain. How is that possible?

Sipho: you're so beautiful Tumisani (he groans)

I shut my eyes as his tongue comes into contact with my ass. He licks it and kisses it. I'm sure it's red, I'm colored so you can imagine how my butt looks

right now. After licking my burning but he forces me to look at him.

Sipho: you're mine Phakade, mine!!

Me: yes baby!! (I moaned)

I shut my mouth after realising what had just come out of it.

Sipho goes to my leg again and kiss my thighs, he looks so sexy right now, I need him. I can't do anything as my hands are tied up, it feels like a punishment but if I'm gonna get punished like this daily then I wouldn't mind. The feeling is pleasurable. He pulls a condom from the cardboard and fully undresses himself now, His touch

makes me desire jimi so much, I feel myself giving in to him. He puts on the condom and turns me around and pulls my ass to him and gets me on my knees with my chest on the bed and my ass giving him a full display of how huge it is. He groans and almost chokes on his own breath, I almost giggle but smile instead. He kisses my huge boss ass and groans, I moan with my face on the bed as well as my chest, my breasts are painfully hard. He puts a finger in my nunu and feels how soaking wet I've become. I moan and curse under my breath when he inserts his full length into me, my walls expand and hug his

thick dick. I not only scream but swear. It feels so good I want him to stay like that. He thrusts in and out groaning like a hungry wolf. He thrusts faster and faster every minute that passes. I want to touch him and kiss him but I love the position tho.

Sipho: awwwa Tumisani!!!!

He said groaning as he pushed himself into my tight pussy. Our skin clap onto each other as he thrusts in, my vagina walls hug his penis so good, I find myself feeling like I'm in heaven. Our breathing becomes heavy and my legs are shaking like crazy. I force myself not to cum and so does he, I want this to

last longer. Our moans are like music to my ears.

Me: I can't hold on any longer baby!!!! (I screamed and moan loudly) Daddy!!!

Sipho: two more minutes baby!!! (he groaned)

He pounded in and out my pussy and the pleasure was on another level. I'm boss ass bitch. I love this. Sex is so good. If they told me sooner I would've broken my virgin a very long time ago. Now I know why Lindiwe loves the dick. Sipho sure knows how to work his way in my hole.

After pounding me for a whole hour and

a half on time, we both climax and hit the spot. I lie flat on my stomach trying to catch my breath, he lies next to me with a huge smile on his face. I smile back as we both breath on each others faces. He licks my lips and I giggle, I move closer to him and lick his lips as well. This is my soul mate. We gonna die together if his dick is this good. After breathing heavily, he unties me and pulls me onto his chest smiling. My legs are still shaking and my nunu is tingling. I slowly close my eyes as he pecks my lips.

Me: baby I'm a boss ass bitch (I moaned)

My eyes slowly shut as my eyes yearn to sleep, he puts his hand on my ass and he's shaking.

" baby the condom broke"

That's the last thing I heard before I fell asleep into a very deep deep slumber.

[06/20, 05:19] Snr: INSERT 89

- .
- .
- .
- .

Sipho's POV

I look over on my side and she's

peacefully sleeping with her head on my arm and her one hand wrapped around my waist. She's so perfect and so beautiful. I kiss her forehead and carefully untangle her hand from my waist trying not to wake up. I carefully slip out of bed and look for my boxers.

Last night was amazing. Best night of my life. I've never seen her so submitting and all crazy and horny but she looks cute when she's tied up naked. I'm sure she's exhausted from all our naughty doings and so am I but I can handle it. I won't wake her up to go to work because she's tired and I'm sure she won't have strength for work. I made

sure I did a number on her.

But what I didn't expect was for the condom to break. I didn't realize the condom broke when we were still enjoying the moment, I only found out when I felt my sperm entering her and touching her skin. Tho I loved the feeling but I was worried. She didn't see that the condom broke because she was too lost in the moment. I don't know if she heard what I said last night because she fell asleep when I told her the condom broke. I don't want her to remember that part because I want her to carry a mini me. I want her to fall pregnant for me. I'm ready to spend the rest of my life

with her and I'm even thinking of proposing but I'm scared that she might tell me that she's not ready. All I want is for us to live happily ever after, I love seeing her happy and her happiness is my happiness.

I really can't wait to make her pregnant that's why I'm thinking of not telling her that the condom broke. I love this woman with my life and I know she'll be upset when she finds out that I knew the condom broke but at the end she'll be happy. I mean, she's always wanted her own kids and the way she loves children is unbelievable. She's so good with kids and I swear to God she'll be the best

mother on this universe. Damn. I can't wait to be a father. She can be upset with me all she wants after finding out about the condom but I know she'll be happy. I mean, what are we gonna lose? We're financially stable, we have a home, well separate houses but I already bought two houses in Cape Town for us to live in once we get married so there won't be in problem is us having a baby. Dumisani can kill me later but he'll be happy when he see's his niece or nephew. He probably thinks Tumisani is still a virgin but we'll follow the consequences later. For now, it's me and her. Alone. No one to disturb us.

She's my woman. I'm crazy for her and I love her more than my own life.

" why did you leave me all alone in bed"

I turned around only to find my royal beauty, in my shirt, barefooted. She's looks so beautiful.

Me: I didn't wanna wake you up, you looked so peaceful.

I said kissing her cheek and wrapping my one arm around her waist while the other had a coffee cup in it. We were in the kitchen.

Tumisani: The bed turned cold right after you left so I woke up immediately.

She said folding herself into my chest, I

smiled and held her tightly.

Me: you wanna go back to bed? (I said kissing her neck)

Tumisani: I'm starving like hell.

Me: I know you are (she giggled) you go back to bed and I'll make breakfast.

Tumisani: nope I wanna help you.

Me: nope, I insist, and please no work today. Today is us alone, OK?

Tumisani: but babe I just need to call the hotel and ask if everything is OK. There was a bit of a difficulty yesterday and there was a function last night so I have to call them .

Me: OK go call them as I make breakfast.

I said kissing her lips, smiling. She pulled out of the hug and kissed my cheek then started walking away.

Tumisani: ohh babe....

She said stopping at the door of the kitchen and turned around...

Tumisani: you said something last night but I think I dosed off, what was it??

She said looking at me. Should I tell her? Or not? I debated with myself holding onto the cup hard. Should I tell her? Or not?

Me: no babe it was nothing, I was just saying goodnight.

I flashed a smile at her and she smiled back.

Tumisani: oh OK, see yah.

She left and I sighed deeply. God what am I gonna do? I don't want her to be upset with me or want to abort the baby. What if she doesn't wanna be pregnant yet?? But I her to carry my first child and be the mother of my kids already.

Everything feels like it's going slowly. I hope she forgives me when she finds out that she's pregnant. I'm not being selfish, or trying to trap her or something, my love for her is ever growing and I can't wait to make her fully mine. I just can't wait.

.

Tumisani's POV

Last night was the best experience of my life. My body is aching and I'm so tired. I just wanna sleep all day. It feels like Sipho has put a sleeping spell on me. I can't feel my legs but I managed to get out of bed because I felt really cold when I found out he wasn't in bed. Tired is actually not the word to explain how I feel right now. I'm exhausted. My pussy keeps tingling every time I think about last night. Indeed it was amazing. My body just craves his touch, I just want him to touch me forever. I want him to caress my body forever and repeat what

we did last night. Not even the night I broke my virginity was that good. OK what am I saying, the night I lost my virginity was the best night of my life, but this one just wins the cup.

I made a few calls and checked if everything in the hotel and the company's in CT were fine and I was assured they were perfectly fine. I brushed my teeth and washed my face then called Dumisani. I missed my brother, father and everything.

Me: Daddy (I said smiling)

Dumisani: daughter, how are you princess?

Me: I'm great dad and you?

Dumisani: (chuckled) I feel so old when you call me that but the feeling is great tho, I'm good babe. I miss you so much.

Me: I miss you more bro yoh, how's my nephew and sister in law

Dumisani: Sihle is great, your sister in law is giving me weird looks right now babe.

He chuckled and I giggled.

Me: pass her the phone.

I heard him telling her that it was me in the background and Sihle was shouting my name and Busi telling him to let go of my phone. I laughed.

Busi: Tumisani hey!!

Me: Hi love, how are you?

Busi: I'm great and yourself? How's work?
when are you coming back? This child
can't stop talking about you. Gosh.

Me: lol, I'm great and I'll be back soon to
take my nephew with me I miss him so
much. Work is fine.

Busi: that's good, I'm glad to hear that.

Me: ok it was nice talking with you, now
please give my baby the phone.

Busi: OK bye, here Sihle, eat the phone
up now.

She sighed and I laughed even harder.

Sihle: Geeez mama don't be jelly, Hello my wife!!!!!! (he screamed into the phone)

Me: hello baby, how you doing!? (I said smiling)

Sihle: I'm fine thank you my wife, but I miss you so much babe.

Me: I miss you more my husband. I can't wait to come back home and shower you with kisses

Sihle: I can't wait either (he giggled)

" Sihle give back my phone I gotta go"

Dumisani said in the background.

Sihle: five more minutes Father

He said stubbornly. Gosh this child is

too cute.

" Sihle I don't have all day, give back my phone I'm gonna be late. "

Sihle: Geez dad come on, can't a man talk to his woman in peace.

I laughed out loud. This is a interesting conversation. Lol.

Me: babe give daddy back the phone, I'll call you later. (I said into the phone)

Sihle: OK aunty, bye!!

Me: bye baby!! (I shouted back)

A few seconds later I heard ruffling sounds.

Dumisani: what spell have you used on

my son, Tumisani (he chuckled)

Me: love spell (I giggled)

Dumisani: I guess your spell worked,
(chuckled) I'll call you later babe, let me
get to work now.

Me: OK bro, bye!

Dumisani: bye princess, I love you so
much.

Me: I love you more.

I smiled after hanging up the call. My
little Fam.

I put my phone down and walked out the
room. I found Siphos setting the table. It
smelled lovely. I wrapped my arms

around him from behind and he looked over his shoulder with a beautiful smile on his face.

Sipho: I was about to come call you.

Me: I'm here now

We sat down and he served breakfast. Lovely combination of well done eggs, bacon, a slice of tomatoe, toast and some chips. Just what I needed to start my day. I smiled looking at this handsome God sent man of mine.

Me: thanks babe, I love you so much.

I said pecking his lips.

Sipho: I love you more my love.

Me: love you most.

This is my new life. Brand new.

Hopefully no more drama.

LIKE, COMMENT AND SHARE

[06/20, 05:19] Snr: INSERT 90

.

.

.

TWO WEEKS LATER

Tumisani's POV

It's finally the day we smell the air of Cape Town. I missed my house and my personal bed. I missed my couch and I

missed my kitchen. I can't wait to jump into my bathtub and just enjoy the feeling of the warm water in the bath. Mmmmm. Thinking about it gives me goosebumps.

Work hasn't been easy at the hotel but I've managed to save up to 3 million to return the company money that was stolen. I had to replace it in case my hotel had a crisis or was in debt. I couldn't take chances because this is my inheritance and the law can take it away if it's not run properly. I managed to make my team more trustworthy because I couldn't rely on anyone anymore, I had trust issues when it

came to the hotel. I was scared there would be more fraud when I left. I also put 24hr protection over the building and made sure Katy contacts me every time there is a problem. Now that all that is out of the way, I can now return to my own home. Yoh guys the way I missed driving my own car, aaaiihh I can't wait.

Sipho has been acting weirdly these days and it worries me a lot. He sometimes just loses focus or just stares into space And sometimes I would catch him just looking at me weirdly, it's creepy. I fear that he's getting back into his old self again and I'm scared he might hurt. Even tho I trust

him and know he wouldn't do that but I can't help but feel insecure and doubtful. I've decided that I'm taking him to therapy full time because I'm scared. His other side makes my skin crawl so just to prevent all that I'm taking him to therapy every single day. I want him to heal and be a better person physically and mentally. I love him too much to see him suffering.

The plan lands and I'm too excited that I literally just sprang out of the plane and Siphos calls out my name laughing.

As soon as the air hits my nostrils, a huge smile breaks from my lips. I inhale the oxygen and open my hands out in

the air.

Me: Home sweet home!!!

I shouted. You might be wondering if I was driving a private jet? Nope. people are looking at me as if I'm crazy right now. I just can't help that I'm so happy. I've gotten so used to living in Cape Town that leaving this place would make me crazy.

" babe, get up. You're embarrassing yourself"

He said laughing. I was on the ground, kissing the floor. Yeah, that's how much I missed this place.

I get up and everyone is looking at me

like some psycho woman who just came out of jail. I smiled shyly and hit Sipho playfully because he kept laughing at me like I'm crazy.

Sipho: you really missed it here hey...

Me: like crazy, I can't wait to get home, aaaahh baby I can't wait to feel the fabric of my bed...

I smiled as we went through the formalities. I just wanna go home and enjoy my own company. I'm kicking Sipho out just for today. I wanna be alone and enjoy my house all to myself. Without him intoxicating my privacy.

Sipho: baby you do know that your

brother and friend are outside right?

I looked at him confused. What!!?? Noo!!

Me: what? why are they here? why did you tell them that we landing today?

I said as he rolled our luggage towards the exit of the airport.

Sipho: babe, come on didn't you miss them?

Me: I did but Sipho, I wanna rest, I wanted to surprise them tomorrow.

I said looking outside as we stepped out of the airport. I spotted Sihle waving his hands up in the air as Dumisani carried him and Busi holding his hand. Lindiwe had Thando in her arms and she was

giggling.

Oh my gosh.

Now Dumisani will definitely know I had sex with Siphos and broke my virginity before marriage. I mean, I was planning on telling him myself. I didn't want him to find out like this. Lord have mercy, he's gonna kill me. I looked at Siphos and he sensed that I was worried. He smiled and took my hand.

Siphos: I'm prepared for that punch.

He whispered into my ear and I was worried immediately. I breathed in and out till we got to where they were and Thando and Sihle both came jumping

into my arms.

Me: my babies!!!

I said kissing both their foreheads and smiling at the both of them.

Sihle: wife, you're finally back now we can have so much fun!!

Me: yep of course

Dumisani: ohk enough now, now can I get my sister back please.

I stood up and looked at him shyly. He pulled me into his arms and hugged me tightly then kissed my forehead.

Dumisani: I missed you so much.....(he paused and looked at me

weirdly)

Dear lord swallow me now!! I swallowed hard and I was shaking already.

Dumisani: Tumsa you're glowing (he held my cheeks) your skin is lighter than ever, what lotion are you using?

He said stepping back and looking at me from top to bottom.

Busi: babe stop it, hi love

She said hugging me, I smiled faintly and hugged her back.

Lindiwe: chommie!! (she squealed and hugged me too) you're in deep shit! (she whispered into my ear)

I pinched her and gave her a warning look. Dumisani was just looking at me as if he was analysing me, I almost peed myself right there. God. He looked at me then Sipho then back at me and stepped forward, holding my cheeks.

Busi: babe please, not right now....

Next thing we see is a punch landing on Sipho's face. I gasped and covered my mouth with my hand. Sipho stumbles back and another punch lands on his face and his nose starts bleeding. I scream and close my eyes, shaking.

Busi: Dumisani Phakade!!!

She roared and pulled him back.

Dumisani: That's for fucking my sister.

He said at Siphos who was now holding his bleeding nose. He walks away and takes Sihle with him and gets into his car.

Busi: don't worry, I'll talk to him. Lindiwe please take them home. I'm so sorry about this, he's just upset. Are you OK?

She asks Siphos and I just stand there, tears rolling down my cheeks. I'm so frightened right now. I've never seen him so angry.

Siphos: I'm fine. I deserved that. babe....

Me: Lindiwe where's the car?

I said not looking at anyone. I wiped my

tears and just stood there.

Lindiwe: this way. come princess.

She took Thando's hand and we started walking towards a black BMW with Siphso following us, dragging the bags that I didn't even bother to look at. I saw how Dumisani drove away with Busi shouting at him in the car and that poor child was just silently sitting there watching how Busi scolded Dumisani. He looked really pissed. I didn't expect it to go like this. I was planning on telling him personally. I knew if I didn't talk to him myself then he would react like this. I'm just scared of him right now. I know he wanted me to lose my virginity when I

get married but come on, Sipho is a man and he has needs too, Dumisani knows that. I don't regret losing my virginity and I never will. I love Sipho and I always will. I know Dumisani hasn't fully accepted it but still, he'll be strong.

I looked over at Sipho and he was holding toilet paper on his nose. I just wanted to cry seeing him like that. Gosh. I shut my eyes and just breathed.

Sipho: baby.....

I held my hand up to stop him and he just kept quiet. I don't wanna hear anything right now. I just need to breathe.

My brother is angry with me and I know

it'll take quite long for him to get through this. He's more stubborn than I am.

LIKE, SHARE AND COMMENT

Admin loves y'all

[06/20, 05:19] Snr: INSERT 91

-
-
-
-
-

Dumisani's POV

I'm so pissed right now. I'm more pissed

than the word pissed.

I never thought Tumisani would disobey me like that, I never expected that she would lose her virginity at such a young age.

I mean come on people Tumisani is just 21 well she's hardly 21 because she just turned 21. She's too young to be having sex and know how the dick tastes.

Aaagh the thought of her even having sex sickens me and makes my blood boil. If it were for me, she wouldn't even be allowed to date till she's 25. Gogo told me to protect her and not let anything happen to her and that's what I'm tryna do but seems like Tumisani

keeps making it even harder for me. I don't get why she had to break her virginity now, I specifically told her that she'll only have sex on her wedding night but tumisani is so damn stubborn.

I angry at her and I'm even angrier that Siphos was a jerk and couldn't keep his pants closed. I told him not to even try that shit with my sister but he never listened to me and I don't even regret punching him. If he loved her so much as he claimed, he wouldn't have slept with her after what I told him. I gave him a long lecture on how to know keep his pants closed when he's with my sister but the niggah doesn't have ears.

Tumisani is my child and I'm not her brother anymore but her father and if anything happens to her, it'll be my responsibility. I don't care if she thinks she's a grown ass woman just because she has an ass and boobs, she's still a baby to me.

I understand she's beautiful and all and Sipho couldn't keep his hands off her big ass and beautiful body but fuck that, that's no excuse for what he did.

Sleeping with my sister was not supposed to be an option for him. I don't like the idea of her having sex at age 21.

Busi: Dumisani what the hell was that!!?

She yelled when we got into the house and I sent Sihle to his room. I walked to the kitchen and poured myself a glass of wine.

Me: Busiswe not right now.

I said sternly and gulped down the glass on wine.

Busi: Dumisani you have to call that girl and apologize for your behavior. That was unnecessary back there

Me: I'm not calling anyone, she disobeyed me and he deserved it.

Busi: Babe what you did was wrong, Tumisani is all grown up, she's allowed to do as she pleased. Dumisani, come

on, Siphos is a man and he has needs too. They've been together for so long and he was able to wait for her for that long.

Me: he should've waited longer, he shouldn't kept his dick in his pants til they get married.

I said irritated. She stood in front of me and I dared not look into those manipulating eyes of hers.

Busi: look at me

She says tilting my head to face her.

Me: Busi, that child was wrong and she should be punished.

Busi: no. You're not punishing anyone Dumisani. You're gonna call that girl and

talk to her, she's your sister for crying out loud. Talk to her and let her explain.

Me: explain what Babe? there is nothing to explain. I'm not allowing her to see him for the next four months.

Busi: Dumisani if you dare do that.....(paused) then I swear you're not touching me for the next four months too. Then we'll see how that works out.

Me: what!!!?? you're kidding right?

Busi: does it look like I'm kidding? (she says looking at me sternly)

Me: so you're choosing there wrong doings over me?

Busi: yes because I don't see anything

wrong in what they did.

Me: baby Tumisani had sex before marriage, don't you get it?

Busi: and you also fucked me before marrying me and in fact you still fucking me but still haven't married me yet.

Me: babe come on, we're adults.

Busi: they're adults too, they know how to make decisions as well. Trust her Dumisani please. Tumisani is really smart, she knows what she wants in life. And plus what is there to lose when she's stinking rich? If she was still in University then it would've been different but she's controlling the three largest

companies in the whole of Africa, what more do you expect? Sipho is a great guy babe, he loves her and he wouldn't want to hurt her, and plus (she rolls her eyes) he's scared of you. What you did was wrong, if that boy was bar for her then he would've disrespected you by punching you back but because he respects you, he let you hit him. Come on Dumsa don't punish them please. And mark my words Phakade, I'm serious about that four months no love making thing.

She says wrapping her arms around me. I sighed deeply.

Me: I hate it when you make so much

sense babe.

I said cupping her neck and she smiled

Me: I'm just upset that this happened too soon, I really wasn't expecting it. All I wanna do right now is kick that boy's ass. I feel disrespected when I look at my sister.

Busi: babe don't do that to yourself.

Tumisani respects you too much and I'm sure she was planning on telling you herself. I don't think she expected us to be at the airport. Let her be, your princess has grown.

She said smiling and resting her head on my chest.

Me: you're too smart Busi, gosh. (she giggle and I chuckled) so babe....

Busi: hmmm

Me: you're not serious about that four month thing right? (I said unsure and hoping for her to change her mind)

Busi: I'll have to think about that, i mean it's not such a bad idea.

She said giggling.

Me: no, no you're crazy, I wouldn't be able to survive.

Busi: you'll be strong. Siphos survived it for three years Now so stop acting like a baby. Give them a break Dumsa please, I beg of you.

I sighed and looked at her.

Me: fine but I'm not calling her till I'm ready. I feel like she's been exposed or something. Aaagh.

Busi: lol you'll get used to it.

Maybe she's right. Busi's always right. I hate it when she's always right. Gosh.

I'll talk to Tumisani when I feel like I'm ready to hear her naughty voice. Right now I'll just give her some space. As much as I want to punish her, I don't want to punish myself either. I know when Busi says some thing, it has to be just that. I'm upset but I also get Siphos point. Agh. Well I ever accept that my

princess has grown into a young lady? I just feel like she's still that little 17 year old that I used to carry to bed and play with. She'll always be my little baby and Gogo's Princess.

Busi: you're the best brother a girl can ever ask for. Tumisani is lucky to have you babe. You care for her so much and love her more than anything. She's really lucky.

She says smiling.

Me: and I'm lucky as well, she's the best sister in the world.

Busi: (smiling) I know she is, now please can you kiss me. I missed your

lips.

I chuckled and pressed my lips onto hers. I wrapped my arms around her waist and drew her closer to me. She deepened the kiss and her hands travel all over my body. I squeezed her round ass and she moaned. I can't wait to wife this woman.

She's just too amazing. I love her so much.

.

NEXT DAY

Tumisani's POV

I open my eyes to the raging sun and hold onto my soft covers tightly. The

warmth of the bed is just amazing. I missed my bed so fucking much.

I smiled and rolled around the bed, messing it up a bit. The fabric feels great on my body.

Sipho went home after Lindiwe dropped us off last night, he said he wanted to give me some space.

I was glad he left because I needed my own space right now. I just need to rest and chill. I need my own company for a change. I missed being all by myself with no drama.

I can't get the fact that Dumisani is mad at me out of my mind. I don't like it when

he's upset with me. It stresses me out. He has a right to be upset tho, I disobeyed him but what was he expecting? I wasn't gonna stay a virgin all my life after all.

I peeled off the covers and get into my slippers. Before I can enter the bathroom, I hear my phone beep as a text has been sent. I walk back to my dressing table and pick up my phone. I'm in Siphos shirt that I've stolen and slippers. I just loved this shirt too much. Although it's big on me but I don't care. Its a short sleeve black and red Gucci top. It stops just under my ass and I love how it feels so good on me.

* Message from Siphos*

Good morning my love.

I hope you're doing well. I'm worried about you. I miss you already. Babe please don't worry about yesterday, I'll talk to Dumisani. I deserved that punch and I don't regret it. Don't be upset my love.

I love you. Have a beautiful day.

* **

I smiled and sat down on the edge of the bed. My poor cupcake. I'm sure he's stressing himself about me already.

I reply to his message by telling him to stop worrying and assuring him that I'm

fine and he should have a great day as well and of course I told him I loved him more.

I hopped into the shower and just relaxed my muscles a bit as the warm water made love to my skin. After taking a shower I put on a pair of bum shorts and a large basketball vest. Yeah it's Siphos vest. OK, I think I've kinda stole lot's of his clothes. But he won't find out, when he comes here I'll just tell him he forget it when he came to sleep over. Simple. I love him so much.

I put on my slippers and loosen my curls then walk downstairs. I go to the kitchen and just stand there looking at my

kitchen. I don't know what to eat. i just open the fridge and shut it back closed. I looked in the cardboard and just look at the things in it and shut it back closed. Do I even have appetite to eat? I don't wanna eat anything and that is so weird. I walk back to the lounge and switch on the TV. I channel through the channels and stop at Trace Africa. I up the volume and let the music take over the house. I find myself moving to the beat and my body feeling relaxed. I love my own company.

I was deep in the music that I didn't hear the knock on the door until the person started banging my damn door. I quickly

stood up and walked to the door irritated.
Who could that be??

I opened the door and find Lindiwe standing there with a bunch of red roses and purple ones and a box of chocolates and she's busy reading the card inside the roses.

Me: Lindiwe!!? You tryna break my door down or something?

I said opening the door and letting her in.

Lindiwe: where are your ears woman? I saw the delivery guy knocking with this stuff so I offered to sign it in and told him to go and where were You that you couldn't hear the loud knocking?

I grabbed my roses and chocolates. This girl is something else.

Me: hawu Lindiwe why are you reading my card, it's not yours.

Lindiwe: then next time open the door when the delivery guy knocks bitch, gosh and plus there's no name on the card.

Me: it's probably Sipho

Lindiwe: if it was him then he would've put his name on it, and plus he said he wanted to give you some space, why does he wanna see you?

Me: meaning....

I read the card and it said, " Hey, I miss

you. Go out to lunch with me....." and there was an address.

Me: this can't be Sipho, this is not even his handwriting.

I smelled the roses and it smelled lovely. I closed my eyes and inhaled the lovely smell. God, it was beautiful.

Me: who could this be?

I said opening my eyes and looking at Lindiwe who was already stuffing her face with the box of chocolates. Gosh.

Me: Lindiwe don't eat it what if they're poisoned or something?

I said grabbing the box out of her hands.

Lindiwe: then I would rather die eating delicious chocolate, aaahh Tumsa they're so good!!

She grabbed the box back and ran to the kitchen with it. I sat there wondering who this could be? Maybe I should ask Siphos, maybe he ordered it and asked someone to write this note because he was too busy. I dialed his number and it went straight to voicemail, I tried again and same thing happened. I dialed his number again and dololo. I sighed and looked at the beautiful rose. How did they know I love roses? Especially these ones?

Lindiwe: stop worrying about it babe, it's

probably just a friend who wants to have lunch with you. It can't be an enemy Tumsa, those times are over. .

Me: why are you so sure?

Lindiwe: well because it's been quite long since all those dramatic stuff happened so it can't be an enemy.

Me: you're right. I need to chill.

I rest back on the couch and looked at her. She now had a bottle of wine in her hand and the chocolate box. I laughed and threw a pillow at her.

Lindiwe: aaah Tumisani if this bottle breaks I'll cry, literally, because this is the last bottle of wine you have left.

Me: bitxh what are you doing in my house again? (I said laughing)

Lindiwe: Brian and Thando went out for daddy and daughter shopping and didn't want me to come along. He even kicked me out of the car when I insisted, aahh can you imagine?

I laughed as she said that annoyed. I just remembered her birthday is next week. Maybe that's why they didn't want her to tag along. They're probably planning a surprise for her.

Me: so you decided to come to my house and eat all my food?

I said leaning forward and drinking from

her wine glass.

It went down my throat and all of a sudden my mouth went sour. Agh. That never happens. Now I don't like wine anymore.

Lindiwe: why do you look like you ate a sour lemon?

Me: aaahhg (I shook my head) it tastes horrible.

Lindiwe: mxm whatever, maybe your wine is expired. But it tastes fine to me.

Me: everything tastes fine to you, especially dick.

Lindiwe: ncooh you know me too well, aaah speaking about dick, girl!!! you're

glowing.... damn Sipho sure knows his work hey!!

Me: shut up Lindiwe, Dumisani is pissed at me yoh.

Lindiwe: don't worry chomma, he'll come around babe. He's just upset. That's all.

Me: let's hope so, cuz I really miss my bro.

Lindiwe: geez grow up babe, you've been kissing and hugging him since you were a baby, live a little, don't you get bored of him.

Me: never. Now let me go get ready for this, " date" of mine with the mystery whoever. I bringing my gun just in case.

Lindiwe: Gosh tumsa your life sometimes.....But why would you wanna be prepared when Sipho has people watching you 24/7?

Me: but still, I have to be careful. In case Sipho's men aren't watching me at that time so I have to have my gun just in case I have to kill something.

Lindiwe: Gosh, what did you do to my bestfriend?

I giggled and got up.

Me: I'm right here, Lindiwe stop stuffing my chocolate please and don't eat my whole fridge please.

I said running up the stairs.

Lindiwe: I'll try.

She laughed out loud and I chuckled.

This friend of mine.

I don't even know why I'm going to this lunch thing but I don't think it's anything dangerous. I'm sure it's just someone I know.

LIKE COMMENT AND SHARE

[06/20, 05:19] Snr: CONTINUATION

.

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV

I park outside the restaurant and look at myself through the rearview mirror. I look gorgeous for someone who is going on a blind date. My hair looks perfect as it falls down onto my shoulders, I have light make up on and I just look too good. I'm wearing a white blouse tucked into my knee length pencil skirt with black hills. I grab my clutch bag and make sure I locked all the car doors.

I make my way to the entrance of the

fancy restaurant with an awkward name.

" Stiletto's " I don't even know why I'm doing this but it feels right and safe.

I get into the restaurant and scan around for any familiar faces and unfortunately I don't recognize anyone in this place. I stand there like a lost puppy until I see a young lady who is dressed like the waitress walking towards me.

" hello madam you must be miss Phakade, right?"

She says politely.

Me: hi, yeah that's me.

I say with a faint smile, confused.

Waitress: OK madam please follow me.

She starts walking away and I follow behind her. We walk past the kitchen, and all the way to the office door that has, " boss" clearly labeled on it. She knocks and the person I side tells her to come in and she tells me to follow her.

The office is a beautiful mixture of red velvet walls, white leather couches. A big round desk with a black leather chair with someone seated on it but they have their back turned to us.

" you may leave, Rea"

He says in that sexy commanding voice. I smile just as I recognized that voice that demands attention. That voice that

intimidates me And that voice that sends shivers down my spine.

Jack: I thought you wouldn't come.

He said standing up from his chair and walking towards me with a huge smile plastered on his little handsome face.

Me: I wasn't sure who missed me so much to send me flowers and chocolates.

I smiled as he pulled me into a tight warm hug.

Jack: I missed your company, it's so boring in this city when you have no friends.

Me: I know right

Jack: says the lady with so many friends.

Me: if calling my enemies friends is what you mean then you got that right.

I say making myself comfortable on his beautiful leather couches. He pours us some juice and plopped down next to me. He takes a sip of his juice and give me all his attention.

Jack: how was your trip? I'm so glad you're back, I missed you like crazy

He said becoming this bubbly person that I've gotten used to whenever we're alone. I've learned that Jack is a very nice guy. He's a perfect gentleman and has both a shy and bubbly personality

as well as bossy and all the crazy things about him. I like that he's open towards me and he has learnt to know his limits towards me. I like that he's accepted the fact that I'll never be his. He accepts that I'm some else's treasure. He offered to be friends but we've gotten more close than friends over the few weeks with known each other. He's an amazing character and fun to be with.

Me: My trip was hectic but great. I found out one of my employees betrayed me and stole 2,5 million from me . Yeah, my trip was cool.

I say smiling and drinking my juice.

Jack: wow that's crazy, you arrested them right?

Me: nah, it's just money. Money will always be money. Sometimes it comes and goes I don't wanna let worldly things come between my life. I fired him tho.

Jack: you're too nice woman, I would've got him arrested.

Me: He probably has a family Jack. I missed you too.

I said smiling at him. He sighs and takes hold of my hand.

Jack: you look beautiful Tumisani. Why are you all dressed up? are you going

somewhere tonight?

Me: no!! you didn't tell me to wear casual and I didn't know what to wear, is it that bad?

Jack: nah you look great, like a queen.

He says letting go of my hand.

Me: aaah Thank you, so what shit have you gotten up to behind my back?

Jack: I wish I had gotten I to shit behind your back. I was bored, just work work and work. I thought you wouldn't come back, I missed your company. Yoh it was boring.

He said trying to imitate a South Africa accent. I laughed because he sounded

so funny, sometimes I forget he's American.

Me: when last did you go shopping?

I said looking at him. Not that he looked bad but he looked like he hasn't gone out in five long years. He's wearing a suit, he looks cute but just not quite the rich man himself.

Jack: I don't shop, I order my clothes online.

I looked at him shocked and put my glass down on the coffee table .

Me: Jack get up, we're going shopping. My gosh, when last did you have fun in your life? Why do you make yourself

work so much, don't you have time for yourself?

I said scolding him and pulling him up to stand on his feet.

Jack: Tumisani, I wanted us to have lunch not go shopping and plus shopping is boring

Me: not when you're going with me. Come on let's bounce.

Jack: what about lunch?

Me: we can grab some fast food somewhere, honey this is South Africa, here, you have fun, you drink, party and enjoy life. Forget about work, work and work. Let me show you what real fun in

South Africa is.

I grab my clutch bag as he walks over to his desk and takes his phone and wallet. I take his hand and drag him out his office.

This niggah needs some fire in his life. I know I said I wanted to rest today and enjoy my house but I just get help the excitement I have in me right now.

As soon as we get to my car, I kick off my shoes, ruffle my hair and ask him to stand outside and turn around not facing the car. I get in and darken my windows a bit so that he doesn't see me naked or something. I have extra clothes

in the back seat so I quickly put on the jeans and crop top and sandals then hop into the drivers seat and tell him to get in.

Me: ready for the craziest ride of your life?

Jack: Tumisani why are you doing?
where did you get these clothes?

Me: don't worry about that, we're gonna go have some fun alright? You need to chill out Jackie, mama got ya.

I said like a crazy woman and we both laughed.

Me: loosen up dude, take that blazer off and unbutton your shirt a bit, look cocky

dude, we need to be crazy in life sometimes. We only live once so enjoy it while it lasts honey.

He does as I say and he looks even more handsome then before, but he looks like a fuck boy now. I laugh and start the engine. I roar the engine a bit and he looks at me like I'm high on some drug or something, I giggle and speed up my car. I put on some music and higher the volume. I play, in my feelings by drake and I'm singing like some loose bitch, he's laughing at me until I increase the speed and he holds onto the car seat.

Jack: Tumisani are you tryna kill us!!!??

He shouts over the loud music and I'm just laughing. I don't know what's gotten into me but I'm in my feelings, the aim is to make Jack have fun. He's smiling and that's all that matters. It's time we forget about the past and just live life because we only live once.

Jack: Tumi do you love me? Are you riding? Cuz I never wanna leave from beside you, cuz I need yah and I want yah.....!!!!!!

He sang and I laughed out loud to his horrible voice. He is the worst singer I've ever heard in my whole entire life. Even Lindiwe is better than him. He playfully hits me, frowning.

Me: you're a terrible singer Mr Patkins!!!

I say laughing as the robot turned red.

Jack: liar!!! I sing better than you but woman slow down, you're driving too fast.

Me: it feels great, the adrenaline running in my veins right now feels lovely.

I say moving to the beat of the song and twerking on the car seat. aaahh How much I missed my car!!

Jack: (chuckled) you're gonna get us killed.

The robot turned green and I sped off towards Cavendish mall. He starts rapping to Kwesta song and I love the

way he's so happy and comfortable around me. I like this new him. I smile as he just enjoys his moment. This niggah sure makes a perfect fuck boy.

I park outside the mall, grab my phone and clutch bag once again and push my hair back a little.

Me: if I hear you complain even once, I'm punching you dude.

Jack: what if it gets Boring?

Me: boring? when you're with me? Oh naah never baby, now let's go buy the whole mall son.

He chuckles and we walk into the mall. I drag him to an ice cream shop first to

lighten up the mood and he's licking onto ice cream as if he has never tasted it before. I guess he never goes out. Always locked up in his office or house.

Me: we need to get you changed. You look like my daddy

I said licking my ice cream. From me compared to him, he looks like my dad taking his daughter out for ice cream.

Makes it worse because he's in a suit just without his blazer which would've made it even worse.

Jack: but I look fine like this Tumisani

Me: how old are you again? 55 maybe?

No honey you're in your late 20's so look

like it.

I took his hand and dragged him into total Sports. We looked around and tried new outfits for him until I spotted this sexy looking Redbat track pants with a Redbat black vest. I took it off the hook and looked at him with a smile on my face, he had his back turned to me because he was looking at shoes.

Jack: Tumsa check at this lovely pair of shoes

He said without looking at me.

Me: I think it would look great in these.

He turned around and shook his head.

Jack: how about we change the..

Me: no complaining niggah

I gave him the outfit and dragged him to the men's change room.

He came out looking all hot and sexy.

Lovely shit y'all.

Me: damn!!! Jackie you look the bomb!!
come on let's go pay, we still have a lot of shops to pop in.

We walked to the till and paid up then left the store and went to Gucci then all the expensive fancy stores. It was fun watching him complain at every little thing. It felt great to go shopping with a guy who is not my boyfriend, Jack is actually really fun. He's such a

gentleman carrying both mine and his bags.

People were looking at us smiling as if we were a couple. If only they knew. I had a great day and it's better than staying at home, tho I love my own company.

Jack: Tumisani my head is spinning, we've entered every single damn shop this mall has, don't you ever get tired.

He says breathing heavily as if he has just ran a marathon. I giggled.

Me: OK OK, Mr Patkins let's go have lunch.

Jack: you mean dinner because it's

around 18:45 .

Me: shit, really!?

I said searching for my phone in my clutch bag and I had 6 missed calls from Siphos, and 8 messages. 2 missed calls from Lindiwe and one from Busi as well. Shit. I totally lost track of time, my gosh.

Me: OK let's go to Spur then

I said as I dialled Siphos's number. He's probably pissed. His phone takes me to voicemail so I just leave it, I read his messages and he's just worried about me. I answer them and put my phone away.

We settle down into spur and order.

Me: did you have fun?

I said smiling from ear to ear.

Jack: lot's of fun. I didn't think this would be so much fun. I really enjoyed it
Tumisani, thank you.

Me: It's a pleasure, I'm just glad you had fun that's all.

He smiled and the waitress came walking with our food.

Waitress: here is your food sir (she says smiling up at Jack)

He looks up at her with a smile as well and she blushes.

Jack: thank you, uh I didn't quite catch

your name miss...

Waitress: uh well maybe I didn't throw it.

I almost burst out laughing. They better not be doing what I think they're about to do.

Jack: well I'm sorry, what's your name Miss?

Waitress: Kimberly but you can call me Kim

Jack: cool I'm Jack, nice to meet you.

He smiles as she put down our plates.

Waitress: sure, madam here is your food, enjoy.

She says with a warm smile. I return the

smile and Thank her.

Jack: uh Kim what time does your shift end?

Kim: that's confidential sir, we don't discuss that with our customers as it is none of their business.

She says tryna play hard to get. Like bitch the niggah wants you. This niggah is flirting right in front of me and this waitress is probably thinking I'm his girlfriend. Lol.

Jack: can I get your number than please, so I can call you and we can talk. I wanna get to know you.

H says like the perfect gentleman he is.

But his flirt game sucks. How can he flirt like that.?? Was Siphos this bad as well??

Wait Come to think of it, he never flirted with me. He simply just kidnapped me. How cute.

Kim: sir that is....

Me: we won't tell your boss Kim, dont worry I'm not his girlfriend.

I smile and she hesitates then looks at Jack and her eyes glow curiously. She's cute tho.

Kim: if my boss see's me giving you my number, I'll lose my job and I can't afford that.

Jack: act like you're telling me

something and I'll quickly write it down.

Kim: OK, 0745....

She says out her number and he types it down on his phone. I'm happy that he wants to move on. I feel great for him.

Jack: Thank you, I'll call you. Maybe we can talk and go out some time.

He says smiling brightly at her and she smiles back before walking away, blushing.

Jack: she's cute.

Me: very.

He chuckles and we enjoy our food in a light conversation, talking about how

much fun we had. Changing clothes and buying clothes. He says he wants to do it again some time and I agreed. I'm thinking of taking him to the club next time and maybe going to eat out at a fast food restaurant in Khayelitsa or maybe at a shisa nyama. He has to feel the South African vibe after all.

LIKE COMMENT AND SHARE

[06/20, 05:19] Snr: INSERT 92

- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV

I walk into my huge big house with the many bags in my hands and sigh as I walk up the stairs.

I'm beyond exhausted. I just wanna hop into the shower and let the water control my body. I place all the bags on my beautiful made bed with white sheets and I sit at the edge of the bed and start undressing myself. I'm too tired to stand. My phone rings as I'm about to enter the bathroom and I walk back to pick it up without checking the caller ID.

Me: hello? (I said tired)

Sipho: Tumisani where the hell have you

been all day? I tried calling you like a hundred times, I sent you messages, where the hell have you been!!?

He said pissed. I sigh and listen to his heavy breathing in the phone. I'm too tired for his tantrums right now.

Me: babe, I'm tired please not right now

I said throwing myself on the bed. My muscles aching. My skin dry and my body tired.

Sipho: what you mean not right now? you told me you were gonna be at home resting right? So I called you and you didn't pick up, what was that supposed to mean?!!!

Me: maybe if you weren't shouting then I would've explained to you!! (I said yelling now)

He's irritated me and I'm really really not in the mood.

Sipho: Tumisani where have you been!!!?
(he roared)

I hanged up the phone without answering him. He's just overreacting. Where could I have possibly been if not out. Mxm. I take a shower and quickly get out because I couldn't keep my feet up too long, I was drained like drained. I get back to my bed and push all the bags onto the floor. I pull the covers and

get under it. As soon as my head hit the pillow, I fall asleep immediately. Sleep slowly takes me in. Deeper and Deeper.

A few hours later I feel warm hands holding me. Touching my body and wet kisses trailing down my back. I groan but I'm still deep in my sleep. I start turning and mumbling things that I don't even know in my sleep until I felt his weight on top of me.

I quickly open my eyes and sigh in relieve when I see who it is.

Me: baby what are you doing here? You scared me.

Sipho: you could've just said you went

shopping Tumsa then I would've understood. I was worried about you.

He said kissing my forehead, still on top of me.

Me: you worry too much Siphoh, I'm really exhausted babe, what time is it?

I said holding his waist under the covers and he was naked as well.

Siphoh: something past mid night.

Me: what!!?? why are you here so late?

I said trying to scan his beautiful brown eyes, he rests his forehead on mine and pecks my nose, he sighs.

Siphoh: you're driving me crazy Phakade, I

couldn't sleep after I called you. I was worried, I tried to sleep but I couldn't and ended up driving here. You scared me babe, why did you sound so annoyed? am I annoying you?

I kiss his cheek feeling guilty. My poor cupcake. He worries too much.

Me: no babe, I was just tired from shopping and stuff the whole day. I'm sorry babe

Sipho: I'm sorry too for shouting at you. I just go crazy when you don't pick up my calls. Did you have fun?

Me: lots of fun, but I'm hungry now.

I said playing with his hair. He chuckles

and looks at me like I'm crazy.

Sipho: it's past mid night Tumsa..

Me: so? I'm hungry get off me, why are you naked too?

I said trying to untangle myself from his strong hold and he just pressed down onto me even more, He smiles down at me and I pinch him under the covers and he flinches.

Sipho: I didn't want to get you cold with my clothes so I decided to take it off so that my body warms you up.

Me: aaahh that's so cute now get off me

Sipho I'm really hungry please

I said whining and he slowly got off me

before baby kissing my lips. Mxm this guy Mara. Here I am starving and he's seducing me. We both walk down the stairs stark naked and he already has a boner. I giggle as I climbed onto his back and he's rubbing my ass from behind, getting me all wet and horny. But that can wait, I'm too hungry to think right now.

Sipho: what you wanna eat?

He said placing me on the kitchen counter and standing in between my legs, I try not to notice his strong boner down there. I'm wet too.

Me: I want a chicken sandwich with juice

please and also some sweet chilli lays
babe.

He looks at me like I'm crazy, I get
irritated and push his head back.

Me: what?

Sipho: does this look like some
restaurant to you or something?

Me: no but it sure looks like my house
babe

He frowns and kisses my breast and
starts working his way around my
kitchen . lol. That's my baby. He has
such a sexy ass, I must say. He's so built
and well structured, I've never really
looked at him like this before. He has a

well gymed ass that I'm so falling in love with right now, let's not talk about that sexy six pack that has my pussy tingling.
Hmmm

Sipho: Tumsa are you listening?

He said clicking his fingers in my face and bringing me back to planet earth. I looked at him confused and he chuckled.

Me: uh sorry babe, you were saying??

Sipho: where are you babe? why are you so deep in thoughts what are you thinking about tumsa?

He said wrapping his arms around me and kissing my forehead.

Me: nothing my love, I'm just

checking....I mean thinking

I blushed a bright pink. He chuckled and went back to the cardboard and giving me a packet of lays with a glass of apple juice, I smiled and started eating my chips.

Sipho: so have you called your brother yet?

He said while making my sandwich and eyeing me with his left eye. I sighed and crunched into the chips.

Me: I haven't called him yet babe, I feel like he's still pissed.

Sipho: you have to call him babe, he's your brother and he's just looking out for

you. I've never seen such a bond between siblings in my life like this Tumsa, you guys inspire me a lot, your brother would do anything for you. Don't let a dick break you guys up, even if that dick is that good

We both burst out laughing, I playfully hit him. This guy is something else. Can't he be serious without jokes.

Sipho: what? you love this dick babe

Me: shut up already, I'll go over to his house tomorrow afternoon.

Sipho: you mean today because it's already morning.

Me: yeah whatever, are you done?

Sipho: you treat me like your personal chef

Me: ouch baby that hurts, you know that's not true my love

I said feeling offended. Do I really make him feel like that. I feel bad.

Me: is that how you feel babe?

I said with tears nearing my eyes, why am I so emotional now. I don't understand myself right now.

Sipho: aah Tumsa you're a cry baby, I was only kidding my idiot.

He said lightly kissing my lips.

Me: are you sure? I don't want you

feeling like I'm a bad girlfriend babe, I'm sorry.

He sighed and stood in between my legs and kissed my twins.

Sipho: you're the best girlfriend a man could ever ask for and I love you so much, don't cry now please.

He placed his hand under my butt And started brushing it, I wrap my arms around his neck and my legs around his waist. I slowly kiss him and he responds making the kiss more passionate. He pulls me forward a little and before I knew it he thrust deep into me. I gasped loudly, digging my nails into his

skin, throwing my head back. He buries himself inside me and start moving in and out. Our bodies dancing to the same music, I search for his lips and kiss him to shut myself up. He's groaning in my mouth and I have my nails dug deep into his soft caramel skin. I fucks me in and out, up and down, north and south, east and west. From the kitchen counter to the fridge door to the stove, the sink and finally to the floor. The coldness of the tiles hit my bare back and sent shivers down my spine. My body is burning with pleasure and his groans aren't doing any justice to my ears, I love the way he calls out my name and label me his. I love the

way our skin slaps against each other every time he goes in me. I love the way he makes me forget about everything. I love the way he makes me love him even more. Our moans and groans are like music to my ears, filling the walls and rooms of my house.

Me: I love you so much Siphos!!!

I shout as a strong orgasm hits me and I let it all pour out.

Siphos: I love you more MaNdlovu.

He shortly cums after me and groans out loud and he pours himself into me, holding my waist tightly, I let go of his neck and let my arms fall to the ground.

We both breath heavily trying to catch our breaths. I collapses on top of me breathing heavily and pecks my lips but I capture his into a long kiss filled with so much love, warmth and care. He pulls out of me and I break the kiss.

Forgetting about the whole wide world.

That's how he makes me feel after a good love making session, I forget about the world and just think about us. I love this man with every fibre in my damn body. He has a way to making me fall for him each second I am with him. I don't know how he does it.

Sipho: let's get us cleaned up

He said with a smile on his face and he

picks me up bridal style, takes the chicken sandwich from the counter and carries me up the stairs. I fold myself into his bold chest and softly kiss it. I don't care about his mentally state, I just love him way too much.

.

I enter into his house with Sipho holding onto my hand, he smiles and kisses my hand. I have no choice but to do this. He is my brother and only family, I miss him like crazy. I just want him to carry me again like he used to do.

I didn't feel too well this morning but I had to force myself to wake up and do

this. I had a weird headache when I woke up this morning, my head was pounding and I was just really tired and lazy all of a sudden. But ask me how I managed to get up, I don't know.

Busi: I'm so glad you came guys.

She says hugging Sipho and I then leading us to their beautiful lounge.

There house is really beautiful and very white. Basically everything in this house is white, from the couches to the walls to the table and even curtains, I surprised they don't have a white TV.

How do they manage to keep these things white when they have a child and we all know what Sihle is capable of...

" Aunty!!!!!!!"

speaking of Sihle. He ran into my arms and I kissed his cheek. I missed my baby.

Busi: I'm gonna go call your brother so long, do you guys want anything to drink or eat?

Me: some wine is fine

I'm stubborn, I know. But I love wine.

Sipho: no we'll have some juice please.

Me: babe....

Sipho: Thank you Busi

He said looking at me with a stern look.

Busi exited the room and I looked at him

irritated.

Sipho: you're not just about to drink in your brothers house Tumisani, especially when he's mad at us.

I sigh and sit back on the couch with Sihle in my arms, he's busy telling me about how he had a play date with Thando and how much fun he had. He's so cute, makes me wanna have my own kids. But just not yet, it's too soon. I don't know if I'm ready.

Busi and Dumisani both walk in the room and they're holding hands and Busi is giving him some kind of look which looks like, " remember what we

talked about" kinda look.

Dumi: Tumisani, Siphon, Hello.

Siphon: Hi mahn (he says nervously)

Me: Hey bro

I say without making eye contact. I'm embarrassed. He sits down opposite us and Busi takes Sihle's hand and they disappear towards the kitchen. We sit in awkward silence. I'm sweating already and I don't wanna be the one who breaks the ice. There's too much tension in the room.

Siphon: OK this is too awkward. Let me just start talking (he said still nervous)
First of all Dumisani is wanna apologize.

I apologize for going against your will, I know I did wrong by sleeping with your sister after what you told me but I'm sorry I don't regret it. Man, you know I love your sister and you know I would do anything for her, but I'm a man just like you and I have needs as well. I know you trying to protect sister and I understand but she's a grown woman and she knows how to think for herself. I love her and I didn't force her to sleep with me, I was a natural cause and I understand if you're upset but just don't be upset with her because she respects you and loves you as much as you love her. But come on man she's 21 for crying out loud. I'm

personally sorry for breaking your trust but honestly you know I would never do anything to hurt Tumisani, you know it Dumisani. I've waited three long years for her And I would've waited even longer but I'm a man and I also have desires and needs.

I was now in tears. I don't know why but I was crying. I all of a sudden felt emotionally. I love the way he's defending me but he's also throwing himself into the fire by telling Dumisani that I'm a grown woman. Dumisani still thinks that I'm his little baby. Which is cute but come on, I'm grown up already. Busi comes back with three glasses of

juice and some biscuits. When all this is done I'm telling Dumisani to put a ring on it. She's just so amazing. I take the glass of juice and gulp down half of it without even realising it. I breath in and out but it feels weird cuz the juice feels like it is just lingering around my throat.

Dumi: ok, I've thought about all of this and....

Busi: are you OK sweety?

She said looking at me worried.

Me: uh uhm I'm ok,.

I try to calm myself and breath, I take one of the biscuits and eat it then drink the juice again but it tastes weird in my

mouth. I try to swallow hard but it feels like it is coming back up my throat....

Me: Busi where is the toilet, I think I'm....

Busi: first door on your right!

I stand up quickly with my hand on my mouth. I rush into the toilet and push the door closed, I stand at the toilet and it all comes pouring out. I hold my stomach and vomit my lungs out. I feel someone holding my hair back and rubbing my back as I puked all my breakfast and those biscuit and juice out. It doesn't feel like Siphon or Dumisani because I know their touch too well. It must be Busi.

My head is pounding when I'm done vomiting And my vision becomes blur.

Busi: are you alright Tumisani?

She says looking at me weirdly from up to bottom.

Me: I'm alright.

I say with a faint smile on my face. We walk out the toilet and back to the lounge area. I don't feel so well anymore. My heart is pumping fast and my head isn't being easy on me as well. My vision is blur and I'm holding my head now.

Dumi: Tumsa are you OK?

He said holding me now.

Sipho stands up and checks my temperature with the back of his hand. My forehead is burning hot.

Sipho: baby

He said worried.

I stumble back holding my head and my feet feel heavy.

Then all of a sudden lights out for me.

LIKE COMMENT AND SHARE

[06/20, 05:20] Snr: INSERT 93

.

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV

" don't touch me Busi, why shouldn't I be upset huh!!?"

" babe please calm down, we need to discuss this ass adults, please I beg of you"

" Mxm, I can't believe this right now, I wanted to forgive you for sleeping with her, I thought we could move on from that but now I don't see any reason to, so you don't only aim but also shoot to kill, fuck"

I slowly open my eyes and shut it back

closed as the light brightens in my eyes. I force myself to open my eyes again and I manage to open it without closing it again. They are all, all over the place and panick is written all over their faces. Dumisani has his head buried in his hands standing against the wall with Busi holding him tightly, scared. Siphos has his hands in his pockets and his lip is busted a little. I gasp as I looked at him worried. He looks scared yet calm. They all look at me right after I have gasped.

All sorts of thoughts pop in my head. Why are they so uneasy? Why is Dumisani so angry? Why is Siphos lip

busted and bleeding? what is going on here? I ask my myself.

Dumisani looks at me with angry eyes and I want to just melt, I look at Busi and she forces a smile as she walks up to me.

Busi: you're awake, how do you feel?

It just hits me that I have a banging headache and I'm lying on the hospital bed with a hospital gown on.

Me: I I have a headache

Sipho passes me a glass of water and smiles, I want to cry seeing him like that. What happened to him? I so badly wanna ask but the tension in the room is

scarying me. I gulp down the glass of water and clear my throat a little. I look at Busi and she has her head bowed down. Dumisani storms out of the room without saying anything to neither of us, he looks pissed as hell.

Busi: I'll be back

She runs after him, leaving me and Siphos together. I look at him and finally release the tears in my eyes.

Me: babe what happened?

I cried, trying to reach for his hand and pulled him down to sit next to me. He sat down and smiled as he kissed my hand then my forehead and smiled

again.

Sipho: I love you so much

I says smiling then pecked my lips and I held his face, I looked into his eyes and traced my thumb all the way to his bottom lip which is busted. I touch it and he flinches. Tears keep pouring down my cheeks, he wipes it off and held my hands into his.

Sipho: please stop crying my love

Me: what happened to you? Were you in a fight? Why were you fighting? what happened? what am I doing here?

I said worried and he's just smiling at me. Why the hell is he smiling? The door

swung open and the doctor enter with a warm smile on his face.

Doc: oh our patient is waking. Hello miss Phakade, I'm doctor Lawrence, how are you?

Me: hi doc I'm fine, just a headache but I'm confused, why am I here?

Doc: oh they haven't told you....(he looked at Sipho)

Me: told me what?

i said confused and looked at Sipho as well. H smiled and brushed my knuckles with his thumb.

Doc: well miss Phakade you're pregnant and you should stop stressing because

it'll affect the baby

Me: wait!! what!!!?? (I shouted)

I let go of Siphos hands and stood up on my feet.

Me: what kind of joke are you making doc? if this is a joke then please it's not funny, seriously what am I doing here?

Siphos: baby please sit down

Doc: this is not a joke Miss Phakade, you're one week pregnant

Tears rolled down my cheeks and I looked at Siphos then the doctor.

Me: baby please tell him to stop joking, I can get you fired in a second please

stop fooling around.

Doc: madam this.....

Me: how can I be pregnant!!!?? huh!! (I roared) I've been using protection ever since I've started having sex what shit are you saying about me being pregnant!!!??

I roared as tears rolled down my cheeks and Sipho held me back as i kept pounding at the doctor.

Sipho: Thanks doc I'll take over now

Doc: I have the discharge forms here, she's fine so she can go home. I'll prescribe her with some painkillers for her headache and any pain

Sipho: OK thanks doc, let me sign that
He let go of me and I sat there on the
bed confused, happy and shocked. How
can I be pregnant, the last time Sipho
and I had sex we used a condom and
plus that was only yesterday.....
wait.....oh no , oh my gosh, no!!!! We
didn't use a condom yesterday!!! But
how can I be one week pregnant if we
didn't use a condom only yesterday!!??
This doctor is telling lies. No, this can't
be true.

Sipho: baby

He said forcing me to look at him. The
doctor had left and I didn't even realize.

Me: Siphos that doctor is telling lies, how can I be pregnant when we only had sex yesterday? why didn't you tell me we didn't use a condom yesterday? but I could've took a morning after pill today so that I wouldn't fall pregnant, but how the fuck am I one week pregnant!!?? I don't understand

I said holding my head. When last did I even get my periods? Wait I had my periods before I went to Pretoria and that's like a couple weeks ago so how come I'm pregnant? This doesn't make any sense. God!!!

Siphos: babe can you let me explain please, I wanna ask you something first

He looked at me deep in the eyes and I was already feeling guilty of what he's about to say next

Sipho: don't you want the baby Tumisani?
Are you thinking of aborting this child?
Are you not ready for this?

I said with so much hurt in his voice and I felt exhausted immediately.

Me: Sipho I....

Sipho: I'm sorry for keeping this away from you. I was just excited about the fact that I have an opportunity to make my dream come true, I've always wanted children Tumisani, always. I'm sorry that I hid it from you this past few weeks.

(sigh) babe when we were in Pretoria, that day I had my friends come over, after they left, we made love and Tumisani I swear to God that was the best day of my life, that was the best love making I've ever had in my whole entire life (I blushed) But while we were at it, the condom broke and I only realized that it broke after we were done. I'm sorry Tumsa I am, I kept it from you because I wanted to experience how it would be like to hold my first child in my arms, I'm really sorry. But I love you and I want to spend the rest of my life with you, uh that's only if you still love me and I'll understand if you don't want the

baby but Tumisani I will not allow you to abort my child I'm sorry

I looked at him shocked and sighed. I don't know if I should be angry or upset or happy. I don't know.

So Tumisani Phakade is growing a mini Tumi in her womb? Sigh. This is just too much to comprehend. I held my stomach as a smile crept up on my face. I've always wanted my own baby. My own little mini me. I smiled as tears rolled down my cheeks and I felt joy take over my heart, body and soul. A mini me. Tears of joy rolled down my cheeks. I'm pregnant. A silent cry broke out of my lips and I held myself tightly as if I can

feel my baby's presence. I'm gonna be a mother? I cried.

Sipho: Tumi I'm sorry, if you don't want it I'll.....

Me: baby no!!! I want my baby, I want this child, don't say that please

I cried. He pulled me into his arms and cried with me. This is the most emotional moment of my life. I can't believe I'm gonna be a mother. I don't know if I'm ready but whatever comes my way, I'll tackle it with both arms. I'll love this child more than my own life. This is my little bundle of joy. I know i didn't plan this but it is what it is. I can't

change it. I don't even want to dream of abortion because I would never do that to an innocent soul. I don't care what the world thinks but I want to child.

Dumisani can be angry all he wants.

This is my child and I'm ready to sacrifice anything for my baby.

He held me tightly and we both cried in each others arms. Tears of joy feels good. I felt a warm hand on my shoulder and I slowly let go and Siphos, I looked up and my eyes met with a very red eyed Dumisani. Siphos left the room and Dumisani sat across me with my hands in his. I couldn't even look him in the eyes.

Dumi: look at me Tumsa

Me: no (I cried)

I was embarrassed and scared. I disobeyed him and I'm wrong. I know that.

Dumi: Phakade look at me

He said with a commanding voice and I felt myself looking at him. He's eyes say a lot things. He's angry, happy, tired and shocked, as well as many other things.

Me: Dumisani please don't be upset with me, I need you right now, please just hold me. I beg of you.

He let go of my hands and scooped me up onto his lap, I rest my head on his

chest and listened to his slow hard heartbeat. His arms told me I'm welcome and his body language showed me love and safety. My comfort zone are his arms.

Me: father, I'm sorry. I've wronged you, yes, I'm sorry Dumsa I'm truly sorry. But I beg of you, please don't make me get rid of my baby. I beg of you.

He sighed deeply. I could sense the hurt in his heart.

Dumi: Tumisani do you have any idea why I asked you not to sleep with him? It's not your fault anyways, I didn't tell you why so it's not your fault. Gogo

made me promise her that I will make sure that you don't break your virginity before marriage, I had to promise her that. You're the first daughter of the Phakade and that's why she made me promise so that you set an example for the future generation. I know Siphos is a man and he has needs but you as a woman you also have pride and dignity. I know it's my fault that I didn't tell you this sooner. I should've told you that it was Gogo's wish, maybe then you would've listened to me. But what has happened has already happened. I've forgiven you. I love you too much to be upset with you.

I gripped hard onto his shirt as I cried in his chest. Now I feel horrible. It was Gogo's wish. I feel like I've broken a promise and I never break my promises.

Me: I'm sorry (I cried)

Dumi: I've forgiven you, (he kissed my forehead) I love you so much Tumsa.

He wiped my tears and smiled at me. I felt free in his arms. I cupped his face and brought our foreheads together. This is my ride or die.

Me: I love you Dumsa.

Dumi: so I'm gonna be an Uncle

A beautiful big smile popped up on his face and I smiled back at him.

Me: I'm gonna be a mother at age 21. I can't believe it.

Dumi: Believe it, I want you to be happy Tumsa, our times of sadness are over.

Gogo is probably happy where ever she is. just know that you hold my heart.

You're not only my sister but my daughter as well. I vowed to protect you and I forever will, till the day I take my last breath.

Me: Thank you

I kissed his cheeks and we smiled at each other. I missed his arms. I missed feeling like a baby in his arms.

Dumi: oh and I'm sorry for busting your

boyfriends lip, I was pissed when I found out you were pregnant, I just couldn't believe it. Thank Busi that I'm calm. Otherwise he would be in hospital as well.

Me: you're crazy Dumisani, leave my man alone please. He's had enough now.

Dumi: OK OK sorry. Go get dressed so we can go home please, i miss holding my woman so don't take your time.

Me: haaa put a ring on it, the woman has been waiting all her life man Dumsa

He stood up blushing, and shoved his hands in his pockets. The hell? Why is he blushing and acting all weird now?

Dumi: ask no questions, hear no lies
princess

He smiled and kissed my forehead
before he walked out with a naughty grin
on his face. What's wrong with him?
There's surely something that he's not
telling me. And I'll make sure to find out.

.

Sipho's POV

Shoo....that's was not easy at all. Gosh, I
thought Tumsa was gonna break up
with me, or worse, abort my baby. At
least we're all on the same page now.
I'm glad she wants the baby. I'm so
happy that I'm gonna be a father. I can't

wait to hold my baby in my arms. But what I can't wait to end is Tumisani's hormones which I can sense will drive me crazy. She already started with her emotional crying a lot shit and I can feel it's gonna get worse but let's pray I can handle it. I love that crazy woman with my life . She's my idiot. If I ever had to go crazy because of mental disorders then I'm sure she would've stood by me and gone crazy with me. That's how much she loves me, I know it. Now I'm definitely ready to pop the questions anytime.

What I didn't expect was Dumisani to knock me out like like, he bust my lip

and punched my stomach. Now I know I'll have a crazy brother in law who will put me in my place when I'm wrong. He really loves his sister and anybody in his shoes would've been that upset as well. So I won't hold a grudge against him.

Me: You hungry?

I said as we drove down the Long street in Cape Town.

Tumisani: I want pizza please

Me: yes ma'am

She smiled at took my hand into hers. I pulled her hand and kissed it then rest it on my thigh.

Me: I can't wait to go for our first scan

and see the gender and heart beat.

I said excited. I really can't wait.

Tumisani: me too, baby I heard that woman who are pregnant get hormones all the time and become big and get angry all the time. But Siphos promise me that you won't leave me when I get all moody and become crazy, I'm scared you will get tired of me when I become fat and go mad. Gosh I'm gonna lose my figure, no I don't know if I'm ready to lose my gorgeous body.

She says looking at herself and I could feel her picturing herself when she's big and fat. Lol. She's dramatic this one.

Me: babe I won't leave you, I'll be here every step of the way and Tumsa don't worry, you have a gorgeous and utterly banging body and I'm sure if you exercise it won't be that bad and I don't think you'll be that bad. Look at you now, you're one week and you don't even look a day pregnant, your stomach is flat as fuck.

Tumi: you think so?

Me: I know so

I kissed her hand and parked the car outside Debonairs.

Me: I won't take long babe, I'll be quick.

Tumi: OK and please also get a chicken

mushroom one

Sipho: sure

I opened the door and closed it then started walking towards Debonairs. I got a message on my phone from the gang and I have a mission the day after tomorrow. Fuck. I was busy texting Lwazi and telling him to put Karabo in my place when I bumped into someone and something fell.

Me: uhh I'm so sorry, I'm really sorry

I said bending down and picking up the purse that fell without looking at the owner, I looked at her legs and she had lovely legs tho....I stood up and looked

at the pretty girl in front of me. She's light in complexion with black braids on and she's wearing shorts with a crop top. Cute structure. Just like Tumsa.

Girl: you should watch where you're going, if you had to drop my pizza you would've bought me another one.

She says taking her purse with a smile on her face.

Me: I'm really sorry I wasn't looking.

Girl: sure

She smiled up at me and walked away, licking her lips. Weird. I got into Debonairs and bought two boxes of triple deck pizzas just for my wife. Lol, I

can't wait to mine her mine.

Tumi: thank you

She said taking the box as I started the car and drove us home.

Tumi: how's your lip?

She says looking at me with pity. I chuckled.

Me: your brother sure knows how to punch, he's a real gangster, that's true.

Tumi: Lol he apologized tho, I'm just glad we'll finally be happy without any obstacles.

She says touching my lip with her thumb as I drove, she's too cute.

Me: I'm fine babe, don't worry, I don't want my baby being in danger because of you stressing all the time, OK?

Tumi: yes daddy.

She said giggling.

We got home and I parked into her driveway and walked over to her side and opened the door for her. She's glowing like hell.

Tumi: I'm gonna go take a shower first, wanna join me?

Me: uh babe you go up so long, I'm right behind you OK?

I said kissing her cheek.

Tumi: OK

I walked to the kitchen with the boxes and placed on the counter, took out my phone and called Lwazi. If I tell Tumisani that I have a mission in a few days she'll be really upset.

Me: dawg

Lwazi: hey man, you do know that this mission is important right?

Me: yeah man I know, how long is this mission?

Lwazi: three weeks

Me: what!!?? are you crazy, three weeks is too much, can we meet up tomorrow so we can discuss this

Lwazi: sure sure, but why can't you make it man, it's not like you have another mission to do tomorrow?

Me: we'll talk tomorrow.

Lwazi: sure

I hang up and sighed deeply. This is some deep shit. I can't leave her all alone. She needs me. Plus she has three company's to run and she's pregnant and I'm not allowing her to work till she's given birth. She doesn't know that but she soon will. I really need to go on this mission. It's really important. Gosh, what am I gonna do.

" Baby!!!!!"

She shouted from upstairs.

Me: my love I'm coming!

I shouted back and started walking up the stairs, taking off my shirt. I pray she doesn't get angry when I tell her.

LIKE COMMENT AND SHARE

OK, I guess Hidden Secrets isn't ending anytime soon.

Admin

[06/20, 05:20] Snr: INSERT 94

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .

NEXT DAY

Tumisani's POV

I wake up with a bright smile on my face. A big bright happy smile. The sun is peeling through my curtains and radiating onto my sheets. A new day has been made. A beautiful new day. The day is bright, it's bright And fair, a happy day. I bring my hand up to my stomach and stroke it. My baby is probably sleeping peaceful in my tummy. My little

angle is slowly breathing inside of me. I can't wait to be a mother. This baby is the best thing that's ever happened to me.

Two years down the drain and today is my mothers death anniversary. The day I killed her with my very own hands. The mother that never loved me, the mother that never showed me affection, the mother that was selfish and evil. The mother I always yearned for. Huh, it's funny how life always seems to take a turn. I always yearned for a mothers real touch but I never got that. I never got that kind of love and affection from my mother. But you know what, that's OK.

Now I can give that love and affection that I never got from my mother to my very own child. I promise to love and protection him/her with every muscle in my body. I promise to love my baby till the end of time. This is my little bundle of joy. My heart in human form.

A smile spreads across my face as his lips comes into contact with my cheek. He slowly opens his beautiful light brown eyes that sparkles in the sun. My heart melts just by looking at him. My pillar of strength.

Sipho: good morning mommy

Me: good morning daddy

I said smiling and pecking his lips. He pulls me up onto him and make me lay on top of him with my hands on his chest and his under my butt.

Sipho: you're so beautiful my love.

I blushed and started playing with his caramel hair.

Me: you're very handsome my baby.

I placed my head on his chest and sighed. I wish I could stay in his arms like this forever. It feels right and it feels perfect. He starts rubbing my ass and sending chills down my spine. I giggle. His phone interrupts our silence and I slowly get off him to allow him to

answer it.

Sipho: Speaking.

I walk to the bathroom and give him some space as he answers his phone. I ease myself first then flush and stand in front of the mirror. I truly am glowing.

I'm getting even more and more beautiful by the day. I guess Gogo was right when she said I have the Phakade beauty flowing through my veins. From what I know all the Phakade woman are beautiful. Gogo was very beautiful, big curves and well shaped, same as my mother and I guess I follow in their footsteps. I grab the brush and toothpaste and start brushing my teeth.

Sipho barges into the bathroom and holds my waist behind me, kissing my neck as I brushed. He grabbed the brush out of my hand and starts brushing his teeth with it. I look at him through the mirror and he is smiling. Mxm this man. I strip naked and get under the shower, he follows me and we have a long steamy shower together. With him kissing me and fingering me and muffing me and fucking me. This man is nuts, he just doesn't get enough. If it is anyone I know that loves sex then it is Sipho. He's unbelievable.

After taking a shower we both wear white Jeans and white converse and I

wear a black nike top and he wears a black Addidas top.

Sipho: baby did you get the keys?

He said opening the door for me.

Me: yes, here

I handed him his house keys. We're gonna go have breakfast then go to his house today. We're gonna spend the day at his place and Buhle invited us over for dinner and I maybe might just sleep over at his place. I plugged my phone into his Bluetooth and answered Lindiwe's call. She's been calling since yesterday and I know she wants to talk about my pregnancy.

Me: Hey babe

Lindiwe: bitch where have you been!!?
I've been calling you since like last year!!

Me: relax Lindiwe, I'm here now

Lindiwe: mxm, anyway future mother,
congratulations!!! (she shouted, Sipho
chuckled, I giggled)

Me: Thanks babe

Lindiwe: I told you Sipho hits his buttons
correctly, he's got that bomb down

She laughed, I gasped embarrassed.

Me: Lindiwe!! (I said embarrassed)

Lindiwe: what!!? (she gasped) wait you
got me on loudspeaker, oh my gosh I'm

so sorry. Uhm Hi Siph

Siph

Siph: Hi Lindiwe, how are you?

Lindiwe: I'm great, Brian said
Congratulations

Siph: tell him I said thank you, and we
should go out some time, I'll call him

Brian: OK man, we should set a date and
go out for some drinks

Siph: sure thing, it's been a while

Brian: yeah hey, and congrats for
scoring the goal

Siph: thanks man

Lindiwe: OK chommie talk later, aaahh
Brian let go of me (she squealed) bye
love you

Me: bye love you too

Lindiwe: Brian don't fuck with me!!!

She shouted before hanging up. I
laughed. My friend is crazy yoh. But I
love her too much.

Sipho: so you've been talking about my
sex game with your friends, I see

Me: no baby, don't listen to Lindiwe,
she's crazy, it's not what you think.

I said blushing, totally embarrassed.
Lindiwe will get me in serious shit.

Sipho: oh really? so am I really that, " the bomb down there" ?

He said with a naughty smirk on his face and I knew immediately that this niggah is fucking with me. Well he doesn't know me.

Me: nah your sex game sucks, you need to upgrade babe, you're too small

I said with a smirk on my facing, trying so hard not to giggle.

Sipho: oh is that so, but that's not what you said last night when you were screaming out my name and I'm pretty sure you refused to sleep with me that other day because I'm huge and you

thought I would rip you apart.

I playfully hit his arm and put my hand over my mouth. I blushed a bright pink.

Me: oh please, you're too small so why would you rip me apart? I was probably drunk when I said that.

Sipho: but you're sober now so let's find out

All of a sudden he pulled up on the side of the road and stopped the car. I looked at him shocked. He's not just about to do what I think it is. He puts on his serious face and looks at me with those sexy eyes.

Me: babe no....start this car now Sipho

Sipho: no, show me how small I am down there, since I'm very small to you
He says seductively and i find myself becoming wet already.

Me: Sipho don't test me, start this car now!!

He pulls me over and smashes his lips onto mine. He places his hands on my ass and squeeze it. I moan in his mouth. He takes my hand and places it onto his pants, I feel his hand cock. He groans.

Me: babe not now....

Sipho: no show me how small I am...

He squeezes my butt and bites my bottom lip, I moaned deeply.

No. I'm not gonna allow him to do this to me. I won't allow him to fuck me on the side of the road. I'm wet and he is hard so we both should suffer. There's only one way that will make him stop torturing me like this.

Me: Siphos I'm....

Siphos: babe just one round please

He said now kissing my boobs with his hands inside my pants. How did he get so far?

Me: aaah siphos no, I'm very hungry

Siphos: Baby we'll only go after you've given me my cookie, now come on...

Me: Siphos I'm really hungry please, it's

your baby not me, he's making me
hungry

I was now talking into a soft voice and
trying my best to cry. He always gives in
to my tears.

Me: you're making us starve because
you're horny, please just start driving, it's
your Baby.

A tear escaped my eye and I was
relieved it worked. He stopped and
looked at me worried. My poor cupcake.

Sipho: my love I'm so sorry. Babe forgive
me, let's go, I'll take us to now, please
don't cry you're gonna affect our baby.
I'm sorry my love.

He said wiping my tears and fixing me up. He's gonna be a good father.

Sipho: don't cry babe, I'm really sorry for letting me dick control me, I won't ever let my two important people in the world starve I promise, OK?

I nodded and he captured my lips with a kiss. I love this man with my everything. He's too cute. I can't wait for him to label me his wife. He's gonna be a great husband and father.

I smiled as he held my hand and drove looking at me every chance he got. My cupcake is too cute.

We got to the restaurant, sat down and

ordered while drinking a milkshake with Siphos kissing me the whole time. Shame, he thinks I was serious about that act I pulled up. Maybe I should do that more often to get his full attention.

Siphos: baby I have something to tell you
He said after he had just kissed my face for the hundredth time. He looked worried and serious. I looked at him and he held my hands tightly.

Me: is there a problem?

Siphos: no there's no problem, well babe the thing is, uh Lwazi called me yesterday and told me that uhm I have a mission tomorrow and it will take three

weeks, I'm flying to Los Angeles tomorrow.

He said nervous. My heart sank and I wanted to cry. Why didn't he tell me sooner. It hurts. I just found out that I'm pregnant, I wanna spend so much time with him and I don't want him to miss a single minute of my pregnancy. I want us to bond with our child together. And what if something happens to him over there. From what I know Los Angeles has a lot of drug rings and mafias and I know this mission is not a clean mission but a dangerous one which will involve guns and blood. What if something happens to him or me. I just want to cry

right now. I don't want to think of the worst but I can't help it. I wish he would leave this kind of life but I've come to accept the fact that we're destined for it. Yet it's dangerous. I fought back tears and blinked.

Me: do you have to go?

I said sadly. I'll miss him so much. Three weeks is a long time and in three weeks, I'm turning one month pregnant.

Sipho: It's a very important mission babe, it involves a lot of things that were linked to my father so I have to be there.

Me: I'm coming with you.

I said stubbornly and letting of of his

hands.

Sipho: over my dead body, you're not going anywhere Tumisani, you're pregnant and I don't want any harm to come to you and my child. I'm trying very hard to protect you babe, please don't be stubborn right now, I'll put extra at your house and office, from now on you're going everywhere with Ziggler, you'll be staying with Buhle or your brother for the new few weeks. I've already arranged it. I'm not letting you stay alone in your house, I don't want anything to happen to....

Me: how dare you decide for me like that Sipho, why didn't you tell me when you

made all these choices for me huh? I'm coming with you and that is final. Don't tell me what to do.

I said irritated and drinking my milkshake with a frown on my face.

Sipho: Tumisani don't start please, (sighs deeply) babe this is for your own good, I'm sorry for not telling you sooner but I had to make all those decisions yesterday and today only, I can't allow you to live alone at your place especially when I'll be far away. Baby please don't argue with me and just trust me please.

Me: Sipho I won't go everywhere with ziggler, no, I'm not staying with Buhle or

Dumisani, I'm staying at my own house and I don't care if you put two thousand men just to watch me sleep but I'm not gonna let you tell me what to do. I know how to use a gun so I'll protect myself.

He sighed defeated and looked at me irritated.

Sipho: I knew you would be so stubborn when I tell you this, Tumisani I don't have much time we have to work together babe, I can be in LA and hear that something happened to you and I wasn't here to protect you that's why I have to make sure I have people who will take care of you, my love I beg of you please just listen to me. I'm only

doing this because this mission is dangerous and.....(he took my hands nervously) and they might come after my loved ones.

I gasped and tears threatened my eyes. I blinked it away but it came pouring down.

Me: Siphon no, no I can't keep living this life like this, I'm tired Siphon, I don't want to live like this anymore. What if they try to come after us and kill my baby, no no

I cried. He pulled me into his arms and hugged me.

Siphon: babe that won't happen, I won't allow that to happen. That's why I need

you to listen to me. Please do as I say and I promise I will come back to you and our baby.

Me: promise?

I said like a little baby looking up at him with teary eyes. He Kissed my forehead and wiped my tears.

Sipho: promise, I love you.

Me: I love you too, (I heaved) so am I allowed to go to work?

Sipho: yes of course but you have a bodyguard and also Ziggler.

Me: is Karabo coming with you?

Sipho: no she's gonna be keeping you

company. I'll call you every morning and every night before you sleep. I promise babe.

Me: OK I trust you. I really wanna come with you Siphos, maybe I could help

Siphos: I don't want you interfering in this because you've been labeled the queen of diamonds and they know that you're my weakness so they might take advantage of this. And also you're now labeled the first mafia queen after your mother.

Me: what!!?? Does Dumisani know about this!?

Siphos: I didn't wanna tell you guys

because I know your brother will go crazy.

Me: who labeled me?

Sipho: Lwazi is still busy with that, that's why I need to keep you undercover babe, if these mobsters find out about your deep secrets they'll come after you.

That's why I don't want you and my baby to be in danger my love.

I sighed.

Me: Babe can't I clear my name, I don't wanna live like this, this is putting our future in danger.

Sipho: I'll fix this babe, if it means killing then so be it. There's someone that's

been selling us off, I don't know who it is because every time we come across a mission then all our information gets leaked, I don't get it. But don't worry, I'll fix this.

Me: you don't want me to help babe, just let me help Siphho. I don't have a good feeling about this mission. Let me help my love, we're in this together.

Siphho: I love you too much to put you in so much danger, your brother might also have to come down there if things gets hectic.

Me: please take me home.

I said getting up. I just lost my appetite.

Why am I finding out about all this only now. How come I've been so asleep?

Sipho: I'm not allowing you to starve my baby sit down, we came here to eat and that's what we'll do. Sit down.

He said instructing me to sit down.

Me: I'm not hungry anymore, let's go.

Sipho: Tumisani you're making things even harder for me, babe sit down being angry won't solve anything.

I looked at him with so much pity. I can't help but pity our life's. He's going through too much. I sat down and looked away from him. I'm gonna find out who's been leaking these

information and who labeled me as the first mafia queen after my mother. I won't allow these people to humiliate me like this.

Sipho: Tumisani I hope you're not planning anything stupid.

Shit.

Sipho: whatever you're planning, erase it from your head, Ziggler is gonna be with you 24/7. I'll take care of everything.

Tumsa promise me you won't do anything stupid..

He said looking at me deep in the eyes.

Me: I can't...

Sipho: Tumisani (he said sternly)

Me: I promise

I looked away and he pulled my head and kiss it. I fear for his life.

" is everything OK sir?"

The waitress says. She had already brought our food a few minutes ago and we haven't even touched it. I looked at her for the first time since we got here. She's light in complexion, black braids, cute structure , not too tall, she's wearing a short uniform and I just realized that she's been eyeing Siphos since we got here.

Siphos: everything is perfectly fine, thank you.

He said looking at her from bottom to top, she's even blushing.

" you haven't touched your food and my manage might think that you're not happy with the meal and he might get upset, is my service not good, should I change the meal, I can do anything for you sir"

I looked at the stupid bitch and chuckled. She thinks I'm stupid. She's flirting with my man right in front of me. I wanted to just rip her throat out and throw it away. I breathed in and out then again.

Me: excuse me

I stood up and headed to the bathroom.

I trust Siphon and whatever decision he decides to make behind my back is his own choice. This is his test. I walk to the toilet and ease myself then wash my hands and breathe. I walk back to our table and the slut is still here.

Me: don't you have any other customers to serve? (I said annoyed)

Waitress: it was nice meeting you sir, have a nice day.

She said with a smile on her face, I look at Siphon and he is also smiling. She walks away and he kisses my cheek. I trust him. I'm not just about to fight for a man. I did that already once with Yanda

and he was a cheater. I trust Siphon and I'm sure he knows me very well. That bitch has nothing on me. She's not even an inch close to my level. I won't confront him. He's a grown ass man.

LIKE COMMENT AND SHARE

[06/20, 05:20] Snr: INSERT 95

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

Siphon's POV

We get into the car after having breakfast at Spur and drive towards my house. I'm spending the day with my woman before I leave her for three whole weeks. I'll truly miss her with all my heart. I look over at her side and she's been too quite all this while yet too beautiful as well. I take her hand and kiss her soft hands and fingers. I'll miss her soft touch and warm hands around me.

Me: baby...

I said glancing at her trying to keep my eyes on the road.

Tumisani: hmmm

She says without looking at me. I know she's upset about me leaving and her finding out that she might be in danger but I'm trying to figure something out and get her out of danger.

Me: are you angry with me?

She looks at me and looks at our intertwined fingers. I know she's gonna miss me so much. My poor baby. She kisses our hands and strokes my fingers.

Tumisani: I'll miss you

I park outside my house and pull her over for a long passionate kiss. A kiss I've been yearning for all morning. I suck her lips and she throws her hands

around my neck, cupping my neck with so much desire.

Tumiani: I love you so much

She says kissing my cheek and looking into my eyes.

Me: I love you more, now let's go inside before I change my mind and eat you right here.

She giggles and I open my door and get out then walk to her side and open her door as well. I take her hand into mine and we walk to the door hand in hand.

Me: I'm home!

I shout as we enter my house and walk towards the kitchen where we find my

sister looking beautiful as ever cooking.

Buhle: my favorite couple!

She hugs the both of us at once and squeeze us tightly, kissing our cheeks.

Tumisani: sister in law

Buhle: makoti, congratulations!! I'm gonna be a aunt

She says smiling and hugging Tumisani again.

Tumisani: thanks love,

Me: where's Mike?

I said walking over to the cardboard and taking out a packet of simba chips and opening it for my queen.

Buhle: he's gone to the shops to get something for me.

Me: oh ok, here babe

I give her the packet and she smiles up at me, I knew she was gonna ask for something to chew on any minute now.

Buhle: you've got to cravings so soon already? Aah good luck with that hunny

Tumisani: I just hope I don't become a hippo soon. I'm scared

Buhle: you should be (she laughs)

Me: ah Buhle leave my woman alone, come babe you have to help me pack.

Buhle: I hope you're not planning on

staying there forever because I don't want Tumisani missing you too much.

Tumisani: tell him B

Me: hey don't gang up on me now please, babe come

I said taking her hand and walking towards the stairs with her holding onto me tightly. I looked at her and she was busy digging into the packet of chips like there's no tomorrow.

Me: why are you holding me so tight babe?

Tumisani: you're walking like a police man, slow down please

I chuckled and picked her up bridal style

and she gasped.

Tumisani: Siphon put me down now!!

She screamed giggling and I kissed her head as she wiggled in my arms.

Me: you're becoming slow babe.

(chuckled) so Ziggler will be here first thing tomorrow morning to pick me up and then come back to take you to work, OK?

Tumisani: I'm staying in tomorrow as well. I have to get used to you not being around me, I'll go crazy without you

She says wrapping her legs around my waist as I layed her down on her back with me on top of her. I peck her cheek

and rub our noses together, she smiles slowly.

Me: I'm already going crazy for you.

I say brushing her lips.

Tumisani: we'll be waiting for you

She says placing my hand on her stomach, I bend down and kiss her tummy.

Me: I'll come back for you two. Now come on my love don't miss me too much, help me pack.

I get off her and walk to my cardboard, pull out my suitcase and place it on the bed.

Tumisani: is this a way of you telling me to pack for you or help you.?

She says with a raced eyebrow. She knows me too well but this is revenge for her making me cook for her all the time.

Me: I always cook for you at your house so now do your future husband a favor and pack for him babe.

She chuckles and gets off the bed with a smile on her beautiful face. I kiss her cheek before stripping naked and hopping into the shower as she packed for her husband. I love my woman and I can't wait to come back already and

fuck the shit out of her.

.

Tumisani's POV

" Ziggler you don't have to come with me, I can take Sipho's car to get to work"

Its been a few hours since Sipho left and I miss him already. It was so sad watching him leave as if he was going forever. I miss my baby so much. But I'll have to be strong.

What I didn't know was that Ziggler was gonna be so annoying and protective, gosh. He doesn't wanna let me drive myself and it's annoying how Sipho put so much security over me.

Ziggler: Tumisani please don't be stubborn. It's either you're going to work with me or stay at home with Buhle, choose.

I clicked my tongue and walk towards the car, got inside and folded my arms on my chest.

Ziggler: you're too beautiful to be so angry early in the morning.

He says as he starts the engine and starts driving. I've decided to work all the time so that I don't miss Siphos too much and I get my head off him. Good thing I have extra clothes over at Siphos place so I can easy get dressed at his

house and go to work.

Me: are you gonna irritate me for the next three weeks?

I said looking at him through the rearview mirror.

Ziggler: you're just hard headed sometimes. Sometimes you're nice to me and sometimes you're moody with me.

Me: OK

Ziggler: OK? is that all you're gonna say?

He parks outside Matthews Industries and I all of a sudden feel unprofessional. I'm only wearing a pair of jeans with a black blouse and black pumps. My hair

is tied up but I still feel unprofessional, I have to look like a boss not like some kind of junky.

Me: do I look unprofessional? I mean, do I look OK?

I say looking at him as he handed me my laptop bag and phone.

Ziggler: you look beautiful as always, now go, call me when you kick off.

Me: are you sure? I mean, I'm not even dressed right?

Ziggler: you look fine Tumisani, you're already late, please get going.

He hands me my stuff and I rush out the car remembering that I have a meeting

in less than 20 minutes.

Me: Bye!!

I shout and walk towards the entrance. I hope this three weeks goes fast because I miss my man like crazy.

Like, comment and share

I tried. I wasn't really in the mood to post but I forced myself to post. I tried.

Admin

[06/20, 05:20] Snr: INSERT 96

.

- .
- .
- .
- .

Luyanda's POV

Thando: daddy I want ice cream

She said as we walked around the gift store looking for a present for her mother. It Lindiwe's birthday today and it's a Friday, her boyfriend is throwing a surprise party for her and I haven't gotten her a gift yet. I don't even know what to get for her which is appropriate. I have no clue what she likes or dislikes.

Me: baby hold on, we have to get mommy a present first

Thando: but uncle Brian already got mommy a present.

Me: that's from him, I wanna get mommy a present as well, it's her birthday baby,

Thando: call aunty Tumisani, she knows everything about mama, maybe she can help.

I looked at her and felt stupid. Why didn't I think of that? Tumisani is her best friend of course she'll be able to help me with a present for Lindiwe. I haven't spoke to her in a while because I've

been trying to put myself back together and try to forget my love for her and I've come to the conclusion that I've accepted the fact that she's another mans woman, even tho I loved her so much but I failed to love her enough and another man gave her that and her happiness is all that matters. Being friends with her is better than nothing. I'm just glad that she forgave me.

Me: you're one clever kid

I kiss her cheek and put her down holding her hand so I could call Tumisani. I dialled her number and it rang twice, it's already half through the day so I'm not sure if she's still at work.

Tumi: Phakade speaking, hello

Her sweet angelic voice Peirce's through the phone. I smiled.

Me: Hey Tumsa, it's me Yanda.

Tumi: oh Hi Yanda, how are you?

She says excited and I can feel her smiling as she spoke into the phone.

Me: I'm good and yourself?

Tumi: I'm great, what can I help you with?

Me: well it's Lindiwe's birthday today right

Tumi: oh yes yes, wait, let me guess....you don't know what to get her?

Me: it's like you read my mind

She laughed. I chuckled.

Tumi: where are you?

Me: at the mall, Cavendish

Tumi: oh great, I'm also close by there,
I'll be there in ten.

Me: ohk thank you. Meet us at Spur.

Tumi: are you with Thando?

Me: yep

Tumi: OK sure

She hanged up and I bend down to pick
up my princess again.

Me: aunty is on her way

Thando: yaaayyy, now can you get me
ice cream.

I Kissed her cute cheeks and she put her tiny fingers on my cheeks, smiling.

Me: we gonna go have lunch now then after that, I'll get you some ice cream OK?

Thando: OK daddy

She giggled playing with my face. I walked with her to spur still in my arms and got us a table and we sat down, I ordered a milkshake for her and coke for me.

Thando: daddy will mama have a cake for her birthday?

Me: yes princess, a big cake.

Thando: what about me?

Me: I'll get you one when it's your birthday, a big big one, like a princess.

Thando: yaaayaah thank you daddy!!

She squealed. I smiled.

Me: pleasure princess

I love my daughter so much. She's the best thing that's ever happened to me. She's my happiness and I would protect her with my life.

" look who we have here"

I turned around only to be met by a beautiful Tumisani in a white and red body hugging dress. She's always more beautiful every time I see her.

Me: hey, you look beautiful

I said hugging her. She's glowing and looks like she's gaining a bit weight or maybe it's just my imagination yet her figure looks gorgeous. Sipho is one lucky man.

Tumi: thank you, you don't look too bad yourself

She smiled with her gorgeous dimples popping out.

Thando: my favorite aunty!!

Tumi: my favorite niece

They giggled hugging each other and Tumisani kissing her cheeks. I smiled.

They look so cute together, sometimes I

wish I took different decisions in the past. If only I wasn't so stupid then maybe this could've been my mini family. They are so beautiful.

Me: can I order anything for you?

Tumi: yeah sure, I'm starving.

Me: you were working?

Tumi: yep I was at the office, I was coming to Spur for lunch so I could go and help Brian with the preparations for tonight.

Me: oh OK, where's Lindiwe?

Tumi: she's booked at a spa till later.

Me: lovely...

I hushed down a waiter and ordered lunch for all three of us. Thando was just smiling as if she saw Jesus sitting next to her. The way she loves Tumisani is just so cute.

Thando: aunty what's your present for mama?

Tumi: hmm that's a surprise, you'll see later on.

She said smiling. I can't help but stare at her beauty. It's ever flowing like a river. I admire this woman and I want Thando to grow up just like her. Beautiful, intelligent and with a heart of gold.

Tumi: earth to Yanda!!

She said snapping her fingers in my face, I snapped out of it and they giggled.

Me: oh sorry, you were saying?

Tumi: what are you thinking about? (she says smiling)

Me: nothing important, so what do you think I should get for Lindiwe?

Tumi: Lindiwe has crazy likes and dislikes, she would love earrings or something that screams wow!

Me: I have no idea what woman are into, so how about I get her a make up set or something?

Tumi: she would love that, or maybe a necklace with the first letter of her name

on?

Me: that's sounds interesting, we should go check it out after this

Thando: no daddy, first we getting me ice cream, you promised

She whined.

Me: OK fine, first your ice cream.

Our order came and we dug in having a few conversations here and there and it felt good to connect with her again. I like being in her presence, it just makes me more comfortable around her.

.

Sipho's POV

" what you mean the security code was hacked, didn't I put you in charge of this damn place!"

I shouted pissed as I walked into the warehouse.

I've been in LA only for about three days and already I miss my woman like shit. My illegal businesses are a flop right now and I've realized that someone is messing with me. They've stolen half of my diamond ranges and I don't know what next will be stolen. I can't get to the person because they have a very goof way of covering their tracks, but they don't know me. I'll find them.

Me: Lwazi change the security codes and make sure their are double wire fencings in the diamond house as well as the drug house. Call the suppliers and tell Zoot, I have a business proposal.

Lwazi: what do we do with the two people?

I sighed. In less than a week I've already killed five people because of this gangster life. It's tiring but do I have a choice? This mission is the most toughest mission I've come across. Oh and don't worry, they people I've killed are the reason Tumisani was labeled as queen of diamonds, publically. Now the two people I have are either gonna tell

me who is behind this or they gonna just die. They are putting Tumisani and my baby in so much danger and I don't fucking like that.

Me: keep torturing them until they're ready to talk.

Lwazi: your phone is ringing.

I looked at the caller ID and it's Tumisani. I sigh deeply. I can't talk to her right now. I'm angry right now and I might snap. I know for a fact I'll be a different man when I get back to SA, I haven't been going to therapy and I've realized my mood swings have turned into anger. I haven't been taking my pills because I

need the anger flowing in my blood. I can't be in a mission smiling the whole time, I have to be angry in order for me to complete this mission. This is some serious shit. It's affecting both my health and life. I don't want to end up losing Tumisani at the end of this because I know I won't be able to control myself after this mission. I don't want to hurt her.

I end the call and she calls again three times and I end the call again until she stops calling. It hurts but I'm not doing this on purpose, I don't wanna hurt her. I call Ziggler and he picks up immediately.

Me: how is she?

Ziggler: you're not picking up her calls, you're making her stress.

Me: where is she?

Ziggler: I'm not with her but I can see her. She's having lunch with Monster's son and his daughter. Don't worry, it's safe.

Me: are you sure? He's not trying anything funny? Why is she with him in the face place?

I was slowly but calmly getting pissed. I know she's just friends with him now but i can't help but be insecure. She's gone through a lot and I know she won't fall for him again but I just don't trust the niggah.

Ziggler: Her friends birthday is today.
There's a surprise party at Brian's house.

Me: how do you know she's calling me ?

Ziggler: I kinda hacked her phone

Me: I hope you don't go into her personal stuff

Ziggler: relax Man, I'm doing this for you.
Anyway, I've found something about this diamond thief.

Me: talk to me.

I sat down on the high table with the phone pressed to my ear .

Ziggler: It's a woman, I don't have her name but what I know is she's South

African, part of the under world and she's there in LA. I don't have a pic of her yet

Me: is she tryna fuck with me or something? Mxm she's pissing me off, they've stolen half the fucking diamond range, how Come we're not able to figure out their tracks?

Ziggler: they're working with someone close to us, man you have to find out who labeled Tumisani, this thing is going viral and soon she won't be able to even come out of her own house.

Me: shit, do they know where her diamonds are?

Ziggler: soon they will, you have to convince her to put it into our diamond warehouse or else this shit is gonna hit her hard man

Me: it's her damn inheritance, she's the queen of diamonds, whoever takes those diamonds die, I can't have her spilling blood because of that shit.

Ziggler: I'll try and find something, before people start attacking, the outside world already know about it, they just waiting for a perfect time to strike.

Me: (sigh) take care of her please, keep me updated. I can't talk to her any time

soon, I'm in the mode.

Ziggler: what, I thought that shit only happens at different times man.

Me: I need the anger, so I can't talk to her. Gotta go

Ziggler: sharp

I hang up and march towards Lwazi who has been typing shit on his Laptop. He hasn't slept since we got here and this is why he's my best man. He's always by my side no matter what.

Lwazi: should I bring Karabo down? You look like shit.

Me: I feel like shit, Karabo needs to be there with Tumisani.

Lwazi: I can ask Aliyah to be there with her

Me: no, it's cool. I can do this.

I can't let Lwazi and Ziggler's girlfriends be with Tumisani because I know how much she hates their guts. I can understand because they're bitches anyway. I trust Karabo with her because they get along pretty well.

Lwazi: Zoot suggests you meet him at the club. He wants to introduce you to someone.

Me: let me freshen up

This warehouse is huge and has everything needed in it. It's located far

from all the houses and stuff so that people don't know where we are. LA is beautiful tho. I rush up the stairs into my room and take a quick cold shower. I miss my baby so much. I can't wait to see her again. I dry myself and wear all black and take my guns. I instruct all my people to follow up. I switch off my phone and leave it in my room. I take the warehouse phones and connect the earpieces to my ear as well as the phone.

Lwazi: The two men are ready to talk

Me: I'll deal with them when I come back.

Follow up.

I walk out with my men in black and get into the black SUV. Zoot is a client that buys and exports my diamonds, gold and drugs. He supplies me with lots of things that are needed in my illegal business and you'd be amazed at the jobs we do.

The car parks outside the club and I smell prostitutes. Shit. I knew he would do something like this. How does he expect me to do business with him at such a place.

Me: Lwazi cancel this meeting.

I said into the earpiece.

Lwazi: no come on man, it's just woman,

control yourself. You're here to work and you know Zoot, he doesn't like waiting now get out there.

I sigh and walk out. It's dark and cold. I walk into the club and loud banging music irritates me right Now. I don't ask and walk up to the ViP section with my men following behind me. I spot his old ass with prostitutes filled on the table. I walk towards them and Zoot smirks as he sees me.

Me: Zoot

Zoot: my old man Mr Ndlovu, long time no see

He said smoking and drinking.

Me: indeed. Ladies excuse us

I said referring to the many prostitutes that were onto us. They just looked at me with hungry eyes.

Zoot: the old man can't concentrate without pussy so I suggest they stay.

He sits down and one bitch starts grinding on his lap. I want to puke.

Zoot: drink?

Me: I'm good. I need to talk business

Zoot: you know Mr Ndluvo your people transport very good drugs. But my people are the best suppliers

He said in that weird accent again. He

sure isn't from around here either.

Me: I've found a hole in my business

Prostitute: the only hole I've got is the one between my legs, let me satisfy you

She forces herself onto my lap and starts touching me. The devil is a liar, I swear. I push her off my lap and give her a death stare.

Zoot: let the woman do what they're good at my man

He laughs smoking like a chimney.

Zoot: your people are not trustworthy enough, they are deceiving you but I have someone very special you need to meet, she's my queen from your land. I

want to invest more into your business, have you heard of the new queen in market? Queen of diamonds, perhaps?

I flinched and fisted my hands. Mother fucker knows my game. I'm sure he doesn't know that's my woman he's talking about.

Me: who's your queen?

I said looking at him, I can feel my eyes turning red.

Zoot: go call her Bitch

He said to one of the prostitutes who were practically naked, her breast hanging and her ass all over the place. I could feel myself turning hard but I tried

to keep my composure.

Prostitute: your stick is up, let me be yours for tonight, I know you want this

The same bitch who was sitting on my lap said squeezing her breast like some kind of slut. I ignored her and she forcefully sat on my lap again, unzipped my jeans so fast that I didn't even see it coming, before I knew it, she grabbed my hard cock. I looked at her shocked and she smirked. Zoot was last in his own world with these bitches grinding on him and he was drunk already. I looked at the desperate bitch in front of me.

Me: bitch get your hands out of my pants (I said sternly)

She stroked my dick and I almost groaned. I pushed her off my lap and she fell hard on her buttocks on the floor. She looked at me pissed and then stormed out.

Zoot: here comes my queen.

I looked up and there marched a very beautiful lady who looked South African. She has a cute structure just like.....wait, I looked at her face and gasped. Wait that's the girl I bumped into when I went to buy pizza for Tumisani. And isn't she the same

waitress from the restaurant? She was wearing a tight dress with hills and her body was curvy in that dress.

Zoot: Mr Ndlovu, my queen, Thandokazi

Thandokazi: so we meet again

She said walking up to me and extending her hand.

Thandokazi: Thandokazi Cele

Me: Siphon Ndlovu

We shake hands and she looks at the prostitutes scattered all over the place.

Thandokazi: disappear

She said sternly and they all stand up and leave. She sits next to Zoot and

looks at me smiling. For a beautiful woman like her you could swear she's not a part of this world.

Zoot: she's gonna help you with that hole you were talking about. I'm stepping down.

Me: what!!? Zoot man come on, you can't step down

Zoot: I have to, I'm getting old, I have so much imports coming in and I won't be able to handle it all. Thandokazi is taking my place

Me: she's a woman

Zoot: and so is the queen of diamonds
I swallow hard and look at him deep in

the eyes.

Lwazi: he knows your game Siphon, stop arguing.

He said into the ear piece. I sigh.

Zoot: I'll be on my way. Discuss the deals with her. She knows everything.

Me: I can't do this with a woman, this is not some kind of joke Zoot, this is my exports we're talking about.

Zoot: if you're not going to work with her then clear my name from the list. I'm out.

Lwazi: Siphon man!! we need him man, he has what we've lost.

Me: OK OK, relax. (I said pissed) I'll

accept this.

Zoot: good, talk to her.

He gets up kisses Thandokazi's cheek and walks away. I look at the woman and she has a sternly look on her face.

Too powerful for a woman like her.

Thandokazi: OK great, you heard the big man. Please follow me

She stands up and I do as well. I follow her to an office and she locks the door behind me. I look at her confused.

Thandokazi: don't you feel hot in that?

She says referring to my jacket. Mxm bitch.

Me: I'm good, let's get down the business

Thandokazi: hmm feisty, perfect. So the diamond ring is falling and you won't be able to supply us so I'm cutting you out of our diamond export.

Me: the fuck!!? you can't do that, we still on the go

Thandokazi: and also the gold ring so I'm cutting you out on that too.

She says not looking at me but taking off her shoes and she's bending exposing her ass to me.

Me: I'm not letting you do that. We're the biggest suppliers woman, we will do

things my way not your way

Thandokazi: no, you've been in charge for way too long Mr Ndlovu, it's my turn to rule now..

She now had me pressed against the wall with her arms on my chest and our faces not too far apart.

Me: I've been doing this business longer than you have and I'm sure a waitress knows nothing about illegal drugs right?

Thandokazi: don't underestimate me Mr Ndlovu

She presses herself onto me and I look deep into her eyes. I know she's soft.

She's tryna act tough but I can have her

bent over this table and screaming my name any minute.

Lwazi: change of plans Siphho

I'm glad he read my mind. I'm not letting this woman think she can rule me.

Me: we doing things your way

She smiles and turns around walking to her desk. Too feisty for a bitch.

Tumisani's feisty but she's not a bitch but this one just screams, wow.

Thandokazi: great, so we cut you out on gold and diamonds. we still want your drugs and we might as well invest in you. Clear?

Me: crystal

She likes it her way doesn't she. She's smiling like a bloody retard.

Thandokazi: I mix it all Mr Ndlovu.

Business and pleasure. Don't starve yourself honey. You may leave. I'll keep in contact.

She says with attitude. I stand up and leave with a hard boner. Slut as her tricks up her sleeve hey. She doesn't know me just yet. I have a woman and a baby so why would I pay attention to her flat ass when I have a huge feisty ass waiting for me back home. If she's gonna play it dirty then dirty here it comes. Tumisani has some competition here when she finds out whose tryna

replace her crown. Now I know who Ziggler was talking about.

LIKE COMMENT AND SHARE

New year, new beginnings.

New people, new characters and of course new everything.

I smell fire guys.

Who do y'all think is this new Thandokazi?

It's gonna be lit this year. Stay tuned.

[06/20, 05:21] Snr: INSERT 97

- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV

After leaving Lindiwe's birthday party last night, I was dead beat tired. I couldn't even drive so my favorite brother decided to drive me home and left my car at Brian's beach house and now I can't even go out because I don't have my car with me. I'm exhausted and hungry. Lindiwe was so happy last night and drunk as well, the kids went to sleep early and the adults drank senselessly.

This is our little secret, I had some wine. If Sipho had to know that I drank, he would go crazy. Well come to think of it....my baby is already crazy and I miss my crazy man so much. He hasn't been answering my calls no messages and it hurts but I'll have to be strong.

I get out of bed tired and slowly walk to the bathroom where I vomit. Morning sickness is killing me, this nausea shit is ruining my mornings. I brush my teeth and wash my face then hop into the shower and take a short shower then wrap a towel around my body. I start to lotion my body and I can't help but think about Sipho, God I miss his lips and his

touch. The knock at my room door startles me and I immediately put on a robe and get my gun from my drawer. I don't remember leaving my house door open nor did I give anyone but Siphos access to my house. I don't know who this is but I hope it's nothing serious. I lean against the side of the door and breathe.

Me: who is it?

I hold my gun up ready to blast someone's brains, there's no response.

Me: who is it?

I slowly open the door and stop my gun right on his head as he's about to knock

again.

Me: how the fuck did you get in my house?

I said breathing and pulling my gun down. I walk to the drawer and put it back to it's place.

Ziggler: you sleep a lot, I thought you were dead. Oh good morning to you too

Me: morning, how did you get in?

Ziggler: remember I have security taking care of you as you breath?

He said placing the tray of food on my lamp side table and looking at me weirdly.

Me: thank you now can I have some privacy please, and tell your boss that I'm very angry at him right now.

Ziggler: you have to understand, he's very busy and not at the right state of mind at the moment

Me: sure, please leave

I'm irritated right now. Siphon hasn't called, Noe he has the whole army in my house and I can't even have decent privacy. Fuck. This is some serious shit.

Ziggler: eat up and come down stairs please

He walks out and I slam the door shut. I need to relax, I'm not gonna allow

Sipho's shit to put my baby's life in danger. He hasn't even bothered to check up on me or our baby. I want to cry. Or maybe I'm just exaggerating and it's the hormones kicking in. I do breathing exercises and sit on the bed. More calmer now. I start eating my food quietly and a message pops up on my phone, it's an unknown number. My heart skips hoping that it's Sipho. But it's not.

*****UNKNOWN*****

Hello Miss Phakade. I hope you're enjoying your sweet pregnancy because it won't last long. Oh and this sexy hunk of yours, damn you had it all girl. I can

just fuck him once and I would have him running after my ass like a lost puppy. It's time you find out who your enemies really are Phakade. Watch your back bitch because I'm coming for you. I'm the new Queen, you're too slow to be the Queen, plus, I can have it all in just a click of a finger. Be careful Phakade, I'm warning you. Step down, or else.....

*****UNKNOWN*****

I screamed after reading the message and ran to the bathroom and puked immediately. I vomited my lungs out with tears running down my cheeks. What if this food was poisoned? I feel a warm hand brushing my back and

turned around hugging onto the person, hoping that it's Siphon. They can't take my baby away, no, never. I will never allow that to happen. I looked up into the person's face and it was Ziggler. I don't trust anyone at the moment. I can't trust no body right now.

Ziggler: are you OK? Is it the food? don't you like it?

Me: get me on the phone with Siphon, now!!

I wiped my tears and walked to my wardrobe, took out some jeans and a top.

Ziggler: he's busy at the moment

Me: I don't care if he's jumping into a fire just get me on the phone with him right now

He instead takes my phone and reads the message then turns red in the face.

Ziggler: shit, Tumisani why didn't you tell me about this, I need to track down this

Me: Ziggler I don't trust anyone right now so it's either you let me talk to Siphon or kill me if you're the one who's after me

He looks at me offended and sighs.

Ziggler: I can't believe you have so little trust in me. I was the one who saved your life a few months ago and this is

the way you repay me, if I wanted to kill you then I wouldn't have waited for this long, I know I worked for monster but that doesn't mean I'll betray Siphos like this.

He storms out and I lock the door. I feel guilty but it's not my fault I'm insecure at the moment, I don't know who to trust, what if the person who is after me is right under my nose. I sigh and change into my jeans and grey top with a black leather jacket and Nike kicks. I'm breath holding my tummy before exiting the room and walking down the stairs. I feel like I offended him and the truth hurts, he's right, he saved my life and I'm just

being a bitch right now.

Ziggler: Here, he's on the line.

I grab the phone in excitement and walk towards the kitchen. I want to yell at him, kiss him, love him and be angry at him but I can't. I miss him.

Me: Siph

Siph: baby, are you OK? What happened?

Me: Siph I'm scared, they're after me and my baby

I find myself breaking down. Tears warmed my cheeks and I just silently sob on the phone.

Sipho: Tumsa I need you to listen to me, baby trust me ok, nothing will happen to you OK?

Me: I don't trust anyone right now, first of all I'm angry, second of all why haven't you been picking up my calls, you promised to check up on us every day. Third of all, I'm coming down there. I don't feel safe here, you're gonna tell me where the hell you are or I swear you'll never hear from me again.

I wiped my tears and sat on the barstool, now fully pissed.

Sipho: baby don't be like that please, my love you have to trust me, I can't have

you risking your life like this. Baby I'll fix this.

Me: Siphos for crying out loud I'm being threatened by a woman who wants me and my baby dead and wants you to herself and also has something to do with me being queen, why should I trust you? Give me one reason that will make me trust you?

I said angrily.

Siphos: because you love me, yes Tumsa, you fucking love me. And I don't want to hurt you right now but I'm not in the fucking right state of mind woman, I'm not in the right mind right now and I

need you to just fucking trust me!! Do you think I'm having it all glimmer and fucking shine here, for fucks sake I'm tryna protect you. Phakade I dare you, if you even try an step into this mission, I will fuck you up woman!!

He roared into the phone like a beast. This is not my man. Siphos would never swear at me like this. A tear escaped my eye and I stuttered into the phone.

Me: uh uh I, I...

Loud breathings come into the phone and I can sense the thick atmosphere that has built.

Siphos: baby I'm sorry. (sigh) Tumsa I'm

really sorry. I'm just stressed right now my love, I'm trying my best to protect you but you're not making it any easier for me. Please just trust me and the guys, I got this. OK?

Me: K

Sipho: Tumsa..

Me: hmm

Sipho: I love you guys

Me: I love you too (I heaved)

I hanged up and breathed out heavily.

My man has turned into a beast. Ziggler walks into the kitchen and looks at me.

Me: I'm sorry for not trusting you

Ziggler: it's OK, you're just stressed and your hormones are fucking with you.
(he smiles)

Me: who is after me?

Ziggler: we are still onto that. But don't stress yourself too much, we got this.
No one will harm you. Trust us.

Me: thank you.

I got off the bar stool and hugged him. I just need someone to tell me this is all a dream and all this will be over soon. I can't lose my baby. What do these people want from my life?

.

Sipho's POV

I hop into the shower and let the cold water run down my body and calm my nerves. I hate fighting with Tumisani and it hurts to see her. She's stressing me out and I'm unable to control my anger that's why I don't wanna speak to her because she'll make me feel bad. I know now that she's in danger and Thandokazi is the one who sent her that message. I don't know what game this bitch is playing at but she's pissing me off.

I get out of the shower and wear all black then march down the stairs. I haven't eaten anything solid since I got here. All I do is drink stuff without eating.

I make a sandwich and eat it up quickly.

Lwazi: slow down, you'll choke

My head flies to the door as he enters the kitchen.

Me: Thandokazi is fucking me with

Lwazi: maybe that's what she wants, to fuck with you, literally.

Me: you're insane, you know that?

Lwazi: come on man, can't you see that this woman is after you? Or are you just blind.

Me: is the driver ready? I'm not doing anything but business with that woman and if she's gonna keep threatening

Tumisani then I'm getting rid of her

Lwazi: she's not that easy to get rid of.

She's working under cover

Me: I've realized.

Lwazi: we need more time to figure out what's she wants.

Me: time is what we don't have, I need a back up plan, this woman is playing with fire man.

Lwazi: she is fire.

Me: dawg what's up with you, are you also wanting to fuck her ass?

Lwazi: niggah don't talk like that, you know I'm your best man.

Me: sure, back me up

I walk out and get into the car parked outside. It drives off towards a warehouse. Why would she want us to talk business at a warehouse? This woman is just something else. The car stops and I get out where I'm met by her at the door. She should learn to put some clothes on. She's wearing a mini skirt with a sports bra. Mxm bitch.

Thandokazi: I'm glad you came

I follow her to an office where she has a pack files on her desk. I sit down and she bends over her desk revealing her small ass to me, I chuckle and almost

laugh. This woman tho. Thandokazi: like what you see?

Me: I have an ass waiting for me back home and I would appreciate it if we keep this professional.

I said getting serious and bothered.

Thandokazi: I see (she smirks) Here is the new contract

I look through the pages and her gaze on me makes me uncomfortable.

Me: why am I not allowed to trade to this place anymore?

Thandokazi: your goods are lacking interest Mr Ndlovu, I'm restraining from making my company drop.

Me: but this is not how we do business with zoot. He pays interest and we give him goods

Thandokazi: that's where you got it all wrong, I'm Thandokazi not zoot.

Me: but...

Thandokazi: sign it or leave it, you know Mr Ndlovu we could do things the different way as well

She stands behind me and puts her hands on my shoulders and start massaging me.

Me: get your hands off of me bitch, keep your company and interest, I'm no longer working with you again.

I tempt to stand but she pushes me down and sits on my lap, brings her face closer to mine and grabs my collar.

Thandokazi: such a sexy man like you shouldn't be so tense, you deserve much more

Me: I know your plans Thandokazi, keep your hands to yourself

I shove her off me and stand up, marching to the door...

Thandokazi: dare walk through that door and you will never see your unborn baby

I turned around slowly and look her deep in the eyes. I grab her by the neck within a second and pin her hard against the

wall, I choked the life out of her...

Me: what did you say bitch?

Thandokazi: Siphoh!...(she heaves) I, i

Me: if you dare and I mean dare, touch my woman and my baby, I swear to God you will never see tomorrow again. Now tell me bitch, who are you working for??

Thandokazi: I....can't.....breath....(she heaves)

I let go of her and pull out my gun and point it to her head as she coughs trying to catch her breath.

Me: who are you working with bitch!!

I lose my temper and slap her across the

face. She stumbles back and hit her head on the wall.

Thandokazi: you'll regret this, I promise you

Me: who are you working with!!?

Thandokazi: just make sure you bring me those diamonds or else they're dead

Next thing I see is guards barging into the room and dragging me out of the room. I shoot one of them and they throw me out, kicking me. I hop into the car and it drives off. I'm pissed and I want to kill that bitch right now. She has some nerve to threaten me. Surely she doesn't know what she's doing. I pick up

my ringing phone, pissed without checking the caller.

Me: what do you want?

Karabo: why the hell would you do that Siphos, for fucks sake you're smarter than that

Me: not right now Karabo

Karabo: get your ass down here right now, I have something important to tell you.

Me: what is it?

She hangs up the phone and all sorts of thoughts pop up in my mind. Is

Tumisani OK?

LIKE COMMENT AND SHARE

The reason why I'm taking long to post inserts is because the likes and comments are not what I expected.

Come on guys there's 700 likes on this page yet my post don't even reach 200 likes, since I've started this story, none of my posts have reached 200 likes, it hurts. What am I lacking? I just don't get it . I've advertised like most people advised me to yet nothing changes. What do I lack?

[06/20, 05:21] Snr: INSERT 98

- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV

Three days down the line and still haven't heard anything from Siphho. I'm worried about him and I'm just praying that's he's OK. Dumisani also had to fly down there and I believe things are hectic there yet they don't wanna tell me what the hell is going on. I'm being left in the dark and I don't know whether they're dead or still alive but let me jus

push that thought right at the back of my mind. I don't need any stress right now, I just have to be strong for both me and my baby. I snap out of my senses and pick up the ringing phone with my hand on my stomach. It's becoming a habit for me to sit like that now, I just feel connected to my baby in some kind of way.

Me: Phakade speaking, hello?

Voice: madam, it's me Natalie

Me: Natalie why are you calling when you're here with me in the office, you can jus come up to my office if you have something to tell me

Natalie: well madam actually.....

There was a big noise in the background and I couldn't even make out what she was saying.

Me: can you perhaps speak louder, I can't hear you

Natalie: madam please Check up on the news feed, you're....uh I mean

I hanged up the phone immediately and took my tab quickly and logging onto the news feed. My heart stopped beating immediately. I gasped as my pictures were trending on the news for so many captions under it.

It read.

" Tumisani Phakade, now known as the,
" queen of diamonds" has finally been
labeled by the mob leaders"

.

" The Phakade princess is finally walking
behind her mothers footsteps of being a
gangster and a female drug lord and
mafia"

.

" Queen of diamonds has finally been
labeled after 21 years of not knowing
the owner of the deadly diamonds. She
is also part of a very dangerous gang
group known as the , " under world" , she
also owns three companies under her

late fathers name, could it be that the diamonds are making her richer and spilling more blood? "

.

Tears rolled down my cheeks. No, no, no. I play the video from the news deadlines and they are right in front of my damn company. There's a huge crowd down there and the press is here.

I switch off the video and stand up wiping my tears. I dial Natalie's number and she picks up in less then a second. Her voice is shaky and trembling.

Natalie: madam...

Me: Natalie I need you to increase the

security and get the whole staff member up in the boardroom right now

Natalie: yes madam uhm madam there's a group of men saying they're here as the security team, I don't quite understand

Me: let them in. Block all the entrances and don't let the press in here please

I hang up and Ziggler barges into my office panicking. I sigh deeply and sit down onto the couch with my elbows on my knees and my hands covering my face.

Ziggler: Tumisani I need you to be very calm right now and breath, I don't want

you panicking, please think about the baby.

He said in his most manly voice. Like hell I'm calm right now.

Me: I'm calm Ziggler, oh I'm very calm I said breathing heavily. I'm slowly and surely losing my cool.

Ziggler: no you're not, breath Tumisani, breath

I stood up and started pacing up and down doing breathing exercises.

Ziggler: we're getting there, come on breath!

He held my shoulders and I slowly

breathed calming myself down. Then it snapped.

Me: Busi, shit, Ziggler Busi and Sihle they're in danger

Ziggler: no you have to relax, they're fine

Me: no, my brothers family, no Ziggler take me there now, I'm not gonna believe you until I see them

I was now crying hysterically. Tears flooding down my cheeks like rain.

Ziggler: Tumisani....

Me: no, take me there now!!

He walked to the corner of my office and pressed a button and then the wall

opened. What!!.

Ziggler: come

I followed him down the passage with my phone and stuff and the passage led us all the way to the back exit of the building and to the private parking where there was no one there. I texted Natalie that I'm sorting everything out and that the staff should just co operate with Ziggler's people. We got into the car and it drove off immediately. My phone rang and it was Siphos. I breathed deeply.

Me: hello

Siphos: my love, babe I need you to....

Me: calm down, yes. I'm calm

Sipho: oh OK, babe there's a bit of too much happening at the moment and you won't be able to go to your house right now, stay with Busi please.

Me: are they invading my privacy as well?

Sipho: unfortunately yes, there are many journalists outside the house and you can't be there right now

Me: I hear you

I was pissed. I just want to kill someone right now.

Sipho: I love you

Me: I love you too

He hangs up and I sink deep into the car

seat. If I get to the bottom of this, I swear I'm gonna kill whoever is behind this. We get to Dumisani's house and it feels like these people are following us everywhere. There's a huge crowd outside his house and I don't know why they're here.

Ziggler: OK this is what's gonna happen, we're gonna walk through that crowd and cover for you, don't answer to anyone and don't look up, OK?

Me: got it

He opens the door And steps out with the crowd hanging over him, he opens the door and takes my hand holding me

hard against his strong chest. They try to fight us through the crowd and they keep throwing stupid accusations at me.

" Are you the one who is keeping the Diamonds?"

" did you kill Rachel in prison?"

" where are you keeping the Matthews family?"

" why aren't you taking over what you were destined for"

We get to the door and get in as his men try to fight the crowd. I breath and feel tiny fingers holding my legs. I bend down and he hugs me tightly.

Sihle: aunty, I'm scared.

I kiss his cheeks and hug him again. I pick him up and walk towards Brian, Lindiwe, Busi, Buhle and Thando who was sobbing in her mother's arms. This is too traumatizing for these poor kids. They all have sad faces on and it breaks my heart to think that I'm the cause of all this.

LIKE COMMENT AND SHARE

[06/20, 05:21] Snr: INSERT 99

- .
- .
- .

- .
- .

Layla's POV

Hala hala , did y'all miss me? I know y'all did. Well I'm back now y'all. Queen Layla is back and back with new plans. I wasn't sleeping, I was just waiting for the perfect time to rise. Well it is so believed that Tumisani has my fathers diamonds and now thanks to me she's been labeled. I made sure I put her life in danger just by labeling her. Well I just landed in SA, I've been in France all this while. After that day of the marriage, I decided to switch countries and let

everything sink in a little. But I took too much time tho because our dear brother Justin's wife gave birth. Well he got married in France to this beautiful white girl from SA and they were already together before she fell pregnant so he decided to marry her after she gave birth to my a beautiful baby girl, my niece. Lauren. I love this baby with everything in me, she's so cute and so adorable, she looks a lot like her mother but has Justin's eyes. We haven't heard anything from Zack and I really don't care, he chose his own path so fuck him. Well, back to my plan. I hear Tumisani is trying to win the Matthews mansion yet

she won't succeed because I'm back with a new plan. A plan that will blow her brains and that unborn baby of hers. I gathered my info and found out my dear sister is pregnant now I have two nieces or maybe it's gonna be a boy but I doubt she'll even come to know the gender or heart beat. It's time I rule. Tumisani can kiss her inheritance and diamonds and baby good bye oh and let me not forget, her dear boyfriend as well. Since I couldn't have Dumisani all to myself why not just have her boyfriend. My boyfriend broke up with me because of her on that day that I found out Dumisani was still alive and since then

I've been a mess. I sleep with different men and all of them are just after my damn money. So fuck Tumisani. Well guess who's also on my team.....hmmm, nah let me keep that as a secret. I won't tell y'all just yet.

I park my car outside the mansion and step out and make my way to the house. I missed home. It feels good to be back you know, I was getting bored of all that French foods and shit. I also miss my dear friends. I grab my phone from my bag and call Mia. Remember her, our lesbian high school friend. The one who had a crush on Tumisani. Ooh I hate that Tumisani, everyone keeps falling for her

like she's some kind of Goddess. But I don't care, you know why, because Layla is a bitch and she fucked almost the whole school. Including pussy's.

Mia: bitch where you been?

Me: I miss you bitch

Mia: I miss you too, and we gotta catch up

Me: how about you call the whole squad over to my place and we have a little welcome back party for me

Mia: sounds like a plan

Me: ok see yah bitch

I hang up and strip myself naked and

walk over to the kitchen. I'm all alone. This house is mine after all. I pour a glass of champagne and take the bottle with me upstairs. I wanna celebrate my arrival and my success and ever coming blessings. This is just the beginning of my revenge. Tumisani hasn't seen anything just yet. I've come back bigger and stronger. I take a quick shower and wear my blue jean shorts and white crop top. I'm working on my figure. It's time to look the part, Tumisani can't keep having it all good. I put on my sandals and leave my hair loose. I take a lot of snacks from the kitchen and throw it all on the coffee table with a lot of alcohol.

It's already getting a little dark and I wanna enjoy on this day without having to go to a club. The house door springs open and there they come like a group of monkeys. Screaming.

Courtney: oh my fuck bitch look at you all fit and sexy

She said hugging me, squeezing my ass.

Me: you don't look too bad your self.

Mia: my number one bitch

Me: my favorite bitch

She kisses my cheek and I grab her booty. I missed this ass.

Mia: maybe you should do more than

that later

She winks and I get the message. Yah yah, Mia and I fucked and damned bitch knows how to eat a pussy.

Katlego: queen L

Me: my king

He hugs me and Mbali is looking at me with evil eyes. Bitxh please y'all broke up already. Well Yah, Katlego and Mbali broke up because Katlego couldn't keep his pants closed. Mike and Courtney are still together tho, but I rode his dick as well.

Lerato: I missed your crazy ass, Cape Town was dry without you

Me: I know it was

She giggled and hugged me introducing me to boyfriend, he's flames tho, finally bitch got a dick to play with.

Me: where's Sphe?

I said talking to Mia and she looked away shyly.

Me: never mind

Mike comes in with a lot of booze and he looks cuter than the last time I saw him, I hug him as well and he hugs back longer than expected and breaks it when Courtney clears her throat. OK.....

So yah, I've fucked most of my friends boyfriends, so what? I'm not the first and

I'm sure Mbali fucked all my exes. She's a whore just like me. So we equal.

Me: y'all enjoy yourselves, we gonna drink till we die tonight

They have no idea what's going on in my life and it's best we keep it that way, they asked about Tumisani and I told them she's on a business trip to America. I ain't telling no one about my plans, I don't trust the niggahs I fuck with. I play some music and we party like there's no tomorrow. Mia takes off her top, drunk leaving her in her bra and jeans, she sits on top of me and I carry her, she's drunk as fuck. And it's only half past nine.

Mia: I Missed you

She whispers into my ear, licking my ear in the process with her hand on my boob.

Me: control yourself

I take her hand off when I see Katlego's eyes piercing right through me.

Courtney: how about we play spin the bottle, whoever it lands on should make out.

Me: great idea, Mia you gonna play along?

Mia: sure

She stumbles off me with a drunk smile on her face. We all sit on the floor in a

circle and Lerato spins the bottle first. It lands on Katlego and Courtney. Shit.

Kat: no come on!!

Courtney: can we change it...

Lerato: no!! it's the rules of the game, you have to make out (she laughs)

Katlego gets up and walks over to Courtney And gives her a short kiss on the lips which has Mike looking like a tomato. Katlego spins the bottle and it lands on Mia and I. She looks at me smiling and I willing grab her face in a long passionate kiss.

Kat: OK that's enough, stop kissing.

He pulls us apart And he's pissed. Fuck

him. I spin the bottle and it lands on Mbali and Lerato's boyfriend. Lol. Lerato looks hurt, rules of the game hey. The game continues and everyone gets a chance to kiss someone they hadn't intended on kissing. Well I kissed all the guys, which are Mike, Katlego, Lerato's boyfriend and also all the girls. Guess everyone wanted a piece of me. We all fell asleep drunk on the floor, no one dared to go to bed. The house was a mess. I had a round or two with Mia and we took a trip to muff town and it was amazing. It was 3 am in the morning when I felt strong hands on my body. I wanted to open my eyes but they were

heavy, until that person lifted me off the ground and I felt I was being carried. I opened my eyes and almost screamed but then I saw who it was and I sighed in relief. He was walking up the stairs with me in his arms.

Me: you scared me

Mike: sorry, I just couldn't keep my eyes off of you

He said slowly closing the door behind him. We were in my room and everyone else were sleeping on the floor, it's still early.

Me: what if someone realizes we're not there?

Mike: they won't

He pulls my shorts off and I pull his top off over his head. I missed his white cock. We both undress and he smashes his lips onto mine, grabbing my breast roughly. I'm wet And he's hard down there. He breaks the kiss and throws me on the bed, pinned me on my stomach and pulls me onto my knees with my chest on the bed. A perfect view of my white ass. He smashes his whole length into me and I moan loudly. Thank God my room is sound proof. They won't hear anything. He thrusts deep into me and groans loudly, fuck I missed this. He holds my waist and grinds on me after

we've both cum. I collapse on the bed and breath heavily, he holds my ass breathing heavily as well.

Mike: I missed you so much

Me: I know you did, now get off me, let me do my job

He gets off me and lays on his back, I get on top of him and ride him to the moon and back. Damn it felt so good. After we both came, he cleaned us up and put on his clothes as I went to take a shower. When I came out, he was gone. I like Mike, in fact I used to love him. But then Courtney came and he fell for her. He broke up with me for her but I

guess he found his way back to my pussy. He loves Courtney, yes, but he loves my cookie more. Katlego and I are just fuck buddies, tho he gets a little annoying and protective but I know how to shut him up. After taking a shower, I went back to bed because I had a banging headache. I drank too much last night but I had fun. I slept and was woken up by my ringing phone, the time was already 10 am.

Me: Layla speaking?

Voice: hey listen, I'm outside

Me: fuck, what are you doing here, the squad is here as well

Voice: I wanna see you

Me: can't we just meet up later, please I just got back from France dude

Voice: yet you had the strength to throw a party, woman get your ass down here or else....

Me: you don't have to be like that

Voice: OK sorry, I just miss that ass

I smiled like a retard and got off the bed, stark naked.

Me: I know you do, I'll be down in five minutes but park five houses away please.

Voice: anything for queen L

Me: kisses

I hanged up, brushed my teeth and washed my face then wore my blue lace dress. Time to have a little fun just before I hit the jack pot. Bitches I'm back!!

.

Tumisani's POV

I'm pacing up and down this room trying to figure out what the hell is going on in my life. Since this trip of Siphos everything has become a mess. I can't go to work because I'm being followed everywhere. These people think I'm some kind of goddess or something and

I have no idea who is behind this. I strip off my pajamas and take a long relaxing bath. Dumisani sure has a bomb of a house. It's even better than mine. It's really comfortable here. After the shower I wear my white sleeveless jumpsuit with roses. I don't wanna stress myself but I can't help but wonder what is going on. The things these people are saying about me on the media is out of this world. They basically have my whole life on social media right now. Well you're wondering how I have my clothes here, well I found it here when I got here, and new ones as well. Siphos tryna bribe me with clothes. He's crazy. I know

he did this, I'm pissed and worried. I don't even know how I feel, I don't know how my body is still cooperating with all these things but I just hope my baby is OK. I can't wait to go check the heart beat and get a scan. I wish Siphos was here with me. This all is making me weak and Tumisani is never this weak. I'm always emotional now a days and it hurts when I see myself break down, like right now. I'm sitting on the edge of the bed crying. This is getting too much, I just want to have peace. Is that too much to ask. Tears keep gushing down my cheeks and my heart feels too heavy to carry. I don't think I can fight this

battle, I just can't. I'm defeated and tired.
A soft knock comes through the door
and I quickly wipe my tears and breath.

Me: come in

My voice sounds hoarse and exhausted.

Busi: Tumisani (she says worried)

I look up and she sits down next to me.

Busi: you don't have to hide your tears

Tumisani, we're in this together, we're a
family and we'll fight this together.

She says holding my hands.

Me: I'm scared Busi, who are they and
what do they want from me, I really don't
understand all this, who labeled me and

what if they come after our family?

Busi: don't worry yourself too much, you're pregnant Tumisani, don't let all this affect this baby please. He/ she doesn't deserve this, this baby is innocent and you have to be strong for this baby. I know it's not easy but we're here for you, me, Buhle, Lindiwe and everyone else are here for you. If you need anything just say it, you're like a sister to me Tumisani and I love you so much, I care about you a lot and I'm sure if anything happens to you, your brother will never forgive himself. So please don't beat yourself up. Smile for the sake of your baby.

Me: thank you.

I wiped my tears and smiled faintly.

Busi: no, give me that million dollar smile, come on

I giggled.

Busi: There you go

She hugged me tightly. It feels good to have someone you can call a big sister.

Busi is just so wonderful.

Ziggler: ladies

He pops his head through the door and looks at us.

Ziggler: are you OK?

I nod and smile.

Ziggler: you have to eat, you have a meeting in half an hour with your clients.

Me: has backyard been settled yet?

Busi: everything is perfectly fine, you go ahead and eat

Ziggler: you're starving that poor kid for nothing, your husband will be angry

I smile and follow them down the stairs. They care about me so much.

Sihle: aunty!!

He jumps into my arms and I kiss his cheeks.

Thando: aunt, are you OK?

Me: I'm fine princess

I kiss her cheeks as well and Lindiwe hugs me.

We sit down and have breakfast together. So since I can't go to the office and make a broad meeting, I've arranged for all my clients and staff to come over to Dumisani's house. I have to brief them on how it is gonna work because everyone is saying I'm running a drug ring and I sell drugs to my clients which is not true because I run a legitimate business. It hurts that I might lose some of my shares but I'll have to be strong.

Ziggler: they're here

I sit down on the chair in front of the big

table filled with refreshments in Dumisani's backyard. This is gonna be long day. Natalie walks in first with my files followed by Katie, my hotel personal assistant who says the guests are scared of their safety at the hotel. I swear I'm gonna kill whoever did this to me. They all fill the seats and I'm afraid they don't look too happy. Ziggler stands behind me and passes me a bottle of water. I'm gonna need it. I breath before I lift my head up and feel there eyes piercing into my skin. I can't do this. They are scrutinizing me with their eyes. I breath heavily.

Me: Good morning Everyone

Voice: what's so good about the morning?

I look up and it's my biggest investor. He's an arrogant young man and I hardly tolerate him in our meetings. Mr Frederick.

Mr Frederick: Miss Phakade with all due respect, do you understand the gravity of this situation?

Me: if I didn't understand it then I wouldn't have called for this meeting. Now with all due respect may I continue Mr Frederick?

He chuckles and opens the water bottle in front of him.

Me: I know you all now have that idea of me being what you read on the news in your heads and I totally understand. I know what was on the news has affected our business relationship and I'm afraid there's nothing I can say that will change that mindset you people have about me now....

Mr Daniels: what we want to know is that, is it true of what they're accusing you of, Miss Phakade? Do you cooperate with these gangsters and drug lords?

There's a loud murmur against them and everyone is talking. I sigh deeply. What do I do.

Mr Frederick: is it true that you're the queen of diamonds? Because if you're really innocent then how does the media come up with such things of you being the queen of diamonds. I do not associate with such dealings Miss Phakade and I'm afraid I will have to stop investing in your company. I withdraw my investments from today onwards. My PA will get back to you.

He stands up.

Me: Mr Fredericks that is not how business is done, we communicate not just sign off contracts like that, we have a business deal....

Natalie: sir please sit down and we'll talk as adults and not let our anger get in control of us.

Mr Fredericks: I'm signing off my contract and that is final, my PA will get back to you.

He walks out and next thing I see is half my clients shoving their contracts in my face.

Mr Daniels: I can not work with you anymore Miss Phakade

He gives me the contract and walks out followed but five other clients. Now here I am seated with about 7 clients who have with drawn from my company and

I'm left with only about 4 of them. I sigh deeply.

Mr Allinson: you know Miss Phakade, I can actually sue you for....

Ziggler: I think we've pretty much had enough of threats on this early morning so the rest of you will either walk out the same way you walked in or cooperate like adults and not like the rest of the hooligans who walked out now. So how will we do this?

He said sternly with his bold adult voice. They all looked at him scared.

Me: Thank you. Now are we gonna keep working together or not?

They all mumbled a pathetic yes and I asked Natalie to assign a schedule for the rest of the clients.

Me: Katie, what's happening there?

Katie: madam, there's been a lot happening. Uhm the guests have refused to pay for their stay because they're all saying you're a drug lord and they don't trust you.

Ziggler: I'll handle that. You may leave, there's a guard waiting to take you home outside.

Me: thank you for coming, keep me updated.

She smiles and walks out with the

clients who were talking with Natalie.

Natalie: don't worry about clients miss Phakade, we'll get new investors and shares.

Me: I know Natalie but it'll take a lot of time and I gave three companies to run.

Natalie: I'll get the team working, don't worry madam

me: thank you so much for your help, you may leave

She smiles and walks out as well. I cover my mouth as I feel all my food coming up. He passes me a paper bag and I vomit all my breakfast in it. This was the worst meeting of my life.

Ziggler: you OK?

I felt dizzy and tired. I drank some water and I immediately had a banging headache. I tried to stand up but collapsed back onto the seat.

Ziggler: Tumisani

Me: my head hurts

I hold my head and my eye lids feel heavily. He picks me up bridal style and I hold onto him, exhausted. What's wrong with me??

LIKE COMMENT AND SHARE

[06/20, 05:21] Snr: INSERT 100

.

We've finally reached insert 100!!! We've come a long way hey, and I just wanna thank y'all for reading my story, for liking and commenting and sharing, so thank y'all. Love you lots like jelly tots.

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV

I open my eyes and I'm laying on my bed with the lights turned on. It's dark

outside and I feel exhausted. I must have fainted again. This pregnancy is taking a toll on me. All these experiences are so weird. I'm starving. I get out of bed and put on my slippers, still in my jumpsuit. My phone rings on my side lamp and excitement takes over my body yet I don't wanna pick up. But I have to.

Me: Siphho

Siphho: babe, how are you?

Me: I miss you

Siphho: I miss you more, you fainted?

I sigh. Why did they have to tell him.

Me: I just had a headache, nothing

serious.

Sipho: Tumisani don't lie to me, you're stressing too much Tumsa, do you know you're putting the baby in danger?

Me: I'm fine Sipho

Sipho: don't give me that shit woman!!
(he shouted)

Me: don't you dare shout at me, don't
Sipho don't. How do you think I feel right now huh? Someone is messing with me and I'm not doing anything, how do you think I feel?

Sipho: Tumsa I know this is hard for you but I'm doing all I can to figure this out. I'm doing my best babe

Me: well your best isn't good enough, I'm tired of fighting all the time Siphos I'm done fighting. I'm stepping into this mission and I don't care what you have to say about my decision

Siphos: Phakade don't fuck with me

Me: no Siphos no, I'm done listening to you

I hang up and walk out the room fuming. Siphos needs to stop tryna fix everything himself, he should learn to let others help him. Mxm, I'm not gonna let him handle all my problems for me. I find everyone seated in front of the TV. Well Lindiwe Brian and Thando and Buhle as

well as the many guards are living here with us because they need to be protected in case something happens to them.

Lindiwe: chommie you're awake, are you OK?

Me: yeah yeah, I'm fine, just hungry

Busi: your food is in the microwave, should I get it for you?

Me: no it's OK, I got it. uh Ziggler can I speak to you please

Ziggler: sure

I walked to the kitchen and he followed behind me. I took my food out from the microwave and sat on the kitchen stool.

Just looking at this food makes me even more hungry.

Me: I was thinking.....

Ziggler: about?

Me: This whole mission thing, you haven't told me anything about this mission, strange

Ziggler: Tumisani it's not my place to tell you about this mission.

Me: Ziggler you're my friend, right?

Ziggler: you're not gonna use our friendship to blackmail me right?

Me: I'm not blackmailing you, I'm asking you as a friend to help me out. I really

need your help on this please just tell
me what is going on please

I said with pleading eye, looking at him
deep in the eyes as well.

Ziggler: Dumisani you do know that
telling you could get me in trouble?

Me: no one has to know you told me,
please. I'll back you up....

Ziggler: eat up, I'll be upstairs

Me: does that mean you'll tell me?

He just looked at me strangely then
walked away. Oh he better tell me what's
going on. He better. I quickly eat my
food and I must say Busi sure can cook.
Ah Dumisani is taking his own sweet

time to marry this girl, he better make quick or else someone else will put a ring on it. I walk up to Ziggler's room and walk right in forgetting to knock. Shit. I shut my eyes closed as it lands on his naked body. Well not fully naked but you know what I mean.

Me: I'm so sorry, I'm sorry..

Ziggler: you should learn to knock, you know

Me: I know, I'm sorry

Ziggler: open your eyes

I open my eyes and he's now wearing jeans with no top. He's muscular and all types of sexy.

Ziggler: staring is rude

Me: oh please I ain't staring at you

I sit on the bed and he takes out his laptop, chuckling.

Ziggler: you promise you won't tell anyone that I gave you information from the mission?

Me: cross my heart and hope to die, I won't tell no soul

Ziggler: how do I know I can trust you, what if I lose my job because of this?

Me: what do you want me to do to assure you that you can trust me?

He looked at me long and hard

scratching his head.

Ziggler: kiss me

I chuckled. I knew this niggah had a thing for me. Mxm.

Me: you're crazy, right? aren't you scared that Sipho might kill you?

Ziggler: I won't die alone because he wouldn't hesitate to kill you either.

Me: I'm not gonna kiss you, maybe something simpler would do? what do you want, money?

Ziggler: (chuckle) trust me, I have enough of that. Sit down I was just kidding, I'm just testing your intelligence.

He laughed softly. I punched his shoulder jokingly.

Me: don't fuck with me

Ziggler: it wouldn't be such a bad idea

Me: niggah get down to work already, stop tryna shag your bosses woman.

He smiles and starts typing shit on his computer. And there slowly forms Siphos whole plan. Damn this mission is harder then I thought. He lost half his Diamonds? Why didn't he tell me all this?

Me: who the hell is Thandokazi?

I said reading from the screen. He pressed a button and there she was. The bitch from the restaurant. I knew

there was something fishy about this girl. She didn't look decent or like a normal waitress.

Me: what is she after?

Ziggler: That's what we're tryna figure out and also, she's not working alone.

Me: did she label me? Is it her?

Ziggler: nope, there's a lot of missing pieces in this mission, that's why Siphon doesn't want you to step in because he's afraid of how all this will end.

Me: go back to the plan please

He went back and I read through it but stopped at a particular one that caught my attention.

Me: what!!?

Ziggler: you weren't supposed to see that.

He shut his laptop closed and packed it away.

Me: no, what the hell was that? why is he gonna seduce her? can't you change the plan!?

Ziggler: it's the only way we can get her to tell us who is working with her

Me: but why can't he just threaten her with something, huh?

I was fuming and pacing up and down. That plan didn't sit well with me.

Ziggler: she's very protected and we have nothing against her except the fact that she's not working alone to destroy you so Siphos has to seduce her and drug her for us to know the truth.

Me: that's not happening, he's not seducing anyone, never

Ziger: Tumisani calm down, it's not like he's sleeping with her.

And then it hit me. What if he ends up sleeping with her. What then?? What if she fucks my man and I have to live with that? No that can't happen. I won't look at him the same way if he sleeps with her. I know I've done it before and I

seduced men to get my missions accomplished but its different. I'm a woman and I know how to control myself but Siphos is a man, men only use their dicks to think not brains. I'm scared Siphos will end up in her bed and fucking her. No, maybe I should trust him. Do I trust him enough to let him do that? I don't think I trust him enough. I can't let him do that. But what can I do? How will I tell him that I know his plans without getting Zigler into trouble because like hell they will know Zigler is the one who told me.

Zigler: Tumisani I beg of you, you can't let them know that I'm the one who told

you about this plan. Please I beg of you

Me: Ziggler but I can't let him do this to me, what if he ends up sleeping with her?

Ziggler: I'll talk to him and make sure he doesn't do anything stupid but please just don't let them get the impression that you know about this please

Me: I, I, I...

I sat down and breathed heavily. This can't be happening. I can't be losing all my lovers because of cheating. First Yanda now it'll be Siphos, no. I trust Siphos, he wouldn't do that to me, right?

.

Siphos's POV

Me: who the hell made this plan?

Karabo: Siphon we have no other choice and not enough time, it's not like you gonna sleep with her mahn

I sat down across them and I was pissed. I only found out about this pathetic plan now and I don't like the idea of having to seduce that bitch. Its enough that I hate her now I have to see her naked body. Mxm.

I look at Dumisani and he has his head buried in his palms and Lwazi has his head in the laptop with Karabo looking at me like I'm crazy.

Me: when is this happening?

Lwazi: It's tonight.

I look at the time and it's almost six in the evening. LA time is behind compared to south African time. So they're probably at night right now. I sigh deeply.

Me: Dumisani so you agree with this?

Dumisani: we have no choice. I hate this plan but if it means it'll get us one step ahead then why not? That lady is a bitch anyways. She wanted you from day one already.

Karabo: well the other things is, we're not backing you up, you're doing this alone.

Me: what!?

Lwazi: she's organizing an event at the club tonight and she won't have any guards with her so you're safe to do this on your own.

Karabo: what we can do is cut off the cameras in the club. But the rest you can do, you know how to work a woman so it'll be easy. I suggest you go freshen up because you're on in about three hours.

I chuckle and grab a beer from the fridge before I make my way up the stairs. This mission is pissing me off day by day. I hate this plan with everything in me and

I know all this will hurt Tumisani a lot.
But I'm doing this for her. no one else
but her.

After taking a shower, and dressing hot
for some bitch. I dial her number and
she picks up without saying anything, it
hurts.

Me: my love

Silence

Me: Tumsa

Silence

A sob comes through from her side and
my heart shatters. I'm the reason for
that sob. I know she wants to help but I
can't let her do this especially when I'm

just about to seduce some other girl. I feel like I'm betraying her.

Me: baby don't do that to me, please, Tumsa please

Tumisani: Siphoshe.....(she cries)

Me: babe calm down please, I need you to be strong for me please baby

Tumisani: I love you so much, promise me you would never do anything to hurt me, please

Me: baby?

Tumisani: promise me

Me: I promise babe

It's better that she doesn't know what

I'm about to do because if she finds out, it will kill her.

Tumisani: thank you, take care of yourself.

Me: I love you two

Tumisani: we love you more

Me: I have to go take care of yourself please.

I hang up and march down the stairs. I say my goodbyes to them and walk out, I start the car and drive off. She better tell me who she's working with because I'm getting very impatient.

An hour later I step into the club and it's packed with prostitutes and clients.

Mxm, this is what she does? A girl throws herself at me, and starts grinding on me.

Me: where's Thandokazi's office?

Girl: follow me

She takes my hand and I follow her. She stops in front of the door and winks at me. I knock and she says come in. I get in and it's not an office but a room.

Thandokazi: what a pleasant surprise Mr Ndlovu, you're on time.

Me: Hmmm

I scan her from bottom to top. She's wearing a tight see through caramel dress which has a long slit from the

thighs all the way down, with hills. She looks breath taking, honestly. But just not good enough.

Thandokazi: you can stare all you like, I'm all yours tonight.

She walks up to me and pins her boobs on my chest and places my hands on her round ass.

Me: drink?

Thandokazi: you're offering me a drink in my own place, cute. Over there, I see you have a change of mind.

I walk to where she instructed and turn my back fully to her.

Me: strip for me

She giggles and starts with her shoes. I inject the drug into her glass and pour wine into it. I put the syringe deep into my jacket pocket and turn with our glasses. She's now fully naked. I smiled. Damn she's gifted tho. But that's not the plan, control yourself Siphos, I tell myself over and over again.

.

Thandokazi's POV

Siphos: you look beautiful

Me: oh really, how about you show me how beautiful I am

I walk over to him and place my hands around his neck. Oh I've been dying for

this day to come. I've always dreamt of having the almighty Sipho Ndlovu on my bed. Damn he's one sexy looking hunk.

Sipho: get drunk for me baby, you know your way around the room don't you?

Me: of course I do, give Me that and sit down

I take the glass away from him

Me: wait,

I take off his shirt and I almost melted when I saw how hot he is. Damn

Tumisani surely has a God of a man.

Well she can't be having everything now can she? She won't know what hit her.

As soon as he fucks my pussy,

everything will change, no one fucks Thandokazi and never return, they always return back to me. No matter what.

Me: take a seat

He sits down on the bed and I drink from the glass I was holding then start twirking for him. My mama sure gave me a booty and I know my way around a man. I sit on his lap and feel his hard boner. I grind on him and he grabs my boob, I moaned. He lies me down on the bed and gets on top of me.

Me: you're so damn hot

I said drunk. Wait, did I just say drunk?

Before I knew it, he had his whole weight on me and my head felt dizzy.

Me: fuck me Siphho, fuck me!!

I moaned and grabbed his dick in his pants, I was so horny yet exhausted.

Siphho: Kazi, who is your boss?

He said with his hand on my breast. I was so lost in my moans.

Siphho: Kazi who is your leader? What are your plans?

Me: fuck me, aaaahhh

He sank his finger in my nunu and I moaned loudly with my hand stroking his dick in his pants.

Me: He's my boss, I work for him

Sipho: who Kazi, who!!??

Me: Thata Tha....

Sipho: talk Kazi, talk!!??

Me: aaaaaahhhh baby!!!

He thrust his finger deeper and I came immediately, I moaned loudly.

Me: Thab.....o, aaahh Sipho fuck me!!

I pulled him up and unzipped his pants.

My body failed me and I just felt numb immediately. My eyes felt heavy and I couldn't move a finger any longer.

I felt him grab my ass and mutter something but I just moaned. " speak

Kazi, speak!!"

I moaned as his fingers kept fucking me.
It was so damn good.

Me: daddy!!!! aaahh yes ahaa

I shut my eyes and that's all I
remembered. Lights out.

LIKE COMMENT AND SHARE

[06/20, 05:21] Snr: INSERT 101

.

.

.

.

.

.

Sipho's POV

I rush into the warehouse panting and run straight to the computer room where I find everyone busy on the phone, computer and shit.

Me: did you find anything on this guy?

I said breathing heavily. The first thing I did when I walked out of that club was to call them and give them the name Thabo. That's the name Thandokazi said when I was driving her crazy and right now I feel so guilty and disgusted. I feel terrible and I hate myself right now. I

hate the fact that I had to do that to find out who is behind this and I feel like I've cheated on Tumisani.

Dumisani: that name sounds familiar, but I don't think it's the same person, it can't be

Me: do you know him?

Dumisani: I'm not sure if it's him, the only thabo that I know of is the guy I had beaten up when he harassed Layla and made a sex video of them threatening her with it so Luyanda and I did a number on him but I doubt it's him

Me: did he threaten you guys or day anything that might make him want

revenge?

Dumisani: he said that was not the end, He gets what he wants and how he wants. No man, I doubt this is the same guy because if it's him then he would've striked two years ago, why now?

Me: look up on him, I need someone to go back to Cape Town, I'm sure he's suited there somewhere.

Karabo: I'll go and ask Ziggler to look into him and also ask Tumisani a few questions about him

Me: ok, sharp, I'll be in my room.

I stormed up to my room and hopped into the shower immediately. Tonights

scene kept ringing in my mind. The way she slept moaning my name and begging me to fuck her disgusts me. I scrubbed myself and stepped out the shower. My heart was not at ease. I felt different in some kind of way. Is it guilt? I kept asking myself. I saw another woman's nakedness with my very own two eyes while I have woman that I love with my whole life. I wrapped a towel around my body and lay on the bed. I switch on my phone and a picture of Tumisani sleeping pops on my wallpaper, my heart sinks. She looks so beautiful and so innocent, young and full of life. I love this woman with everything

within me. I love her dearly. I go through our old pictures and it's so much. Some with me feeding her, with us playing with food and messing each other up and some of us when we were at the beach. She looks so beautiful, like an angel with that beautiful smile plastered on her face, I so wish it was a permanent smile. I miss her so much. I check the time and it's almost mid night. She's probably busy since it's day that side. I wanna hold her so badly and kiss her, I want her body close to mine warming me like my personal heater. Damn, I love this woman. I click on a picture of her on my chest naked. I get a boner just by

looking at that pic. She doesn't know I have it tho. That's a story for another day. Her big and juicy ass makes me wanna cum, and those boobs so beautiful and passionate like a virgins breast. I stare at the beautiful pic of my precious pearl, my gorgeous queen.

I fell asleep with the phone in my hand and was woken up the next day by my ringing phone.

Me: what!!?

I answered without checking who was calling. I was irritated.

Tumisani: that's no way to answer your phone Ndlovu.

She said sternly. I smiled like an idiot, like I've just heard that God was at my doorstep. That voice brought a smile to my face.

Me: my love

Tumisani: open the door and don't panic.

She hangs up and I sit there confused.

First of all I'm naked, second of all I just woke up and third of all she's telling me not to panic which makes it even worst.

I quickly get off the bed and wrap a towel around my waist and open the door.

The shock of my life.

Tumisani: Mr Ndlovu

She throws herself in my arms and I'm just standing there shocked. How the fuck did she get here? Who told her I was here?

Me: Tumisani Phakade, how the hell did you get here?

I said trying to keep calm and closing the door behind me. She has a broken smile on her face and it looks like she's been crying, my heart sinks.

Tumisani: don't worry about that, I missed you so much

Then came the flooding tears. She held onto me tightly and sobbed. I didn't know how to comfort her. My mind was

all over the place and I'm trying so hard not to lash out on her. I'm pissed and guilt has me. I don't hug back and just let last night's thoughts flood my mind as she cried on my chest. I can't do this, I feel terrible.

Tumisani: Siphoh!!

I snap out of it and look at her teary face. She looks exhausted and all sorts of tired.

Me: Tumisani explain yourself

These mood swings are taking over my body and I'm scared I'll hurt her.

Tumisani: you're not happy to see me?

She said sadly.

Me: do you know how much danger you've put yourself into right now? Do you??!!

I was now shouting and she looked scared, yet I can't control my anger. I wish I could.

Tumisani: Siphohave you been taking your pills?

Me: so you think I'm crazy!!?? huh, you think I've gone mad!!!???

I banged the wall and throw the things off the table.

Tumisani: babe please calm down, I didn't say you're crazy, my love please calm down

She said panicking.

Me: you think I'm crazy Tumisani? Here I am trying to get you out of danger but you're too stupid to understand that I'm doing this for you, can't you fucken see I'm doing this for you, you b.....

A slap landed on my face and I faced the other way.

Tumisani: you will not disrespect me like that Sipho, never!!!

She shouted with tears rolling down her cheeks, breathing heavily.

Tumisani: you think I'm happy that my life is in danger?? huh? do you think I fucken wake up and be oh yes my

fucking life is in danger and I'm over the moon about it!! you know what, fuck you

She turned around and started walking away to the door, she held the handle and within a second I was holding her hand.

Me: babe I'm sorry, please forgive me, I'm sorry my love

Tumisani: Siphos let go of me

Me: baby I'm sorry, I beg of you please don't leave me, please

I knelt down holding her legs and she had her head on the door, crying.

Me: I'm so very sorry babe, I won't shout at you like that my love, I won't

disrespect you, I promise

I held tightly onto her feet and my heart was broken into a million pieces.

Tumisani: did you do it?

Me: do what?

Tumisani: did you fucken sleep with her!!?

I looked down and my body was all of a sudden weak. How do I tell her?

Me: I didn't sleep with her but....

Tumisani: don't fucken lie to me Ndlovu, don't you dare!!

Me: I, I, I,

Tumisani: let go of me!!

She pushed me aside and stormed out of the room. I sat on the floor helplessly. What has Thandokazi gotten me into?

.

Tumisani's POV

I thought I would get here in time to stop him from doing it but I guess I was wrong. I took a flight last night to LA and prayed to get here before the mission but.....it hurts. The fact that he still had the nerve to call me stupid and shout at me makes me even more hurt. He looks like a totally different man to me and I don't think I recognize the Siphon I fell in love with. He's just different. His voice

has change, his character as well. He didn't even hug me back when I was crying. All this just hurts so much and I just can't wait to get my hands on that bitch.

Me: Karabo please not right now, I'm not in the mood

Karabo: Tumisani trust me, he didn't do it, Sipho loves you and he would never do anything to hurt you or your baby

Me: where is my brother?

Karabo: Tumisani listen to me please

I ignore her and walk to an open room far from the kitchen and there I find Dumisani in his pants and on the

computer.

Dumisani: Phakade, what the....

I throw myself in his arms and just cry.

He keeps quite and holds me, placing me on his lap. I cried my lungs out, all I need to do right now is release all my pain through my tears, I just need to cry so I can feel better.

He rubbed my back and soothed me as I slowly got back to my normal self.

Dumisani: talk to me

He said placing me on the bed and grabbing an elastic to tie up my curls that are now all over the place. Then he kissed my cheek and sat next to me. I

felt much calmer in his presence.

Me: I'm sorry for not telling you that I was coming

Dumisani: it's OK but I'm upset that you didn't think before you came

Me: I know, but Dumsa be honest with me, did Sipho cheat on me?

He looked away and I knew immediately that he was part of this plan.

Dumisani: tumsa you have to trust him, he loves you a lot Tumsa but you don't trust him, he loves you and he's doing all this for you

Me: did he do it or not?

Dumisani: no, he....

Me: mxm

Dumisani: phakade you're stubborn, trust the guy, he's been going crazy since he got here, and he's not mentally stable yet.

Me: he's stubborn, I told him to take his meds but he doesn't listen, now he's cheating on me.

Fresh tears rolled down my cheeks and I didn't know who to believe now. All I want is the truth.

Dumisani: you're making me feel weak with your tears

He said wiping my tears and pecking my

cheeks.

Me: I need to go

Dumisani: no where to?

Me: I'm doing things my way, Dumisani don't stop me, I beg of you

Dumisani: Phakade if anything happens to my niece, I won't forgive you

Me: I love you, take care of yourself and Siphos, I'm angry and I don't wanna talk to him right now

Dumisani: he did it for you

I pecked his lips lightly and stood up.

Me: he should've let me get into this mission sooner than more

I opened the door and walked out of that warehouse and to the black BMW. I got inside and Ziggler drove off.

Ziggler: you're gonna get me into big trouble

He said taking off his mask.

Me: I'm sorry, I'll protect you

Ziggler: they probably already know that it's me who gave you information, shit

Me: hey relax please, take me to that bitch

Ziggler: tumisani no, you need back up, you can't go there alone

Me: Ziggler dont piss me off

Ziggler: you're stubborn, wait, do you know any guy by the name of Thabo?

Me: nope no idea.....wait.....

I thought deep and hard. It can't be.
Then it all sank in.

LIKE COMMENT AND SHARE

The less likes and comments, the less inserts. Come on people let's do something as simple as liking and commenting.

[06/20, 05:22] Snr: INSERT 102

- .
- .
- .
- .

Layla's POV

The plane lands and I can't wait to get off this plane. I get flight sickness and I just want to vomit. I've been keeping it in since I got on this plane and so hate going on a plane.

Voice: you ok?

He says squeezing my hand.

Me: I'm gonna puke

As soon as we departed the plane I

threw up immediately. The air blocked my nostrils and my chest felt tight. So much for being in a new environment. He passed me a bottle of water and I drank immediately.

Voice: let's go, I think we're being watched

Me: what, don't we have undercover security?

Voice: they're only outside the airport
I follow him and we rush down to the formalities. Here I am in LA ready to shoot my next plan. I heard my sweet sister is here too and because the person I'm working off blew our cover,

I'll have to step in.

Me: wait, don't turn around but there's a guy staring at us from far and he might recognize you, here wear this

I pass him my scarf and he tries to covers his face up. We march out the airport and into a black BMW.

Me: who are they?

Voice: Your sister is here? Why the fuck didn't you tell me?

I looked away. I didn't want him to find out because I wanna deal with her myself. And plus, he's obsessed with her and I don't want him lusting over her because I know for a fact he's only with

me for my cookie but he wants
Tumisani.

Me: can we not do this right now?

Voice: explain yourself Layla!!

Me: baby....

The car stopped and we both looked out
the window.

Voice: shit!! Duck quickly

I ducked down and hid my face. Then
there was a knock on the window

TK: relax its me

Voice: hey beautiful, you scared me, I
thought it was the enemy

TK: get out the car

I stepped out first and just looked at this bitch. She betrayed us and slept with the enemy now she wants to act all happy like its all fine. I'm sure she hasn't told him yet but I've been watching her every move.

He steps out and kisses her right on the lips, in front of me. I'm fuming with anger and I wanna rip her eyes off their sockets. Why do all these black and colored girls keep taking what belongs to me. I hate Tk and Tumisani with passion, but as for TK I have no choice but to work with her because it's the only way I can get rid of Tumisani.

Voice: Layla, come

I walk towards them and into the huge house with guards outside. Wait this isn't a house, this is a club. I look at him and he has his hands holding her waist, the one on her waist and the other on her ass. Bitch.

I follow them inside and there's prostitutes everywhere just not customers or clients. These women look damaged, mxm.

Voice: ladies I have business to sort out, have fun

He walks away and the bitch grabs my hand and walks me to her office. She shuts the door behind us.

Thandokazi: i don't like you

Me: who said I liked you too

Thandokazi: you don't have to, you just have to tolerate me. First things first, get your white paws off my man, he's mine and mine only, the only pussy he fucks is mine, understood?

Me: if you can get your black paws off Sipho then it's a deal

Thandokazi: bitch don't test me

Me: how about I examine you?

I say with a raised eyebrow. She thinks she's got it all covered, but she doesn't. I walk over to the whiskey and pour one for myself, I push my hair to the back

and look at her looking at me as well.

Me: you sold us out, you think I don't know? was he good in bed? Is his dick too big for you?

Thandokazi: you better watch your tongue Layla

Me: It's Queen L to you, Slut

Next thing I see is her slapping me.

Thandokazi: call me slut one more time Layla, I dare you

Me: slut

I slapped her back and pushed her backwards.

Me: dare touch me and he'll know all

about your betrayal, I'll tell him then we'll see who is in charge here

Thandokazi: he won't believe you

Me: oh really, let's see

I took out my phone and dialled his number. I looked at her straight in the eyes.

Thandokazi: OK, OK, stop please!!

Me: thought as much, sit your ass down, we need to talk some serious shit

Thandokazi: you're not gonna boss me around with that flat white ass of yours

Me: try me, listen I get what I want, when I want, and how I want, understood?

Thandokazi: not when I'm around, Sipho is mine and oh if you really wanna know sex with him was so good, damn your sister sure is lucky, too bad you are the one with the bad luck

Me: shut up, do you want me to tell him about this?

Thandokazi: you're not innocent either Layla, you fuck with your friends boyfriends, who does that? Anyway, at least we both have the same targets, right?

Me: no you after the money and sex, I'm after the girl and her mans love

Thandokazi: (chuckle) which you will

never get because he loves his woman

Me: we'll see about that

Thandokazi: Layla I'm smarter than you think, we're only on the same team because of the boss otherwise i would killed you ages ago, so get your small ass together.

I looked at her long and hard. Tumisani will regret ever being my sister. I have to add Justin into this as well and I want her kidnapped. Siphos will be mine and I'll take those diamonds as well, I'm the one who's supposed to be queen of diamonds not her. She'll regret this.

.

Tumisani's POV

I sat on the bed with my lap top on my lap and Ziggler looking stressed as hell. I feel bad for putting him in this situation but I needed his help. It hurts that Siphos has cheated on me just to save me but I have to live with the reality. I can't face him right now because his face scares me. My baby has turned into a crazy monster. I know he's tryna protect me but I can't help but feel insecure. I've found out that Thabo is one of the guys that are after me and it scares me because that bastard is sick in the head.

Ziggler: Tumisani, why is your sister in LA?

Me: what!!? where did you hear that?

Ziggler: our guys where checking out the airport since Karabo flew down to SA but then the footage shows your sister with some guy but his back was away from the footage so we couldn't see his face. He was wearing all black and also a hoodie.

Me: could be her boyfriend, or she's here to visit

Ziggler: doesnt look like it

Me: did they follow her and see where she went?

Ziggler: no after they left the airport our men couldn't catch up with them, she

just looked civil and normal tho

Me: why is she here tho? Does Siphon know about this?

Ziggler: no and he's been a mess since you left, he needs you, He's breaking everything and he cut himself

Me: what!!?

Ziggler: Tumisani you're getting me in trouble, I cant be working for both you and him, you're.....

There was a knock at the door. We both froze.

Me: did you order anything?

Ziggler: no

Then the door burst open and he enter.
He looks horrible. His hand is bandaged
and he has facial hair, less then two
days and he looks like a gorilla.

Sipho: Ziggler get out

Without saying anything he got out. I
just looked at him blankly. I want to hold
him but all this is just too much for me.
He touched another woman.

Sipho: baby I didn't do it, I promise you I
didn't sleep with her.

Me: then why didn't you answer me
when i asked you yesterday? Why did
you look guilty?

Sipho: because..... (sigh) because I

seduced her and got her naked but
Tumisani I swear on my mothers grave, I
didn't sleep with her. Baby I respect you
and I wouldn't do that to you, or us.

Me: Siphohave you been taking your
meds?

Siphohave baby don't be upset please, I need
the anger, I need it so I can stay focused
to fight this battle for the three of us

He said walking towards me. I missed
him so much.

Me: baby sometimes you need to trust
me as well, I know what I'm doing babe

He sits next to me and shut the lap top,
scooped me up and pulled me onto his

lap. I missed his arms. His touch and his lips.

Me: you hurt yourself

I said running my hand down his bandage.

Sipho: it's the emotions

Me: babe i beg of you take your meds, if this continues like this I'm afraid you'll hurt me

Sipho: I would never hit you Tumisani and if I do, please pack your bags and leave me, and never look back. If it ever comes to that please leave me, I'm against woman abuse and if I hit you please leave me.

Me: Siphon, do me a favor and let me take control of this mission

Siphon: Tum....

Me: Ndlovu don't argue with me, you need therapy and I will not bring my child into a world like this, I don't want my child to grow up with a father who won't be emotionally healed. baby please

I cupped his face and looked into his beautiful eyes. He needs me the most right now and I'll support him

Siphon: OK fine, but I'm leaving your brother in charge

Me: no problem. You go back home and

I'll figure everything out, promise me
you'll go to therapy every single day

Sipho: can't I just stay here with you, I
don't wanna be far from you, I want you
to be my therapist

Me: you can stay but I'm getting you a
therapist and we'll start all over again as
long as you promise not to interfere in
this mission any more

Sipho: I'll try

Me: dont test me Ndlovu

Sipho: stop talking too much and kiss
me already

He pulled my face and gave me the
most needy and passionate kiss ever.

Love was dancing on our lips. He grabbed my ass and I moaned, then I remember that he's hurt so I broke the kiss.

Me: baby you're hurt, we not getting intimate till your hand heals

Sipho: aaah Tumsa, please I missed my palace

Me: Ndlovu don't be stubborn, look at your hand

Sipho: I missed you

He kisses my neck and I giggle. He's hands keep traveling around my body and I want him too but I know he'll hurt his hand in the process.

Me: let's rather make it easier for you

I smashed my lips onto his and kissed him hungrily.

.

I'll continue

[06/20, 05:22] Snr: CONTINUATION

.

.

.

.

.

I get on top of him and he groans loudly holding my waist. I shut my eyes as the sensation runs through my blood. I moaned loudly and curled my toes, shutting my eyes in the process. I moved up and down, up and down and soft moans escaped my mouth, I bit my lower lip hard and I increased my pain. He's cursing and calling out my name as his nails dug deep into my thighs. I moaned out his name and my body became tired. He swayed his hips to help me thrust deeper and I moved to his rhythm, our skin clapping against each other. I felt my orgasm get real close and I increased my speed even

more, he groaned loudly and I exploded and he did too, right after me. I moaned before collapsing onto his chest. Best ride of my life. He holds me hard against him as his stick poked my entrance. I kissed his cheek breathing heavily.

Me: I missed you so much

Sipho: I missed you more my love

He pulls me up and our lips meet, he grabs my ass and takes me by surprise, I giggled.

Me: where do you think Ziggler is?

Sipho: Lwazi was waiting for him downstairs so I think he's gone.

Me: baby don't be upset with him please,

I forced him into it

Sipho: I'm only calming down because I love you, otherwise i would've knocked him out

Me: Babe....

Sipho: don't talk about it any further, shower with me

He gets off the bed butt naked and I smile at his sexiness. He carries me off the bed and i jump off his arms.

Me: Sipho you're stubborn, your hand is hurt my love

Sipho: but I wanna hold you, just let me carry you Tumsa stop making me feel like a baby

Me: but you are a baby, you're my baby

I said running my hands through his curls and he had his arms around my waist, pecked my lips and spanked my ass with his free hand.

Me: Ouch Siphoh!!

I pushed him and rubbed my sore ass. He hit me hard.

Siphoh: baby

Me: leave me alone

I walked to the bathroom and switched on the shower, a while later he got in and hugged me from behind.

Siphoh: this ass drives me crazy, Phakade

He bites my shoulder and i moan.

Sipho: this body makes my world spin

He goes lower kissing my back and bites my back then lands on my ass. He kisses it and I moan loudly holding onto the shower wall. He bites my ass and I giggle with a moan. This dude is nuts, he chuckles. He separates my legs and gets under me. Here goes a trip to muff Town.

An hour later we're laying on the bed cuddling naked under the blanket. I don't know why, but this couple likes being naked in each others presence. It's cute, turns me on. I love my man.

A message pops on my phone and it's unknown. Siphho grabs my laptop and I give him a warning eye. He doesn't listen. The message reads....

**** UNKNOWN****

Hello, hello

It feels good to be fucked by your man hey, and plus he didn't use a condom. How sexy can he get, hmmm yummy!!!

Watch your back bitch, I'm coming.

Then there was a pic of Siphho on top of a drunk Thandokazi, she was naked and he was shirtless. I sighed deeply.

Sipho: baby you don't believe this right?
Tulsa they're tryna break us up, I didnt
sleep with her my love .

I look at him and for the first time I
believe him. His eyes look innocent and
it makes me wanna believe him.

Me: I trust you

I delete the message and lay my head
on his chest. That bitch won't know
what hit her. That's a promise.

Sipho: Your sister is here?

Me: apparently

Sipho: why is she here? could it be that....

Me: no Sipho, she won't dare, I taught

her a lesson and I promised her if she dared come after me she'll regret it, I doubt she's after me

Sipho: how are you so sure? This can't just be a coincidence Babe, I don't trust her

Me: me neither but I doubt she's after me

Sipho: OK, guess what?

Me: what!

Sipho: gosh you suck, I said guess, anyway, I got you new clients.

Me: oh my gosh really!!!

Sipho: yep, I pulled a few strings with my

clients and they agreed to work with you,
just need to set up a meeting

Me: can i send them to Natalie, I won't
be back in time

Sipho: they're willing to wait

Me: ooh thank you my love

I pecked his lips, smiling.

Sipho: anything for my queen of
diamonds

I giggled and he started touching my ass
again. Gosh, he just doesnt know when
to stop.

Me: you love my fat ass don't you

Sipho: more than anything

I giggled and kissed his chest as his hands kept rubbing my ass. Then there was a loud bang and I gasped in fear. I sat up and looked around. Siphon whipped his gun from under the bed and I getting dressed immediately.

Siphon: who is it?

He said walking towards the balcony with his gun held up.

I got dressed in black jeans and black top with black boots and whipped out my gun as well. Then it hit me, Siphon is naked, I looked at him and he was about to open the sliding door

Me: baby you're naked

I whispered and threw him his shorts. He quickly wore it and walked towards the door as he walked to the balcony. I opened the door and looked on the right side of the passage then left, I screamed my lungs out and got a sock in my mouth. They grabbed my gun and pulled me out the room, then injected me. Boom lights out.

.

Sipho's POV

I heard her scream and rushed towards the door, i turned the handle but the door was locked.

" shit!!"

I moved back a bit then knocked the door down. I looked right then left and marched towards the elevator, I got in and as soon as it hit the last floor, I ran out with my gun in my hand. I saw how they put her in the booth and I run towards the car and shot one of them. The car started and tried to shoot the wheels but missed. Shit!!.

Lwazi came running towards me with Dumisani driving behind him. I hopped into the car and he sped off. They passed me clothes and I quickly got dressed within a second.

Dumisani: Ziggler!!!

He roared pissed.

Ziggler: they're on the main road. That black SUV right in front

He said busy on his computer trying to track them down. Tumisani's Necklace has a tracker but she doesn't know. I pray they don't take it off.

Dumisani: shit, traffic!!

He banged on the steering wheel and my eyes turned red.

Me: where the hell were those guards when these people got into the hotel!!

Lwazi: come on man, werent you the one who gave them a day off, xek

He clicked his tongue and I just remembered what i did. I gave them a day off because I was sure I would be with Tumisani the whole day today. I was sure I would be fucking her brains out the whole night so I thought security wouldn't be necessary. Shit was I wrong.

Dumisani: Ziggler

Ziggler: we lost them, the the traffic is heavy

Dumisani: fuck don't say that!!

He bangs on the steering wheel and anger filled his veins.

He pushed through the traffic and could've killed us all if he doesn't control

his driving. People are beeping at us but does he give a fuck, no

Ziggler: we're on, they're headed towards the head quarters in the far east of.....

Me: far east of what?

Ziggler: California

Me: what? why?

Lwazi: wait there's a head quarter there?

Ziggler: wait... the car cables are exploded

Me: what!!!

Ziggler: the car is on fire, look here theres a red dot on the computer which

means the cables have been cut off and the only way to do that is to make the car explode

Dumisani: this is a trap

Me: her necklace?

Ziggler: they've taken it off, there's no location

Lwazi: they've switched cars and burnt the previous one so we don't find them, keep driving towards there

Ziggler: there is no way you can get to California without cutting the ocean, they changed their destination

Me: gosh (I sighed) get me on the phone

Dumisani: we don't know who it is yet

Me: like hell I do, Thandokazi sent her another threat earlier today and it says she's coming.

Dumisani: did you find where Thabo is?

Ziggler: apparently he's in the US at the moment

Lwazi: are you sure the guy that was with Layla is not Thabo?

Dumisani: that's impossible, He threatened her so why would she work with him?

Lwazi: if Thandokazi is working with Thabo to get to Tumisani and they know so much about her then hell yes there is

someone close to Tumisani that is working with them

Dumisani: Layla wouldn't dare

Me: Tumisani said the same but how are you so sure?

Ziggler: wait there is a location, Siphos is there anything else that Tumisani is wearing that has a tracker?

Me: no, she only had her gun with her and I'm sure they took it away from her

Ziggler: how many guns does she have?

Me: Two, one that she holds and the other one she puts in her pants when she's wearing boots.....wait...

Ziggler: was she wearing boots?

Me: yes, yes she was wearing jeans a black top and black boots, (I chuckled) my baby is clever. Her gun has a tracking device and it's in her pants underneath her boots

Ziggler: smart ass boss

Dumisani: I taught her well

Ziggler: They're actually kinda far but as long as we have a location then it's cool

Me: call the team and ask them to follow up, How's Karabo?

Dumisani: they are now after my family, if I get my hands on these people, I pray their ancestors accept them in hell

Ziggler: Karabo needs back up Sipho, the team is lacking direction, if we don't act fast, Tumisani's loved ones are gonna be in danger and I'm sure we all know how pissed she gets when someone messes with her loved ones.

Dumisani: and y'all don't know how I get when someone messes with her

He keeps his focus on the road and his eyes have a burning desire to kill. I know how pissed he is right now. She's his everything.

If they hurt her or the baby this will destroy me. I hope we find her sooner or else I'll go crazy. Tumisani be strong

baby, I'm coming. I won't let anything happen to her. Not this time. Not even once. Thandokazi doesn't know who she's messing with. Even though she'll keep Tumisani captive, Phakade will never rest till she hurts her. I know my woman.

Should I continue?

I'm paying for leaving y'all.

Should I?

[06/20, 05:22] Snr: INSERT 103

.

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV

I open my eyes screaming out loud as the cold water hit my body. I shivered in cold and tried to keep calm. I controlled my breathing and tried to move my hands but it felt like it was tied up to the back of the seat. I tried to move my legs but they were also tied up.

" oh relax sweetie, you ain't going anywhere"

The lights flicked on and there in front of me stood the bitch herself. Thandokazi.

Anger filled my veins and I wanted to kill her right now. Just looking at her makes me sick. Her presence intoxicates me and suffocates me.

Me: you bitch

Thandokazi: I would watch my tongue if I was you

She pulls a chair and sits right in front of me. She's really ugly for my liking, both on the inside and outside. I don't know what on earth she thinks she is.

Me: I can't wait to get rid of you

Thandokazi: it's the other way around babe, I can't wait to get rid of you.

She takes out a gun and points it to my

head. I chuckle.

Me: shoot me, what are you waiting for?

I look her deep in the eyes and her soul fears me. She doesn't know who she's messing with.

Thandokazi: wait, I have a surprise for you sweetie.

Then I hear hills marching down the passages and I can feel her presence. Her presence fills the room and I wish I had listened to my instincts. I wish I listened to Ziggler.

Layla: surprise, surprise little sister

She says with a sarcastic tone. Her figure has changed into an hour glass.

Her ass has grown into my shape, oh my gosh you would swear we're twins. You've got to be kidding me. So she went through surgery just to look like me? Just because of jealousy.

Me: I should've known it was you I said through gritted teeth, Siphos better find me quickly because I can't wait to kill these bitches.

Layla: did you miss me? How do you like my ass now Tumisani?

Me: oh you mean that fake ass from plastic surgery, no I don't like it at all sis Her eyes turned red and she slapped me twice across the face. They shared an

evil laugh and I fought back tears. I tried to move my hands out the rope but it was too tight.

Thandokazi: did you like the pic I sent you, your man sure knows how to fuck a pussy girl

Me: shut up you slut

Thandokazi: oh you don't know how slutty I can get

She takes out a pocket knife and Layla starts taking a video

Thandokazi: I'll show you how slutty TK really is

She stands behind me and grabs my kneck from the back, the coldness of the

knife hits my skin and I feel the blood dripping down my chest. Pain consumed me. She cut me hard and painfully. Making sure to make a long line down my neck. I fought back tears. I wanted to scream out in pain but never let your enemy see you cry, or your pain.

Layla: ooh lovely, your man sure will love this.

They spit in my face and start beating me up. I cry for my baby, I cry for my life and I cry for my end. She kicks my stomach multiple times and choke me, I lose my breath and my face turns red. She makes cuts all over my arms and pulls onto my hair.

" aaaaaahhhh"

I scream in pain. Tears flooding my cheeks. My eyes roll to the back and I feel like my life is being flashed right in front of me.

" Enough!!!"

They let go of me as the deep voice fills the room. I look towards the door as the devil himself enters the room. I'm a mess, there's blood all over and I have cuts on my neck and arms. There's choke marks on my neck and I just pray my baby makes it out here alive. I should've known it was the three of them. I should've just know.

Me: you'll pay for this

I say breathing loudly. I cough and spit out blood. My throat is dry and my voice is hoarse.

Thabo: wow look at our beautiful gone wild

He laughs and so do the two bitches. I spit on his shoes and he plants a kiss on my forehead. I can't turn my head because of the painful cut on my neck.

Me: don't touch me

Thandokazi: listen sweetie we gonna cut one of your toes and send it to your lover so don't worry, it won't hurt.....

Me: don't touch me

I squealed.

Layla: no wait, let her sign the papers first before she dies

Thabo: both of you shut up, I need to have my way with this chick first.

Thandokazi: Thabo don't fuxk with me

Layla: Thabo vutsek

Thabo: repeat that and I'll show you what I'm made of

They both shut up and he takes out an injection. Tears prick the corners of my eyes and I shut my eyes and pray. Lord save me.

Thabo: this might hurt sweetie but not

too much, don't cry now OK, I'm just gonna have a little fun with you alright...

He walks towards me and I swear the world is against me. Siphos where are you. I cried. Dumisani save me. My heart pounded with so much pain and hatred. If only I could get my hands free. They will pay for this if I make it out here alive. I open my eyes and the prick of the needle takes over my body. Gogo, if you can hear me, do come to my rescue. That was my last prayer.

I know I know, it's short. I'll make it up to y'all.

[06/20, 05:23] Snr: CONTINUATION

.

.

So sorry for the delay.

.

.

.

Sipho's POV

I wake up in the middle of the night with my heart beating hard against my chest. My body feels numb and my mind feels intoxicated with thoughts. I can't breath and my chest feels tight. I close my eyes

and open but nothing happens. I try and slowly breath and I feel my body slowly recovering. This all is just weird. As I try to process all this I loud bang comes from downstairs and I immediately get off the bed, racing to the door. I get there and find them all panicking. Dumisani is fuming, Ziggler looks terrified and Lwazi is holding his phone, worried.

Me: what's going on? what happened? I'm nervous and I don't know why. My heart starts racing and i knew immediately, Tumisani needs me. Lwazi passes me the phone and my heart stops beating.

She's tied up on a chair wet, her hair is a mess and she has a knife cut on her neck, she's bleeding everywhere on her arms and she looks like she's been beaten up. Anger boils my blood and I roar throwing the phone onto the wall. My eyes turn red and my heart pounds in my chest. They will pay for this.

Lwazi: we have to go now!!

Dumisani marches up the stairs and I follow. He looks like he could kill the whole world right now. His veins are popping out of his face and arms, the anger written on his face is priceless. I pull on a black pair of jeans and a black shirt with three guns and five knives. I

run back down the stairs and we plan our steps first.

Dumisani: I'm going through the main entrance

Me: I'm not letting you do that, they're armed

Dumisani: I don't give a damn, I'm gonna save my sister and that is final

Me: Dumisani.....

My phone rings and interrupts us, I answer without checking the caller ID..

Me: speaking...

Voice: Siphob!!!!

Her voices breaks my heart in an instant.

She's crying and screaming into the phone.

Me: Tumisani!!! baby can you hear me!!

Tumisani: Siphos save my baby please, Siphos!!! (she cries)

Dumisani: Tumsa, hello!!!!?? (he roars into the phone)

Tumisani: aaaaahhhh (she screams) don't touch me, no, no..

Voice: you bitch!!

There was a hitting sound in the background and Tumisani screaming her lungs out. It was a mans voice.

Me: hello, Tumisani!!! hello!!

Tumisani: aaaahh please, aaahh my baby!

She cries. It sounded like she was being kicked in the stomach, my heart pounded faster and we got into the car and drove off with many guards following behind. The call was still connected and hearing her scream in so much pain like that, angered me. Her screams slowly faded and then it was silent. Her brother had his hands in big fists on his side, he was pissed as hell. My face turned red and so was my eyes. Voice: now listen here, (he said into the phone) if any of you dare come looking for us, I'll make sure I kill her and this

thing inside of her

Dumisani: Thabo, I swear on my life I don't find you and kill you today then my name is not Dumisani Phakade

Thabo: vutsek wena mahn, let me tell you something. Her life is now in my hands, she's just as useless as death, she's as good as dead. She's already lost everything so what's the point of being alive

Me: boy i pray your ancestors accept you in hell

Thabo: fuck off, say goodbye to this unborn baby of yours. Even if she makes it out here alive, she will never give birth

again, that's a promise

Ziggler signaled me not to cut the call because the location was near.

Me: you better tell those prostitutes that you work with that I'm coming for them

Thabo: they're already out of the country baba, they got what they want, Layla got Tumisani's companies signed back into the Matthews name, Thandokazi took half the shares oh and let me not forget she's on her way to get those three diamonds.

Fuck. They played their game fairly well, didn't they. No once again Tumisani loses everything. If I lose my baby I will

never spare their lives.

Thabo: now listen, as we speak I'm already clearing your bank account and also your gold and diamond factories so you're as good as broke. I've had my way with your woman and I think she's losing her life as we speak. So see you in another world. You and this bitch of yours are officially broke.

He hangs up and Lwazi stops the car in front of a different warehouse. Dumisani runs out the house unprotected and I follow after him. We shoot down a couple of guards and he marches up the rooms screaming out Dumisani's name as I back him up.

I barge into a room where I find her lying on the floor lifeless. My world crumbles to the floor.

Me: Tumisani!!!

I run to her and hold her into my arms, her body is cold. Tears roll down my cheeks, my heart skips a beat.

Me: baby don't leave me please, I beg of you Tumsa don't leave me

I cried, rocking with her back and forth. I check her pulse and there is almost no beat. I feel like there's no hope. I look down and there's blood all over the floor by her lower part. No, no, she can't leave me.

Dumisani barges in and checks her pulse as well. Tears pour down his cheeks and I pray it's not what I think it is.

Dumisani: Tumsa no, don't do this to me, no!!!

He shakes her, and she just moves like she has no life in her. Her skin is pale and her body has cuts all over. She's covered in blood and seeing her like this breaks my heart.

Ziggler: we have to get her to a hospital I sit there like I'm deaf and dumb, I can't move and I can't speak. My body feels dead.

Lwazi: Siphso, come on man, have faith,
she's a fighter

Me: don't fucken tell me that, her pulse
is gone

I cried. They lift her up and march down
the stairs. I slowly follow after with tears
uncontrollably running down my cheeks.
I can't lose her. She's my world. She's
my life. She's my everything. No, God
please don't take her away from me, I
love this woman with my all.

We get into the car and drive off.

Ziggler: they've left the country, Thabo
was already gone by the time he
disconnected the call. Layla and

Thandokazi are in SA, they they (he hesitates) they've taken all her inheritance. As well as all your companies and drug trades.

I look at him like he's speaking some kind of foreign language. It feels like a big dream. Just one big dream. It has to be a dream that I'll shortly wake up from. They've left us bankrupt. How is it possible that they rob us empty. How do they know the way we operate?

Ziggler: Thandokazi knows where she kept the diamonds. I think we should take her to a private hospital, she's all over the news. Dumisani I suggest you go back home and handle the family

because your family are in danger. The media is getting too hectic over there, your sister (Vuyo) demands to see you.

Dumisani: (sigh) I'm not going anywhere until I'm assured that she's OK.

He looks out the window and avoid to look at a bleeding Tumisani in his arms. His body is covered in blood as well and seeing her so lifeless deepens the hole in my heart.

Ziggler: Sihle has fallen ill and Karabo won't be able to handle the media and everything on her own.

Me: Dumisani you have to go, your family needs you, I can take care of

Tumisani

That's if she's still alive. I want to say out loud. I feel like I've lost her. She's not breathing and her heart beat is faint.

Dumisani: Tumisani is my family too

Me: I'm here for her. I'll I'll take care of her

I said silently. I feel like I've failed

Tumisani. I've failed our baby and I know this baby won't survive. I hate myself right now.

The car stops and we all rush into the hospital with Tumisani in Dumisani's arms. The doctors attend to her immediately and it was a long process

because they've seen her on the news and they know we are gangsters. She's the queen of diamonds after all. If they call the police on us, we're in deep shit. If I set my hands on those three devils I swear not even God will stop me. We sit on the bench, each person I'm there own little brain. I have no hope in me right now. Whatever the doctor says I'll just have to accept it. I don't know how to feel or what to feel like.

Tears gush down my cheeks as the thought of losing her haunts my mind. I can't lose her Lord, please, I know I don't pray but Tumisani needs you right now, please. Dumisani has his eyes fixed on

the ceiling and they're blood shot red.
Ziggler looks stressed and so does
Lwazi.

I don't mind losing everything but I just
can't lose her. They can't defeat us once
again, no. Our love is stronger than this.

The doctor slowly approaches us
without any expressions on his face and
I have no idea what he is about to say.

Doc: Phakade?

We all stand up and stand in front of him
with pleading eyes.

Doc: I'm sorry but we couldn't save h....

120 likes and I'll post.

LIKE COMMENT AND SHARE

[06/20, 05:23] Snr: INSERT 104

.

.

.

.

Sipho's POV

Doc: I'm sorry we couldn't save her baby.....her condition was too critical and she lost a lot of blood....

I sank down on the bench as tears pierced down my cheeks. I felt like a sharp knife was just stabbed right

through my heart. My body felt numb and my muscles felt broken.

Doc: sir...

Dumisani: what did you just say?

Doc: we lost the baby

Dumisani: you're joking right? Please tell me this is a prank?

Doc: sir I take my job very seriously and.....

Me: where is she? is she alright? will she be fine?

I said quickly standing up and wiping my face, my eyes were blood shot red and I had a banging headache.

Doc: She lost a lot of blood as I've said and the cuts she has on her neck and arms are deep so we've bandaged them up and put her on medication to ease the pain, we're still waiting for the results but there something I need to talk to you in private.

Dumisani: you can say it right here doc!

Me: what is it?

Doc: from the test we've done so far it shows that she has been raped but we still need to run more test and see what the results will say....

Me: what!!!

Dumisani banged the wall, he was

fuming with red eyes and veins popping out like a monster.

That bloody bastard raped her. Oh so lord help me when I set my hands on him. I closed my eyes and breathed. My mind was spinning and I couldn't think straight. I need to calm down.

Doc: But hopefully if her body responds to the treatment she will be fine in no time

Ziggler: can we see her?

Doc: she is still unconscious but hopefully she'll wake up soon, yes you can see her, follow me.

They follow the Doc as I refuse to see

her in that state. I refuse to see her so broken and bloody like that. I can't. I won't be able to control myself. I sat there with my head buried in my hands and my mind racing. I've lost the one thing I've always wanted. I was really excited to be a father and I was hoping to finally hold my first child. Was that too much to ask?

Tumisani will be broken when she hears this. How will she react? what will I say to her? How will I comfort her?

Tears rolled down my cheeks as I sighed deeply. My hearts pain was inexplicable. I can't begin to explain how I feel right now. My heart feels like it's been torn

right out of my chest. What more could the world want from me?

I've finally lost everything. Thabo took all my companies including my underground dealings. He left me bankrupt and empty. As well as Tumisani. How will I begin to tell her that we have nothing left? How will I tell her that we've lost everything?

But I swear on my mothers life, this is not the end.

.

Dumisani's POV

No words can even begin to explain the anger, hatred and pain I feel right now.

Nothing can explain this hatred and anger in my heart.

Seeing her lying dead on this bed kills me. Her neck is in a bandage and so are her arms. Yet she reigns supreme. Her beauty keeps glowing even in this death bed. This is my fighter. She will fight this. She will fight this for me, for her Dumisani.

She's been through worse than this and I'm sure she'll get through this. Though it'll be hard but I know my princess is a fighter, not a quitter. She'll never quit so easily. I take her hand into mine and pull it to my lips. I close my eyes and kiss her soft hand slowly. Tumisani never

gives up on me. She'll wake up and stand up tall like the queen she is. My baby never falls. I peck her lips and cheeks.

Me: I'm here for you Tumsa, I'll never leave your side. I love you so much.

Tears prick down my cheeks and I cry for her sake. Only hers. She's been through so much at such a young age.

Me: Phakade don't give up, wake up and we'll fight this together. Don't worry about anything, we'll fight this as a family, OK?

I kiss her cheeks and let go of her hand softly. I fix myself and walk to the door

where I take another look at her ever flowing beautiful.

That bastard will pay. Oh he'll pay alright. No one messes with my Tumsa and gets away with it. Never!!.

I walk out and find the gents sitting back on the bench after we've all gone to see her, except Siphso. I understand how he feels. Losing a child he never even got a chance to meet. How painful is that. I just don't know how Tumisani will react to this. It'll break her.

We get in the car and drive to the warehouse. As the car parks, I get out immediately and rush to my room. I take

a cold shower and get dressed then march back downstairs where I take out three beers, I gulp the first one down and open the second one. Pain and anger fills my veins and body. That boy better pray his ancestors have mercy on him. I text Yanda the details and he answers immediately, saying he has his team working on it. I know he left the dark life but after I said Tumisani's name he just couldn't handle it. Siphos team are traitors and I don't trust any of them. It's time to bring the big guns out. Yanda's team is more reliable, the last time we did a pretty good job.

I call Busi. Sihle is not feeling well and

I'm worried. Especially now that the media has been camping outside my damn house like we're the Kardashians or something.

Busi: baby....

Me: you've been crying?

She's sniffing and her voice is scratchy.

Busi: Dumisani I need you, Sihle is not well and we can't go to the hospital because this media is following us everywhere, (she cries)

Me: (sigh) my love, I'll be home

Tomorrow, I'll take care of this I promise

Busi: thank you, thank you so much

Me: it's OK, uh there's bad news babe

Busi: what?? what is it? what happened?

She said worried.

Me: Tumisani was kidnapped by the other side and they beat her up, we we lost the baby

Busi: what!!!??

She started crying and her cries were breaking my heart.

Busi: Dumisani get her transferred here, she can't be alone there, she needs someone to be with her

Me: I know I know, she's still unconscious

Busi: babe I'm so sorry, you must be feeling terrible right now, I'm sorry

She sniffs. She's crying too much and I'm worried she might get sick.

Me: ssssh babe we'll be fine, everything will be OK, don't cry please you're hurting me.

Busi: OK, I'm sorry

Me: take care of Sihle for me, tell him daddy will be back soon OK, I love you guys so much.

Busi: we love you too, babe I'm worried about Tumisani, she was so excited for this pregnancy

Me: I know but God has his reasons, I

have to go, kiss Sihle for me and please give him his meds

Busi: I will, take care, bye

Me: love you, bye

I hanged up and gulped down the second bottle of beer. Siphon walks in the room with his boxers on and he looks drained, his eyes are red and he's weak. Tumisani will hate to see him like this. A call comes through on my phone and I excuse myself, it's Yanda. I don't want anyone to find out that I'm working with Them because Siphon and Yanda have history. I know they don't like each other.

Me: dawg

Yanda: He's in SA, I found his sister, she's also working with him but undercover, Layla has bought over three other companies with Tumisani's money and is signing off contracts she has full access to Tumisani's inheritance and sadly there's no other way to get it back. Thandokazi is also here in SA and she's looking for the diamonds and she somehow claimed Tumisani's house.

Me: did you track them down and find where they're always at?

Yanda: I've kidnapped Thabo's sister and she says he's in SA but we can't trace him, Layla has triple security at all her surroundings so it's hard to get to

her, Thandokazi is into hiding.

Me: I'll be down there Tomorrow, find Thabo's contact and tell him we have his sister captive

Yanda: don't worry, I got this, how's Tumisani?

Me: she's still unconscious

Yanda: can I transfer her myself, I don't trust that boyfriend of hers anymore, if he can't protect her then surely he doesn't love her

Me: boy, you have no choice but to trust him, she's with him now so deal with it

Yanda: ok OK, but can I transfer her?

Me: I'll do it myself once she's gained conscious, I need you to find them and please don't get your father involved

Yanda: the last time I spoke with that man was six months ago so don't worry

Me: sharp, bye

I hanged up and called the press. It's time I make a statement and stand my ground. Vuyo will have to forgive me for this. Tumisani is my life and I'll sacrifice anything for. Even my identity.

LIKE COMMENT AND SHARE

[06/20, 05:24] Snr: INSERT 105

- .
- .
- .

TWO DAYS LATER

Dumisani's POV~

The plane lands and I go through all the formalities with security following me behind as well as the many media people and journalists. This is hectic. I wonder how my house looks right now. They are throwing all sorts of questions at me and I don't bother to answer them. These journalists have made a pathetic picture of my life and I hate the fact that they already know who I am. Now I have

Vuyo to deal with. I know for a fact she'll take away her brothers company from me and I know she hates me right now but I had to do this for Tumisani. I couldn't keep living another mans identity forever.

I made a Press conference and made a statement on behalf of Tumisani and the fact that she lost everything. I don't know why this media is still after us because I made sure I stated that Tumisani is not part of any gang, or maybe they just want more drama. Mxm.

I get out of the car and they all come hurdling over me, the tight security push them out of the way and I finally get

access to my own house. These people are fucking with me. I walk inside and find Vuyo, Busi, Lindiwe and Brian. As soon as I get in the lounge a slap lands on my face from Vuyo and her eyes are blood shot red full of tears.

Vuyo: you imposter, how dare you

She cries. My heart breaks.

Me: Vuyo I can explain..

Vuyo: shut up, explain what? you fooled me!! you lived in my brothers body for so long, how did I not see this coming...

She fell on the floor and started crying.

Me: vuyo, let me explain...

I knelt down and held her but she kept fighting me off. I scooped her off the floor and she started hitting my chest, but I don't mind. She's hurting and I knew this was gonna end like this. I got in the room and locked the door, I sat with her in my arms the way I used to do to Tumisani, she cried in my arms and her sobs pierced right through my heart. No one deserves to lose a loved one, I fooled her and I know this is hurting her. After a while she finally stopped crying but I could hear her sniffs. At least she's more calm now, I hold onto her tightly as if I'm holding Tumisani. I know she's not my blood sister but I love her as my own

real sister. She's Ndumiso's sister but I love her like my very own sister.

I softly kiss her forehead and she flinches.

Vuyo: I'm angry at you but I don't know what to do to you, every time I look at you then I feel like it's really him, the way you talk, the way you act, it's just like him. Two years ago Tumisani lost you but I thought I would also lose my brother but then you came back to me, and now I find out it's not really you, Dumisani you hurt me...

She sniffs.

Me: I know no amount of sorrys I say

will mend your broken heart but Vuyo trust me, I know what it feels to lose a loved one, I just couldn't hurt you like that, I wanted to tell you the truth, I really did, but then I looked at Tumisani, she lost me and she was broken for a very long time, I had to make a lot of sacrifices, I sacrificed my presence in my sisters life for you, I had to live a double life just so I could stay alive. I'm sorry, truly, I'm sorry. But if you could give me a chance to be your brother again I would, not for any benefits. If you want you can kick me out of the house, take away your fathers company's but just let me be a brother to you, I don't

wanna replace Ndumiso, no, let me be your brother and have that brother figure in your life, I don't want you to be alone, I know how it feels to be alone in this world, Tumisani has been through all that and I was her only hope, let me be here for you, please don't block me out of your life, please.

She sniffs and looks up at me, I look her deep in the eyes and I see the misery, it really breaks my heart to see her like this. Imagine what Tumisani went through without me, I can't let her also suffer like that.

Vuyo: you're a great guy Dumisani, I'm angry with you but I also see your

reasons for what you did. Tumisani is lucky to have you...

Me: thank you

Vuyo: can I think about what you said?

This is all too much for me, I can't believe that Ndumiso is dead.

Fresh tears fall from the corners of her eyes and I softly wipe them off.

Me: I'm here for you, Vuyo. Please trust me.

Vuyo: I know, I need to process this

Me: sure of course, I'll give you time but please promise me you won't cry, I don't like this tears in your eyes

She giggles.

Vuyo: you know what's funny?

Me: what?

Vuyo: Ndumiso also used to carry me like this, even tho I was older than him, he still treated me like a baby, he used to always carry me when I'm feeling sad.
(she sniffs)

Me: I'll carry you anytime you want, just like I carry Tumisani, you're my sister as well even if we're not blood related. I love you as my own sister.

Vuyo: thank you, I heard what happened, how is she?

She said referring to Tumisani.

Me: we transferred her to a private hospital here, she's in Groote schuur as we speak.

Vuyo: I'm sorry for treating Busi badly and Sihle, I'm really sorry

Me: I'm also sorry for everything

Vuyo: can we move on and give this family a chance? I have no other family beside you, so I better get used to it

Me: of course, I here for you anytime, we'll move through this together

Vuyo: Thank you

She smiles and kisses my cheek. I smile back and we walk back down together.

Now that this is all out of the way, I can

focus on my girlfriend, my son and my sister, most importantly.

Me: please don't go home tonight

I said whispering into her ear and she smiles then nods.

I walk over to Busi and she pulls me in for a big warm hug. I missed her so much. She leads me to the kitchen and I plant my lips onto her. I suck her bottom lip and she wraps her arms around my neck. I missed her so very much.

Busi: I missed you

She says breaking the kiss and hugging me again.

Me: I missed you more, where's Sihle?

Busi: he's in his room, the doctor came over yesterday and gave him a few meds and an injection, he's getting better.

Me: let's go see him

I take her hand into mine and we walk up together. This house is so quite as if it's a funeral. The sadness in this house is just beyond understanding. Lindiwe is probably dying to know how her friend is doing. Brian is probably worried as well. It's just crazy.

We walk into Sihle's room and he's talking to Thando on his bed, they look so cute. He lost weight. Sigh.

Sihle: Dad.....Daddy!!!!!!

He jumps off his bed and runs to me,
happily..

Me: champion

I catch him in my arms and spin him
around and throw him up in the air, he's
giggling. I catch him and kiss his head.

Sihle: daddy you left me, I was sick Dad

Me: I would never leave you champ,
daddy will always be with you, I missed
you so much!

I hugged him and he giggled.

Me: hello princess

I kissed Thando's cheeks and she

smiled.

Thando: hi uncle

Me: boy daddy will be right back OK?

I said putting Sihle down on his bed. He looked sad.

Sihle: you not leaving me right?

Me: never

I gave them both a high five and took my future wife's hand.

We got to our room and I immediately attacked her with a kiss. A kiss I've been yearning for. A passionate kiss. I grabbed her ass and she moans in my mouth. I missed the idea of being inside

her. The thought just makes me hard.

Busi: baby your phone....

I hear my ringing phone in my pocket and I look at her beautiful face. I peck her lips and walk away from her to the balcony, making sure I closed the sliding door.

Me: any news?

Yanda: I've sent people to get rid of the media in front of your house and also Tumisani's house, uh Tumisani has gained consciousness

Me: really!!?? how is she? I'm on my way

Yanda: OK, we'll talk when we get to the hospital.

Me: sharp

I hanged up and walked back to the room where I found Busi sitting on the bed. I smiled at her and kissed her lips.

Busi: what's going on?

Me: we're gonna get our life back very soon my life, just be a little bit more patient OK?

She nods and I kiss her one last time. Then walk out to Sihle's room and kiss him as well. I walk back downstairs and the media has left.

See why I like working with Yanda.

.

Sipho's POV~

I haven't slept for this whole two days. I look like shit. I haven't even eaten. My body feels exhausted but I have to be strong for Tumisani. The doctor just informed us that she's gained conscious and I'm nervous. Ziggler is by my side and so is Jack, Tumisani's supposed husband but they're now friends, I guess. He somehow found out that Tumisani is here. We all walk into her ward with our hearts on the floor. I don't even know how I'll face her. We get in and she's laying there with her eyes fixed on the ceiling, tears running down her cheeks. Her arms are still bandaged as well as

her neck. We get to her bed and I just stare down at her. I don't know what to say or what to do. My heart feels shattered. I'm angry and heartbroken. I lost my baby. The one thing I could've been holding in my arms and loving with my whole heart. She's silently sobbing without even looking at us. But I know she can feel my presence.

We never even got a chance to see our baby's heart beat. She's supposed to turn one month pregnant in a few days. I've failed her. I failed her so badly. I can't even face her right now.

Ziggler: Tumisani

He says breaking the silence. I slowly close my eyes and breath.

Tumisani: where's my baby?

She says in a hoarse voice and silently crying with her hand on her stomach.

Tumisani: Siphos where did they take my baby!??

She broke down and sobbed. I'm helpless. How do I even begin to comfort her.

Me: my love...

Tumisani: my baby....!!

Her voice is shaky and it holds so much pain. I can't do this. I can't bare to see

her like this.

Jack: Tumisani...

Tumisani: Jack, I want my baby back, tell them to bring my baby back to me, they can't take it away from me in such a short period of time

She looks away from us and her cheeks are red with tears.

Jack: you'll be OK Tumisani, you'll get through this

He says sitting nexting to her and taking her hand.

Tumisani: don't tell me lies, just don't, I want my pregnancy back right now!!!

She yells and yanks her hand away.

Tumisani: I want my baby back Siphosho.
please, give me back my baby

Me: Tumsa please calm down...

I held her hand and she also yanked it away.

Tumisani: don't touch me

She says disgusted with tears in her beautiful eyes.

Tumisani: he, he....he took away my baby , don't touch me

I moved back as tears formed in my own eyes.

Dumisani barges in with Luyanda and

my anger levels rise.

Dumisani: Tumsa

He holds her face and she screams.

Tumisani: don't touch me!! (she cries)

He took my baby and raped me, don't touch me

Hearing her say that opened a deep hole in my heart. My Tumisani is suffering. That bastard caused this.

Yanda: Tumi...

Tumisani: all of you please leave (she sniffs with red eyes)

Dumisani: Phakade..

Tumisani: leave!!!

Me: baby, let's talk about this

I try to touch her but she flinches and cries out loud.

Tumisani: please don't touch me, leave me alone, I don't wanna talk to anyone, my baby is crying, Siphon get out you making my baby cry

She says looking around like she's looking for something.

Tumisani: wait, can you hear that, baby.....(she cries) princess where are you!!!

Dumisani: Tumisani

He said hurt.

Tumisani: it's a girl Siphos, our baby is a girl, where is she? why does she keep crying, Yanda look my baby is a girl

She pats her side and starts sobbing with a smile on her face.. She's in denial.

Tumisani: my baby is back, she's back. Thank you Gogo, gogo look my baby is a girl

She says patting her side like there's a baby there. My heart shatters and everyone is in shock.

Dumisani: Phakade don't do this to me please, she's gone, your baby is gone

He said holding her face and she's just silently sobbing.

Tumisani: don't touch me Dumisani
mahn, what shit are you saying, Pamela
is right her, Nkosazana is right here next
to me, Pam say hello to uncle

She waves at Dumisani and she's
smiling like a mad person. She's going
crazy. The love of my life is going crazy.

Ziggler walks in with a doctor and I
didn't even realize he left.

Tumisani: Doc you didn't even say
Congratulations to my new born, you're
a fake doctor, get out, don't touch my
baby, Pamela don't cry, mama is here...

She sniffs.

Doc: I think you should all leave please,

she's in denial and it'll take a while for her to get back to her real self again.

Nurse take them out

Tumisani: yes please get out before my baby gets sick with this thick environment, Pam say bye bye to daddy, stop crying..

She wipes off her tears and smiles to her empty bed side. She's probably thinking there's a baby laying there.

I look at her with tears flooding my cheeks. The doctor takes out an injection and she screams in shock..

Tumisani: please don't hurt me, please I beg you, please, my baby, Sipho save my

baby....(she cries grabbing the bed sheets)

Doc: please calm down I won't hurt you...

Tumisani: that's what Thabo said, but he hurt me, please my baby, don't touch me....

She mumbled the last words as the injection pierced through her skin and she slowly drifts off to a peaceful sleep.

I barge out of her ward and rush out of the hospital. This must be a nightmare. I rushed into my car and drove off to where ever my engine took me. I just drove and drove and drove.

This pain in my heart is too much to

bare. One can never bare such pain.

I find myself parking outside a club and my feet carrying me to the entrance. I can't take this any longer. Am I not meant to be happy? Don't I deserve it?

Me: 5 shots of Vodka, five beers and three bottles of wine.

I get my drinks and start drinking all alone at the VIP section. The alcohol consumes me and I can't carry my legs any longer. My system is full and my body feels exhausted. I try to stand up but I fail and fall back on the chair. I drink more and three hours later I try to stand up again but as I fall, I feel

someone grab my hand. My vision is blurry but by the touch of the person, I know it's a woman...

Me: Tumisani.....baby you're OK?

I hold her tightly and she leads me to a room.

Me: baby, I missed you so much

I stumble back wards and she kisses me. Her lips are so soft just like my Tumsa, it has to be her. This is her. My mind is spinning and I can't even stand. I grab her ass and she moans.

Me: I love you Tumisani, don't leave me please

I said in a drunkard voice.

Voice: I love you too

She kisses me back and the next thing I see is me in between her legs. It feels good to be inside of her. I missed her so much. I fuck my woman to the moon and back. I love this woman with my life.

After three rounds, I fell asleep with her in my arms. I'll die for this woman. She's my life.

~

*

*

*

Things are about to get messy. Be

warned. I'm sorry but I had to make a little twist in the story. Just be prepared.

Admin

[06/20, 05:24] Snr: CONTINUATION~

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

Sipho's POV~

I open my eyes and I immediately sense a banging headache. My eyes feel heavy and my body is exhausted. I look on my right and there is no one. How did I get

on this bed? Where am I? I force myself to sit up and I finally do, I'm naked with my clothes scattered on the floor. I don't remember a thing and my head is spinning. All I remember is coming here to drink and next thing I know I'm in this room but I couldn't have been here alone. I quickly get dressed and as I'm taking my watch from the lamp side table I see a note. It reads.

~ I love you too and Thanks for the good night.

Yours Truly.

~

Shit. I just fucked some bitch in this

damn club. I sigh deeply and cut the note into small pieces and shove it in the bin. I walk out that club with guilt flowing in my blood. It's already morning, how long have I been in there? I check the time and it's 9 am. Fuck. I drive to my house and find no one there. I take a shower and get dressed. I go to the kitchen and get the biggest fright of my life....

Me: Buhle, shit don't scare me like that

Buhle: you're back, I Missed you

She hugged me and I hugged her back.

Buhle: I made breakfast

She hands me a plate and I start eating,

when I look up she's looking at me weirdly.

Buhle: what did you do, Siphho?

She said looking at me weirdly. I knew she would sense something. I'm already feeling guilty and I don't want her to make me feel even more miserable.

Me: nothing. B, I need a job. I lost everything

I said looking at her with a serious face now.

Buhle: I heard, Mike has a position for you in his company, I spoke to him, I suggest you take this opportunity to get away from your dark dealings..

Me: you know I can't do that, that's my past...

Buhle: isn't it enough that you lost a baby for that dark life of yours, if it doesn't end Siphho you will lose that girl as well, she's a good girl for you. I have a feeling you're in deep shit, what did you do Siphho?

Siphho: I di....

Buhle: don't fuck with me Siphho

I looked at her and she was darn right serious. I stood up, washed my plate and ignored her. I took my car keys and drove to Lwazi's place. I haven't checked up on Tumisani and I'm just not ready

yet. I can't see her like that, it hurts.

Losing our baby has deeply broken her heart and I have no clue of how to mend her heart when I have my own heart that needs mending. I don't know how to start helping her when I don't know how to help myself. It's driving me insane.

What's worse is that I feel good when I drink my sorrows away and that's how I landed in a club bed with some girl that I have no clue who she is. I've just cheated on Tumisani and I hate myself right now. I love that girl with my life. Sigh.

I get to Lwazi's house and find him drinking and smoking.

Lwazi: ever heard of knocking?

I just realized I barged into his house like I own the place. My mind is all over the place right now.

Me: sorry, I'm just....

Lwazi: not in the right state of mind? I feel you...

He takes a drag of his cigarette and I walk to his fridge and grab a beer. I guess we're both going through shit.

Lwazi: She left me..

Me: who?

Lwazi: baby mama, (sigh) I gave that bitch everything, money food, love, sex,

everything a bitch can ask for but she just decided to up and leave with my son

Me: she left with Andy?

I said shocked. I looked at him and he's a mess. I guess I've been dragging everyone into my problems while they had their own problems.

Me: I'm sorry man, I'm so sorry

Lwazi: you know what's worse?

Me: what!?

He drank his beer and sighed deeply.

Lwazi: she's untraceable. It's like she's gone to a different planet. She took my son and left me a note, what's shit is

that supposed to mean?

He was on the verge of tears and I know when Lwazi gets like this then it means this hit him deeply. He's a mess.

Me: come on man, be strong, we gonna get through this, it's all just a phase, this shit will come the an end.

Lwazi: no actually what's worse is that these motherfuckers of yours, took my job away. That drug ring they stole used to put food on my table and clothes on my body, what do we do now Sipho, you're empty, we're all empty.

Me: man don't worry, we'll figure something out, we're work together.

Am I tryna convince him or myself? I'm not even sure of what I'm gonna do. I'm broke as in broke, except for the little cash I have in my wallet which is about a couple of thousands. What will I tell Tumisani?

Lwazi: we have to find this Thabo fucker and kill him

Me: we have to find your son first Lwazi, he's more important.

Lwazi: maybe she left me because she found out that I have no job anymore and we're all broke so she won't get money anymore, shit why didn't I think of that? Why didn't I realize that sooner?

Me: you were blinded by love, your baby mama has been playing you man.

Lwazi: I'll find that bitch and kill her.

He drinks four more bottles and so I do. Once again I'm drunk and so is he.

Lwazi: I need a pussy, wanna go to a club or should I make a call?

Me: I regret ever going to a club man, I did something bad last night

Lwazi: let me guess, you got drunk and fucked a bitch in the club?

I nod and he laughs. He thinks this is funny.

Lwazi: you're going through a lot, who's

the bitch?

Me: I thought it was Tumisani, I couldn't even recognize the face, I feel guilty

Lwazi: love is driving us mad dawg

He tried to stand up but failed constantly.

Me: you're gonna hurt yourself, I need to getting going

Lwazi: you're drunk

Me: I need to see Tumisani

Lwazi: come on man, you're drunk and you'll hurt her even more if you go there looking and smelling like a shebeen.

Don't go, stay and let's drown our

sorrows in alcohol.

He made sense but I wanted to see her so badly. I know I look terrible but that woman needs me. I regret ever leaving her alone and going to that mission. I regret it all. I feel like it's all my fault that we lost the baby. It's all my bloody fault. I was so stupid. I hope she forgives me for it.

.

Tumisani's POV~

I slowly open my eyes and look at the creamy white ceiling. Sigh. I've gotten so used to this environment even the smell annoys me. My hand finds it's way to my

tummy and I start rubbing it. Fresh tears collapse down my cheeks and I feel cold. My body feels empty with only bones and skin. No heart, no blood and no soul. That's how I've been feeling for the past three days. My heart feels emotionless, is that even possible? My body constantly feels drained. I'm physically and emotionally drained. I'm going crazy. I'm totally going crazy. Every time I close my eyes then I hear a babys heart beat and cute silent cries. A baby's body in it's mothers womb. That's how I feel when I close my eyes. But when I open my eyes then I feel like my baby is right here beside me. My baby is right here

sucking my breast and holding onto me for dear life.

How do I even begin to move on from this. I feel like I'm going crazy. I just want my baby back. I never even got the chance to hear her heartbeat or get a scan of how she looks. I always knew it was a girl because I could feel it. My baby was gonna be named Pamela Nkosazana Phakade. Where did I go wrong? Was I not good enough to be a mother? Do I lack motherly love or maybe I lack motherly affection. Did God perhaps think that because my mother deserted me I was also going to desert my baby? God, where did I go wrong?

I fell in love with my baby since the first day I heard I was pregnant. I was over the moon. Then that bastard.....

He will pay. Thabo will pay for this. He raped me. He raped me.

The thought pierced a deep hole in my heart. The image flashed in my mind and I shut my eyes which was a bad idea because a baby's cry banged in my head. A loud sob escaped my mouth and I cried my heavy heart out.

How could they do this to me. For greed?

Voice: Tumisani

I open my eyes slowly once again and look at his handsome face with a

bouquet of flowers in his hands. I wipe my tears and just blankly stare at him.

Yanda: these are for you

He says referring to the flowers and I just look at him with tears rolling down my cheeks. I'm depressed. I'm tired and I'm everything but fine. I try to sit up right but fail.

Yanda: be careful, let me help you

He puts the flowers aside and help me sit up right without touching my wounds which I've realized are on my arms and neck. They made knife marks on my arms and choked me several times as well as kick me. I probably look terrible

right now. I can't even speak and I haven't eaten in a very long time. I refuse to eat. I lack appetite and I blame myself for losing my baby. If only I hadn't come on that mission but was I wrong to step in and try and fix my reputation. They've probably taken all my belongings.

Yanda: how do you feel?

He said sitting opposite me. He looks worried and I can't help but not miss that look in his eyes. That look that used to make me fall in love with him even more. He still holds that look in his eyes. It scares me.

Having him here means a lot to me but I just wanna be alone, I wanna go home. I don't wanna talk to anyone, I wanna be alone and sort my life out.

Me: Yanda can you do me a favor.

I said with a hoarse voice. My skin is pale and my hair is a mess. I can't even describe how I look right now.

Yanda: sure anything..

Me: please take me home, I wanna be alone

My mouth is sour and it doesn't taste good. It's also dry.

Yanda: I...

Me: please, just take me home, I beg you
I start crying. Everything I say just
makes me wanna cry. I'm emotional
and I can't control it. I need to be locked
up in my room and just cry my sorrows
away. I don't wanna be around people, it
makes me uncomfortable. The way I
hate looking at people right now is just
weird. I'm even scared to be alone in this
room with Yanda, I'm scared he'll hurt
me. I feel like everyone just wants to
hurt me.

Yanda: OK please stop crying, let make a
few calls and talk to the doctor

He puts his hand on my shoulder and I

flinch.

Me: don't touch me

He moves back and looks at me weirdly.

I feel uncomfortable when someone touches me. I feel dirty and I don't wanna be touched by anyone not even myself. He leaves the room and I feel relieved. Being in peoples presence makes me feel intoxicated and I feel suffocated.

I blankly stare at the walls and I feel like there's a baby staring at me. They ruined me. They totally broke me. I'm not myself anymore and I'm scared of everything. What do I do with myself.

This thick cloud above me scares me. I have no hope anymore.

20 mins later Yanda walks in with Dumisani and the doctor. Dumisani looks really stressed and horrible. I couldn't care less. I just want my baby back. I fight back tears and they just look at me. Dumisani wants to hug me but I hope he doesn't because I'll scream. I don't want any physical contact with anyone.

Dumisani: Hey Tumsa

He says getting the message and not hugging me. I just frown at him and look at my shaking fingers.

Doc: I'm discharging you because your family has assured me that you'll be safe with them, but I need you to come back in a few days for me to check your wounds and also see how you're doing. You'll be fine because your body is responding to the treatment just take your meds and remove your bandages constantly. I've also managed to make the cuts invisible so that you don't see it, they weren't really too bad but the pain is there. Take care Miss Phakade.

He smiles and I frown.

Dumisani: thank you Doc

They shake hands and sign the

discharge papers. Dumisani hands me a bag with clothes and I slowly make my way to the bathroom. I change into the black jeans and long sleeve black shirt. Thank God it's long sleeve, I don't feel comfortable knowing that my arms are bandaged. I put on the slippers and slowly make my way to my ward again. I look much better than on a hospital bed. I slowly walk up to them and my body aches. They look worried but I feel worse than they think.

Me: please take me home

I say as soon as we get into the car. I have a headache and my heart feels heavy. I've lost so much weight and I

don't intend on eating anytime soon.

Dumisani: Tumsa I have to take care of you, you haven't fully healed.

Me: I can take care of myself, take me home right now

I said sternly but softly. I look out the window and they both sigh. He starts the engine and drive to the direction of my house. It feels good to see the world. Yet reality has hit me really hard. I can't even close my eyes without getting the image of what happened to me. How do I begin to move on from this? Lord show me the way. I close my eyes and they just pour down my cheeks as usual. I

sniff and wipe them off.

The car comes to a stop and I run out but am stopped by a huge chest.

Me: please don't touch me

Yanda: I'm worried about you Tumisani, I'm staying here with you

Me: just stay away from me

I push him out of my way and run up to my room. I strip naked and get under the covers.

Here goes an ocean of tears. I can't move on from this. It's just too much. I just want my baby. I don't want anything else but my baby.

I heard the front door close shut downstairs and I feel Yanda's presence in my house. As long as he stays the hell away from me. I don't wanna talk to anyone. They should all leave me alone.

Three hours later I finally manage to fall asleep after tossing and turning for so long.

I feel isolated in my sleep. There's a black cloud above my head. The rain is pouring and I'm walking naked in the rain. What am I doing? My eyes are blood shot red and my body has cuts all over. Anger boils my blood and so does hatred. It is raining for I'm not getting wet. Its like the rain is not touching me

but it's pouring heavily. I all of a sudden come across a crying naked baby and the place goes pitch dark. The baby is screaming and crying and crying. My heart starts beating so fast I can't even keep count. Then I feel myself start screaming, I'm screaming with the baby in my arms.

" my baby, my baby, don't cry Pamela mommy is here, Pam don't cry baby"

I'm sobbing and screaming with the baby in my arms. Then all of a sudden there was a man. I screamed even louder as the man grabbed me and threw the baby aside. My screams felt so real and his arms were so real as well..

" please don't hurt me, don't touch me, leave me, no, no, please....."

I screamed and started shaking with the man holding me tightly.

" Tumisani wake up, Tumsa wake up!!"

I open my eyes and jumped in fear. I quickly covered myself with the blanket and got off the bed. I looked at a worried Yanda and then the bed. It was wet with water and so was I. Like I've just jumped in the pool and I'm naked.

Me: get out

I said shaking. I'm scared of him, he scares me.

Yanda: Tumsa you're shaking, you're not

well

Me: please get out and leave me alone

I said now close to tears. I sniff and he

holds his hands up in surrender. He

looks at me one last time before he exits

and I lock the door. I hop into the

shower and silently cry.

~

*

*

*

*

#HIDDENSECRETS

[06/20, 05:24] Snr: INSERT 106~

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

Yanda's POV~

This is too painful. Seeing someone you love with all your heart, looking so broken and so damaged, really hurts. It breaks my heart deeply to see Tumisani like this. She's physically and emotionally broken and it pains me. The pain and sadness in her eyes makes me want to cry.

Losing a child is the most painful thing one can experience and I can imagine how she feels. And on top of that she was raped. It angers me to think that that bastard raped her. I can't bare to see her like this. She doesn't eat, she doesn't talk to anyone and it's been a week now that she's locked herself in her room. Her brother has come to visit multiple times but she doesn't wanna see anyone or talk to anyone. She cries herself to sleep and I worry about her a lot. I've been here since the day she was discharged because I don't wanna leave her alone. It hurts to see her like this. I miss the old Tumisani and I want her

bubbly and loving self back. I miss her so much. I can't leave her all alone because I fear of what she'll do to herself. What pisses me off is that her so called boyfriend hasn't bothered to come check up on her even once. I know he's also hurt about all this but the least he could've done was be here for her because she was the one who carried this child only to find out that he/ she died in the process. I'm not saying I like the fact that they're together but he's her boyfriend and he should be here for her. But I also don't mind because I love Tumisani and I would trade anything just to be with her again. During this week

I've come to realize that I still love Tumisani and no one in the world would ever take her place in my heart. That woman is my life.

I've asked Yemi to drop off my clothes for the week because I ain't going anywhere till Tumisani fully heals even though she's locked herself in her room. If that's her way of healing then I'll let her be but I would suggest a therapist.

About the Thabo issue, we can't trace him or Layla or Thandokazi. It's like they vanished into thin air but I won't rest till I find them. I've decided to come back to the dark life just for Tumisani, and only for her. I love this woman and I'm willing

to wait for her.

Today is Thursday and I just woke up took a shower and put on some jeans and a white T-shirt with my vans. I take my phone and walk towards Tumisani's room. It feels weird living in her house without her permission but I'm doing this for her. I stand at her door and knock. Silence. I knock again. Silence. I check my watch and it's almost 11 am. I try the handle and the door is open. I get inside and there's a lot of tissues all over the bed. The bed is a mess and her clothes are all over the floor. I hear the shower running and I know she's in there.

Maybe Today it'll be different. Hopefully she won't cut me out and she'll allow me to be here for her.

I start cleaning her bed and remove the tissues and put it all in a plastic bag I found in her draws. I cleaned the bed and put new white sheets on and pink pillows. I picked up her clothes and put it in the dirt basket, hopefully it's all dirty. I opened the curtains and windows and let the air come in. The room is too thick with mild air. The sun breaks through and shine bright in the room. I stand at the balcony and look at the beautiful view. Indeed beautiful.

" what are you doing in my room?"

Her beautiful voice brings me back to my senses and a smile creeps up my lips. I turn around and she's dripping wet with a towel wrapped around her body. She's just beautiful. Her hair is in a curly afro following onto her shoulders, she looks more relaxed and more calmer than the past week. Almost two weeks.

Me: uh uhm Good morning, how are you?
She stares at me blankly and steps back.

Tumisani: what are you doing in my room, my house? How did you get in?

Me: I've been here for the past week and a half, I didn't wanna leave you all alone, I was worried. Are you OK? are you

hungry?

Tumisani: please get out of my house

Me: Tumisani I want to be here for you, please don't push me away, let me be here for you please

Tumisani: I, i...

Me: get dressed, I'll go make breakfast .

I walk towards the door and she opens her mouth to speak but I stop her.

Me: Tumisani you have to eat, you haven't eaten for almost two weeks and that's not good for you, please.

Tumisani: I don't wanna eat, please leave me alone

She walks to her closet and opens it.

Me: I'm gonna go make breakfast.

I close the door behind me and walk down the stairs. I go to the kitchen and make her a full English breakfast with a glass of juice. It takes about half an hour, I'm not the best chef but I tried. I put it on a tray and walk back upstairs. I open the door and she's laying on the bed with the pillow hard against her chest and her eyes are red. At least she's wearing decent clothes. She's in jeans and a vest. She's lost a lot of weight and I worry for her. I put the tray on the bed side and sit next to her feet.

Me: Tumsa

Tumisani: my baby, Pam is here Yanda

A tears escapes her eye and she's just shuts her eyes and sniffs. My heart sinks. I look at her arms and her wounds have healed. I'm happy to see some progress on her wounds.

Me: Tumisani....

I place my hand on her arm and she flinches.

Tumisani: don't touch me.

She opens her eyes and anger consumes her. Her eyes are red and furious.

Me: Tumisani, I'm really sorry for what happened to you. I know how you must be feeling right now and I'm deeply sorry. But Tumisani you have to move on. You still have a long way to go in this journey called life and I know you need time to heal with this but let me be here for you, I want you to trust me, allow me to help you. We can do this together Tumsa. You still have your whole life to live and make more babies, don't beat yourself up with this please Tumsa. Your whole family is worried about you, you've blocked them out and they care for you. Please let's move on together.

I held her hand as she sat up and looked

into my eyes. At least she's allowing me to hold her hands. Her eyes are filled with tears but she brushes them off and stare at our hands, together.

Tumisani: I just want my baby back

She whispers in a low sad voice. She closes her eyes and sighs deeply.

Me: you'll make more babies in the future, don't worry.

I smile at her and she just stares at our hands. I want to hug her so badly. I desperately wanna hug her and hold her in my arms.

I look at her and pick up the plate of food.

Me: we're in this together, OK?

She nods silently and I'm assured that we'll move on from this together.

I start feeding her and she first refuses but eventually starts eating. It brings a smile to my face to see her slowly but surely moving on. I'm halfway through the plate with her when she sudden takes the fork from my hands and starts feeding me. I smile.

Me: this is for you, not me.

Tumisani: please eat with me.

Me: but...

Tumisani: shut up

She continues to feed me and I also feed her back. She's indeed beautiful. We finish the plate together and I give her juice to her and she gulps it down. I knew she was hungry. I smile at her and she looks at me.

Tumisani: Yanda will I get my baby back?

She says silently.

Me: Tumsa...

Tumisani: I was going to name her Pamela Nkosazana Phakade. My little princess. My beautiful princess. She would've looked just like me, my eyes, my nose, my smile, my dimples. My hair. She would've been my little

photocopy.....(sigh) but then that bastard took it all away!!! (she shouted) Anger build up on her face and she was breathing heavily.

Tumisani: that bastard raped me!! He fucken touched me!! He'll pay, he'll pay for this

Tears rolled down her cheeks and she cried. I pulled her in my arms and hugged her tightly. She tried to fight off me but I will never let her go. Never. I rest her head on my chest and she sobbed.

Me: We will get through this together, I'll be here for you. I'm here for you Tumsa.

I lo..

I stopped myself and swallowed hard. What am I doing. I almost told her I love her. I can't do that. She's going through a lot. Gosh Yanda you're a fool. I sighed and let her sob in my arms until she was calm. She tugged onto my shirt and buried her face on my chest. She was now numb. I place her on her back and lay next to her then pull her head onto my chest again. I missed being next to her, so close . I missed holding her.

It takes everything within me to stop me from kissing her right now. I love her.

.

Tumisani's POV~

I open my eyes and it's dark outside. Pitch black. The stars are shining through my window and the night wind blows through my open windows. I slowly walk towards the window and shut it closed. I stand outside the balcony and look up the stars. My Princess is watching over me. Gogo is watching over me. I know they are watching over me.

It's been a week and a half since the incident and I've tried to move on. The burden in my heart is just too much. I've tried to accept that my baby is no more but it's just feels like too much.

I think I'm even going crazy. I can't sleep without waking up screaming or calling out my baby's name. I can't keep the imagines out of my head, Thabo will pay for this. They'll all pay.

I would've been one month and a week pregnant by now but he took that away from me, he'll pay.

I haven't seen Siphos since that day from the hospital and I can't say I don't miss him. I miss him so much but I don't wanna see him. I feel like it's all my fault and I doubt he'll want to be with me. But i miss him. I've lost weight and I can't look myself in the mirror without breaking down. I know I need therapy

but how do I even start?

I need Siphos by my side right now and it hurts that he's not here with me. I know I would've pushed him away but knowing that he's with me would make me feel better.

The fact that Yanda is with me, makes me feel like Siphos is disappointing me. Yanda has been here with me yet I've pushed him away yet he stayed. I'm grateful for him being here.

Tears pricked my eyes and fell down my cheeks. I just want my princess back. I would've been a great mother to my baby, I would've showered her with love

and spoilt her rotten. Don't I deserve a chance at being a mother?

Warms arms hugged my body and I shut my eyes as I wished it was him. My body was cold and I was shivering. His warmth made me feel good in some type of way. I missed him so much.

Me: Siphos....

I turned around only to be met with Yanda's dark eyes piercing right through mine. I'm disappointed. I wiped my tears and tried to move from his arms but he held me tighter.

Me: Let go of me

My voice was shaky. I'm freezing cold

and I only realized now.

Yanda: let me hold you, you're cold
Tumisani.

I tried by all means not to look at those
evil eyes. Those eyes that makes me
weak. I refuse to mourn my baby with
those eyes making me feel that way.

I pushed him off me and walk to my
room, took out a jersey and wore it. I
haven't been downstairs in a week and a
half.

Yanda: Dinner is ready

Me: I don't wanna eat

I get under the covers and pull it all over
my head. I miss Siphoh. I need him.

I feel the door close and i sigh in relieve. Few minutes later the door opens again and I feel his presence. Why can't he just leave. I don't deserve his kindness and I need to be alone right now.

He pulls the covers off me and before I could utter a word, there's a spoonful of rice in my mouth. He chuckles.

Yanda: you're still stubborn as ever

Tumsa

I sit up straight and swallow the food.

Me: Luyanda I said I don't wanna eat, what part of I don't wanna eat don't you understand?

Yanda: ssshhh

I keeps feeding me and I slowly give in. He doesnt listen. I'm frustrated and I want Siphos right here. The door swings open as I'm on my fifth spoon and there walks in Dumisani and.....

Sihle: aunty!!!

He jumps on me and starts kissing me cheeks and all over my face. He hugs me tightly and I swear to God I want to smile but I just can't. My smile has turn into a frown every time I try to smile. I can't.

Sihle: I missed you so much Aunty, why didn't you come visit me when I was sick? I was very sick aunty

Me: you were sick?

I managed to say and held his cute face. Fighting off tears. This could've been the future me with my own child. But that Bastard.....

Dumisani: Tumsa how are you?

Then boom. It all comes pouring down. They explode down my cheeks like rain. Why does everyone keep asking how I am? Can't they see I'm broken.?

Sihle: Aunty are you OK? please dont cry, I'm sorry for upsetting you....

He said in his innocent little face. He looks sad and it hurts. My poor baby...

I'm helpless at the moment.

Dumisani: Sihle come, aunty will talk later

Sihle: but I wanna stay with aunty, aunty Tumsa please dont cry, I'm sorry.

He also burst out crying and I swear my heart exploded. I pulled him into my arms and hugged him tightly against my chest. Poor child.

Me: sssh Sihle don't cry, please...

I said trying to convince him while my own tears were flooding my cheeks.

Sihle: if you don't stop crying I won't stop either (he cried)

I quickly wiped my tears and kissed his head.

Me: happy?

Sihle: smile with me

I forced a smile and it was painful. I love this kid with all my heart.

Sihle: ok, I love you aunty

He kissed my cheek and hugged me. I silently cried.

Me: I love you too.

This is too much. I looked at Dumisani and his eyes were red. Yanda left the room and I don't know where he went to.

Dumisani: Tumsa

Me: I need space.

He took Sihle and they left. I locked

myself in the room and cried.

~

*

*

*

Sorry I'm scarce. I'll make it up to y'all.

*

[06/20, 05:24] Snr: INSERT 107~

.

.

.

.

.

ONE WEEK LATER

Sipho's POV

I open my eyes and lying in a bed full of beer bottles and alcohol smell hits my nose. I sit up only to be met by an annoying looking Buhle. She's pissed and I can't tell what she's thinking about. I feel disgusted and disappointed in myself. How did I even get here? What made me so broken? What am I doing with my life. I sigh deeply as fresh tears rush down my cheeks. I pity myself. I'm also so selfish. I left Tumisani alone all this while when she needed me the most. She needed me at a time like this. She's shattered and I should be strong

for her. Yet here I was covered in beer bottles. I've been drinking my sorrows away for the past two weeks and lucky for me it's worked. Slowly but surely I'm finding myself yet I regret the decisions I made in the past. I hate myself for it. I just needed an escape. I needed a distraction. I thought maybe drinking would erase the pain in my heart. I miss Tumisani so much. I told myself until I fix myself I won't go and see her. I know she's shattered right now and I think giving her space was the best solution. Hopefully she's healing. I know she's a strong girl and I hope she'll forgive me for what happened at the club. It was my

weak moment and I swear to God I had no idea how I ended up in bed with someone I don't even remember about their looks.

Buhle removes the bottles and place them in black bags then sit next to me and pull me in for a hug. I cry on her shoulder and she just doesn't say anything. I need this right now. I need someone to hold me and tell me everything is gonna be OK. Yet I feel selfish because I should've been that someone for Tumisani.

After I finished pouring my heart out to her, she instructed me to hop in the shower. I went to the bathroom and

looked in the mirror. I don't recognize myself anymore. I don't know who this man is anymore. I've been defeated. I've lost everything and I feel weak. I have nothing in my accounts and I have nothing under my name besides my house and my two cars and the little cash I have in my wallet. It's funny how life seems to amaze me. From something to nothing. I thought it was from nothing to something.

I got out of the shower and found my room spotless. Everything was back into it's pure form. I'm grateful for a sister like Buhle. It's time I go get my woman. We're gonna get through this together. If

it means both of us getting into therapy then so be it. We will conquer this together. Maybe having nothing will make me a better man. I can do this.

I put on a pair of black jeans and a white polo shirt with black sneakers. I take my car keys and phone and walk down the stairs. I find Buhle in the kitchen and a table filled with delicious food. My stomach grumbles and I just realized I've been storing alcohol in my system for the past two weeks.

Buhle: sit down

I did as told and we started eating. I know she has so much to say and I

know she'll lecture me and stuff but I don't need that right now. I eat my breakfast and lucky me, she didn't say anything.

Me: thanks for breakfast.

I said getting up, washed my plate and as I'm walking out the kitchen, she's holding my hand.

Buhle: Siphho

Me: Buhle I need to go

Buhle: promise me you'll go fix yourself and be with Tumisani through every step of the way from now on, your healing time is over, you need to be there for that girl. She needs you.

Me: I promise

I said looking at her. She's worried and I now understand how much this is affecting her. I give her a warm hug and she pulls out first, kisses my head and smiles at me. I smile back and get out of the house. I get in my car and drive off. The ride to Tumisani's house is so short and I now know that I missed this woman so much. I miss her touch, her small hands and curvy body. I miss her a lot. I park outside her house and the car next to hers, pisses me immediately. I breath and try to calm myself down and I eventually did.

I walk to the booth and take out the

flowers that I had bought for her the day I came to the hospital to visit her but I couldn't bare to see her like that so I didn't even bother going in. I slowly strolled to her door with the bouquet of roses in my hands. I'm nervous. Why? I don't know. I knock and there's no reply. I knock again and after a few minutes, I here somehow saying, " I'm coming". It's him. Oh lord help me. I press my jaw together and breath. He opens the door and he's looking fresh as if he owns the place.

Yanda: Oh Sipho, Hi

Me: Hey, what are you doing here?

I said inviting myself inside my woman's house. I smell her scent and I crave her touch. There's a smell of bacon being made and the house looks fresh.

Yanda: well....

" Who is it? Yanda who's there?"

Her sweet voice brings an electric shock all over my body. A smile forms on my lips as she slowly walks out of the kitchen. Beautiful as ever. My baby has lost so much weight. Her eyes are red and I can see she's tryna act strong. She's in blue high waist jeans and a white crop top. Even though she lost weight, her curves can still turn me mad.

She looks up and her eyes land on me. A smile cracks from her lips and tears fall down her cheeks.

Tumisani: Siphoh!!

She heaves and before she can fall to the ground, I'm there to catch her and we both sit on the floor. She's crying and I'm just holding her tightly. It breaks my heart to see her like this. I kiss her forehead and she sniffs, wiping her eyes.

Tumisani: you left me

Me: I'm so sorry my love, I'm sorry. I won't ever leave you again, I promise
I kiss her head and she rests her head on my chest. I missed her so much. She

calms down and stands up, taking my hand.

Tumisani: Yanda I'll be right back

Yanda: sure

She leads me up the stairs and we walk up to her room. She closes the door and I sit on the bed, I pull her to my lap and she holds me.

Tumisani: where have you been? Pam needed us.

Me: I'm sorry babe, I, I.... I couldn't bare to see you like that, it was breaking me.

Tumisani: I understand

I feel my shirt get wet and I know she's

crying silently. I'm helpless.

Me: baby, we can do this. We can move on together, we can even go to therapy. We'll support each other Tumsa, baby please let's move on for the sake of our baby, let's let her go my love.

Tumisani: it's not east Siphos (she cries) I'm shattered.

I sigh and hold her even tighter.

Me: I love you, OK. Everything is gonna be alright.

I said rocking back and forth with her in my arms. We sobbed together and cried together. We kissed and cried at the same time and we ended up on the floor

together. This is our way of healing.
We'll move on together. I'll never leave
her side from now on.

We spent more than two hours in her
room, crying and hugging each other
and I now know how much this has
broken her.

She wipes my tears and I wipe hers. She
pecks my lips and smiles. For the first
time in two whole weeks, I'm seeing my
baby smile. We're laying on the floor and
holding each other. I smile back and cup
her face.

Me: I love you so much, Tumisani

Tumisani: I love you more babe, I

missed you.

Me: I missed you too, my idiot.

She giggles and pinches me. Hello, hello, hello, my queen is back!!! Attention Y'all, my love is back!!.

Me: smile for me again

Tumisani: shut up, you smile for me

She giggles as I tickle her and she's laughing like the mad girl she is. My royal beauty.

Me: shut up, you're making noise, you idiot

I pinch her and she gasps. She hits me hard on my head and runs off the floor.

I'm gonna get her real hard.

Me: oh you better run

She giggles and runs around the room and I chasing after her.

Tumisani: OK Siphos stop, I'm sorry, stop

She giggles jumping on the bed and I finally catch her and grab her legs, I lift her up and she screams.

Tumisani: Siphos, I'm gonna fall, put me the fuck down, right fucking now

OK. Tumisani Phakade is officially back. I'm just glad I managed to bring back this beautiful smile.

Tumisani: baby please (she begs) I'm

sorry

Aaaglh. Cry baby. She's about to cry right now. I put her down and she smiles and pinches my arm.

Me: you fucking with me, aren't you?

Tumisani: you're heavy

I was on top of her and pressing her down. I missed this. She giggles and I peck her nose, cheeks, eyes and then lips.

Tumisani: Siphoh, you're fucking heavy

She pushes me off her and gets on my back. My baby missed me. We'll get through this. I know she's tryna act strong but we'll get through this. She's a

fighter.

I stand with her on my back and walk to the mirror in her bathroom. I stand in front of the mirror and we both look into each others eyes through the mirror.

Tumisani: what happened to us Siphos?

She says not breaking eye contact.

Tumisani: how did we get here? where did we go wrong?

She blinks away tears and instead buries her face in my neck.

Me: we're damaged babe, but we'll move on, together. OK?

She nods and I smile.

Tumisani: we'll start all over again, but before we do that, tell them Niggahs, Tumisani Phakade is back! I ain't losing without a fight.

She gets off my back and I'm surprised. I'm worried.

Me: my love...

Tumisani: Ndlovu, be happy. Smile for your queen, I'm back. it's party time.

She winks at me and walks back to the room. Who's this girl? What did she do to my Tumsa.

Me: Phakade, what's going on?

Tumisani: I'm letting go, but before that, I want them ten feet under. Prepare

three coffins in the next two weeks. It took me three weeks to heal but it'll take me two weeks to get them six feet under.

Me: you're fighting.

Tumisani: I've always been a fighter. My momma didn't give birth to a potatoe, she gave birth to a rock.

Me: Mkisi?

Tumisani: he's just supporting me. He's been here for me while you were gone and babe don't feel bad because I know you were also fighting your own demons so don't sweat.

Me: I feel like I abandoned you

Tumisani: I love you, only you.

She kisses me for the longest time in three weeks and I had to hold her ass when it got deeper. I missed her so much.

Me: I love you more. I'll try and endure him.

Tumisani: thanks

She pecks my lips. We both walk down the stairs and find Yanda on the dining table.

Yanda: I thought you would never come down, Three hours is a long time.

Tumisani: Three hours? I'm so sorry

Yanda: I understand, breakfast is ready.

Me: Thank you, Thanks for being here for Tumisani and being her shoulder to cry on, I really appreciate that and I'm sorry babe for not being here for you. Thank you Yanda. Uh can we at least act like we like each other and are comfortable around each other for the sake of peace. Please.

Yanda: no problem.

Me: cool.

We started eating and I hate the way he looks at her. He kept stealing glances at her yet she was looking at me. She kept smiling at me and didn't even realize that he has been staring at her for the

past twenty minutes. We finished eating and Tumisani cleared the table, I stood up and as I'm about to walk away, he said....

Yanda: you're a coward.

Me: don't fuck with me. I appreciate what you did for Tumisani and I hope you stay in your lane boy.

Yanda: at least I knew how to protect her when I was with her, your gang lacks skill and protection.

With that said he stands up and follows Tumisani in the kitchen. That boy is working on my last nerve. I hope I'm able to tolerate him for the next how long? I

don't know but he's leaving in like, today.

.

Tumisani's POV~

Here I am. Tumisani Phakade. 21 years of age. Broke as fuck. Lol. How funny is that.

I never thought I would find myself at such a stage in my life. It's funny how life keeps hitting on Tumisani's door, hard and strong. It keeps blowing storms and tsunamis in my direction and you know what? I'm tired. Honestly I'm tired. My tears have dried up. I've tried to be happy and it never work because the devil keeps hitting me. Now

I'm just gonna let fate decide. My baby is gone. Three weeks has passed and I'm just gonna focus on the future now. I've mourned my baby enough and it's time I keep living. I'll never forget the little soul that lived in my womb, it'll always be a part of me. Hopefully one day when I have peace, I'll have beautiful children. I'm just glad Sipho is now with me. At least he has decided to come back to me. The tears with shared together somehow gave me comfort. I'm happy that he has come back to me. I understand how he felt and now that we're together, we can finally help each other move on as well. But I'm back.

Tumisani Phakade is back. Life happened. It's time to let fate decide my life.

" Tumisani, I need to talk to you"

Yanda said walking into the lounge a few hours after Sipho had left. We had huge argument of him telling me that he doesn't trust Yanda and that he should leave and I tried to explain to him but Niggah won't understand. He's just pissed and I apologized for nothing, but he just wouldn't budge. So he ended up leaving, pissed. But I know he'll call me later. I have no energy to fight with his nonsense right now. I've also decided that we'll go to therapy together. I'm not

fully healed and God knows how much I need closure right now but I'll be strong.

Me: sure, sit down

He sits down opposite me and looks at me. God why did he have to be so sexy. I find myself smiling. He's been here with me for this whole three weeks, he tolerated my mood swings and night cries, he held me tight and never let me go. I couldn't have asked for a better friend.

I know Lindiwe was here a few times but I wasn't ready to see anyone. Yet Yanda forced me to see him and here I am. Grateful for his presence.

Me: Yanda wait, I just wanna say Thank you. Thank you for being here for me, for being the best friend I've ever come across and for supporting me through every step of the way, without you, I wouldn't be here. So thank you so much.

I smiled, he sat next to me and pulled me in for a hug. I hugged him back and he smiled.

Yanda: I'm glad I was here for you. I wouldn't have been anywhere else but here just for you. Thank you for trusting me.

I hugged me once again and we both just sat there smiling. I missed this guy.

Yanda: I wanted to ask, since you're not working anymore, what would you like to do for a living?

Me: I have a battle to fight niggah, where are they?

I was now in work mode. I aint losing without a fight. He sighs.

Yanda: I thought you would never ask, we're working on it.

Me: thanks, I want them dead. I'm letting go of my inheritance. I'm starting all over.

I smiled.

Yanda: I'm proud of you.

Me: I'm proud of myself. Queen Tumsa is finally back.

Yanda: back indeed.

I giggled and let thoughts take over.

They better watch out. I'm coming bigger and stronger this time.

Me: get me a gun. Black in color. Blood dripping. Seven bullets. Two weeks is all we got.

Yanda: consider it done.

~

*

*

*

*

Admin. Is. Sorry.

I know I left y'all. I'm a bad admin. Guys I'm just busy with school. I'll be all yours very soon.

[06/20, 05:24] Snr: INSERT 108~

.

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV~

I open my eyes and sniff hard as the smell of coffee and home made muffins

fill my nostrils. Whoever did that, just made my day. I walk over to the balcony and it's pouring cats and dogs outside. My comfort zone. I love the rain guys. I quickly walk to the bathroom, did my morning routine and got out with a towel wrapped around my body.

Sipho left yesterday, pissed because I told him Yanda is not going anywhere. He said he didn't trust Yanda and I told him, I trust Yanda so he got mad and thought I was fucking with my ex. I mean, the fuck? Why would I do that? Yanda is just being a good friend and I know Sipho doesn't like him but the least he could do is be nice. It's Friday

and I'm thinking of doing something fun. I don't know what but I feel really good. I'm slowly but surely recovering. I'm happy. I've made a loss but I know my angel is watching over me. I put on a pair of tights and a sports bra. I lost weight but because my momma gave me the body, I still look curvy and booty licious. I take my phone and put on my socks. I'm comfortable. So comfortable, it scares me. I walk down the stairs and I'm met by a sexy looking Yanda in shorts with no top. I swallow hard and breath.

Yanda: good morning beautiful

Me: good morning buddy

I smile and sit opposite him on the dining table. God he looks yummy. I never knew he was the gym type. He's all muscled up and has an eight pack, I could just fit perfectly in those arms. Oh shit, what am I even saying. No, the devil is a liar.

Yanda: are you listening to me?

He said looking at me with a smirk. I think I zoned out and I was staring him. Weird.

Me: huh you were saying?

Yanda: what are you looking at? Is there something on my face?

He said touching his face. I blushed.

He's cute.

Me: no sorry, I was just uh uhm...never mind. What were you saying?

Yanda: I said I came from the gym and thought why not make your favorite, muffins and coffee.

Me: if you had time to do all that, then what time is it exactly?

Yanda: you sleep a lot, it's half past 11.

Me: oh my gosh, wait, you gym?

Yanda: yep, I need it. A distraction.

Me: next time you should invite me

Yanda: you have a gorgeous body, you don't need it.

Me: for distraction sake

He chuckled and placed my mugg in front of me as well as my chocolate muffin. I looked at him hard and long. I giggled.

Me: you liar, you don't bake, I mean you can't bake

Yanda: you got me there

He laughed. I giggled. He thought he could fool me. I know him so well.

Yanda sucks at baking. He would never even think of touching flour.

Me: you silly. So aren't you tired of looking at my beautiful face, when are you going home?

Yanda: I don't mind looking at that beautiful face all my life (I blushed) oh are you tired of my handsome face?

I chuckled.

Me: don't flatter yourself, you're ugly

He gasped and grabbed my muffin out of my hands just as I was about to bite in it.

Yanda: say that again?

Me: you're ugly

I stood up and he walked away with my muffin. Shit.

Me: yanda I'm hungry

I followed him up the stairs as he took a

bite in my muffin and I gasped and ran after him. My food is mine alone.

Me: Luyanda Mkisi, pray I don't catch you

He runs down the passages and into one of the guestrooms, it was dark.

Yanda: I thought I was ugly, don't eat from ugly people's food

I knew he was eating my muffin and I was really hungry people. This game of his is shitty.

Me: where are you, shit, where's this switch

I turn and try to find the switch but just realized that this is one of the

guestrooms that still needed fixing. Shit. I couldn't see a thing in the dark. I kept moving and shouting at him yet all I heard was him laughing and eating my muffin. Traitor. Just as I was about to give up, I tripped on his foot and fell on my back and he fell on top of me. My body temperature rose and I could feel his breath on mine. I'm sure our faces aren't even one centimeter apart. I found myself blushing. I'm so glad it's dark. He put his hand on my waist and it felt so warm. He put his forehead on mine without our lips touching and he just breathed. It takes everything in me for me not to kiss him and I pray he controls

himself. We lay like that for a few minutes until he puts the last piece of muffin in my mouth and I pinch him real hard.

Yanda: aaah tumisani what the hell?

He got off me and I chew my muffin.

Me: since you made me exercise and have nothing to eat what was I supposed to do?

I stood up and I felt his arms wrap around me. What is he doing?

Yanda: there's more downstairs, I just missed playing with you, I miss holding you and I miss us.

He pulled me closer and I was breathing

heavily.

Me: Yanda...

Yanda: I know you love him Tumisani but just know that I love you too. I still love you and I always will. I'll be your friend but just know that I love you.

He cupped my neck and drew our faces closer. I missed his touch. His arms and his lips. But am I doing the right thing? What will Sipho think of me? I can't cheat on him. I love him. I respect our relationship and I could never forgive myself if I cheated on him.

Me: no..

I stopped him from moving any closer to

my lips. I moved away from him and left him standing there. I walk down the stairs and get another muffin and the coffee. I sit on the couch and start eating.

We need to set some rules now. He better leave or he behaves himself. I love Sipho and he should accept that. He comes down after a while, dressed up and with a bag. I guess he's leaving.

Me: you're leaving?

Yanda: yeah, I'm sorry about earlier on, I have to go. I'll keep you updated about the mission. Take care.

He hugs me and I smile.

Me: thanks for everything.

Yanda: anything for you

He smiles and winks at me. Cheeky I see. I walk him out and close the door. I need something to do. I need a distraction. I walk to the kitchen and take out a bottle of wine. Chocolates and chips and all sorts of junk. I switch on the TV, make sure the door is locked and I strip naked. I get a blanket and cover myself. I feel comfortable. The rain is pouring and what a good way to spend your day. I open up a packet of chips and start eating and watching .
Grown ups 2. I already have a plan. A plan that will leave people in awe.

My phone rings and I answer immediately.

Ziggler: Mrs Ndlovu

Me: My man

Ziggler: my woman

Me: best friend

Ziggler: girlfriend

Me: shut up and get to the point (I giggle)

Ziggler: I got the diamonds. Safely packed. You'll get it tonight.

Me: can I come pick it up?

Ziggler: your man won't appreciate you driving in the rain

Me: I don't want anyone else to touch it

Ziggler: can I come over?

Me: I'm tipsy

Ziggler: you're drinking?

Me: I needed a distraction

Ziggler: I'm coming

Me: Ziggler no, I'm too lazy to get dressed, don't come please

Ziggler: I wouldn't mind seeing that fine ass

Me: fuck off, I'll pick it tomorrow, is that fine?

Ziggler: sure boss lady

Me: thanks brother

Ziggler: pleasure sister

We both chuckled and hanged up. I have such nice people in my life. Ziggler is a great guy. Supportive and very kind. Smart as well.

I find myself slowly drifting off to a deep sleep.

.

Sipho's POV~

I park the car and walk to her door. I turn the handle and it's locked. I use my own key and open the door. I walk in and it's quite. Her cars outside, where could she be?

Me: baby, babe are you home?

There's no reply so I walk towards the lounge and that's where I find her laying comfortably on the couch with a blanket over her and junk all over the place.

She's been drinking. But she's not even half way through the bottle. I bite into her unfinished chocolate and clear the place making sure I don't wake her up. It's 16:45. How long has she been sleeping.

I walk to the room and change into shorts, long socks and a vest. I kiss her cheek as I get downstairs again. She looks so beautiful. I walk to the kitchen and make her favorite. Beef stew and rice. I also make desert. Some ice cream.

I check the time and it's 19:30. She's still not awake. She's becoming lazy now. Haawu. I walk to the lounge and lay on top of her, pulling the blanket down to her back and softly kiss her. Leaving warm soft kisses on her back. She moans and I bite her back. I know she's not sexually ready so I'm not having sex with her till she heals. I'm sure she'll also appreciate that. I kiss her neck and she opens her eyes filled with lust.

Me: my heart

Tumisani: my body

Me: my soul

Tumisani: my life , you're fucking heavy

She turns around and pecks my lips. Her breast rise up in my face and I want to kiss them so badly. I finally decided to.kiss them after debating with myself if She'll be fine with it and after I kissed it she moans. Maybe that's a sign that she likes it. So I suck on them for a while and she grabs my waist and moans loudly. I smile and pull away.

Me: I'm sorry about yesterday

Tumisani: I'm sorry too, he's gone tho

Me: I know

Her eyes widen and I peck her nose and suck on her lips.

Me: He phoned me.

Luyanda phoned me and told me to take care of Tumisani and he called me names saying that I'm a coward and that I didn't know how to love her the way she deserves to be loved. I hanged up on his nonsense.

Tumisani: make love to me

She whispers. I look at her long and hard and she's horny but I know deep down she's breaking. I won't do that to her.

Me: my love you're not ready yet

She blinks away tears and I get off of her. I walk to the kitchen and dish for us in one plate. I sit down and pull her r naked ass onto my lap. I Missed my

baby.

Tumisani: I love you

She said feeding me and missing my cheek. Guilt hit me hard and painful.

How will I tell her what happened. She'll hate me.

Me: I love you more

I kiss her cheek and held her tightly. I will never lose her. I love her so much.

Tumisani: what are you thinking about?

Me: uhuh nothing, I got a job babe

She beamed with excitement and put the plate down and jumped on me.

Tumisani: what!!! Baby oh my gosh,

where?

Me: Buhle's boyfriend opened a business and ask if we could be partners so I agreed.

Tumisani: oh my gosh, I'm happy for you babe

She kissed my lips and I grabbed her ass. I'm really hard down there. It feels good.

I got a job and I'm ready to move on. Live a clean life. That's only possible once I have Thabo, Layla and Thandokazi six feet under.

I want to move on. I need it.

~

*

*

*

*

Admin.

[06/20, 05:25] Snr: INSERT 109~

.

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV~

I get out of the car and slowly walk to

MacDonalds, excited as fuck. I missed my father. I miss my favorite person in the whole world. I know seeing him would make me feel better. I get inside and spot them sitting in a corner laughing with each other. I quickly strode towards them.

Me: father!!

Dumisani: love of my life

He attacks me with a hug and I squeeze him tightly. I missed him so much. He kisses my nose, cheeks and forehead and I giggled like a five year old.

Me: sis Vuyo

I kiss her cheek And she hugs me

afterwards. It feels good to have a sister who actually loves you for you. I'm so happy that Dumisani finally told Vuyo the truth and now we can make our own little family. I gained a sister in the process called life.

Me: I missed you

I said kissing Dumisani's cheek and sitting next to Vuyo. He smiled and kissed my hand across the table.

Dumisani: I missed you more

Vuyo: how are you? (she smiles)

Me: slowly but surely getting there, I'll be fine, everything will be fine

Dumisani: I'm happy to hear that

Me: (I smiled) so how's our future wife doing, how's my prince? How are you all doing?

Vuyo: we're all fine, but Sihle can't stop talking about you

Dumisani: (chuckle) you can say that again, apart from that, everything is fine, we were just worried about you

Me: I'm fine now, don't worry about me

I smiled and Vuyo kissed my cheeks once again and we laughed. It feels good to smile.

Dumisani: I have a meeting in an hour so I better rush, you guys enjoy yourselves and take care please

He stands up and kisses the both of us.

Me: you take care too, and please tell Busi I'm coming over this weekend

Dumisani: I will, bye

He waves and walks out with a smile on his handsome face. We order more food and eat while feeding each other and laughing, making jokes and doing all sorts of silly things. It felt good to connect with some again and also just have fun.

Me: so Sis Vuyo any special person in your life?

She blushes and I gasp.

Me: oh my gosh, so there is a special

someone??

She giggles and blush even more. She drinks her milkshake with a smile plastered on her face.

Me: who is he? Tell me!!!

Vuyo: you're silly Tumisani, it's no one

Me: liar, liar pants on fire

Vuyo: (giggles) OK, OK his name is Thabiso

Me: oh my Gucci, is he hot?? Is he flames? Are you guys serious?

Vuyo: yeah he's flames, well we're just fuck buddies for now but hopefully he'll fall for me

Me: but you're in love with him, I can see it in your eyes

Vuyo: I know, I love him. But if he's not ready then I can't push him, maybe one day he'll fall in love with me .

Me: but are you fine with just being fuck buddies?

Vuyo: it's better than being nothing to him, and also I needed a dick. After my last relationship with my ex, I became bitter, and I was going through shit, so I needed a distraction.

Me: oh I understand, what does he do?

Vuyo: he owns a club

Me: and I'm guessing that's where you

two met

Vuyo: yup, and then he banged me on his office desk, and then.....oh shit look what you're making me do, I shouldn't be discussing this with you

She blushes. Oh my gosh, Vuyo is actually shy. One thing I didn't know about her. She's also very cute.

Me: no don't be embarrassed, I'm your sister now and I like that you feel comfortable talking to me about your life, so feel free to tell me anything.

Vuyo: OK sure, (she smiles) so are you looking for a job? I can help, if you need anything just tell me, I would love to help

She's too kind.

Me: maybe not Now, I still need to find my feet for now.

Vuyo: no problem, I'm just a call away if you need anything babe

She kisses my head and I smile. I feel happy to have an elder sister who cares so much about me. Yet my own blood sister failed to show me such love and appreciation but a stranger I barely know shows me so much love.

Me: thank you. Thank you so much

Vuyo: anything for you. Oh and Tumisani, I have a plan. I know a way you can suck Layla dry, I know how you can get your

money back..

Me: oh well the thing is, I don't want all those things anymore. I've realized that it's because of this money and this rich life that my life has turned into this nightmare. I've realized that having nothing is better than having everything and be walking with a burden on your shoulders. So my only plan of revenge right now is to get rid of Thabo Layla and Thandokazi, I need to find Zack and transfer all the Matthews family businesses into his name. He's the only sane person in that family. And plus, there's a secret that I've also discovered.

Vuyo: I think I might know what that

secret is. But we've got this, I'm with you all the way.

She smiles and hugs me. At least she's not like the rest of them. We continue chatting and she insists that I go visit her place so we drive to her house in Constantia and God damn she's living the life. It's beautiful. She has a mansion that has a swimming pool on the top deck and a jacuzzi. Her house has so many floors and even an elevator, you could swear she's married to the president. Her walls are black and white and her tiles as well. Her kitchen is like living in the garden of eden.

Me: lord have mercy, Vuyo this can not

be your house

Vuyo: believe it or not, it is

She says as we walked to her room after getting out of the elevator which left us on the second floor. We get in her room and it's double the size of my lounge and my kitchen. So much space, I can't handle. Her walls are light blue and there's a huge TV in the wall, she has a walk in closet and a bathroom which has all sorts of stuff that words can not mention.

Vuyo: stop staring, get used to it, we're gonna be here more often

Me: wow this is all just beautiful, you live

here all alone?

Vuyo: yep, well I only have two friends, one is a guy and the other is my favorite slut in the whole world. I'll invite them over one day and you guys can meet, they're wonderful.

Me: they sound lovely, I would like to meet them

Vuyo: you could invite Lindiwe as well and we could have a fun time in my paradise

She says stripping naked in front of me. She's too comfortable around me. I giggle. She has a gorgeous body though. Big ass, big boobs and a small waist.

Me: I love your body

Vuyo: wha!?! I would trade my body for yours any day, your body is to die for Tumisani, I'm even jealous, you know most girls would kill to be like you

Me: what!?! You have a beautiful body

Vuyo: you are just perfect, let me hop in the shower sweetie then I'll give you a tour, make yourself comfortable

She says walking towards the bathroom.

I just smile and throw myself on her big bed. I could dream about anything on this bed forever. This room is indeed beautiful. I haven't heard from Sipho all day and I miss him. He started work

today and I'm very excited for him. We starting therapy in a few days and I wonder how that will turn out.

I get a call from Yanda and I pick up.

Yanda: hey Tumsa

Me: Yanda, hi

Yanda: I have news, can I come over?

Me: uh shit, you just reminded me I have to meet Ziggler, uhm can I get back to you later please, is it urgent?

Yanda: can you at least come over to my place later than?

Me: yeah sure sure, I'll come, thanks

Yanda: no problem, I'll text you the

address

I hang up and sigh. I totally forgot I have to meet Ziggler for the diamonds and he didn't even remind me about it. I sat there deep in thoughts until Vuyo finished bathing and she came out wearing a gown.

Me: sis listen, uh I totally forgot I had to meet someone today and it's really important, can we please continue with this uh Friday maybe?

Vuyo: no problem, you go ahead if it's urgent, give me a call when you're home

Me: I will, thanks

I kiss her cheek and take my clutch bag

Vuyo: bye love

Me: bye babes

I open the door and walk to the elevator and get to the first floor. I walk to the main door and get out, get in my car and drive off, the gate was already open by the time I got in my car. I drove to Ziggler's house and parked my car next to a BMW and some other nice car. I walk to his door and knock. After a few knocks someone opens and it's his rude girlfriend, Aliyah. Bitch.

Aliyah: Tumisani

She rolled her eyes at me. She was dressed in a crop top and blue shorts.

Me: hey, I'm here to see Ziggler.

Aliyah: Zigs is not around

Me: but his car is parked outside?

Aliyah: I said he's not around

She says rudely.

Me: listen Aliyah I have no time for your shit so please do me a favour and call Ziggler for me

Aliyah: you will not disrespect me in my boyfriends house, get lost.

She tried to close the door but I blocked the door with my foot and gave her a death stare.

Voice: what on earth is going in here?

He says coming nearer to us and the bitch finally opened the door.

Aliyah: this bitch is disrespecting me

Me: call me a bitch one more time and I'll show you who's the bigger bitch

Ziggler: OK OK ladies relax, babe get inside.

Aliyah: so you're gonna let her talk to me like that

Ziggler: Aliyah

He said through gritted teeth And she got inside. He walked out with me and we stood by my car.

Ziggler: I'm sorry about that

Me: I have no clue why you're still with that.....never mind, where is it?

Ziggler: safe house

Me: are you sure it's safe?

Ziggler: trust me, can we go, I need to show you something.

I got in my car and he sat in the passenger seat. I started driving and he directed me to Yanda's warehouse. I looked at him weirdly.

Me: you're back with them?

Ziggler: ask no questions, hear no lies

He tried to open the car door but I quickly locked them. I looked at him with

concern. Siphon won't be happy when he finds out that we're both betraying him by working with Yanda. I'm willing to risk it but I know Siphon won't hesitate to kill Ziggler when he finds out.

Ziggler: Tumisani I'm doing this for you

Me: you don't have to betray Siphon for me, he's your friend. I have a reason for doing this, you don't. I can't put your life in so much danger like this

Ziggler: you're like a sister to me and I'm willing to help where I can.

Me: even risking your life?

Ziggler: (sigh) even risking my life

I smile and hug him. I'm grateful. I

appreciate him.

Me: thank you

I unlocked the doors and we both stepped out. We walk to the security and they confirm that we're here for Yanda.

We walk closer to the house and I all of a sudden have a bad feeling about this. I feel agitated and nervous. We get inside and are welcomed by Tino and Bino.

Tino: boss lady

Bino: lady of beauty

I smile and greet them all. We walk to a room where we find Yanda and he hugs me. I look across the room and there's a person tied to a chair with a black bag

over her head and I can see by the blood on the floor that they've hurt the person.

Me: who is that?

I asked Yanda and Ziggler walks over and pulls the black bag off the persons face and it's a girl. She looks a little like Thabo and I'm sure it's his sister. Her mouth is dripping blood and it reminds me of myself when that devil abused me.

Girl: I've been dying to see you, finally the queen has arrived.

She says with a bloody smile.

Ziggler: meet Thabo's sister and side kick, Ntombi

I smile. My boys have done a pleasant

job in deed.

Me: hello Nana

I smile. She spits out blood and I want to laugh. They probably enjoyed watching me suffer. They probably had a pleasant time watching Tumisani being kicked and cut on the arms. Raped and abused. I want to kill her.

Tino: boss lady, relax

I didn't realize I was staring her deep in the eyes with rage in my eyes. My veins were on fire and my blood was boiling.

Ntombi: let her breath fire, She's the queen of diamonds after all. Red pure diamonds.

She chuckles.

Ziggler: shut up.

Me: get me on the phone.

They dial his number and it rings a few times. I breath and pull a chair in front of Ntombi and I sit across her. I take the phone.

Thabo: hello

Me: well, well well Thabo the devil himself

Thabo: Tumisani Phakade

Me: one and only

Thabo: what do you want?

Me: how about what do you want?

I slap her across the face and she screams in pain.

Ntombi: aaahhh you bitch

Thabo: if you dare hurt her Tumisani, I swear I will.....

Me: look who sounds desperate now?
You played your cards right and now it's my turn to play

Thabo: if it's making you want than name the price

I laugh.

Me: why would I want money when I'm dollars and Niaras itself. I'm the kaching.

Thabo: yet your bank account is dry (he

chuckles)

Me: but am I the one who's About
to lose a sister?

Ntombi: Thabo I'm gonna tell her the
truth

Thabo: Ntombi if you dare say anything
to her I'll kill you

Ntombi: I know I won't leave here alive
so it's better I tell her the truth

Thabo: Ntombi don't fuck with!!! I'll save
you, I promise just give me more time,
Ntombi come on, we had a deal

Ntombi: Thabo I'm about to lose my life,
they're gonna kill me eventually

She cries.

Thabo: Ntombi please, don't!!

I slap her twice and she cries. Thabo is probably boiling for anger. I smile and he's cursing at me over the phone while his sister cries.

Me: every time she fails to tell me the truth, it'll cost her a toe and it starts now, Scissors please!!

Bino walks over to me with a pair of kitchen scissors and I hold it in my hands.

Ntombi: Thabo!!!!

Me: oh shut up you bitch, my innocent baby's cries were more than that. My

baby had a chance to experience life but
you, you took it all away

Tears pricked my eyes and I fought
them back.

Ntombi: Tumisani please, I beg of you.
I'm a woman just like you, please I'm
sorry

She cried as I brought the scissors
closer to her feet.

Thabo: Tumisani don't do this please, I'll
give you what you want, just name it

Me: do you really wanna know what I
want?

Thabo: yes tell me, tell me anything

He pleads into the phone.

Me: I want your dead body in a beautiful brown coffin, six feet deep. into the ground...

I said bitterly with no emotion. I felt emotionless. I felt no need to feel pity or shame.

Ntombi: Thabo, thabo!

Me: give me that and I'll let your sister go

I hang up the phone and walk out that room with rage filling my blood. I hear her cries as I walked out that room. They should torture her until she vomits her life out.

Yanda: Tumisani

Me: I need water

He goes back inside and comes out with a bottle of water and I drink immediately.

Yanda: Justin is back

I cough and he holds me.

Me: say what?

Yanda: There's more

Me: spill

Yanda: he has a baby and a wife.

In such a short time he managed to get married and have a baby. Wow. More reason for me to take advantage.

Me: where is the one place I can see

them face to face

Yanda: Layla's closest route is Katlego,
Mike and Mia.

Me: Thank you.

I kiss his cheek and hop in my car.

Me: tell Ziggler to follow up

I drive off. They sure would love to have
me back wouldn't they. I dialled Mia's
number.

~

*

*

*

*

Admin

[06/20, 05:25] Snr: INSERT 110~

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV~

I quickly connect my phone to the car Bluetooth and dial her number. A smile cracks up on my face as I it silently rings.

Mia: Mia speaking, hello

Me: Girlfriend

Mia: Oh my fuck, Tumisani!!!! Bitch where the fuck have you been!!!??

She screams excitedly in the speaker and I can hear her jumping up and down. Just the reaction I needed.

Me: I'm back, I know I went missing for a while but I'm finally back, we gotta catch up, I missed you guys so much

Mia: and we missed you too baby, your sister didn't wanna tell us where y'all been so we just left it and I lost your contacts

Me: oh OK, so when can we meet?

Mia: I'm calling a group celebration for tomorrow, come over to my place, look sexy for the sea

She giggles and I giggle with her. We

talk a little more and then we hang up. Let's just hope my plan goes as planned. This is the only way for me to get closer to Layla because Lord knows that girl is protected 24/7 I swear she probably sleeps with a body guard just in case I come strangle her at night in her sleep. I hope I control myself when I see her because Lord knows I just kill her with my own bare hands.

I park outside my house and hop out. I see Sipho's car in the driveway and I missed him so very much. I haven't talked to him all day and I wanna know how his first day at work went. I quickly rush to the door and get inside with a

smile on my face. Sweet Revenge really does put a smile to my face.

" Baby!!!"

I shout as soon as I close the door behind me. I start stripping naked because it was so hot inside. I walk up the stairs in my bra and panty, playing with my hair. I get inside my room and he's not there. I turn to look in the balcony and that's where I find him drinking wine looking at the sunset. I stand at the sliding door and admire his back view. My sexy buffed man. His phone rings and he jumps out of his own world and answers immediately without recognizing my presence.

Sipho: Ndlovu speaking

....

Sipho: oh hey Ashley

...

Sipho: oh my, I forgot them on my desk,
can I give it to you tomorrow morning, I
have a early meeting so I'll be there early

....

Sipho: (laughs) nah don't you worry, I've
got this

....

Sipho: (smiles) you silly, I know my job,
it's not my first meeting as CEO you
know

....

Sipho: (laughs again) I wouldn't mind that, who says no to free lunch

...

Sipho: oh my gosh, you're funny (laughs)
OK Miss Ashley I'll be there 7am sharp,
is that alright?

...

Sipho: perfect, see you

He chuckles softly and hangs up. Then takes his glass and wine bottle and turns around but is shocked to see me.

I wonder who this Ashley chick is, how come she makes him laugh so much yet

they only started working together today.

He smiles and me and I smile back.

Sipho: love of my life

He kisses my cheek and I beam up at him. I wrap my arms around his neck and he wraps his around my waist.

Me: my love, how was work?

I said pecking his lips and smiling.

Sipho: awesome, it feels good to be legit once again, I love the feeling. The place is wonderful. Its located in Town.

Me: I'm glad you're happy.

He rests his hands on my ass and brings me closer to him. I smile and he starts

rubbing my ass.

Sipho: I missed you so much

Me: you didn't call

Sipho: uh babe the thing is, uh I was busy all day

Me: so busy that you don't have time to even send a text?

I say raising my eyebrow and he just stood there feeling guilty. He looks worked up like he's hiding something from me. Or maybe it's just my imagination.

Sipho: I'm sorry my love but you know how these things are, running a business with meetings here and there....

Me: I was running three companies yet never failed to call you or even text you

He let go of me and left me standing there and he walked inside. Wow. This is new. Am I being too uptight or it's him. Is it him or me? I'm confused.

I walk back to the room and hop in the shower ignoring him. I know he was busy but the least he could've done was text me. Is it so hard. A few minutes later I heard the bathroom door open and close then the shower sliding door and he came in and held me against him from the back.

Sipho: babe I'm sorry, I'm really sorry, uh

can we not fight about this place

He said in a shaky voice. I look at his arms and he's shaking.

Me: Siphos you're shaking

I turn around and look him in the eyes and he looks troubled. I cup his neck and he looks anywhere else but my eyes.

Siphos: Tumsa there's something I have to tell you

Me: what is it? did anything happen? you're scaring me

Siphos: baby relax, I, I...the thing is....

Me: wait

I turn off the shower tap and wrap a

towel around myself and he does as well. We walk out together and sit on the bed. He looks uneasy and I'm worried.

Me: baby what happened!?

Sipho: I'm sorry my love, I'm sorry. It was a hectic time and I wasn't thinking straight. I don't know how it happened but it happened. I'm really sorry Tumsa I'm sorry.

I look at him and his eye are now blood shot red. I couldn't think of the worst.

What has he done?

Sipho: babe, I'm sorry. It happened that time you were in hospital, the fact that we lost our baby didn't sit well with me, I

was going crazy. Everything happened so fast and I didn't know what I was doing. I ended up at a bar, and the next thing I know I was laying naked on a bed, babe I.....

I let go of him and stood up. Tears pricking my eyes.

Me: What?

Sipho: my love I swear on my life I have no idea what happened that night, I totally went blank, I know that is not an excuse for what I did but I'm sorry, I truly am. I tried to keep it away from you but I just couldn't as much as I wanted to, my inner self didn't allow me to be at ease,

Tumsa I'm truly sorry

He knelt down in front of me and held my legs and I just stood there silently crying. He cheated on me. So while I was crying my lungs out mourning our baby, he went and drank himself drunk and slept with someone else in the process. I needed him the most at a time like that. I thought he was at home mourning the same way I was but he was out drinking and sleeping around. Why me? First Yanda now, this?

I collapsed on the ground and he pulled me in his arms. I pushed him off me but he kept holding me.

Me: let go of me

I cried.

Sipho: no, no, I'm not letting you go, I'm sorry I regret what I did. It was my weak point Tumisani, I know I was wrong, I know I was really wrong but I swear in my normal mind I would've never even dreamt of doing that to you

Me: Sipho you hurt me

He hugged me tighter and I know he was crying as well. Why? I don't know.

Sipho: Tumsa please don't leave me, I beg of you. Please don't leave me, I need you. I know I was wrong, I was wrong I know, but please don't leave me

He choked on his words and he was shaking tremendously. His veins popped out and he was now sweating.

The flashback of the day he stabbed himself played in my mind and I feared for my life. What if it happens again, what if he hurts himself again. I won't forgive myself if he does. He's sick. I hold him back and he breaths heavily onto me, repeating the same thing over and over again. My heart was shattered and I don't know what to do. Should I let this pass? Should I forgive him. He needs me more than I need him. He needs my support but how do I get the fact that he cheated on me out of my

mind.

I've once heard that it all starts like this. First the cheating, then he starts beating me up and then what? I'll end up in a coffin. Will I survive this toxic relationship?

I sat with him on the floor until he calmed down and we just sat like that. He kissed my head and apologized once again. I want to forgive him but my heart is heavy. I love this man so much.

Sipho: I'm sorry, I'm really sorry. I love you so much.

He looks at me and I know he loves me. But he was wrong.

Me: I forgive you.

I stand up and put on my pajamas and walk down the stairs leaving him there .

I'm not angry. I'm just exhausted.

There's too much drama in my life right now.

I make dinner and set the table. My mind is all over the place. I can't think straight.

I walk over to the lounge and find Sipho sitting with the TV watching him. A

message pops up on my phone and it's a Two million transfer into my bank

account. I chuckle and try to relax. If he thinks he'll buy his sister out of this then he surely doesn't know me.

Me: dinner is ready

He stands up and before I could turn away from him he has me in his arms.

Me: Siphos....

Siphos: I know you're upset but please don't give me the silent treatment, scream at me, hit me, but don't don't give me the silent treatment

I look at him and he's stressed. His health is getting worse and it scares me. Stress is not good for him especially now that he doesn't take his medicine anymore. I take his hand and peck his cheek. I love him too much to stay angry at him. I just hope this won't back fire in

the end.

We sit down and start eating with silence filling the room. I wonder....

Me: who did you sleep with?

He looks at me and frowns.

Sipho: that's the problem, I have no clue who it was. All I know is that I thought it was you. All I saw in that girl was you and I was delusional, I just couldn't think straight.

I looked at him and prayed that this all doesn't back fire. I'm willing to support him because he's sick but that doesn't give him the right to think that he can cheat on me and expect me to be

perfect.

.

NEXT DAY

Layla's POV~

I step out of the car and slowly walk towards Mia's house. I wonder why she called for this stupid celebration that I have no idea what it's about. I knock and hear a lot of noise coming from the inside. I sigh. I have no time for this shit. I instruct my guards to wait for me outside and Mia is the one who opens the door.

Mia: slutty slut

Me: bitch

She pecks my lips and pulls me inside.

Me: what's going on? why are we celebrating?

Mia: you don't know?

Me: know what!?

Voice: Well well well

I turn around at the lounge only to be met by my very own sister. I gasped out of shock and scan her from bottom to top.

Mia: she's back!!!!

She screams. Tumisani has a wicked smirk on her face and I want to wet my pants right now.

Tumisani: sister sister

She hugs me squeezing me tightly in the process. Oh I get what she's playing at. I'm sure I can play this game as well.

Me: Tumisani, you're back

I smile brightly and Mia here is smiling as well.

Tumisani: who said I was gone (she mumbles under her breath) yeah yeah I'm back and ready to fire

She says with a smile on her face. I'm sure that part was meant for me.

Katlego comes out of no where and wraps his arms around Tumisani. I look at him and the anger within me can kill a

lion.

Katlego: oh hey Layla, Tumisani come I
wanna show you something

Mia: whoah whoah, where are you taking
our guest?

Katlego: none of your business Mia

Mia: voetsek, Tumisani are you
comfortable going with him?

Tumisani: uh uhm...well, yeah why not

She looked at me and I swear this girl is
tempting me. Mia takes my hand and we
walk away from them with Tumisani
looking behind her and right at me.

What is she playing at?

I'm totally confused but I'm sure she won't do anything crazy because we're surrounded by people. She wouldn't dare, would she?

~

*

*

*

*

*

LIKE COMMENT AND SHARE

~

[06/20, 05:25] Snr: CONTINUATION~

.

- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV~

" so as I was saying, I don't believe a thing about you being away, I know what you've been up to all along, and I know this rage between you and Layla"

He said with his arms wrapped around me. Gosh he's so drunk and and so clingy. I try to shift but he holds me tightly and rests his head in between my boobs. Why did I have to wear a bikini today?

Me: Katlego, what are you talking about?

I said giving up and putting my hand in his crispy hair. What choice do I have then to sit here and talk to this half drunk guy. I know these people are stupid not to know that I'm the queen of diamonds, I mean like, who hasn't watched the news lately? Yet none of them had asked me anything about what happened, its like they have no clue. Except for Katlego.

Katlego: Tumisani I saw you on the news, what mission were you on? are you really a gangster?

We're sitting in his car and he's clinging

onto me. He was so excited to see me and just can't keep his hands off me.

That's one part of my plan completed. I grab a bottle of water from the front seat and splash some on his face and he snaps out of his drunkenness.

Me: shssshh, yes I'm the queen of diamonds and yes I'm a gangster, and yes Layla is the enemy and yes, we have tension.

Katlego: aaah I knew it, I know all about you and her, Layla tells me everything yet I didn't wanna believe all this when she told me but now I do and I hate her for doing that to you, she was selfish, I mean you're her sister for crying out

loud, why would she be so evil and heartless to want to harm you, actually, the thing is, I've been sleeping with layla to get information about the gang that she operates with, the truth is I'm a gangster too

I looked at him shocked. Boy this is much better than sitting at home and drinking wine. I knew there was a bad boy under this handsome face of his. And the color of his eyes just scream out, danger.

Me: what gang are you in?

I had to keep myself protected. Siphon already had a lot of enemies and I can't

risk his life.

Katlego: don't worry I'm not the enemy

He took off his shirt and turned around to show me his beautiful tattoo of a dragon. Damn he is one fine looking dude. The Tattoo suits him so well, his back is so muscular And sexy.

Katlego: Gang 791. We'll be working together real soon

Me: meaning?

Katlego: your boyfriend didn't tell you?

Me: tell me what?

He chuckles.

Katlego: you should watch your back

princess, this town ain't safe, especially when you have a pretty face and an ass that I can bang for the rest of my life.

He laughs and I playfully hit his arm. I giggled. I couldn't get what he said out of my mind. What is it that Sipho is not telling me? I'm worried now.

Me: so you're not harming me?

Katlego: I'm the other side, we protect princess. We don't harm?

Me: promise?

Katlego: with my life.

He smiled while putting on his shirt. He's so cute. I swear any girl could fall in love with him in less than a second. Yet he

has that fuck boy shit in those veins.

Me: so you still bad and all?

Katlego: I'm a different man Tumisani, Layla was just a way for me to gather information of how to protect you, we tried to find you when That fool kidnapped you but your boyfriend was already working on it so we thought that it wasn't necessary, I'm here to protect you Tumisani, I was given strict instructions from someone that o should protect you. I know I failed in the past but Now that I know the shit you've been through, I wont get you out of my sight. But promise me you won't tell anyone about 791. We work undercover

Tumisani, promise me

Me: OK I promise, thank you for caring.

Katlego: anytime princess, we have to get back before they suspect us, or maybe a kiss will show me how much you really appreciate me?

He smirked And I chuckled. I really do appreciate what he's doing. I'm just glad that he's not working with Layla as well because I'm sick and tired of back stabbers.

I kiss his cheek and he chuckles.

Katlego: one day I'll have it, right here

He points to his lips and we both laugh.

Me: keep dreaming.

He opens both our doors and we step out. I wonder how long with been in there because it's now almost lunch time. He wraps his arms around me again and I let him be. It's not like he's fucking me. He's a good guy. We get inside and Layla has turned red just by looking at us. Just the reaction I need. Then it hit me, what did Katlego mean that he was given strict instructions to protect me? I looked at him as he has his head now on my shoulder with a smile on his face. He's enjoying this. Let me just play along. Layla will surely burn in jealousy.

Mia: Katlego let go of her, you've been clinging onto the poor girl since she got here

Lerato: are y'all fucking?

Courtney: they look cute guys, ncooh

Katlego: all of you fuck off, leave us alone, she's my newly found best friend.

They chuckled and Layla stood up fuming.

Layla: I'm leaving

Mia: babe so early?

Layla: I have better places to be

She takes her bag and Katlego let's go of me, now is my time to act.

Me: sis can I come along?

Layla looks at me annoyed and I swear she wanted to melt.

Layla: uh you came here with your car right? So use it

Me: I need to talk to you

She ignores me and marches out. Oh hell no. I follow her and leave everyone inside. As soon as I close the door behind me, I pull her by her hair and give her three hot slaps. She turns red immediately. I want to murder her right now. I grab her by the neck and pin her hard against the wall and choke her, she gasps for air and I keep choking her.

Me: you think you can get away with what you did, you think you can kill my baby and walk freely, huh!!?

I choked her until I could feel that she was out of breath and gasping, I let go of her and pull her hair, she slaps me and I kick her, good thing Lwazi trained me. I throw punches at her and she's bleeding. She falls onto the floor and I get on top of her, I choke her once again and few seconds later, I'm being dragged off her and thrown onto the floor by big bold hands. I felt small. I fell. I try to get up but I'm being pushed back down by a big hand slapping me.

Layla: you bitch!! lift her up

The big guard lifts me up and I try to fight him.

Layla: you will pay for this

Me: wrong words sister, you will fucken pay for this

The guy throws me onto the floor again and next thing I see is Katlego holding him at gun point. How the fuck did he get here?

Layla: Katlego put that fucking gun down

Katlego: what the fuck are you doing

Layla!!

He roars.

Layla: you're on my team babe

Katlego: well that's where you got it all wrong, I never said anything about being in your team. Now get your ass out of here now

I chuckle and she gasps in shock.

Layla: you will pay for this. let's go.

She takes her guard and they leave.

She's bleeding. I want her to bleed more. That was only a little taste of what I'll do to her.

Katlego: you OK?

Me: I'm fine

I fix myself and he looks at me worried.

Me: I need to go

Katlego: Do you have a gun?

Me: yeah don't worry, tell everyone it was nice meeting them

I hug him and he holds me longer than usual. Weird. I get in my car and drive off. Forgetting that I'm only in my shorts and a bikini bra.

I get to Vuyo's house and knock. I can't go home. I'll be lonely.

Vuyo: Tumisani.....you've been fighting

She scans me up and down as she welcomes me inside her lovely home.

Me: that bitch got me pissed. Well I beat

her up and I just can't wait to murder her
I was fuming and I didn't know it. She
gave me a glass of water and I drank it
all.

Vuyo: she hurt you?

Me: her guard threw me onto the floor

Vuyo: why didn't you fight her in the first
place, we have a plan Tumsa

Me: I couldn't control myself, seeing her
made me even more furious

Vuyo: go take a shower, second floor on
your left, your clothes will be there when
you done.

She hugged me and I did as told. Perks

of having an older sister who's loving and beautiful.

I took a long shower and when I finished there was a pair of black jeans on the bed with a white crop top and all stars. I put them on using the lotion that I found there and I tied my curls up into a neat bun. I got in the elevator and walked towards the lounge. It sounded like we've got company. I found her talking to this sexy looking good looking man. Damn, lord why do they have to be sexy? I blushed just looking at him.

Vuyo: hey sis

She smiled as she recognized my

presence. I smiled as well and walked towards them.

Vuyo: Uh Tumisani, this is the guy that I told you about, this is Thabiso

He smiled warmly at me and stood up.

Me: Hi, nice to meet you

I smiled and we shook hands.

Thabiso: nice to meet you too, you're indeed beautiful. just like Vuyo described you

I blushed.

Me: oh Thank you, I get it from my beautiful sister over here

We laughed. He's really handsome. Vuyo

should totally keep him. He's for keeps.

We talked more and more until it was late and Vuyo walked him out which took almost two hours. Ask me why and I wouldn't know. I didn't know walking someone out takes two hours. She came back in blushing and looking all sorts of happy.

Me: someone got laid!!

I laugh and she blushes.

Vuyo: shut up

Me: he's hot, keep him Vuyo and the way he looks at you totally means he has feelings for you too, maybe he's just not ready to get committed and stuff

Vuyo: That's what I thought.

We made dinner and I decided that I would sleep over. Siphos hadn't called and I'm worried. I tried calling him but it took me straight to voicemail. Which got me even more worried. Where could he be? I decided to use my IT tricks and try to find his location. Blame Ziggler for teaching me. I don't know if this is stalking him or what but I need to know where he is. I kept digging and found out that he's not at my place or his. The location I got was in Town. But that's where he works right? Why would he be at work till late like this?

I called Buhle and she said she thought

he was with me. Now I'm even more worried. I was panicking.

Vuyo: maybe he's caught up in work or his battery died.

Me: but he has a extra phone for emergencies

Vuyo: maybe both phones died

Me: I'm worried

Vuyo: relax Tumisani, he's probably very busy

Me: busy till almost nine in the evening?

Vuyo: Tumsa you're worried over nothing. Please relax.

I tried to calm down but I couldn't. I'm

just worried. Maybe I shouldn't panick,
maybe he's fine. Maybe.

I went to bed after talking with Vuyo till
late and I couldn't stay awake any longer.
Sipho still hasn't called and I don't know
what to do.

~

*

*

*

*

Like comment and share.

[06/20, 05:25] Snr: INSERT 111~

.

.

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV~

I wake up the next day annoyed by my ringing phone. I quickly get up and answer without checking the caller ID, I stretch with my eyes closed and yawn.

Me: Phakade speaking hello?

Sipho: Tumsa

I open my eyes immediately.

Me: Siphon!, babe where the hell have you been? I called you like a hundred times, I sent you texts, Siphon what's going on?

Siphon: babe relax please, I'm sorry. my battery died and I got home very late, there was a function at work and I mistakenly forgot my phone at the office. I'm sorry.

Me: Siphon I was worried sick

Siphon: I know my love, I'm sorry

Me: babe is there something that you're not telling me? I don't understand you these days, we hardly talk, you're never around anymore, I get that you're busy and new job and stuff but can't you

make time for me anymore like you used to?

I was hurt. It feels like he's avoiding me. I feel like he's keeping something from me. I can feel it.

Sipho: baby don't say that, you know I would never neglect you

Me: then what's going on?

Sipho: it's work babe, I'm just busy, it's my new job and I've gotta get used to the environment.

I lay back on the bed with the phone pressed on my ear.

Me: it's Saturday, can we at least do what we used to do on a Saturday?

I said sarcastically.

Sipho: babe, I have a meeting at lunch and.....

I sighed loudly.

Me: a meeting, on a fucking Saturday
Sipho?

He kept quite for a while then spoke up.

Sipho: babe I'll cancel it.

He said in a low tone. Now he's tryna
make me feel guilty.

Me: you know what, forget it. Go ahead
to your meeting, it's OK.

Sipho: no it's OK, I'll cancel just for you, I
miss you

Me: are you sure? I don't want you to feel like I'm stopping you from working,

Sipho: no baby it's OK, where are you?

Me: Vuyo's place

Sipho: come over to my place

We talked for a while and he hanged up saying he had to make a call. He should learn to balance his responsibilities. I can't be the only one trying to keep this relationship sane.

I took a shower and wore Vuyo's white open dress which was just above the knees but made me feel cute and young. I loosen my curls and take my phone. I wear her sandals as well. I didn't tell her

to force me to sleep over. I'm leaving with her belongings.

Vuyo: look at you slaying in my clothes

She said as I entered the kitchen. I smile.

Me: Good morning sis

I kissed her cheek and she handed me a glass of juice.

Vuyo: you look beautiful, you should come take my whole wardrobe, I need a new style.

Me: I would gladly take All those expensive clothes you never wore.

Vuyo: no problem.

Me: I gotta bounce, Siphho called.

Vuyo: I told you there's nothing to worry about, now go get some dick and leave my house before I go mad

Me: aaah so you didn't like me staying over? I'm offended, I'm never coming back

Vuyo: ncooh babe don't say that, I'm kidding, now don't keep him waiting, get your ass out of here

She walked me out and we hugged for the last time before I hopped into my car and drove to the direction of Siphos house. I parked outside his home and walked to his door and knocked. He came to open looking all sexy and

flames.

Me: my love.

I pecked his lips.

Sipho: babe, how are you?

Me: I'm OK, I just missed you

Sipho: I know I'm sorry, it's just work

Tumsa, please understand

Me: I'm trying.

He leads me to the lounge and sits
between my legs on the floor as I play
with his hair.

Me: I'm hungry

Sipho: you didn't have breakfast yet?

Me: nope

He took his phone and order some pizza, burgers and KFC. Just what I needed.

Sipho: when are you going back to working?

Me: as soon as I get rid of a few people

Sipho: I....

Me: I know you haven't even tried to find information of how I can get rid of them

Sipho: babe I've been busy with work and...

Me: it's OK Sipho, I've come to realize that I'm not important to you anymore

Sipho: Tumsa don't say that, you know you mean the world to me

He says turning around to face me. I want to believe him but I can't. Maybe I'm just overreacting. Maybe he is really busy with work. There's a knock at the door and I'm guessing it's the delivery. He goes to the door while I pick up my ringing phone.

Me: Hello

Yanda: hey, Come to this location please

He hangs up and there pops a message of an address. I sigh. Siphon comes back with the food and I now feel bad.

Siphon: who was that on the phone?

He said placing the box of pizza on my lap and pulling my hair behind my ear.

Me: uh uh babe Dumisani just called and asked to meet with me

I lied.

Sipho: aaaah is it urgent?

He said disappointed.

Me: he sounded urgent, I'm sorry my love, I'll come back tho, I promise

Sipho: it's ok, go ahead

I kissed his lips and stormed out rushing to my car. I got in and drove off to the direction of wherever this place is.

I park my car outside the newly build expensive house and spot Ziggler's car. What? I walk to the house and knock.

" who is it?"

Yanda says from the inside.

Me: it's me

He opens and I get inside. He leads me to the back room where I find them with Thandokazi being held at gunpoint. I chuckled.

Thandokazi: you bitch, get out of my house

Me: oh not so fast Missy

I slapped her and without thinking twice I was on top of her throwing punches left right and center. Anger boiled my blood. I felt someone pulling me off her and punched whoever it was and got

back reframing Thandokazi's ugly face.

Me: next time you think of crossing me,
think again

I slapped her more than four times when
I felt Siphos scent in the room and I
stopped. I turned only to be met by
Siphos bleeding nose. Shit. How the
fuck did he get here?

Me: how the hell did you get here?

Siphos: I fucking followed you, Tumisani
you lied to me

He said wiping his bleeding nose while
Thandokazi tried to catch her breath.
She's bleeding as well.

Thandokazi: I'll get you all arrested for

invading of privacy

Me: shut up, you slut....

I said marching towards her and ready to slap her again but Siphos yanks me backwards.

Siphos: Phakade don't fuck with me

He said pissed. I'm even more pissed. I look at him and get out of his strong hold.

Me: don't touch me, let me kill this bitch, she doesn't deserve to live.

Yanda: can everyone please calm down

He said forcing me to sit down and I eventually did.

Thandokazi: you'll regret fighting with a pregnant woman

That hit me hard. I looked at her shocked and scanned her from bottom to top. I just recognized the little bump on her stomach. I gasped at the shock in front of me. I could've killed an innocent child. My lips trembled. Wait, how did she get pregnant when.....

Thandokazi: yeah think harder, I'm pregnant, you bitch couldn't give him a child now I will

Tears fell down the corners of my cheeks and I looked at Siphso immediately. I looked at the both of

them and he was just as shocked as me.

Sipho: what did you just say?

Thandokazi: I said I'm pregnant, and it's yours.

Sipho chuckled, in disbelief.

Sipho: that's the most stupidest thing I've ever heard, try again

He was in denial.

Thandokazi: oh maybe I should remind you of what happened that night at the club. Should I?

A pang of pain hit me deep in the heart and I couldn't keep control of my tears.

Thandokazi: I found you drunk and took

you to a room, you yearned for me, you begged me to sleep with you, you even told me you loved me and that's when you put your sexy little seed in me

She smiled rubbing her tummy. She sat up straight and Ziggler came back in with the pregnancy results and gave it to Siphho.

Siphho: this is a lie, no, I don't believe this

Thandokazi: you have to, this is your seed Siphho and I swear if you don't take responsibility for this child I'm taking you guys to the police for beating up a pregnant lady and I'm taking you to court as soon as this baby is born, so

choose.

She stood up. They were all speechless. Everyone was dead quite. I can't even express how I feel right now. I'm emotionally broken. Why me?

Sipho: You're pure evil Thandokazi, you're evil, if not for the innocent child in your womb, I would've killed you by now

He said fuming. Stress written all over his face.

Thandokazi: All of you leave before I call the police and think twice about hurting me again Tumisani I'll get you arrested. My dad is not a detective for nothing. And I'm sure if he sees me bleeding

when he gets here you'll be in prison in less than two seconds.

Ziggler: I suggest we leave, she's right.

I look at him defeated and get up.

Sipho: Tumisani...

He says trying to touch me.

Me: don't touch me

I tried to walk out but he held me and I pushed him out of my way, he kept following me

Thandokazi: Sipho stay, my father wants to meet the father of this baby and he won't rest till he finds you and on top of that you're a gangster, so be prepared

Sipho: I'm not meeting your father and....

Ziggler: Sipho we're in deep shit with the fucking police the least you can do is save the rest of us who don't want to be caught up in this situation, if you go down we all go down, they already watching us

Sipho sighs and I walk out of that house without looking back. Out of all the people in the world, he had to sleep with her. Out of 7 billion people on planet earth, he had to sleep with her. I sigh as I get into my car and rest my head on the steering wheel. Tears pouring down my cheeks. She's carrying his baby. She killed my baby just so she can have a

baby with him? How cruel can the world be.

Now what do I do. I can't kill her because if I do I would be killing an innocent baby. That baby has no clue of what's going on, that baby is innocent, I would never do that to an innocent child. My already fragile heart has been once again shattered.

I start the car and find myself driving to Dumisani's house. I need him.

I park outside his house with tears in my eyes and I knock loudly. He opens immediately and I throw myself in his arms and just sob.

He's having a baby with another woman.
First Yanda, now Sipho. Am I cursed?

.

Sipho's POV~

I have no idea what I've gotten myself into. How do I get myself out of this situation?

How is it possible that she's carrying my baby. I would've recognized her that day at the club. I would've. What do I do?

She's carrying my baby. If I kill her it would be like I'm killing my own son or daughter. I've always wanted a baby but not from any other woman but Tumisani. Why is this happening? I came clean

with Tumisani of what happened that night but little did I know that the woman I slept with was Thandokazi. I can't believe this. And how come I didn't know that her father works with the police. I'm sure he's corrupt. Because his daughter is he gangster how come he never knew that. I sighed deeply as I drowned in my thoughts sitting in her lounge. I can't believe all this. Here I was thinking that I can better my life and move on with Tumisani, then boom this happens.

I've been avoiding her for the past few days because I was busy finalizing the papers of our new house. I bought us a

new house in a very beautiful area and I was thinking of proposing in the next few weeks after making sure that everything was perfect. Now this.

Tumisani will never forgive me now. I know she probably hates me right now for making the person who killed our baby pregnant. How will I make her understand all this now. How will I tell her that this was all a big mistake. I love that woman with my all. I wanna spend all the days of my life with her. I was thinking of proposing so very soon. That house cost me three point five million rand. Part of my life savings that I hid far away, my father left it for me. Now this

had to happen.

Thandokazi: do you want anything to drink?

She said coming down after taking very long in her room. I was forced to stay and meet her father before I get everyone arrested for invading of privacy and harming a pregnant woman. I would've put everyone's life in danger. I have no choice but to act happy family with this slut.

Me: no, what you can do is tell your father to get his ass down here

Thandokazi: hmmm you need to watch your tongue, my father is not one to

mess with

She says sitting opposite me. Her bump is almost visible.

Me: how far are you?

Thandokazi: two months

I sighed. I can't do this.

Me: As soon as you give birth, I filing full custody over my baby

Thandokazi: oh hell no, this is my baby too, and if you want to be part of my baby's life then you can but over my dead body will I give you my baby. You can always break up with that bitch of yours and we'll start a family.

She smiles. I click my tongue and ignore her. I have no energy for her nonsense.

I wait for almost two hours for her father to arrive and he finally does.

Man: is this the fool?

He said pissed referring to me as soon as he stepped into the house.

Thandokazi: baba please relax

Man: Kazi don't fuck with me, I'm getting him arrested

Me: what!!?

Thandokazi: there's no need for that baba, he's agreed to take responsibility for his actions.

Man: oh so you've agreed to marry my daughter? .

My eyes pop out in shock.

Man: nice to meet you, I'm detective Cele, Kazi's father.

He smacks my shoulder a few times and sits down across us.

Me: sir I'm gonna pay the damages but over my dead body will I marry this.....(pause) your daughter.

Mr Cele: you'll pay the damages and take responsibility for her every need and desire, she's carrying your son you piece of shit so you better take care of my daughter, or else you're going to jail

for rape, am I understood young man?

He roars. This man is crazy.

Me: understood.

Mr Cele: now fuck off.

I stand up and so does the bitch.

Thandokazi: I'm gonna walk him out
baba

Mr Cele: Kazi don't piss me off, sit your
small ass down, no one told you to be
like a slut like your mother and open
your legs to men, if he doesn't pay the
damages I swear my ancestors will see
you soon

She gasps. I chuckle.

Thandokazi: baba I'm just walking him out

Mr Cele: voetsek man

I walk out and she follows shortly. I get to my car and she blocks my way.

Thandokazi: Siphso you don't have to be mean to me, we can even be friends for the sake of our baby

Me: I don't wanna be anything with you. I'm just tolerating you and your sick father for the sake of my innocent child. Now stay away from me.

Thandokazi: you heard what my father said. You have to take responsibility for my every need and hormones hit hard.

As well as cravings.

She bites her bottom lip seductively. I chuckle and get in my car.

Thandokazi: oh you don't worry, you'll be seeing more of this face soon.

I drive off with all sorts of thoughts popping my mind. Will she want to be with me again. She's been through hell already. Oh God, I need you.

~

*

*

*

*

LIKE COMMENT AND SHARE.

~

Guys please comment, I beg of you. I feel like y'all have lost interest in the story should I delete the page and start a new story or what? Y'all are confusing me.

~Admin

[06/20, 05:25] Snr: INSERT 112~

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

.

THREE DAYS LATER~

Dumisani's POV~

Life has been good on my side. I can't complain when I have a beautiful woman by my side and a handsome son who is my little star. Business has been good and running. Apart from hungry clients. Up and down meetings and so on.

Busi: baby come, I'm exhausted

She said holding my hand as we exited the mall. We've been shopping all day and she's the one who forced me into this now she's exhausted. Sigh. Women.

I'm worried about Tumisani in such a way that it saddens me. Who would ever thought that Sipho could be such a fool. To think that he was drinking and fucking hoes when my sister was dying in hospital mourning their baby. It sickens me. I don't want him anywhere near her and I wouldn't hesitate to break every bone in his body just for her. He's an idiot for sleeping with the one person who took away his first baby. That one person who used him and now is bribing him into keeping the baby. I know that bitch is doing this just so she can have Sipho and I just hope Tumisani dumps his lame ass. He's not worth her tears.

I'm sick and tired of watching my sister cry all the time, it pains me.

Me: are you gonna eat that?

I said referring to the burger in her hands as we got into the car. She's gained so much weight lately and I don't understand her anymore. She looks more beautiful by the day and I'm jealous, what if someone takes her away from me.

She looks at me and frowns.

Busi: Phakade you eat too much

Says the woman who ate three boxes of debonairs pizza all by herself. She's going crazy these days and her booty is

driving me nuts. It's like it grows every second and I can't get enough of it.

Maybe she's gaining weight because she's been home for so long and I'm giving her too much dick. I chuckle.

Me: you haven't let me eat all day babe, you only think about yourself these days

She rolls her eyes and look out the window. Her attitude levels have risen these days and I'm sometimes even scared to talk to her, it's like she'll lash out on me any second. She's unpredictable.

I start the car and she starts eating the burger all by herself. She's so selfish

today but when it comes to my dick she doesn't want me to be selfish. I'll get her back. I increase my speed as we were on a free way and I increase the volume of the radio and start rapping along to the song by Migos. I look over at Busi and she doesn't look settled at all, she's finished her burger but she looks....

Me: baby are you OK?

I said trying to keep watch of the road and her.

Busi: Babe, I'm I'm feeling dizzy

Me: do you want me to slow down?

She nods holding her head and I slow down my speed. she doesn't look settled

at all. It's like she'll faint. I'm worried.

Me: Babe what's wrong?

Busi: Dumisani, I, I think I'm gonna vomit

She says with her hand on her mouth. I immediately pull the car aside the road and she runs out and vomits. I walk over to the other side and hold her long thick natural hair back. She vomits everything out and I hand her some tissues.

Me: babe what's wrong?

I asked confused.

Busi: I think I had too much to eat, I'm exhausted, let's go home please

She looks up at me and I peck her chick

before I help her into the car and we drive off once again. She looks exhausted like she's been running all day. Maybe we over did the shopping and she ate too much. I park outside the house and she's already fallen asleep. I carry her inside and find Tumisani watching cartoons with Sihle. They look so cosy. I first went upstairs and placed Busi in bed then went back downstairs to greet them.

Me: Children

Sihle: Dad!!!

He jumps onto me as I sit in between them, Tumisani smiles.

Tumisani: Father

I kissed her cheek and high five Sihle.

Me:

Sihle: where's mama?

Me: your mother is exhausted, she fell asleep so I put her in bed

Tumisani: we didn't even hear you come in

Sihle: I want ice cream

Me: Aaaah Sihle , but....

Sihle: daddy don't argue, I want it now

Me: you spoilt monster

Tumisani: Dumisani don't be nasty, go put on your pants and we'll go get some

ice cream

He squeals and runs up the stairs.

Me: you not sleeping over?

Tumisani: nope, I have to meet Jack later today so I'll bring him back in an hour or so

Me: OK and please don't call that bastard I don't want you anywhere near him

She sighs and blinks away tears.

Me: I want you to be happy Tumisani, all these boys have been bringing in your life is sadness and tears, please don't waste anymore tears on him, I know you love him but I also know you love

yourself more and I'm very sure you'll make the right decisions. Look, just do what's best for you. I love you so much and I hate to see you cry all the time

She hugs me.

Tumisani: I love you too

I kiss her cheeks and she smiles. Sihle comes running down looking like the photocopy of his handsome father. He's really handsome hey.

Tumisani: whoah you look so dupa cute
She kisses his cheeks and takes his tiny hand.

Sihle: Bye daddy

He runs to the door before I can even reply. He knows me too well. I would've told him to stay and we could order in. He's stubborn just like his mother. I say bye to them and go to the kitchen where I make my future Mrs Phakade a smoothie and I also prepare dinner taking me almost three hours. Remind me never to cook again. I looked a mess and smelled like all sorts of food. Busi was still not awake yet. So I left the pots and went upstairs where I hear the shower tap on. I strip naked and rush to her in the shower.

Busi: you scared me Phakade

She scolds.

Me: sorry my love, how do you feel?

Busi: much better now

I kiss her back softly and she moans. I grab her big booty and she holds onto the wall. I turn her around and smash my lips onto hers while I begin finger fucking her. She's so warm and sexy I want her all the time. I suck on her boobs with my finger still inside her and she holds my head, moaning.

Busi: I want you

She moans, the water splashes into our skin and it feels so good. I turn her around and bury myself inside her tight hole. I groan and she moans loudly. I go

in and out with our skin slapping against each other. I grab her boobs stilling fucking her and I rub against them. She's breathing heavily and so am I. It feels like forever till we both climax and I press onto her against the wall with my hands on top of hers above her head.

Me: I love you so much Busiswe

Busi: I love you too Dumisani

I turn her around and kiss her passionately. Another steamy session follows after another and we're both tired by the time we exit the shower. I carry her and place her on the bed then get the both of us dressed into PJ's.

Busi: where's my baby?

Me: they've been gone for long now, they went for ice cream

Busi: I'm craving braaii meat

I look at her like she's crazy. I chuckle and she hits my arm playfully.

Busi: don't start with Dumisani

Me: babe I cooked, your favorite.

Busi: Dumisani I said I want Braaii meat

Me: aaah Busi so what must we do with the food I cooked, babe I'll get you braaii meat tomorrow I...

Busi: throw it away if you have to but just bring me my meat please

I said she's on another level of madness.

Me: Busi you're...

She starts crying And I'm shocked. She's sobbing like a baby and I'm totally confused.

Busi: Dumisani you don't love me, after all the sex we've had you don't want to give me what I want

She sniffs.

Me: my love it's not like that, OK, OK I'm sorry, I'll go get you Braai meat

She smiles and kisses me.

Busi: thank you baby, now go please

Me: one last session

Busi: don't start with me Phakade

Me: Busiswe Mpondo I will spank that ass black and blue and you won't be able to walk for three months

She blushed. The fuck? Who blushes about such a thing ?

Women are something else. We have another moment of love making and I leave her pussy in peace when I left.

She's crazy these days. I don't understand her anymore but I love her with my heart and body and everything.

.

Tumisani's POV~

Life is a piece of puzzle. Some fail to put

the pieces together And some succeed.
Life is a ever flowing river. Some
manage to cross the river and some
drown in between.

Love is a piece of shit. It breaks people
and brings pain. But love is beautiful.
Some say.

After dropping off Sihle I drove straight
to Jack's house. A house to die for. This
is heaven.

I don't know how I feel about the whole
Sipho thing. My man having a baby with
another woman. Once again the person I
love has made someone else pregnant. I
don't want to put myself into that

situation where he will have to choose between his baby and me. I don't want him to think that I want to get rid of an innocent child. I would never do that. That poor baby is innocent. I know I'm being too sensitive about this whole thing because she's the reason I lost my baby but that doesn't mean I should also kill another woman's baby in revenge, that baby didn't do anything wrong. I wouldn't live with myself if I were the cause of that poor baby dying. I'm not heartless.

Two wrongs doesn't make a right especially now that there's an innocent life involved.

I knocked on his door and after knocking three times he finally opened with a bright smile on his handsome face. He's only in shorts and long socks. Shirtless. I blush as I scan through his gorgeous body.

Jack: stop staring

I giggled and hug him before entering his welcoming home.

Me: beautiful house

Jack: oh thank you, you look beautiful as always

I smiled and he smiled as well. He led me to his lounge and offered me a drink. Wine in specific.

Jack: so how's our princess doing? I heard what happened with Sipho, I'm sorry.

Me: it's OK. I'm just tryna find a good solution. I don't wanna make a drastic decision.

I said taking a sip of my wine. He looked at me with a sexy smirk on his face. Damn he's flames.

Jack: did I ever remind you of how mature you are for a 21 year old?

Me: oh stop (I giggled) surely you didn't call me all the way from wherever I was at till here for nothing?

He stood up and we both walked to the

kitchen where he handed me some snacks. He's still shirtless and God forgive me but I just can't keep my eyes off his abs.

Jack: oh yes, so I called you to ask whether you're looking for a job because I need a PA, I've been looking for a PA for a very long time now and I can't find anyone that I trust. I will pay you any amount just name it, please

He begged. He looks like he really needs a lot of help. I want to help but do I need a distraction right now from my mission.

Me: Jack, I would love to but the thing is....

Jack: I won't cut you off your mission if that's what you're thinking, I just need someone who's able to help me with all these stuff, I really need your help

Tumisani

He begged once again.

Me: OK, OK, don't go all gaga on me. I'll be your PA.

Jack: Really!!!!

He shouted excitedly.

Me: yes

Jack: oh my shit, Thank you

He pulled me in for a very very long hug. I don't know how but I had my arms

around his neck and his hands were holding my waist. We were just hugging. It was so awkward. My heart skipped a beat and I just wanted to disappear. What's going on. He didn't wanna let me go and yet again I felt comfortable in his arms. He just....

I cleared my throat and let go of him. Blushing.

Jack: uh uhm sorry, thank you so much
He says shyly. I smiled shyly as well.
Gosh, swallow me now.

Jack: so what's your plans for tomorrow?

Me: you want me to start tomorrow?

Jack: well, I don't want you to feel

pressured so take your time

Me: can I start the day after tomorrow?

Jack: anytime princess

He smiled and grabbed the bowl of chips that I was eating from out of my hands and walked away.

Me: jackass

Jack: say that again?

He turned and started coming closer and closer. I giggled.

Me: jackass

I said teasingly.

Next thing I know, he has me bent over the counter with my ass sticking out and

he dared me.

Jack: Damn you have a sexy ass, call me Jackass again and I'll make you cum with one spank

I blushed a bright red and gasped. Damn that sounded so sexy.....wait what.....scratch that. That was inappropriate. How the fuck does he do that to me.

Me: you're so nuts Jack, let me go

I giggled.

Jack: it takes everything within me to stop me from spanking you, look what you did

He let go of me and I looked down at his

big bulge pointing out of his pants. I
laugh out loud.

Me: control yourself Mr Patkins

Jack: it's your fault

Me: don't you have any booty calls or
fuck buddies ?

I said sitting next to him on the couch
with my legs crossed and the bowl of
chips in between us.

Jack: remember that girl from the
restaurant

Me: yeah

I said remembering the girl that kept
looking at him and they flirted right in

front of me.

Jack: we fucked on the first date and she couldn't take it, I was practically ripping her apart. She's beautiful and all but lacks action in bed

I laugh hitting his arm.

Me: shut up, look at you all crazy and comfortable

Jack: and then guess what I found out about her

Me: what?

Jack: she's lesbian, I literally found her shagging her female boss

I gasped and laughed even louder. Jack

is crazy.

Me: woow, at least you had a chance to taste her

Jack: and then I met this other chick, she's from around your area, we agreed to be fuck buddies but then after two weeks of fucking she decided to tell me that she has a boyfriend

Me: that is sick

I love talking with Jack. I love the way he's so open towards me. It's good to be comfortable around someone.

Jack: your phone is ringing

He hands me my phone And I answer immediately.

Me: Phakade

Voice: Tumsa we've got Thabo

I literally screamed into the phone
causing the chips bowl to flip and fall as
I stood up jumping up and down

Me: Yanda did I tell you how much I love
you!!!

I screamed happily.

Yanda: (laughs) get your ass here
woman

Me: you loved my ass once upon a time

Yanda: and I still love that ass if you'd
give me a chance

He sounded serious. I chuckled. Over

my dead body.

Me: I'm on my way.

I hanged up and jumped on Jack so excited.

Jack: what's up?

Me: my life is slowly but surely getting back together.

Jack: can I come with?

me: I doubt you would want to see the other side of me. I'm pretty feisty when I get evil.

Jack: I love your feisty ass

He rushed upstairs and came back down dressed. I love this guy Mara. We

got in my car and drove with me
planning how I'm gonna destroy that
motherfucker. He'll wish he never came
out of his mothers womb. Phakade
princess for life.

Me: pass my gun under the seat.

I said switching to my bitch mode. The
time has finally come. 6 blood dripping
bullets.

~

*

*

*

*

Admin

~

[06/20, 05:26] Snr: INSERT 113~

.

.

.

.

~ Diamonds all over my body, shines all over body.

Your bitch wanna party with cardi, cardi o bardi in a rari

shines all over my body, diamonds all over my body

Who take your bitch out to party....Cardi

who get these motherfuckers
started.....Cardi

The music bangs loud through the
speakers as I drive as fast as lightning
to the warehouse. I rap along to Cardi-B
and I can't control the joy I'm feeling
right now.

" Bitch you a wanna cardi, red bottoms
say moo....."

I rapped along. Jack is looking at me
with a wide smile upon his sexy lips.
Damn this niggah is flames. I think it's
the wine doing it's wonders to my body. I
just can't control myself. I quickly park

the car and storm out forgetting that Jack is with me. I grab my six bullet gun and there I model like the queen I am. I get into the warehouse and find Yanda waiting for me at the door. I hug him and Ziggler and turn my face to a more serious one. I need the energy.

Me: where?

They lead us to a room down in the basement and I love the view my eyes have seen. I smile wickedly and just enjoy the moment.

Thabo is tied up to a chair next to his beloved sister. Wow wow wow.

Me: look who we have here!!

I said bringing them both to planet earth.
He's bleeding and his eyes are swollen
but he hasn't bled enough.

Thabo: Tumisani you can let her go, you
wanted me now you have me, please

I chuckled. His sister begins to sob and I
swear it brings me great joy. My heart
does a vosho and all I wanna do is rip
them apart. But not just yet.

Me: you don't get to make commands
baby boy

Ntombi: please Tumisani, I beg of you

Me: shut up

I said fixing my gun and cleaning my
kitchen knives. Blood dripping. It feels

good to be in charge. Now he'll
experience the pain he once put me
through.

Me: beat him up .

The boys do their job and reframe his
ugly face. He's now more uglier than the
devil himself. I tell them to stop and I
spit in his disgusting face.

Me: you disgust me, you make me want
to vomit you bastard

I throw a punch at him and find myself
punching him even more, anger boils my
blood.

Ntombi: please stop

She says through sobs. I have a heart

but sometimes one shouldn't pity people. Once upon a time I was a soft girl but guess who took away my softness and kindness, my love and affection. My mother. She took it all away. The hatred I have for that woman is beyond understanding.

Me: maybe we should also allow someone to rape your sister right in front of you so you can see how painful it is, how it feels, huh, don't you think I said with burning eyes. My body was shaking with anger.

Thabo: please don't

I look at him with pain and sorrow. The

man is nothing but a evil bastard. I look at his sister and there goes my pure soft heart. Once upon a time Dumisani had to see me in that state. He had to carry the burden of seeing me get hurt so badly. Now they want me to have mercy on them. I know my heart will never heal if I kill this girl but maybe I need peace.

No, I will not allow them to make me so soft.

Me: I hate you, I hate you with every bone in my body

I said with tears rolling down my cheeks. I found a belt and started whipping him, tears flooded my cheeks and his cries

filled my heart. As much as I want revenge for what they did to me, I doubt I'll be able to kill him or his sister. I know I killed before but something within me just won't allow me to do this.

I stop whipping him and turn around.

Me: cut off his man hood

Me: next time you will learn to respect woman and maybe there won't be a next time

Ziggler walks in with a scissors and Thabo cries out before they even started.

Jack: Tumisani....

Me: don't touch me

The anger in my blood turns me into a totally different person right now. Hatred is what I feel.

Me: get me on the phone with the police.

I walk out that room and all the way up to the room where there's a bed. I take a shower and get back into my normal clothes. Just as I finish dressing, Yanda walks in with the phone.

Me: did they cut off his manhood?

Yanda: (chuckled) yeah

He gives me the phone and I clear my throat.

Me: I need a team up in marriland right now

Voice: and who are you?

Me: The queen of diamonds

I hang up the phone and just as I try to walk out, I'm being pressed against the wall. He breaths onto my nose and our lips are not even two cm's apart.

Yanda: Tumisani kill him

Me: I'm not ready

Yanda: he deserves to die Tumisani, he killed your baby and raped you

Me: He won't last even two months in jail, he'll die.

Yanda: Tumisani you're letting him out too easily

Me: I don't want his blood in my hands, it's better that he rots in jail and suffers.

Yanda: are you sure? and his sister?

Me: she's going to Mexico, export her to Roberto.

Yanda: a prostitute Tumisani seriously?

Me: I don't want blood in my hands right now, and make sure she's under extreme security

Yanda: OK

He let's go of me and I walk out first when I hear the police sirens. I march to where they have Thabo filled in blood and his sister is now untied and sobbing uncontrollably, call me heartless and I

wouldn't give a fuck.

Police: Tumisani Phakade

Me: officer

Officer: you should be arrested for....

Me: shut up, I give the orders here.

He shuts up immediately and I chuckle. I guess these diamonds really mean power.

Me: good. Put him in a cell in intensive security and make sure he has no escape route. As soon as he dies, contact me.

He nods and takes a bleeding Thabo away into the police van and I have a

smirk on my face.

Thabo: Tumisani please

Me: see you in hell bro

The van drives off and I turn to his sister.

Me: choose Ntombi, prostitution or death?

Ntombi: please don't do this to me, I beg of you

Me: wrong answer, don't make me repeat myself bitch

I said angrily.

Ntombi: ppprostitution

She hesitates.

Me: see you in a couple of weeks, enjoy

Mexico and remember, no one messes me. Clear?

Ntombi: crystal

Me: good girl

I smile and they take her away. One job done. Now will I kill my beloved sister or spare her? hhhhmmmm.

Me: Yanda, Ziggler thank you guys so much and the whole team

I hug both of them.

Yanda: come home with me please

He whisper into my ear.

Me: I have business to do

Yanda: come tomorrow than

Me: I'll think about it

I get in my car at the passenger seat and Jack starts driving. I sigh in relieve and close my eyes. May my baby's beautiful soul rest in peace.

He parks outside his house and I want to argue but I'm tired. We get inside and I immediately strip naked. I don't care, it's too hot, I feel like I'm already in hell. I walk to his kitchen and pull out a bottle of vodka. I drink straight from the bottle and I feel him staring at me.

Jack: you're beautiful Tumisani

He smiles standing at the kitchen door with his arms folded.

Me: Thank you, it's too hot in here, sorry.

Jack: no problem, wanna go for a swim?

He takes my hand and leads me to the swimming pool where he also strips naked and damn he's gifted down there. We both hop in together and just let the water take over. We splash each other and swim around naked till I got tired and sat on the pool steps between his legs, his erection poked my back.

Me: control yourself Patkins

The night was beautiful. The stars were shining so bright, it felt great.

Jack: sorry, I can't help it, you're naked woman

We giggle and he massages my shoulders.

Jack: you're a very brave woman Tumisani, I never knew you had a other side which made me fear you

Me: you should, I'm the boss ass bitch

Jack: of course you are

We laughed and drank more alcohol still in the pool. I need this to help me forget about life. Fuck Sipho, Fuck Thabo and fuck my life. This messed up life.

I sat on his lap and he held me tightly, my eyes burned with tears and I started crying.

Jack: You haven't healed yet Phakade.

He said softly rubbing my back as I sobbed in his warm arms. Sipho hurt me. Badly. I love that man with my all. He can't do this to me. Another baby with another woman. I loved him. I gave him my heart and my body, he would've died in that coma but I used my money to save his ass, I saved him. I love him too much I can't do this.

I woke up the next day with a banging headache and I felt heavy. I tried to move my body but I couldn't. I looked down and Jack was literally laying on top of me. I giggled, damn he's heavy as fuck.

Me: Jacky

Snore.

Me: Michael Jackson

Snore.

Me: Junior Jackson

Chuckled.

He's so naughty.

Me: jackass

He pinched me and I laughed. He ain't even moving.

Me: Jack Patkins get your heavy self off my tiny body

Jack: you're so warm Tumisani

Me: and you're fucking heavy, I have a headache Jack

He moves himself off me and sit up then he decides to put his big head on my lap, note I'm still naked. But thank God nothing happened between us. I trust Jack. He might me all crazy and scary but he's a nice guy, wild but arrogant sometimes. And a big baby, but he's my baby.

I put my hand through his hair and he smiles.

Me: Jack I need to piss

I said now drawing circles on his back.

Jack: I wish we could stay like this the whole day

Me: I know but remember I'm someone's

girlfriend and...

Jack: and he doesn't appreciate you as much as some of us do

I smile and kiss his cute cheeks.

Me: but I love him with all my heart

Jack: and I care about you with all my heart

I smile at his cuteness. I have such protective and caring people in my life. He's like the crazy brother from another mother and father.

After taking a shower he decided to follow me home. He said I cried all night and he wants to make sure that I'm fine. Cute. We get to my house and I almost

scream when I see the car parked in my driveway.

Me: He's here.

Jack: he has your house key?

Me: and my remote

We both step out and I realize I look a mess. Well not a mess mess but my hair needs some shampoo and my clothes are old since I didn't change. Jack takes the plastic bag of food and luxuries that he insisted on buying for me in the booth and he smiles at me.

Me: you're too nice

I open my house and there's a smell of red velvet cup cakes and roses.

I walk to the lounge and we find Siphon seated on my couch, he's hair has grown far too much and my man looks old. I missed him tho. No, stop it Tumisani, don't become his fool.

Siphon: baby

Me: Ndlovu

He stands up and looks at Jack.

Siphon: Patkins

He said coldly.

Jack: hey bro, Tumisani I'm gonna put these in the kitchen

Me: thanks Jack

I take Siphon's hand and we walk to my

room, I close the door and he sits on the bed.

Sipho: baby....I'm sorry, I'm very sorry, my love I swear I didn't do this intentionally

Me: Sipho you need to shave and cut your hair shorter, your curls look messy

Sipho: I know, I just can't think straight at the moment, please don't dump me

Me: I'm hurt Ndlovu

Sipho: Tumsa I know, I wish I could change everything, but what's done is done babe, just please hold my hand through this

Me: I hate baby mama issues Ndlovu

Sipho: it won't bother you baby, I'm sorry

Me: I'm still upset I need time

I said putting on my denim shorts and

Sipho's Redbat vest

Sipho: you stole my very expensive vest

Tumsa

He tried to relax. He'll be strong, I'm still angry with him.

Me: I like it

Sipho: and I love you, see we're perfect together babe wam, I love you Nunu

He said wrapping his arms around my waist. I look at his lips and I wanna kiss him so badly.

Me: Give me time Ndlovu...

Before I could finish he already starts kissing me and I can't help but kiss him back. The kiss was long and passionate. I just felt the moment. It was wonderful.

Sipho: I love you

I blush.

Sipho: Patkins?

Me: you don't get to ask

I let go of him and walk out leaving him there. He's a huge dick. But I loved the kiss.

Oh my shit, I'm becoming a slut. But he loves my bitchy ass.

~

*

*

*

*

Admin~

[06/20, 05:26] Snr: INSERT 114~

.

.

.

.

.

Sipho's POV~

Life is tough. The toughest thing to experience is life.

I don't know what made me do what I did but what's done is done, I can't change it I have to accept it and learn from my mistakes. I'm human as well and I'm bound to make mistakes.

Hopefully one day this won't backfire on my kids or my future. I have to learn to accept the fact that I've made another woman pregnant and this is my responsibility. I know for a fact Tumisani will stand by me, that woman loves me more than anything and I really appreciate her, she's a blessing.

I wake up the next day on her couch. I

guess I fell asleep while watching TV, she didn't want me to sleep with her in her bed because she's still upset and I understand. That Jack guy left after having dinner with us and I don't like the way he looks and talks to Tumisani, he pisses me off. In fact all the men in her life piss me off except her brother. I can't bare to see her with someone else, it's just too much.

I stretch and yawn. I'm shirtless in my boxers and I need a wash and to shave.

She walks down the stairs in my vest and socks. She's beautiful. Every corner of her body is just perfect, pure beauty.

Me: good morning

She ignores me and walks to the kitchen.
Silent treatment so early in the morning.

But I know she loved that kiss last night even tho she won't admit it. I follow her to the kitchen and she's bending over the drawer with her sexy ass exposed. I stand behind her and hold her waist. I groan.

Me: Phakade

Silence. She takes out a spoon from the drawer and moves away from me. She opens the fridge and takes out cream and makes a fruit salad. What a weird way of eating fruit salad. She sits on the

counter and acts like I'm invisible. My baby wants me to beg and I'll beg.

Me: my other half, my nunu, my heart, my soul, my body, my tumsa, my fool, my idiot

I said standing in between her legs. She's trying so hard not to smile.

Me: Mrs Ndlovu please talk to me

I take the spoon away from her and start feeding her. She's eating from my hands.

Me: My baby, my queen

She blushes. I'm close enough.

Me: my everything, my dick rider

She gasps and laughs out loud hitting

me playfully.

Tumisani: shut up

She giggles.

Me: but you love my dick

Tumisani: no I don't

Me: are you sure about that?

I said putting the bowl down and grabbing her thigh. She gasps.

Tumisani: Ndlovu don't touch me

I move my hands up a bit close to her nunu and she Shuts her eyes.

Me: do you want me to stop?

I said touching her entrance and she moaned.

Tumisani: yes, yes.....no

She moans as I start playing with her nunu and she's wet as fuck.

I press my lips onto hers and indulge in the moment, I start finger fucking her and she's moaning in my mouth. I go deeper and she throws her arms around my neck. She opens her legs wider and gives me access. I continue to finger fuck her. I bite her bottom lip as she releases onto my fingers, moaning loudly biting hard onto my top lip.

I grab her off the kitchen counter and carry her, she wraps her legs around my waist and we walk up the stairs kissing.

We get into a shower and strip each other naked. She turns on the tap still in my arms and without warning, I thrust myself inside her tight pussy. So warm and sweet. I groan and she bites me even harder as a loud beautiful moan escapes her soft lips.

I thrust slowly and softly at first then increase my speed as I feel my body give in to the pleasure. Loud moans invade the room and I can't help but love the moment. I missed her tight pussy and her sweet warmth.

I thrust faster and faster and she digs her nails deep into my skin.

Tumisani: aaaah baby faster.....aaaah ah
yesss Siph

He increase my speed holding her tightly,
our bodies clapping against each other,
she cups my neck and I grab her ass
roughly. I give her a spank and she
moans in pleasure. Takes us both a very
long time before we both climax and she
throws her head back. I want her even
more now.

She rests her head on my chest as we
both breath heavily and try to catch our
breath.

Me: I love you MaNdlovu

Tumisani: make more love to me Nldovu

She whispers softly and I put her on her feet before turning her around and made her stretch her hands out touching the wall with her sexy huge ass up in the air. I thrust inside her once again and grab her breast, I jiggle them a bit and she giggles. I chuckle and I start the show. Round after round, we keep fucking till late in the afternoon. From the shower to the bath tub to the bed to the floor and again back to the kitchen counter and even the couch. The whole morning till lunch time. I missed her so much. I love her even more. Her pussy is like honey, forever sweet. I could never get tired of fucking her.

Tumisani: you're making me become an addict

She moaned after we had our last steamy session on the floor in her room.

Me: I can't get enough of you baby, you're my addiction

Tumisani: you're my drug

Me: I love this

I said spanking her soft wiggly ass. Always shaking.

Tumisani: I'm hungry

She said kissing my bare chest and putting her hand in my now messy hair.

Me: wanna go out for late lunch

Tumisani: I need to call Jack, he offered me work as his PA

Me: I don't like him

Tumisani: you don't have to

I spank her hard and she giggles. This woman is something else.

Me: Phakade I wanna marry you

She looks at me like I'm crazy.

Me: relax I'm not proposing babe

She sighs in relieve and smiles at me. I stare at her naked body and she blushes.

Me: my mother would've been very proud of me

I smiled and kissed her hands. She

smiles too.

MaNdlovu would've been the happiest woman alive if she had such a beautiful daughter in law. I know for a fact she would've loved her as her own daughter.

Tumisani: I know she would.

She kissed my head.

Me: I'll wife you Tumsa.

Tumisani: I love you Siphon, so much it scares me. I know you're not perfect and I can't expect you to be perfect but it hurts. I know it was a mistake and you were hurting but it happened. We have to accept it. For the sake of the innocent baby, I'll tolerate Thandokazi.

I smiled and kissed her. What did I do to deserve such love. This woman is remarkably wonderful. An angel.

Me: Thank you babe, thank you so much. I really appreciated this. I promise you this would never happen again, if it does please leave my stupid ass. Leave me and never look back

Tumisani: I trust you Siphon, I know you've always wanted a baby and I failed to give you one and....

Me: baby don't talk like that, we can always make more babies. I want a creche with you, Having sex with Thandokazi was a mistake and i hate

myself for it, I want you and only you. OK?

She nods and we share a very emotional passion kiss which leads to both of us crying. I never knew I would cry for a woman. I never expected myself to cry for love. She taught me how to cry and how to laugh. This woman is my blessing. I love her too much. More than anything or anyone.

.

Tumisani's POV~

After the steamy love making sessions with Sipho we decided to go to Spur. I crave some ribs and cold drink.

I settled for a dusty pink long skirt with a

slit on the side and a dusty pink lace crop top. My ass popped and Siphobecame insecure immediately.

Me: Sipholeave me alone, stop holding me, no one is gonna steal me from you

He kept holding me as if I'm gonna get snatched from his grip. We were walking into Spur and he had his arms wrapped around me.

Siphobaby my belongings are popping

He said referring to my ass that is tightly hugging the skirt. I chuckle and sit down, he sits opposite me and looks around for a waiter. I take my phone out my pocket and get a text from Vuyo.

* You look beautiful*

I blush and wonder how she knows I'm dressed like this. I look around and find her walking towards us with her fingers intertwined into Thabiso's. They look so cute. They come closer and I kiss her cheeks and hug her.

Me: sis wam, I missed you

Vuyo: I missed you too

I hug Thabiso and he compliments me as well and greets Siphos.

Me: do you guys wanna join us?

Thabiso: that would be great but the thing is we're actually looking for something....

Vuyo blushes as Thabiso gives her a side smile. Gosh they're naughty.

Vuyo: uh uh Thabs stop it, well we came shopping for a few stuff then spotted your huge ass

I giggled and they laughed at me.

Thabiso was all touchy on Vuyo and it was so cute. I think they're now officially a couple.

Sipho: i told you my property was too visible

I gasped and they laughed at me even more. Sipho is crazy to speak such shit. We talked a little and they said their goodbyes and we had our lunch through

a long conversation which was meaningless and he kept telling me how he's kinda excited about the baby and he said he cant wait to find out the gender and he wants me to be there with him. Which just reminded me of how much Siphos wants a baby, I feel like I've failed him. Like I've failed to make him a father. But I'm only 21 for crying out loud, how am I supposed to know how much a baby means to a man. It hurts to hear him speak like this but I've gotta be happy for him things might've come out differently but a baby is a blessing.

Siphos: baby I want you to decide on the name that I will give my child

Me: no I can't do that, that's a decision that you and Kazi have to make.

I said drinking my coke.

Sipho: I know but you're....

Before he could finish his sentence his phone rang and he looked irritated.

Me: who is it?

He turned the phone and it was the bitch. I tried to control my anger. Fada lawd I can't deal with this right now.

He answered and put it on speaker.

Sipho: what do you want?

He said not interested.

Kazi: that's no way to answer your

phone Sipho, especially at a time like this

Sipho: at a time like what?

Kazi: Sipho I'm pregnant and I have cravings, I'm very hungry

Sipho: so what am I supposed to do?

He said irritated. I looked at him and his eyes were slowly turning red. Why is he so pissed now?

Kazi: i want two boxes of pizza and Nando's place baby daddy

I almost vomited my lunch. Baby daddy? Bitch had some nerve.

Sipho: order it, why are you calling me?

Kazi: Siphon don't fuck with me, you're this child's father and these cravings are because of the sperm you put in me so please cut me some slack and get me some food before I start talking about my sexual cravings

Me: OK bitxh we get it, now voetsek

I hanged up fuming. This girl is messing with my brains.

Siphon: babe

Me: pay the bill Ndlovu

I put my stuff in my purse and took the car keys and left him there. I can't sit here and look at his face, I'm irritated at them.

He later gets in the car and we drive to get the pregnant bitch pizza and nandos. This better be the first and the last time I do this shit. Never will I ever again.

Sipho: baby we're not fighting are we?

He said trying to keep focus on the road. I've been quiet since we left the stores.

Me: no we're driving

I said sarcastically.

Sipho: you're not making this easier for me Phakade

He said with his hand on my thigh. My body shivered. The effect he has on me Gosh...

Me: Sipho drive in silence, will you?

He kept quiet and I felt bad. I'm just angry about all this. How did I find myself in such a mess?

He parked outside her house and beeped but the bitch wants us to also deliver it to her hands. So we both got out the car and knocked at her door.

I ain't gon sit and wait for him at the car, no ways I don't trust that bitch.

" come in"

We open the door and I chuckled seeing her ugly face. She's half naked on her couch. Her bumps are visible and she's not glowing like I did.

Kazi: bitch what are you doing in my house?

She stand up and walks her skinny ass towards me.

Sipho: here's your food, now please stop calling me

He hands her the things and wraps his arm around me and we turn around to walk away.

Kazi: Sipho we need to talk

Sipho: about what?

He turns around irritated and looks at her bored.

Kazi: in private

Sipho: if you have something to say I suggest you say it now

Kazi: I said in private !!!

She yelled and I gripped my teeth. I'm slowly and surely losing patience.

I walk out that door and got in the car leaving Sipho and his baby mama to talk in "private".

Never will I ever be jealous of another woman's pregnancy. I'm just as well as capable just like her. What angers me is the fact that she thinks she has the upper hand in all this. Chuckle. Bitch.

Sipho later comes back in the car fuming with red eyes. I don't bother to

ask and rather look out the window. My
day spoilt.

~

*

*

*

*

Like comment and share.

[06/20, 05:26] Snr: INSERT 115~

.

.

.

.

.

ONE WEEK LATER

.

BREAKING NEWS: Headlines.

Layla Matthews daughter of late Keigan Matthews junior has been hospitalized after being in an accident and shot twice on the arm three days ago. The accident was said to be planned and the attacker is an unknown gangster from the underworld. The attack was done right after she was coming home from the club and her personal driver died in the attack yet the third bullet was meant for Layla Matthews. The police is looking

for evidence of the attack and are still trying to process who might be the one after Layla Matthews.

South African headlines. Cape Town.

~

I sat there with a sick smirk on my face. If only that third bullet had hit her.

Two weeks of perfect planning and the bitch doesn't die. It's frustrating.

I had it all planned, I gave her the biggest two bullets of my entire life yet she survived. How evil can one be.

I shake my head and switch off the TV as I drink my wine, swaying the glass left and right.

Katlego: Tumisani you have to relax
I look at him and I'm pissed. Two damn
bullets and she never died.

Me: don't tell me to fucken relax dude

Katlego: at least she knows that she's
under attack and her blood is wanted

Me: that's nothing, I want her dead.

Katlego: step by step

I look at him and he grabs the wine out
of my hands and walks to away with it to
my kitchen and comes back with a
bottle of water.

Katlego: you've been filling your system
with too much alcohol lately

He's right. The anger within has grown over the moon. I drink a lot lately And it's all because of stress. I guess I was so keen on killing her now that she survived it frustrates me completely.

I drink the water and he sits next to me pulling my hair out of my face.

My skin is crawling and I'm just pissed. I haven't spoke to Sipho in almost a week and all he does is text me telling me how busy he is and how his baby mama has been demanding. It pisses me off. Yet I don't care anymore. If he can't make time for me than fuck him. I'm tired of begging actually, I love him too much that's why he's taking advantage of my

love and care. If he wants to spend time with that bitch than fuck him.

Katlego: go take a shower I'm taking you out

I looked at him like he's crazy.

Me: I'm working Tomorrow Kat

I said irritated. Yeah, I've been working with Jack as his PA for quite a while now and it's fun. He's funny, cute and a great boss yet he doesn't act like one, he's super naughty and childish which makes him even more cute. He's tempted kissing me so many times yet I've rejected him countlessly. I know he wants me but I can't do that to Siphos.

Jack is tempting too and it takes everything within me to stop myself from grabbing him by the collar and kissing the shit out of him. Especially when he's in a suit, I feel like looking at him just makes me orgasm immediately, he's too hot sometimes. But I love Siphos and Jack is just a distraction and I doubt I'll ever date him because I really love Siphos. I mean come on people Siphos is my virginity breaker and what would I do without him, I love him too much. I might be angry at him at times but honestly I love him with my all, I know he's crazy and isn't giving me attention at the moment but he'll put a

ring on my finger one day. He's my everything.

Katlego: you look beautiful.

He said as I walked down the stairs tipsy. He forced me into coming to some place that I have no clue about and he's eyes just keep making me melt. He's a bad fuckboy.

Me: Thank you. but I'm tipsy just don't do anything I wouldn't do.

Katlego: trust me, will you

He said wrapping his arm around my bare back.

I'm wearing a yellow armless crop top and blue jeans with my Nike kicks and I

have my curls tied up neatly into a bun and loop earrings. He forced me into all this . He said I should look sexy. I'm stressed right now and I just think I really do need some air.

We get in the car and he starts driving. He plays some music and it's Trippin by Ella Mai. I sing along to the song and he smiles with his eyes fixed on the road.

" And that's a whole lot of love, ain't tryna waste yah.

like we be running em out And never make it

That's just too bitter for words, don't wanna taste it

That's just too bitter for words, don't
wanna face it

but I think that I'm done trippin, trip
trippen

I've been sippin, that's how I control

This feeling you keep givin

you keep hitting it ooh, ohh

Maybe it's your love that's too good to
be true

Baby boy, your love got me trippin

you..... "

I closed my eyes and sang along. Fresh
warms tears rolled down my cheeks and
all of a sudden I got emotional. How did

I find myself here? What happened to my beautiful soul. How did it get to this point of me loving the sight of death. Gogo never raised me like this. Is it the city life? I was never so savage back in Soweto. Or was it a part of me that I never knew about? When last did I actually go to church? When last did I sit down and speak to my creator, the one who created me. Life and Love are two difficult things.

I felt warm hands wiping my tears and the car stopping. I w
quickly opened my eyes and sniffed.

Me: why are you stopping?

I said wiping my cheeks and looking around. We were in front of nowhere on a hill. The view was beautiful. All the stars felt so close and so alive, the moon was so grey and beautiful I could write a book about this beautiful night.

He holds my hands and smiles lightly at me.

Katlego: Tumisani I know you're going through a lot right now and I know whatever I may say right now means shit to you but I want you to know that I'm here for you, if you need a shoulder to cry on just let me know, I care for you and I hate seeing you cry.

I smiled and sniffed. At least he's caring. That's all that matters. I hug him and just listen to his strong heartbeat as I rest my head on his chest.

Katlego: the sky looks beautiful, this is my little escape place, I love coming here at night, it just comforts me a little, come let's go look at the stars

He opens his door and walks around to open mine as well. We sit on the front of the car and the wind makes me shiver. I look up to the stars and smile. I feel like I'm somehow connected to Gogo right now. I feel her presence and it brings a smile to my face. She's here with me.

Katlego takes off his jacket and covers

me up with it and pulls me in for a hug.

The night is silent and peaceful. These bright stars makes me wanna live, it gives me hope and courage. I too shall experience this thing called life.

Let's take it step by step.

He kisses my head and slides his hand to my butt and rests it there. I giggle.

Me: Katlego

Katlego: I'm freezing and you're so warm, your ass is the warmest.

I pinch him and he chuckles. It is really cold out here though and I'm wearing his jacket.

Katlego: you're beautiful Tumisani, your beauty is beyond explanation and any man would dream to have you, never forget that. Your beauty is a gift. Your father once said in his interviews when I grew up being inspired by his late videos, he said, " beauty is in the eyes of the beholder. ", when I look at you all I see is your mother, her beauty was just as ever flowing as yours. You're a queen Tumisani.

I blush. Is he just tryna flatter me or what but he sounds so sincere which makes me want to believe him so much.

Next thing I know he's cupping my cheeks and we're both lost in each

others eyes. They're so dreamy and it makes me hungry. I look at his pouty lips and God forgive me. I can't resist this, I tried resisting Jack but Katlego is worse. I just can't....

My phone immediately rings just before our lips meet and I jump in shock. I pull it from the pockets of my jean and I fumble with the phone as my hands shake.

Katlego: Tumisani relax

He said holding my hands and I never imagined Katlego would make me so nervous.

Me: Hello

I said in a shaky voice. I cleared my throat and got off the car. His warmth left my body. I walked around to the back of the car and breathed heavily with the phone against my ear.

Sipho: baby

Me: Ndlovu

I was irritated now. After not calling me for almost a week he decides now that he wants to speak to me.

Sipho: you're angry

Me: what do you want?

I said not interested.

Sipho: babe that's rude, I know you're

angry with me but Tumisani I told you I have work and it's been keeping me occupied

Me: oh really, same old excuse, do I not work as well Siphho, yet I text you and call you every second of the day, Siphho what is wrong with you, I don't understand you anymore

Siphho: Tumsa don't be like that, I fucken told you that this job takes all of my time and I only get home very late at night

Me: don't you ever and I mean ever curse at me again, Ndlovu

I said pissed.

Siphho: Then you should fucken try to

understand when I tell you that I'm busy
Tumisani

Me: so fucken busy that you don't know
your priorities anymore or am I not part
of your priorities anymore!!!?

I yell into the phone, I'm fuming as hell
and I don't know where I get this anger
from .

Sipho: don't yell at me Phakade!!

He roars loudly and I chuckled loudly.

Me: when you've decided that I'm
important to you, let me know

Sipho: don't you dare hang up this phone,
Tumisa.....

I hanged up and got into the car and Katlego followed shortly. I stare out the window and try to get my thoughts back together, while silence fills the car.

I breath in and out. I look at Katlego and God knows temptations have me wrapped around it's little finger. If it wasn't for the love and respect I have for Siphso, I would've kissed this guy long time ago, and maybe even done more things with him.

.

Dumisani's POV~

I open the room door and find Busi sitting on the bed with two pregnancy

home tests. I almost lose my mind just seeing her sitting like that. What?

Me: baby....

She looks up at me and forces a smile. I sit next to her and the tests both have two pink stripes on it. My heart skipped a beat. What?

Busi: I, I..

I capture her lips with a deep kiss and the next thing we know we're both naked with me on top of her. She's made me the happiest woman on earth. I'm gonna be a father again.

Busi: (giggles) Dumisani slow down

She says as I keep sucking her lips and

squeezing her now even bigger ass.

Damn I'm the luckiest man on earth.

Busi: I thought you wouldn't be happy or ready

Me: what!!? babe, you've made me the happiest man on planet earth

I said thrusting deep inside her and moans and groans filled the room. I sucked her nunu and she held me tightly after three long rounds of love making. I kiss her twins and her cute belly. Now I know why she's been so moody on me and eating like a hippo and also the nausea.

Busi: baby stop, we have to talk about it

She says stopping me from touching my castle. I can't keep my hands off her and being next to her makes me go crazy. I'm smiling like a fool and I just can't help it.

Me: when did you find out?

Busi: I missed my periods these past few months and I thought it was normal, and I didn't pay much attention to being pregnant cause I was on the injection but than I remembered I haven't been going for my injection lately and that's how this all happened.

I kissed her head then wrapped my legs around her waist.

Me: how far are we?

Busi: almost four months

Me: what!! baby, how did you not know, come on you're a woman you should know these things

I said rubbing her breast and I know she's trying so hard not to moan, woman is driving me nuts.

Busi: I , I....aaah (she moans) I also don't know how I didn't recognize it, but I went to the doctor today and she told me I'm pregnant I didn't believe her that's why I bought the home tests, I was in denial and I was scared that you would be upset

Me: nonsense, I'm very very super happy, I'm gonna be a father again, I love you baby, I love you so much

I finger her and she couldn't even speak properly. I went down to get nunu and muffed her once again.

Busi: Aaaah Dumi....aah yes!!

She moaned. After making her cum we took a bath together and it makes me so happy to think that I'm gonna be a father. Maybe it's time I put a ring on it. She deserves the world, she's my rock and my heart in human form.

Me: mama kaSihle

Busi: baba kaSihle

She said kissing my lips and grabbing my hard cock under the covers. I groaned and grabbed my wife's ass.

She giggled while yawning. The day is beautiful today. The sun is shining.

Busi: I love you babe wam

Me: I heart you sthandwa Sam

She giggles and strokes my cock. I groan and kiss her softly.

Me: baby what's your favorite place in the whole wide world?

She smiles and closes her eyes shyly.

Busi: your arms are my favorite place in the whole wide world. When I'm in your

arms I feel safe

I smile and peck her lips.

Me: you're beautiful Busiswe Mpondo
and I'll make you mine

Busi: I can't wait to be your Mrs Phakade,
I've also always wanted to go to Paris

Me: the city of love, anything for my
nunu

She giggles and Kisses my chest.

Woman of my heart, mother of my kids.

Love of my life.

Me: forever mine Busiswe Phakade

She smiles.

~

*

*

*

*

*

Admin~

[06/20, 05:26] Snr: CONTINUATION~

*

*

*

*

*

Sipho's POV~

I don't know what's happening to me. I'm slowly and surely fading in my own life. Misery has become a norm for me and I don't know what I want in my life anymore. I find myself becoming more and more distant from people And it worries me. It sickens me on how I easily get angry and annoyed. I don't know why but I have this urge to experience anger. I'm angry at the world and I'm angry for whatever reason. I don't understand myself anymore and this pain in my heart just keeps making a deeper hole in my soul.

" sir you have a meeting in twenty minutes, would you like me to sit in it?"

Ashley the company personal assistant says as she finds deep in my thoughts with my head in my palms. Work has been my distraction. I often find myself working over time for no reason, I've been in meetings in and out and winning shares like the top dawg that I am. I'm slowly finding my feet in business and it feels great to forget about the world. It feels right to be making millions again and I wouldn't mind doing this all my life.

I look up at Ashley and I can't help but admire her beauty. She's an average white size 32 with curves and I can't help but yearn for her body. She's beautiful and just gorgeous but not

more than the queen that has my heart.

Me: uh Ash please cancel

Ash is the name I've learnt to call her and she's comfortable with it. She's in charge of my whole programs and we sometimes stay over time together especially on rainy days when she doesn't wanna go home and prefers to work till late and we would stay and just talk about this thing called life over a cup of coffee and business files.

She smiles and closes the door inviting herself into my office.

Ashley: Mr Ndlovu this meeting is really important and these clients would hate

it if you cancel on them on short notice

She says in that beautiful accent and that jaw line keeps doing things to my body. She's dressed in a tight black skirt with a white vest showing off her cleavage and a black blazer with black hills, she looks so professional yet attractive and so sexy.

Me: please, just for today

I said trying to keep my focus and not look at her gorgeous body. I'm turning hard and I can't help it. I haven't had sex in almost two weeks and I miss

Tumisani so much yet I've been avoiding her. I just don't know what I'm looking

for anymore. I'm confused with my own life. It's complicated. Yet I know for sure I really love her.

Ashley: fine. But this needs to end...

She says pointing her finger at me and referring to me. OK yeah I look a mess. My hair is a mess and I didn't iron my shirt this morning and my tie is all over the place and let me not forget my desk which has a pile of files on it.

Me: meaning

Ashley: I can't bare to see you like this, what is eating you? Is it relationship issues perhaps?

She said clearing my desk and placing

everything back to it's normal place.

Me: I'm fine

Ashley: that's a lie and we both know that

She said now leaning over my desk and putting my files in my drawer and her ass was right in my face. I tried so hard not to look there. Ashley and I have been great friends lately and she's a nice girl to talk to and hang out with yet all we've done is having coffee together and go out for lunch during lunch time at work. She's funny and vulnerable.

Ashley: look Siphoh, whatever it is just don't allow it to break you down like this,

you're a great guy and any woman would dream of being with you, don't let everything bring you down like this dude
She said sounding just like a typical Tumisani. Tumisani would definitely talk like this. I chuckle and smile at how silly that beautiful woman can be.

Ashley: yaaayy you're smiling, great, so it's lunch time in about an hour and I was thinking we could do a little something concerning your hair and.....

Me: what? you don't like the way my hair is?

I said looking at her legs as she positioned herself on my desk. Beautiful.

Ashley: no I do, I love your hair maybe a trim would be better, your curls are cute.

Me: mmm OK, but I'll go myself when I have time

Ashley: which is never because you never have time, so get up young man we're going to the barber .

She forced me up and we left my office after I took my wallet and phone and car keys. I haven't touched my hair in a while and I look pretty scary, I'm a mess at the moment and I know that.

Ashley: let me drive

Me: I can drive myself you know

Ashley: don't be silly, this car of yours is

a beast and I would love a taste .

I chuckled and got in the passenger seat. It's funny how I allowed her to drive just so easily yet Tumisani has to fight me to get me to allow her to drive my car. This is my favorite car and no woman is allowed to drive yet here I am allowing my colleague to drive my car. I hate this bond building between us and I hate the way we're both so comfortable around each other.

I look at her beeping phone and it states, " James". I look at her and she also sees it but ignores it.

Me: aren't you gonna answer the phone?

I said picking it up and giving it to her yet she hanged up and turned red in the face.

Ashley: no I don't wanna talk to him

She was now irritated so I decided to drop it. We got to the mall and I cut my hair and shaved now growing beard and Ashley decided that we should do a little shopping for me since she said I lacked fashion so we went to different expensive stores and bought me some new clothes and then I bought her some clothes as well and it was real fun. She was really fun to be around and she argued a lot. Yet listens to me. That's what I like. To take control.

Ashley: I'm hungry

Me: me too, let's go eat

I held onto the shopping bags and she walked next to me with a smile plastered on her cute face. We walked towards spur and just as we were about to enter I bumped into someone and their phone fell clattering onto the bare floor. Shit.

Me: I am so sorry. I'm sorry

The person bent down without looking at me yet I felt like I knew her. She picked up her phone and looked up and I was shocked.

Me: Tumisani...

She looks at me than Ashley than back at me. Hurt was what was written over face. She was wearing a Kappa track pants which hugged her figure and a blue crop lacy vest with an Adidas cap and her white Nike air force. Damn she looks flames. Her beautiful was true evidence of magic. I felt jealous.

Ashley stood next to me confused as we both stood there staring at each other and Tumisani kept looking at the shopping bags.

" Yoaah Tumisani, check out this....."

Some guy comes out of the restaurant calling her name and I know him from

somewhere. He looks familiar. From the under ground perhaps. He looks at Tumisani than at me than back at Tumisani and finally at Ashley and we all keep quite. No one dared to say anything.

Tumisani clears her throat and fakes a smile.

Tumisani: Hi

She looks at me weirdly and turns to Ashley.

Tumisani: and you are?

She says in her most sweetest voice ever.

Ashley: hey I'm Ashley, are you Siphos

sister?

She smiles politely and I want to disappear right now. Tumisani chuckles and shakes her head.

Tumisani: am I your sister Siphho?

She says with sarcasm and I know she's pissed. She chuckles loudly and turns to the guy behind her who is looking at Tumisani with those eyes I onced looked at her with.

Me: Tumisa....

Tumisani: have a great day farther Mr Ndlovu

She smiles at both me and Ashley and walks away with that guy following

behind her and I know she's furious right now.

Ashley: is everything OK? who is she?

I looked at her and sighed.

Me: let's go get some lunch

I dont know what to think anymore, who's that guy that tumisani is with and why is he with her?

What is going on. Is Tumisani perhaps cheating on me? She was upset when we spoke last night clearly because I've been bust wit work and it's not my fault that work has been keeping me occupied I expected her to trust me.

Ashley: look if you don't wanna do this

right now you can always tell me

She said looking a bit down and I felt bad. She made my day today and she doesn't deserves this.

Me: no I'm sorry. Let's order and please don't hesitate to order anything

She smiles warmly and rests her hand on mine as well. I flinch.

Ashley: you're a great guy Siphoh.

I looked at her and I hate what we're both turning into.

.

Tumisani's POV~

" Tumisani wait!"

I get in the car and start the engine. He gets in the passenger seat and I drive off. Breath Phakade, breath. I calm myself down and smile.

Me: Katlego would you like to go to a party tonight?

He looks at me like I'm crazy and I just find myself smiling. This beast within me has woken up.

Kat: drive to my house please

He ignores my question and I take that as a no and drive to the liquor store instead. Alcohol is my new best friend.

I buy booze and get back into the car where katlego is busy on his phone. I

look at him and he looks handsome today.

I drive to my house and park outside. He helps me with the booze and we place it in the lounge on the coffee table. I so badly wanna get drunk right Now, I play some loud music and Level Up by Ciara is playing. I open the first beer bottle and drink immediately.

Drink after drink and I'm slowly losing my mind. Siphos turned me into a monster. I'm slowly and slowly drifting.

I find myself dancing on Katlego and he is also as drunk as me. I twirk on his lap and he groans. Fuck my life. I need to

live a little. Fuck everybody and what they think of me. I need to sip a little.

Me: level up, level up, level up level up, I'm so so yummy, do you want this yummy, yummy on my tummy....

I sang along twirking a groaning Katlego. He grabs my ass and I grind on him. I'm wet as fuck and very drunk.

Next thing I know I'm naked and kissing Katlego. The kiss is intense and I feel so horny right now. He's a great kisser and these lips are so soft and sweet. He kisses my neck and trails down all the way between my boobs and squeezes my ass, I moan loudly and he groans. I

bite his neck and dig my nails into his back. I couldn't even keep my eyes open. I was dead drunk. The music pumped the house and here I am giving Katlego a heads. I sucked his huge cock and took him to Mars and back. Even the moon wasn't available. His groans filled the house and he came in my mouth, I swallowed and he carried me up the stairs still kissing me sweetly. I was really wet and bothered and alcohol was full in my system.

Me: aaaahh aaahh baby...yes aaahh fuck Katlego!!

I moaned as he took me to a town called muff town and sucked me in and out,

licked all my juices and did wonders to my pussy. His tongue was so warm inside of me and it gave my body such pleasure. I orgasm more than three times and he kept hitting my spot. His game is good. He licked me clean and slowly came up my body with wet kisses. This fuckboy knows his game. He sucked my twins and kissed it softly, my moans were beyond control. He positioned himself between my legs and I heard him pull out a condom and put it on. My eyes got blurry and I was really exhausted all of a sudden...

" no come on Tumisani, don't fall asleep on me!..."

He chuckled and I just moaned before falling asleep into a deep slumber.

I woke the next day with a pounding headache and a tired naked body. My nunu wasn't sore meaning Katlego didn't fuck me. Good. I looked under the covers and he has a strong boner with his arms wrapped around my waist. I looked at him and he snored softly with a cheekish smile on his face. He's really cute.

I don't really care about last night. I don't care what Sipho will say because it really doesn't matter. He doesn't own me and never will. I don't feel guilty about what I did. I love him but

sometimes love is just not enough.

This is my distraction.

Me: wakey wakey sleepy face

I said pecking his cute pouty lips.

Katlego: go back to sleep, it's early.

He said with his eyes shut and his lips curving into a naughty smile. I chuckled.

Me: open your eyes your idiot

He chuckled and pressed his lips onto mine while opening his eyes. He slowly kissed me and I loved it. Every minute.

Katlego: you're beautiful Tumisani

I smiled.

Me: sorry for falling asleep on you

I blushed.

Kat: no problem, I'm just glad you trust me and I promise I won't do anything to break your trust

He said rubbing my ass while his cock poked my entrance.

Me:mmm can we, like, can we not label this thing between us just yet, please

He pecks my lips and I wrap my legs around his.

Katlego: I promise not to force you into anything, OK

I nod and we rest like that till Katlego decides that we need to wake up and we eventually do.

Maybe a little spice in my life could change something. I won't regret what I did and that's for sure. Call Me a bitch and I would gladly take the trophy.

I'm the boss ass bitch.

~

*

*

*

*

Like comment and comment

I'm thinking of making the page, " Voice of The Poor " but it depends on your likes and comments. Should I do it?

~

[06/20, 05:26] Snr: INSERT 116~

.

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV~

I walked into Layla's hospital ward and she was staring into her phone with no guard watching over her. I smiled as the sight of seeing her with so many machines connected to her gave me joy. Her arm is bandaged and looks like

she'll be armless for a while. She looks a mess and it just feels great to be bigger one in this game.

Me: good morning sister sister

She immediately let's go of her phone and looks at me terrified. She looks scared but tries to put on a brave face. I chuckle.

Layla: get out of here!!

She yells and I smile.

Me: relax doll face, I'm just here to do what I came here to do

Layla: what, what do you want I'm gonna call security, security!! help help!!!

She screams like a mad person and tries to press the emergency button but it's off.

Me: shut up, no one will come to your rescue

Layla: Tumisani don't come any closer, Tumisani stop right there!!!!

She says terrified and already sweating. I stand right in front of her and watch how she slowly suffers.

Me: shut up, are you done?

I said irritated. I take out the injection from my pocket and she gasps in shock without even knowing what it is.

Me: relax sis, this will heal you

Layla: what is that? Tumisani don't do this please

she begs. I smile once again bringing the injection close to her face.

Me: this is all I need to make you suffer even more. You took away my baby and my happiness and my inheritance now I will make you suffer.

I grabbed her hand and she screamed in pain. I found her pulse and injected right through her veins.

Me: now let's see who will attack me now , after this you won't be able to walk again or even life a single finger, all you be able to do is speak, a wheelchair is

your next comfort zone since your feet won't even be able to touch the ground you piece of shit

I said with no emotions. Without me having to spill blood, I'm making her suffer. That injection was to paralyze her, so from now on she won't be able to walk or move her hands, which is a better way to make her suffer because she'll be disabled and no one will want to help her after the pain she's put everyone in.

Layla: aaah Tumisani no!!

Her face turned red and she suffocated on her own oxygen. I watched as she

suffered and lost conscious right in front of my very own eyes. Karma is a bitch.

I walked out of that room and straight out the hospital watching as the power went back on and the nurses rushing to patients and especially Layla. I made sure to cut off the power before coming into the hospital, I had to cut off the cameras and also the emergency buttons. God forgive me for putting the life's of those innocent people in danger.

I got in my car and drove off. I opened the windows and let the wind blow through my head. She'll suffer for the rest of her pathetic life.

I drive to Dumisani's house with a smile plastered on my face and I take the bouquet of red roses and chocolates as well as chocolate cake from my booth and walk towards the door. Our future Mrs Phakade is preggy. I knock and Dumisani answers with a smile on his handsome face.

Me: father

Dumisani: love of my life

He kisses my cheek and hugs me while helping me with the load in my hands.

Me: congratulations!!! I'm gonna be a aunt

I said excitedly.

Dumisani: I'm gonna be a father!!

He hugs me again and we both laugh.
We walk to the lounge and find Vuyo,
Sihle and our already big Busi, she's
glowing and gaining yet looking
beautiful as ever. Damn she's flames.

Me: mama kasihle

Busi: aunty ka sihle

She smiled and I hugged her kissing her
cheeks.

Me: sis wam

Vuyo: baby

She kissed my forehead smiling and
glowing. Hey, why does it feel like

everyone here has been living their lives and being happy.

Me: Y'all look beautiful, am I missing something?

Busi: I'm pregnant it's normal, Vuyo what's your excuse?

Sihle: makoti don't I get a kiss?

I gasped and forgot that he was even there.

Me: my baby, I'm so sorry, your mother distracted me

I said kissing him and carrying him.

Busi: don't lie to my child, you forgot about him

Me: I would never

I said blushing. I handed Busi her gifts and sat with Sihle on my lap next to Vuyo. Our little mini family.

Busi: Vuyo, spill, why do you keep looking so beautiful every time I see you?

She says grabbing the chocolate from the coffee table and stuffing her self with it.

Vuyo: it's nothing, I'm just happy

She blushes shyly.

Me: oh please, don't lie, oh are you shy of Dumisani? OK, Dumisani get lost, it's girls time

Dumisani: Phakade watch your mouth,
you're in my house

Me: and as the woman of this house I
command you to leave

Busi and Vuyo laugh at us and Dumisani
looks at me with a naughty smirk on his
face. I know what that means. He
stands up and I get up quickly, giggling.

Me: Dumisani stay where you are

I said running behind the coach away
from him yet he followed me and I kept
running.

Dumisani: chase me again in my own
house. I dare you

Me: get out Dumisani, get out

I dared him. I giggled running around like a child and they kept laughing at us. Dumisani caught me and started tickling me, I laughed my ass off and I just couldn't stop

Busi: Dumisani stop, she's turning red

They giggled and Dumisani lifted me off the ground carrying me in his arms.

Vuyo: you guys are so silly

She smiled drinking her wine.

Me: Dumisani Phakade, put me down now!!

Dumisani: no, apologize first

Me: never

Dumisani: than I'm gonna go throw you
in the pool

I gasped.

Me: you wouldn't dare

He started walking towards the pool and
I gasped giggling.

Busi: Dumisani let her go

Dumisani: no she's becoming stubborn

Me: I was always stubborn

Dumisani: and that's bad

Me: OK daddy please put me down, I
won't do it again

I smiled.

Dumisani: promise?

Me: promise

He put me down and wrapped his big arm around my small shoulders, and kissed my head.

Me: mxm, now serious go play outside or whatever and let us talk

Dumisani: but I wanna be close to my wife

Me: put a ring on it

He gave me a death stare and I giggled.

Dumisani: wena Tumisani, you've grown balls hey

Busi: leave her alone babe

Dumisani: I'll teach her lesson, I'll start

beating you up

Me: (gasp) you wouldn't dare, you love me too much to do such

I smiled proudly. He kissed my cheek and hugged Vuyo

Dumisani: of course I love you people, but I love my wife more

He French kissed Busi right in front of us and they looked so cute. My perfect couple.

Vuyo: OK that's enough, go now

Dumisani: baby...

He looked at Busi with horny eyes. Busi blushed and held his face.

Busi: later my love

Dumisani: but my love, I....

Me: oh come on Dumisani, don't disrespect me us like that

Dumisani: hey wena shut up. I'm tryna get some love from my wife, baby...

He turned to Busi and they started smooching. Dumisani has no shame. They kissed one last time and he finally left.

I spent the day with them and we had so much fun talking about life, we ate a lot and drink wine except for Busi who is forbidden to drink, Dumisani's rules.

I haven't spoken to Siphos since we

bumped into each other at the mall and it hurts that he might be cheating on me but I'm not saint. I'm trying to move on and be happy. I wanna be happy.

I drove back home from Dumisani's house and parked in my driveway. He saw Siphos car parked there as well. But he was in his car, he didn't go inside. I walked to the drivers side of the car and tapped his window since he was busy smiling to his phone.

Siphos: Dumisani hey

He said getting out of the car and trying to hug me and I eventually did after hesitating.

Me: how are you?

Sipho: I'm I, I don't know, I'm confused,
can we go inside?

Me: sure

I wasn't in the mood for his shit right. I opened my house door and switched on the lights since it was already dark. We sat opposite each other in the lounge and he just blankly stared at the floor playing with his fingers. He was irritating me.

Me: Sipho what is wrong with you?

I said looking at him.

Me: what is it? you've been fidgeting for the past few minutes, what is it?

Sipho: Tumisani I don't know what I want in my life anymore, I'm confused. This whole thing is confusing me

Me: what whole thing? the fact that you're about to have a baby with another woman is confusing you?

I said annoyed.

Sipho: yeah And I just need some time to find myself again and gather my thoughts together and....

Me: wait, in other words you wanna break up with me?

Sipho: well not like that, I mean, just, just as in I need space

I chuckled. I breathed.

Me: you need fucking space Siphoh wow, when I was lying sick in hospital mourning my baby you didn't need space, when you were fucking that hoe you didn't need space, now she's pregnant, you need space?

I sighed deeply.

Siphoh: Tumisani this is hard for me and I don't know what I want anymore, I...

Me: OK fine, space is what you want, space is what you'll get. please get out.

Siphoh: Tumisani can we not fight about this, please...

Me: no my love we're not fighting (I said sarcastically rolling my eyes) get out!!!

I shouted pissed.

Sipho: Tumisani....

I walked to the door and opened it. He slowly walked towards me and stood in front of me. I inhaled his cologne and tears threatened my eyes. My heart was shattered. Anger filled my veins.

Sipho: Tumsa I'm sorry..

Me: please leave!

I said softly and he sighed before walking out and I banged the door shut. I kicked the door and cried my lungs out. I crawled onto the floor crying and poured my heart out.

He hurt me deeply. My phone rang and I

ignored it. It rang again and I checked the caller ID

" Katlego"

I ignored and switched off my phone. I need to be alone.

This is all that bitches fault, siphon wouldn't have left me if she wasn't pregnant. Has he ran out of love for me? What do I lack?

No, no, I'm not crying for Siphon. No, never. I wiped my tears and sat up straight. I have to be strong. Love won't break me down. I won't allow myself to become depressed because of him. I won't allow myself to become a slave of

love.

A loud bang came through the door and I immediately whipped my gun out from the bottom of my coach and stood up pointing it on the door as I stood against the door frame

Me: who is it?

Silence.

I slowly opened the door and pointed it right on the person's head and he froze. I almost blew his fucking brains out.

Kat: shit woman are you tryna kill me

He said scared and removing the gun from my hands

Me: what the fuck are you doing here?

Kat: you weren't answering my calls
and.....wait have you been crying?

He looked at me worried and I ignored
him walking to the kitchen and pouring
myself a glass of water.

Kat: Tumisani what happened?

Me: can we not talk about it? Please

Kat: Layla has been paralyzed, did
you.....

Me: Katlego please just shut up and fuck
me

I threw myself at him and kissed him
hungrily. My heart bleed for Sipho. My

body yearned for his touch and my lips craved for his kiss.

Am I really bad luck. Why do I always have to be second in everything.

I'm laying on the kitchen floor with Katlego naked on top of my naked body, kissing my neck, I moaned sweetly.

Kat: are you sure about this?

Me: fuck me as hard as you can, I want to feel pain

I moaned softly. Tears rolling down my cheeks.

Here comes the bitch within me.

~

*

*

*

*

Admin~

[06/20, 05:27] Snr: INSERT 117~

.

.

.

.

No matter what I do, ohh

all I think about is you

Even when I'm with my boo

baby girl I'm crazy over you....

~

Yanda's POV~

" daddy, why didn't mama take me with her to visit aunty!"

My princess says rubbing her eyes after waking up from her beauty sleep, in her PJ's.

Life has been good on my side. The moola keeps coming left right and center, I'm getting rich and richer by the second. I've managed to buy two clubs and I now own a private jet. I've been making money like no body's business. Yet I lack love, I lack someone to warm

my bed at night and I feel like there's a whole in my heart.

Me: princess, mama had to go because it was really urgent, don't you like staying with daddy?

I said smiling giving her my full attention. She climbs onto my lap and I kiss her forehead.

Thando: I love staying with daddy, daddy buys me lots of ice cream, right daddy!?

She smiles naughtily.

Me: nah now you tryna bribe me

She giggles and I make her breakfast while she takes a bath. When she's done, I get her dressed into a pink fluffy dress

and tie up her long hair into a pony, she has long hair just like her mother.

Me: you look beautiful princess

Thando: thank you daddy

She smiles and we eat breakfast while she keeps on talking and talking about cartoons and how naughty her dolls are and I had to pretend like I was listening. But trust me I wasn't.

Thando: daddy did you know, my doll Nancy has 10 fingers?

She says with a straight face. Lord I have a drama queen here.

Thando: I asked you a question Mr Mkisi and I expect an answer

She says impatiently. I chuckle and clear the table.

Me: yes baby. I know Nancy has ten fingers

Thando: and now she's falling in love with Andrew, I mean who would want a girl with ten fingers, that's nonsense, right daddy?

I chuckle even more. Says the girl with ten fingers herself.

Me: come princess, let's go

Thando: where to?

Me: to aunty

Thando: which one?

Me: your favorite

Thando: yaaayy Aunty Tumi!!! let me go get Nancy, Andrew will miss out on so much fun.

She squeals running to her room. So young yet so dramatic. Like mother like daughter.

Today I'm going to visit Tumisani because I've heard that Layla has been paralyzed and i know she has something to do with this and I'm glad she took that step. Now she'll finally get back to her feet.

Thando: Luyanda Mkisi snap out of it already!!

I snap out of my mind and look at my little drama queen. She's just one crazy girl.

Me: Thando, put on your seatbelt

I said getting her into the car and she kept complaining about how Nancy wouldn't have a seatbelt and it was unfair so she decided they both won't put on their seatbelts.

Me: Thando! come on baby, this is useless, OK get in the back seat

Thando: I'm the woman of the house and I decide Mr Mkisi

I chuckle and laugh. She giggles. I love my daughter.

She finally decided to get in the back seat after I promised her ice cream.

We drove in silence as she kept admiring every little thing she came across.

I checked the time and it was almost hard past twelve. We got to Tumisani's house and I carried Thando while she kept talking to Nancy about Tumisani. I knocked at the door and her sweet voice said, " I'm coming". Damn it turned me on. A few seconds later, she opens the door looking beautiful as ever in black tights which hugged her sexy figure and a crop top white in color and a silver necklace. She looked breathtakingly

beautiful.

Thando: aunty!!!

Tumisani: my love, how are you?

She said taking Thando from my arms and kissing her all over her face.

Thando: I'm fine aunty, Aunty meet Nancy, Nancy this is my favorite aunty Tumisani

She introduces her doll to Tumisani, I chuckle as we walk inside.

Tumisani: Hi Nancy, hey Luu

She hugs me and I couldn't help but hold her waist in the process.

Me: you look beautiful

She blushes.

Tumisani: thank you, you two look cute

She says referring to me and Thando. Of course Thando took the credit

Thando: I'm the cutest Aunt, don't ever mistake that

We laugh and sit down.

Tumisani: this is a pleasant surprise, can I offer you guys anything?

Thando: I want ice cream aunty

Me: you're always eating ice cream

Thando, water is fine Tumisani

Thando: oh come on pops, don't be so boring

She rolls her eyes and Tumisani giggles.

Tumisani: I swear this is our future Lindiwe, they have the exact same personality.

Me: like mother like daughter

She laughs standing up and walking towards the kitchen. I couldn't help but look at her sexy ass and those curves keep turning me on, I could just stare at her cute frame all day. She comes back with a tub of ice cream and a glass of water. Thando is now smiling.

Thando: thanks aunty, Now tell me, where is your room?

Me: first one right up the stairs

Without saying a word she walks away from us and marches up the stairs licking the spoonful of ice cream.

I look at Tumisani and chuckle. I love my daughter guys.

Me: did I tell you how beautiful you look?

I said looking at this angel in front of me.

She blushes

Tumisani: oh thanks once again, so let guess why you're here, oh.....Layla is paralyzed and I'm the one who's behind it all if you wanted to know.

She smiles and I love that smile.

Me: smart, beautiful and perfect, what else are you woman?

Tumisani: powerful

Me: of course

She chuckles and looks at me with a smile. I really miss her so much. I know she's single now and it feels like there's hope for the two of us. I know I did wrong in my past but i love this woman so much.

Tumisani: Stop drooling

I snap back to earth and smile.

Tumisani: so any new plans?

Me: uh well, apart from us not being able to do anything to Kazi, than no.

She bites her bottom lip making her look

even more sexy.

Tumisani: perfect, anyway. How's your life?

She smiles and I just realized how broken this girl is. She's tryna act brave and put up a smile but it's hard for her. My Tumisani is never this broken.

.

Tumisani's POV~

Yanda: my life is good, busines is going well, just.....

He sighs and looks at me. He looks so damn hot right now.

Me: love. Love is what we lack.

I smile and so does he. Next thing I know I'm sitting next to him with my head on his shoulder. It feels right, it feels great.

Yanda: Tumisani you do know that I still love you right, and I forever will

I smile and kiss his cheek.

Me: I know Yanda, I know.

He smiles and takes my hand and intertwines our fingers. I feel the shock in my body yet I don't wanna risk it. I can't allow him back into my life, my heart and my soul. I can't do that.

Yanda: go out with me Tumisani, just give me this one chance to prove myself

to you

I chuckle

Me: Yand, I...

Yanda: I beg of you Tumisani, please.
Just one date and you can decide after
that if you still don't want me.

I sigh. I'm scared to let him in. No, it's
too soon. I can't.

He doesn't belong in my heart. Siphon
does.

Me: can I think about it?

Yanda: sure, anything for you, just know
that I truly love you.

I rubs our fingers against each other and

I feel a pang of pain in my heart. I will not allow another man to destroy me. Never. Not the same man who made my bestfriend pregnant.

Me: I need time

I said softly. He looks up and so do, our lips so close to each other. I moved slightly back and reached for my phone as a message from Katlego popped up.

Katlego

" hey Tumisani, I'm flying to London for a few weeks, business related. Take care, I'll be back. "

I sigh. Asshole. He wanted my pussy and he got it, now he's running away.

Once a fuckboy, always a fuckboy. But I don't give a rats ass about his sorry ass.

Yanda: let me love you again Tumisani...

He says breathing on my neck and I just sat there stone cold. I can't let him love me again.....

~

*

*

*

*

Admin~

[06/20, 05:27] Snr: INSERT 118~

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV~

After making dinner for Yanda, Thando and myself, we ate and chilled a bit till late and Thando fell asleep in the process and I wish they slept over but Luu said he had an early meeting the next day so that's why they had to leave, tho I was sad cause we had so much fun together and I like their company, they're great to hang out with. But he

promised they would come this weekend so it's chilled.

It's Thursday and I have a meeting with one of Jack's clients and Jack himself can't make it so he asked me to talk to them. Remember, I started working with him? His PA. I love the salary and I love my job, I feel much bigger than I was even though I have a small position in the company.

The day is a bit chilly and it looks like it'll rain. So I put on my black jeans and my black ankle boots and a white vest with a black leather jacket. I look interesting. I check my phone and it's a text from Jack telling me on where to meet the

client and what to expect and stuff that I already knew. I puff some perfume on myself and took my laptop bag as well as my tab and purse before heading downstairs, I grabbed an energy bar from the cardboard and rushed out otherwise I would be late and Jack hates it when I'm late for meetings. He's a great boss and all but likes his employees to be prompt and productive which is very right and he has every right to want that because that's exactly how I felt when I once upon a time owned companies. But that's in the past now. I parked my car outside some fancy restaurant in the far side of town, he's

lucky I have a GPS otherwise I wouldn't even have bothered to drive so far in the rain. Yeah it started raining and what person would want to have a meeting so far? This client ain't normal and I don't know how I haven't met him/ her yet.

Anyway, I quickly grab my work stuff and rush into the beautiful restaurant, oh it's Italian. Beautiful. A beautiful Italian restaurant on the far side of Cape Town. Lovely. I get inside and search around for a familiar face but I don't recognize any of these faces. A waitress walks up to me with a beautiful smile on her face which makes me smile back.

Waitress: Good morning ma'am, are you

looking for someone?

Me: Good morning, well I'm supposed to be having a meeting with uh.....

I stutter, I forgot the name that Jack told me belonged to the client.

Waitress: Mr Petra, I'm sure you're looking for Mr Petra

She smiles and I remember the name now. Well it sounds like it.

Me: yes, yes Mr Petra

Waitress: please follow me ma'am

She smiles and leads me towards the end of the restaurant which looked like the VIP section or something but is

there such? in a restaurant? I wouldn't know because I only eat at Spur, I don't know about these fancy Nancy pancy stuff.

We get to a table which had a very sexy, handsome, hot, flamy young man who looked round about in his late 25's or something and dam God why did he have to be sexy and so gorgeous, he has creamy brown hair with soft pink lips and broad shoulders, he's in a navy blue suit which hugs his muscles and makes him look so damn.....

Waitress: Madam this is Mr.....

Man: you may leave

He cut her short without even looking in our direction and focused on his cup of coffee. The waitress left and I wondered if I should invite myself to sit or just.....

Man: you may be seated

He said in that deep commanding voice and immediately I knew, this man intimidates me. His voice is so demanding and his cologne seeks for attention, his natural features scream wow and his face just begs for unwanted attention. His the true definition of....

Man: if you could stop staring at my face we would get going with this work

He said bringing me back to my senses.

Me: uh uh sorry sir, uhm I apologize for the absence of Mr Patkins, he couldn't make it and....

Man: is that why he sent his floozy to this meeting, (he chuckled) anyway name?

I looked at him in awe. I guess he doesn't want me to be nice hey. He's one arrogant nasty ass hole and I ain't gonna entertain him.

Me: with all due respect, I don't like the way you....

Man: I said, name?

He said commandingly. I looked at this

man that was looking anywhere else but at me but I could see his beautiful grey eyes. A beautiful man with an arrogant character. How pathetic.

Me: Tumisani Phakade

Man: (chuckle) Eric Petra, next time we have a meeting, wear something decent, I don't like meeting my clients looking like.....

Me: excuse me?

I said with my eyebrow raised. Clearly this man didn't hear me correct.

Me: listen Mr Petra or whatever you call yourself, I will not allow you to disrespect me especially since we're

total strangers and oh so lord help me if I ever bump into you again, I suggest you get onto business and stop talking as if you own me, I dress as I please now, may we proceed?

I said irritated. Jack will get a piece of my mind. He should've warned me about this asshole.

Eric Petra: you'll lose your job if you keep talking to me in that manner, do you know who I am?

I chuckled.

Me: do you know who I am?

I said looking right at him and we were now both looking into each others eyes.

His eyes scream another language.
They're so, beautiful, I can't help but
adore them.

Eric Petra: you're one tough cookie
aren't you, anyway you're waisting my
time. Give me the files and I'll get my PA
back to you since you are the PA

That sounded like an insult. He's so
arrogant. Gosh.

Me: we're supposed to discuss the
contract which you're supposed to sign

Eric Petra: I'm not signing anything, I
doubt I would want to do business with
you people especially with such a
disrespectful PA from Patkins industries,

now hand over the file

I looked at him with so much anger. He's bloody mean and if it weren't for my job and Jack's reputation that I'm tryna save I would've cursed at this man long time ago, but for Jack's sake let's endure this man Tumsa....

Me: listen Mr Petra, I'm.....

Eric Petra: there's no point apologizing, I'll call Jack myself.

He grabs the file from my hands and stands up, without saying any word to me he leaves the room. His cologne lingers in the air and suffocates me. Damn he's so arrogant. I roll my eyes

and stand up, leaving the room irritated. He ruined my day.

I drove to Spur and it wasn't so busy so I ordered myself a milkshake while waiting for my breakfast, I was busy chatting with Lindiwe on WhatsApp and she was telling me of how Brian proposed to her and she's now engaged, which is so cute. She sent a pic of her ring and I was happy for her, I really was. It's good to see her happy. She said they had to go to Soweto for a few days because Brian's Parents wanted to speak to her and all that other stuff African parents do, that's why they left Thando with Yanda because it's

tradition and stuff. I'm truly happy for them. I decided to call my future sister in law, who is soon gonna make me the happiest aunt alive. Oh and Dumisani is planning on proposing as well, on the day she gives birth, it's gonna be so cute. I hear wedding bells.

Busi: Dumisani's baby

Me: Dumisani's wife

we laugh.

Busi: how are you princess?

Me: I'm good and you?

I said sipping on my milkshake.

Busi: I'm getting fatter and fatter by the

day, I'm tired of eating and your brother has been ignoring me

I giggled.

Me: don't worry, I'll beat him up when I get there, he should be taking care of you right now, I'll give him a piece of my mind

Busi: I wish he was here to hear you say that, he would go crazy

We laugh together.

Me: I know hey, so how's my prince doing?

Busi: he's becoming naughty, he's giving me attitude and your brother doesn't want me to beat him and teach him a

lesson

Me: aaah Busi, leave my baby alone

Busi: he's naughty, these days , you'll see for yourself when you come, although when he sees you he'll become an angel but haaa he's actually not

I giggle and I can hear her chuckle.

I hear moving sounds in the back ground and wonder what it is.

Me: what are you doing?

Busi: ironing your brothers shirts

Me: hey, why are you doing that, you're pregnant, Dumisani promised he would get you a helper

Busi: he did get me a helper but I sent her home for the day, I'm bored I wanna do something to keep me busy

Me: aah Busi what if you hurt yourself

Busi: I'll be careful

Me: Dumisani won't be happy

Busi: he'll be strong

I giggle looking up and my eyes landed on two people. They look so happy, smiling and holding onto each other. He moved on? I thought he needed space? is this what he calls space?

Busi: are you still there?

Me: uh uh B, let me call you later please

I hanged up and tried to blink away the tears forming in my eyes. The waitress walked towards me with my food and I lost my appetite. They stood their talking with some woman that is also white and they looked happy. That bitch. I chuckled and found myself smiling for nothing. She got what she wanted.

Me: thank you

I said to the waitress and she smiled. I tried not to look in their direction but I just couldn't control myself.

As soon as Sipho turned his head in my direction I looked down into my plate and pretended as if I was eating. I felt

them moving closer and closer towards me. I drank my smoothie and pretended to be busy on my phone till I felt his shadow above me and his cologne burning my nostrils. I looked up and we locked eyes.

Sipho: Tumisani

Me: Ndlo.....(I hesitated) Sipho.

I smiled up at them. Kill them with kindness Tumisani.

Me: hi Ashley

She smiles down at me and they made me feel small.

Ashley: hey Tumisani

Me: oh wow, he finally told you my name
I mumbled under my breath.

Ashley: excuse me?

Me: nothing, how are you guys doing?

I smiled looking at Ashley's arm
wrapped around Sipho's arm as well.
Chuckle. Bloody pathetic. Too clingy.

Sipho: uh we're great and yourself?

He said unsure.

Me: I'm perfectly fine

Sipho: uh it was nice meeting you, we
have to get a table, maybe I'll see you
around?

Asshole. I faked a smile. Fucker.

Me: sure, oh wait, how's your baby
mama?

Ashley: baby mama?

She looked confusedly at Siphos. ooopps,
I think I pressed the wrong button. He
didn't tell her? He didn't tell her he
fucked the same woman who killed our
baby and now she's pregnant. Wow.

Siphos: uh she's fine, bye

He pulled Ashley's hand and they left the
restaurant. Agh he sickens me. It
doesn't hurt that he's moving on
anymore. He's an idiot just like the rest
of them and I'm gonna learn to forget
him, I know I still love him but what's the

pointing of loving him when he's moved on. We've been together for three good years and he throws it away just like that, why, because he's, " confused".

Confused my big butt.

After having breakfast, I hopped into my car and before I could start the engine. I got a call from Jack.

Me: Hello

Jack: Tumisani what have you done, you messed up

Me: what are you talking about?

Jack: don't ask me what I'm talking about, we lost that contract and it's all your fault

Me: what!? my fault? how?

Jack: woman get your big sexy ass
down here right now

I almost giggled but then remembered
that he's really pissed. This was a big
contract. But how's it my fault that guy
was being an ass.

Me: yes sir

He groans before hanging up. Now I'm
in trouble.

Fuck you, Eric.

~

*

*

*

*

Admin~

[06/20, 05:27] Snr: INSERT 119~

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV~

I can't believe Jack called me to talk about that asshole. I never wanna see him ever again, I hope it's the first and the last time I have to sit in a meeting with him. He's too rude and arrogant.

I walk into Patkins Industries and it's really busy today, I guess that's why Jack wanted me to handle that meeting. I walk to the receptionist and she's busy gossiping with the other first floor girl, on this busy day yet their clients waiting to set a date for Jack's meetings. If this was my company, I would've fired her ages ago, and plus she's bossy and has too much attitude for my liking. All these people don't like me because they simply think that I'm fucking their boss. Pathetic. I walk up to them and they're laughing away, she pops a bubblegum into her mouth and chews. She's irritating me and I have to get this off my

chest.

Me: hey Vicky, you know if you really treasured your job, you would stop chewing that gum and help these clients, I'm sure.....

Vicky: and who the hell are you to tell me that, Tumisani?

She says with attitude rolling her eyes. Fada lawd I can just pull out those fake eyelashes. I breathed.

Me: ok, do as you please, Jack will love to see this.

I start walking away and they're astonished.

Vicky: ah Tumisani, wait.....

I get into the elevator and it dinged closed, she's nervous now. Bitch. I pull out my phone from my back jean pocket and it's a text from Luu.

* Luu*

I miss you. Dinner? Please.

*

I found myself smiling at his silly text. He wasn't really one who was good with words. He sucks at asking someone out. That's for sure.

I replied telling him that it's cool and he should pick me up around seven.

I got out of the elevator and waltzed to Jack's office and he wasn't there. I

checked his schedule and it says he's in a meeting so I sat my big butt on his beautiful leather couch and played around with his files and fixed it where necessary. After about thirty minutes he entered with stress written all over his face. Shit. I really messed up didn't I. He looked cute tho, black tux and his hair nicely combed.

Me: Jack....

I stood up with my hands behind me like a five year old. He plopped onto his chair and sat with his head in his palms.

OK...He's really stressed.

Jack: Tumisani, why?

Me: Jack, let me explain, the....

Jack: Tumisani do you know how important that contract was? I specifically put you in that meeting because I knew I could trust you to handle such clients...

Me: if you could let me explain....

Jack: there is nothing to explain Tumisani, if we lose that contract I swear it's all your fault

He said pissed. Yet calm.

Me: Jack, he was rude and....

Jack: Tumisani you know how business is, you tolerate clients and do it for the sake of business, you've done this

before so why were you being so difficult with this one, do you know how many shares we might lose because of that meeting, Mr Petra is our biggest investor and.....

Me: well he's bloody rude and arrogant, I don't like him

I sulked.

Jack: you weren't even supposed to like him, all you had to do was get the contract signed Phakade

Me: he called me your floozy and told me to.....

Jack: Tumisani we both know those things he said to you weren't true but for

the sake of business you should've endured it.

Me: So I should let him disrespect me for the sake of business, I have pride and self respect you know.

I said irritated now, he looked tired and defeated. I know he has a point by telling me to tolerate that ass but I won't stand and allow no man to disrespect me and call me names and tell me how to dress, hell to the no.

Jack: you will apologize to him,
Tumisani

Me: Jack, no

Jack: Tumisani Phakade this is the

biggest contract we have this year and I'm not gonna allow you to ruin this for me,

He sighs.

Jack: Please Tumisani, please don't be difficult, I need this contract

He said pleadingly. I know this contract is important but that guy should be the one apologizing not me, this ain't fair.

Jack: I'm setting another meeting with him for the day after tomorrow and I want you to apologize, I need this contract Tumisani. please.

He stood up, walked to me and held my hands. I tried not to look into his eyes,

I'm pissed. I hate this.

Jack: please

He forced me to look at him and I eventually did.

Me: fine.

I said sternly. I yanked my hands away and took my handbag. I walked out of that office without looking back. This is so not fair.

I get into my car and drive to my house. I'm all alone and I'm lonely right now.

The rain is my comfort at the moment and that's all I need. I get inside the house and immediately rush to my room where I changed to my warm PJ's and

long socks then walk to my kitchen and make myself a sandwich with some junk food, chips and stuff, and chocolates. I walk to the lounge and plopped onto the couch with a blanket and get comfortable.

I text Luu and tell him the change of plans....

* Message*

Change of plans, come over. It's too cold to be outside. Please.

*

A wide smile spreads on my lips and I can't help but blush at the thought of us cuddling on this couch. Just like the old

days.

.

Sipho's POV~

My heart is aching and my soul feels lost. I don't know what's happening to me these days. I've consulted the doctor and they've told me that my sickness is getting worse, and I need serious therapy. So here I am once again in the therapists office and I feel like a lost soul. I don't get myself anymore. One minute, I'm happy and the next I'm pissed at the world.

Dianne: so we've done more tests and the results state that your bipolar levels

are rising which means that we might have to take you into Rehab soon if therapy doesn't work for a few weeks

My therapist says with a sad smile on her face and I can't help but wonder what on earth is going on with me.

Me: but rehab is for drinkers and smokers, I'm not.....

Dianne: sir it states here that you've been consuming way too much alcohol in your system and I'm sure rehab will help and also we could try chemotherapy if you'd like

Me: can we please just go through the first stages of therapy and see how it

goes than maybe there'll be a change

She smiles and sits down opposite me.

She's a beautiful lady in her early forties yet she looks young.

Dianne: Tell me about yourself?

She says with a warm smile once again.

The session goes on and on for almost three hours and we sit there going through circles as I find it hard to talk openly about my life. I've been through way too much in my life and I'm afraid it's affecting me too soon.

I leave Dianne's office and get into my car, I drive off to Nandos and get some food for Thandokazi as she says she's

craving Nandos, she's been irritating me for a very long time now and her hormones are all over the place. She sometimes breaks down in front of me for nothing and then I have to console her. She enjoys acting like a baby even though she's carrying one. But I can't wait for her to give birth to our baby. I can't wait to be a father and I can't wait for the suffering to end. She calls me every hour of the day just to tell me about her cravings and how she's horny and wet.

Yeah it happened that she seduced me into having sex with her again once or twice and that was it. I regret it. She was

all horny and all over me and I couldn't control myself and plus I hadn't had sex for a while so I took the opportunity, I have nothing to lose. I broke up with Tumisani because I didn't want to hurt her, I'm confused about my life right now and I don't want to hurt anymore. I can't say I don't miss her but I've come to realize that I don't deserve her. I'm a monster and she needs to be treated like a queen.

I knocked at the door and she opens with only a towel wrapped around her body, her bump is now very visible yet she's only four months pregnant, you'd swear she's carrying twins.

Kazi: babe, how are you?

She says forcing me to hug her, and pulling my inside. I looked down at her bump through the towel and it was indeed beautiful. My first baby. I smiled.

Me: I'm fine, how's the baby?

I said placing her takeaway on the kitchen counter as she stood behind me.

Kazi: aah Sipho don't you care about me, mxm, the baby is fine.

She pouts. She's glowing and her skin has gone softer and smoother.

Pregnancy is treating her well I can say.

Kazi: stop staring, I'm all yours.

She smiles and drops the towel. Her naked body makes my body react immediately, my man down there is already hard and I can't help but lick my lips.

Me: T-t-thandokazi.....

She stands in front of me and puts her hand in my pants and grabs my hard cock. She strokes it and I groan grabbing her head and smashing our lips together. I kissed her hungrily which she stroked my hard cock. Next thing I know I banging her on the kitchen counter and she's moaning like a sex freak. We take it to the room and she gives me a heads and we carry on for

quite a while, till she collapses on top of me after we both came, she's a great rider.

Kazi: aaahh baby....

She moans kissing my chest. I grab her ass and run my hands against it. She moans.

Kazi: thank you baby

Me: are you alright?

I said placing her next to me and holding her bump, kissing her cheeks.

Kazi: I'm fine, and you?

Me: I'm good, let me clean us up

I tempted to get up but she held me

tightly.

Kazi: no babe, please cuddle with me, it's cold.

Me: are you sure?

Kazi: yes please

She pleads and I pull a blanket over us and hold her into my arms.

I'll regret this later. In life we only live once.

I later wake up and it's around six in the evening, the rain has stopped yet it's getting dark.

Thandokazi is fast asleep next to me and she looks cute. Pregnancy looks

beautiful on her.

I get out of bed and put on my boxer shorts, I go to the bathroom and ease myself then wash my hands and walk to the kitchen. This house is really big. The walls are filled with Thandokazi's Pics, they all look beautiful but the woman she is, says something else.

I warm the takeaways I brought earlier on and walk back up the stairs.

Ashley and I have decided to be fuck buddies for the time being, no strings attached, just fun. Yet it seems like she's already catching feelings. Which is very wrong because she just came out of a

crazy relationship. Speaking of Ashley, here she calls.

I walk to the balcony and answer the phone.

Me: Ash

Ashley: Tiger, how are you?

She says giggling.

Me: I'm great and you?

I said not interested at the moment, it's chilly out here and I wanna get inside where it's much warmer.

Ashley: I'm good, I miss you, I was thinking, this weather is perfect for cuddling and I would love to be with you

right now

She says in a seductive tone.

Me: uh Ash I would love that too, but you know how it is with my baby mama, she needs my help with a few things and I'm kinda busy

Ashley: oh uh sure, I understand

She says in a low voice. I had to lie, she hates Thandokazi.

Me: I'll make it up to you. I promise, talk later please

Ashley: hmm, bye.

She hanged up disappointed and I felt bad but I strictly told her not to catch

feelings. I'm not in the mood for shit right now.

I get inside and find Kazi slowly waking up rubbing her eyes and yawning.

Kazi: babe, you're up?

Me: hey, I just thought you might be hungry so I went to warm the food

She smiles grabbing the takeaways.

Kazi: thanks, baby daddy, come sit with me

She pats next to her and I get under the covers with her, holding her bump and rubbing it.

I can't wait to be a father. Maybe this

baby is my breakthrough.

.

Yanda's POV~

I knock on Tumisani's door and she instructs me to get inside and I find her lazing away on the couch. I chuckle.

Me: you're lazy, do you know that?

She looks up from her chips packet and smiles at me. She's beautiful.

Tumisani: hey Luu

I sit down at her feet and put it on my lap. I miss this position.

Me: you canceled the dinner I planned so nicely, for this?

She smiles again. My heart melts.

Tumisani: I'm too lazy to go out and plus it's cold Luu, where's my baby?

Me: with Yemi

Tumisani: Yemi is here?

Me: yep, she came to visit

Tumisani: wow I'll call her and we could catch up

Me: she would love that, now tell me, what have you cooked?

She looks away acting like I didn't just ask that question. I chuckled.

Me: you didn't cook, did you?

She gives me a puppy face.

Tumisani: Luu would you do us the honours by ordering some dinner please!!

She pleads.

Me: no, you're lazy today, why,

Tumisani: pretty please

She begged.

Me: nope

She got off the couch and sat on my lap.

I groaned and gasped at the same time.

The electric shock that transferred

between us felt so real and I could feel

the electricity in our bodies.

Tumisani: please Luu!!!

She begs now looking as if she'll cry.
She knows she's my weak point. She's
blackmailing me now.

Me: you're beautiful Tumisani

I find myself blurting and wrapping my
arms around her. She blushes looking
away.

Tumisani: Thank you

She tries to get off me but I hold her
even tighter. She looks at me confused
and I can't help but capture her lips into
a deep slow passionate kiss. She kisses
me back slowly and softly, sucking onto
my lips. The spark is there, the love is
there. I feel our hearts beating at the

same time and our body reacting the same way, our souls connected once again and I knew immediately. We're meant for each other.

She rests her hand on my chest and we sit with our lips together, never wanting to part.

Me: I love you so much Phakade
I whispered softly.

Three years down and here we are, in each others arms once again. Love brought us back together. I know this love never faded.

We're meant to be.

~

*

*

*

*

Admin

Power couple*

Will Hidden Secrets end with, Siphon and
Tumisani

OR

Yanda and Tumisani

Let's see.....

[06/20, 05:27] Snr: CONTINUATION~

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV~

I stare down at this handsome creature next to me. I miss being in his arms, I miss smelling his scent and I missed cuddling with him, I missed every single moment we shared.

Last night was a confirmation that my feelings for Yanda never really left me. I

might've hated him and got over him but deep down I knew my heart still beats for this guy. Last night was evident that love really does bring us back together, I now know that true love never dies. But than what confuses me is the feelings I had for Sipho, was it not love? What was I feeling? Was it lust? Was it me feeling like I had to pay him back for being there for me? That's what confuses me, but what I do know is that Luu is the love of my life. My first love and my last love, he might not be my virgin breaker but he is the man of my heart and that's all that matters.

Yanda: stop staring

He said with a smile on his cute face with his eyes still closed. I blushed.

Me: open your eyes

Yanda: they're too heavy, you made me drink too much wine last night

Me: how do you think I feel, you made me smile all night and my cheeks are so sore, my dimples feel even deeper

He chuckled sitting up.

Well what happened last night is that after that long ass passionate, romantic kiss, we decided to stop lazing around and went out to the Grand West casino and boy was it fun, we went ice skating and played a lot of games and went on a

roller coaster then we decided that it was best we go eat because someone was really hungry and it definitely wasn't me. We had a very long dinner filled with laughter and lots of drinking, only wine tho and Mr Mkhisi over here drank almost two bottles of wine, ask me how long we stayed in that restaurant, I wouldn't know. We got home very late and decided to just cuddle but eventually fell asleep and yeah, that was our little reunion, it was hella fun.

Yanda: you're gorgeous, do you know that?

He smiles looking right into my eyes.

Me: you're ugly do you know that?

He chuckles pinching me. I giggle.

Yanda: I'm much more beautiful than you so don't get your hopes too high baby

Me: oh please

He pecks my cheeks and I smile.

Yanda: any plans for the day Miss Phakade?

He says running his hands in my hair with my head on his chest and my arms wrapped around his waist. I missed this. My heart is beating so fast, it scares me. Is this real? Is this not a dream. How did we get here, what happened to Siphon

and I, I was so convinced that we were meant to be. Is it my fault or his that all this ended up like this. But wait, he made his decision, he decided that he doesn't need me in his life, he decided that he's confused about us. Ever since we found out that Kazi was pregnant for him, he changed. Is it because I couldn't give him a baby? But.....

Yanda: Tumsa are you OK?

I snapped out of it and looked up at him.

Yanda: my love you're crying?

Me: crying? no I'm not....

I touch my cheeks and it's wet with tears.

I sigh and rest my head back on his

chest. I need comfort. I need answers. Siphos has to have a reason of why he left me just like that, we were both sure that we were meant to be. He has to have a reason. No one understands him more than I do and even though we won't get back together, he still holds a place in my heart.

Gogo once said in my dreams, " there are three of them in need of your presence mntanam, they need you" and I've finally discovered who the three of them are. Luyanda, Siphos and Jack. We're connected in some kind of way and I'm never letting them go. They're like family and I shall stick with them

through every step. Sipho is mentally ill and needs someone to support him. He needs me.

Me: Luu, do you love me? are you sure about us? Will you hurt me again? Luu I'm tired of pain, I need someone that will be my forever, are you certain that your heart beats for me and me only?

I said looking deep into his eyes with tears rolling down my cheeks. Why am I so emotional.

Yanda: Tumisani I've never been so sure about anything in my whole life, my heart is truthfully and forever yours, I know you might find it hard to trust me

again but I can guarantee you that I'm a different man, I've mended my ways and I promise you, you are the owner of my heart. I love you Tumisani.

He says cupping my cheeks. Three years down the line and here we are.

I trust him. I believe him, he's sincere and true. I shall believe his words.

Me: I love you too Luu

He smashed his lips onto mine and captures my lips with a deep emotional kiss.

Here goes my second chance at love. It's time for some positivity. Tumisani Phakade too shall be happy.

.

Sipho's POV~

I walked into the therapists office and there's a doctor sitting in there as well. I'm confused even more. I know I'm bipolar but why the doctor..

Therapist: Mr Ndlovu, welcome, this is your doctor and the person who went through your medical files and he'll explain what's going on here

Me: nice to meet you

I greet the doctor and we sit down. I look at the both of them as they go through the files and I'm just totally confused.

Doc: so Mr Ndlovu, we did some test on

you and we thought that you had brain cancer that's why we wanted you to go through chemotherapy but then we discovered that you haven't got brain cancer either but rather your bipolar disorder is getting worse

I sighed in relieve that I don't have cancer. I don't wanna die so young.

Me: but isn't the therapy supposed to help

Doc: the therapy helps but it's you who's supposed to put in the extra effort.

we've realized that your drinking as affected you badly and we recommend that you stop or else we would see you

as an alcohol abuser and might have to take you in to rehab to clear your system, we would hate to do that sir

I sighed and tried to control my breathing. I need to get my life back in order. I don't want my baby to come into this world with a mentally ill father, I don't want my baby to go through that, I know how it feels to have a father who is crazy and I wouldn't want that for my child.

Me: I hear you doc, thank you

Therapist: Mr Ndlovu, I want you to feel free in talking to me about your problems, there's no one to judge you

here, I'm your therapist and you need to be able to talk to me so that I can help you

I forced a smile at her and breathed. This is a new journey I have to walk by myself. I need to find my feet and start all over again. Tumisani will forever be in my heart but I know I don't deserve her. She deserves better. I need to fix myself and find out what I want and what I need. I need to know my priorities and know my purpose and worth.

I get into my house and drop the keys on the kitchen counter. I spot Buhle with Mike in the lounge and they look cute.

Me: hey guys

Buhle: baby bro, how are you?

Mike: hey

Me: I'm good, how are you guys?

Buhle: we're good, Siphos what's happening to you, you look different, what's going on?

Me: I'm trying to find myself Buhle, I'll be fine.

I kiss her cheeks and walk up to my room, take a long shower and before I can even exit my room after taking a shower, my phone rings.

Me: Ash

Ashley: Siphon, you (sob) you ignoring my calls babe, I miss you so much

She's sobbing and I don't understand.

Haven't I made it clear that what we had was a no strings attached thing. Why is she missing me and constantly calling me and calling me sweet names?

Me: Ash why are you crying?

Ashley: why shouldn't I cry Siphon, you've been ignoring me and you don't answer my calls, what's going on my love?

I almost gasped. What is wrong with this woman. Does she not know that what we had was just fun?

Me: Ash we spoke about this, what we

had was....

Ashley: I know, I know (sob) but Siphho I need you, please

She begs. I sigh and put on my jeans and shirt.

Me: I'm coming

I hang up and rush out the house. These woman are driving me nuts. I start the car and drive to the direction of Ashley's house and my phone rings again.

Me: hello?

Kazi: baby daddy

Me: What's it now, Thandokazi?

I was losing my patience.

Kazi: aah Sipho relax, you didn't even ask how we are

Me: I'm sorry, how's my baby doing?

Kazi: our baby is fine, you seem stressed, what's wrong?

Me: I'm fine, what do you want?

Kazi: I'm just reminding you that we have an appointment tomorrow, did you forget?

I sighed. I totally forgot about that.

Me: I didn't forget Kazi, don't worry I'll pick you up tomorrow morning

Kazi: thanks boo

She hangs up and I continue driving. At

least Kazi isn't so clingy as Ashley. How do I manage them at the same time. I'm with Kazi because of my baby and that's it but as for Ashley, she's annoying me now. I get to her house and she's standing at the door with a fucking pathetic smile on her pink lips.

Ashley: I missed you

She grabs me inside and starts kissing me, dropping the gown she was wearing and her body was fully exposed to me.

I hate the way I've turned my own life into a nightmare. This isn't healthy.

.

Busi's POV~

Sihle: mama when is our princess coming?

Me: and who said it's a girl?

I said looking at Sihle across the table as we sat with his father in Wimpy.

I'm now labeled fat, it feels great to be pregnant especially now that I'm being treated like a queen. Poor Dumisani has been working up and down all because of me, he wakes up every night to make me a peanut butter sandwich with milk and he sometimes gets irritated but too bad, it's his baby.

Dumisani: are you comfortable babe?

He said asking about my seating

because I'm practically sitting on top of him, I have my legs on top of his thighs and my arms wrapped around his waist. I can't keep my hands to myself.

Me: I'm fine Phakade, shut up

I snapped back and he was shocked.
Shit these hormones.

Dumisani: babe I'm only asking a question

Me: you're annoying me, shut up already

He chuckles and keeps quite, the waiter arrives and bitch is eyeing my man.

Waitress: sir are you ready to order?

Me: do you only see him at this table or

are we invisible?

Waitress: madam I'm...

Me: shut up, do you know who I am, I'll get you....

Dumisani: baby relax, I'm so sorry about that, we'll order now....

He said smiling at the bitch and I got even more pissed.

She took the orders and rushed away quickly with that short uniform of hers trying to seduce my man.

Dumisani: babe...

Me: voetsek

I was pissed and Sihle was busy

laughing at us and Dumisani was irritated.

Dumisani: Busi watch your tongue, there's a kid here

Me: but it's your fault, you're flirting with her in my presence

No these hormones are something eyes. I'm close to tears now.

Dumisani: aah come on babe, I'm sitting right here next to how was I flirting?

Me: you were Dumisani, don't deny it

He chuckled and kissed me softly on the lips but horny me deepened the kiss and forgot that we were even in public, my hands found their way to his pants and

rubbed against his crotch.

Dumisani: don't start sometime you
can't finish B

I moaned softly and Sihle the child,
decided to clear his throat.

Sihle: I'm still here you know

Me: we don't care

He gasped and I realized what I just said.

Me: I'm sorry baby, mama didn't mean
that, I'm sorry

Sihle: woman you're a mess

Dumisani: leave my wife alone boy boy

He rolled his eyes and played with the
menu card as Dumisani kept teasing me

under the table and I couldn't help but moan.

Me: Phakade stop

He had his hand under my dress and rubbing against my entrance.

Dumisani: you want me?

Me: no, stop...aaahh..

I moaned softly into his ear and he chuckled kissing my cheek.

We're the craziest parents alive, imagine sitting in a restaurant with your five year old kid and your lover is finger fucking you under the table. How crazy is that? But do we look like we care, hell no!!

Our order came and we dug in feeding each other like a happy family. I love my family guys I really do. I couldn't have asked for a better family.

Dumisani: you two full?

He said rubbing my tummy after we finished eating, I smiled.

Me: yeah but can we get take always so I can eat at home, please baby

He wanted to objected but I gave him the eye and he just nodded.

Sihle: mama you'll become an elephant soon

Me: you're becoming like your father

Dumisani: he's my son after all

They laughed and I smacked their heads.

Me: shut up

Dumisani: I can't wait for you to give birth

Me: I can't wait for you to shut up

He stuck his tongue out at me and I laughed. I love this man.

Dumisani: I love you Busi

He said kissing my tummy and people were looking at us like we're the royal family. Some are whispering to each other and saying we're cute and some are.....wait.....

Dumisani: no I can't take this anymore, I can't wait any further. Baby I need to do this....

He stands up clearing his throat and getting everyone's attention. I'm confused.

Dumisani: Ladies and Gentleman, the beautiful lady over here is the love of my life, she's the mother of my future kids and the woman who owns the key to my heart, I've been waiting a long time to finally do this and I am finally ready. I love this woman with every bone in my body and every second that goes by my love for her forever grows, she's my life and my heart and soul and Babe, it

would make me the happiest man on earth, if you would agree to be my forever and happily after, Busiswe Mpondo, will you make me the happiest man on earth by being my wife.....marry me Busi

I gasped in shock as he went down on one knee and and popped out a beautiful, oh fada lawd this is pure diamond, a beautiful and even more beautiful diamond ring which costs even more than our house. I was in tears and couldn't speak, people where clapping and taking pictures and telling me to say yes but I was speechless, Sihle was bust smiling and taking a video and God this

is the happiest moment of my life.....

Me: Phakade....

Dumisani: woman my knee is in pain,
say yes already

Everyone laughed and he smiled up at
me. I've never seen him so happy.

Me: shut the front door, of course I'll
marry you!!!

I screamed and he jumped excitedly
putting the ring on my finger and
capturing my lips with a deep loving kiss.

Everyone: aaaawww, ncoooh

We giggled and continued sucking each
others lips and exchange saliva. I looked

at the beautiful rock on my finger and smiled. If only my mother was here.

Dumisani: I love you, I love you and only you, forever mine Busi

Me: I love you more Dumsa, forever yours I am

He smiles and kissed my lips again.

God has blessed me indeed. I thought I lost him but secrets brought us back together. Every peel of an onion is worth it. There was tears but here he stands in front of me.

Forever yours I am Dumisani Phakade.

Sihle: stop kissing, geezz ma

He chuckled.

~

*

*

*

*

Admin: we're close people. Almost there.

~

[06/20, 05:27] Snr: INSERT 120~

.

.

.

.

.

TWO MONTHS LATER

Yanda's POV~

" baby stop, you'll hurt yourself my love"

She says helping me with the boxes and kissing my cheek.

She's grown more happier and even more beautiful over the past two months and I couldn't have been more happier. Her smiles and always the highlight of my day, her laugh is always what drives me nuts and her beautiful will always and forever make me fall in love with her all over again.

Two months down the line and life

couldn't have been better, yet a lot has happened through this two months.

A lot of healing has been done and it feels great to finally move on without any obstacles or baggage on our shoulders.

Dumisani got engaged with Busi and she's now seven months pregnant and a very happy beautiful lady, let me not forget how happy Dumisani is and can't wait to be a father.

Sipho and Tumisani have both been through there therapy together and they both helped each other to heal, they've grown even more close and you would

swear they're twins. We've decided to put our differences aside and move on and support each other, it was hard to forgive each other but eventually it had to be done. It was hard for Tumisani to forgive Thandokazi and accept her but she did and she's also now seven months pregnant and looking big as ever. Siphos managed to tolerate her and they get along just fine. Everyone is happy and we now all look like a big happy family, that's all that matters. I've managed to get Tumisani to accept her inheritance again and it took a lot of convincing but I managed and she now has her inheritance back as well as

access to the Matthews mansion. Vuyo has also been part of this past two months let me not forget and she's very happy with her boyfriend Thabiso who is madly in love with her. Though we are all still trying to get back on our feet, we stand together united as a family. I'm happy and proud to have such a courageous and beautiful woman by my side. All I do now a days is smile and thank God for his blessing upon my life. Oh let me not forget Lindiwe and Brian who are soon going to get married and Tumisani is so excited to be organizing two weddings at the same time. I'm happy secrets brought our love back

together.

Let me also not forget my beautiful sister Yemi who has been by my side through thick and thin, she's still on with that long term relationship with Mangi and i see he's promising, he's even went with her to KZN to visit his family and I'm just happy they're happy even though they fight all the time but they make each other happy and that's all that matters.

Now let me focus on my royal queen now. The love of my life, my queen, my nunu, my munchkin, my heart and soul keeper. She's my happiness and forever will be, not even words can describe the

love I have for this woman.

In this two months our love had grown drastically we've fallen in love all over again and learnt even more about each other than we knew. She knows me like the back of her hand. In these two months we've managed to buy a huge house together. It's a beautiful triple story in the suburb of constantia and it's pure beauty.

It consists of seven bedrooms, three on the first floor and four on the second floor and the third floor has a swimming pool on the roof. All the bedrooms have a walk in closet and each with bathrooms inside, there's two kitchens

and they are both big, there's two lounges and each lounge has a huge plasma TV and the first floor has white leather couches whereas the second floor has pink coated couches and black tiles as well as a cinema room. In all honesty this is the best house I've ever come across in my whole entire house, it's just perfect. There's also a huge back yard.

So because today is Saturday we decided that we would do a little get together since it's our first get together in a long time and we miss everyone so much and plus we need to bond again, so we ad in my baby and I organized a

braai and invited everyone.

Me: my love relax, the gents will take care of the meat

I said placing the glasses on the counter. Everyone has already arrived and they're seated on the roof top enjoying the view. By everyone I mean; Dumisani, Busi, Vuyo and Thabiso, Siphos and Thandokazi, Sihle, Thando, Lindiwe and Brian as well as Yemi and Mangi who also just came to visit for the next few days.

Tumisani: babe, what if....

Me: baby chill, you need to stop stressing, I'm right here with you

I pecked her lips and she blushed. That's what I wanted. I grabbed her ass and she gasped, causing me to chuckle.

Me: I miss you...

She smacked my hands off her smiling.

Tumisani: you're naughty, I'm busy Luu

She says grabbing the glasses and alcohol bottles.

Tumisani: come

She signaled me to follow her up the stairs and I watched as she modelled up the many stairs bouncing her ass and swinging her hips from left to right driving me mad. I groaned.

Me: baby...

I whispered before we got to the last floor.

Tumisani: control yourself Luu

Me: I can't

She stopped and turned, smiling. She's beautiful guys.

I smashed my lips onto her and devoured her sweet soft lips, the kisses lasted for five whole months without us touching each other because our hands had things on it. It was lovely.

Tumisani: come baby....

Me: last one...

She giggled kissing me again and then left me standing there with a huge boner. This woman will be the end of me. I fix myself and follow her to the roof top where everyone is having the time of their life's.

Busi: babe I'm hungry

She says pouting at Dumisani.

dumisani: you've been eating since we got here Busi

Busi: Phakade don't start with me

She says giving him an irritated stare.

He chuckles and stands up walking to the griller where Siphos is braaiing.

Me: here's more meat

I put the meat on the table and grabbed the cooler box.

Lindiwe: so what game are we playing?

She says getting out of the pool dripping wet.

Thando: mama I need to pee

She says holding her mothers hand.

Tumisani: come princess I'll take you

She picks Thando up smiling.

Me: can I follow....

I say with a naughty smirk and she pinches me.

Tumisani: Luu, stop

She whispers, giggling. I can't help it she

looks hot. She's in a white bikini bra and her blue ripped denim shorts which hugged her booty and damn I can't help it.

Thabiso: who's up for a swimming contest?

He said jumping into the pool and the rest of the gents follow, I pull my top off and jump into the pool with my shorts on.

We started racing and playing around like kids and splashing the ladies, drinking like the old days and basically just having fun.

.

Tumisani's POV~

Me: Luu don't you dare, Aaah Luyanda I don't wanna get wet

Luu: baby it'll be fun

He pulled my screaming self into the pool and we both dipped in and popped out wet. He grabbed my waist and I smacked his head.

Me: look what you did, I just straightened my hair Luu

Luu: you look beautiful

My hair was in a curly mess, so much for trying to straighten it.

Two months has passed and it's been

the most difficult two months of my life. There's been tears and lots of healing yet I conquered. I came out happy and alive. That's all that matters. I've learnt a lot these past two months. I've learnt to forgive and forget and most importantly to love.

Dumisani: Busi...

Busi: don't touch me

I giggled looking at these two silly people, always at each others necks.

Me: Dumisani what have you done now?

I said giggling. My brother has finally popped the question and I'm over the moon and ready to plan this wedding.

I'm super excited.

Dumisani: I didn't do anything

He said following her out the roof top.

They're cute guys.

.....

*

*

*

I'll continue....

**

[06/20, 05:28] Snr: CONTINUATION~

.

.

- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV~

I get out of the pool and wrap a towel around my body. This is indeed a beautiful day. I'm so happy and so in love with our new house. It's pure beauty.

Well two months went down and let's just say I got my inheritance back, Yanda talked me into it and I ended up signing back the papers into my name, Layla now lives at the disabled peoples home because she's paralyzed, remember. Zack is back in town as well

and here's a surprise.....Well he's engaged to Zinhle, remember her? Luu's ex girlfriend and they have a cute baby boy by the name of Daniel, he's super cute I swear. Well I've decided to forgive him because he didn't contribute in hurting me and I've now realized that he's always been by my side.

I've not only forgiven people but I've also gained a family, a big family. Siphos and I are now best friends for life, we've been through therapy together and I must say it helped a lot, his happiness means a lot to me and his medical condition has improved a lot and I'm happy for him.

Well about Thandokazi, I had to fight

myself to come to a point where I forgave her, it took me a lot of healing and God you wouldn't believe what I did to her. Well, it happened. I ended up knocking her out this past month, I was so angry and frustrated that it took me to a point where I literally choked her life out of her and she almost lost her baby, Siphos was very angry with me but he eventually understood that I had my reasons, I hated her with passion but now for the sake of life, I forgave her. She apologized and repented her sins and only God knows why he gave me an easy heart. I wouldn't say I fully trust her but let's see how this new Thandokazi

behaves.

Well in all honesty this past two months was two months of healing and forgiving and moving on, I learnt a lot and it taught me a lot especially when it comes to patience and being strong.

Well you might me asking where's my other brother, Jack. Well Jack has been the best brother in the whole wide world, he has been by my side through thick and thin, he has supported me even though it wasn't easy. He's just a wonder person and I couldn't be more grateful for him. Oh and let me not forget, he got himself a girlfriend. Her name is Emihle and she's really beautiful

people, true definition African beauty, they've been taking things slow and I can actually say he's in love with her but he doesn't wanna rush things and I understand where he comes from.

Dumisani: Phakade!!

I snap out of it and look at the most gorgeous soul in the whole universe.

The man of my heart. My other half.

Dumisani. I don't know what to say, I don't know how to describe the love I have for this man, no words are able to explain my love for him.

Me: father

I smiled. He scoops me up and carries

me bridal style, I giggle.

Dumisani: I miss carrying you

Me: your wife is taking my place

He chuckles.

Dumisani: no woman can ever take your place in my heart

I smile, kissing his cheek. We've come a long way. This is my pillar of strength. My everything.

Dumisani: I love you, do you know that?

I smiled into his hard chest.

Me: I know and I love you most, always remember that

He kisses my head and places me down

onto my feet.

Sipho: when you two are done
professing your love for each other than
someone can get the door....

He says with a smile. They all laugh at
us and Dumisani wraps his arms around
my waist.

Dumisani: leave my woman alone

Luu: your woman is right there stuffing
her face with food, that's my woman

We all turn and laugh at a eating Busi,
shame this pregnancy of hers is doing
wonders to her.

Busi: Leave me alone

She says with a mouthful. I giggle and walk towards the stairs and just admire this wonderful family of mine.

Luu: babe wait for me..

I shake my head and sigh. This man can never cease to amaze me. He never gets enough of me.

Luu: you're driving me nuts

He says grabbing my ass while we walking down the stairs.

Me: Luu we have guests

I said grabbing his arm.

Luu: so what? I can't chow my woman's cookie because we have guests?

He says with a smirk and I laugh. He's so sexy.

Me: I'm all yours later babe, be patient

Luu: mmmm that sounds like music to my ears

He kisses my neck which turns into him sucking my ear lobe than kissing my cheek and then he got me right where he wanted me. He kissed me fully on the lips and rubber his fingers against the fabric of my shorts at the entrance. I moaned. He pulls my leg up to his side and I moaned soft....

Me: Luu aah, ba....

Luu: a quickie babe, please...

He says in between the kiss and groans.
His member pokes my entrance and I
feel my cookie getting wetter and wetter
but I cant. We have visitors.

Me: Luu aahh stop...

I push him off me and compose myself.
He smirks. This dude mara..

Me: you did that on purpose

I hit his head, I'm so soaking wet down
there.

Luu: you don't wanna let me in

I ignore him and walk to the door. Luu is
a sex freak, I promise you. Imagine how
he wakes me up in the middle of the
night asking for a quickie, sometimes he

wakes me up at one in the morning just so we can shower together and have a steamy session. It's super annoying but cute. It feels good to know that he craves me even in his sleep. But just one round with him, you would wish you didn't allow him in. He's so huge, my God. I could never get used to his huge size, it takes him a long time to fit in me even, gosh. Look at me discussing how huge my man is, lol.

I open the door and spot a very sexy looking Jack with his beautiful girlfriend Emihle.

Me: couple of the year

I smile.

Jack: oh please don't start

Emihle: Hey Tumi

She says smiling while hugging me. We get a long very well and she's like an older sister to me. Well they're both older than me. She's 23 and Jack is 27. They look cute in all white, she's wearing a short maxi white dress and he's in white shorts and a white Nike top.

Jack: you always beautiful as ever

He says kissing my cheek, I smiled.

Me: you always ugly as always

We giggle and he ruffles up my hair, as

usual.

Luu: hey guys

He greets them with a smile wrapping his arms around my waist. See what I mean, if he's not laying on top of me when we sleep then he's head is on my lap, if not that then his legs are on my body and if not that then he keeps touching me. But it's cute.

Emihle: did I tell you how super cute you guys are?

She smiles giving me the basket with goodies.

Me: ncooh thank you, how thoughtful of you

I say referring to the basket and her compliment.

Luu: thank you

He plants a kiss my lips and Jack wraps his arms around Emihle's shoulders.

Me: everyone is upstairs, please follow me

They follow us up the stairs and they keep admiring every little thing.

Jack: you guys have a wonderful home

He says with a impressed smile.

Me: thank you

Luu: we're building our legacy in here, right baby, we won't move houses right?

Me: ah Luu what if I wanna move out of the area? I'll get bored of living here forever

That's true, living in this house forever will sicken me, imagine having kids and living here for twenty years, hell no.

Luu: whatever you want babe

We get to the rooftop and there's a lot of noise. Lindiwe is dancing on top of Brian and I swear she's drunk, Siphos is singing and Thandokazi is dancing with Vuyo in the pool.

Jack: Ladies

He greets the ladies and moves onto the gents and Emihle greets everyone as

well and sits next to Busi who is now looking exhausted yet we haven't even gone half way through the day yet.

Me: Luu are you gonna keep holding me like this all day?

I say looking at a clingy Luyanda, he's been holding me since Jack and Emihle arrived and it's annoying me now.

Luu: swim with me

I chuckle. I pass him a beer and push him away, I walk to the ladies and sit next to Emihle.

Busi: I'm so tired

Kazi: me too

She gets out of the pool and her belly is so huge, her pregnancy looks cute, you would think she's carrying twins.

Me: do you guys wanna go home?

Busi: your brother will sulk all day if I pulled him out of all this fun just because I'm tired, it would be unfair so let it be

Me: but it's his baby, let me....

Busi: no Tumisani, it's OK I'm fine

Me: are you sure?

She nods and Thabdokazi sits on the long chair and lay her back down, with a sigh.

Emihle: remind me not to fall pregnant if this is how tired I'll be all the time

Me: ahh wena, Jack will kill you if he hears that

Emihle: pregnancy is too much

Vuyo: baby!!!

Vuyo approaches us shouting at Thabiso. They are also like Busi and Dumisani now a days, always at each others throats.

Thabiso: I have a meeting tomorrow

Vuyo

Vuyo: I said one more hour Thabs and I haven't eaten yet

Thabiso: that's because you've been drinking all day woman!

He grabs the wine glass away from her and she stumbles back a bit, she's tipsy.

Vuyo: baby please!

Thabiso: we're going home Vuyo

Me: brother Thabs, one more hour please

I plead with him .

Thabiso: I have a presentation tomorrow morning Tumisani, I'm sorry I can't stay longer....

He apologizes.

Vuyo: you're fucken boring Thabiso man

She clicks her tongue and Thabiso just chuckles carrying her onto his back cause she can barely walk Now.

Thabiso: you love me like this

Vuyo: make love to me right here

She moans with her eyes closed. We laugh at her drunk state. It's funny.

Thabiso: I would love to babe, but there's people

He smiles, with her on his back.

Vuyo: I don't care about the people, fuck me now...

She murmurs and next thing we know, she's fallen asleep.

He takes some meat for later and says his goodbye to everyone and they leave.

Sipho: Kazi you OK?

He says to a quite Thandokazi. Poor guy has been braaiing all day. He choose it so, no one forced him.

Kazi: I'm tired

Sipho: do you want me to take you home?

She shakes her head and before she can speak his phone rings, he looks annoyed at the person calling and he immediately changes moods. The fuxk?

Sipho: excuse me

He walks out and we all just keep quite.

I quickly set the table and place the meat on the table and it looks delicious. The kids are eating in front of the TV on the second floor and I pray they don't mess my white couches.

Me: Dinner is served

Everyone surrounds the table and we say praise. Siphos has returned and he looks off.

Kazi: babe you OK?

She whispers to him and he just fakes a smile, i know it's fake because I know Siphos very well. Whoever it is on the phone has really upset him.

Emihle: this meat is lovely

Jack: indeed

Dumisani: only the best from the best,
Sipho my man you know your things

We carry on eating with a light conversation and ended up ordering more food from Nandos because we have heavy eaters in this family and some of them are eating for two.

After the long dinner, the ladies cleaned up the place and Lindiwe was now more sober, we cleaned up and washed up and by the time we were done it was already 20:30, and the kids had already fallen asleep. So we chilled in the lounge listening to music and just talking.

Jack: so since we all enjoy each others company how about a little trip to America?

Dumisani: that sounds fantastic

Busi: you talk as if you don't just have a pregnant fiancée who can give birth any time

Dumisani: baby don't worry, it'll be fun and you might just give birth in America

Emihle: that would be so cute

Luu: I'm up for it, right baby?

Me: no!! we are first gonna wait for Kazi and Busi to give birth than plan for this crazy trip of yours

Dumisani: oh come on, it's not like they'll pop any minute now, they have two more months.

Brian: it'll be amazing guys, come on

Sipho: I'm up for it

Kazi: Sipho no

Sipho: you've always wanted to go

Me: y'all are fucked up

Busi: totally

Luu: we're going and that's final

Jack: we can use my private Jet, I got plenty of places we could go

Busi: OK mr Billionaire, whatever you say

We laugh as she pouted sarcastically.

I've always wanted to travel but I'm worried about these two pregnant ladies, I so badly want Busi to give birth here, its home and i know Gogo will be turning in her grave if her grandchild is born in some foreign country. We continue talking till its late and they have to leave. They say their goodbyes to us and we hug and kiss goodbye. I locked the house doors and Luu helps me clean up the glasses and sweep the lounge just to keep it neat. Thando left with Lindiwe so we're all alone.

I leave him in the lounge as he answers a business call and I strip naked, hop into the shower And allow the water to

kiss my skin. The warm water makes me comfortable and I sink into my own world.

I feel cold hands holding my waist and I know it's Luu. He kisses my shoulders and I feel his big member poke my ass. He softly grabs my breast and jiggles them causing me to moan. He spins me around and softly pushes me against the wall, I feel his warm lips kissing mine. He sucks on my lower lip and his finger finds its way to my cookie. I get lost in the sweet slow kiss that it takes me by surprise when he sinks his finger inside of me and I gasp softly followed by a moan. He slides his finger in and

out, in and out and my moans fill the entire block. I feel my body rise with tension and my cookie is burning with pleasure. He groans into my neck and I hit my first orgasm.

He lifts me up and I wrap my legs around his waist while he sucks on my twins and I throw my head back in pleasure. Such pleasure can not be explained. My body feels as if it's on fire, next thing I know his full size enters my cookie and I moan loudly grabbing his head in the process. If anyone is blessed with a dick than it has to be Yanda. Even Siphon isn't this big.

He breaks my vaginal walls apart and

pushes himself deep inside of me. The pain hits me as if I was having sex for the first time, as usual it happens. He groans with his lips now on top of mine.

Luu: you're so tight baby!!

He groans into my lips and I suck his bottom lip.

He thrusts in and out and in and out and I shortly follow the rhythm as my legs have gone numb. I can never get used to how big he is. He grabs my but and moves the both of us into a position that is comfortable. He thrusts faster and faster and we both hit climax at the same time. I breath onto his neck and

hold him tightly, my legs shaking. He hasn't pulled out yet and I know this night ain't gonna end till he's satisfied, so much for a boyfriend who loves sex.

Luu: baby...

Me: i love you

Luu: I love you more.

He carries me out the shower and all of a sudden he's taking me to muff town. Lord have mercy!! If this is what I'll get all my life than yes I accept. Orgasm after orgasm and I just can't get enough of his skin clapping against mine. I don't know what time it was when we had our last session but I bet you it was past two

in the morning.

Luu: you're the sweetest thing I've ever
tasted in my whole life

He says kisses my bare back.

Me: my body is numb

He laughs. I chuckle. See why I rather
starve him for a week?

*

*

*

*

~

OK so 122 or 124 is our last inserts.

We've come a long way guys. I really appreciate you all, and I want y'all to know that you have a special place in my heart now let's get at least 20 comments on this post than I'll finish up the story.

I have great new stories in mind.

~

[06/20, 05:33] Snr: INSERT 121~

-
-
-
-
-

THREE WEEKS LATER~

Tumisani's POV~

I walk into my office and the cold breeze hits my skin. My air conditioner has been on all night, shit.

I walk over to my desk and clear all my files on the beautiful white coated desk.

Doesn't it feel great to get my job back, it really does.

I don't know how to explain how happy I am and how strong I've grown. Not so long ago I was doing grade 11 and lost gogo due to cancer, I lost my favorite woman in the whole wide world. The woman who gave me happiness and

sacrificed everything just for my sake. I will forever be grateful for her.

Then not so long ago, I murdered my mother, it felt great to get rid of the almighty Kuhle. She was one hell of a woman. But that was all three long ass years ago. Now here I am, though it all I conquered. Through every patch that I've been through I conquered it all. I'm proud of myself. I truly am strong. I have my reasons for the wrongs I've done, I would never do something with reasons. Fact not opinion.

A soft knock comes through my door.

Me: come in

I say checking my schedule and I have no meetings so early in the morning.

The door pushes open and there walks in Siphho. I smile. Once upon a time I used to love this man, but I guess love wasn't enough. Now he's my best friend. Life happens.

Siphho: sorry I didn't call, I just figured you would be here early and your PA let me in

He says with two cups of Mug and bean coffee on the one hand and the other had muffins.

Me: it's ok, come in, how are you?

I said standing up and walking towards

him, I kissed his cheek and took the one cup.

Sipho: hmm how about we start with you, how are you?

He says with that beautiful eyes that once upon a time made my legs wobbly.

We sit down on the sofa next to each other.

Me: I'm great, (I smile)

He smiles too and looks at me deep in the eyes.

Sipho: that's good, I'm glad you're happy.

He smiles.

Me: what's wrong Sipho?

I sense he's not alright. He's not been himself lately and it worries me. The therapy helped a lot but I know Siphos very well, when he's troubled, it says it all in his eyes. He doesn't look stressed but I can feel it.

He sighs.

Siphos: I, I.....I don't know how to explain this

He says taking a sip of his coffee.

Me: how about trying, that's the first step

Siphos: have you ever been in a situation where you doubt yourself and think maybe you're being delusional

He says leaning back into the sofa.

Me: it happens, what did you do?

Sipho: I haven't done anything, I'm just wondering, what if I've made the biggest mistake in my life and I can't fix it, what if this is all a lie..

Me: Sipho stop beating around the bush, what happened?

I asked confused. He sighs and smiles at me.

Sipho: you're beautiful, do you know that?

I smile.

Me: don't distract me, what happened?

He chuckles.

Sipho: everything will be alright, don't worry

He says grabbing the muffins and stuffing it into into his mouth.

Typical Ndlovu, he always finds a way to get out of things he doesn't wanna talk about even when it's hurting him.

I let him be and we continue chatting while having coffee and muffins until it was time for him to leave and he said his goodbyes. I know he came here to tell me something but didn't have the courage to do it. I'm worried about him.

It's after work and I'm packing my stuff ready to go home when my phone rings

and I pick up without checking with my hands on my lap top bag.

Me: Phakade speaking

Vuyo: hey sis, what's up?

Me: the sky

I smile. She chuckles.

Vuyo: corky aren't we? anyway I miss you

Me: I miss you more

Vuyo: Thabs and I are hitting one of his clubs he works at tonight and I invited Lindiwe so I was wondering if you wanna join us

Me: aaah Vuyo on a Wednesday?

Only Vuyo would think of such.

Vuyo: I wanna get drunk, please come

Me: let me talk to Luu about it first then
I'll let you know

Vuyo: OK sure, love you bye!!!.....aaahh
thabiso stop it

Me: love you too

Vuyo: baby stop (she giggles)

I chuckle and hang up. She's busy getting laid and calling me at the same time, mxm. She's becoming like Lindiwe. Only Lindiwe will call you and while busy on a conversation she'll moan loudly into the phone, it's like they don't care what time they make a call whether

they're fucking or not, she'll call you.

I lock my office and walk towards the elevator and get in. I'm exhausted.

Getting my inheritance back was hard since Layla blocked all my possible ways of getting it back because I signed it off to her name but by the grace of God I was able to get it back easily, especially now that my case is clear and my face isn't popping up on the news every three minutes but I still have my diamonds even though Dumisani used one of my three beautiful diamonds to make his wife a diamond ring. Well I gave it to him because he was doing the right thing and I just hope people don't

see that ring on her finger because that diamond costs more than this earth itself. It's pure expensive shit. Dumisani owes me big shit.

I get to the first floor and say goodbye to my PA and secretary then walk out.

I get to the parking lot and my car isn't there. Maybe I'm seeing stuff. I check everywhere and lord it's not here. Panic over takes me and I can't think straight. I made sure I parked it here this morning, my BMW people!!!

I walk back towards the security guards on duty and by now I'm fuming, not panicking but fuming. They didn't do

their jobs correctly. What do I fucking pay them for?

Me: Hey listen, I parked my car here this morning and it's not there, where's my car?

I said pissed and this fool is looking at me as if I'm speaking Chinese or better yet, Portuguese.

Me: are you listening?? I said I just lost my car and I parked it fucking this morning.....god why am I even standing here, you're fired!!

I said pissed.

Security: madam.....

Me: oh now you can speak, where is my

damn car!!!!?

Security: Boss, there was a man here
and he said.....

Me: a man? what man? you allowed him
to go with my fucking car!!!!?

I yelled. God I'm gonna kill this idiot.

Voice: baby relax...

I turn around and Luu is walking towards
us with a smile on his cute face. All my
anger disappears and I just want him
right now. But I'm serious, where's my
car?

Luu: don't yell at him, it's not his fault
babe

He wraps his arms around me and kisses my cheeks then my forehead then indulges with my lips. I pull out.

Me: Luu where's my car?

Luu: I asked one of my guys to take it home, I wanted to pick you up today but forgot to call you and tell you that I took your car home, I'm sorry my love

I chuckled.

Me: Luyanda do you know how worried I was, you could've called and look what you made me do, I shouted at this poor guy

I said softly.

Luu: it's OK babe, he understands

Me: I'm sorry about that
I said to the security guard.

Security: it's OK madam

He smiles. Luu takes my hand and my lap top back and we walk towards this beautiful car I haven't seen before. I thought maybe it's some else's car when he stood right in front of it my eyes popped. I don't really know much about cars or their names but let me try to explain this one, well it's a sports car without a roof top and it's seats are pure caramel, I could just eat them up, they look so soft and so beautiful, the cars color is black.

Me: Luu.....

Luu: baby this is our new car

He said holding my waist. My jaw dropped to the floor, it felt like he was proposing.

Me: Luu but but we....

Luu: we don't need another car but I wanna spoil you, I wanna make you happy and I wanna fill all your days of life with a smile, I know you might think I'm wasting money but babe I'm not, I love you

He says kissing me.

Me: is this your way of telling me you bought me a car

He chuckles.

Luu: I thought you wouldn't catch that, I thought if I said our car you would understand Mrs Mkisi, do you like it?

Me: no, I love it, where are the keys?

He pull the keys out his pockets and I grabbed them walking to the drivers seat.

Me: let's give this baby a ride

We got into the car and I drove off.

Damn. This car is a beast. It's speed rate is perfect and the steering wheel is so great, don't get me started on these soft seats.

Me: I love it babe, I love it!!

I shouted while driving on an empty road.

Luu: slow down woman, you'll get us killed

He said laughing.

Me: at least I'll know I'm dying with you

Luu: ncooh I don't mind dying with you either, but serious babe slow down

I giggled. I drove us home and even told Luu about Vuyo's invitation to the club and he was super excited about it, he said it's been a while since he went clubbing. We got home and I gave Vuyo a call, she sent me the address of the club and we still had enough time to prepare. I have no clue of what to wear.

Luu: baby, you hungry?

Me: yes my love

I said stripping naked and he was already drooling over me. I can't spend two seconds naked in this house with Luu drooling over me and wanting to eat me.

Luu: how we eat each other instead of food

He said kissing my shoulders and going all the way down to my twins.

Me: no I want food

I said trying to resist his touch. He was slowly and surely turning me on. He has turned me into a sex freak, this man.

Luu: is pizza alright?

He said nibbling on my nipple, I couldn't help but moan.

Me: Luu aah no!! I mean, yes pizza is fine , stop Luu

I moved his big head off me and walked to the bathroom. He followed. He's a sex freak, I swear.

Luu: nunu please!

Me: Yanda I'm tired, please!

Luu: you won't even realize I was here, a quickie please baby, in the bath tub

He pouted, while getting undressed.

He's obsessed with my pussy.

I get into the bath tub and the warm water hugs my body, Luyanda gets in after me and it's a good thing this tub is big. He softly kisses me and in less than five minutes he has me screaming out his name. A quickie turned into three rounds of love making and I must say when it comes to pleasuring a woman, Luu is on the top list. He gets out of the tub first before kissing me 100 times everywhere on my body. I hop into the shower and rinse off his scent which he has left on me.

I wrap a towel around my body and walk out, he's not here anymore. I check the time and it's almost seven. I check my

wardrobe and find a short open back spaghetti strap gold dress and it hugs my thighs and sits right at my thighs. My ass pops and my curves showcases my figure. I match it with gold ear rings and a silver necklace, I find my silver strap heels and loosen my thick curls onto my shoulders. With or without make up, I look perfect. I apply some lip glass and spray some perfume and take a look in the mirror. By the time I'm done it's eight.

Me: Luu!!!

I shout from our room while strapping my heels and looking around for my bracelet. He walks into the room with a pizza box and apple juice but his jaw

drops when he sees me and I swear I saw spit coming out of his mouth. I stood up and fixed my dress without looking at him...

Me: Luu I can't find my silver bracelet, have you seen it?

I said now fixing my hair.

He stood there like a statue and kept drooling.

Me: Luyanda!!

Luu: no!!! I mean, baby, no, you can't go like that, i, I won't be able to concentrate let alone how will those other men concentrate on their own woman when you're looking this beautiful?

I blush.

Me: thank you baby but, I'm not dressing for them I'm dressing for you and you only

Luu: I'm worried Phakade

Me: don't start with your insecurities please, not now

Luu: just looking at you makes me hard
I look down at his huge bulge and gasp.
I giggle.

Me: control yourself Luu

He pecks my lips but Luu being Luu he deepened the kiss and I'm sure we all know where that will lead to but no, I

can't ruin my hair now.

Me: baby we're late

Luu: we have the whole night nunu

Me: Mkisi, no

He grabs my booty and groans. I giggle.

Luu: Your assets look bigger in this dress, baby please change

Me: they're yours Luu, don't worry

He kisses my bare back and I now regret wearing this dress. He won't stop touching me for the rest of the night. I promise I won't hear the end of this.

I eat my food and we get into my new car and this time he drives, making sure

to steal a glance at me every five seconds.

We get to the club and he parks at the VIP since he's Mkisi, you can imagine how many people turned to our direction as soon as we entered the club. Luu became more and more insecure every time someone looks at me. We get to the VIP section and find Vuyo and Thabiso, Lindiwe and Brian, Jack and Emihle. Everyone looks hot tonight, let me not forget to mention how hot my man looks, He's in all black Fila. Fila shoes, fila black shirt and black jeans with a Fila cap on, he looks play boy but cute.

Me: Hi everyone!!

I said smiling from ear to ear. Everyone looks so beautiful it makes me happy.

Vuyo: oh my gosh, you look so beautiful

Lindiwe: Chomma have you been working out on your figure or does it look gorgeous every time I see you I blush.

Me: oh thanks guys, I love your dresses

Lindiwe was in a body hugging summer flower dress, Vuyo was in a black mini dress, and Emihle was in a grey open chest chest which was just as short as mine, it felt like we told each other to wear short dresses

Emihle: y'all look beautiful guys

Brian: indeed

We hugged and kissed everyone and sat down next to Jack and Emihle cause they were at the end. The music was pumping and it felt great. I so badly wanted to get up and groove, I'm sure y'all know how much Tumsa loves dancing, ask Lindiwe and she'll tell you all about it, I know my moves in and out.

Luu: baby what you wanna drink?

Me: uh how about wine for now

Luu: sure, let me go get some

He kisses my cheek and follows Brian to go get us more drinks. The place was

packed.

Me: so Thabs you own this place?

Thabiso: yeah I do, and it's the most
busiest so far

Me: how long have you had this club?

Thabiso: almost three years

Emihle: wow, so we ain't paying for
drinks tonight

She says smiling.

Thabiso: not tonight and never ever, if
you come here just tell the bar man
we're family and he'll give you anything.

Vuyo: does that mean I can come here
when you're on business trips

Thabiso: don't start with me wena, I wouldn't even allow you to come close to a beer bottle when I'm not around

She smiles and they start kissing and ass grabbing. I swear these two have no boundaries.

*

*

*

*

*

Admin: I'll continue.

[06/20, 05:33] Snr: CONTINUATION~

.

- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV~

The night was still young and it felt so great to be in the presence of people and just forget about the world and just have fun, I'm enjoying this night out and I'm so glad I took the offer. Luu and Brian have arrived with more drinks, Vuyo and Thabiso have disappeared into the crowd somewhere and they've been gone for quiet a while. I've been tapping my feet to the rhythm and i so

badly wanna dance but I can feel myself getting tipsy. Luu has been drinking like there's no tomorrow and I worry of how we'll get home.

Emihle: are you guys for real, so we've been here for almost two hours and we haven't hit the dance floor?

She says looking at us like crazy people, she's now the only sane person here because she doesn't drink alcohol.

Lindiwe: this is so unlike me, Brian get off me, ladies let's get this party started

She pushes Brian off her face and both her and Emihle get up, i look at Luu and he gives me the, " don't even think about

it" look. I sigh. Lindiwe save me. I look at Lindiwe with pleading eyes and she smiles in her tipsy state.

Lindiwe: luyanda you're such a bore,
Chommie come

She pulls me out of his strong grip and I swear I can kiss her right now.

Luu: Tumisani if.....

Lindiwe: goodbye gentlemen

Brian: Lindiwe don't fuck with me

Jack: Lad....

Lindiwe: fuck y'all

She takes both mine and Emihle's hands and we walk away from the gents

looking like they'll kill someone. Geez, so over protective. What's the point of coming to a club if you ain't gonna shake what your mama gave you.

Lindiwe: dont mind them, they're just being insecure

Trust Lindiwe to go all bitchy in less than a second. I always knew my friend was wild. She walks us down to where the real party is and the pumping music has me smiling like a retard.

Emihle: aaahh this is so much better!!!

She screams now dancing into the thick crowd. Lindiwe walks over to the DJ and whispers something into his ear and

then she comes back to us and pulls me into the middle of the fucking circle!! oh no she did not!! A huge smile pops on our faces. Let's do this thing. My favorite song plays immediately and in less than a second I'm dancing to my groove. It takes me back to my high school days when I used to dance on stage and the whole school would be shouting my name like I'm Beyonce. It felt great to twirk in front of people, they were all screaming to our dance moves and how I voshed here and there, Shut up and Groove by Distraction boys was playing and I couldn't help but just dance. I felt the alcohol take over and my freaky side

also took over. The spotlight was all on me.

Emihle: oooohhh go chommie!!!!

She shouted as I did the gwara gwara, the crowd was beautiful and I just felt so much like a Xhosa, well I'm sure y'all know many Xhosa people can dance and i guess I got it from my momma.

Crowd: oooohhh yeya yeya!!!

The crowd filled in and everyone joined the dance circle, it felt so awesome. We walked to the bar and I had only realized later on that Lindiwr order some strong Vodka shit, it started to react on my body and I felt high. But as stubborn as

Tumisani is, she didn't stop dancing. Next thing I see is me twirking on some dude and I have no clue who it was but it's a white guy, he knows his steps too. He had his hands around my waist and I swear I was grinding on this niggah. On the low by Burns Boy was playing and I couldn't help but sing along to his song and grind on this unknown dude.

Lindiwe and Emihle were also dancing with this other guys who I have no clue of where and what they came out from but they were cute. We were just having so much fun until I felt someone being hit and the person screaming in pain, I opened my eyes and saw an angry Luu

on top of the guy that I was dancing with, he was practically killing the niggah and I was shit scared.

Me: aaah Luu what are you doing?

I tried to get him off the dude and the crowd was in awe. Then all of a sudden Brian and Jack were also on top of the guys that Lindiwe and Emihle were dancing with. We tried to stop them and get them to stop but damn they looked shit angry.

Me: Luyanda Mkisi if you don't let go of him I'm fucking done with you!!

I shouted pissed and he let go of the guy. He looked at me with blood shot red

eyes and i flinched. The guy was lying on the floor bleeding but he was still alive though.

Lindiwe: Baby stop!!

She hit Brian with her shoe and he screams in pain.

Brian: what the fuck is this Lindiwe?

Jack: I'm outta here

He turns but Emihle grabs his hand and she's drunk as shit, ask me how and I wouldn't know. This has Lindiwe written all over it.

Emihle: hey motherfucker who do you think will take my sexy ass home

She says stumbling into his arms. I wanted to laugh so badly. We're in deep shit.

Jack: Emihle you're drunk, since when do you drink!!

He yells pissed.

Emihle: don't raise your voice at me Patkins!

She says clinging onto him even more cause she can barely walk now.

Vuyo pops out of nowhere with Thabiso and the crowd is now looking at us.

Thabiso: what on earth is going on here?

He says confused.

Vuyo: guys follow me

Luu: I'm not going anywhere else but home

He pushes through the crowd and leaves me there. He's pissed. But I was just having fun, it's not like I was fucking the dude.

The rest of us follow Vuyo and Emihle just can't shut up, I look at Lindiwe and she giggles but stops when Brian gives her a death stare. I want to burst out loud right now.

We all sit down and now I'm worried about Luu. I try to call him but it takes me to voice mail. I guess he's gone

home. I didn't mean to get so drunk and sober immediately at the same time. He shouldn't be so insecure, my gosh.

Vuyo: you guys are in deep shit

She giggles as we sit in a different office from the guys because Jack can't stand Emihle right now. It's funny.

Emihle: I'm horny

She yawns with a smile.

Me: Lindiwe what did you do?

Lindiwe: hey relax, it's just vodka mixed with.....

Vuyo: you gave her alcohol?

Lindiwe: what's a party without alcohol

Vuyo looks at Emihle and laughs at how she's touching herself. Damn, Lindiwe is nuts. I feel so young and alive right now.

Emihle: no, seriously guys, I'm horny, where's jack?

She says drinking lots of water. It helps.

Lindiwe: in the other office, he's pissed

Emihle: well tell him to cut off his dick and borrow it to me for tonight, I don't care about his insecurities, I just want his dick

We look at each other and laugh at how such a sweet girl can become so crazy overnight.

Vuyo: I think we should give her alcohol

more often, I like this bitchy side of her
Lindiwe: I'm with you in that, I like
bitches

We laugh . Here we are laughing instead
of worrying about our loving boyfriends
who just caught us twirling on some
random guys. We're nuts. I'm sure this is
the alcohol talking because in my
normal mind I would be worried sick of
what Luu thinks of me.

Me: Vuyo where you been all night?

Vuyo: (blushes) getting laid

Emihle: at least you had some dick
tonight, unlike some of us

She says pouting with her eyes

wandering around. Her drink state is so funny.

We keep laughing until the door bangs open and I now spot Luu looking much calmer than before but still pissed.

Jack: so you guys think this is funny!!

OK, they overheard us laughing. We keep quiet and right now I pray Emihle doesn't say anything stupid, or Lindiwe.

Brian: how dare you guys do that, busy twirking on some guys stupid dick, are you crazy!!

Luu: I'm disappointed

Me: babe that meant nothing, we were just having fun

Luu: having fun?? (chuckle) what a way of having fun

Emihle: gosh OK gentleman we're truly and deeply sorry for what we did and it won't happen again, now Jack please I need some Dick, I'm so horny

She moans touching herself. Wow.

Jack: I'll deal with you later, come on

Emihle: punish me daddy

She moans as Jack carries her on his back.

Jack: see you guys whenever

Thabiso: see you man

Lindiwe: baby I'm sorry

She pouts.

Brian: you don't mean that

Lindiwe: I do Brian, I'm so sorry, it won't happen again, I promise my love

Brian: whatever, let's go

He ignores her and walks away and she stands up and winks at me. Lindiwe is something else.

Lindiwe: bye y'all and thanks for the great night

She hugs us and kisses my cheeks.

Lindiwe: oh Yanda, Thando has a doctors appointment tomorrow and I can't take her, I'm...

Luu: I'll pick her up first thing tomorrow morning.

He says not even looking at any of us.
He's pissed.

Lindiwe: Cool

She leaves and now it's only me, Luu,
Thabs and Vuyo.

Vuyo: you guys gotta get home too

Luu: you're right, thank you guys for the
night, bye

Thabiso: sure man, take care

They bro hugged And I kissed Vuyo

Vuyo: give him pussy And he'll forgive
you

She whispers into my ear and I giggle.

We get to the VIP parking and get into the car, Luu closes the roof top of the car because it was now a bit chilly. The ride was filled with silence. Thick silence. I don't feel bad now, I was just having fun and Luu knows that I love him and I wouldn't do anything to hurt him.

We get home and he's the first to exit the car. I sigh following him inside.

Me: babe....

Luu: I'm tired Phakade

He walks up the stairs and I slowly remove my shoes, walking up the stairs too. I get to the room and he's already

into his PJ's.

Me: baby please talk to me

I say stopping him from walking to the bathroom. I hold his waist and he sighs.

Me: I'm sorry my love, if I hurt you then I'm so sorry

Luu: Tumisani I know it's hard to trust me sometimes but that doesn't mean you should disrespect me like that

Me: I know my love, I know and I'm sorry if I disrespected you in any way, please don't be upset with me

I say moving my face closer to his lips.

Luu: you know I can't stay upset with

you for long, I just feel like.....

Me: ssshhh

I shut him up with a kiss and he returns it. My hands roam around his strong body and in less than two minutes we're both naked. He carries me to the bathroom and we have shower sex. It was wonderful as always.

It's cute how he's so protective over me but sometimes it annoys me. He doesn't want me to come close to any guy or even look at a guy. Mxm,it's annoying sometimes but I know he's doing it because he loves me and is afraid of losing me again.

Luu: I love you so much

He says after cumming inside of me.

Me: I love you more

I kiss his chest then his soft pink lips. He grabs my booty and groans.

Luu: The night is still young, Phakade

I moan.

*

*

*

*

*

~

[06/20, 05:33] Snr: INSERT 122~

- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV~

I woke up the next day with a painful
cookie and a banging headache but my
body was so not in my shoes right now.
All I'm craving is for his touch and his
member inside of me. He made sure he
made a mark on my body last night and
right now I feel like a horny freak. I keep
thinking about how he made passionate
love to me last night and left me craving

for more even after the many rounds we had. Luu surely does make a woman happy.

I look on my side and he's not there, I want to jump out of bed and look for him and maybe get a morning quickie because I want him but I can't, I'm too drained, my body is failing me yet it wants what my heart wants.

After about ten whole minutes of forcing myself to get up, I finally did. I got my naked ass to the shower where I recognized a pink sticky note on the mirror. It's Luu. I smile.

" Morning beautiful, just thinking about

last night makes my mind run wild. I'm sorry I couldn't stay, I had an early meeting. Have a lovely day. I love you my baby. " It reads. A huge smile plasters on my lips and I can't help but blush. My man is cute guys. I hop into the shower And take a short shower and got out if the bathroom after brushing my teeth. I walk to the balcony and the rain is pouring like cats and dogs. I wish Luu was home, this is such a beautiful weather. A walk my naked ass back to my walk in closet and a naughty idea pops in my mind causing me to giggle. I ain't going in to the office today. I check the time and it's almost eleven. I

quickly find my black nude lingerie and put it on. I mess up my hair a bit and grab my phone. Luu will love this. I smile seductively into the camera and take pics of my nudes. Of course it will go to my man and him only. I take five seductive pics like a naughty teenager and send it to him. I giggle naughtily and strip naked once again walking down the stairs. Nature should took it's time creating me. I love my body as is and I wouldn't trade it for anything.

I make myself some cereal and sit but naked on the couch, while watching Nigerian movies. I'm a huge fan of nigerian movies, they're funny and just

so full of life. My phone beeps and I smile.

" Phakade, don't do this to me. I can't concentrate" I laugh at his message with another pic of me on the couch now fully naked and I'm sure he's gone crazy by now. I miss him so much. He shouldn't have left without telling me, now I'm gonna be so bored all day with this rainy that's making me so horny. I'm even wet right now.

I was on my way to the kitchen to wash my empty bowl when I heard the door barge open and Luu was a sexy mess. His tie was undone and his buttons were already unbuttoned. Don't get my

started on his hair which didn't look like he came from work. I giggled with a naughty smirk on my face.

Luu: Phakade, God.....how am I supposed to concentrate with work when you keep looking so beautiful

He was now standing right in front of me with his hands on my bare ass rubbing against it.

Me: baby why did you leave me in bed with such a weather

I say with a pout pecking his lips then his jaw line then his neck softly. He groaned.

Luu: my love, I had a meeting. I had to

postpone the meeting because you were on my mind even though I tried to concentrate

He picked me off my feet and carried me all the way to the kitchen placing me on the counter.

Me: i want you Luu

He smiles.

Luu: is that why you kept sending me sexy nudes?

He had a smirk on his face.

Me: you left me unfed.

He kissed my chest and went all the way down to my twins and sucked the life

out of me. I moaned loudly.

Luu: I could leave the world behind just to have you in my arms

He said kissing me softly on the lips and I moaned as his hands travelled and explored my body.

Me: make love to me

I moaned.

The rained poured loudly and so did my moans tale over the house. It was the most peaceful love making session ever. From the shower to the bath tub and let me not forget, on the lounge floor. Sex on the floor is the bomb. Our skin rubbed against each other and our

spirits connect spiritually and sexually.

This man is wonderful.

.

Sipho's POV~

I wouldn't say life has been the best on my side but what I can say is that I'm moving on. I know I've lost a very precious diamond in my life but that's life. One gains and loses. I'm trying to move on so hard though it's not easy but I know I will.

My relationship with Thandokazi has been good but I still don't feel that I should give my all to this woman. I feel like there's something pulling me back

and I shouldn't give it too much of my heart. Maybe she deserves a chance.

Ashley has been on my neck since the day I agreed to be her Fuck buddy. She's acting as if I've given her my heart or maybe she thinks she's my girlfriend, I've tried to break it off with her so many times but she keeps black mailing me emotionally, she's a great woman and all but she's too clingy and desperate, I tried to leave her last month when I was going through therapy and she threatened to commit suicide if I dare to leave her. I don't want her blood on my hands because it feels as if I've been leading her on yet I told her clearly that I

don't want anything serious but she went ahead and fell for me. I don't know how to get rid of her without her throwing threats at me and blackmailing me emotionally, she can be a bit crazy sometimes. Kazi is there as my baby mama and I have to support her needs as well and I'm glad Tumisani has forgiven her because I wouldn't know how to deal with us being friends with the person person who is responsible for my baby's death.

Life is hectic hey.

I look up from my desk as Ashley barges into my office looking beautiful and all. She's white but damn she got booty, I'm

sexually attracted to her but not emotionally. She's too much to handle.

She closes my laptop shut and sits on my desk placing the steers packet on my desk.

Ashley: babe, I missed you.

She wraps her arms around my neck and pulls my face closer. She's pretty. I like her but sometimes she works on my nerves.

Me: I missed you too

I hold her waist and she kisses me softly on the lips and I deepen the kiss holding her tightly as well. The kiss was heated in less than five minutes and she was

already topless. She unbuttoned my shirt And kissed my neck as I squeezed her breast rubbing on the fabric of her black bra.

Ashley: I need you

She moaned as my hands traveled down to her jean buttons. I ripped them apart and had her sitting with her face towards me and both her legs on each sides of me. I pulled down my pants and grabbed a condom from my drawer. I put it on quickly and she sat on me allowing her warm pussy to hug my member so tightly. She moaned throwing her head back while riding me. Our moans filled my office and I thank

Lord my office is sound proofed. She rode me back and fourth and we had more rounds on my desk as well as the couch.

Ashley: I'm cumming baby!!

She came and I also came at the same time while laying on the couch. I enjoy having sex with Ashley but to me it's just sex. She's good and all but I can't bring myself to fall for her.

I sit on my chair with only my pants on and she's in my shirt feeding me. If only she was the woman of my heart. It hurts to know of the way I ended things with Tumisani. But I'm glad she still

considers me as a friend.

Ashley: babe, can we go on a little
baecation, I would love to spend time
with you away from work for a while

She says with her ass my lap. She's very
beautiful from behind.

Me: I would love to but you know I have
a baby coming on the way and I have to
be here till my baby is born

Her face drops and i can feel her getting
tensed.

Ashley: I understand

Me: I'll try and make time for it though

I say wrapping my arms around her

waist and kissing her shoulder.

Ashley: you don't have to if you don't want to

She says annoyed.

Me: I want to

I turn her around and kiss her deeply sliding my tongue into her mouth and she moaned holding my muscles while grinding on me. She loves sex, I tell you.

The door burst open and we both gasp letting go of each other and looking towards the door.

Me: Kazi?

I looked at her standing at the door

shocked, in her maternity dress and a basket in her hands. She forces a smile but a tear escapes her eye instead.

Kazi: ii I'm so sorry for disturbing, I didn't know.....

Her voice breaks and she slowly wipes her tears with her eyes fixed on Ashley. She's both pissed and emotional. It must be the pregnancy. She's grown so big yet she's glowing.

Ashley: uh baby, I'll come back later.

She pecks my lips and stands up trying to find her clothes.

Kazi: no don't worry, I'll leave

She turns to leave but I stop her.

Me: no don't go, what are you doing here?

Ashley looks at me with burning eyes and Kazi's anger now rises.

Kazi: I thought that because it's raining you would be hungry so I made you some warm snacks, but I guess you're occupied

She now looks at Ashley with disgust and I swear if looks could kill Ashley would be dead by now.

Ashley: he doesn't need it, thank you for your concern, he's fed....more than fed

She winks at me ignoring Kazi's evil look.

Me: uh but thank you Kazi, you put so much effort to make it considering your

condition, I'll eat it. Thank you

I smiled at her.

Kazi: sure, I was thinking....

She stepped in front of me even closer and placed my hand on her bump And I couldn't help but rub it. It was so cute and she looked so beautiful, everything in the world felt so invisible and it was like it was just the two of us and our baby.

Me: how's my princess today?

I bent down and kissed her bump and she giggled, placing her hand on top of mine.

Kazi: our baby is doing just fine but

seems to be missing daddy

I chuckled kissing her cute tummy once again.

Me: daddy misses you too my baby, is that why you made mommy cook so much food?

I chuckled once again with a smile on my face. This is beautiful, I forgot the world even existed.

Kazi: yes, she made me.....

A loud voice was cleared in the background and we both turned to see the person and for a second I forgot she was even here.

Me: oh Ash, you're still here?

Ashley: I was leaving

She pushed through the both of us and marched out of the office pissed. At least she now knows that my baby is my first priority. Nothing else.

Kazi: I know I shouldn't be interfering but seriously Siphho, do you use her condom when you fuck her? What if she's sick and then you bring her dirt onto me? Our baby!!?

That hit hard. She's right. But I've never slept with Ashley without a condom and I always made sure I used one. I wouldn't put my baby in such danger.

Me: Don't worry Kazi, I know what I'm

doing

Kazi: you disgust me

Me: then why do you still fuck with me?

Tears roll down her cheeks and I know these are hormones. I chuckle. I don't like seeing her like this. She always has a way of upsetting me.

Kazi: do you think I like doing this, do you think I just wake up feeling like sex? no, it's this baby you put inside of me, I wouldn't be demanding for it if I had someone else like you do, unlike you I'm loyal, but now I've realized that it's better I get someone else to satisfy my needs.

Anger boils my blood and I can't help but

feel pissed. I don't want her sleeping around while carrying my baby, that's sick. She can do that once she's given birth.

Me: over my dead body

Kazi: then how do you think I feel seeing you with another woman Siphon

Me: I thought this was about fulfilling your needs? what does me being with Ashley have to do with this?

She chuckles and sits down on my couch.

Kazi: I don't like the fact that you bring another woman's dirt onto me, imagine sleeping with her here at the office and

when you get home I ask to sleep with you and we do it knowing very well that her orgasms are still on your skin, how disgusting is that?

I sigh.

I sit next to her and pull her feet onto my lap and start massaging them.

Me: I'm sorry for making you feel that way, you're tense

She sighs and rests on the couch. The same couch I've just had passionate sex with Ashley on.

Kazi: it's your fault

Me: calm down please, we don't want to hurt our baby now do we?

I say rubbing her tired feet. She smiles.
She's beautiful this woman. But her
heart is something else.

Me: you're cute, do you know that?

She giggles with a blush.

Kazi: you're such a flirt

Me: I'm serious, you're very cute

Kazi: whatever

She blushes looking away. I kiss her feet
and she laughs covering her shy face.

Kazi: you're crazy

I laugh and rub her tummy.

I can't wait to be a father. These woman
are driving me nuts and I can't take it.

Kazi is good and all but I don't really trust her while Ashley on the other hand is too jealous and full of nonsense. I don't want to hurt neither of them. I wish I made better choices in the past. What was I thinking associating myself with these kind of women?

~

*

*

*

*

*

Admin: My lovers I haven't forgotten

about y'all, don't think that because I have a new story it means that I'll forget y'all, no, guys I forget. You're my first love and forever will be. I'm just tryna balance everything but I'll try to make Hidden Secrets a bit longer now that you guys requested it so I'll make it longer.

But guys that'll only happen once I've received the target of the amount of likes I would like to get on my new page, so it's all up to you now.

~ Don't forget to Like, Share and Comment. ~

[06/20, 05:33] Snr: INSERT 123~

.

-
-
-
-

Guys come on, you expect me to post but not even half of you are on the new page, you claim you love my work but where's the enthusiasm? I'm disappointed, honestly. I'm hurt, it's like no one is interested anymore, if you guys are tired of reading let me know and I'll just delete the page. I've been begging since day one and honestly I'm tired.

-

.

TWO MONTHS LATER~

Dumisani's POV~

I rush up the stairs with my heart banging hard against my chest, my mind is all over the place and I can't think straight. I barge into our room and grab her already packed bag. I rush back down the stairs and her screams are breaking my heart. She's in tears and is filled with sweat. Her water has broke already and she's not too far from giving birth. I'm so excited to be a father yet this moment worries me, seeing her in so much pain is making me feel in some

other unpleasant way.

Busi: Dumisani!!! Hurry the hell up!

She roars in pain and I quickly scoop her off her feet and carry her briday style towards the car. She's screaming in pain and it's not doing any justice to my panicking self.

Me: Sihle get in the car and connect the phone to the bluetooth.

I said to a worried Sihle who is standing there helpless and he looks like he's about to cry as well. He gets in the car and does as I've just said while I help Busi into the back seat.

Busi: I can't do this Dumisani, I can't!!

She cried holding her stomach and now
I was helpless.

Me: baby breath please, don't give up my
love breath

I drove out the driveway and increased
my speed as soon as I got on the road. I
passed a few red lights and I didn't give
a damn. I just want my wife to be fine.
She tries to breath and I end up
breathing with her, we count together
and Sihle joins in holding her hand.

Me: we're almost there
babe....breath....1..2..3....

We breath in and out and in and out and
I try to control the wheel while still

looking at a screaming Busi. She screams so loud it scares me.

Busi: I'm gonna push Dumisani, it's coming..

She cries. I immediately park the car outside the hospital and scream for help.

Me: Help!!!!.....Somebody help!!!

Sihle runs out the car and marches towards the hospital as I try to get Busi out the car.

Me: we're here my love. we're here

She holds her back and cries. My heart sinks. This is harder than I thought. I see nurses running with a stretcher and Sihle behind them.

Nurse: we'll take over sir, we got her
They get Busi on the stretcher and run
with her towards the entrance of the
hospital, we run after them and Busi is
crying in pain, I hold her hand while still
following them and I want to cry with her.

Busi: Dumisani I need you

She cries.

Me: I'm here with you my love, I'm not
leaving you

Nurse: sir would you like to support
her....

Me: yes yes, I'll come with you

Busi: my son Dumisani

She cries as we get to the theatre room
and I just remember about Sihle.

Me: my love....

Busi: stay with him, I'll....aaahh

She cries.

Nurse: the baby is coming

They get her into the room and I so
badly wanna see how my baby is being
born. I so badly wanna be there for Busi.

Sihle: daddy

Me: yes champ

I pick him up and we stand by the bench
outside the room. I can't get her cries
out of my mind.

I feel warm arms around me and I turn

Tumisani: how is she? is....

Me: Tumsa stay with Sihle, I have to be there for her

I hand Sihle over to her and rush towards the theatre room, I barge in and she's still pushing. I rush to her side and hold her hand tightly.

Me: I'm here baby, push for me, for our baby!!

Busi: my son Dumisani.....aaahhh aah

Nurse: push!!!! 1...2...3 Push!!!

She grasps onto my hand tightly and pushes her hardest.

Me: he's fine baby, he's fine

Nurse: come on, one more time, push your hardest!!!

She breaths heavily as her head is covered in sweat, her hair is all over the place and I'm scared.

Busi: uaahh aaahhh!!!

She pushes so hard that my hand pains as she is holding so tightly onto me. My heart skips a beat as a baby's soft cries fills the room. A smile lights up on my face and I gasp in joy. A tear escapes my eye at the beautiful moment and i can't help but be happy.

Nurse: congratulations, you're now a

father. It's a girl

I can't control my joy and excitement. I look down at the weeping baby covered in blood. She's here. My little bundle of joy is here.

Me: Busi it's a girl, my love it's a girl!!!!

I hug her tightly and she cries in my arms, tears of joy of course. I peck her lips and wipe her tears as they take our baby to clean her up and stuff.

Me: you've made me the happiest man alive my love .

I said holding her hand and she smiles up at me.

Busi: I love you Dumisani

Me: I love you most

I kiss her soft lips and they clean the both of them up and I wait there patiently for them. But eventually I had to get out because they had to change them to a new ward. I looked at my beautiful baby and a smile plastered on my face. She's so beautiful, just like her mother. Her tiny fingers melt my heart and those cute pouty lips remind me so much of Sihle.

Nurse: sir please wait outside

I snap out of it and walk out the room smiling. I'm a father again. This woman just keeps making me happy. Ever since

she came into my life, I've been happy.

Me: It's a girl Tumsa, it's a girl!!!

She screams and jumps into my arms huggin me tightly.

Tumisani: I'm a aunty again!!!!

She jumps in excitement.

Sihle: I have a sister now daddy?

He asks excited as well. i lift him up and throw him into the air.

Me: yes champ, you have a beautiful sister now

Sihle: yaaaayyy!!! now I have someone to play soccer with!!

He giggles as I tickle him and we make

so much noise like it's no ones business,
this is my little family.

Nurse: sir you may see them now,
please follow me

She smiles at us. We follow her to Busi's
ward and find her smiling down at our
beautiful princess. She's yellow bone
just like her Tumisani, well tumsa is
colored which is normal but this baby
has Tumisani's skin. A tear escapes
Busi's eye as she sees us come in. I kiss
their heads and sit down next to her.

Sihle: mama I'm a brother now!! can I
Kiss her please

He said holding his mothers hand. Busi

smiles and nods and he comes onto the small bed and kisses our baby's cheeks.

Tumisani: ncoooh my little princess, she's so beautiful

Tumisani says looking down at the baby. I smile and hold her hand. Thank God for this family.

Nurse: sir we need a name

Busi looks at me and I smile.

Me: What do you think we should name our princess my love?

Busi: hmmm you tell me babakhe

I can't help but capture her lips into a kiss. i forget the world and just kiss this

beautiful woman in front of me. Pure beauty.

Busi: Aunty what do you think?

She says pulling out of the kiss after Sihle made a disgusted face. i chuckled.

Tumisani: Lesedi Phakade

A smile pops on my face once again.

Lovely.

Busi: i love it

Me: I love you and our little Lesedi over here

I kiss Busi and Lesedi's cheeks. She's fast asleep in her mothers arms. I can sense this one will be lazy.

Nurse: Lesedi Phakade, congratulations once again.

She smiles warmly and leaves.

Tumisani: can I hold her please

She smiles and sits next to Sihle who can't get his eyes off Lesedi. I don't blame him, she's too beautiful.

Tumisani: is it me or does Lesedi look like me?

We all laugh and she smiles at the beautiful new legacy we've once again built. I kiss the beautiful lady next to me once again. The love of my life.

A new legacy has been made, a new Phakade has been given life. Another

female Phakade to continue the legacy. God blessed the Phakade's with females and it gives me great joy. 23rd of April. A legacy was made. Lesedi Phakade.

Gogo is probably showering her with blessings already. I'm a father of two.

.

Tumisani's POV~

Sigh. This baby is just pure beauty. I swear she looks like me, her hair is so soft and her skin is just like mine when I was young. Dumisani doesn't believe me but he will when Lesedi grows. I can't believe I'm an aunty to three. First, Thando then Sihle and now our beautiful

Lesedi. My joy and pride. I'm in love with her already. I'm so excited for her to grow so I can shower her with so much love. She's my little legacy. After me of course. This means so much to us as Phakade's. Gogo must be so happy.

I get inside the house with a smile plastered on my face. My day is complete.

The house smells so delicious which makes me realize how hungry I am. I've been snapping pics with Lesedi since I got there and I just didn't wanna leave but the nurses kicked us out. Busi will only leave tomorrow or the next day because the doctors have to make sure

that both her and the baby are perfectly fine before they discharge them. I'm just so excited.

Luu: I'm in the kitchen

I rush to the kitchen and jump onto his back. He carries me and I kiss his neck.

Me: I'm an aunt again Luu!!!

I squealed happily holding onto him tightly.

Luu: oh my, congratulations babe

He said smiling. I got off his back and kiss him passionate on the lips. He smiled in between the kiss and said....

Luu: hmmm looks like you also wanna

make a mini us

I giggled. I wouldn't mind that.

Me: how about we skip dinner and make a mini us right now

I licked his lips and he grabbed my ass and spanked it followed by a moan.

Luu: of course.

Next thing I know we're fucking on the counter and it was amazing. He always knows of how to pleasure me. I'm happy. I'm ready to try for another baby and this time. I too shall carry my baby in my arms.

Luu: you're the best Tumisani

Me: aaah Luu baby I'm cumming

Luu: cum for me my love

We climax at the same time and he pecks my lips. Note, we're naked on the counter. I want him so badly but I'm also hungry for food.

Luu: round two?

Me: later, for now let's eat

Luu: how about we eat naked for today, I love looking at your beautiful nakedness

I giggle and get off the counter. He likes talking dirty. I like his dirty talks.

Me: feed me Luu

He dishes up for the both of us and yeah we end up eating naked on the kitchen floor. Luu is crazy. But i have to say, he can cook. It goes with his love for sex, a man who can cook is better in bed.

Luu: what's our nieces name?

Me: Lesedi Phakade, named by me!

I smiled proudly.

Luu: beautiful name for a beautiful baby

I showed him the pics we took and he was so happy for Dumisani. The glow in his eyes made me wonder how happy he'll be when we make our own baby.

Luu: I love you Phakade

He pecks my lips and places his hand between my thighs.

Me: I love you more Mkisi

A moan escapes my lips. Here goes a whole night of love making.

I'm blessed.

~

Admin: the more the likes, the longer the story.

~

[06/20, 05:34] Snr: INSERT 124~

.

.

.

.

TWO DAYS LATER

Sipho's POV~

I looked down at the beautiful baby in front of me and my heart beamed with love. A smile is plastered on my face and I can't seem to get it off, even if I tried my hardest. I'm a father. I can't believe I'm a father. My heart is beating so fast and it feels unreal. It's a boy. A handsome little boy. My little legacy.

Kazi: he's so cute, Sipho

She holds my hand and a tear escapes her eye. She gave birth today and I was so stressed and had the worst feeling

about this. I felt like something was gonna happen but they turned out perfectly fine.

Me: He has your nose

She smiles and gives him to me. He's peacefully sleeping and it amazes me how handsome he looks. He looks like me, my eyes and even my skin. He's just perfect. The joy in my heart right now is unexplainable, I can't explain it. She's made me the happiest man alive, she's made me a father.

Me: Thank you Kazi, thank you so much! I couldn't help but capture her lips into a deep kiss. I'm the most happiest man on

earth, I can't control my happiness. I could just marry this woman right now. I've always wanted a baby, I've always wanted a little legacy. Now my son can take over my legacy. My mother is probably so happy right now.

A voice is cleared in the background and Kazi breaks the kiss. We both smile and look to the door only to be met by watery eyes. Ashley.

Me: Ash

She fakes a smiles and walks towards us.

Kazi: Sipho what is this woman doing here, I don't want her anywhere near my

son

She slowly takes Andile out of my arms and she's now irritated. I hate to upset her at such a beautiful moment. I look at Ashley and wonder how the hell she knew which hospital we were at. All I remember telling her was that I am now a father out of excitement.

Ashley: Hi, I just came to say
Congratulations

She smiles once again and Kazi is not having any of it.

Me: Thank you Ashley, we really appreciate it.

I smile at her and look back down at my

handsome son. He'll surely break hearts one day, just like his daddy. He's too adorable.

Kazi: you may leave

She says without even looking at her. Ashley's eyes beamed with tears and she was on the verge of crying.

Ashley: Siphon, can I speak to you please I look at Kazi and she gives me a death stare. Maybe it's important. I peck her lips and kiss Andile's head ad well.

Me: I'll be right back

I whispered into her ear. I've made my mind. She's the one. Thandokazi is the woman for me and I've just realized that

I should stop playing around and focus on one thing. My son has arrived and it would be best if he has both parents in his life. I wouldn't want my son to experience anything that would ruin his future or hurt him, he's the most important thing in my life and I'm ready to do anything just to make him happy. I'll be with Thandokazi for the sake of my baby. She's not that bad after all. I've learnt a lot from her and maybe I should let the past rest. She's recognized her mistake and will live to regret it, isn't that enough? She's already gonna go to hell, the least I can do is make the days of her life on earth, memorable.

Ashley: Siphos what the fuck was that!?

She roared at me as soon as we stepped out of Kazi's ward. She's crying and she's pissed at the same time.

Me: I hate the way you talk to me

She chuckles.

Ashley: what was that kiss about? huh? How dare you kiss her in my presence, I thought you felt something for me

Me: Ashley I told you from the beginning that you shouldn't put too much love into whatever this thing between us was, I specifically told you that this meant nothing but fun

She chuckles bitterly and wipes her

tears.

Ashley: so now that she's made you a father you want to leave me for her, huh, You're a pig, you're disgusting

She pushes hard against my chest and starts fighting my chest but I hold her hands and she cries.

Me: Ashley control yourself

Ashley: you men are all the same, no, I won't let you go. You're mine and that's final. I won't allow that slut to take you away from me, I can give you a child too Siphho, please

She's crazy. She's crying and holding tight onto me. She tries to kiss me but I

dodge her and push her off me.

Me: Ashley!! enough...

Ashley: I love you Siphon, I love you.

She cries.

Me: Ashley I'm not the man for you, this was just fun and you made a mistake of falling for me. Please let's end this now and walk our separate ways before things get even worse

Ashley: No!!! you're mine Siphon, mine, I won't allow you to just walk out of my life like that, never!

She hugged me again and wrapped her arms around my waist creating even a bigger scene. People in the hospital

were looking at us, some passing as well.

Me: Ashley go home, go home and rest please. We'll talk tomorrow. I'll come check up on you.

Ashley: I'm not leaving here without you, you're coming home with me Siph

This woman is totally insane. I look into her eyes and they are blood shot red.

Me: Ashley you're going home and that's final, now come.

I grabbed her wrist and dragged her all the way to the hospital exit. She was resisting but I had force so I dragged her by force. I got to the parking lot and got

her into her car.

Me: take care of yourself Ashley, go home and rest

Ashley: I love you Siphon, I promise you if you leave me my blood will remain in your hands, I'll kill myself

Fear consumed me and I immediately knew, this woman is mentally sick.

Me: don't say such things Ashley

Ashley: I'm gonna kill myself Siphon, I love you.

I sighed deeply and breathed. I don't want anyone's blood in my hands Now that I want a good life with my son. This is so unfair.

Me: OK Ash, don't worry. Go home and rest.

Ashley: promise me you'll come visit

She cupped my neck and I didn't feel anything for her anymore.

Me: I promise

She smiled and started the car. I breathed relieved.

Ashley: I'll call you.

She drove off and slowly walked back to Kazi's ward. Ashley needs serious help.

She's gone insane or maybe she was already insane. I can't have her

threatening me like this. I need to find a solution for her.

I walked into the ward and Kazi was putting Andile back into his cubicle as he was fast asleep. I smile. I'm really happy for us. I'm so happy that I could just hold my son for the rest of my life.

Kazi: Siphho

I sat down next to her and held her warm soft hands. I kissed them and she blushed.

Kazi: are you happy?

Me: more than happy. So happy that I want us to move on, Kazi I've fully accepted you as my sons mother and I would like for us to move on, I've forgiven you and I hope that deep down

you've changed. I want you to be in my life and for us to be in our sons life together.

She looks at me amazed and I can't help but admire her cute face. The more she smiles, the more beautiful she becomes.

Kazi: Thank you Sipho, thank you so much for accepting me into your life. I promise you with my life that I've changed and I promise I won't do anything to hurt you.

She hugs me tightly and we stay like that for a few minutes. It feels right. Maybe I can also have a second chance at love. This woman is the one for me.

We might have our differences but we're meant to be. We'll move on together.

Kazi: I can't wait to go home

Me: I can't wait to make love to you all night

She giggles.

Kazi: is she still gonna be a part of our lives?

She says referring to Ashley. I have no answer to that but I'll make sure she plays far away from my family.

Me: don't worry baby, you have all of me

She softly grabs my jaw and pecks my lips.

Kazi: you heard what the doctor said,
give me time for my nunu to heal. Your
son has a big head and my nunu is in
pain

I chuckled.

Me: my son's head is perfect Kazi

Kazi: I know my love, I'm just kidding.
Our son is perfect

I wrap my arms around her waist and
she wraps hers around my neck. A new
chapter and a new beginning is yet to
begin. Here's to new beginnings.

.

Busi's POV~

One mans trash is another mans diamond. A rock can be transformed into a diamond. Two years ago I was hustling to put food on the table. I thought I lost him but he came back as my knight in shining armor. He put a ring on my finger and made me a mother once again. Now I have two beautiful children and I must say I feel blessed. He's been a blessing in my life and I can't ask for more.

Sihle: mama I want to play with her, you've been holding her since she woke up

He whined walking into the lounge in his PJ's still. He sat next to me and I smile.

Me: why hasn't my prince gotten dressed yet?

He pouts.

Sihle: because my beautiful mother hasn't been taking care of me lately

Dumisani: but your handsome father has
....

He said walking into the house sweating like he had just come out of the shower.

He pecked my lips and kissed Lesedi's cheek.

Me: you stink Phakade

He took off his top and I swear he was trying to seduce me.

Sihle: daddy I wanna be strong just like you than I can pick up Lesedi and spin her around

He smiled.

Dumisani: of course son, how's my queen doing?

I smiled into his kiss once again. He keeps kissing me. But I'm not complaining.

Me: I'll be much better if you went and showered

Dumisani: come shower with me

I chuckled. Sihle kept whining about how I didn't wanna allow him to hold the baby and Lesedi was just sucking into

my breast for dear life. The way she loves sucking me dry amazes me. Her tiny fingers warm my heart. We got home yesterday and so far so good. She hasn't given me trouble at night. She's a silent sleeper and that's good. I expected her to keep me awake all night but she didn't, she actually surprised me.

Sihle: mama!!

I snapped out of it and Dumisani laughed at me. These two are driving me crazy. They keep annoying me.

Me: what is it Sihle?

Sihle: Daddy said you should pass Lesedi over to me

He held out his arms for me to pass Lesedi over and I giggled. Dumisani had a naughty smirk on his face.

Me: come on Dumisani, talk to your son

Dumisani: son relax, soon you'll be able to hold her forever and even sleep with her in your room

Sihle jumped up and down and onto the couches making me yell at him to sit down while Dumisani is encouraging him. Lesedi got scared and cried so loud it frightened me. These two are like aliens. It's like they're not from this planet.

Me: aaahh baby don't cry, Dumisani look

what you did .

I stood up and held Lesedi in my arms while slowly swaying her from left to right trying to calm her down. Dumisani came closer but I walked away. He was still sweating from his morning jog.

Me: Dumisani you're filled in sweat and it's unhygienic, go shower and take your son with you, you two are acting so childish

Did he listen? no, instead he wrapped his arms around both me and Lesedi and kissed both our cheeks making Sihle laugh as if it was a joke.

Dumisani: the most beautiful woman in

my life, I love you so much

Lesedi calmed down and opened her eyes to look at her crazy father and it was so cute.

" where does that leave!"

We all turned around, Tumisani and Luyanda barged into the house like they live here. There's no privacy in this house.

Sihle: aunty!!

He jumped into her arms and she picked him up.

Dumisani: love of my life

Tumisani: father

They hugged and kissed like children and it made me so happy. I'm truly blessed to have such a family.

Luu: oh my gosh, Tumisani are you sure this is not your photocopy

He said taking Lesedi out of my arms after greeting us. Yeah, Lesedi looks like Tumisani. You would swear it's her baby. Her caramel soft skin, her cute cheeks and even Tumisani's light brown eyes. It's a miracle.

Tumisani: you see!!! I told you guys Lesedi looks like me

Dumisani: no she doesn't, she looks like Sihle

Sihle: of course she does, I'm the most handsome kid around

He giggles as Tumisani tickles him.

Luu: wow she's so beautiful

Lesedi looks up at him and the way he's looking at her warms my heart. He's a great father.

Dumisani: now will you shower with me

He whispers spanking my ass in the process and I had to gasp.

Tumisani: you two control yourself

Dumisani: can you guys babysit for a few, I'm gonna go take a shower with my wife

Me: Dumi....

Luu: of course sure, go ahead....Hello princess, she's adorable

He said talking to a serious looking Lesedi. I swear Lesedi will have an attitude when she grows up. I don't think I have an attitude but maybe she'll follow in my moms footsteps. My mother had a very bubbly personality.

I followed Dumisani up to our room and he forced me to lay in the bath with him. We got inside the warm bath and he wrapped his arms around me and kissed my shoulders as I was sitting between his legs with my back to him.

Dumisani: baby

Me: my love

He rubbed my breast and the signals it sent to my body was making me hot.

Dumisani: I don't want you to feel pressured but I want you to know that I'm ready

I tilted my head to look at him and I was confused.

Me: ready for what baby?

I said confused.

Dumisani: to marry you. I want you to think about it. We're already engaged, you've given me two beautiful children

and I'm happy. I want you to take my surname and be mine.

He kissed my cheeks and my eyes burned with tears. I don't even know who will give me away. I have no family left in this world. Who will even be a witness from my side of the family. I wish my mother was here.

Dumisani: babe please don't cry, our days of tears are over

Me: I don't know Dumisani, I'm worried. I don't have family that will give me off and.....

Dumisani: do not worry, I'm here with you. We're gonna have your dream

wedding. Anything you want, you shall get, I don't care if it cost more than this whole country

I giggled.

Me: you're crazy

He smiled kissing my ear.

Dumisani: you love my crazy Dick

He bit my ear and grabbed my ass. I moaned. I love this man with my all.

Dumisani: You're my family and I love you and you only

We heard loud noise coming from downstairs and Sihle was running up and down the passage giggling. That

could only be Vuyo who's making him run so much.

Dumisani: we have a beautiful family
Mamakhe

Me: I know, Phakade, I know. And I love our family.

Dumisani: if not for you, we wouldn't have come back together

We heard our room door burst open and I swear that crazy person could only be Vuyo who would burst into peoples room like that.

Me: your sisters are fucked up

He chuckles.

Dumisani: Vuyo if you dare open this bathroom I swear I'll kill you!!

He shouts. We hear her laugh.

Vuyo: enough sex now Dumisani, come!!
Lesedi is hungry again.

Me: I'm coming

Vuyo: cool, uh bro....

She only calls him that when she needs something.

Dumisani: what do you want Vuyo?

Vuyo: I need your Mercedes Benz for tonight please

She pleads. I giggle and get out of the bath tub. Thank God I made sure to lock

the bathroom door, otherwise as crazy as Vuyo is, she would've walked in here like nobody's business. Dumisani sighed.

Dumisani: for what?

Vuyo: Please Dumisani, just for tonight, I'll bring it back.

I can feel her holding her breath. I give him a stare and he surrenders.

Me: let her be, Phakade

I peck his cheek.

Dumisani: I'll be down with the keys

The room door opens and closes and I finally get a chance to walk out of the bathroom

Dumisani: you're too soft Busi

I laugh. It's his sisters, he should learn to tolerate them and not be so uptight and fatherly. He should be gentle sometimes. I still remember the day he found out Tumisani had sex for the first time and he punch poor Sipho at the airport.

Dumisani is a character. But I love him with all my heart.

~

Admin: I'm on holiday Now so I'm all yours. Don't worry.

[06/20, 05:34] Snr: INSERT 125~

.

- .
- .
- .

TWO WEEKS LATER

Tumisani's POV~

I rush into the bathroom and quickly brush my teeth while trying to get undressed with the other hand. I'm late for a very important meeting and I can't afford to miss this contract too. Work has been good, very good actually and I've gotten more investors for my campaigns which is a very good thing. Not only is business running well but my private life as well.

I keep falling in love with my niece every minute that passes and I'm so addicted to her in some way, I never miss a day without visiting her and I don't know why but I just love that little girl so much. I've almost visited Thandokazi after she gave birth and I must say it hit me deeply. Seeing her so happy with her first child brought back memories of what she did to me and made me lose my baby. But for the sake of peace I had to put up with it and smiled while congratulating them, I had to be strong and just let it go. Siphos is over the moon and I'm glad he's happy, he's smiling a lot lately and I'm glad she's given him

what he has always yearned for. He has always wanted a child and someone else gave him that joy and opportunity and that's all that matters. They have a handsome son and I'm happy for them but it does hurt sometimes, like how come the ones that are innocent always get punished. God took away my child and blessed him with another, how interesting. But I'm just glad that there's peace. Lindiwe is getting married next week and she's been so excited. Brians parents already went to pay lobola and now Lindiwe is going up and down planning her white wedding, she's been calling me non stop and we've been

shopping likes there's no tomorrow. I'm so happy for my friend, she deserves to be happy, she's been through a lot. Well Vuyo and Thabiso are actually out of the country and they said they'll be back just before the wedding. She did call to apologize for not going shopping with our crazy Lindiwe. Jack and Emihle have also been around making love in every corner they come across, the way those two are so attached to each other, it's cute. I guess we're all a bunch of horny couples but of course my man takes the cup. Speaking about my man, well he had to fly down to Soweto with Brian just to sort out whatever traditional stuff

they had to do and they've been gone for two days now, I'm worried. And guess what, he left Thando with me since Lindiwe is booked for the whole week with all the arrangements so I have to be the other adult and take care of my little princess. It's actually fun staying with Thando apart from having to take her to work everyday. All my employers are in love with her, all they ever talk about is how cute and beautiful she is. They once even asked me if she's my daughter. Thando has a weak of charming into peoples heads just like her father, she even ended up getting my PA to buy her chocolates behind my

back. She's cute tho. I didn't wanna go drop her off at Busi's because she already has two kids to take care of and I don't wanna bombard her. Lindiwe is actually in Pretoria right now, the way she's making this wedding so big, I swear it'll cost millions. The person designing her after party dress is in Pretoria so she flew down there to check it out.

Me: Thando!! baby are you ready?

I shout walking down the stairs now dress in a tight body hugging knee length white dress which show cases my cleavage and it's off the shoulder, with my black hills and my hair loose on

my shoulders. I look professional, this meeting is important.

I hear her mumble something from the kitchen and I know what's she up to. I just hope she hasn't messed her clothes. I get to the kitchen and she's neatly eating from the Nutella chocolate jar with a spoon, her move is a mess but she looks cute. She does this every time she's earlier than me.

Me: are you done?

I say smiling at her. She smiles naughtily putting the chocolate jar on the counter and hopping off the counter herself.

Thando: aunty you look beautiful

I giggle grabbing a few wet wipes and cleaning her chocolate coated mouth.

Me: thanks baby, now let's go aunty is late for work

She already got dressed by herself in her blue dangerie with her Nike shoes. She's too cute this child.

Me: we'll grab breakfast after my meeting, is that OK princess?

She nodded as I locked the house and got her into the car and buckled her seatbelt. She thanked me and I kiss her cheek. I got in myself and drove off. She sang along to the songs playing on the radio and it warmed my heart. I like

seeing her so happy and care free around me. I love children with passion. Children are such a blessing in our lives, they bring out the best in us. Which also reminds me that after the wedding I should go visit the orphanage and donate things to them.

We got to the office and I left her with my PA and I was five minutes late for my meeting, I have no clue who the person is that I'm meeting because I don't even know half of my clients and I didn't take a look at the business file last night because I was really exhausted.

I got into the boardroom and fixed myself before looking up.

Me: I'm so sorry for being late, please forgive me gentlemen

I looked up and my eyes popped out of it's sockets, literally. I look at him weirdly and sighed. He's aged a bit since the last time I saw him. Two years ago to be exact. There's five men in this room and they all look like they're from his company. Now I regret not checking that file last night because if I knew who I'd be dealing with I would've canceled this meeting.

Me: Monster

He smiles up at me and I want to drop this files in my hands. He still

intimidates me and scares me a little. I wonder what he's doing here. I should've came into this meeting with one of my staff's because right now I don't feel comfortable.

Me: please excuse me

I grab the office phone attached to the wall and call my PA.

Me: Natalie send up the chairman from the sixth floor

I hang up and take my seat. Breath Tumisani, breath.

Monster: Nice to finally see you again Miss Phakade

He says with that cheekish smile and I

don't bother to entertain him.

Me: Mr Mkisi, I apologize for not reading the business file, my chair person will present and take over the meeting

Just then Ronny, my chairperson walks in with his file and nods at me.

Me: Ronny please take over

He sits down And starts with the PowerPoint presentation and I'm so not into this meeting. I keep staring at him and wonder why out of all the company's in South Africa he wants to do business with us. I'm brought back to reality when I hear the word, " negotiate"

Monster: so Miss Phakade, since you're the biggest suppliers in the whole of South Africa, we would like you to be our Coal investors and also allow us to work together on this important project that could raise a lot of funds and win us a lot of power in the Business industries apart from the....

Me: what? so in other words you want us to work together?

Monster: yes

I chuckle. He's got to be kidding me. He wants to milk my account dry by trying this business tactic of working together, he thinks I'm a fool.

Ronny: ma'am he has a point, this project could be a great benefit to the business and we would get more investors from over seas if the funds are good enough

He says with so much reasoning. He has brains but he doesn't get the point here.

Me: so you came all the way from Mkisi Industries to look for a partnership with us? Why?

Monster: you have a good business relationship and you're the best company on the table, we only work with the best, Miss Phakade this could be a

good opportunity for your company, I've read your record and I've seen the amount of investors you've already lost this year and I think this could help you I chuckle bitterly. He doesn't get it. It's clear as daylight that I don't wanna work with him, I know this is a great opportunity but I hate him and I don't want him anywhere near my business.

Ronny: ma'am the Kelli Campaign have a chance of winning this project if we put a lot of work into it and if we have them on our side then this could work, the money is good, our accountant has looked into it and we've raised much better funds over the years and this

would just be a bonus

I sigh.

Me: I get your point Ronny but....

Monster: you don't have to trust me

Tumisani, I'm not here to entertain your

life I'm here business wise, your

business reputation is good, can we not

put the past into this, this could mean a

lot to my company because we've

dropped drastically so can you at least

consider thinking about it .

He looks like a totally different man, he's

doesn't look like the monster from two

years ago. I guess losing his family has

changed him. One of his men in a black

suit whispers something into his ear and they nod.

Man: Patkins Industries and Langa Industries are already on board with this project Miss Phakade and they've already raised a couple of millions so far and we don't have enough time.

I sigh. So Jack and Dumisani knew about this yet they didn't involve me. So much for family, but hey I don't blame them this is business and everyone wants their business to succeed. I'm sure Monster would've gone to Dumisani if he hadnt started with this project, no wonder he came to me because Dumisani and Jack have

already begun. Now they've just let me to swim with the fishes. Why wasn't I informed that this project was on the table? Gosh the people I work with are pathetic sometimes

Me: Ronny get me the details and files of this project and set up a contract with Mkisi Industries

I say defeated. I have no other way out. It's either I work with this man or lose billions over this campaign.

Monster: Does that mean we're gonna work together?

He smiles.

Me: I didn't say anything, I'll think about

it.

I look him in the eyes and his eyes are light and soft. The old Monster had red eyes, I don't know who this man is.

Monster: we don't have enough time Phakade, the opening ceremony is in two days time, be there and let me know if we're on the same page or not. Make the right decision Tumisani, this project is big.

Me: It was nice meeting you Mr Mkisi

I say formally as his men stand up. I shake their hands and his men leave but he stays behind, I excuse Ronny and we both just stand their staring at each

other.

Monster: I don't mean any harm
Tumisani, I've lost a lot these past two
years and this company is my only
source. I lost my family and I don't
wanna lose this company either. please
think about it.

He says softly. I don't know if this is
emotional blackmail or what but it's
working.

Me: I'll be at the ceremony opening but
don't try anything funny.

He chuckles.

Monster: Makoti trust me, I've changed
I somehow believe that shit. Can

someone remind me why I'm so soft hearted.

Me: Does your son know you're in town?

He sighs and looks away.

Monster: please don't tell him, he hates me and might stop you from working with me, please

I chuckle.

Me: you know I'm not good at lying to him, but for the sake of business, I'll try.

Monster: Thank you. I'll be looking up to doing business with you Phakade

Me: have a good day.

I show him the way out and he gets into

the elevator while I go to my office. I find Natalie and Thando chatting up a storm on my couch and Thando is doing most of the talking, Natalie is just smiling and listening.

Thando: you know Natie my mom is getting married then She'll give me a baby brother just like Uncle Dumisani gave Sihle a baby sister, but I want a brother.

She says to Natalie. She calls her, Natie. She always gives people pet names this one. I giggle.

Natalie: oh Miss Phakade you're back, you look tired do you want me to get

anything for you?

She says smiling and getting up. I'm actually exhausted just after that meeting.

Me: yes please get Thando breakfast and please check what time the open ceremony for the new project will be

I settle at my desk and place the files on the big wooden white desk.

Natalie: of course ma'am, Thando what would you like?

She says to a smiling Thando.

Thando: aunty can I get some ice cream please

I laugh.

Me: Thando you had chocolate this morning and now you want ice cream, no princess you need something solid.

Thando: in that case I'll go with Natie so I can see what solid food I can get

She winks at Natalie and we both laughed. This child and her tricks.

Me: sure go but Natalie don't fall for her tricks. Please.

Natalie: yes madam, come.

She takes her hand and they leave with Thando whispering to her and I'm sure she's telling Natalie not to listen to me. That child.

I opened my lap top and read through Mkisi Industries business record. I don't trust Monster one bit. I need to know that he's not trying to trap me. He sounds so sincere but I've fallen for his charm many times and I won't fall for it this time. Never. I had my head wrapped up in those files that I didn't see my phone ringing all this while and when I finally recognized it, I felt bad. My baby called like a hundred times.

Me: baby I'm so sorry, I only saw your calls now

I said into the phone and he chuckled.

Luu: I thought you forgot about me nunu

He whined.

Me: I would never, I miss you

Luu: I miss you more, I'll be home

Tomorrow, I hope my princess is not giving you a hard time ?

Me: not at all I love staying with her

I smiled.

Luu: I'm glad she loves you, where is she?

Me: she just went to grab some breakfast with Natalie, I'm kinda busy with work

I say softly. I hope he forgives me for working with his father. This is business and I need this project, I have to win it.

It's a great opportunity come to think of it.

Luu: OK my love, I can't wait to see your pretty face and make love to you all night, I miss your sexy booty.

I giggle and he chuckles.

Me: you're teasing me

I whine.

Luu: imagine how I feel just thinking about that sexy ass of yours, I'm even hard right now

I laugh.

Me: Luu you're crazy

Luu: crazy for you, baby lets talk later,

Brian's mother needs help with a few things and Brian is out, I'll see you OK?

Me: sure, wait have you went to visit your mother and sister yet?

I say holding the phone pressed to my ear.

Luu: yeah actually, I have great news. Lindiwe's mom has invited them to the wedding which is happening there in Cape Town so they'll all be there for the wedding.

What!!??

Me: what!? I mean.....really?

I faked my voice. This is bad. What if something goes wrong and they find out

that Monster is in Town. Luu will kill me.

Luu: yeah baby, I'm so happy they'll be living with us, mom is excited to see you again

I swallow hard.

Me: uh I'm excited to see her too uhm yeah

Luu: baby are you OK?

Me: yeah Luu yeah I'm OK, chat later right

Luu: yeah later, I love you my queen
I smile.

Me: I love you more my king

He laughs before hanging up and I

sighed deeply. I have such a bad feeling about this. I know for a fact Luu's mom will be heartbroken if she sees monster And it'll create chaos with the family. I just hope they don't bump into each other mistakenly. Gosh. This is bad. Luu will be angry if I accept this proposal. But this is business. God.

After a while Natalie and Thando came back and the day proceeded though I couldn't wait to get home. This day is terrible.

Finally it was time to go home and I packed my stuff and took Thando's hand. I'm starving, I haven't eaten all day. We got into the car and I decided to

drive to Debonairs and grab a pizza for dinner since it was already almost six. I went to the drive through and bought a chicken mushroom triple decker pizza and also drove to MacDonalds because Thando wanted ice cream, Luu spoiled her too much now it's so hard for me to refuse. She's also too cute. We got home and first took a long bath together like mother and daughter and it was super fun. It felt like she was very own daughter. God please bless me with beautiful cute children. We both wore white soft gowns and wrapped white towels around our heads, we looked beautiful.

Thando: aunty why are you so beautiful, let's video call daddy and show him what he's missing out on

I laughed at this silly child. I carried her to the second floor lounge room and we sat in front of the TV with the box of pizza and of course her ice cream and we watched TV while eating. She forced me to call Luu and he kept complimenting on how beautiful his two favorite woman looked. Well indeed we looked beautiful. After hanging up with Luu we took pics together and sent it to Lindiwe and I also posted it on my Instagram and so many people commented saying all sorts of silly

things. Some commented with, " like mother like daughter " if only they knew she wasn't really my daughter. They have a point to say that though because Thando is light in complexion and has cute chicks just like me.

Thando: aunty look, our pictures have reached 1000 likes in less than an hour I laughed pulling her onto my lap. But I missed Luu, I miss him so much. If he was here I would've been 100% happy, I even feel guilty about the Monster saga. See why I don't like being dishonest. Now this issue will bother me till the truth comes out.

Thando fell asleep in my arms and I decided to put her to sleep in my room. I don't want her to sleep all alone tonight. Although she doesn't have a problem with seeing alone, I just wanna be close to someone right now. I also later retired to bed after reading more on the files. Maybe I should take this contract. Luu will have to understand that this is not about him or his father but about my career. Nothing should stop me from my success. The only thing I fear is his mother thinking that I'm working with him to spite them. I wouldn't even dream of that. Gosh. For the first time in my life, I feel stuck. Lost

and confused at the same time.

~

Like Comment and share.

~

[06/20, 05:34] Snr: INSERT 126~

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV~

I quickly jump out of bed as I heard a loud scream coming from downstairs. I checked next to me and Thando wasn't there. I panicked rushing out of my room and marching down the stairs with my

heart beating faster than my legs was running. I got to the first floor and sighed. God this child is something else.

Thando: daddy!!! you're home!

She squealed jumping into her fathers arms. He smiled and kissed her cheeks throwing her up into the air. Gosh I thought it was serious, the way Thando screamed it was as if she was held at gun point, my God.

Me: Thando you scared me!

She giggled with her father and I smiled. When did he even get back.

Luu: love of my life

He pulled me to him with his loose arm

and held my waist.

Me: I missed you

He smiled and bent his head down to kiss me fully on the lips and damn I really missed him.

Thando: OK daddy that's enough

She giggled pushing our heads apart. This little rascal. We chuckled in unison and I dragged his suitcase inside.

Me: when did you get out of bed princess I didn't hear you? And you Mr when did you get here?

I looked at the both of them and they laughed as if I've made a joke.

Luu: baby it's past eleven in the morning.

I gasped. Shit I'm late for work. I have a meeting with the stuff. My gosh.

Me: aah Thando why didn't you wake me up! why didn't you call and tell me that you were coming so early Luu!

I whined. They kept smiling at me, is there something on my face?

Luu: babe relax, you're the boss. Do you know how beautiful you look Phakade

I blushed. This guy hey.

Me: you two are nuts

I giggled taking Thando out of his arms, she had already gotten dressed. This

child is a star. She wakes up early and does everything by herself and she even looks cute. I'm impressed.

Me: I have a meeting Luu, go freshen up you've just arrived

He chuckled.

Luu: and I haven't been welcomed properly

He winked and wrapped his arms around both Thando and I but his one hand traveled to my butt and he squeezed it.

Thando: aunty I want chocolate

She said playing with my hair and Luu kept rubbing my ass I couldn't even think

straight. He was turning me on and I think that was his plan and his way of getting me not to go to work.

Me: no Thando....aahhuh no so early...

I shot Luu a death stare and he smiled.

Luu: Let me freshen up

He kissed my neck and spanked me. I moaned so loud Thando gasped.

Thando: daddy you're nasty, why are you hitting aunty? are you OK aunty?

She says looking down at me with her cute chubby cheeks. I faked a smile.

Me: I'm fine baby, Luu move.

I pushed him out of my way and he

laughed running up the stairs. This man is something else, I placed Thando on the coach and made her a bowl of cereal and left her in front of the TV while I walked upstairs to get ready for work. I heard the shower tap on and I quickly stripped naked. I missed him inside of me.

I wrapped my arms around him from behind and softly kissed his back and blew air onto the spot.

Luu: I missed you

He turned to face me and he looked so damn sexy. Next thing I know he's pumping deep inside my VJ and I'm

moaning his name, he grabs my breast and jiggles them as he keeps thrust deeper and deeper inside of me. Our moans and groans fill the room and just as I climax he also cums inside of me. I wrap my arms around his neck and breath. He kisses my ear and holds my waist.

Luu: Mom and Yemi are coming tomorrow night to help Lindiwe's mom with the preparations. Will you have time to prepare the two rooms on the second floor?

My body all of a sudden tenses and I'm worried. Oh lord what am I gonna do.

Me: uh yeah sure, when I get home tonight I'll prepare the room. Uh. baby I have a business ceremony tomorrow night and I have to be there.

He looks down at me and smiles.

Luu: do you want me to accompany you, I would love to see you in action. Boss lady.

I chuckle followed by a blush.

Me: no I want you to be here with Ma and Yemi so that they don't get bored.

I say not able to find an excuse . I don't want him to bump into his father, that would be a disaster. I close the tap and peck his lips.

Luu: are you OK?

He says wrapping a towel around the both of us then held my hands into his.

Me: I'm fine Luu, relax

We get out and I walk to my closet. I pull out a white jeans with a black vest and a white blazer and my black stilettos. I quickly get dressed and I look so professional. Luu smiles at me and I keep blushing. He's driving me crazy, I really missed him.

Me: stop staring

He wraps his arms around me and he smells so good and looks cute.

Luu: you look beautiful, this ass will get

you into trouble

He bends down to my big ass and kisses it. I giggle.

Me: Luu get up

He lips me up and I laugh. This guy is trying everything just to stop me from going to work. He's naughty.

Luu: please stay

Me: I have a meeting Yanda, I'll come early

Luu: I'll miss you

He says holding my bag as we walked down the stairs. Thando was glued to the TV and she looked so focused.

Me: I love you OK

I kissed his lips and he deepened the kiss then grabbed my ass.

Me: Luu

He chuckled then stopped.

Luu: I can't help it. You're gorgeous

I smile and say goodbye to Thando then leave. I get into the car and before I can even start the engine my phone rings. I connect it to the car and start the engine.

Me: Phakade speaking?

I say driving out of my driveway and out the gate and onto the road.

Voice: Tumisani, it's me Monster

I sigh. How did he get my number? I hate this already.

Me: if you're gonna start calling me like this then consider that deal gone

I say annoyed, he chuckles.

Monster: Tumisani relax, I'm just calling to let you know that I'm waiting for my answer.

I breath and focus on the road.

Me: I don't trust you Monster, and plus if your son finds out that we're on the same team, I'm dead.

I say truthfully. Yanda will be pissed at me.

Monster: Tumisani please don't tell him about us working together, he already threatened me that he wouldn't hesitate to kill me if I come anywhere near any of you, so please

He says and I'm taken aback. Monster scared of death? This is a joke. I've never heard him in such a weak tone, he was never one to beg but this, this is new. I chuckle.

Me: you're so surprising me right now, I'm shocked.

Monster: like I've said, I've changed. I lost the ring business along with my family and I regret it, this is the only

company I have left. Please.

I want to laugh and record the almighty Monster apologizing but I can't. I feel him.

Me: OK let me get back to you. I'll get my PA to text you the details.

Monster: is that a yes?

Me: yeah yeah, whatever. Can I hang up now?

He sighs in relieve and I chuckle. The shit he's getting me into.

Monster: thank you so much Tumisani, I really appreciate it.

I laugh and hang up. This is messed up.

I park my car outside Matthews Industries and step out. I get into the company and Natalie is barking orders at these people and I'm amazed.

Natalie: madam thank God you're here, there's been a misunderstanding, your brother is here

What?

Me: Dumisani?

She nods and we get into the elevator. She briefs me on what is happening and I call for a staff meeting. This people are driving me nuts.

Natalie: madam I know it's none of my business but I don't think you should

accept this business proposal with Mr
Mkisi

she says openly as we walk towards my
office.

Me; why Natalie?

I look at her and she blushes a bright red

Natalie: Madam this is a heavy project
and it'll cause a lot of competition and I
think it'll be a bad idea of you interfere.

Your brother is involved and so is the
Patkins and they have a bad history with
Mr Mkisi. As well as Daniels industries
and all the other powerful companies

She says and we stop at my door.

Me: I know Natalie, I'm confused but this

is a heavy project it's very beneficial for us, agh tell Ronny to come to my office in an hour.

She nods and leaves. I breath before entering my office. Dumisani is seated on my couch next to Vuyo. God this is gonna be a long day. They both look disappointed and annoyed. I hate this.

Me: Hi guys

I put my files on my desk and breath.

Vuyo: Tumisani, tell me this is not true?

She says standing up.

Dumisani: Phakade do you know what you're doing?

Me: can we not do this right now, my head is spinning and I can't think straight

I sit down on my chair and close my eyes.

Vuyo: sis don't do this please, Mkisi is not one to work with, for all we know he could be after your money

She says standing in front of my desk.

Dumisani: you do know that you're the only powerful female in the business industry right? He might be trying to eliminate you Phakade.

I open my eyes and pour myself a glass of water. I gulp it down and breath.

Me: I think I should be making the decisions here and I hate the way you guys are trying to convince me to step down. It's easy for you guys to say these things because you're both on the same team and you're able to help each other, I'm alone on this and you know this project is very beneficial for all our companies so please stop it.

I chuckle. This is so not fair.

Dumisani: Tumsa it's not like that, we are more experienced on these things and fully understand how it works. This project is beneficial yes, but we're family

Me: you should've thought about that

before you started the project without telling me, how is that fair Dumisani?

He sits down and sighs.

Vuyo: But Tumisani Monster is not the one to work with, you of all people should know that.

I sigh.

Me: I have a meeting, please excuse me

Dumisani: Phakade we're not done!

I flinch but stand my ground.

Me: Dumisani don't do this please, you both know this is unfair. You guys are trying to battle me down emotionally and it's not working, you guys are family

but when it comes to business you should put family aside for once

Dumisani: so you're gonna compete against me? your brother!?

He roars. I want to cry right now.

Me: Dumisani....

Dumisani: Phakade you know I only want the best for you, if I'm standing here and stopping you today is because I know what I'm doing. I'm not doing this for my own greed, you're my sister for crying out loud.

I can't do this. I need this contract. Why can't they just understand. If I knew that this business thing would get between

my family I wouldn't have opt for it. I hate what this is doing to us already.

Me: I need to breath

Vuyo: sis please think about it

Dumisani: she doesn't have to think about it, we're her family

He says sternly.

Me: but why does it have to be me who steps down, what about you guys, huh? is it because I'm the youngest?

He chuckles.

Dumisani: Don't even go there Tumsa, you know one of us has to step down, we only have one company but you have

three. You have nothing to lose but we could lose billions from this project

I sigh.

Vuyo: wait, have you told Luyanda about this?

She says with a raised eye brow.

Me: Vuyo I can't!

They chuckle.

Dumisani: you're playing with fire
Phakade, you're gonna get burned.

Vuyo: Tumsa please think about it, don't make hasty decisions.

Dumisani clicks his tongue and barges out. I want to cry. Vuyo kisses my cheek

and leaves as well. I'm doomed.

Monster has put me in such a state that even I can't change. I might own three companies but that doesn't mean it's all perfect. I need my family right now, they can't all possibly be against me now.

~

Like comment and share

~

[06/20, 05:34] Snr: CONTINUATION~

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV~

My whole day was already ruined and I had no energy left for work. But I had to drag through all those meetings and just work. I couldn't even think straight, my head was spinning all day and I was hungry as hell. Monster kept calling me all day and I ignore his calls because I was confused as hell. I didn't know what to tell him so I kept ignoring him all day until it was knock off time and I was glad because this day was terrible. I got into the elevator and as soon as I got to the first floor, I dashed to my car and just drove. I need my bed and food. I can't think properly. I hate what this is doing to me and my family. Monster has

put me in a tight situation and yeah, I'm considering on letting go of the project. I can't lose my family over money. I just can't. We've been through so much and I won't throw it all away.

Although the project will be beneficial but then I have to think about my family first. It'll break us apart and come to think of it, I won't be able to compete against Dumisani. He's my elder brother and it would be disrespectful of me.

I park the car outside my house and spot Dumisani's car also parked there. I sigh. I breath before walking into the house and there's a whole commotion going on in here. What on earth is Jack

doing here? Luu looks annoyed and so does everyone else in this room. I walk right past all of them and didn't even bother to greet. I don't need this right now. I already can't think straight, I don't need anymore of their lectures. I walk up to my room and make sure to lock the door because I know Yanda will come up here and bark at me. I strip naked and get into the shower. Tears roll down my cheeks as the water pours onto my skin. A woman can only take in so much. I cried until I felt better and stronger and ready to face the world then wrapped a towel around my body and walked to my closet. I lotion my body and put on my

jeans and an oversized top. I loosen my hair for some air and I put on my slippers, I grab my phone and walk down the stairs. They all turn to look at me and it's then that I notice Emihle sitting with them next to Jack. I ignore them again and walk to the kitchen and pour myself a glass of wine. Without thinking twice, I gulped it down and sighed. I poured another glass and slowly drank it.

Emihle: don't stress too much about it
Tumisani

I turned around and Emihle wrapped her arms around me for a hug. I wanted to cry again but stopped myself.

Me: how are you?

I say breaking the hug and forging a smile, she chuckles

Emihle: forget me, Girl you're tensed. I know how all this is taking a toll on you but babe...

She sighs and makes me sit on the kitchen stool and she stands behind me while massaging me. I felt much calmer.

Me: I've already made my decision.

I say softly.

Emihle: I know you've worked hard for this companies And I understand but this is family Tumisani.

I smiled and got up. I took her hand and we walked to the lounge where everyone was in their own zone. I cleared my throat and they all looked up to me.

Me: before you all bark at me, let me talk.

I breathed.

Me: so I've decided to let go of the project because all of you are against me doing it so there's no point in competing with you guys. What's unfair is the fact that the people I thought were my family would all of a sudden go against me like this, do you think it's fair that I should be the one who steps down? Well honestly I think you're all wrong, I

know I did wrong by not telling you Luu, that your father was the one who asked me to work with him and I'm sorry. But it's business, I can't possibly always let go of projects just because you people have issues. I'm not saying he's a good man and all but that has nothing to do with this. This is my career I'm trying to build and you guys are bringing me down like this? But I hope you are all happy with the fact that I'm stepping down so you all can have it your way. I'm youngest after all and I'm the fool...

I chuckled and turned to walk away.

Dumisani: Tumisani don't do that

He said standing in front of me. I blinked away tears and looked down.

Dumisani: Tumisani I'm not trying to break you down, I'm trying to help you , I'm your brother and I want nothing but the best for you .

I sighed.

Me: please let me breath, I can't think straight.

I move out of his way and marched upstairs. I can't even breath. I got into the room and got under the covers. It's nothing I can't handle. I tried so hard to fall asleep but I couldn't. After a while the noise downstairs was no more and I

knew they were gone. So I got up and walked to the room on the second floor and started preparing it for Luu's mom and sister because they'll be here tomorrow. I have no energy for anyone right now. I'm drained.

Luu: baby...

I turned around and he walked towards me with his hands in his pockets. I sat down on the bed and looked down.

Luu: don't do that

He said holding my face with his hands and I just cried. I've never been so exhausted in my life.

Me: I'm sorry I didn't tell you, I'm sorry

Luu

He kissed my head and held me tightly against his chest.

Luu: it's OK my love, don't worry. Relax .

He kissed my lips and smiles.

Me: your father has changed

Luu: can we not talk about him

I nod and he helps me make the bed. I have a feeling there's a storm to come.

.

Kazi's POV~

I get out of the car and hold Andile against my chest. I love my baby so much. Sipho has been nothing but good

to me and I can safely say I am in love. I love him so much and I'm happy my dream has finally come true. We're finally together.

I pay the driver and walk towards the house door but stop on my tracks as I feel someone watching us. I turn to check but there's no one. I keep walking but I can't shake off the feeling of being watched. I quickly get into the house and switch on all the lights. Andile gets scared and starts crying, I hug him and kiss him again. I wonder where Siphos is, he promised to take us shopping but I ended up going alone because he canceled on the last moment. I sat on

the coach and started feeding Andile and he slowly calms down.

Me: you're so handsome my baby

I kissed his head again and grabbed my phone from my bag to call Siphos but it's off. I sigh.

I walk to the kitchen with Andile sucking on my breast and it's cute. I take out the take aways we bought yesterday and I warmed it in the microwave. And then all of a sudden there was a knock at the door. I thought it was Siphos but I didn't hear his car driving in. I walk to the lounge and slowly put Andile down then grab my gun from the bottom of the

coach. A woman has to keep safe sometimes.

Me: who is it?

I say holding my gun up and slowly walking towards the door. There was no reply and then I repeated but nothing. So I stood on the edge of the door and quickly unlocked the door and pointed it to the persons face. She gasped.

Ashley: put the gun down, Kazi, it's me
I chuckled.

Me: bitch what are you doing here?

I say lowering my gun but I didn't trust her enough. She stood at the door looking behind me as if she was in need

of something. Then she smiled focusing back at me.

Ashley: so I was thinking, since you've given birth maybe we could try again and be friends

I want to laugh. She walks inside and I close the door.

Me: you do know that I can actually kill you right now for coming to my house knowing very well that I hate you?

She frowns.

Ashley: uh can we at least try?

Me: listen bitxh, I hate you. I want you to play very far from my man OK sweetie, because I don't share my men,

understood?

I said pointing the gun at her head again and this time she was not scared at all. She was calm.

Ashley: you don't scare me even one bit, so please lower that gun and sit your ass down, we need to talk.

I chuckle. She doesn't know me, does she?

Me: leave before I change my mood

She chuckles and sits down instead.

Andile is fast asleep and I'm glad my son doesn't have to witness this.

Ashley: you're gonna listen to me. I want you and your pathetic son out of Siphos

life because he's mine and mine alone.
He's just with you for the sake of this
bastard you call a son....

I didn't think twice of smacking her and I
got even more angry and started
punching her white little pathetic face.
She turned red and pinned her hard
against the coach choking her. She was
unable to breath and that was the exact
reaction I wanted.

Me: Good listen slut, carry your thin ass
out this house and never return. The
next thing I see you near us, you'll be six
feet under

I grab her by the hair and pulled her all

the way to the door and I threw her out after slapping her again. She groaned in pain.

Ashley: you'll regret this

She says marching away spitting blood.

I laughed. Bitch. I walked back to the lounge and put the gun away then went to wash my hands and took Andile to bed. I also took a bath and got into my PJ's and before I could close my eyes, Siphos barged in. I sat up straight and he walks towards me with a smile.

Siphos: babe

He kisses my lips then kisses Andile's cheek. I smile.

Me: I missed you

I wrap my arms around him and he kisses my head.

Sipho: I missed you more, let me take a shower and join you

Me: did you eat?

Sipho: are you sure you wanna know what I'm hungry for?

He smirks and I giggled. Fuck Six months I want him now. I want him so badly right now. He kisses my lips again and I grab his member inside his pants. He groans. But pulls out afterwards.

Sipho: let me freshen up first my love

I giggle and he kisses my cheek again.
He walks towards the bathroom and I
stop him.

Me: your slut was here

He turns around.

Sipho: Ashley?

Me: do me a favor and tell her to stay
away from me. because next time I
won't just slap her and make her bleed,
I'll kill her

He chuckles.

Sipho: don't talk like that around our son
Kazi, I'll handle Ashley

Me: thank you

He smiles and gets into the bathroom. Let's hope by, " handle " her he doesn't mean fuck her senselessly. She can be a bitch sometimes. But I won't hesitate to kill her if she becomes too much of a threat. They don't call me Thandokazi for nothing.

~

Like comment and comment.

[06/20, 05:34] Snr: INSERT 127~

.

.

A WEEK LATER

Tumisani's POV~

This has to be the longest and most horrible week of my life. Everything felt like it was dragging and I couldn't wait for this day any longer. Luu's family are living with us for now until Lindiwe's wedding is over which is actually tomorrow. Yeah it's Friday today and I'm exhausted as shit. Lindiwe has been dragging me from north to south ever since this week started and I even took a week off work just for her. I've been busy up and down to Lindiwe's orders and she's driving everyone crazy. She doesn't want anything to go wrong. And guess what.....as crazy as our little girl group is, Vuyo has planned Lindiwe a

little party before she's officially belonging to someone. A little bachelorette party if I'm correct and that party is tonight and I've just got into Cape Town like yesterday. I had to fly to Pretoria to fetch Lindiwe's dress and she was so stressed because her dress maker wasn't finished yet and Lindiwe being dramatic she didn't wanna even see the dress in case it's a mess. But I saw it and God damn this girl has taste. It's damn beautiful. I've never seen such a beautiful wedding dress in my whole entire life. It's a white sparkly boob tubed dress that will hug her figure and plus it's a mermaid style dress. I can't

believe my chommie is getting married, I'm so happy for her. She'll look totally beautiful. But she'll pay me back one day for making me work so hard. I'm beyond drained right now. Her dress alone is worth millions, I'm sure Brian is broke as fuck right now.

The thing with Monster ended just like that. I don't him I'm not taking part in the project and he was really upset and Luu hasn't stopped pestering about it, he still thinks that I'm working with him because Monster won't stop calling me. I won't blame Luu if he does something to him because he has no limits. He knows very well that his son hates him

but he won't let me be.

Apart from all that his mother has been nothing but the best. That woman makes me smile, she treats me like her own daughter and makes me feel loved like a mother would love their own child. I really love that woman. Yemi has also been of so much help especially now that Lindiwe wants everyone to only keep busy with her wedding arrangements. She's acting as if she's Queen Bonang. I won't be shocked if I see the media at her wedding. She's that dramatic.

Well, Dumisani and I are chilled. We apologized to each other and kissed it to

rest. He even pulled out of the project as well which I didn't want him to do but he said it was only fair that way. My little Niece has been growing so much, she looks fully like me now and I'm so happy that I have a little photocopy. I love that kid with my all. Not forgetting Siphos handsome son, that kid is super cute. I've seen him thrice this week because everyone has been at my house since this week started and it's all Lindiwe's doings. The guys are also having their own Bachelors party for Brian but at his beach house but ours are gonna be the bomb. Vuyo's words. So my house is bombarded by females at the moment.

But the mothers and elders are all the way at Dumisani's house, poor Busi was pissed that she couldn't come to the bachelorrete party. Dumisani didn't want his princess to be exposed in such an environment. So basically all the females including Lindiwe's cousins and other relatives are at my house. Well we're all young here actually, they all look young to me. I think I'm the youngest tho. We're like twenty people in this house and by the boys at Brian's beach house there's like ten males there because Brian's friends and brother, Jason is there. Remember Jason ? Lindiwe's ex and also her soon to be

husbands brother. Yeah awkward. And guess what? Luu's ex Amanda is here as well. She's Brian's step sister after all. Anyway, I'm just glad she knows her limits. I have no time to entertain her. Thandokazi is also all the way there at Dumisani's house because all the mothers are there with the elders as well. My house is a mess and it feels like a club yet the party hasn't started. There's girls running up and down the stairs fixing their dresses for tomorrow and yes of course, I'm the maid of honor. She's my BFF after all. Lindiwe is pacing up and down talking on the phone and the way she's panicking is driving me

nuts.

Lindiwe: Brian the cake!! They're not done with my cake!!

She's close to tears and it's so funny.

She sits down with the phone stuck on her ear and her hand on her forehead testing her own temperature. I sigh and place the other girls dresses on the table. Yeah she wants them to match.

Lindiwe's nuts.

Lindiwe: baby we can't wait till tomorrow, what if.....

She starts crying into the phone and I chuckle and grab it out of her hand and she's whining like a baby now.

Me: hey Brian, it's Tumisani. Don't worry about the cake. I'll sort it out.

Brian: oh thank God, Wait is she crying? God my woman is dramatic. I only told her the baker made a mistake with the cake and now she's crying!

He chuckles and I giggle looking at Lindiwe.

Me: don't worry about anything, I'm here. Take care.

I hang up and look at Lindiwe. She wipes her tears and shoves her legs on the couch.

Lindiwe: my wedding is ruined Tumisani! She starts crying again and now I burst

out laughing.

Me: you're dramatic, do you know that?

I say passing her a glass and poured wine in it for her.

Lindiwe: the fucker messed up my cake
Tumisani!! what kind of fuckery is that?

I laugh and she chuckles.

Me: I'll head down there and sort it out,
stop being a baby, your wedding day is
tomorrow. Your mother called me to tell
you to stop being a baby for once

She laughs loudly.

Lindiwe: she said that?

I nod and she giggles.

Lindiwe: I'm so happy Chommie, I'm getting married!!!

She screams. Wasn't she just crying two seconds ago. Hayi I give up. I laugh and Emihle barges into the second floor lounge where there's much peace. I don't even wanna go downstairs because my house is a mess. Emihle is covered in cream. Lol.

Emihle: your cousins are fucked up

Lindiwe

She says plopping down on the couch next to Lindiwe and we laughed.

Me: they take after Lindiwe, her whole family is fucked up.

We laugh again and I get up.

Me: send me the address quickly and I'll sort it out. Don't let her leave the house
Emihle

Emihle: no problem, where you off to?

Lindiwe: The damn baker fucked my cake

She says tapping onto her phone.

Emihle: oh my gosh, do you think they'll finish in time?

Me: they better, see you ladies later and
Lindiwe please tell your crazy family to stop breaking down my house

They giggle and I march down the stairs

all the way to the first floor. Damn guys I've just realized how big my house really is. I can't believe twenty people live in here right now.

Me: Vuyo my table!!!

I can't believe my eyes. She's busy twerking on my coffee table. Oh my God I can't deal. She giggles and walks up to me then kisses my cheek.

Vuyo: I love you

Me: Aah you guys are driving me nuts, bye

I walk out the house and into my car. I haven't spoken to my man since yesterday and I miss him so much. I

haven't had time for myself or to even look at my phone. The only calls I've been answering lately are business calls and work calls, nothing else. I get a message from Lindiwe and it's the address of the bakery shop. I hope it's not that bad. I drive faster and it's already half past one. They close at 3pm. At least we still have enough time to fix it.

I get to the bakery store and there's not much customers so I walk to the lady at the till and she's busy chewing gum.

Me: Hi, I'm here for the wedding cake of a wedding that is taking place tomorrow.

She looks up at me and smiles politely.

Lady: oh are you here on behalf of Miss Lindiwe?

I nod and she excuses herself and goes to back where I'm thinking is the baking room. She later comes back and asks me to follow her and I do just that. She takes me to the baking area but where they keep all their already baked cakes and Lindiwe's cake is the one standing out the most. There's just been a little mistake with the deco and flavor.

Me: oh I see, uh her choice would've been a bit more vanilla here and strawberry here, it's not that bad

I say to the panicking baker and he nods. I writes down what the stuff and checks all the angles and stuff and when I'm satisfied with everything I leave and head to my car but before all that I had to grab one of their muffins. It was calling me and I'm really hungry. I get into the car and start driving while eating my muffin. A call came through the Bluetooth speaker and I quickly picked up.

Luu: my love

Me: baby!

I smiled happily. Finally he called.

Luu: my baby, I miss you so much

There was so much noise in the background and it was so annoying, gosh.

Me: baby I miss you more!

I smiled to myself.

Luu: there's so much noise here, can we meet please my love, I haven't seen you all week and I can't do it any longer

I giggled.

Me: I'm actually driving, meet me at MacDonald's on third street

I say turning my car on the other drive lane.

Luu: give me ten minutes, I miss my

cake

I laughed and I heard him chuckle before hanging up. I got to MacDonalds and spotted his car in one of the parking lots. I quickly parked my car and rushed over to his side and he met me half way. I jumped into his arms and he picked me up spinning me around like we haven't met in twenty years. He cupped my neck and deeply kissed me on the lips before looking into my eyes again.

Luu: my royal beauty, my sugar cake, my sweetie baby!!

I laughed hitting his head playfully and he swept me off my feet taking me by

surprise, carrying me bridal style all the way to his car. I giggled. It was like we were in our own little world. We sat in his car and he had already bought MacDonalds for us. I grabbed the bag quickly and unwrapped the juicy burger.

Luu: you're glowing Phakade

He said looking at me with a smile and I giggled.

Me: are you for real? I've lost weight because of Lindiwe's pressure

I say biting into my burger and he took the chips and started eating from the packet.

Luu: I missed you so much, how's the

ladies?

I gasped.

Me: baby they're turning our house into a club!! I can't deal.

He laughs.

Luu: Lindiwe's whole family are crazy people, even her male cousins are driving Brian nuts. It's funny.

We laugh and play with each other like kids and he makes me feel like a teenager all over again. After eating we make out and yeah guys he fucked me on the back seat of his car and it was amazing. Don't worry, he has tinted black windows so nobody saw anything.

Luu: baby, I miss you already

He said pulling out of the kiss and helping you zip up my jeans. I feel like a teenager going out without permission and sneaking around. It's cute.

Me: don't worry baby, next week we'll be free. I'm excited for tomorrow. I hope you guys won't have any prostitutes at that bachelors party, I'll kill you.

I say eyeing him and he laughed as if he was already guilty. I saw this coming.

I'm even scared of what Vuyo has planned. You never know what that girl is thinking next.

Luu: I didn't do the planning Mrs Mkisi.

He says kissing my cheek and taking my hand into his.

Me: Luyanda I'll kill you

He laughs again and I'm annoyed. I know those eyes. Dumisani better watch out for this dude. I'll give him a call.

Luu: don't worry my love, this heart beats for you and only you

He grabs my butt and makes me sit on top of him. He's being too touchy. I giggled.

Me: Luu I have to go. Lindiwe is probably stressed

Luu: your friend is dramatic

I chuckle.

Me: you could say that again.

I get fully dressed and kiss him goodbye and he looked like he wanted to cry. My poor baby. I drive to the house and before I could even get inside I could hear the loud banging music. Gosh this people are noisy. I get inside and find the house clean. I scream. How the hell did they do that? Lindiwe laughs walking into the room and I now see their trick.

Me: so you brought cleaners? you guys are lazy

I see the two cleaners coming down the stairs and I laugh. At least they cleaned.

Me: the cake is beautiful chommie! I
can't wait

She squeals and hugs me tightly. The
other girls come walking down the stairs
with plastic bags and I'm guessing that's
dirt.

Me: thank you guys for cleaning!

I shout smiling. Amanda, Luu's ex walks
down the stairs looking irritated and I
can feel she doesn't like being here. Well
she has to deal with it because Lindiwe
is now her sister in law and I'm her best
friend and my ass is here to stay.

Vuyo: Amanda are you OK?

She asks Amanda and the brat fakes a

smile. I chuckle softly.

Amanda: I'm OK

Emihle: are you sure sweetie, you look like you would rather be somewhere else

She asks with a glass of wine in her hand and we're all now looking at poor Amanda.

Amanda: I'm fine, I haven't seen Yanda, how is he Tumisani?

She flashes me a smile and I chuckle annoyed. Bitch has some nerve.

Vuyo: he's perfectly fine, why do you care?

Amanda: just curious, we were once....friends.

She shoots me a stare and I'm not even shocked.

Vuyo: good for you.

She fakes a smile at her and I want to laugh.

Me: I'm gonna go take a shower, sis when is the party starting?

She now has an evil smirk plastered on her face. I chuckled.

Vuyo: I thought you would never ask, you ladies have two hours to get ready

She leaves the room and I know Vuyo is

gonna get us all in deep shit.

Gosh, I can feel it.

Lindiwe: I can't wait, I hope it's dirt

We all look at her and she laughs.

Me: woman you're getting married!

Lindiwe: that's why I should enjoy my last day as a sinner, I don't mind getting laid by a gay dude tonight

Emihle hits her with a pillow and we both attack her dirty little bitchy mouth. She laughs her ass off and Amanda is just standing there like a lost soul.

Emihle: talk shit again and this time we'll whip you

She says letting go of her and I laughed.

Lindiwe: I'm joking guys, I would never do such to my Brian. My super man, ncooh I miss him already! Let me give him a call I hope they won't have prostitutes at that party, I'll kill that nigga right at the alter

I laugh.

Me: that's what I told Luu, I'll kill him

Amanda: you can never trust a man who loves pussy

We all look at her and she laughs all by herself. Someone stop me from killing this bitch.

Amanda: I'm gonna get ready, I can feel

this party in my veins

She moves her small ass up the stairs
and I chuckle.

Me: Bitch

Emihle: slut

Lindiwe: Hoe

We laugh and look at each other. Gosh
we're crazy

Lindiwe: Lord forgive me I know she's
my sister in law but I promise this is my
last day as a sinner.

She says joking putting her hands
together as if she's really praying. I
giggle and hit her with a pillow.

Emihle: we're fucked up, a toast to us!!

We raise our glasses and toast. I love these girls so much.

~

Like Comment and Share

[06/20, 05:34] Snr: INSERT 128~

.

Tumisani's POV~

The night had come too soon. I couldn't believe how crowded my house became. There were people that I didn't even know existed, there was a lot of alcohol on the many tables in my house and I'm so glad the party stayed on the first floor

of the house because if it went to the second and the last floor I would be going crazy right now. The music was so loud and these people were practically walking naked in this house. I can't believe Vuyo made the theme of this party, "dirty bachelorette" now there's like a hundred naked woman walking around my house. There's people in my pool, my back yard and all over the place abs last but not least we're all having fun.

Of course Lindiwe us the one having the most fun, she's drunk already and is busy twerking on my coach with the other ladies. Well I wouldn't say I'm

sober myself but I'm just a little tipsy. But from the look of things everyone in this house is drunk. Lindiwe's cousins are having the time of their lives and are also twerking like their leader Lindiwe herself. Vuyo still hasn't told us what's her big surprise and I'm super nervous.

Emihle: Tumisani baby!!

She's jumps onto me and hugs to tightly. She's totally waisted. Jack is gonna kill her.

Me: you're drunk

I giggle. I love her even more when she's drunk.

Emihle: all these woman are gonna turn

me lesbian, gosh I've never seen such fine asses, well apart from your juicy Lucy ass

She laughs and I follow.

Me: and you know where I got my ass!!!

Emihle: eeh show me girl eeh

I gave her a little twerk show and she was screaming like hell, I laughed and collapsed down onto the couch next to her. We both were laughing our asses off and Emihle was so drunk. She's only in shorts and a bra. I'm only in my pink bikini because I was too lazy to get dressed.

Emihle: Luu probably loves that ass

She laughs at me and drags me out all the way to the kitchen where we find Amanda laughing with other girls and they look pretty cosy.

Amanda: you have a huge house

Tumisani

Me: thank you

I say walking to the fridge and grabbing some water. I have too much alcohol in my system right now.

Girl: and even a gorgeous body, girl you're blessed

They keep staring at me and it's weird. I just smile.

Me: thanks

All of a sudden we heard loud wedding bells ringing and loud screams coming from the lounge. We all looked at each other and ran out towards the lounge.

Vuyo: they're here!!

We get to the lounge and find about twenty male strippers and my jaw drops. I've never seen such sexy men in my whole life. They're all shirtless with cowboy boots and cowboy hats and their bodies are to die for. They're so sexy. I'm wet. Lindiwe screams happily and does the Cardi laugh and all the other girls are in awe. I could even see spit dripping from some of their mouths. I'm in shock myself. They're so yummy.

Six packs and all sweating and oh lord, I'm doomed.

Lindiwe: Best Wedding gift ever!!!!

She screams again jumping into one of the strippers arms and the music starts pumping and the men do their thing.

They start stripping and within an hour my house feels like a club or even worse.

There's girls kissing the strippers and bra's and panties flying left right and center.

I've never seen my sister so worked up and crazy for dick like this. All the girls have become hot and bothered and I can't believe the effect these strippers

have on these girls and myself as well. Lindiwe is busy twerking on one of the strippers and I wonder if we should remind her that she's getting married in just a few hours from now. Hearts are so gonna be broken after this party. I fear for my life. I've never seen such madness. Amanda and Emihle had disappeared to God knows where but I saw Amanda making out with one of the strippers and I now spot Vuyo also making out with one of the strippers and I swear he was finger fucking her undercover because the way she was moaning, gosh this is disgusting to watch. My poor eyes. This is like live

porn. Yemi (Luu's sister) has been drinking like crazy and touching herself as if she needs dick and I'm worried about the poor kid. I can't take it any longer. I scan for Vuyo and find her in a almost hidden spot with the same stripper and I grab her arm and she gasps.

Vuyo: Tumisani fuck I was about to cum
She says out of breath and I chuckle.

Me: Vuyo this is too much explicitly, look at this place.

She runs her hand through her hair and sighs

Vuyo: but it's so much fun babe

She's drunk. In her real self she wouldn't even say that. I know her. She can't even stand up straight right now.

Me: I'm kicking them out

She argues and argues with me but I don't give a rats ass. I feel guilty for them and I don't want anyone to get hurt after this. I love Luu too much to lose him for some piece of shit. That dude is my life and I won't be able to live with myself if I lose him again.

I get into the kitchen and scream my lungs out when I spot Emihle getting muffed by one of the strippers, I close my eyes with my hand and tell them to

get dress. Well I'm disappointed. They might be drunk but that's not an excuse. I don't even know what Lindiwe is doing right now and I don't think I wanna know.

Emihle: Fuck Tumisani, I'm so sorry

I open my eyes and the stripper dude is all over her and touching her like some kind of prostitute.

Me: dude fuck off

I yell at the stripper and he just won't stop. Emihle is drunk and her eyes are almost not even open.

I grab her arm and march back to the lounge but I feel her losing getting out of my grip and I look to my left only to find

the same stripper holding her tight against his chest. Gosh, this is bad. Before I can even say anything Amanda rushes down the stairs with a smile on her stupid face and I now sense trouble.

Amanda: Yanda is here!!

She yells and I now feel the house door burst open and next thing I hear are gun shots. I shut my eyes closed as tears roll down my cheeks in fear. I smell his cologne and I know he's really here.

Perks of having a gangster boyfriend with a gangster brother and a gangster bunch of friends. I hear screams but I freeze and dare not move and I quickly

open my eyes when I hear Emihle scream next to me and holds me tightly while crying.

Emihle: baby please stop!

She cries. I look at a pissed Jack who has just shot down the stripper that was all over Emihle. I scan for Dumisani, Brian and Thabiso but none of them are here. I breath in relief. There is silence.

Luu: all of you, voetsek

I hear murmurs and the guests all take their leave one by one. Luu and Jack look pissed and I guess they knew about this crazy party. I spot Ziggler and Lwazi and they both look like they wanna laugh.

Fools.

Luu: gents clean this up

He says referring to the stripper laying in a pool of blood next to Emihle and I , I don't think he's dead tho.

Lindiwe: where is Brian?

She says worried and I now realize everyone has come back to their senses.

Luu: you're lucky they don't know we're here, I just had a slight feeling that shit was going down here, I knew we couldn't trust any of you guys. Baby I thought you would've been the bigger person and acted more mature!

He scold and I knew I had to shut up

right now. Jack chuckles and grabs a crying Emihle by the hand and they walk out to the backyard. I knew this was gonna happen.

Vuyo: I'm sorry this is all my fault

Lindiwe: It's all our faults, none of this has to be mentioned tomorrow. I'm getting married to the love of my life and I don't want anyone to ruin it for me so what happened at this party stays at this party, understood!!

She yells and everyone nods.

Lindiwe: whoever speaks, I kill.

She threatens. I love her she can get so feisty over this. She was now just

twerking on one of the strippers. I want to laugh.

Luu: Yemi the fuck?

She rushes up the stairs and I can see she's crying. Gosh poor kid has never been in such an environment.

Luu: I'm gonna whip that kid....

He charges towards the stairs and I block his way standing in front of his big chest.

Me: babe no please, she's traumatized already

Luu: she should've thought about that before being stupid like all of you!!

He yells and I flinch. OK he's pissed.

Me: baby please, relax

I cup his neck and he breaths down onto my forehead. Damn I need to grow, he's too tall.

Vuyo: that's too much drama for one night, ladies let's get to bed. Tomorrow is Lindiwe's big day, we all had fun tonight and that's all that matter. Let's go please

I want to laugh. She surely doesn't know this doesn't end here when Luu is involved. Lindiwe laughs so loud and I know she gets it.

Lindiwe: you surely don't know how

protective and insecure these men can be, lucky for me I'm getting married

She says walking up the stairs laughing and her crazy cousins also laughed. I chuckle.

Amanda: Yanda, hey

She pushes me out the way and hugs Luu tightly. I chuckle. Bitch.

Everyone has gone upstairs and it's now just me, her and Yanda.

Luu: uuh hi Amanda

He says getting her off him. I walked to the kitchen and left them their, pissed.

She has some nerve that girl. I won't entertain her, Luu knows his limits. I

pour myself a glass of water and slowly drink. This has been a long night. I feel his arms holding me from behind and I now just realize I'm still in my bikini.

Luu: you can't look so hot and expect me not to be upset

I slowly smile and he kisses my neck. I can't wait to see how yummy he'll look tomorrow. Too bad Brian has asked Siphos to be his best man but all I know is my man will be the one looking the best.

Me: babe do you trust me?

I say turning around and scanning for his eyes. He sighs.

Luu: I know you wouldn't disrespect me and sleep with any man Tumsa, I trust you more than I trust myself

I smile and capture his lips with a kiss.

Luu: I wish I was the one getting married tomorrow

He smirks sliding his hand down to my ass. I giggle.

Me: our time will come baby

I feel his bulge poking my thighs and I giggled.

Me: I suggest you get going Mr

I say pulling out of his arms. It's late and I don't want the girls finding out that I've

been getting laid while they're sleeping wet.

Luu: I want you

He softly squeezes my boob and I moan.

Me: we have a long day tomorrow Luu and I don't wanna walk like I'm paralysed tomorrow

He chuckles. He knows what he's capable of. I wanna look good in that dress tomorrow.

Luu: OK, I love you

Me: I love you more

I kiss him for the last time and walk him out then head to Yemi's room.

Sigh.

This has been the longest night of my life. I can already hear tomorrows wedding bells. I'm super excited.

Lindiwe your day is near.

~

Like Comment and Share

~

Why is it that we losing likes and comments guys? Have y'all lost interest? If the story is boring please tell me so I can start with a new one. I hope y'all are on my new page. The reason why I'm not posting is lack of likes

~

[06/20, 05:35] Snr: INSERT 129~

.

.

Lindiwe's POV~

Tears softly rolled down my cheeks as I walked down that beautiful aisle. My heart was beating both fast and slow. They all looked so beautiful. Here is the day Lindiwe. Your day has finally arrived. Today you've become both a mother, a daughter in law , a wife, a friend and even a sister. Today is the day. If I look back into my past and see what I've been through I don't think I wouldn't

have made it without God. Here I am, the crazies girl in the world talking about God. Yeah I might be dramatic, over exaggerating And all but I still look up to this man who gives me breath every single day. Three years from here I was just a young high school girl who got raped by her best friends boyfriend and thought her life had come to an end. Then I met Brian. The man who took my breath away and gave peace to my stubborn soul. He swept me off my feet and showed me what real love is. He grasped me right out of the roots of life and brought me into a world of fantasies and joy. Ever since I met this nothing I've

seen nothing but joy, my life became a blessing. You might be thinking this is the crazy Lindiwe speaking again but nah, this is my testimony. I come here in front of both God and my family and give my heart and soul to this man. This man sent from above to make my life nothing but beautiful. At a young age I fell in love and still at a young age I'm getting married. My heart is at peace and my face is lightened up by a smile. I can't stop smiling at the blessings God has shone upon my life. He gave me a beautiful daughter who is the exact photocopy of me and I know there's yet more blessings to come. Today I come

before God to vow my time, life and everything to this man who has captured my heart. I've seen my blessings and I've found my soulmate now I know for sure there's nothing more to ask. I look on my left and there stood my beautiful best friend looking beautiful and even more beautiful as always. The best friend who stood by me through thick and thin. Sacrificed her all for my sake and the sake of my baby, believed in me and never missed a chance to shove me with love and patience. She's the bestest friend one can ever ask for, she's more than a friend. She's my sister. I look on my right and there stood my little

munchkin. My little bundle of joy and more tears gush down my cheeks. She's so beautiful. My first child. She might be a product of rape but my eyes doesn't see that, I see my life in that child. She had my heart the day I found out I was pregnant with her in my womb. Being a mother at a young age has taught me a lot. It has taught me patience, patience and patience. I've learnt to wait and give my all in what I do, my little bundle of joy gave me hope and faith that there is surely light at the end of the tunnel. I look at my beautiful mother and more tears fill my eyes. I'm glad I wore water proof make up, because without this

courageous woman there's nothing I can think of that I would've done without her. She stood by me since day one of my life and still believed in me when I fell pregnant. My sister Tebogo, I love her so much and I know surely one day she too shall find her soulmate. We had a rough patch but eventually it all worked out. I scan for Jason and smiles at me giving me the reassurance that I've been waiting for. My heart takes a triple double speed beat when I glance at my soon to be husband. I quickly stop looking at him before I faint right here on this aisle. We'll get to his handsome face later. I clutch hard onto my father's

arm and he kisses my hands with a smile. It is every fathers dream to give their daughter away to the one they are on love with and today my father is giving me away. He's also been with me through it all. Although we had our ups and downs and of course baba gave me a lecture about sex before marriage and even made me stay away from Brian for a whole month but eventually he pulled through. He trusted me and I'm happy to be his daughter. OK enough about the serious stuff. Lets talk about my dress, Bra God....my dress is the ultimate bomb that bombed Nagasaki!!! This dress cost me millions and my heart is

finally at peace. I bet you tomorrow's headlines would be my dress. It's the most beautiful dress I've ever set my eyes on and I wish the whole world saw me. Its a white body hugging boob tubed dress with a mermaids tale and believe me when I say it's long. It's so sparkly and yes my beautiful friend blessed me with her diamonds, so yeah my dress is covered in real queen of diamonds. Of course the media is here and I made sure they have my wedding on every channel of the news because this is my day and it has to be special. I'm no celebrity but believe me when I say at the end of this wedding, I sure will

be a celebrity. OK that's just me being dramatic again. Remind me to get rid of that personality because I am now officially Mrs Cele.

My father places my hands into Brian's hands and kisses my cheeks.

Baba: take care of her and please help her and support her. I know my daughter is a handful but I also know she's the sparkle to your darkness.

He kisses me again and takes his seat.
The pastor stands up and I now look up to the most (listen carefully)
**HANDSOME MAN ON PLANET EARTH
AND BEYOND.**

My lips curve into a beautiful smile and I swear the Diamonds on this dress looks just as beautiful as his eyes. He's so deeply lost in my soul and I so badly want to take him right now. I've never seen such a good looking man like him in my whole entire life. His suit is dark black with a touch of white and red which is obviously the handkerchief in his pocket and the crisp white shirt he is wearing. He looks so neat and so clean I want to eat him up right now. His hair is neatly cut and his beard is trimmed.

Fara Lawd I need prayers.

Pastor: Dearly Beloved, today we...

I couldn't help it I found myself cupping

his face and indulging into his lips, God Brian has never looked so handsome. I couldn't help it. We heard murmurs and ooohs and aaahs but I'm sure y'all know Lindiwe very well by now she don't give a damn. I kissed my man passionately and he smiled onto my lips.

Pastor: oh uh I'm afraid we haven't gotten to that part yet

People laughed and I finally let go of his lips. But I wanted this part to end already, I've never been so eager to kiss him like this. I looked at Tumisani and she giggled then winked. She knows her crazy friend too well.

Pastor: we shall proceed. We've gathered here today on this beautiful day to celebrate with our Lord the uniting with two wonderful souls. Their love today is going to be strengthen with such a bond that only death shall do them apart.

OK, this is gonna take longer than expected. I won't bore you with the long speech the dear pastor gave so let me fast forward. The Pastor blessed us and we said our own vows and yes I prepare my speech well. Well, Brian's one was better than mine because he made me cry so hard my eyes pained after wards. We did the vows and inserted the ring

and yes there was no bitch objecting my wedding I made sure all his exes weren't even on the list. And also I gave all his exes names to the security so they wouldn't be let in. Call me crazy and I would gladly take the compliment. He knew what he was getting himself into when he fell for me. OK enough about my crazy self. So yes we took so much pictures and got congratulated by a thousand people. We then all went to where the actually wedding fun is taking place. The Cape Town garden. The media took more pictures and the celebration was beautiful. The setting was the bomb and Lord I pray Brian

doesn't check his bank account tonight because he's gonna be so pissed. This arrangement of getting the place was a couple of millions and I don't even wanna get started on the high service, I made sure to get very qualified chefs. I didn't want my guests to eat bad food on my special day.

Thando: mama, you look beautiful like a queen

She says jumping into Brian's arms as we were taking the mini family photo.

Me: hmm really baby, I look beautiful just like my princess. You look cute.

She was in her baby pink princess puffy

dress and she looked so cute with ankle white socks and ankle boots and her hair was done by the best of them all, my hairdresser. So was my hair. We hugged and took a lot of pictures and then it was time to take pictures with the friends and yeah of course I took a pic with my BFF first

Tumisani: Mrs Cele

She giggles kissing my cheek. I smile bright and hug her tightly.

Me: My tumsa tumsa, Luu's queen and the love of his love

Tumisani: Brian's wife, The queen of the Cele's and the daughter in law of the

most high Cele's, Brian's heart

She laughs and kissed each other again.

I love this girl.

Tumisani: you look beautiful Chommie

She smiles. I giggle.

Me: you look beautiful too

She was in a black and white body hugging off the shoulder dress which is unique from all the other brides maids and I'm sure we all know why. We took pics together and then went to the ceremony hall where all the family and friends speeches were being done and of course the food as well and it was fun. I cried a lot and laughed a lot. Brian kept

smiling at me and I loved how his eyes sparkled for my beauty. That's why I married him. He loves me.

Brian: Did I tell you how beautiful you look Mrs me

I smiled at pecked his lips.

Me: for the thousand time yes, Mr Cele
He wraps his arms around me and we clap hands as my baby takes the stage.

Thando: Attention Please!!!

She screams through the mic and everyone laugh. I doubt she knows how loud that thing is.

Thando: Gogo come

She calls my mother and my mother laughs while getting up. Did I tell you how beautiful everyone here looks. From guests to setting to food. Everything is perfect. I have a smile plastered on my face and I'm happy.

Thando: this song is dedicated wait, Gogo is it the right word?

She whispers to my mother but the whisper ends up coming through the speakers. Everyone laughs at my cute princess and I smile.

Brian: your daughter is life itself

He smiles looking at her and I giggle. Life itself indeed.

Thando: yes, dedicated to the most beautiful woman, wife, mother and sister in the whole wide world. She's my rock and my strength and mama we love you so much!! and you too daddy Brian!

She yells again and I laugh. They start singing and I gasp as tears rush down my cheeks. I've never heard such a beautiful small voice in my whole entire life. I never even knew my baby can sing so well. Brian wipes my tears and kisses me. They sing perfect by Ed Sheeran and take my breath away.

Brian: she has a talent

He stands up and claps for her and so

does Luyanda and everyone else follow.
I couldn't have asked for a better family.
God blessed me with such wonder
people and I shall be forever grateful.

Brian: I love you Mrs Cele

Me: I love you more Mr Cele

He kisses me softly on the lips and
holds me tightly for my heart is in his
hold.

~

Like, Comment and Share

~

Forgive me if I've mixed the surnames
up, i don't quite remember them all.

I apologize for my disappearance.

[06/20, 05:35] Snr: INSERT 130~

.

.

.

.

ONE WEEK LATER~

Sipho's POV~

I get into my office and there's an envelope on my table. I slowly place my things down and grab the envelope.

It's been a week since my good friend Brian's wedding and I was happy for him, he finally has what he has always

wanted. I saw it in his eyes that day when we met Lindiwe at the club for the first time and immediately I knew he was in love. I'm happy that he's building both a future and a family something I should start doing. I need to start becoming more serious with my life and stop pushing everything aside. I need to start focusing on my handsome son and his beautiful mother. I'm very happy to finally have a son who will take after me and be the best that I didn't become. I'll forever shower my son with love for all the days of my life. He means the world to me. My relationship with Thandokazi is very stable. We've learnt to

communicate with each other and talk things through. I've learnt that she's trying her best to be a better person and that's all that matters. Everything takes time. I slowly open the envelope and the first word that I see is Ashley's name. She's been on my neck since day one and I can't stand her any longer. I've ended things with her many times but she just keeps coming back and it's really becoming a pain in the ass.

* Ashley*

Hi Siphon, I've figured that you are too busy and more focused on your little family. I've figured that you have feelings for me but you're too afraid to

admit it because of your little mistress and that bastard of a son that isn't even yours (chuckle). I love you Siphon. I love you with every muscle in my body and I think it's best that we have a little space from each other. I've resigned from work and I'm moving out of town for a few days. I'm going to visit my parents and maybe sort out my head. But the truth is, I'm two months pregnant and yes, it's yours. I didn't wanna tell you face to face because you wouldn't believe me but hopefully these pregnancy test results will confirm your doubt. I love you and I promise to come back and fight for our love. I want you all to

myself and nothing more and I promise you, I will get what I want. I'm hoping that our baby is a girl because then she can look exactly like me. I'm sure you would love that because I know you love me. I'll be back, babe.

Love

Ashley~

I breath heavily and I feel like my body is on fire. I remove my tie and unbutton my shirt. I pull out the other papers in the envelope and indeed the results confirm that she's two months pregnant. I chuckle deeply. There's a huge possibility that the baby is mine because

I'm the only man she's been sleeping with for the past few months. I don't know what to do now. Just when I thought things were getting better and I would finally have peace, now this happens. What will I tell Thandokazi, she'll literally Kill Ashley. Now the bitch is pregnant.

I quickly pick up my phone and call Ziggler. I need to find her one way or the other. She's carrying my child and I need to make sure that it's really truthfully mine. I have a little bit of doubt in me but I don't know if my faith is enough. But it's better than nothing.

Me: Ziggler man, I need a favour

Ziggler: dude I'm kinda busy right now

Me: Ziggler please, I really need your help

I say pacing up and down my office. I'm panicking and I don't know what to think or what to do.

Ziggler: shoot

Me: I need you to find Ashley

Ziggler: that psycho girlfriend of yours?

He chuckles. Yes I've figured Ashley is psycho and delusional. She thinks I'm in love with her but actually I hate her right now.

Me: yes her, find Ashley man, please.

Track her down or something but find her and when you do, send our men to go and get and bring her to the warehouse

Ziggler: anything else?

Me: make sure you don't hurt her

I say with my eyes closed and breathing slowly now. I don't wanna hurt her and then later find out that she's really carrying my own blood. That baby is innocent.

Ziggler: got it

I hanged up and grab my stuff and left the office. I can't concentrate after this. I just wanna be close to my son. I just

wanna hold him and kiss him, I can't think straight. I thought everything would go back to normal and I would be happy but no. Maybe I'm being punished. Maybe God is punishing me for hurting Tumisani, she was innocent and I wasted her love and precious time. I gave her false hope and I'll forever regret it. That woman loved me and I just broke everything apart because of confusion. She loved me so much that when I was sick in hospital she organized my surgery and paid everything with her own money, she risked a lot for me and I will forever respect her for that. That woman right

there is the true definition of a real woman. She loved me carelessly, I know she would've taken a bullet for me at any cost if we had to be in such a situation. She would've done anything for me out of the love that she had for me and I ruined it all. I'm such a fool. But it is what it is. That's life. And now I gotta find my feet and move on.

I get into the house and find Thandokazi breastfeeding Andile. I smile. They look so cute together.

Kazi: babe why are you back? did you forget something?

She asks raising an eyebrow and Andile

opened his eyes looking up at me. I smiled again and kissed his head.

Me: I can't concentrate at work so I'd rather spend the day with you two.

I peck her lips and she smiles.

Kazi: you look tensed

I chuckle.

Me: wanna help me loosen up?

I smirk and she giggles. She's really good in bed though. She knows her stuff in bed and I'm always satisfied.

Kazi: let me put Andile to bed than we can play

She winks and I chuckle.

Me: how about we call a nanny and go out, just you and me. I wanna spoil you.

She smiles and I kiss Andile's head and take him into my arms.

Kazi: he's too young to be with a nanny, I don't trust a stranger with my son. Can I call my cousin, she's in town?

Me: are you sure she won't mind? or should I rather call Buhle?

I say holding Andile up and he slightly smiled at his daddy. He's so adorably, my little champion.

Kazi: Buhle is probably busy. My cousin Nina, won't mind

Me: ain't you want babe

She kisses my cheek and walks up the stairs to freshen up and also make that call. I haven't spoiled her since we got together and now that Ashley is out of town and my people are looking for her, maybe we're not really in any danger. I upped the security here because I know for a fact that Ashley is crazy and she would try anything to get what she wants.

Me: hello boy!! boy boy, champion wam, my little soccer player neh, no you'll play rugby...you'll buffed just like daddy, big and strong

He just brightly smiled at me and the joy on my face was priceless. I love my son

to the moon and back.

Kazi: you guys look so adorable, my cousin will be here in about half an hour She kisses my cheek and sits on my lap with Andile in both our arms. I've always dreamt of such moments and Ashley wants to take it away from me, never. I hold her waist with the one arm and she snuggles into my chest with Andile into her chest.

Kazi: I love you so much Siph

She whispers and I smile. Andile holds her face and starts wiggling in her arms.

Me: I love you too Thandokazi

She looks up at me and smiles, I bring

our lips closer and softly kiss her on the lips for the longest time ever. When Andile cries then we finally stop and laugh, he just wants attention.

Kazi: your baby is an attention seeker

Me: just like his daddy

I kiss his cheek and he smiles again. We chuckle. A while later there's a knock at the door and I get up to open. I find a very young well not that young maybe round about her early twenties, girl standing in front of our door. She's wearing a body hugging above the knee white dress and believe me when I say she's thick. Her thighs looked so smooth

and her eyes were so brown and beautiful. She's really pretty.

Me: Hi you must be Nina, nice to meet you

I smile and shake her hand softly as our eyes lock in an awkward kind of way. She smiles as well.

Nina: nice to meet you too Sipho

I'm honored that she knows my name but who doesn't. I invite her in and take her to the lounge where she hugs Kazi and kisses Andile. She's really pretty.

Her ass be popping out of that dress like damn, she has long braids on and her yellowbone skin makes her even more

elegant. I'm swayed by her beauty but God forgive me for admiring.

Nina: ncooh he's so cute

She says taking Andile into her arms and sitting down on the couch.

Kazi: thank you for your help cuz, I really appreciate it

Nina: no need to thank me, this is my little nephew

She smiles and I watch as her dimples pop out. cute.

Kazi: baby, let's go

Kazi says after briefing Nina on what to do and how to do it and all that stuff.

Me: I hope he's a good boy

She smiles and looks at Andile

Nina: don't worry about him, I'll take very good care of him....right Nana

She smiles at Andile and I couldn't help but chuckle. She's already attached to him so easily. I grab my car keys and take Kazi's hand into mine. We drive to a hotel and book in. I need the day to explore her body and make sweet sweet love to her. We haven't been intimate in a while because of work and she's always busy taking care of Andile and i miss her pussy so much . I close the hotel room door and the place is really

nice. Huge bed with a couch and even a balcony for the beautiful view.

Kazi: so all this just to have privacy with me?

She smirks and I chuckle.

Me: yes, I miss my woman

She smirks.

Kazi: I'll be right back

She kisses my cheek and walks to the bathroom. She's in a large coat and I'm tempted to find out what's hidden underneath. I quickly take off my shirt and my shoes but before I could remove my pants she walks in dressed in a black lingerie with hills on. I breath

heavily and feel my member slowly harden between my legs. She smirks and slowly models towards me

Me: I would love to rip that off you and fuck you badly

She giggles and I pull her closer to me for one arm.

Kazi: what are you waiting for?

I grit my teeth and push her softly down to the bed. Here goes a whole day of fucking. I quickly rip the lingerie off her and her hills as well and separate her legs slowly. I pull off my pants and go down to her nunu. I softly kiss it and she moans softly. I blow air into her nunu

and kiss it again and she moans again. I firstly lick her and then without warning I stick my tongue deep inside her VJ and she gasps grabbing the sheets. I move my tongue slowly and pleasureably. She moans louder and louder but I keep going deeper and deeper with my tongue. She kicks her back up after her third orgasm and I finally pull out and go up to her lips making her taster herself in my mouth. She moans as my hand travels to VJ and I stick my finger deeply inside her. She wraps her arms around me and closes her eyes as the pleasure overtakes her. I pull my fingers out and pull out of the kiss so quickly that she

screams loudly when I bang hard into her pussy.

Kazi:Sipho.....aaaahh baby....

She moans as I bang hard into her small hole and the pleasure makes my blood boil.

We have sex all over the place and I love the way this moment is filled with so much pleasure and lust. We have sex in the shower and in the bath and then back to the bed again.

Kazi: aaahh one more baby....yes!!

She screams as her orgasm gets closer and closer and she digs her nails deep into my skin and I pound harder into her

so hard that we both hit climax and it has her shaking beneath me. She gasps out of breath and I collapse on top of her. Our foreheads are together and her arms are wrapped around me, I kiss her nose and then her lips and she smiles.

Me: I love you

Kazi: I heart you

She giggles and I slowly get off her. I lay next to her but she gets off the bed and walks to the phone where she dials room service and orders some wine and food then she comes back to the bed and lays flat on my back. Her weight feels warm against my skin. Her hands

strolls down to my member and she grabs it into her hand and starts massaging it. I groan.

Kazi: like that?

I chuckle with a groan and she kisses my back. I groan even louder and I so badly want to fuck her again.

Me: I want you

I groan and she gets off me, I attack her with a kiss and drag her to the floor where I have her on her knees with her ass in the air towards me. I bang into her from behind and she gasps.

I go in slowly and pleasure both her and myself until I cum in her ass and pull put

when I hear the knock on the door. I carry her to the bed and place her down then wrap a towel around my waist. I walk to the door and the young girl's jaw drops. I chuckle.

Me: thank you, I'll get that

I grab the trolley and push it all the way to the bed and Kazi sits up. I pour wine for the both of us and she sits on my lap. I kiss her breasts and she smiles. She's beautiful. I love making love to her. I love her.

Me: a toast to us, our love and our son we click glasses and I softly kiss her on the lips and she wraps her arms around

my neck. The kiss is passionate and slow. Everything feels so good and so right. Being with her feels right and warm. Having sex with her is the best thing ever and I wouldn't mind doing it every single day of my life.

Next thing I hear are gun shots and the glass door of the balcony breaking and Thandokazi screaming in fear. I pull her down and we both lay flat on the ground opposite the bed as the gun shots keep going. She breaths heavily and I hold her hand into mine. I have no gun with me right now and my phone is far from reach.

Kazi: babe...

She heaves and I kiss her hand to calm her down.

Me: sssh relax my love

The gunshots stop after a while and slowly crawl to where my phone is located. I grab my phone and call Lwazi.

Me: dude, track me down

Lwazi: you're in danger man, I'm coming

Me: who are they?

Lwazi: I'll let you know when I get there, just keep calm

He hangs up and I drag myself and Kazi to the bathroom along with our clothes and I lock the door.

Me: are you OK?

I say getting dressed and she also quickly gets dressed.

Kazi: who are they Siphos? what do they want?

Me: I think they're after us and they were planning on killing us both or one of us.

Kazi: my baby!!

She gasps and grabs my phone panicking. I also start panicking while she dials Nina's number and our breathing become heavy. She puts the call on loudspeaker.

Nina: Kazi!!! oh nkosi yam where are you!!?

Kazi: Nina what happened, where's
Andile!?

Nina: they they broke into the house
Kazi...

She cries and is unable to speak. My heart shatters as I sense there's trouble on the way. Kazi starts shaking as tears rolled down her cheeks. I hold her against my chest as she starts breathing heavily.

Nina: Andile has been shot....!!!! help!!!

She cries and Kazi screams dropping the gun to the floor and burying her head into my chest as she sobbed loudly.

Kazi: my baby!!! my baby Siphho, my

baby!!

She cries and I try to be strong for the both of us. I want to cry as well but I can't. I have to be strong for my son! I hear the door burst open and I know it's Lwazi. I hold Kazi against my chest as she sobs and we both walk out the bathroom.

Lwazi: we've already taken Andile to the hospital, let's go

He says to the both of us and we quickly rush out that room marching towards the elevator. As soon as we got into that car in the parking lot I drove like a crazy maniac. I drove as fast as I could

towards the hospital with my heart beating hard against my chest. I can't lose another baby yet again. I can't lose another child. I can't. I refuse to lose my baby. I refuse. We rush out the car as soon as I park outside the hospital and we both rush to the receptionist with Kazi still crying.

Me: where's my son!!?

I roared at the receptionist and she's shocked and scared at the same time.

Lady: the doctor is still examining him sir

She heaves and I chuckle.

Me: where!!?

I roar and she flinches. She points to the theater room and I march towards the room quickly but before I can even enter the nurses grab me and pull me backwards as well as Thandokazi.

Kazi: no no let me see my son, please!!!

She cries.

Nurse: no madam, the doctor is still busy madam

Kazi: fuck that, I want my son. Siphos tell them to bring my son, I want my son

She cries pushing the nurses but they didn't budge. I have to be strong. Seeing her like this brings back so many memories of how Tumisani was broken

after our baby had died. Seeing how a mother cries for her child makes me realize how broken tumisani really was. Tears rolled down my cheeks as all those memories flood my mind. She collapses to the floor and cries heavily. I sit down next to her and pull her into my arms.

Me: everything will be okay baby, it'll be alright...

Kazi: I want my son Siphoh, my baby. My son!!

She cries and I hold her hard against my chest. We cry together until Nina comes in crying as well with blood on her shirt.

She must've had him in her arms when he got shot. She sits on the floor with us and cries as well.

Nina: sisi I'm sorry!! he,
he....they...they...I'm sorry...

She hesitates while crying and my heart breaks further. I can't lose another Child. I refuse.

Kazi: I want my baby Siphoh, my baby...

She softly breaks apart in my arms and I'm once again helpless. More memories crumble my poor heart and I find myself breaking down. I refuse to accept this.

~

Like, Like and Comment Guys, please!!

~

[06/20, 05:35] Snr: INSERT 131~

.

.

.

.

Sipho's POV~

I slowly opened my eyes and immediately I felt the pain in my bones and the pain was excruciating. My eye lids felt tired and so was my body. As I tried to move my body I felt something heavy laying on my shoulder and I then realized that we're in hospital. Kazi is

resting on my shoulder and from the look of things we've been here since yesterday and it's now morning. The doctors haven't told us anything and worried would be an understatement. Kazi has been crying all night and the burning pain in my heart doesn't even enable me to be strong for the both of us. They've been operating since last night and I'm not sure if the operation was successful or not. Nina left late last night to freshen up and clean up the mess at the house. I can't even begin to explain what I'm experiencing right now, I don't know if this is punishment or karma. As they say Karma is a bad bitch.

Or maybe I'm not bound to be happy after all.

Me: babe..

I say softly nudging her and she quickly wakes up in a fright.

Kazi: is he alright!?! She asks with puffy eyes pleading for mercy and my heart breaks further. I feel my heart tear apart and I feel even more helpless.

Me: babe, you have to be strong OK?

I say in a shaky voice and she breaths slowly sitting up right and bowing her head into her palms. The sun is shining bright outside and it scares me to think of what's gonna happen through this

day. My phone rings and it's Lwazi. I stand up and excuse myself.

Kazi: who is it?

She asks as I am about to walk to somewhere more private.

Me: I'll be back babe

She chuckles and I slowly walk a bit further than her and answer.

Me: speak

Lwazi: we found her and yes, Ashley is pregnant with your baby

Me: who is responsible for the attack?

Lwazi: there's a lot of links connected to this attack Bruh, We haven't found the

predator

Me: who are the links?

Lwazi: your enemies

He breaths and I now have some kind of fear.

Me: who?

Lwazi: I don't think the attacker is Ashley because she was out of the city when this happened and we actually found her at her parents place. I doubt it is her

Me: Lwazi what are you saying, if it's not her then who is it!?

I roared into the phone with my veins popping out of my forehead and my

muscles. Anger strikes me and I can't seem to control it.

Lwazi: I'll gather more information, I'll question Ashley and make her talk

Me: if you find the person tie them up and torture them until I get there

I hang up and walk to where Kazi is seated and I now see Tumisani holding a crying Thandokazi, my heart skips a beat.

Tumisani: Kazi please don't cry, everything will be fine

She says holding back tears and I now see the pain in her eyes, the same pain she felt not so long ago when we lost

our baby. The baby that we didn't even get a chance to see yet here she is supporting the same person who took away her right to be a mother for the first time. This is truly a God given Woman. My heart scatters into a million pieces and I can't control my tears. It slowly rolls down my cheeks and I feel strong arms hold me into a brotherly hug.

Yanda: He's gonna be alright man, don't worry.

He assures me and I slowly sink to the floor like the helpless man that I am. I failed as a father to protect my own son. I failed badly.

Kazi: I failed as a mother Tumisani, I failed.

She cries into her arms. Tumisani hugs her tightly and I now see tears rolling down her cheeks. This must be so hard for her. All the memories come pouring down and I later hear her break into a soft cry. She stands up and rushes out the passage and Yanda follows screaming out her name. I hate myself for this. I hate myself so badly. I sit next to her and she holds my hand.

Kazi: I'm sorry Siphon, I'm so sorry.

She cries and I can't help but wonder if she really means it. It's true when they

say you won't know what the person is going through unless you've been there yourself. Thandokazi didn't know the pain she put Tumisani through, the heart break and trauma she caused us and here I am again back to the square one.

Me: do you now see the pain you put that poor woman through?

Kazi: I'm so sorry!! Please, I'm ssorry...

She clings onto my shirt and messes it up with her tears. I chuckle. I can't believe this is happening to me.

A while later Tumisani and Yanda returns and she looks much more calmer now, she sits next to me and

hugs me warmly. Her hugs always made me feel better in some kind of way. I felt care free and positive. I felt hopeful and faithful as she hugged me. My son will make it. I know he will.

Me: Thank you

She nods and squeezes my hand. My heart skips a beat when I now see the doctor heading towards us. We all jump up and startle the poor doctor.

Doc: Ndlovu

We shake hands and he breaths.

Me: is he alright doctor?

Kazi: will be baby he fine doc please tell me!?

She says almost breaking down again.

Doc: this has been to hardest operation I've ever had to undergo for all my years of being a doctor. Your baby is a fighter and many never recover from this tragic experiences. But what I'm trying to say is that the operation was successful and he is slightly out of danger but there is a problem

He looks at us and Kazi heaves.

Me: what's the problem!?

Doc: although the operation was successful. he lost a lot of blood and we need blood urgently or else his condition will get worse and he could....

Kazi: no, no, we'll get blood, but will he be fine doctor!?

She says with pleading eyes.

Doc: after the blood is given, he'll be perfectly fine but for now he's still under some conditions

My head spins and I breath.

Me: when can we donate the blood. I'm ready!

I say confidently and the doctor nods.

Doc: well let's go get some test done so we can check the blood type and....

Me: there's nothing to check doc, he's my son.. He has my blood, let's get this

done with so we can take our son home
please!

I say grabbing the doctor anger boiling
in my veins.

Tumisani: Siphon please calm down, let
the doctor do his job

Siphon: no Tumisani, there's no need for
testing, he's my son!

I roared and let go of the Doc.

Kazi: uh uh uhmm baby...uh let them
take my blood

She says with her eyes wandering all
over the place. I chuckled.

Me: no, he's my son and I'll donate blood

for him any day that comes, let's go

I say to the doctor and he nods.

Kazi: uh babe, wh....

Me: kazi stay here!!

I say walking away with the doctor and the confusion in her eyes shocked me.

What on earth is wrong with her. This is the life of our son we're talking about here and she still wants to think about things, that we don't have time for.

We get to the doctors office and he pulls out blood from me and sends it to the lab which makes me even more pissed because he doesn't trust that I'm his father.

Doc: sir you have to understand, this is the procedures of the hospital, we can't just donate blood to an infant like that without testing it first

Me: well those results better come out fast because if anything happens to my son, I'll kill you

I walk out of his office and back to the bench. Kazi jumps up as she sees me and she's all of a sudden nervous.

Kazi: did, did.. did anything happen?

She says with hesitation and I now realize she's tired. Maybe that's why she's so jumpy.

Me: baby I think you should go home

.

Tumisani's POV~

No woman would want to see their child being hurt. At least some people got the chance to see their children unlike some of us who were deprived of that right.

My heart bled for Kazi when I heard what happened, it hurt so much to hear that such a thing would happen to such an innocent child who knows nothing about the world. It also brought back a lot of memories of my own experiences. This all clearly shows that no one knows the pain a mother goes through. I'm hurt by this sudden outburst and only a cruel person would be happy for such a thing.

Even though Kazi took away my baby, I still feel her pain and sympathies with her because I know what she's going through. I also feel hurt and I'm scared and worried about Sipho because this is having a big effect on his life both mentally and physically. I know deep down he is breaking inside. He's been through so much and I fear for the future.

It's been a while since the doctor went with the results and we're just waiting for him to come back. I took the day off work to be here for them and support them.

Yanda: my love

He says holding my hand and giving me the cup of coffee after giving Siphon and Kazi one too.

Me: are you OK?

He nods and kisses my hand. Life is too unexpectable. We can never predict what the future holds. Such small innocent children are suffering right in our midst and we can't do anything else but trust in God. Because only he has the solution.

Yanda: Lindiwe is on her way

I nod and force a smile. It really hurts. My heart is in so much pains. This brought back so much memories of

when I lost my own baby. I was literally going crazy. I searched for my own child in my house like a mad person but I've moved on with God. It's life.

Doc: I've got the results

We all jump startled once again at his sudden appearance. I feel my breathing becoming heavy and my heart beating fast. I look Kazi and she has her head bound down.

Sipho: there's no need to read them, let's go donate the blood

He says about to walk but the doctor stops him. I heave. I flinch and my mind runs wild. Kazi silently breaks into a cry

and I now see the picture.

Doc: I'm sorry sir, the blood does not match. We've done the blood tests and tested both you and the baby but unfortunately it does not match and we did more tests but unfortunately we've come across the fact that you're not his biological father

The doctor says and Sipho's face turns red. He bites his bottom lip so hard it bursts and starts bleeding. His hands grow into a big fist and my heart starts racing. It feels like the clock had stopped ticking and the world stopped spinning.

Sipho: what did you just say?

Tears rolled down his cheeks and Kazi fell onto the floor crying. Sipho's phone rang and we all froze.

Yanda: babe, are you ok ?

My body was shaking and my heart beat as fast as lightning. I felt a lump in my throat and my head got dizzy. Next thing I hear is Kazi screaming as Sipho grabbed her roughly and my heart beat accelerated.

Yanda: Tumisani!!

My eyes rolled to the back and I felt my legs give in. Lights out.

~

Like, Comment and Share.

~

I'm not begging no more.

[06/20, 05:35] Snr: INSERT 132~

.

.

.

.

.

Luyanda's POV~

There is too much choas at the moment and I feel like I'm going crazy. My mind is not thinking straight and if I could explain my heart then I doubt there is a

word in the dictionary that can describe my heart right now. I can't believe what my eyes and ears are hearing and I can't help but feel sorry for Siphos. Tumisani fainted and the doctor took her into a check up and they haven't come out for almost an hour now. I'm panicking and I just hope she's fine along with Kazi's baby who is not actually really Siphos baby. I don't know what this means because from my understanding this baby was the reason Tumisani and Siphos broke up and I would swear Tumisani loved this dude with all her heart just like she loved me. I'm a man and I can understand these things.

When she lost the baby she was shattered and I know she yearned for his love and his presence and it hurt me deeply because I've always wished that she would yearn for me back. But instead she wanted Sipho and I was just being a good friend by being there for her because they were both shattered at the time and when they finally moved on they looked so happy together and so in love that now come to think of it I'm not really sure if she has stopped loving him or she just hid those feelings because she didn't wanna ruin his relationship with his son. I'm worried because I've also hurt Tumisani once upon a time

and I hate myself for that but I also deserve a second chance. I fear that she would want to get back to him because they weren't supposed to break up now come to think of it to baby isn't even his. My mind is just all over the place and I don't know what to do.

On the other hand I'm standing in the hospital passage trying to stop Sipho from killing Kazi with his bare hands. He looks like he'll murder her if I gave him the chance and we don't want that right now. His veins are popping out of his muscles and his forehead and he's both pissed and emotional. Kazi is shaking with tears streaming down her cheeks

and I feel helpless.

Sipho: you betrayed me Thandokazi!!
you fucken betrayed me!!

He roared and tried to push me from holding him but with the strength that I have, I had to stop him.

Kazi: please forgive me Sipho...I,
I'm...I'm sorry!!

She cried loudly on the floor with her hands shaking just as much as her body was.

Sipho: fuck you, you made me believe that he was my son but all along he wasn't even mine, you made me fall in love with him and later find out he's not

mine, you're evil, you such a witch....you....

He pushed me hard and marched towards her and choked the life out of her. She gasped for air but he kept choking her with tears streaming down both their eyes. I snapped out of it and quickly pulled him off her and she coughed loudly.

Me: come on man, she's not worth it

I tried to reason with him but seems like his anger has taken over his whole body.

Sipho: She betrayed me!!

He roared punching the wall and his fist turned a bright red as I felt the blood

near to his veins. I held him back and he slowly breathed. She wailed and wailed on the floor until her cousin came rushing in and held her against her chest.

Nina: What happened Kazi, where's Andile?

She said worried with glassy eyes. Kazi cried into her arms and she kept asking the same question.

Nina: what happened!!?

She cried softly and Kazi slowly stood up holding he tightly.

Kazi: I...I'm... I'm gonna go donate the blood to my son

She wiped her tears and Nina looked at

Sipho then Kazi then Sipho again.

Nina: Cuz you've just come from giving birth and they won't allow you to donate blood, Sipho is his father and he's more stronger than you and...

Kazi: Nina please let me.....Let me donate blood...my son, he...

She broke down again and Nina looked at Sipho confused. Sipho chuckled and walked away from us leaving us all in awe. Kazi cried louder and held onto her chest. I sighed. This is harder than I thought.

Kazi: we have to save my son Nina, he's not gonna leave me so soon, my son...

She wailed and Nina chuckled sadly.

Nina: you're weak Kazi, let S....

Kazi: you don't understand Nina, he..he's not the father!

She squealed and Nina gasped getting up immediately.

Nina: what!!!?

Her eyes popped out and she really looked shocked.

Nina: not the father!?

She asked and Kazi nodded shamefully with tears in her eyes. I cleared my throat.

Me: I'm gonna go get some coffee

I said walking away to the cafe.

Tumisani's Doctor hasn't come back yet and I hope it's nothing serious. Maybe she was just panicked and went into shock. I get to the cafe and order one coffee and a muffin. I haven't eaten all day and it's getting to the noon. I sit down on one of the benches and breath slowly as I indulged into my coffee and muffin. There's silence here and I could turn deaf at this silence. There is people but they ain't even speaking much. It feels like everyone has gone into their own zone. I guess the world of full of problems left right and center. I don't wanna go looking for Sipho because he

needs space. He needs space to breath and to think. He's going through a lot at the moment and he needs time to process it. This is a lot to sink in.

I feel someone sitting next to me and I quickly stop eating and look at my right. She smiles faintly. It's Thandokazi's cousin, Nina. I smile back and sip my coffee.

Nina: Hey

She sips on her own coffee and I swallow mine.

Me: hi, who did you leave her with?

I said referring to Kazi. She needs someone right now and the only person

good enough is family.

Nina: she's been taken to get her blood tested then we'll head home and freshen up then come back.

Me: hmm cool

I nod and chew more into my muffin without looking at her. I can't get my mind off Tumisani. I'm really worried about what'll happen next, what if she wants to break up with me?

Nina: you're in deep thoughts

She sighs. I chuckle.

Me: I'm just stressed, how are you feeling? Sorry for my manners I'm not in the right state of mind

Nina: I understand, I'm just praying that everything ends up fine. Are you a friend of Siphos?

She asks looking at me with those nice big bright eyes. I chuckle again. Too cute, just like Tumsa. The first time I met Tumisani she looked so cute it sent chills down my spine. I couldn't get her off my mind and it worried the hell out of me. I thought I was going nuts because as they say once a player always a player and yeah I was a player back then and players don't fall in love but I knew what I had for Tumisani was real love. I would never stop loving that woman. She's my heart.

Nina: are you OK?

She asks concerned and I snap out of it.
I smile cheekish just thinking about her.

Me: He's my girlfriend's friend

I say softly. She looks shocked.

Nina: you have a girlfriend!?! (gasp)
what was I thinking....a guy so yummy
single? never.

She mumbles under her breath and I
heard every word because there was no
noise here anyway. I chuckled.

Me: thank you, yes I have a girlfriend and
I love her with my all

She fakes a smile. So fake I can clearly

see it through her.

Nina: what's her name?

Me: Tumisani

She squints her eyes and looks at me weirdly then her eyes pop open and she gasps.

Nina: Tumisani as in.....Tumisani
Phakade the Matthews princess?

Me: ex Matthews princess and yes. How do you know her?

She chuckles and rolls her eyes.

Nina: who doesn't know, The Tumisani
Phakade queen of diamonds and the
richest female entrepreneur in SA. I'm a

journalist.

She smiles faintly and I smirk. I guess my baby is known world wide. Which is a good and bad thing.

Me: Impressive

I throw the coffee paper cup into the bin next to me and stretch.

Nina: I didn't catch your name?

She says with a flirtatious smile. I chuckle.

Me: Luyanda but you can call me Yanda

Nina: hmm how about I call you Luu

I frown then chuckle.

Me: no the only person who is allowed

to call me that is my wife

Nina: but I see no ring on that finger
which means you're not owned property

Me: I don't need a ring to show that I'm
taken but if you must know, I'm gonna
marry that girl

I smiled confidently and stood up, so did
Nina.

Nina: She's lucky

She says with gripped teeth and then
smiles and pushes her hair to the back.

Me: I'm the lucky one

Nina: shall we?

She starts walking in front of me giving

me a perfect view of her backside and Gosh she's trying too much. I've been there and I wouldn't wanna go there again, the only eyes I have is for my woman and no one else. She has a nice round ass though but Tumsa's ass is bigger and curvier and juicier oh damn just thinking about her is making me hard.

Nina: are you coming?

She smirks seductively turning around and caught my day dreaming about my woman but I guess she got the wrong message and thought I was fantasizing her ass. In her dreams. I chuckled.

Me: sure

We walked back to the bench we were all seated on and saw Kazi talking with the doctor.

Kazi: what do you mean someone had already donated blood for him!!

She yelled confused at the doctor and the doctor looked annoyed at her attitude.

Doc: Someone donated his type of blood not so long ago and the person wants us to keep it anonymous so don't worry madam we've also tested the blood and I must say you're very lucky, we're gonna do the blood donation now and save

your sons life.

He smiles to her and she gasps. I'm shocked. My heart skips a beat.

Nina: oh my gosh that's great news
Doctor, thank you so much , please
thank the person for us

She says happily and the doctor nods.

Kazi: uh uhm Thank you!

She says with tears rolling down her cheeks and she sat down with both excitement and sadness over flooding her heart.

Another doctor appeared and it looked like the one that took Tumisani in.

Doc: Phakade

Me: yes

Nina looked at me and the doctor then shook her head.

Doc: are you her relative ?

Me: I'm her brother

I lied and Nina gasped, I looked at her and she kept quite. What is her problem?

Doc: follow me

I followed the doctor to Tumisani's ward tears rolled down her cheeks as soon as she saw me then she broke in a smile while crying. I can never understand her weird emotions. She would sometimes

cry while laughing and then scold me while crying and all sorts of weird things. I love this woman. I rushed to her and pulled her into my arms and kissed her head.

Tumisani: Luu...I'm...

She smiled with tears in her eyes and I couldn't understand why she was so excited and overwhelmed. I became anxious.

Me: my love...

Doc: uh are you her brother or...

Tumisani: he's my boyfriend. She said excitedly. I chuckled. Woman ruined my plan. Th doctor giggled.

Doc: I'm letting this slide because you're becoming a father!

My heart skipped a double bridge and my eyes widened in shock. My palms got sweaty and I couldn't believe my ears. Tumisani broken in a cry with a smile once again and I cupped her cheeks.

Me: no...

Tumisani: yes...

She nodded happily.

Me: you lie!

I said with a shocked smile upon my face while shaking my head and she nodded assuringly. I gasped and pulled

her hard into my arms and hugged her tightly.

Tumisani: I'm gonna be a mother Luu!!

She cried and the joy in my heart was inexplicable. My heart was beating both fast and slow. My breathing was high and low, I felt like the mother nature has given me the world into my hands.

Me: I'm gonna become a father again!!?

I yelled happily and captured her lips into a passionate kiss. She held my neck and kissed me lovingly. I'm gonna become a father of two. I jumped up and punched the air as I felt all my problems being lifted off my shoulders, they

laughed and I giggled and captured her lips once again. The queen of my heart. The mother of my children and my happily ever after.

Tumisani: Luu let the doctor talk!

She giggled and I pecked her lips once again and the Doctor laughed.

Doc: you guys are so cute.

Congratulations

Tumisani: thank you Doc

I looked into her beautiful eyes and saw my whole life into her. I held tightly onto her hand as my other hand travel to our little munchkin. Well she's not even showing but hey my sperm is doing

wonders in there. I don't shoot blinds after all.

Doc: She's two weeks pregnant and what I would like for you to do is to take very good care of her and make sure you bring her here for every check up and scan and also no stressing please. Eat lots of fruit and healthy foods

She smiles.

Me: thank you Doc, I'll make sure to treat her like the queen she is

The Doc nodded and left me and my queen to ourselves after I had signed the discharge forms because she was perfectly fine and fainted because of

stress.

I kissed her cheeks and pulled her to a sitting position on my lap. She circled her arms around my neck and pecks my lips then runs her hand through my hair. I smile.

Me: you've made me the happiest man alive

I say with a smile on my face.

Me: I want to scream to the world and tell them I'm gonna be a father!! Thando will be so excited to have a little sibling to play with, and I'll buy them so many toys and make love to you every night and massage you and hmm baby I love

you!!

She giggles and I cup her face once again and indulge her sweet lips. She smiles.

Tumisani: I love you Luu, I'm so happy I'm gonna be a mother again babe I thought it was the end of me when I lost my first child but I guess God had many blessings coming for me. I love you Luu
She says with tears in her eyes again and I wiped them off.

Me: I don't want to see those tears ever again, me and you against the world baby, I'm all yours and forever will be. I promise to become a better man and

pay lobola soon before your brother
chops off my D**

She gasps and we laugh together. I'm
serious. I know for sure Dumisani
wouldn't hesitate to beat me up if I don't
do the right thing. That man loves his
sister like some kinda Goddess but hey
we all know our Tumsa is a Goddess.

Tumisani: Dumisani will be happy this
time, he's my twin and we understand
each other apart from him wanting to
babysit me 24/7 but hey he's my father.

I kiss her cheek and she licks her lips.

Oh God those eyes, I know those
eyes....I guess we both forgot about the

real world. Her eyes turned bubbly brown and so yummy I got hard. She licks her lips again and looks at me and I chuckle.

Me: you're horny.

She blushes and looks down shyly. I laugh.

Me: Fuck, you're so wet hmm baby yeah my hand had already traveled down their and she was moaning so softly it made me even more harder. She kissed me softly and slowly unbuttoned my shirt. The world doesn't exist now does it? I stuck my finger inside her and she moaned loudly as she roamed her

hands to my jeans and pulled apart the buttons.

Tumisani: Luu make love to me

She whispers in between the kiss and as soon as she grabbed my member in my pants the door sprung open and we both gasped getting up and quickly fixing ourselves. I looked up and chuckled.

Nina: I am so so sorry....I..uh ...uhm.

She hesitated and looked annoyed. The hell?

Tumisani: and you are?

She said in attitude and I wanted to laugh. My baby never wants to get interrupted when she's about to get laid

after so long. I miss her more. I smirked at her bitch mode.

Nina: uh I'm uh....Miss Phakade, nice to meet you...Nina Modiselle. Kazi's cousin
She says stretching out her hand for Tumsa to shake and she took it irritated.

Tumisani: you already know me

Nina: who doesn't

She mumbled and Tumisani shot her a look.

Tumisani: excuse me?

She said looking at her.

Nina: uh I said you're beautiful

Tumsa chuckled and showed her the

fakest smile I've ever seen. I chuckled. She held her waist and grabbed her purse.

Nina: Actually I came to let you guys know that Andile is getting well

Tumisani's eyes glowed and went glossy. My heart felt weird. I looked at her again and she was now crying.

Tumisani: what!

Nina: he got a donation from an anonymous blood donor

She wiped her tears and walked towards the door without even looking at my way. I sense a lot of emotions here.

Tumisani: to God be the glory

With that said she walks out and leaves me confused. I can't help but have this really weird feeling in my gut.

I hope this is not what I'm thinking...Tumisani?no she wouldn't....Not after what that bitch did to her! No.

~

Like, Comment and share

~

Hi people let me just address this issue again. Guys I've said it several times that I'm a high school student and I'm sure we all know how hectic high school could be, it's not like I'm ignoring this

page and not posting by purpose. My life is hectic on it's own and the only thing that keeps me sane is writing. I write because I love writing but I also have to make space for school. Some people are telling me that they losing interest in the story because I'm not posting and some are sending inboxes just to tell me to post like seriously guys do you think I just wake up everyday and not decide to post? Can we at least try to be realistic please, I'm not forcing anyone to stay if you feel like I'm boring then please make a leave because I don't mind writing for the few that really do care and understand.

Thank you.

Easter weekend is our date. Expect inserts tomorrow and onwards.

~

Admin

[06/20, 05:35] Snr: INSERT 133~

.

.

.

.

TWO WEEKS LATER

Tumisani's POV~

Orgasm after orgasm it went. My body

was on fire and so was the bed. He fucked me left right and center and I just couldn't get enough of him.

Me: aaah Luu harder...

I moaned and he went faster and faster hitting my spot every time. We've been at it all morning and I'm enjoying every inch of his body. I'm happy to be a mother and I'm so excited to hold my baby this time. I'm scared as well but I know for sure this time I won't let anything happen to my baby. Luu has been nothing but the best ever since he found out that I was pregnant. He treats me like the queen I am and I couldn't have asked for a better partner. I love

him so much. Yes I'm the one that donated blood to Andile because that baby is innocent and I'd hate myself if anything happened to him. He deserves to live and I would be a bad person if I let his be punished for his parents sins and come to think of it. Now that Siphos isn't really his biological father I'm worried. Honestly speaking Siphos and I looked great together. I loved it with my all and I made sure to put him first in our relationship and he ruined it all thinking that he would finally be a father but now look. I don't blame him though because it's life. It hurts that the reason why we broke up was the baby and now the

baby isn't even his. I just hope he moves on and find it in his heart to forgive her. I'm happy now. Luu was always my first love and I wouldn't mind falling for him all over again.

Luu: this ass will get me in serious trouble one day

He said rubbing my ass. I giggle. He lays behind me and kisses my cheek. I smile. I can't believe I'm gonna be a mother. I'm so happy. Luu is even more happier than me he's gonna be a father of two. I haven't told my brother yet but I will tell him soon because sooner or later he'll find out.

After having a shower with another steamy session he finally allowed my nunu to rest. We got dressed into matching outfits which was blue jeans with white tops and white Nike. We're going out for breakfast or should I say lunch because Luu has been fucking me since 6am in the morning and now it's twelve. But I'm not complaining.

Luu: you look beautiful

He says resting his hand on my thigh. I smiled. My hair is in a curly mess but it looks cute. I need to trim it because it's growing too long and making me feel hot because I'm gonna be fat soon because of the sperm Luu put into me

and he's gonna be tired of me so it's better my hair is short when I start going crazy.

Me: Luu drive properly

I complained. He's driving like he's drunk and he's gonna get us killed. He chuckles.

Luu: babe it's a new car and I need to check out the engine ,relax we're fine

Yeah he bought a new car to celebrate my pregnancy and don't ask me how many cars we already have. It's he's money and I'm not getting involved. As long as we have a separate account saving for our children.

Me: I want a burger

I say fixing my hair looking into the side mirror. He smiles and grabs my hand and kiss it.

Luu: anything you want

We drive to spur and get a table right at the window because I was feeling claustrophobic and all bothered. It's hot today. Luu ordered for the both of us and we just sat their smiling at each other. He's too cute. Way too hot and I love him that way. All strong and muscular, best making me horny just by looking at him. My phone rang and I quickly searched it into my bag and

finally found it. It's my sister in law.

Me: Mrs Phakade

I smiled.

Busi: I miss you, your kids miss you and your father misses you more

I giggled. I haven't seen them in a while and I miss them too. The past two weeks was great but also busy, at work and physically and mentally I wasn't right. I was stressing sometimes. I'm also scared that Luu might find out that I donated the blood and I know for a fact that he would be really upset. But I don't regret it because I did it from the goodness of my heart.

Me: I'll come visit you guys later

Busi: promise? Lesedi misses her aunty

I giggle again. I miss that little princess.

Especially Sihle.

Me: I promise Mrs Phakade

She laughs.

Busi: be here on time I miss my husband,
these kids are driving us nuts

I laughed and she giggle then hanged up.

Busi is something else. I'm just glad that

Dumisani is happy, that's all that matters.

Our order came and we dug in with Luu

feeding me like a baby and kept kissing

me as if someone will steal me today

and leave with me forever.

Luu: I love you, I love you so much

He kissed me again and I smiled.

Me: stop kissing me or else I'll fuck you
right here

He's turning me on and this is not the
right place. He chuckles.

Luu: imagine how I feel

I looked down his pants and he was
already hard. I giggle. Public or not we'll
talk as we want to. We're a crazy cute
couple. I love how he's free around me
and yes people only I can make him so
hard. He's mine.

Luu: how about we show them our
styles

He bites my cheeks and I laugh. I wish we could but I ain't showing no one my naked ass. Never.

Me: stop it Luu,...look these people are staring at us

Luu: I don't care

He licks my lips and his hand slowly travels to my jean button. My man is something else. I want to moan right now because he's drawing circles on my entrance but on the fabric of my Jeans and it feels so good.

Luu: like that?

I nod and kiss his cheek, we both stop in our tracks when we hear someone

clearing their throat. He turns around and I look up. My mood changes to annoyed. She's always stopping us from doing something that has sex written all over it. First the hospital now here...I want to bite her head off.

Luu: Nina

He says clearing his throat and grabbing his glass of juice.

Nina: Hi guys

She smiles fakely. I chuckle and roll my eyes. Someone remind me why I dislike her so much and why does she always bring out the bad in me?

Me: hi Nina

I bite my burger and ignore her but she keeps looking at me and I ended up choking.

I coughed hard.

Luu: babe are you OK? water?

He says worried and passed me a glass of water. I slowly drank and shot her a death stare and she slightly smiled.

Bitch.

Nina: are you alright? Maybe it's too big for you, the sausage....

I clicked my tongue and breathed.

Me: no honey I'm fine, and there's no sausage on my burger it's a patty, unless you're in search of sausage but the only

sausage here is...

I stopped myself from saying it and I rephrased.

Me: what are you doing here again?

I say annoyed and she smiled and put her hand on Luu's shoulder causing my anger levels to rise but I kept my cool. I won't allow her to upset me

Nina: I saw you guys so I wanted to talk to Luu

Me: point of correction, it's Luyanda to you and my man has nothing to talk to you about

I say annoyed and Luu held my hand.

Luu: my love calm down, you're stressing my child

He said placing his hand on my tummy and bringing his head down to kiss my tummy which was flat, note . The bitch frowned in irritation and then chuckled.

Nina: you're pregnant?

Luu: what do you want Nina?

Nina: you

my eyes grew wide and I couldn't help but laugh. She has some nerve.

Me: have you searched me on Google yet sweetie?

I say sarcastically because clearly she's

not from around here.

Nina: yes Tumisani Phakade, you walk like you own this city, stop acting like you're some kind of....

Me: Queen? well yeah I am a queen and I suggest you disappear before I lose my cool

I say tying up my hair now because I was feeling hot and bothered. I've never been so annoyed in my whole life.

Maybe because the fact that she's after my man is that why I'm so upset. But have I ever really fought for a man?

Never. I won't fight for him. If he wants her than what do I care about? He

knows his limits and I suggest he puts his man pants on because I'm never gonna fight for a man. I have self respect and pride as well as reputation to uphold.

Nina: I want to speak to Luu

I close my eyes and slowly breath.

Luu: say what you want to say right here

Nina: in private

She says through gritted teeth and I chuckle. She has some nerve hey. Some woman just have such a nerve.

Luu: N...

Me: Luu go

I say impatiently and he looks at me. I nod and he gets up. It's up to him if he wants to cheat on me. I don't need to try and make him avoid cheating. He did it the first time and it's up to him if he wants to hurt me again. But I made it clear to him that if he cheats on me again I wouldn't hesitate to walk out his life the same way I walked in and this time I wouldn't be walking out alone but with his child and he would never see us again. He knows his limits. Never stop a man or try to make him avoid doing something just because you think he'll hurt you. Allow him to do as he please and he'll pay for the consequences

alone. I know Luu. I trust him that much.

I eat my food in silence and they take almost a whole thirty minutes and Luu finally comes back with no emotions on his face. Neutral.

Me: your food has gone cold

I say without looking at him

Luu: I'm not hungry anymore

I grabbed my bag and fished in his pockets for the car keys.

Me: I'll be in the car

I walk to the car and sat there breathing.

I'm not upset, I repeated to myself. I

won't allow her to upset me. I've been

through far worse than this. Far worse.

He later came to the car and drove off still without saying a word to me. I won't bother ask about what they were talking about. We drove to Dumisani's house and I knocked.

Busi: finally, hello princess

She says smiling and hugging me tightly. I giggled and kissed her cheek. I won't allow anything to affect my mood.

Busi: hey Yanda

Luu: Hi Busi, how are you?

He said hugging her and I walked in and ran to Dumisani and he caught me spinning me into the air. I giggled like a

baby and he held me up in his arms. I missed my brother so much and I only realized it now.

Dumisani: you abandoned me for that boy?

He chuckled and I laughed kissing his cheeks.

Me: never, you're my first and only love

He smiled and put me down after flooding my face with kisses.

Sihle: aunty!

He said running down the stairs and hugging me tightly. I kissed his head and ruffled his hair a little. He laughed.

Me: where's my baby?

I say smiling and Busi pointing to her seated neatly like a princess on the couch. She looked so cute.

Me: baby!! oh my gosh she's so big, her cheeks are so soft Busi

I said lifting her up and kissing her chubby cheeks multiple times and she would smile now and then.

Busi: she's growing

I smiled and Luu sat next to me and kissed her cheeks, I smiled. His eyes had that glow again, the same glow he had when we found out I was pregnant. My heart skipped a beat.

Luu: she's beautiful

Me: indeed

He looked at me and I avoided his eyes.

I won't look his direction the whole day.

He's annoying me. Lesedi smiled and

she looked so cute smiling, our little

Phakade is growing so big. The house

door burst open and in walked my crazy

sister.

Vuyo: y'all organized a party and didn't

invite me

She said walking with Thabiso holding

her bag. I giggle. Vuyo is driving this

man crazy.

Sihle: aunty V!

He shouted and jumped into her arms.

Vuyo: hello champion, Who organized this party?

Dumisani: it's not a party V

Vuyo: looks like one to me, especially when that cute face is involved

She said referring to me, I giggled. She walked over and kissed my cheeks as well as Lesedi's and she hugged Luu and everyone else.

Thabiso: Where's the meat?

Vuyo: and the booze?

Busi: it's not a party Vuyo

She giggled walking to the kitchen.

Dumisani: you're crazy, why do y'all look so big? what are y'all eating?

He said looking at both Vuyo and I and I swallowed hard. Vuyo's eyes wandered around and I chuckled. I scanned her from top to bottom and chuckled again. Bitch is pregnant. Oh my gosh, Vuyo is pregnant.

Vuyo: bro you know I love food

She faked a smile and Thabs looked anywhere else but Dumisani. Oooh Dumisani is gonna be so pissed. We're both pregnant at the same time. Oh lord.

Luu: are you seeing what I'm seeing?

He whispered into my ear and I slowly

nodded. We're in deep shit.

But come on a baby is a blessing from God. Dumisani will understand, hopefully.

Dumisani: let's hope it's only food that's making y'all so big

He chuckled and grabbed Lesedi from my hands because she has fallen asleep. She always does that when I'm holding her. Busi walked back with two bottles of wine and glasses.

Busi: here's the alcohol, I know you want some Vuyo

She says smiling.

Vuyo: well actually I'm on a diet, I was

kidding about the booze thing

She says looking around. Busi looked behind her and made sure Dumisani wasn't anywhere close.

Busi: OK y'all spill, what's going on? I know for a fact you love alcohol Vuyo
She looked at Vuyo then me then back and Vuyo again then she finally gasped.

Busi: you guys are in deep shit!!

She laughed so hard I got worried.

Vuyo: what you mean?

Busi: Tumisani you too!!??

I shook my head no, and she laughed again.

Vuyo: you pregnant?

Luu: yeah we're pregnant

Thabiso chuckled and looked at Vuyo.

Thabiso: your brother is gonna skin me
alive

Vuyo: oh my gosh, I'm pregnant too.

Tumisani we're dead!

Busi laughed again and we chuckled in
unison.

Busi: ever heard of a condom?

She giggled.

Luu: but we wanted a baby, right my love?

He said taking my hand and held it.

Me: yeah but Dumisani is gonna be so

mad Luu

Vuyo: it would've been better if it was only one of us, but now the both of us are preggy, Oh lord I need wine

She grabbed the glass and Thabiso pulled it out of her hands.

Thabiso: you know what the doctor said He warned and she slowly let it go. I giggled.

Busi: you better tell him or else he'll be more upset but Congratulations, I can't wait to be an aunt of two unless y'all are gonna give me twins

Luu laughed and I pinched him.

Me: Luu this is serious, Dumisani is gonna kill you

Luu: I'm ready to die for you

He kissed my cheek and I know that's his way of softening me but not today. I'm still upset.

Busi: let me get rid of these before he comes back

She grabs the alcohol and walks back to the kitchen with it.

Vuyo: I'm worried

Thabiso: I love you and if he wants me to pay lobola or the damages than so be it. I'm ready.

Dumisani: ready for what....?

He said walking down the stairs and we all froze still. I looked at Luu and he looked back at me.

Luu: uh he's ready to uh, I mean we're ready to make our woman happy, I wanna always make her happy because her happiness is all I want

He said pecking my lips and Dumisani smiled.

Dumisani: as long as you two gentleman take care of my sisters than we're fine. Hurt them or do anything I wouldn't like than prepare for a beating because I don't care how old you two are, I

wouldn't hesitate to beat you up

He said in all seriousness.

Busi: baby don't make them so scared

She says wrapping her arms around his waist and kissing his cheek.

Dumisani: I'm just letting them know of the consequences they'll have to face if they hurt my two queens

I smiled and looked at Luu. He's panicking already. Clearly he doesn't know Mr Phakade, Dumi is one hella protective brother or should I say father.

Thabs: I love her

He says kissing Vuyo's cheek.

Dumisani: sometimes love just isn't enough

Vuyo gasped.

Busi: Phakade that's enough, leave them alone they're still young, come

She said grabbing his hand and walking him up the stairs. OK we're really in deep shit. I've never seen Dumisani so serious. What if he's suspecting us already. But he loves children, Dumisani would understand. Yes, he'll understand.

Luu: should we start praying now or later?

We all burst out laughing. I love these people. His phone rang and his mood immediately dropped.

Luu: excuse me

He stood up, I chuckled. That bitch. I grabbed my phone and texted Ziggler. Maybe the Queen really has to return because even small flies are taking advantage of my kindness. Maybe a little action would make her respect me. She needs to back off.

Ziggler: tell me more

I smirked. Let's see if our little journalist really values her reputation because clearly she's got a lot of hidden flaws. A little explicitly won't hurt will it?

~

Like Comment and Share

[06/20, 05:35] Snr: INSERT 134~

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV~

We got home so late last night and I'm really exhausted. Dumisani and Vuyo kept us entertained the whole day let me not mention how Vuyo has turned Thabiso into a crazy person just like her. We had to get rid of the topic of our pregnancies because we all know father

Dumsa is over protective but hey I love my brother. I had so much though.

Hanging out with my FAM always puts a smile upon my face and I couldn't have asked for a better family. All thanks to the almighty. Well about the Nina thing, I dug my nails and I'm still waiting for Ziggler to fill me up with info. I don't like the fact that she thinks she can stick her small ass in my life and still walk away with raised shoulders. Hell no. haven't heard from Siphon in a while and I'm actually really worried about him. I worry because I care. I care about him so much and I've seen him through his worst and I wouldn't want him to go

through any trauma right now because he gets very bad when he's messed up and all and for the love of friendship I would love to check up on him and just make sure he's fine. You might be thinking I'm some kind of super woman now hey, but no I just care too much and I think that's why people take advantage of my kindness but hey, it's life. Well my companies are all doing well and heading to success as always. I've got people assisting me and contacting me about everything that's going on without me having to be there physically. I know for sure once I'm two months pregnant Luu will make sure I don't even go to

work at all. So I better get used to it now.

I wake up the next day and the sun is shining so bright, it looks so beautiful a smile forms on my lips. I look on my right and he's not next to me. I sigh. If he's gonna act all weird on me like this forever than he's got another thing coming his way. I can't stand this nonsense. I walk to the bathroom and the usual vomiting happens and this time he's not here to hold my hair back. How sad. So I hold my own hair up while vomiting my lungs out and I feel sick after wards. I get into the shower and just let the water make love to my body. Which then makes me even more horny.

Gosh I miss him. Luu is being an ass right now and it's all because of this Nina bitch. Chuckle. She don't know me.

After my shower I lotion and get dressed into a body hugging baby pink above the knee dress that shows my figure and is strapy at the shoulders. I grab my sandals and put them on while looking for my earrings. I put them on and just loosen my caramel curls onto my shoulders. As I'm about to leave the room he barges in sweating like a dog who has just been burnt.

Luu: Going somewhere?

He asks with a frown and checking me

out from top to bottom and I know he wants me to change my dress but hell no.

Me: Good morning to you too baby daddy and I'm fine thanks, I had a vomit session.

I said sarcastically rolling my eyes.

Luu: I'm sorry babe

Me: for what exactly? uh getting me pregnant and acting like a cow or for being an ass?

I said annoyed and he chuckles walking towards me. I'm annoyed, honestly. I don't like the way he's acting these days.

Luu: baby, I'm sorry. I just needed to

clear my mind that's why I went for a jog

He says pulling his shirt off his head.

His abs and muscles grab my attention
and I couldn't help but swallow hard.

Me: Luu what's going on?

He wraps his arms around me and I
push them off me. He needs to talk to
me without touching me or distracting
me with his looks or whatever. We need
to get this straight so we can all be on
one page.

Luu: baby don't be like that please..

He said trying to hold me again and I
step back with a serious face.

Me: OK let's set one thing straight here.

Yanda I don't like this. This vibe between us is annoying the shit out of me, I love you and you know that but I will not allow you to take advantage of my love Luu. We've been through worst and you know for a fact I hate lies..

Luu: what are you trying to say? Are you gonna keep rubbing it in my face that I cheated on you for the rest of my life Tumsa, I did wrong but that doesn't mean you should remind me of it every fucking day that passes

He snaps and I flinch.

Me: I'm sorry if that's how you feel but I'm not ready to go back to that stage of

my life anymore

Luu: who said we were going back to that stage, huh? what are you even saying Tumisani?

He asks confused. Just before I can answer his phone rings and he pulls it out of his pocket and sighs when he sees the caller ID. I clench my jaw and try to control my breathings.

Luu: Nina...

He says defeated into the phone with his eyes glued on me. I grab my clutch bag and my phone and walk towards the door. Just when I'm about to leave he grabs my wrist and I try to wiggle my

hand out of his grip. I turn around and he pins me hard against the door. I lose my mind. The effect he has on me is too much, it makes me go crazy.

Luu: we have a meeting in two hours and please make sure your boss knows about it and please stop contacting me for every small damn thing I have a wife to attend to now please excuse me.

He chuckles and hangs up. I dare not look at him. That still doesn't change the fact that he's into contact with her.

He softly kisses my head and bends his head down to my neck and his breath on my neck makes my body weak.

Luu: baby I'm sorry

Me: Luyanda let me go

I try to push him off me and he holds me ever more tighter.

Luu: Her company is just somehow connected to mine baby please don't be upset, it's a new business deal we have please

Me: I don't care, move

I say annoyed but he holds my wrist and kisses my cheek. I breath. He wraps his arms around me and looks down at me. I avoid eye contact but h forces me to look at him with his index finger.

Luu: I've made you upset and I'm sorry.

Don't stress please babe, it's not good for our son.

He says pecking my lips making my breathing to increase and my eyes to shut closed. I missed him so much.

Luu: I know you want me Tumsa, I want you too

I open my eyes and allow him to kiss me again and again and again. Until I find myself naked in our bed screaming out his name. Yep, we fucked good. Every style in the book and I enjoyed my mans body against mine. That bitch wants to take all this away from me? Hell nah.

Me: faster baby!!!

I moaned into his mouth and he increased his speed. After our climax he cleaned the both of us up and we took a shower together.

Luu: Do you forgive me?

He asks kissing my back as I stood stark naked in front of the closet trying to figure out something to wear. Yeah he forced me to change my outfit. He said my ass was popping too much. Blush.

Me: If it's work than I trust you, you know your limits.

I won't force him to stop working with her just because I feel insecure. It's his

job and I won't get the bitter jealous girlfriend. I'll give him the freedom he wants. He kisses my back again and now cups my breast. I throw my head back and he wraps his arms around me again.

Me: Luu I have a meeting

Luu: with who?

He says licking my neck now. He's too cute. But it feels so good and wonderful.

Me: I wanna see Siph

He chuckles and I turn around.

Me: he's going through a lot Luu, he needs a friend.

Luu: I'm scared

I roll my eyes and he has a serious face on. I know he fears that Sipho and I would get back together but nah, I wouldn't go back to that path again.

Me: I love you, only you

Luu: I love you with everything within me and I'd kill myself if I had to lose you again, you're my life Tumsa.

I giggle and peck his lips.

Me: what about Thando?

Luu: speaking about Thando, have ice cream with us later, she misses you

Me: was that an instruction or you're

asking me?

He smiles.

Luu: I'm commanding you

I click my tongue and lick his lips, he smiles brightly. He grabs my ass and licks my lips as well.

Me: eeew you're crazy

Luu: Let me lick you again

He says with a naughty smirk and I chuckle with a smile.

Me: you're wasting my time

I turn around and grab a pair of white jeans with a white blouse and quickly get dressed with no underwear. Yes Luu

was fuming.

Luu: Woman put on your underwear

He scolds and I giggle. I feel uncomfortable with my underwear right now so I won't wear them.

Me: baby its too warm and I'm not comfortable

Luu: that ass belongs to me and you're letting everyone look at it

He says dramatically, I giggle and ignore him as I put on my shoes but he keeps looking at me.

Luu: look what you've done?

I look at his pants and he's hard as hell. I

giggle and blow him a kiss.

Me: I hope I'm the only one who makes you that hard

Luu: of course only you baby

He says kissing me for the last time before I took my leave after agreeing to meet him and his adorable daughter for ice cream later. I got into my car and drove off to the one place I know I would find Sipho. The warehouse. I drive there and I'm being stopped by his men at the gate. I'm getting annoyed a lot today.

Me: Tell him Tumisani is here please

I pleaded but the bastard shook his head and said..

Man: The boss instructed that no one comes in he wants to be alone

Me: niggah just call him and fucking let me speak to him

I snapped and the man looked at me deeply. I gave him one of my ugliest looks and he chuckles.

Man: woman I don't wanna die early

He opens the gate and I click my tongue as I drive in. After locking my car I walked to the door where I'm again stopped. Damn Sipho, why so uptight. I explain to them and they give me excuses so I decided to threaten them with my crazy tactics.

Me: open this door or I'm gonna blow your brains.

Yeah I have my gun with me. I'm pointing at the guy annoying me and now all his friends have their guns pointed at me. I hear someone clear their throat and I turn.

Ziggler: guns down please, this is the boss lady next time you are all losing your jobs

They all lower their guns and give me sloppy apologies which I ignore. Ziggler hugs me shortly and finally decides to take me to Siphos after telling me how I shouldn't be here because he looks

shitty. Fuck that. He takes me inside up to his room and leaves me there. I knock. No response. I knock again. Nothing. I now bang the door and he shouts from the inside.

Sipho: Voetsek

I chuckle and just barge into the damn room. I find him shirtless with alcohol everywhere and there's a bitch laying next to him. The curtains are shut and theirs literally no light in this room. So I firstly pull the curtains apart so I can see where I'm going.

Sipho: Tumisani...

His voice trails and his eyes are glossy

with tears and pain. My heart breaks. I fight my own tears and be the stronger person for him.

Me: bed time is over, get out

I say waking up the girl next to him and kicking her out after making sure she's dressed. So this is his life? How sad. I grab the beer bottles and stash them away and he sits there feeling sorry for himself. After I've seen some life in the room and I'm satisfied I make my way to the bathroom and vomit. The smell of the room was filled with alcohol oxygen and it made me nauseous. He rushes to the bathroom and holds back my hair. When I'm done I rinse my mouth and he

looks me deep in the eyes.

Me: Siphos this needs to stop.

I say sternly.

Siphos: you're pregnant?

I ignore his statement with my heart playing games in my chest and my mind running wild. Oh God why did I come here? My heart is not at rest. Seeing him is hurting me in some type of way.

Me: You need to change this life Siphos, drinking and sleeping around won't get you anywhere. The baby wasn't yours, yes, but that's not the end of the world. You're heart broken, I get it but Siphos come on. There's a woman out there

waiting for you to be her prince
charming and I'm sure she's gonna
make you the happiest man on earth,
you...

He cuts me off with a tear escaping his
eyes. My heart cracks further. Here I
was thinking my mighty Sipho would be
strong but I guess I was wrong. He's
shattered.

Sipho: I messed up real badly Tumsa, I
messed up. I messed up something so
beautiful just because of my own greed.
I'm paying for the sins Tumsa. I messed
up, you gave me your time , love and
patience yet I threw it all away. You gave
me love that I've never felt yet I was

ungrateful and stupid. Tumsa I messed up

He cried. Tears rolled down my own cheeks and I breathed. My heart was in pain.

Sipho: you know when I think about it I feel like I'm just like my father. I'm no different to him Tumsa

Me: no Sipho you're not like him, you're way better than him. Don't say that

I said holding him tightly as he cried with his head on my lap.

Sipho: I regret it Tumsa, I wish I didn't let you go the way I did. I'm so sorry, forgive me

Me: Sssh Siphio I forgave you long time, please stop crying you're hurting me.

I said wiping my face but I couldn't stop the tears.

Siphio: I deserve all this, I'm a terrible person Tumsa, you loved me more than anything, you went into depression when we lost our baby yet you still held my hand and stood by my side even through your weakest point. You still told me everything was fine when nothing was fine and I let it all go just because of something that wasn't even mine.

He sniffs.

Me: please stop, we need to move on

Sipho please

Sipho: I can't Tumsa, it's so hard. I hate myself. I can't do this

Me: we can Sipho, we can do this together. Let me be your pillar of strength, let me be your shoulder to cry on please, don't fight alone Sipho please.

I said holding up his head into my hands and wiping his tears with my small hands. He held my hands and kissed them before looking me in the eyes.

Sipho: forgive me Tumsa

He said defeated. I nodded and smiled. I pulled him into my arms and hugged him tightly. His scent intoxicated my

nostrils and brought back old memories. My heart skipped a beat. His eyes met mine again and my mind went wild. The man I love after my first love. It's funny how I loved Luu so much but ended giving my virginity to Siphho, my second love. I loved both men but my first love never took my virginity. Secrets after secrets brought me back together with my first love after finding out that my heart belonged to both men. But as they say you can't have them both. I had to make a choice but as they say your heart will forever be with your first love but you too shall never forget the man who took your virginity.

Sipho: I'm a mess that's for sure but
Tumsa each day that went by my heart
bled for you. I love you Tumisani
Phakade

He said with tears rolling down his
cheeks. Pure love is one with patience,
emotions, loyalty, care and forgives. But
real love is one with acceptance of
imperfections. I cupped his cheeks and
shut my eyes closed before giving him
my answer.

Me: I love you too Sipho but maybe love
just isn't enough. Love is a long story. I
love you as my brother and as a very
very good friend. I too wish that things
could've been different. Maybe secrets

separated us but me and Luu, secrets brought us back together. My heart bleeds for you Siphos, it does. I want you to be happy I don't like seeing you like this Siphos, I love you, yes that's a fact but love could be explained in more than a thousand words. Our love was unique. But my love for Luu is extraordinary. I want you to be a better man for your future and your future children. I want you to be a man that your children could look up to Siphos. For the sake of our love, please change.

I say with tears blocking my view and my heart having its own storm. It hurts to be in such a situation. I never wanted

to come to this point of having to choose between Siphos and Luu. Both men swept me off my feet and had me on my toes but sometimes love just isn't enough in one place. He nods and kisses my cheek passionately. I close my eyes as his lips come into contact with my skin and just breath.

Siphos: maybe in our next life, you could be my queen.

I smiled and nodded.

Me: have ice cream with me

He chuckles and I wipe his tears. He walks to the bathroom and I hear the shower tap switch on. I breath. I think he

still needs more therapy. He's mentally unstable and needs lots of support and I wanna be there for him. He needs a friend and someone to just listen and be there.

After a while he comes back dripping wet with a towel wrapped around his waist.

Me: I'll give you some privacy

I smile once again and he nods. I giggle. We've been doing that a lot now. Smiling and nodding. I get downstairs and find Ziggler busy with his lap top.

Me: Zigs

He looks up and frowns.

Ziggler: Is he OK?

Me: he's gonna be fine, I'm taking him out for some ice cream

Ziggler: He needs you

I smile and sit next to him.

Me: talk to me

Ziggler: Nina. Well she's working with your man on a journalism campaign, your mans company needs her company for publicity

Me: why didn't he just organise an advertising agency?

Ziggler: well you see the business category with advertising and journalism

are different. If he has her on his team he'll be more well known and that could boast his companies

Me: why her?

Ziggler: news has it that Nina is the best journalist in town. And your man needs her presence, she's actually clear, no bad history.

I chuckle and frown.

Me: she should keep her claws hidden, I have no time for bitches.

Ziggler: you being pregnant is hurting Siphos, do you know that?

Fuck. Why is he changing the subject now, I thought we were talking about

Nina?

Me: Ziggler I'm trying here

Ziggler: I know but he's hurting and he thought he still stands a chance with you

Me: can we not talk about this

I stand up and grab a bottle of water. Well I've been to this warehouse and I know my way. Siphon brought me here when we were still together. Come to think of it I learnt a lot from him.

Ziggler: I just want him to be happy, he's going through a lot.

Me: I know.

As soon as I say that he comes down the stairs looking so handsome and fresh. My heart melts. He's in jeans and a white top with sneakers. His hair is in a messy style but cute. Did I tell you how cute we used to look because we're both curly headed. Ask me how a black man gets curls and I wouldn't know because I'm colored but it's cute. But his hair is short though. OK I need to stop.

Me: ready?

Sipho: yep, Zigs

Ziggler: you look fresh man

Sipho: thank, I'll be back later. Get me a new therapist or better yet psychologist.

I smile brightly and he looks at me with a huge smile plastered on his face then winks. At least he's gonna try again and keep trying until he's finally satisfied and that's all that matters. My phone rings just before we get into the car and it's a message from Luu.

~Luu

Baby, I don't like the idea of you going to his warehouse, people get killed in that place and you take my baby to such a place. I'm upset Phakade, very.

~

I want to laugh but he sounds so serious I end up sighing. I decide to text him

back.

~ Tumsa

I'm sorry Babakhe. I won't do it again, I promise to ask next time. I love you. We're on our way for ice cream.

~

He's gonna be more upset when he sees us together but hey, no one said this was gonna be easy. Siphos needs my support and that's exactly what I'll give him.

Siphos: Thank you for everything
Tumisani

He smiles. Don't start thanking me just yet. I got you.

~

Like Comment and Share

~

Admin loves you and I haven't neglected y'all.

[06/20, 05:36] Snr: INSERT 135~

.

.

.

.

Sipho's POV~

I was a fool to think her love was not enough. I was a fool to believe that our destiny was not bound together. Even a

fool understood what real love was but I guess I was too blinded by stupid that I let true love pass me by. They say when one door closes there's yet another one to open and new beginnings would be made.

Tumisani is an incredibly wonderful, beautiful and just a perfect angel. There's not even a word that can describe how awesome she is. I've never met anyone as perfect as her. She's been through so much yet she never seizes a chance to put in a helping hand where there's help needed. That woman deserves nothing but happiness and I hope and pray that th good lord sends

nothing but blessings down her road. Honestly speaking she's the only woman who has my heart and I know for a fact it'll take me a very long time to move on and process everything but hopefully it'll all pass. She's been a blessing in my life and I'm grateful for it all. I really appreciate her. I haven't seen Thandokazi nor Andile since that day I found out the truth and to be completely honest I'd be lying if I said I didn't miss them. That child took a part of my heart and I fell so deeply with him at first sight. If I said I didn't feel the urge to go see him every single day that went by I would be lying because I've been dying

to see him and just hold him just one more time even if it meant for just one second even though he's not even my biological child. But blood or no blood that child has taken my heart and I feel like if I just see him even just once maybe I could get the closure I need because deep down I'm hurting deeply. It hurts a lot and I really just feel so betrayed. And on the other hand there's Ashley. Sigh. Can we talk about that later.

Tumisani: you OK?

She smiles and I now recognize her deep dimples again. I've been so lost in my mind that I forgot this queen had

beautiful dimples. I smiled back.

Me: do you know how beautiful you are?

She blushes and I chuckle looking ahead of us. She was driving and I was the passenger for the day although I suggested that I drive but she refused. We all know how stubborn this woman is.

Tumisani: you're making me shy

She said with a smile on her beautiful face as she brought her focus back to the road.

Me: shyness looks cute on you

She giggles and I wish she could do it again. I missed that giggle so much and

I would do anything just to wake up next to her body even if it was for one minute. God I'm a mess. I look out the window and she turns up the radio and I let the sound of music make love to my mind. It's funny how life seems to take turns in every road of our lives. If only my father hadn't kidnapped Tumisani and if only he allowed me to do things right by asking her out like a gentleman. If only Lindokuhle wasn't such an evil mother than maybe Tumisani would've been an even better angel. If only life wasn't such a mess.

Tumisani: we're here!

She says bringing me back to planet

earth and she carefully parked the car. I get out and walk to her side to open her door but she beats me to it and opens her own door. She smiles and nods at me.

Tumisani: I got it, thank you.

I nod and she locks the car and we slowly make our way to a very neat looking cafe which doesn't really look like a cafe but for the sake of English let's call it a cafe. We walk in and her eyes start wandering around the room and I wonder what on earth she's looking for. When she finally catches sight of whatever she was looking for her eyes glowed and she smiled even

deeper with so much passion and warmth I felt jealous of the person who could make her smile so much. I turned my head a bit to see the person but my heart stopped when my eyes landed on Luyanda. I wonder if I made her smile like that too when we were together. Damn. I messed up real bad.

Tumisani: come on Siphon, there they are She grabs my hand and excitedly pulls me towards their table. By they I mean as in Yanda and his beautiful daughter. She's so adorable. When she saw Tumisani she quickly got off her seat and rushed towards her.

Thando: Aunty!! I miss you so much!

She said smiling as Tumisani picked her up and kissed her cheeks with a smile.

Tumisani: I missed you more princess, how are you?

She said as we got nearer to the table and she pecked Yanda's cheek making my heart jump even more.

Tumisani: hey love, I brought a friend

She said smiling at me and I returned the smile as I stretched my hand for Yanda to shake. I'd rather be respectful and kind for the sake of Tumisani's love and kindness. She's been good to me.

Luu: hey man, how are you?

He said shaking my hand and giving me a bro hug and I did the same.

Me: I'm getting there and yourself?

Luu: I'm good, Thando sit down

He said looking at his daughter who had her arms wrapped around Tumisani as if she was gonna run away any minute now. They looked so cute I could just watch them all day.

Thando: but daddy...

Luu: no Thando let aunty be.

He said sternly and the cute kid pouted looking exactly like her mother Lindiwe. You would swear they are identical if you looked at both her and her mother.

Tumisani: Yanda leave my baby alone,
have you eaten sweetie?

She smiled at Thando cupping her cute
chubby cheeks.

Luu: these woman will drive me crazy,
so man how's work?

He said looking at me and I was totally
focused on Tumisani and Thando I just
couldn't get my eyes off them.

Me: uh uh work is great, but after all
that's going on I haven't been at the
company. But I hopefully I'll check
things out next week

I said nodding. That is true. I haven't
been to work in a while and I'm sure

Lwazi is tired to my staff. He's been standing in for me and I'm really grateful for his help.

Luu: that's great, what would you like? I know for a fact these two queens want ice cream, we're men we don't do that ice cream shit.

Tumisani looked at him and chuckled.

Tumisani: watch your language Luu we have a kid here

Thando: bad daddy

Luu: sorry princess

He chuckled as she pouted at him and raised her little finger disapprovingly. I laughed slightly at her cuteness.

Thando: uncle do you also use naughty language?

She said asking me with a smile, I smiled back.

Me: no princess I don't use naughty language

Tumisani giggled. I smiled.

Luu: waiter..

He ushered down a waiter and we all made our orders and continued with a soft conversation talking about business, sport and manly stuff and honestly it was nice. I felt jealous of their relationship but as my mother always used to say, jealousy makes you

wicked. So I pushed my emotions aside and just decided to enjoy this time out with people as a civilized person.

Tumisani: baby who braided your hair?
so pretty

She said touching Thando's hair. She had two cute plaits like a baby doll.

Luu: believe it or not, I did.

We both looked at him and laughed at the same time. He chuckled.

Luu: princess tell them daddy did your hair!

He said in defence and Thando giggled.

Thando: aunty, Mama was too busy

washing dishes when daddy came to pick me up and my hair was messy so daddy braided them for me

She smiled happily at her father and Tumisani gasped then giggled.

Luu: now do you believe me?

Tumisani: if I find out you two are lying, no ice cream for two months

Thando pouted again and now folds her arms.

Luu: you're upsetting my princess

Tumisani: you're turning my child into a liar

She rolls her eyes and I chuckle. If only

God Blessed me with such a family.
When will my blessings arrive too. Will I
also have this kind of happiness?

.

Tumisani's POV~

Thando: aunty you don't trust me!

She pouted again and I remembered
when Lindiwe was upset with me she
would always pout and fold her arms.
This child has all her mothers
characteristics and she's so adorable. I
swear this is Lindiwe number two. She's
so adorable tho.

Me: I do trust you baby, but don't allow
your naughty daddy to persuade you

Luu: you're making me sound like a bad guy now babe

I giggled. I know for sure Luu didn't plait her hair because Luu sucks at that category, trust me I know. He tried plaiting my hair and ended up making me look like a bomb shell. He sucks that much. And now they're trying to prank me. Which ain't working because I'm not convinced. Siphos is smiling and I'm glad I'm able to make him smile even for just a second. It makes me happy to see him smile and that was my mission all along. He's been through a lot but he needs to move on.

Our orders came and we ate while

laughing with each other and making jokes with Thando being the dramatic princess that she is and yeah we had fun. Us ladies had ice cream while them men have a burger with drinks. I don't know why Luu chose this restaurant specifically but I can see he likes it a lot and I wouldn't be surprised if he said he owned this place because judging from the way he's acting it's like he's been here more than once.

Luu: princess you're messing your clothes

He said shouting at a creamy looking Thando who had cream smeared all over her mouth and her top now had a

chocolate stain on it. I chuckled. You can never give Thando ice cream and expect her to be clean.

Me: did you bring extra clothes?

I asked Luu who now looked irritated. He gets annoyed too quick with this child. He should get used to it since he made a drama queen of a kid.

Thando: daddy leave me, aunty I want more ice cream

My eyes popped, this child is unbelievable, that was like a whole bowl of ice cream and she still wants more?

Lindiwe why did you eat so much ice cream when you were pregnant!! now

your child is an addict!?

Luu: Thando don't piss me off, you've had enough and you've even ruined your clothes and I didn't bring extra clothes for you

Thando: daddy stop yelling at me

She was now close to tears and Luu was pissed. This always happens, poor Siphos was just helpless.

Me: no baby don't cry, Daddy is just a little upset. Luu please

I whispered and now Thando started crying. Lord have mercy!!

Luu: Thando stop acting please we're in public

Did she listen? Hell no she even cried louder and now people were looking at us. Have we spoilt this child too much or is this also one of Lindiwe's doings?

Me: Luu she's just a kid don't do that please

I picked her up and wiped her tears while trying to remove the cream on her face as well as her top.

Sipho: princess don't cry, would you like a new doll? There's a toy shop I know of nearby

She stopped crying immediately and looked up at Sipho with a bright smile, Luu chuckled and got off his chair.

Luu: I'll get the bill

He's pissed. What's wrong with him? I chuckled.

Thando: yes uncle I want a doll

She smiled brightly. Siphon took her out of my arms and smiled.

Siphon: I'll be right back, the shop is just opposite here.

I nodded and they walked out with Thando smiling. That child is something else. She's adorable and all but just stop her from getting what she wants and she'll show you flames.

Luu came back looking much calmer. He needs to learn some control. It's his

daughter and he needs to learn how to cope with her.

Luu: where she?

Me: Siphon took her to the toy shop

He chuckled.

Me: Luu you need to relax, she's just a kid. You're being too hard on her.

Luu: I can't help it baby, she just annoys me sometimes and I just snap

He said holding my hand.

Me: I know Luu but please relax, you're scaring us

He smiled and kissed my hands. He looked so handsome if we weren't in

public I would've had him inside of my
already.

Luu: what are you thinking about ?

He smirked naughtily. I blushed.

Me: keep your dirty ideas to yourself

He laughed and I blushed.

Luu: I didn't say anything

Me: neither did I

I said looking aside since we had
finished eating.

Luu: I miss you. you look beautiful

Me: I'm right in front of you

He smirked again.

Luu: I meant I missed you as in I want you in my bed right now

I gasped and laughed covering my mouth with my hand. He winked at me.

Me: did you pay the bill Mkisi?

I smiled at him and he nods. He holds my hand once again and we make our way to the exit. He's tempting me in public and I won't let what happened last time happen again. I'll talk about that some other time. But believe me it was embarrassing. We stood at my car and he wraps his arms around me and kisses my neck. No...My heart melts and my body just craves him, triator.

Luu: you so soft.

He bites my ear lobe and I fight the urge to moan. I won't let this happen again, not today. I pushed him off me and leaned against the car. We're waiting for Thando and Siphos but here he is flirting with me.

Me: Luu stop...

He had his hand on my ass and he was squeezing my butt, I want to moan so badly. He doesn't even care about the people passing. This man has no shame.

Luu: your ass is so warm I could bang you all night Tumsa

OK I give up. I moaned passionately and

threw my arms around his neck. Ook I'm wet. He licks his lips and I bite my bottom lip, I want him so badly.

Luu: baby I miss you

He pressed me more into the car and now starts rubbing my butt, it's a good thing no one can see him rubbing my ass. I peck his lips and just when I pull out, we hear someone clearing their throat. We both pull apart and quickly turn around only to be met by a smiling Thando with a human size teddy bear which was twice her size and an annoyed looking Sipho.

Thando: daddy look, uncle bought me a

bear

She squealed. Gosh this is so weird.
Sipho's eyes pierced right through me
and I felt bad. Oh gosh. Luu what have
you done!!?

~

Like, Comment and Share

[06/20, 05:36] Snr: INSERT 136~

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV~

When we left the restaurant it was really

awkward in the car. Siphos kept giving me weird looks and I wasn't even in the mood. All I wanted was to drop him off and rush home to my handsome boyfriend, he left me wet and yearning for his touch and that's all I want right now. Him. I now come to the realization that I shouldn't entertain Siphos feelings because that'll only give him the bad impression and he'll start thinking that I still have feelings for him which I don't. He's like a brother to me now and nothing else. I love Luu and he's the one with my heart right now. And also he's the father of my soon to come baby.

I park my car outside his house and he

looks at me with those eyes pleading for comfort. I hate seeing him like this. He needs to move on and get over the fact that the baby wasn't his. I know it's hard and all but life goes on. Sometimes we just have to accept some things.

Sipho: please come in and stay just for one hour

He pleads and I want to reject immediately. I don't trust myself with him and I don't think Luu will appreciate me going into my exes house, the place where we made love and made so many memories with his baby, he wouldn't like that.

Me: uh Sipho, I really have to go. I had fun I enjoyed lunch with you and I'm glad you smiled just a little I want you to be happy and...

Sipho: what'll make me really happy is for you to be mine again..

He mumbled under his breath. I frowned confused.

Me: excuse me...

Sipho: nothing. Thanks for lunch, I enjoyed it too.

I forced a smile as he brought his face closer to mine and he softly kissed my forehead. I sighed in relieve. We don't any nonsense to happen now do

we...Especially when I'm carrying a psycho's baby inside of my womb. I love my psycho boyfriend. He got off the car and I waved goodbye as I made my way out his driveway. I got onto the road and relaxed my shoulders a little. I felt tensed in his presence and he was intoxicating me.

I decided to pass by the shops and buy a few stuffs because I want to make a delicious supper tonight. Luu and Thando are joining me for dinner so I gotta feed my babies. He just had to take her back home so she could get her stuff cause she's spending the few days with us. Lindiwe has exams starting and

Brian has been on her neck about studying. He's even become her tutor. Those two are so adorably happily married. I'm happy for my friend. I really am. I was pushing my trolley when I felt someone tap my shoulder. I slowly turned and my eyes almost popped. Damn God had time to create handsome men hey. He's a chocolate coated muscled guy with a nice face and cute lips and damn he's so tall. He's literally overpowering my short self. I feel small. He's probably taller than Luu as well because Luu is also taller than me but this guy takes the cup. He smiles down at me. Damn those perfect white teeth.

Man: Hey, I'm Vusi

Me: hi

I said shaking his hand as he shook mine.

Vusi: I was minding my own business while doing some shopping until my daughter pointed at you pulling me all the way here, she's your fan.

I almost gasped. The cute little girl hid behind her fathers legs looking shy as hell and I only realized how cute she is right now. She smiles brightly and lord I just had to pick her up. She's so cute. Wait...did he just say she's my fan? So people really do watch the news hey.

And plus I have like a lot of Instagram accounts and people even made fake tabs on me especially Facebook pages when all that Queen of Diamonds Saga was happening, but I didn't know kids watch news as well. But she's not that young, probably just 7 but she's an angel.

Me: oh my gosh, she's so cute. What's your name sweety!?

I said with a broad smile plastered on my face. Lord, someone remind me why I love kids so much?

Girl: Angela

She says shyly playing with her cute long piggy tails styled hair.

Vusi: my daughter has been stalking you on Instagram with my phone and she's been pestering me about meeting you for such a long time, she's your biggest fan

He says with a smile. My heart melts. Oh lord if only I had a good background then maybe I could be inspirational to this darling but come on, I'm a gangster queen what will I teach the poor kid.

Me: oh my gosh, you're such an angel.

Angela: thank you aunty, please can we take a picture. I wanna show my granny
She smiles cutely.

Me: sure sweetie

Vusi took a pic of us together and she was so excited to show her granny the picture she couldn't wait to get home. I placed two kisses on her cheeks and put her down.

Vusi: thank you so much Miss Phakade, I really appreciate it. I hope this is not the last time we'll see each other. My daughter would love to see you again
He said smiling once again. I blushed.

Me: I would love to see this sweetheart again as well

I said looking down at Angela who was now holding her doll tightly to her chest.

Vusi: you don't mind me asking for your

numbers, do you?

Me: of course not, I love your daughter already. She's just adorable

I said punching my numbers into his phone. Thando would love to have someone to play with. Maybe we could set up a play date for them. They look like good people.

Vusi: Thank you, I'll call you

Me: sure, bye princess

I giggle waving at her as I took my trolley and headed to the queue.

Children are such a blessing. I love kids way too much and I pray and hope that God blesses me with an abundance of

life so I am able to leave my little legacies behind. My little Phakade's. Sigh. I drive home with a smile plastered on my lips and I can't seem to stop smiling. I drive with my hand on my flat tummy. I can't wait to start showing and annoying Luu and waking him up in the middle of the night for food and good sex. Sigh. I really can't wait. I get home and the house is empty. They haven't arrived yet. I start with taking the meat out the freezer and I change into my denim bum shorts and a crop top with warm socks. I play some music as I get started on my cooking and I sing along to the music playing from the TV.

That cute girl left me in a good vibe. She made my day. Children are my life. I love them too much, I've always prayed that I could have my own children and I know for a fact I would live them with every fibre in my body. I heard the front door opening and I knew it was them. Next thing I hear is Thando screaming around, here goes a long night with our little drama queen.

Luu: Thando put that damn bear down, you'll fall

He shouted. I giggled listening to them arguing from the lounge. Luu comes in the kitchen and throws the keys on the counter then wrap his arms around me.

Luu: Gosh baby I'm so exhausted

h

He says kissing my neck. I smiled.

Me: your daughter is driving you nuts

Luu: you have no idea

I giggle. His hands travel to my tummy and he keeps his hands there.

Luu: is our little princess giving mommy trouble?

He asks sliding his hand into my crop top and rubbing my tummy. I chuckle.

Me: I can barely feel it

Luu: you sure that's normal?

I nod. It's the first months so it won't

really feel like I'm pregnant just morning sickness and nausea and stuff.

Me: how's Lindiwe?

I say chopping the onions trying not to cry. He chuckles.

Luu: are you crazy Tumsa, give me that

He grabs the knife out of my hands and I move aside as he takes over. I chuckle rolling my eyes.

Luu: she's driving that poor guy mad same like her daughter is driving me insane

I giggle and kiss his cheeks.

Me: let my babies be

Luu: your babies are annoying

Thando barges into the kitchen with that human sized teddy Siphso bought her in her arms and she scans the room. Until her eyes land on the chocolate I was nibbling on. She smiles deviously.

Savage kid. Luu quickly grabs it and she screams so loud I could go deaf.

Thando: daddy put that back right now!
She demands. I smile. This is a show.

Luu: go play in the lounge Thando

Thando: not until you put that chocolate back Mr Mkisi

I gasp.

Luu: watch your tongue young lady

Thando: I'm a grown lady daddy,
chocolate now!

She pouts like her mother, I giggle. This
child is life.

Luu: hey hey Thando don't mess with
me

Thando: I'm gonna cry

Luu: I would like to see you try

She gasps holding her teddy tightly. She
screams and stomps out the kitchen
pouting like the drama queen she is. I
burst out laughing. Luu chuckles.

Luu: she needs a spanking

Me: you're not hitting my child

Luu: watch me

He dared me. I smack the back of his head and he looks at me with a scowl. I ignore it.

Me: you're not hitting her Luu, she's too young

Luu: she needs to be taught discipline at this age, her tongue is too sharp that one

Me: yet you love her more than the world

Luu: with everything in me

I smiled. We cooked together through a long conversation and I got to tell Luu

about the cute girl I bump into in the stores and he was even amazed to know that people are still stalking me online but it's cute.

Luu: what was her father's name you said?

Me: Vusi

He nodded and continued stirring the soup.

Me: she was so cute babe

Luu: you love too easily baby

He said looking at me with a smile. I blush. He's right, I love too easily but I can't help it. She's just a kid. We set the table and had dinner together as a

family and I bathed both Thando and myself with Luu looking at us as if we're crazy. Whatever. He's just jealous that I didn't allow him to join us. After the shower we wore matching white gowns and sat in front of the TV with desert. Moments like these are the ones that make me happy. Small moments like these take my heart away. He breaths down onto my ear as he wraps his arms around both me and Thando. Well we're sitting in a very awkward yet warming position right now. I'm sitting between his legs and Thando is sitting between my legs. We're all in white gowns watching a comedy movie and Thando

is busy laughing her lungs out as if
Jesus is coming tonight. I giggle.

Luu: can't she sleep already

He whispers into my ear, I smile. This
dude mara he's savage.

Me: shh Luu

Thando: daddy shssh

She says putting her tiny finger between
her lips. Luu chuckled as his hand slowly
traveled into my gown. My toes curled
and my nunu twitched. He grabbed my
boob and softly rubs it. I fight with
everything within me to stop myself to
moaning. Why didn't I wear anything
underneath now he's torturing me. I bite

my bottom lip and hold my breath in as his hand slowly but surely made me weak for his touch.

Me: Luu...

I whispered, he ignores me and sniffs my hair which I've just washed.

Luu: tell her to go sleep

He demands. I chuckle. Thando holds onto my waist as she snuggles more in between my legs. I wrap my arms around her in effort to get rid of Luu's hand but he wouldn't budge, instead in pinched my nipple so hard I had to moan as the pleasure traveled all the way to my nunu.

Thando: aunty are you OK?

She asks rubbing her eyes and thank God because that was a sign that she was sleepy.

Me: yes sweety, come on it's bed time.
Let's get to bed

Thando: but I wanna finish the movie
aunty

She whined.

Luu: pussy blocker

He whispered, I gasped with a giggle.

Me: it's late baby, come I'll tuck you in

I quickly got off the couch and pushed Luu's hand out of my gown, I chuckled. I

carried Thando all the way to her room and tucked her in and lord have mercy she wants me to stay with her till she falls asleep. So yeah I ended up staying with her till she fell asleep and I bet you Luu is so upset right now he probably fell asleep. After she finally fell asleep I slowly crept to my room and found Luu fuming laying naked on the bed.

Luu: what took you so long!?

He says almost shouting.

Me: she wanted me to wait till she fell asleep

Luu: if I didn't know better I would say you're running away from me

Me: aaah baby I would never do that, I'm sorry.

I pecked his lips and he pouts angrily. He's upset.

Me: Luu please don't do that, I'm sorry my love

I run my hands down his sexy abs and I position myself between his legs. I quickly kick off the gown and my twins are out to play. I cup his neck and force him to look at him, I passionately kiss his lips and suck on his bottom lip.

Maybe I should take over tonight. I haven't done that in a while now. He grabs my and squeezes it roughly, I feel

his poke on my thigh and I bite his bottom lip harder. He groans. I break the kiss and slightly push him down and I position myself on top of him, I allow him to enter me and the pleasure hits me real hard. I moan loudly. He holds my waist and my toes curl as I rest my arms on his chest.

Luu: baby...

He whispers, I haven't felt this pleasure in a while.

Me: I love you so much!!!

I moaned loudly as I started to go up and down on his hard member. Our bodies vibrated together and I loved the

way my pussy walls hugged his member and his nails dug deep into my thighs. I ride him slowly and passionately as our bodies did a dance of it's own as we slowly but surely lose our self's into a different world, different planet and different continent. I go up and down him faster and all you here is our moans, groans and heavy breathing. I feel my vaginal walls expand as his huge member broke me further apart. I dug my nails into his abs and he groans loudly. I feel my orgasm getting closer and closer, I felt the need to explode and I so badly wanted to.

Luu: wait for me baby!!

He groaned, I bit my bottom lip hard as I kept going up and down to the rhythm of our bodies.

Me: I can't keep it anymore Luu...

I said in a whisper which came as a moan.

Luu: cum for me baby...

I hit my climax immediately and he did after me breathing heavily, I collapsed onto his chest and he wrapped his arms around me. Best session of my life. He kisses my head. He swaps us apart putting me under him and then he softly pulled out of my nunu. I flinched. He pecks my lips and my twins before

getting off the bed and walking to the bathroom. I'm exhausted. He comes back with a towel and wipes the both of us clean, he separates my legs and kisses my nunu, I moan. He kisses my thighs and pecks my nunu then without warning he enters with his tongue making me gasp in both pleasure and shock. His tongue swirls around in circles making me squeeze his head with my thighs, he licks, sucks and fucks every corner of my pussy and when he's done I can't even sit up straight anymore. My legs go numb and all I can think of is him inside of me. He flips me onto my stomach and enters from the back. I

shut my eyes closed as the pleasure takes me to planet Pluto. Countless orgasms and loud moans bomb my room and all you sense is sex sex and sex. If I was told sooner that making love to the one you love than I surely would've given him my virginity on day one of our relationship when we were still in high school.

Luu: you're my heart, body and soul....sweat and blood, forever I shall love you and worship every angle of your body with my God given body..I love you so much...

He plants a deep kiss on my lips just before I fall asleep into a deep slumber

after my last orgasm.

~

Like Comment and Share

~

Guys, insert 140 is the last one and then I'll start a new story after the exams and maybe there might be a season two of Hidden secrets we never know. But 140 is the last and then we'll all meet in The Blood In My Veins till after exams.

~Love. Admin.

[06/20, 05:36] Snr: INSERT 137~

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV~

I wake up to the sound of running water.
I quickly open my eyes only to be hit by
the head, I squealed and blinked twice.

Me: ouch!!!

Thando: oopsie sorry aunty, I was about
to wake you up

She says apologetically as I rubbed my
forehead. She kisses my cheek and I
smile. I pull her into my arms and hug
her tightly then tickle her.

Me: How did you sleep princess?

I say kissing her cheeks as she kept laughing cutely.

Thando: like a baby, daddy's in the shower

She says grabbing my phone for me which was now ringing. I checked the caller ID and it was an unknown number. I quickly picked up.

Me: Phakade speaking

Voice: hello!!

Her cute innocent voice screamed into the phone. My lips glowed with a smile. She's so adorable.

Me: hello sweetheart, how are you?

I said as Thando played with my hair and twisted it into knots.

Angela: I'm fine Aunty, my daddy says Hi...

She giggled shyly. I blushed.

Me: tell daddy I said Hi as well, where is he?

I say leaning onto Thando's lap as she pulled my head down acting like a hairdresser. This child Mara...

Angela: he's right here aunty, I just wanted to ask if it's possible to see you again, daddy misses you so much!!

She giggles loudly causing me to blush brightly before I hear a loud chuckle and

moving in the background.

Vusi: Angela give me my phone.....hello

He says into the phone and I giggle.

Me: Good morning

I smiled.

Vusi: hi Miss Phakade how are you

Me: I'm fine and yourself ?

Vusi: I'm great Miss Phakade, forgive my daughter she's just being naughty for some reasons today...

Me: she's a darling, call me Tumisani please. You're making me some old..

I giggle and he chuckles. Thando pulls my hair so hard I felt tears nearing.

Me: ouch Thando you're hurting me....

I scream with the phone still against my ear

Thando: sorry aunty, daddy!!

She screams and let's go of me, I breath.

Vusi: oh is that your daughter?

Me: yep that's my baby, oh hey I was thinking since she's in with me and hopefully you have nothing to do how about they meet up, I'm sure Angela would love to meet my drama queen of a child

Thando gives me the eye and so does her father. I ignore them both and get off the bed.

Vusi: I would love that...uh I mean Angela would love that, how about I send you a location later on, I have the perfect place for these two youngsters. He says excited and I smile.

Me: sorted, see you later. Bye Angela I smiled into the phone and her small voice screamed "bye" as well. These kids are my world. Maybe I should also go get Sihle so that they can all be friends, that would be great. All my favorite kids playing together. How cute is that.

Luu: babe...

I turned and wrap my arms around his

neck with Thando still in his arms. I pecked his lips and smiled.

Me: baby I found Thando a friend.

Thando: I wasn't looking for friends aunty...

My jaw dropped. She smiles.

Thando: relax Mrs Mkisi, what's her name?

She says like an adult, I chuckle.

Me: it's Phakade to you and her name is Angela

Thando: daddy is gonna marry you so get that idea of keeping your surname out of your head young lady.

Me: you, young lady are very corny. Out I want space with my man

Thando: the man you claim yours is my father, madam

Me: he's the love of my life, young lady

Thando: and so?

She shows me her toothy smile and we both burst out laughing. This little child is something else. She knows just what to do to get me on my toes.

Thando: daddy put me down, I have a friend to meet

Luu: you two are gonna drive me nuts before I even grow old

Thando: yet you love us, right daddy.

She kisses his cheeks and runs out the room afterwards. I shake my head. I love that Child. He wraps his arms around me and kisses my neck.

Last night was heaven on earth. Luu sure went to sex school because I have no idea where he learnt these things of pleasuring a woman. He made me feel so loved and wanted and oh lord I don't wanna get wet right now. Because he has a meeting in a few.

Luu: so who's this new friend that's making you smile so much?

He grabs my ass and squeezes it. He's

trying to turn me on then leave me when he realizes he only has five minutes before his meeting. This man is something else.

Me: mmmhm His name is Vusi, his daughter is so adorable Luu you have to meet her, remember I told you about the guy I bumped into at the stores

He nods.

Luu: so you're meeting him today?

Me: we're going on a play date with Angela and I'm gonna go fetch Sihle first.

Luu: Ziggler is coming with you, just in case

My blood boils. I hate this. Whenever his

insecurities rise than this happens.

Me: you don't trust me with your daughter?

I blurt out. I feel offended. His eyes grow

Luu: baby it's not what I'm saying. I mean look at it this way my love, I don't know this guy and I won't be there with you to protect you and Thando if anything happens. It's not that I don't trust you, I trust you with all my heart babe how can you even think like that

Me: sure

I push his hands off me and walk to the bathroom.

Luu: Tumsa...

Me: I need to brush my teeth

Luu: baby don't be like that, it's just that I don't trust anyone with my loved ones especially people I don't know. On top of that he's a guy....

I chuckled.

Me: he has a child Luyanda, so is this how it's gonna be every time I want to meet up with my friends? you're gonna send Ziggler with us?

Luu: Babe...

Me: I get it Luu

I shut the door in his face. I'm annoyed. How will they harm us if he has a child and she's just as old as Thando? I don't

like living with the fact that I have to walk around with bodyguards everywhere I go. I hate it. I want to just live a normal life and forget that I'm in love with a gangster. Chuckle. After the shower I get out and he's sitting on the bed now fully dressed. The way his shirt is hugging his muscles has my nunu twitching. All those hoes won't be able to keep their hands off him yet I don't complain but just when I wear this tight dress, his insecurity levels rise like blood pressure levels do. Sigh. I find a black body hugging dress that is just below my knees with my sandals and I tie up my hair into a neat bun and grab my

loop earrings. He's been watching me all this while.

Luu: you look beautiful

Me: thanks

Luu: I'm sorry if I hurt you baby but it's not what I meant, I just want you to be safe and protected my love

He wraps his arm around me and draws me nearer to his body. He kisses my cheeks and helps me with my bracelet.

Me: sure

Luu: don't say that Tumsa..

He says defeated.

Me: OK Luu I understand.

I roll my eyes and he spanks me hard.

Luu: don't roll your eyes when you're looking this beautiful

I know where that is leading to and hell to the no I won't change my clothes.

Me: OK, now please go to work

He bites his lips and I chuckle. He brings his face closer to mine and damn I'm wet just by his touch. The kiss is long and sweet which has me lost in his lips until I feel his hand grab my boob and the other my butt. I pull out and smile.

Me: your meeting starts in less than fifteen minutes sir

Luu: it can always wait...

He smiles. I chuckle, this man is a sex addict yorh.

Me: baby please go

Luu: you're chasing me

Me: you're annoying me

Luu: just one round my love

I shake my head and refuse. One round is never one round with this man, he'll make it three rounds and you won't even realize it.

Luu: please my love

He groans against my ear and my body wants him. Traitor. He pulls up my dress and has my hands up on the wall, he

softly kisses my ass and then without warning he plunges himself deep inside of me. I moan loudly. Luckily he locked the door already and the room is sound proof. He banged me hard and spanked me so sweetly it felt so good. After we both orgasm for like the fifth time he cleaned us up and pulled down my dress. He pecks my lips and smiles.

Luu: I love you so much nehh

I smile.

Me: I love you more sthandwa Sam

I kiss his lips a few times and blush brightly.

Luu: I wish I could just stare into your

eyes all day.

He says smiling pressing me against the wall. I grinned.

Me: your...

"Daddy!! there's someone at the door!!"

Thando screamed and we sighed.

Luu: pussy blocker

He whisper and I giggled.

Me: cock blocker

Luu: she's all of the above

We laughed. o grabbed my purse and he takes his laptop bag. We walk down the stairs with his hand constantly on my butt as always. This man loves my ass

more than anything ah. If his hand is not on my ass than it's on my boobs or in between my legs. We find Thando jumping on the couch with the doorbell ringing nonstop. Then the person resorts to knocking and I wonder who would be so dumb so early in the morning. Thando is all dressed up like a rock stars child. I chuckle. She's in her Nike jacket with denim jeans and her vans with her hair messed up. I'm guessing she's waiting for her precious daddy to do her hair for her.

Me: come sweety, let's do your hair

Thando: daddy will do it aunty

Her dad went to attend the door.

Me: I have the perfect style sweetie

Thando: is it better than daddy's aunty?

She says pushing my buttons. She then smiles.

She sits on the couch and I brush her hair up. She already brought everything needed she's too clever this one. I styled up her hair into an afro and she looked cute.

Luu: babe...

I looked up to his direction and my jaw tightened.

Nina: good morning, Miss Phakade

What on earth is she doing in my house?
I felt my heart bouncing, I don't know
why but I don't fancy this girl. Ziggler
was with them as well as Luu's PA. It's a
male. His name is Albert.

Albert: Miss Phakade

Me: Good morning

I smiled calmly.

Thando: uncle Albert, where's my ice
cream

Yeah Thando knows all Luu's colleagues.
He took her to work a few times and
thando being herself she got to know all
of his workers. But she's a lot more
familiar with Albert because Luu is

almost always with Albert.

Albert: hi sweety, how about I bring it to you later

Thando: aah ahuh uh empty promises
Mr Albert, it's too early for that. Hi aunt
She smiles at Nina. Nina smiles back after admiring everything in my house and brings her attention to Thando.

Nina: hi you must be Thando

Thando; one and only..

I chuckle. This child.

Luu: uh babe the meeting arrangements have changed actually Albert has been trying to call me since an hour ago and

hmm...

I blushed. Oops. I guess we were too busy making love we didn't hear his phone ringing. He winks at me and I blush once again.

Luu: so they had to come here because the investors wants us to be at a specific place and Uh Nina has arranged all the media and stuff because this is a huge event, there's a ceremony later and...

Nina: uh sir no partners allowed

He gave her a death stare and she looks down annoyed.

Luu: who's representing your company?

What!?! how long have I been away from work and Kathy didn't even tell me there's a ceremony tonight?

Me: uh babe can we speak in private
I bit my lip. He grabs my hand and we walk to the kitchen.

Luu: you didn't know about the ceremony tonight? It's a new project babe?

Me: Kathy hasn't phoned me And what if we lose investors, what if you hadn't told Me Luu, I've been so busy focusing on other stuff I forgot I had a company I panicked. This could either mean my company is gonna lose investors if I

don't attend this meeting or my funds are all going down the drain. I sigh and breath in and out.

Luu; baby relax, let me organize a team for you how about that?

Me: No baby that would be unfair, you have a company to run as well and it's my responsibility to take care of my company so no..

Luu: you're my woman and I have a right to take care of you

He kisses my cheek.

Luu: let me call all a meeting with your team and you go and have this play date with Thando she seems excited. Then

you can come with me to the ceremony,
I'll brief you on everything later.

He says calmly. I smile.

Me: you'll do that for me?

He nods.

Luu: any day any time, now let me go
and make us some money, you don't
mind us hosting our planning here right?
Maybe on the second floor

Me: you want to bring a bunch of
journalists into my house?

I frown.

Luu: just for a couple of hours

He bites his lips.

Me: Luu we make love in this house, I'll feel exposed

He smiles, I giggle.

Luu: you're turning me on again

Me: I'm already wet

I tease. Here we are teasing each other instead of worrying about shares and contracts. We're one crazy ass couple.

He kisses me one more time and we had back to the lounge.

Luu: Albert organize a meeting with Matthews Industries board please.

Nina: but sir the media will be here in two hours, I don't have enough time to attend the meeting and get my people

here as well

Luu: make it happen, if it has to snow
make it snow but as long as my woman
is going to attend this ceremony

Nina: I have no time to brief her on the
contracts and stuff Mr Mkisi, I already
have a full plate

I chuckle. She looks at me with bitter
eyes. Is it me or does she not want me
to attend this ceremony and Luu should
rather go with her?

Luu: what does it say on your contract
Nina, you're like my second PA now but
more on the media part so make it snow.

He kisses Thando and I and they rush up

to the second floor with both him and Albert talking on the phone. Damn my man looks so sexy when he's in work mode. Nina rolls her eyes at me and I chuckle. What was she thinking when she thought she could compete with me?

Thando: I don't like that lady

She says pointing at their direction.

Me: me neither

Thando: daddy should fire her

I giggled. Savage little kid. I gathered our things and we got into the car and headed towards my dear brother's house. I missed them so much. We passed by MacD's to get Thando a

Mcflurry then we headed to Dumisani's house. Vusi already sent me the address and we're first gonna have breakfast before taking them go the fun and games center. I can't wait, to see these kids becoming good friends people.

Two hours later we're in Burger king having some great burgers and these kids are talking as if they've known each other for a long time. It's good to see them smiling and all happy jolly. Angela isn't so shy anymore and Sihle being the only boy he's acting like an elder brother to them which is so adorable.

Me: these kids are so adorable

I say to a smiling Vusi who has his eyes glued on me.

Vusi: Angela has never been so happy before, I guess making friends does make a difference in a kids life

He smiles again and damn those perfect teeth.

Me: your daughter is unique

Vusi: yep she is, so uh..Thando is she your daughter?

Me: well actually she's my step daughter but step daughter or not I love that kid with all my heart. She's like my very own.

Vusi: wow you're just wonderful. And Sihle is your nephew?

Me: yep my brothers step child, it's all a long story. But hey we love these little blessings.

He smiled

Vusi: wow are all your family members this wonderful and generous?

I giggle.

Me: of course, my people are wonderful people

Vusi: if you're this beautiful then surely the rest of them are this beautiful as well

I blush.

Me: and you? Where's Angela's mom?

He forces a smile.

Vusi: well actually she died during labor. Right after she pushed Angela out she passed on.

My heart skipped a beat.

Me: I I I am so sorry

He smiles.

Vusi: I've moved on, I just thank God everyday for giving me Angela, I'm blessed.

Me: you truly are

I said looking at the kids busy laughing out loud opposite us.

Vusi: so you and your boyfriend are still

together?

Me: yeah his name is Luyanda, maybe you two could meet one day, I'm sure Luu would love to meet you

I smile.

Vusi: of course, no problem. You look beautiful by the way

I blush even brighter

Me: thank you, you don't look bad yourself

We laugh.

Me: so what are you currently doing?

Vusi: well I'm actually doing small jobs here and there just to put food on the

table. But actually I'm a journalist in profession but I can't seem to find a job anywhere.

My jaw dropped a little. So we do actually have journalists around this place hey. No wonder he had so much info about me.

Me: well that's very impressive. I have an idea but I'll think about it first. I might need a journalist some time soon. What are you specialising?

Vusi: I'm both an editor and an public media journalist.

Me: perfect, I have a job proposal for you, you don't mind working with Me

right?

Vusi: I would love to, I would love a stable job right now

Me: great, I'll get my PA to contact you

Vusi: thank you so much Tumisani, I really appreciate.

Me: pleasure is all mine, come on kids let's go play some games

They jumped up and squealed. This could be a great business proposal just before I get fat and big and Luu stops me from working. My second company needs public publicity and Vusi seems like the perfect man for the job. Plus he looks like he needs it. He studied for it

so why not reap what you sow? Luu will be upset but nah honey I don't mix business with pleasure. He knows he has the key to my heart and only him.

Thando: aunty ice cream

She points to the ice cream store and I wish we didn't pass this place. Ziggler pops out of nowhere and I flinch.

Ziggler: ziggler here, nice to meet you

He shakes Vusi's hand and poor Vusi looks confused. Luyanda you're gonna pay for this. This is pure disrespect.

Vusi: uh...nice to meet you too, and you are?

Ziggler: her bodyguard

My jaw tightens.

Me: Ziggler please get lost, kids in the car please

Ziggler: you're being tracked

I look up at him with burning eyes and I know this is one of their schemes.

Ziggler: I'm serious

Me: I'm not pulling out of this date

Vusi: is everything OK?

Ziggler: can you not be stubborn about this please

He instructs. I see Lwazi take over my car and grabs my keys from my hands. Both Thando and Sihle are in the car we

are about to head to the game center and this happens? If this is one of Luu's games then I'm gonna fuck him up.

Vusi: What is going on here!?

Ziggler: I suggest you get into your car and head home because some serious shit is about to go down

Poor Angela looks traumatize I want to cry. I breath.

Me: Vusi please go home I'm sorry, I'll call you

Vusi: my child's safety is the most important thing to me and...

Ziggler: we're sending guards with you, relax.

He nods and picks Angela up. As soon as my car leaves as well as Vusi gun shots are being fired. I duck and Ziggler passes me a gun. I try to see where the shots are coming from and all I see is her blond hair. My heart skips a beat. I look at Ziggler and he nods.

Ziggler: she's alive and back.

No.....This can't be. I shoot towards are direction and yep it's really her.

" Hello dear sister..missed me?" her voice has changed and so has her body and facial looks. How is this possible?

Layla?

~

Like Comment and Share

~

145 is the last insert until I make a season two which is only happening after the exams. So possibly by weekend I'll be done with 145.

Let's get more than 10 comments please.

~

[06/20, 05:36] Snr: INSERT 138~

.

.

.

.

Tumisani's POV~

I look at her for a very long five minutes and I feel like my eyes are deceiving me. The gun shots have stopped and now my men are pointing guns at her men and they're doing the same. I still can't believe after me making her paralyzed she still came back alive and kicking. I guess the saying, "the devil never dies" does really mean something. It's like she's born again all over again and again and I feel like it's almost impossible to kill this she devil. If only I made a better choice in the past and I put her six feet under when I had the chance. Now she's back and I know for a fact she wants

triple the revenge I had on her. She looks thinner, curvier and more whiter if I could say and even a fool would've picked up the fact that this all screams "surgery". I bet you she paid a lot of money to get back to normal because I know for a fact that shit costs a lot.

Layla: guns down boys, she won't bite.

She chews gum and I stand up to fix myself because I know for a fact she won't strike here, she would rather kill me in private, as if I would allow that to happen. I put my gun down and Ziggler's men don't bother to put there's down.

Every step she takes boils my blood and pisses me off even further. She stands

right in front of me and her perfume almost has me feeling nauseous. She's now slightly taller than me because of her hills. How nice.

Me: we meet again Layla Matthews

I force a smile and she has a pathetic smirk on her face. I chuckle.

Layla: I'm back, thought you could get rid of me so easily? Sister you thought wrong.

Me: let me guess...you're back for revenge?

I say with a raised eyebrow totally annoyed.

Layla: well I would say yes but isn't that

a little too personal?

She bites her lips with her eyes fixed on Ziggler. Bitch.

Me: well OK go ahead and take your sweet revenge, I don't do that stuff anymore, I'm too big for childish game.

I say rolling my eyes and the look she gives me is as if she wants to slap me. I fold my arms. She thought I would still play hide and sick with her, hell no. I have a reputation to cover.

Layla: acting too big for our boots, aren't we?

She smirks and I frown.

Me: no I don't play with toys anymore,

I've grown. So if you want revenge, go ahead. I'll be waiting. Your little " I'm back! and I'm gonna get you" tactics don't scare me.

I turn around and she pulls my hand back, I yank my arm out her reach with burning eyes. Her presence intoxicates me.

Layla: don't act like you're powerful
Tumisani, I know you.

Me: well I doubt you know me enough, if you know what's good for you I suggest you stay the hell away from me. I have a life to live and I suggest you go buy you one, oh wait you have no money. How

about get you a life.

I say sarcastically and she's red. Damn this surgery nonsense really has her.

She tightens her jaw and I roll my eyes.

Me: I'm untouchable Layla Matthews, if you don't know ask around. Tumisani Phakade ain't the same no more.

I turn on my heels and walk away from them. She curses under her breath and I ignore her. She thinks she can just stroll here and expect me to play Tom and Jerry with her? please, I have no time. I have a man and a beautiful daughter to love as well as my own soon to come baby and I won't let anyone stand in the

way of my happiness.

I get in the black SUV and there's now journalists everywhere, I wonder how these people get here so quick, technology has changed. Great, now my face will be on the news for the next month or so. Just Great. My phone rings and I sigh.

Me: Siphho

Siphho: you're all over the news, she's back??

He says shocked and I'm not even surprised.

Me: yeah, unfortunately.

Siphho: I wish we killed her when we

heard the opportunity, now I think it's a bit too late

Me: meaning?

Sipho: she's covered, she's working with the Russians and they're your mans worst enemy.

I swallowed hard. Damn this can't be happening. Why is it that whenever I find peace than something always triggers and tries to snatch that little happiness away from me.

Me: uh thanks for the info, can I call you back later

I say biting my lips. I need to breath. Stressing will only make matters worse

and I don't want anything to happen with my baby. I haven't even heard from Luu and I'm sure he's in panic mode right now. We need to sort this out and I'm not going public this time, that cost me a lot in the past and I lost a lot of investors. Gosh I even have a ceremony tonight for the new project.

After hanging up the call, Ziggler looks at me like I'm crazy and I know he's trying to tell me I'm not supposed to talk to my ex about this but what can I do? I was with him when the Layla saga happened and just because we broke up doesn't mean he's not gonna worry anymore, he was with me when it first

started.

The car comes to a stop and I quickly get out when I realise we're home.

Ziggler follows after me and pulls me back before I can even open the house door. I now realize that many cars in my parking space and I remember. Shit.

Ziggler: he's in a board meeting with Nina's journalist Colleagues I don't think it's a good idea for you to go in there.

I sigh. I totally forgot about the meeting with the journalist that he was hosting on the second floor and I pray to God these journalists know nothing about what just happen with Layla otherwise

Luu's career is gonna be on the line. I sigh in defeat.

Me: how long are we gonna wait for?
Where is Thando?

I say now worried. I haven't seen her since Lwazi took both her and Sihle as well as my car.

Ziggler: Lwazi took them to the park to waste some time as this cools off.

Me: are you sure they're safe? Are Vusi and is daughter safe?

Ziggler: please stop stressing, everything is OK.

I nod and fold my arms leaning on the car door. We wait for about half an hour

and Ziggler assures us that they're done. I breath and get inside only to find them packing up and there's a lot of people in my house now, from Luu's investors to his colleagues and there's Nina and her Journalist team and the way she's smiling at me like a child who got sweets annoys me. I scan my eyes around and Luu is nowhere to be found, I turn and Ziggler is not behind me anymore.

Nina: looking for something?

I look up and she's smiling right at me.

Me: my husband

I say in exaggeration.

Nina: he's not yours till he puts a ring on it

She frowns and I chuckle.

Me: making me pregnant is evident enough, I hope the meeting went well.

I say changing the subject because she's annoying me.

Nina: it was great, I guess I'm stuck with him for the next few years now.

She smiles even more excitedly.

Me: he extended his contract with your team?

I say shocked and she nods as if she's trying to tell me "in your face!".

Nina: three year contract....more time for me to accelerate.

She mumbles the last part and I frown.

Me: excuse me?

I raise an eyebrow and before she could speak Luu walks down the stairs talking to two men in expensive suits and he looks yummy himself. Nina disappears and I stand there with my lips pressed together. They get to the bottom and he looks up from them still talking then smiles at me.

Luu: Gentleman please meet my beautiful soon to be wife, Tumisani.

I smile as he wraps his arms around my

shoulders and I extend my hand to shake their hands.

Mr Luthuli: pleased to meet you Miss Phakade

Me: please to meet you too sir

I smile widely and I suddenly feel under dressed, I mean this is so unprofessional. I'm in jeans and they look so professional. I'm guessing these are his investors.

Mr Williams: I hope we will see you tonight at the ceremony, we have a lot to discuss. Especially your trust funds, I hear your company's are very popular with that category.

Me: oh definitely, I'll be there. Thank you.

They take their leave and all that's left are a few journalists still packing their things as well as Luu's many colleagues gosh my house is crowded. He grabs my hand and drags me to the kitchen. I feel his arms wrap around me in a tight embrace and I feel protected. He pecks my lips and cups my cheeks.

Luu: are you alright?

He says worried and I nod. He hugs me again as if he doesn't believe me and I smile then peck his lips.

Me: I'm fine baby, we need a plan.

I pull out of his arms and settle on the

kitchen counter. He stands between my legs and wraps his arms around my waist.

Luu: don't worry about that, I got this.

Me: Luu how am I not supposed to worry, it's me she's after and I know for a fact she won't rest till she gets her revenge.

Luu: I was thinking you get out of the country for a while till I fix things.

My eyes widen and I chuckle.

Me: in other words you want me to run from my problems and allow my man to sort out all my problems? Not happening.

Luu: I wasn't asking you, I was telling

you. I've already made the decision and I'm not allowing anything to happen to both you and my Child, let me sort things out my way. You've been fighting all your life and it's time you rest.

Me: but Lu..

Luu: the decision is made Phakade

He says sternly and I'm annoyed. I look at him with burning eyes and I so badly want to say something but the look he's giving me right now means shut up or else. I look down and sigh. He lifts up my head with his index and I pout.

Luu: baby please understand, I'm doing this to protect you, you're pregnant with

my baby and I'm not allowing you to spill blood while carrying my child. Please stop being stubborn and allow people to help you. Please Mrs me.

He says removing my hair off my face then kisses my cheeks.

Me: I'm worried

Luu: when you have a strong man like me, why worry?

He says with a naughty smirk. Ego much.

Me: don't start with me

Luu: is that you saying yes to Paris?

My eyes widen.

Me: I'm going to Paris!!?

I almost scream.

Luu: yes my queen

Me: Luu that is so far from home, how long will I be there for?

Luu: it depends

Me: so you're gonna trap me in Paris and I shouldn't worry about the fact that my psycho sister is after me and my man is here fighting my battles.?

Luu: case closed.

He says with hand gestures. I chuckle. I can't believe this. As much as I want to be safe from Layla's tantrums I also don't want to leave him behind. I'd rather stay with him and we fight this together,

as a family.

Luu: I love you

Me: then let me stay

Luu: hayi you're stubborn man Phakade, maybe your brother can talk sense into you

Me: Dumi knows?

Luu: he called as soon as he found out your sister is back. I didn't want him to call you because you would panic

He says grabbing the juice carton and drinking straight from it. I frown.

Me: you're disgusting Luu

Luu: and you love me that way

He plants a wet kiss on my lips and I smile. I'm gonna miss him so much. I just hope all goes well because we all know what Layla is capable of and I don't want to experience what happened in the past again. That took away a part of me and only God knows how I'm able to live today.

I hop onto his back and he carries me to the lounge and now it's empty. I guess the journalists are gone as well as his colleagues and Nina. The house door bursts open and Thando runs in giggling while Sihle runs after her, I smile. I hop off Luu's back and Thando jumps into my arms. My poor babies, we would've

had so much fun at the game center. I should call Vusi later and explain myself and maybe set another date for the kids, I feel bad shame.

Thando: aunty, uncle Lwazi bought me ice cream

Luu gives Lwazi a death stare and poor Lwazi scratches his head.

Lwazi: they're so convincing I couldn't help it, they trapped me.

Sihle: aunty Thando even cried

He laughs. I look at Thando who is pouting. Luu looks like he's about to burst. He hates it when she eats too much ice creams because then he

suffers the most when she falls sick, he stresses.

Luu: Thando what did I tell you about bribing people to buy you ice cream!?

He scolds.

Thando: but daddy I was hungry..

She whines.

Luu: you eat proper food when you hungry not ice cream,ice cream is not food!

He yells and Thando folds her tiny arms with a pout on her small lips.

Thando: but daddy....

Luu: but daddy nothing, in your room

now!

She wiggles out my arms and stomps her feet up the stairs dramatically and Sihle follows after with his head bowed down. I chuckle.

Me: you're too hard on my child.

Luu: she's too naughty, any info dawg?

Lwazi: she's working with the Russians and the Mexicans are upset

I look at Luu and he holds my hand.

Luu: why?

Lwazi: well thing is boss lady had a few problems with them in the past And they think she's still with Sipho.

My eyes grown. Lord tell me when this is gonna end? Can't I have peace. All these problems keep repeating all the time and honestly I'm tired.

Luu: in other words they're after Sipho?

Lwazi: If Layla is working with both countries then yes and no. We don't know yet.

Luu: She's flying to Paris in two weeks time.

Lwazi: that's great because Layla has no plan yet. So for now we're safe.

Me: baby two weeks is too short notice I frown. .

Luu: the sooner the better.

I swallow hard. It feels like I'll be gone for a very long time.

Lwazi takes his leave and I start with dinner. The days events keep playing a song in my mind, on repeat. When shall I have peace, when I die?

Luu: you're thinking too much.

He creeps up behind me and I flinch. He wraps his arms around me and kisses my ear.

Me: what if things don't work out?

Luu: I won't let anything happen to you my love. I'm here, trust me.

I've heard that line many times and lost time I believe it I lost my baby and went into depression for almost two months. I lost myself in those months and I don't want to head down that road ever again. I don't even know if I should trust Luu with this because if anything goes wrong, I'll be down memory lane once again.

Luu: I love you so much and I'll do anything in my power to protect you. Please trust me.

I blink a few times and breath. Should I or should I not. I can't trust anyone with my babies life anymore, I did that and look what I got? But I love Luu with my

all and he's the father of my child....

~

Like Comment and Share.

[06/20, 05:36] Snr: INSERT 139~

.

.

.

ONE WEEK LATER

Layla's POV

Me: get her on the line

I say walking up to my little cottage.

Well here I am, Layla Matthews in human form. Well to say surgery made me a totally different person would be

the exact truth. I paid millions just to get rid of the paralyze poison Tumisani injected into me and the only way was for plastic surgery to do it's magic. Now I'm back and this time I promise I won't miss my target. And plus I dig my nails deep and got her biggest enemies to work with me. I'm with the Russians and the Russians have a fair trade with the Colombians so I'm safe for life. My revenge won't just be on Tumisani particularly but on her entire family. They all did me wrong and I too shall do them wrong. Justin is in hiding all because of them and Zack is apparently married with a kid alright and Niggah is

only what? 23? Mxm. My grandparents are even scared to return here because they fear Tumisani will revenge on them and now they're waiting for their time of death. I hate Tumisani with everything in me and I will not rest till I have her blood in my hands.

Voice: hello....

Me: Layla speaking.

Aliyah: I'm listening.

Me: is your man nearby?

Aliyah: let me check.....uh no.

Me: good because I have a business deal for you

Aliyah: is the pay good?

Me: forget the money, I need you to eavesdrop on Ziggler's conversations.

Aliyah: what? are you mad? You know for a fact I'm in love with Ziggler and I love him so much and I'd never do anything to hurt him.

Me: Well consider your relationship with him done because Tumisani is a bitch and she could be sleeping with your man behind your back bitch.

Aliyah: what!?

Me: are you in or out?

I say annoyed and she breathes.

Aliyah: let me think about it

I hang up and walk down the stairs. I went bankrupt after the surgery and only God knows how I ended up with 2K left so I rented out an apartment and got my men to work with me and cooperate. As long as I have the Russians nothing will happen to me, those people are feared everywhere.

Me: get the car ready for me

I grab a bottle of water and breath. I need to see Mia, I miss her so much. I'm sure she's probably busy but I need to see her. We get on the road and drive towards her house. I hope her parents

are not home because I need to seriously get laid. They park the car outside her house and lucky for me her parents cars are not in the parking lot. So I fix my short skirt and my sports Bra I tell the guards to take a walk as I engage with my long last fuck buddy. I nod on the door and there's no response, I knock again and she finally answers wearing a towel around her body. Her eyes widen.

Mia: Layla?

Me: hey babe

I smile and she's even more shocked then anyone else who knows me.

Mia: what happen to you?

My face drops.

Me: what do you mean? Do I look terrible?

Mia: no uh I mean, come in

She opens the door wider and I get in, she directs me to her huge lounge and I plump onto the couch, she just stands there looking at me as if I'm crazy.

Me: I missed you

Mia: uh I missed you too, well Layla listen thing is....

Voice: Baby! come on Mia my parents will be worried, last round then I can go.....

The girl walks down the stairs stark naked and she screams when she sees me. My blood boils and I want to skin her alive. I look at Mia and she looks at the girl.

Girl: oh hi, sorry for my manners, babe who is this?

She asks walking up to Mia and wrapping her arms around her. She looks at me then smiles once again as if I was offering her free cookie like Mia is doing. I wasn't expecting this and now I regret coming here first of all. I know it's been a while since I've gone but she could've at least waited, I wasn't gone forever.

Mia: uh baby this is Layla, my...

Me: ex girlfriend

I interrupted and the bitch's face goes sour as if she has eaten lemon.

Mia: ex girlfriend, Layla this is Asanda

Asanda: nice to meet you

Me: whatever, Mia I need to talk to you ,
in private.

I say stating the private part loud and clear.

Mia: sure, my love please wait for me upstairs.

She pecks her lips and the girl bounces her ass up the stairs as if we were

taking notice of her thick ass. Mxm.

Mia: I'm listening

Me: how dare you move on so fast Mia, we never ended things.

Mia: are you for real right now? You've got to be kidding me. So you expect me to live without pussy for seven months or something? I have hormones you know.

Me: did you even ask me where I was
Mia?

Mia: maybe because I don't care, you know what Layla I'm so sick of you, I'm sick and tired of you disappearing and then return and expect things to be

alright. Agah please spare me the bullshit, we were done the day you decided to disappear now please, leave.

Me: you're kicking me out?

Mia: no I'm throwing you out, move!!

She's yells and I get up pissed.

Me: you'll regret this

Mia: shove your threats in the garbage for all I care.

She throws me out and I look at her with red furious eyes, she'll regret this.

.

Tumisani's POV~

The car comes to a stop and I look up

from my phone.

Me: why are we stopping?

Ziggler: we're being followed.

I sigh deeply. He presses buttons and next thing I see is Luu's face popping on the small screen connected to the car.

Luu: baby

Me: what's going on Luyanda, I have a doctors appointment for crying out loud.

I say annoyed. This has been happening all week and honestly I'm tired, I'm so tired of this being followed nonsense.

And today I have to do a check up before I leave for Paris and now this happens.

Luu: baby I'm gonna have to cancel that, Ziggler's gonna take a different route and I'll ask the doctor to rather come to the house .

I chuckle and sigh.

Me: do whatever you want.

I say returning to my phone and they start speaking some language that I didn't even understand what they were saying but that was certainly not English and if it was Xhosa or Zulu I would've understood but that language ain't none of the above. Ziggler kept looking at me as if to check if I was still alive and he was annoying me. Today just isn't the

perfect day, first I wake up to an empty bed and next thing I'm nauseous and vomiting and on top of that I have an upcoming project with work and now I'm being followed by God knows who. I've accepted the fact that people love me so much that's why they can't allow me to live in peace.

Ziggler: stop sulking, you look ugly

He says after they've hanged up the call and I ignore him.

Ziggler: let's pray that beautiful baby doesn't grow up with pouty lips like yours, she'll be disrespectful

Me: if you want to keep your job then

shut up Ziggler

Ziggler: yasis sometimes you're nice to me and sometimes you're just pure evil.

Me: you're annoying

Ziggler: yet your man hired me

I look at him on the rearview and he sticks his tongue at me. I roll my eyes.

The ride home is so bumpy simply because he's using routes that normal people don't use just because we're trying to lose these followers. My phone rings and I quickly answer

Me: Dumisani

Dumisani: princess, how are you?

Me: I'm fine and you?

Dumisani: lies, you're not fine. You're heading to Paris next week, lucky you.

Me: that's not being lucky, I'm running away from my problems and you know I hate that. I'd rather fight it myself.

Dumisani: too bad you have a boyfriend who thinks just like me and I guess we're both on the same page of sending you away just to protect both you and my niece

My eyes widen.

Me: you found out? Luyanda!

I chuckle. I guess that's why he left home so early and now I haven't seen

him properly he probably has a burst lip. I didn't even look at the screen when he called.

Dumisani: I gave him a punch or two in the stomach and Thabiso better come talk to me or else he'll see flames.

Me: Dumisani that's not fair

Dumisani: what's not fair is you and Vuyo falling pregnant at the same time and make me a fool and still expect my wife to lie to me.

Me: aah Dumsa don't take it that way!

Dumisani: hmm sure, I hope you enjoy Paris baby, I won't be in contact because I have devils to fight. I love you neh

Me: I love you more, tell my kids I miss them and kiss them for me

Dumisani: will do, kiss my niece.

Me: apologize to the father first

I giggle.

Dumisani: you must be mad, lots of love
bye!

He hangs up and I smile realizing that we're home. I get out of the car and walk into the house finding Luu with a burst lip and his eyes red. He said he punched him in his stomach!

Me: agah man Dumisani!!

I shouted cupping Luu's face. He smiles

and I peck his lips.

Luu: I'm fine baby, I deserve it

Me: you look cute tho.

I giggle, imagine how Thabiso will look, I better warn Vuyo.

Luu: you evil. Baby there's been a change of plans..

Me: meaning?

Luu: you have to leave the country tomorrow morning.

I sighed and sank into the couch. Could my life get any worse.

Luu: the Russians have landed and the sooner you get out of the country, the

better.

Me: OK. let me go pack

Luu: I already did that, I'll miss you
sthandwa Sam

Me: I love you more, I can't wait to find
myself a French Hunk

I giggle naughtily and he gave me the
look.

Luu: forget coming home when that
happens

Me: I love you more Mr Mkisi

Luu: I love your ass not you

Me: sure....I should believe that? you're
joking

Luu: you know how to annoy me hey!

I laughed.

Me: let me do it just for today Luu, I'll miss you. I won't have anyone to annoy there.

Luu: Don't worry sthandwa Sam.

He pecks my lips and carries me up the stairs. I don't know why but my heart all of a sudden feels unsettled and I feel emotional. I really will miss him, I've gotten so used to waking up next to him and I don't even know when I'll return but hey maybe I do need this trip. I've been through a lot and it could calm my soul for a while , as my baby takes over.

Me: you'll be with me when I give birth right?

Luu: I would never miss that special day my candy, never.

He says kissing my tummy after laying me on the bed. I'm growing and I can't wait to show. He showers us with kisses and then smiles at me.

Me: I love you so much Lulu

He laughs.

Luu: is that my new nickname or is pregnancy talking?

I chuckle and hit him.

Me: Lulu shut up

I close my eyes and smile. Life is tragic
hey, I've really been through a lot.

Luu: Phakade Queen, the strongest
woman I know. I love you my Tumsa.

Next thing I know there's a ring being
slipped into my finger and I screamed
getting off the bed and gasping at my
finger.

Luu: sit your ass down, give me time to
say my speech woman

Tears stream down my cheeks and I
screamed so loud my lungs hurt. No he
did not...

Luu: Tumisani....hayike you made me
forget what I was about to say, just

looking at you makes my mind go wild..I don't think I have to pop the question since the ring is already on your finger and even with your eyes closed ,I know for a fact you would even say yes to marrying me without me having to ask so baby, we're getting married.

Me: by fire by force!?

I screamed crying into his lap, OK we're on the floor now. Both crying like mad people and my heart keeps bouncing in my chest. I look at the ring and my heart jumps as I see the words " Pamela" on it. My baby, he remembered...It's my babies seventh month anniversary. More tears rolled down my cheeks and I broke

down into his chest. This is both the happiest day of my life and also the saddest at the same time.

Me: I love you so much, and yes I will marry you.

I smiled.

Luu: I wasn't asking you, eish you forward

I laughed.

Me: shut up, you idiot. Why didn't you tell me earlier?

I smiled as he wiped my tears kissing my cheeks in the process.

Luu: you want me to ruin such a

surprise? Never. There's more.

He smiles and kisses my lips now.

Me: what is it?

Luu: it's downstairs

Me: but my appointment with the doctor!?

Luu: she's coming later, let's just enjoy
the moment. We're getting married
woman

I laughed and smacked his head.

Luu: stop crying

Me: I can't help it, I'm so emotional baby,
I'm happy sad and so much more

I sobbed. I can't explain how I feel right
now, my heart is just vibrating and my

body is even unable to stand up, we're sitting on the floor like two lost souls and I can't seem to even think straight.

Luu: you're making me also emotional

I pecked his lips and wiped his tears. I breath and rest my head on his lips. We both look at the ring and smile.

Luu: we were made a match in heaven already.

Me: I can already see myself in that white dress and holding....

Before I can finish our room door bursts open startling me and Thando jumps onto us followed by Lindiwe, Brian, Lerato, Jack, Sipho, Dumisani, Busi Vuyo

and Thabiso with a burst lip as well causing me to laugh with tears. This has to be a dream.

Thando: congratulations Aunty

Lindiwe: wife of the Mkisi's , makoti!!

I laugh and smile. They drag us off the floor and I just can't stop crying. I can't believe Luyanda just proposed. I can't believe this day turned out like this. I lost my baby on this day, I got engaged on this day and I can't believe things are happening so fast, on this day.

I'm gonna be Mrs Mkisi? This feels like a dream. Luu proposed? Or should I say married me by fire and force. Is this

reality or am I dreaming.

Luu: it's not a dream Sthandwa Sam, I love you.

Me: I love you more

He kisses my lips and I now realize this man was made for me and me alone.

I'm getting ready. A new chapter has opened. Forget layla, she's an issue and from my understanding. Issues always get solved. I'm leaving Tomorrow and Luu decides to propose today, talk about bad timing but hey, looks like the Mr Mkisi has everything planned. Tumisani Phakade is going to become a makoti? Someone tell me I'm dreaming....

~

Like, comment and Share

20 comments please guys, we're coming to an end soon.

[06/20, 05:36] Snr: INSERT 140~

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV~

The smile on my face is priceless and I really don't know how everything keeps happening so quickly. I really can't get

over the fact that Luu proposed. Now my house is so full it feels like a party. My whole Fam is here and I just couldn't have asked for a better day. I'm both shocked and amaze at how this young man managed to pull it all off. Here Tumisani was thinking he'll propose to me at some fancy place but turns out it doesn't matter where he proposes, all that matters is that he chose me above them all. I'm special and very lucky to have a man like this.

Luu: so I would like to thank you all for making it here at such short notice, I wanted to do this all yesterday but we all know how some people wake up moody

at times

They laughed and I poked him giggling. OK yes I woke up moody yesterday but he didn't have to expose me.

Luu: but I love you baby, standing right here in front of you I'm extremely happy, I don't know about you but I'm very very happy. You've made me the happiest man on earth. You're carrying my child and on top of that you've agreed to marry me and I couldn't have asked for a better moment than this so thank you sthandwa sami

He said wrapping his arms around me and packing my lips. I smiled.

Me: babe I didn't prepare a speech

I whispered embarrassed. He didn't tell me he was proposing.

Luu: I didn't ask you too

Lindiwe: OK enough smooching, I wanna see the ring.

She said pulling me out of his arms and I giggled. It's kinda dark outside and they've all been here for quite a while now. Even ordered lots of food and it's all Luu's doings. I flashed my hand out for the ladies to view since we're sitting in a huge circle on the floor with food everywhere and don't get me started on how much drinks are here and this dude

is drinking as if he's not dropping me at the airport tomorrow.

Lerato: ncooh it's so beautiful.

She says referring to the ring and they all grin with a smile.

Busi: that's like the most beautiful thing I've ever seen, he even put our babies name on it

Lindiwe: ncooh, Pamela

She says holding my hand and I felt someone's eyes piercing through my skin, I drank my juice and all of a sudden choked on it.

Sipho: what!?! you put our late baby's name on the ring?

He said shocked with a raised eyebrow. My heart skipped a beat. I didn't even realize he was here, he's too quiet and I wish he stayed silent. The way he's looking at me makes my blood boil and my skin crawl.

Luu: yes we put Pam's name on the ring as a remembrance and in memory of her, is there a problem.

Luu said looking at Siphos with daring eyes and I could sense the tension in the room. I cleared my throat.

Me: uh did you forget? It's Pamela's seventh month anniversary

Siphos: I would never forget this day for

the world but what I don't get is the fact that.... never mind. Please excuse me.

He got off his seat and barged out the room. I breath. Why did they have to invite him, this is probably too much for him to bare, I mean we lost our baby on this day and now he just watched the love of his life get engaged, that's too much. He's hurting and him being here seeing us being all lovey dovey is hurting him and opening a deeper wound in his heart.

Lindiwe: do you think he's gonna be OK?

Busi: he'll be strong.

She whispers back and I don't even

bother making eye contact with Luu. I know for a fact niggah can see through me and I don't want to spoil this beautiful moment.

Dumisani: Busi where's Lesedi?

Busi: downstairs with Thando and Sihle

He chuckled and got up.

Dumisani: how old do you think those kids are? 20? what if something happens

Busi: Dumisani I just checked them ten minutes ago and they're playing.

She says annoyed. I giggled. Before world war one starts let me just go check up on my niece.

Me: it's OK let me go check up on them
I said getting up with my glass of juice in my hands. I smiled. I made my way down the stairs while smiling at my ring. It's really beautiful people, I can't wait to see how our wedding ring looks if our engagement ring looks so beautiful. I find the kids laughing loudly with Lesedi in Sipho's arms and they looks so cute. I smiled. I looked at Thando and she had a mustache of chocolate on her face. I giggled. This child will never get tired of sweet things.

Sipho: oh you're here?

He says smiling at Lesedi who had her

tiny fingers on his face. I giggled, she's so cute.

Me: she's adorable

Sipho: just like her aunty

I smiled and sat down opposite him with Sihle throwing himself on my lap.

Sipho: congratulations

Me: uh thank you

I forced a smile.

Sipho: I'm glad you're happy and moving on well.

Me: thanks, I pray you find peace as well

I say looking at him and Lesedi now wails loudly causing me to jump.

Sipho: ooh she's upset now

Me: hmm let me see if I can calm her down.

I say standing up and slowly pulled her out of his hands. I softly placed her above my chest and swayed left to right with her in my arms.

Me: come on princess don't cry, look aunty loves you so much.. OK!?

I said kissing her head and rubbing her back softly. She slowly softened up and stopped crying after a few back rubs.
Poor baby.

Me: there you go, you're so cute

Sipho: you'll make a great mother

I turned looking at him as he looked right back at me, I smiled.

Me: I love kids

Sipho: that's what made me fall even more in love with you

I blushed and he stood up. A voice is cleared and we both break eye contact.

Luu: everything OK?

Thando: daddy!!!

Sihle: uncle Sedi was crying

Thando: and aunty tumsa managed to make her quite

I giggled, these kids Mara. Sipho excused himself once again and I was

glad when he mentioned something about leaving in a while. I don't feel comfortable around them both.

Me: help me grab her bottle over there please.

I said to Luu pointing at the coffee table. He grabbed the bottle and sat down next to us.

Luu: you look worried?

Me: I am. You proposed, I'm heading to Paris tomorrow, what if something goes wrong Luu?

I say worried. You can never predict what happens in life and we all know how bumpy my journey has been since

day one and I really can't take risks anymore with my life. What if they already know our plan of me shifting to Paris just to be safe.

Luu: babe trust me. I got you.

He pecks my lips and holds both Lesed and I. I can't wait to have this moment with our own little baby.

Me: I love you

Luu: and I love you more Phakade, everything is gonna be fine. I promise.

Me: I trust you. Now please get rid of these people I miss my meal.

I say biting my bottom lip. I want him to eat me all night and to never stop

because I don't know how long he'll be away from me so I have to make the best of the little time we have together.

Busi: no need for that, we're leaving.

I gasped, embarrassed. I thought we were alone. Luu laughed. It's not funny.

Busi: don't worry, you can have as much privacy with your man as you want now

Me: uh Busi I didn't..

Busi: relax am kidding. But we're leaving, see Lesedi is even sleeping.

I look down at the little angel in my arms and indeed she's fallen asleep. I smiled. Everyone came to the first floor ready to leave and I was both happy and sad, I'll

miss them shame.

Lerato: enjoy Paris chommie and don't forget my necklace.

She says hugging me. These people act like I'm going on a pregnancy vacation. They've all made their orders as if Paris is a luxury mall.

Lindiwe: and my shoes.

I laughed.

Me: I give up. I'll get you what my bank can afford.

Lindiwe: oh please, your bank account can accommodate this whole town.

Thando stop eating so much chocolate.

She says scolding Thando and I laughed.

Me: you guys are crazy

Jack: we all know you'll miss us

He said hugging me as well. Indeed I'll miss their crazy asses.

Me: everyone and I love you all

Dumisani: we love you more

He kisses my cheeks and I walk everyone out to their cars with Sihle holding my hand.

Sihle: aunty I'll miss you

I smiled and bent to his level.

Me: I'll miss you more champ, I promise to buy you a huge car.

Thando: woman don't forget my teddy bear

Me: what if I don't want to?

I teased trying not to laugh.

Thando: then forget that white wedding you're dreaming of. Daddy I'll contribute to finding a replacement for aunty

She says giving me her toothy smile. everyone laughed and Luu chuckles.

Luu: no one can ever replace my queen

Thando: agh daddy be on my side for once

Lindiwe: you talk too much for a five year old wena

Thando: I get it from my mama

Brian: Child shut up

Thando: aunty you see how they treat me when you're not here!?

She whines pouting. I smile cupping her cheeks.

Me: when I come back we'll sort them out

Thando: of course, you're my superwoman

Look who was talking about replacing me, mxm. I kissed her cheeks and said all my goodbyes. They all left and I was finally at peace with my mine alone. As soon as he locked the front door, I

stripped naked and attacked his lips with a passionate kiss.

Luu: mmmhm someone is hungry..

He says removing his shirt and lifting me into his arms, I wrap my legs around his waist and my hands roam around his built body. Here goes a night of love making. I'll sleep in the jet. It's a private jet I'm traveling with, perks of having a rich ass baby daddy.

I wake up the next day with a numb cookie and my body is so exhausted. I barely slept. Luu sure knows how to keep a girl busy. I walk to the bathroom limping and soundly snoring in bed. I

chuckled. I turn the shower tap on full blast and the warm water somehow heals my sourness. I shampoo my hair and wrap a towel around both my body and my hair as soon as I'm done. I walk out and find him rubbing his eyes seated on the bed.

Luu: good morning sex freak

Me: shut up

I giggle and he chuckles. I slowly walk to my closet and pull out a body hugging one shoulder baby pink dress which is just above my knees.

Luu: let me help you lotion

He kisses my cheeks and helps me

lotion my body while teasing me in the process. This man will drive me crazy. After I pull the dress over my head, he hops into the shower and I fix my hair. This is gonna be such a long day.

Me: Luu stop taking your time please

Luu: woman it's my jet you're flying with not yours

Me: shut up and get out of there

I say putting on my earrings and he walks out dripping wet. I chuckle.

Luu: go make some breakfast wifey

I look at him and he smirks.

Me: thank God I'm leaving

Luu: ouch that hurts, are you really happy you're leaving me?

Me: I'm over the moon

I smile happily rushing out the room before I start crying. I'll miss him so much.

An hour later we're dragging my suitcase to the jet and I want to burst.

Luu: still glad you're leaving me?

He teases and I now sob. I hit his chest and he pulls me into his arms.

Luu: I'll miss you so much

He says kissing my head and I just couldn't control my tears. I held tightly

to his chest and I just don't wanna let go.
It feels like I'm leaving forever and I
don't wanna leave.

Me: I don't wanna go anymore Lu.

I sniffed wiping my tears.

Luu: babe we doing this for our future,
our kids will never suffer. they'll forever
be happy because of the sacrifices
we've made for them.

He says cupping my face and wiping my
tears.

Luu: I love you neh?

Me: I love you more

He plants a deep kiss on my lips and I

wish he never pulled out. He holds me tightly against his chest and our heartbeats beat in rhythm. He's really mine.

Luu: I promise to make everything right
He whispers and kisses my head once again.

Me: Take care of yourself Luyanda, I don't want to come back to a crippled husband

He laughs and I giggle.

Me: I'm serious

Luu: take care of yourself and our princess please, I don't want to hear stories Tumisani, you can be stubborn

sometimes

He says sternly. I chuckle feeling like a baby.

Me: I'll be fine

Ziggler: we have to be on our way

He says interrupting our little session. I sighed deeply.

Luu: je t'aime

He says kissing me causing me to laugh.

Me: niggah shut up I'm not there yet

We kiss once again with tears rolling down my cheeks and he wipes them.

Luu: Tumisani go before tomorrow comes and we're still standing here.

I giggle and I can see the hurt in his eyes.
I rush into the jet and sob as soon as it
gets into the sky. OK I'm a cry baby but I
miss my man already. I miss him so
much.

~

Like Comment and share.

5 more inserts left. I'm tryna finish up
then we can focus on, The Blood In My
Veins.

~

[06/20, 05:37] Snr: INSERT 141~

.

.

.

Luyanda's POV~

Eish I don't even wanna explain how my heart is feeling right now. Letting go is really hard yazi. I know it's only for a while but that woman just took my heart with her. Watching her leave felt as if she was leaving forever and I feel like I'm losing my mind right now. She's the only reason I am sane and now that she's not here next to me it feels like I'll go mad any second. The minute the plane took off I felt like crying so badly but I have to be strong I'm a man and damn the effect this woman has on me it's like she's oxygen and we all know we

can't live without oxygen. Like right now I can't breath, just kidding. But I miss her so much already. Her smile, those dimples, that caramel curls, that ass oh lord I miss her booty so badly. OK before I cry, let me stop thinking about her just for one second which is impossible because she's playing hide and seek in my mind.

Lwazi: dude you look like you'll faint.

He says bringing me back to reality. It's just been one hour and I'm already feeling like shit.

Me: I miss her

I say rubbing my face, we're driving

home and by home I mean where her sweet scent is all over the place, God I'm gonna go nuts.

Lwazi: you're becoming weak Man

Me: shut up Lwazi, you're not helping.

Lwazi: I'm starving, I'm taking us to Nando's I need some good food

Me: Nandos? there's a shisanyma close to your crib

Lwazi: you paying right?

Me: who said I was coming? I just wanna go home

Lwazi: I know you're hungry dude
I chuckled.

Me: I got fed, and plus it's still early for meet

Lwazi: it's never early for meat

Next thing I know we're heading to some shisanyma in some weird area and trust me when I say Lwazi knows all the spots.

Lwazi: see it's even packed yasis

I chuckle as he parks the car and we both step out. Damn the attention we're getting right now it's so weird. He drags me inside and there's meat being made and it looks so good. These chicks are eyeing me as if I am the meat, gah. I have my own meat and she's really delicious thank you very much.

Lwazi: you're paying right?

Me: dude you're literally forcing me to pay, was it me that got hungry or you?

He chuckles and I look around only to be met by this chick looking at me with her lips parted. Waiting is she drooling...

Lwazi: you know I have no cash on me dawg

Me: just get the meat Lwazi, I'll pay next time you're paying.

Lwazi: sure boss

We buy the meat wrapped in white paper and I pull out money from my wallet.

After paying the lady we walk out and next thing I know there's a girl tripping

and falling on top of me.

Girl: oh I'm so sorry, uh..sorry

She says quickly getting up and dusting herself. It's the same girl that was drooling over me. Mxm.

Me: it's cool

I say dusting myself without any eye contact, if I'm not mistaken she did that to get my attention.

Girl: I'm Londeka and you are?

Me: Luyanda, and this is my friend Lwazi

I say shaking her small hands. She's so small, thick tho. Too short and very cute tho. Lwazi licks his lips, player.

Lwazi: wow such a beautiful lady like you tripping for nothing, you're beautiful.

She blushes brightly and I want to chuckle. Here goes a whole thirty minutes of Lwazi flirting with this chick when all I want to do is go home and sleep.

Londeka: oh uh thank you, nice to meet you

She smiles and Lwazi winks at me.

That's a sign for me to disappear so I grab the meat bag from his hands and make my way to the car.

Me: nice meeting you Londeka

I say smiling and she nods shyly. I get

into the car and play some music. I know for a fact Lwazi is gonna take his time in there so I open the paper bag and start eating. Mind you we're parked on the side of the road with people walking around and giving my car weird looks. I sit for a whole thirty minutes I had already ate my part while waiting for Lwazi and he's still not back yet, he's probably getting some. I grab my phone and dial his number but the phone rings in the car. I chuckle, this fool. I grab some baby wipes and clean my hands and then some hand sanitizer which is all Tumisani's belongings. I get out the car after checking if it's locked properly

and Now I have to find this fool. I get that he's single but seriously some of us have things to do. I get back into the shisanyma and he's not there. I look everywhere and he's still not there. I feel someone tapping my shoulder and I turn. It's a lady. She's really pretty and has a great figure too.

Girl: hi, Luyanda right?

She says unsure, I'm shocked. She knows my name?

Me: depends on who's asking?

Girl: oh I'm Esona, one of your clients daughter, Mr Winfrey.

My eyes widen in shock and yes I am

really shocked. Mr Winfrey is one of our funders as well as a very special clients of mine, I can't believe his daughter is this pretty though, he's an old man with....forget.

Me: oh it's a pleasure to meet you Esona, uh what are you doing around here?

Esona: same question I should be asking you, such a rich handsome man like yourself at a shisanyma?

Me: I'm still African you know

Esona: oh I see, well actually I was just looking for a friend of mine. She was here a few minutes ago and now she's disappeared on me

Me: oh me too, my friend also just disappeared half an hour ago

She chuckles and I look around one more time, Lwazi has got to be kidding me. I really have no time for this.

Esona: are you in a rush?

She asks with a warm smile and I shake my head.

Me: no actually I'm just a bit tired I was hoping to get some rest now...

Lwazi: hey dawg you're still here!?

He shouts from across the room and I want to slap him.

Me: dude where the hell have you been...

That smile, gosh he just got laid. I chuckle shaking my head, Lwazi will never change.

Esona: Londeka? chommie you know him?

Londeka: uh friend this is Lwazi, babe meet my best friend Esona

They're already dating? lovely.

Lwazi: nice to meet you, I see you've already met my friend Luyanda

Me: well actually her dad is one of my clients

Lwazi: wow that's great

Londeka: chommie I'm sorry for keeping

you waiting, I just had...

Esona: it's OK don't worry, I've already called a cab to take us home, friend you know my mother doesn't like this place She says pulling her phone out of her purse.

Lwazi: cab? no ladies we'll drop you home and plus I don't want my girlfriend getting into a cab with some stranger

Londeka: really baby?

She says excited and I want to strangle this niggah right now. Which car is he gonna drop them off with? Not mine.

Lwazi: yes baby and plus Yanda doesn't mind, right dawg

He winks at me and I chuckle, pussy has him forgetting about the reason we came here, someone slap this fool.

Me: yeah sure whatever

I say fiddling with my car keys.

Esona: uh you don't have to, we can..

Londeka: chommie relax, we're safe.

She smiles and Esona breaths.

Me: shall we get going?

I say leading the way and Lwazi wraps his arms around Londeka, less than a week and they'll break up, trust me I know this dude. We get into the car and the newly met couple sit at the back

while I take the drivers seat and Esona takes the passenger seat in front. This is messed up.

Me: where are we heading to?

I say starting the car and Londeka can't answer because Lwazi already has his tongue down her throat. We chuckle.

Esona: Bishops court

I thought as much. Only rich people live in such areas and trust me this girls daddy is stinking rich, just looking at her it spells out rich.

Esona: so Yanda how's working with my dad like? I know that old man can be demanding sometimes

She says rolling her eyes I chuckle.

Me: well he's not that bad actually, he's a very potential client and is always ready for new challenges, he's a good business man and knows his stuff.

She nods with a smile. She's totally a daddy's girl judging by the way she looks and any girl at her age would have their own place but she's still living with daddy dearest, cute.

Me: so what are you doing at the moment?

Esona: well actually I'm doing my last year studying business and hopefully daddy will arrange a place for me at his

company

Me: that's great, surely he would

Esona: I know but I want something different like to work at a different company maybe

Me: do you think Mr Winfrey would agree to that?

Esona: he has to, I just don't want to have a different boss who is not my dad.

Me: oh I see, you should talk to him.

Esona: yeah I will.

Me: uh where should I park?

I say getting closer to some rich as houses and I wonder why my queen

didn't choose to live in this area, it has nice houses as well even though it's expensive but we can afford it too. I'll talk to her about it when she gets back.

Esona: oh thank you, park right there.

Me: sure

I park the car in front of a huge mansion and she smiles brightly at me. Lwazi finally pulls out of the intense kissing.

Londeka: thank you so much for the ride, babe you'll call me right?

Lwazi: of course I will, I can't get enough of this ass

He whispers but it was too loud , this girl giggles and they finally exit my damn

car.

Esona: maybe we should go out some time Luyanda, I would love that

Me: uh uh oh maybe when I'm not too busy

Lwazi looks at me as if I'm mad, niggah I have a wife which I love with all my heart. He grabs my phone and gives it to her

Lwazi: punch in your tens, he'll call you

He says and Esona smiles, I chuckle.

She punches in her tens and returns my phone, I'll make sure to delete it and when we bump into each other I'll say I lost my contacts. .

Lwazi: thank you, we'll see you beautiful ladies around bye baby!

Londeka: bye sthandwa Sam

I chuckle. Love at first sight indeed.

Me: bye ladies

I drive off and immediately as we get on the road I smack the back of his head.

Me: dude seriously?

Lwazi: you need to live a little

Me: I just proposed to Tumisani a day ago and I won't allow you to ruin it, I love that woman and I won't...

Lwazi: dude relax, I'm not telling you to fuck her. Make friends, nothing more.

I chuckle and ignored him till I dropped him off and I continued with my journey home. Tumisani is only getting there during the afternoon that side and this side it'll be around 6pm, different time zones I guess. My phone rings as I park the car in the driveway and I quickly answer it.

Me: Luyanda, hello?

Nina: hi Yanda, how are you?

I chuckled. It's like all these woman know Tumisani is not around that's why they're taking their chances.

Me: I'm fine Nina, how may I help you?

I say walking into the house.

Nina: well I just need a friend

She now sniffs and I want to chuckle.

Lord have mercy.

Me: what's wrong?

Nina: well I, I...I c..

She breaks down and I sigh deeply. I

have no energy for this.

Me: Nina what happened?

Nina: I need a friends shoulder to cry on
Yanda, I'm going through so much at the
moment and I'm afraid I can't do it
anymore

She says as if she's about to commit
suicide and I now get worried. I don't

want the woman to die and then the police investigate and find out I'm the last person she spoke to before dying and I become a suspect.

Nina: I have no friends to call and you're the only one I consider a friend

She sniffs.

Me: tell me what happened?

Nina: I can't say it over the phone, it's too heartbreaking...

She sobs loudly and then there's a sound of breaking glass. I fear she might hurt herself.

Me: No nina don't do anything stupid, calm down I'm coming

I say grabbing my keys once again and she sobs loudly into the phone.

Me: send me your address....agh you know what never mind I'll trace you

I hang up the phone and pray that her location is on and luckily it was on. I got into my car and drove to the direction of her house and it's actually an apartment. She lives in an apartment. I get out the car and dial her number once again.

Me: which number?

Nina: 17

She sniffs and I hang up marching towards her block. I get there and just push her door open only to find her on

the floor in a gown with a cut on her arm. I almost gasp. So much blood. She cut herself.

Me: Nina!

I get closer to her and remove the glass from her hands and pull her to a sitting position on the couch. She sits there with tears rolling down her cheeks and blood dripping from her arm.

Me: where's the first aid kit?

I ask and she just stares at me as if I'm crazy, I chuckle and rush into her bathroom, I open the cardboard and find the kit there. I rush back to the lounge room and open the box, I firstly grab the

gloves and put them on then grab the alcohol with cotton, she flinches in pain when I put it on her wound and more tears roll down her cheeks.

Me: we have to get you to the hospital
I say after cleaning her wound and now bandaging them. I bandage up her arm and lay her back down on the couch.

Nina: I don't want to go to a hospital
She sniffs.

Me: why are you doing this to yourself
Nina?

I asked with a straight face and she looks elsewhere. I clean up the glass and mop the floor just to be sure.

Me: have you eaten?

She shakes her head.

Nina: I'm not hungry

I chuckle and walk to the kitchen. I open the cardboards and they're empty. I chuckle walking back to the lounge.

Me: I'm gonna order some food for you

I sit down opposite her and pull my phone out my pocket.

Nina: thank you Yanda

Me: for?

Nina: for being here, I don't know what else I would've done to myself if you hadn't got here

Me: why are you doing this?

She sighs and I chuckle. This woman is something else.

Nina: I just lost my father and I don't know what I'm gonna do, nobody wants to help me and my cousin is nowhere to be found. I'm depressed and no one loves me

She says in sobs, I get up and give her a hug.

Me: that's not true Nina, I'm sorry about your father but that's life. You have to be strong, you have a great career and you can make yourself worthy, taking your life away isn't the answer

Nina: but I also want to be loved and I also want to feel the way others feel,...

She says holding tightly onto me and I gently rub her back.

Me: ssshh it's OK, you'll find your true love don't worry

I say softly. This is sad really, how can she want to take away her life, she was born for a reason and hopefully she'll find that reason.

Nina: do you love me?

She says lifting up her head and now our faces were so close to each other and it was so weird.

Me: sorry?

Nina: do you also love me?

She repeats and I look at her shocked. What the hell? Tears roll down her cheeks and I now know she needs some serious help. She needs some therapy and I'm gonna help her.

Me: Uh Nina I think we should get to the hospital maybe...

Nina: I don't want to go to the hospital, I want you

She cups my face and I push her hands off me, she sobs.

Nina: you don't want me?

She cries and I look at her with a frown. I always new she had a crush on me but

this is not a crush but mental illness.

Nina: I want you Luu

She says making me get pissed.

Me: you have no right to call me that
I say annoyed.

Nina: why? because tumisani is the only
one that has the right to call you that?

She chuckles slowly taking off her gown
with tears in our eyes and she's now
stark naked. I gasp and move away from
her as if she's some type of disease.

Nina: sleep with me Yanda, just for this
once and I promise I'll never bother you
ever again

She says getting up and moving closer to me and I move away from her.

Me: put that gown back on Nina, you're a woman have some respect for your body

Nina: I just want you Yanda, please

She says like an obsessed bitch and walking closer and closer to me, her eyes are red and she looks possessed.

Is this the same girl that is so sweet and hardworking in the office? I don't know this girl.

Me: Nina stop!

Nina: make me stop baby

She moans grabbing her breasts roughly

and squeezing them, my eyes widen and every hair on my body stands. This is so unattractive and she's desperate.

Nina: I want you Yanda

She says jumping on top of me and I roughly push her, she lands on the couch and I quickly grab her gown and cover her up with it.

Me: you're someone's future wife and I'm not going to disrespect you

Nina: stop acting like a saint we both know you want this

Me: the old Luyanda would want this but I've changed, I'm a better Man and I'm madly in love with Tumisani, so please

get some clothes

Nina: Tumisani, tumisani tumisani oh I'm sick of that name, why can't you stop worshiping that bitch and for once look at me!!

She screams. I look at her annoyed for calling my woman a bitch but because I feel sorry for her, I won't hurt her. She's just hurting and needs help.

Me: Nina listen to me, put some clothes on I'm gonna take you to the doctor

Nina: and do what!? allow them to diagnose me with bipolar? no! I won't let that happen, that will never happen again, I won't return to that sick place

ever again I won't, I refuse !!

She screams tugging at her hair and she painfully pulls them screaming.

Nina: I won't go there again!! I won't, I refuse!! that man will rape me again and then say I'm mad!! never...no...

She cries pulling her hair roughly and my heart skips a beat. This is too much to bare.

Nina: he'll hurt me! I'm not mad! I'm not bad!!

She screams and I pull her into my arms after covering her up and she fights me while sobbing hysterically.

Nina: I won't allow you to hurt me also!!

no, I know you love me! you love me very much! yes, yes he loves me...

She sobs and I hold her tightly as my heart breaks into pieces for this poor woman. I guess my instincts were true. She's mentally unstable.

Nina: tell me you love Yanda, you love me right!

She says cupping my face and my heart scatters.

Me: yes calm down please, I'll get you some...

Nina: you love me? He loves me?

She says in disbelief and I look at her worried with tears almost coming out of

my own eyes.

Me: yes we'll get you a doctor and...

Nina: no!! those people are evil, they they let him have his way with me and....you love me right, you won't hurt me!?

Me: no I won't hurt you but I'll help you
Nina relax, please breath...

Nina: I I, daddy....he, we we were fine until.... until ...daddy

She whispers with a sob and I now can't help the tears that roll down my cheeks.

I feel so helpless and so sorry for her.

So she was so broken and no one noticed her cries? This is the real her but

when she steps out this door it's a totally different person?

Me: Nina breath, please breath, come...in and out..

She breaths slowly and she finally calms down after twenty minutes, I hold her tightly and she starts shaking as the cold hits her. I hold her even tighter to keep her warm and she finally falls into a deep sleep. My heart is beating so fast I can't breath. I never knew such a day will turn out like this, Nina is mentally unstable and all I can think about right now is to help her. She needs all the support she can get and....Tumisani. I need to talk to Tumisani she'll know

what to do, yes she's lived with a mentally unstable person and I'm sure she'll be able to help me, I can't believe this just happened.

I place her in her room and cover her up with blankets and I then walk back to the lounge. I pace up and down the room and after two hours of thinking I finally check the time and it's pass four. I guess I spent more time here then I thought and she's still sleeping. I hope she's not dying on me, I can't risk that. My phone rings bringing me back to reality and I immediately answer.

Me: hello!

Voice: Luu baby are you OK?

She says worried and I sigh deeply. She landed.

Me: my love uh how are you?

Tumisani: I'm fine babe, what's wrong you sound down?

Me: uh baby uh I'm fine.

I lie. What if she gets worried and stresses the baby I don't want her to stress.

Tumisani: lie to someone else Luu, spill.

Me: baby uh I'm OK. Did you land well?

Tumisani: I'm gonna video call you and if...

Me: OK relax I'll talk

Tumisani: I'm listening

Me: baby I'm stressed, very stressed
baby I just found out Nina is mentally
unstable babe she just stabbed herself
and now I'm at her place and she's a
mess

I say worried and I can't even speak
properly. It's as if she's family but still I
care for her.

Tumisani: what!? Is she OK?

Me: no she's a mess I think it has
something to do with her past babe, she
keeps saying he raped her and they took
her to doctors who lied to her I don't

understand sthandwa Sam

Tumisani: oh God this is heavy, babe I think you should talk to a doctor, where's Thandokazi?

Me: she's nowhere to be found my love

Tumisani: OK listen, call a doctor and get her tested And then get her into therapy

Me: she doesn't wanna talk to a doctor

Tumisani: agh this is messed up, do you think I should come back and help?

Me: no!!! uh well thing is she hates you I've just realized

Tumisani: why what did I do?

wait....don't tell me she's in love with you!!

She yells and I chuckled.

Me: baby please calm down, she needs our help..

Tumisani: she is, isn't she?

Me: baby...

She keeps quite and I sigh. Lord have mercy. This is why I didn't wanna tell her. This is gonna stress her and the baby.

~

Like Comment and Share.

~4 more inserts my babies

[06/20, 05:37] Snr: INSERT 142~

- .
- .
- .
- .

Tumisani's POV~

If y'all told me Paris was this beautiful then I swear I would've come here long time ago. I've only just landed a few hours ago and to say I like this city would be an understatement, I love this city. It's so beautiful and so classy, I love it. The airport itself blew me away and eish here goes to Paris and a few weeks of France life. I'm sure I'll get a French tutor by the end of this week so I can

show off my French accent to Luu. The people look friendly and they all look so cosy I swear this place is unique. We've got a private accommodation at a very expensive rich looking hotel and I swear Luu planned all this. We spoke a few minutes ago and I must say I'm not pleased with what I heard. A part of me wants to get on the next flight back to SA but Luu's stopping me. I mean who would've ever thought that Nina was mentally ill. She looked so decent and cute and all bossy but hey, I didn't know Siphos was mentally ill until I started getting to know him better and I know for sure looks could be deceiving. I don't

know whether I'm upset or sad but he says I should trust him and leave all things into his hands and that's exactly what I'm gonna do. I don't want to stress my baby or do anything that might harm my baby, so I need to relax and just enjoy this trip and act like it's not a run away vacation from all my problems. I want to at least enjoy this city and have lots of fun and be able to leave here with memories even though Ziggler ain't much fun. Can you imagine his girlfriend Aliyah tagged along. I was so upset when I saw her on the flight, Luu said she's here to keep me company like I said I needed friends? Luu knows we

don't get along but he still let her come along on this trip. I know her boyfriend is here with me but it doesn't means she should he here too. But anyway that's the least of my worries right now. I just hope Luu finds a solution for Nina because I really am worried. What if something goes wrong? Sigh.

Ziggler: are you hungry?

He asks walking towards me. By private accommodation I meant our place almost like an apartment just bigger but it's a hotel. I don't know how they do it but here we are.

Me: yes very, where's your girl?

I say pulling my shoes off my feet and stretching a bit.

Ziggler: taking a shower, I'm gonna order in and then we can explore the hotel for a start

Me: how about we eat and sleep. I'm exhausted.

Ziggler: as you wish

I nod and he walks to the telephone plastered on the wall. He orders in and I walk to my room to change into comfortable clothes. I'm too tired to bath so I'll take a bath later in the evening. The room is very beautiful with lovely walls that have a decoration of

hearts and they're a color of white and red and my bed look so comfortable in white bed sheets and comfortable pillows I don't even want to sit on it because it'll mess the beautiful image. I place my suitcase on the bed and pull out my body hugging grey dress which is very long and is just perfect for this beautiful day. I put it on and leave my hair loose. I don't even want to think about Luu right now because the way I miss him, hayi I don't want to start crying. I put my suitcase into the cardboard and make a mental note to unpack tomorrow because I'm too tired to pack. I make my way back to the

sitting room and switch on the TV. All I hear is some foreign language and a frown immediately forms on my face. I change the channel and pray I find a channel that speaks English and right now I would love to watch a Nigerian movie but I've never heard of a Nigerian channel in Paris, so I'm clueless. I keep channeling through and it's hopeless to even keep going because it's even more confusing by the minute. So I leave the remote and grab my phone with a pout on my lips. I couldn't help but go through my pictures with Luu and lord I miss this niggah. I bite my bottom lip as I swipe to the next picture that I look of Luu when

he was sleeping on the couch, he looks so cute I want to kiss those pink lips. I swipe onto the next and it's one of us with his arms wrapped around me and his big head on my chest while we're laying on the bed. A smile forms on my lips and I hear a chuckle behind me. I quickly turn only to be met by Aliyah staring at me.

Aliyah: we've only been gone for a few hours and you're already missing him. She says sitting on the couch opposite me and Ziggler is nowhere in sight. I ignore her statement and keep browsing through our pics.

Aliyah: you know Tumisani we both have to become friends one way or the other because we're stuck together and it's better we become nice together or else this trip is gonna be sooo boring....

She says with a yawn and I roll my eyes at how dramatic she is. My hand finds it's way to my tummy and I place it there as I swipe to the pic of Luu kissing my tummy. We do the most stupidest things ever yazi. There's even a video of him throwing me into the pool and me messing his face up with cream.

Aliyah: are you even listening to me?

Me: I can hear you Aliyah

I say rolling my eyes bored.

Me: I don't need more friends, I have enough

Aliyah: we didn't start off on a good note and we both hate each others guts so for the sake of Boredom can we at least act like civilized people around each other?

Me: if you're talking about yourself then fine because I know for sure I'm civilized.

Aliyah: if Ziggler wasn't working for your boyfriend I would've smacked you long time ago

She says annoyed.

Me: point of correction, fiancée

Aliyah: whatever, well you'll have to like me whether you want to or not because I ain't going anywhere

Me: I wish you disappeared already, why are you on this trip anyway?

I say with a raised eyebrow. She annoys me.

Aliyah: well let's see, how about I don't trust your whore ass around my man and I know for a fact you're a bitch

I chuckle then smiled.

Me: no because you don't trust your fuckboy of a boyfriend, you don't trust him because you know what he's capable of when he sees pussy

Aliyah: hahaa very funny, you're a whore and I know for a fact you would seduce him if you had to

Me: yet I worked with him for almost three years and I'm even engage and my husband is the biggest gangster well known and he doesn't know his woman is shagging his employee? How stupid can you be?

Aliyah: whatever I still don't trust you
I roll my eyes and ignore her until I hear the door open and I look up. Ziggler walks in with bags of food and I smile jumping off the couch. This is gonna be a long trip.

Me: Ziggler do you know how to program the TV with better channels

I say as I grab the bags from his hands and place it on the kitchen counter. Well the kitchen and the lounge are connected together.

Ziggler: I knew you were gonna ask, so yeah I'll fix it

Me: thanks, ooh this looks yummy

I say pulling out the already made fruit salad.

Ziggler: babe aren't you hungry?

Aliyah: I'll be there in a second, my love how about we take a tour tonight I hear the city looks more beautiful at night

Ziggler: I would love to but Tumisani is exhausted so we might have a tour tomorrow

Aliyah: but she doesn't have to come along, we can leave her to rest

She says pouting and I chuckle.

Ziggler: Aliyah we're here because of her so no, we can't leave her alone

He says grabbing some plates from the cardboards.

Me: no it's OK, you guys can go head I'll be fine

I say with a smile and he shakes his head, no.

Ziggler: hell no, we ain't leaving you behind. I'm supposed to protect you and I'm not letting you go out my sight

Aliyah: but baby she says it's OK

She whines and I chuckle.

Me: Ziggler I said y'all can go and have fun. I'll just watch some TV and stuff my face with these .

I say grabbing the packet of chips and the fruit salad as well as the long sandwich with all the healthier stuff inside.

Ziggler: I'm your bodyguard Tumisani, and you know how your man gets when you're not safe

Me: he'll be strong, you can go have fun just for today

Aliyah: you know I really don't get why she has to decide whether we can go or not!

She says with attitude and I ignore her walking to the couch. I'm gaining weight and it freaks me out that I'm gonna be big soon, without Luu on my side.

Ziggler: keep quite Aliyah, you're not even supposed to be here

Aliyah: well I am here

She clicks her tongue and stomps to their room. She's so immature yazi. I keep eating my food as my mind drifts

off to my soon to be husband. I miss him so very much.

.

Luyanda's POV~

I open my eyes and they're so heavy it's hard to even open because of the thick sun light that's heating me right now. My body is aching and I have a headache. I finally succeed in opening my eyes and I quickly stressed once I've recognized my surroundings. I can't believe I slept in this house. I didn't even go home last night because I was too worried about leaving Nina all alone in her condition, it worried me to see her so broken and so

shattered. She needs help and I want to help her. I make my way to her bathroom and wash my face and Floss my mouth after doing my business. I check myself in the mirror and I look exhausted. I miss Tumsa so much yet the journey just begun. My phone died last night after our long conversation and she ended up crying like the baby she is and she even made me sing for her, can you imagine? This pregnancy is turning my woman psycho. I explained everything to her and she understood and advised me to take Nina to the hospital and at least try to convince her. She was a little upset about the fact that

I slept at another woman's house but she eventually calmed down when I explained to her how worried I am and if anything happens to Nina I'll be to blamed because I'm the last person she contacted and she might have cameras planted in this house for all we know. But hopefully she's not as psycho as she was today. I made my way back to her lounge and checked the time. 09:45, gosh she's still sleeping? I decided to go knock at her room door just to make sure she's still alive so I went there and knocked twice but there was no reply so I knocked again and still nothing so I got even more worried and just barged in

only to find her walking out the bathroom with a towel wrapped around her body and she's dripping wet. I turned around and sighed deeply.

Nina: Good morning Yanda

She says and I can feel her moving around since I can't see her.

Me: hey, how are you? How do you feel?

I say still not looking in her direction, with my back towards her.

Nina: I'm feeling much better now, I'm sorry you had to sleep on the couch

Me: no it's OK, uh I have to be on my way now I gotta get home and sort a few things out

Nina: so early, uh I was getting used to your company and I didn't expect you to leave so early

She says once again and I now wonder if this was the same woman who was going psycho on me yesterday. She looks so decent and so quite, you would never say she's mentally ill .

Me: uh I'll come back later to check up on you, I just have a few things to sort out

I say shoving my hands into my pockets and looking straight at the wall.

Nina: uh uhmm thanks for being here with me..

She says wrapping her arms around me from behind and I frowned turning around immediately to get her arms off me but as I turned my eyes was met with her stark naked body.

Nina: uhm Yanda I really really like you
She says cupping my neck and bringing her head closer to mine and I pushed her hands off me once again. She needs help urgently.

Me: Nina I want to help you, I really need you to heal

Nina: you being here with me is me healing already.

She moans shutting her eyes and I

moved back looking anywhere else but her naked body.

Me: Nina please stop

I say shoving her off me and I chuckled.

Me: I'm gonna see you later, take care of yourself please and don't do anything stupid until I get back.

I barge out the door leaving her moaning like a horny cat. She can be so annoying sometimes. I'm just going to believe she's mentally sick and that's final. I get into my car and dial a few numbers before I start the engine and drive out of her driveway.

Lwazi: hi dawg, I came over at your

place and I didn't see you

Me: uh dude I was caught up in something. what's the news?

I say driving to the direction of my house.

.

Lwazi: well Layla is looking for Tumisani and has a whole press team at her company as we speak and someone has to get order in that company before Miss Phakade finds out what's happening and we both know she'll be upset

Me: agh shit, tell Ziggler to make sure she doesn't watch the news for the next few days and she shouldn't be on her

phone today in case she gets information about what's happening.

Lwazi: got it, you need to get your ass there before things get messy

Me: yeah yeah sure, we'll talk later dawg

Lwazi: sure....oh and one more thing...

Me: what is it?

Lwazi: your old man is back in the game

Me: what! that man will never change
yazi

I clicked my tongue and hanged up. I was actually hoping to get Lwazi to find a therapist for Nina but it just slipped my mind for a second and now I need to

call my PA or better yet Dumisani can take care of Nina while I take care of Layla's mess. But Dumisani has a baby now and children are hard to handle. These journalists are probably camping outside his house already. Shit. I pray Dumisani doesn't get to hear all these things because woman will be on the next flight back home as soon as she hears. My baby is feisty and I miss her feisty ass right now, if she was here she would be cheering me up ready to kick start the day but hayi. I won't even bother to call her because woman can see through me even just by hearing my voice. I'll call her later but I'll just text her

just to calm her down. So as I parked my car in our driveway I first wrote her a long ass message with hearts and everything telling her how much I love and adore her and how much I miss her ass right now and how much I can't wait to see her beautiful face and our baby.

As soon as I got into the house I took a very quick shower and by quick trust me it was quick. I grabbed my black suit which hugged my muscles and made me look like the boss I am. I then grabbed my phone and everything else I needed and made sure security was following me everywhere. Without eating I got back onto the road and

drove towards Matthews Industry, here goes to a long two weeks of labour.

I got there and as soon as I parked my car journalists came flying like flies and I exited walking towards the entrance and I now was pissed.

" Mr Mkisi where is Miss Phakade!?" one of the journalists say and I ignore them. Nobody knows Tumisani is in hiding except for me, Ziggler and Aliyah and I pray to God that woman shuts her mouth because I will not let anything happen to my baby, I won't even hesitate to kill her if anything happens to my baby and my woman. I get to the entrance and the whole staff is bunched

up on the front of the reception as if there's a storm in the building. I look behind me and Layla has her whole squad here, the press is stunned and nobody knows what the hell is going on here. I signal my men to cover up the building and make sure the employees are well taken care of. I look around and see Katie, Tumisani's PA walking towards.

Katie: sir...

Me: Katie relax, everything is gonna be OK, it's just the press

I say trying to calm her down because she looks so terrified.

Katie: uh sir we're losing shares every minute that goes by, look these contracts are being pulled out, where is Miss Phakade this company needs her right now...

She says worried and my heart sinks.
Damn we're gonna lose so much money just because of Layla's stupid stunt.
Tumisani is gonna be so mad.

Me: Phakade won't be here for a while so we'll have to use what we have to make this work, get the whole staff at the boardroom and cancel all her meetings for the day...

Katie: all?

She says confused and I nodded.

Me: yes all, I'll sort this out

She nods and disappears into the crowd.

My men try to get rid of the journalists and next thing I know there's paparazzi everywhere. Damn Tumisani must be some kind of celebrity my gosh.

Me: Layla!

I grab her by the hand and pull her to a private place without anyone noticing since there's a whole commotion and her men are distracted.

Layla: let go of me you bastard

She yells

Me: shut up, now you're gonna listen to me

I say grabbing her by the neck with my veins now popping out.

Layla: Luyanda if anything happens to me you'll pay dearly

She coughs as I let go of her remembering how much power she has with the Russians. Chuckle.

Me: I want you to back down

Layla: I'm not backing down , Tumisani will pay for what she has done, where are you hiding her!?

Me: you know for a fact Tumisani never runs away from her problems

Layla: oh wow so why isn't she hear breathing fire and trying to sort all the shares and funds she's losing? huh where is she??

Me: shut up, I want you to get rid of these people so we can make a sealed deal and talk like civilized people.

Layla: this is just the beginning Yanda, there's more, the Russians have settled and they want more than you already have!

She laughs like a devil and I get so angry I end up choking her so hard and she starts coughing heavily.

Me: how dare you, you're such a bitch,

you're...

Before I can finish I hear gunshots and Lwazi pointing a gun at someone behind me as that person has their gun on my head. I let go of Layla and she coughs heavily. I wish I could've killed her already.

Layla: you'll pay for this

She takes her man and they leave while Lwazi gives me an annoying look.

Lwazi: dude you need to calm down, we have enemies everywhere

Me: she just pissed me off. I lost it.

Lwazi: the board is ready

I sigh and punched the wall.

Me: I don't even know what I'm gonna say to these people, Tumisani knows them better than I do and we're losing a lot of money right now, she lost about five funding companies already.

He chuckles as we use the back entrance to the boardroom. My heart is beating so fast as I step into that boardroom and when my eyes land on Monster, my anger rises even more I just march up to him and punch him right across the face.

Me: how dare you show your pathetic face here!!!

I bark being pulled back by Lwazi and everyone gasped shocked.

Monster: you can punch me all you like but Tumisani knows for a fact she needs me here more than anything

He says pissing me off even more. Did Tumisani make a deal with this man without telling me? I look at Katie and she has her head bowed down. This woman!! I banged the desk and barged out of there breathing heavily.

Me: she's working with him despite knowing how much I hate this man!

I say marching into her office trying to find her company file.

Lwazi: Luyanda pull yourself together
dawg

He says barging into the office and I
chuckle. This is harder than I thought.
Vuyo also barges in and she has such a
mean scowl on her face and I bet you
the journalists were all over her face.

Vuyo: Lwazi get out!

She orders him and he gets out looking
annoyed. I look at her confused.

Vuyo: Dumisani is pissed and he's
beginning to think sending Tumisani
away was the worst thing he's ever done.

Me: oh come!

I banged the table.

Vuyo: seriously Luyanda, look around you. Her company is going down and you and I both know Tumisani will break if she sees how much she's losing right now. Her employees are resigning because they fear for their life's, Tumisani is the only one who is able to get things back to order and we both know that's a fact!

She says annoyed and I chuckle.

Me: I'm sorry but I have to selfish on this one, I will not risk my babies life and allow Tumisani to go through that trauma again, you don't know what i saw when she lost her first baby, that woman was destroyed and broken beyond repair

and I refuse to go down that road again

Vuyo: so you're gonna allow her to lose what she's built all these years , what she's always fought for?

Me: if it means her being safe along with my baby then so be it!

I say grabbing the files and leaving her stunned on the spot. I'm sorry but I will not let anything happen to my baby.

things are about to get messy and blood will be shed but as long as I'll die a happy man knowing that she's safe.

Me: Katie cut all contact with Tumisani and make sure all her other companies have no contact with her

I say entering the boardroom once again..

Katie: but sir we..

Me: but sir nothing, from today onwards my word goes and no one shall change it until Tumisani gets back, understood?

They all nod and the meeting proceeds.

Tumisani will have to forgive. We still have our whole life time to build more companies but our babies life is more important.

~

Like comment and share.

I see you guys have lost interest in the story but it's OK. I'm trying to finish up.

Please at least comment.

[06/20, 05:37] Snr: INSERT 143~

.

.

.

.

Luyanda's POV~

I get myself into the boardroom and my father is still seated there with his whole team as well as Tumisani's team and I really am pissed just looking at Monster.

His presence annoys me to the core.

Both Tumisani's PA's are now here, one being from the hotel and the other one

who actually works at this company here in CT. They both have worried looks on their faces and I just want to disappear.

Me: great let's get this meeting started
I say settling into my seat and sigh.

Me: so since Tumisani isn't here as well can all see, I will be taking charge till she returns. I've decided that we'll postpone all the meetings she had for this week to next week...

Katie: sir actually those meetings are really important, the new shares were supposed to be finalised today

She points out and I chuckle.

Me: contact them and email me the contract

Monster: her signature is needed not yours

He points out annoying me further.

Me: I'm her husband and there's no difference whether it's my signature or hers

Monster: she owns these companies

Me: listen I have no time to argue with anyone if you won't lead by my rules then it's better seal the deal right here and now

I say pissed. Tumisani isn't here to sign these papers and I have no choice but to

forge her signature right now even though that's illegal but she'll understand.

Natalie: sir, the Kelli campaign which is our biggest project is seeking for a Press meeting and they want her to go live in the next four days or else we lose them

She says reading off her tablet and I chuckle. So one fucking mistake with the media and they want to pull out. Damn it how does Tumisani live with these ungrateful Investors. She works so hard and she literally has to be on the edge of her seat with these people just to please them, I hate her company.

Mine is more easier to work with because everyone goes by my rules but her people are just as stubborn as her and they don't listen.

Me: send them an email and tell them her husband will make the Press speech himself

Monster: she's gonna lose a lot if that happens Luyanda stop being so stubborn

Me: you have no right to tell me what to do

Monster: I'm not telling you what to do I'm showing you what's gonna be the outcome of your actions

He says and I chuckle. I read through her files and damn it woman has back to back meetings like shit hey, I manage to place out the meetings according the company and get her team to rock up in the Kelli campaign stuff and I finalize the signing of contracts which I'm hoping to email all of them to her tonight so she can sign them without me having to forge her signature and go to jail. I conclude the meeting when everyone is happy with my arrangements and they finally leave after a whole three hour meeting.

Me: I hate that you're working with Tumisani and things have got to change

I say to my father as everyone is exiting the room.

Monster: this is not your company you gonna get that through your head

Me: it's my wife's company which literally means it's mine as well.

Monster: you didn't marry her yet so you can't say it's yours until you marry her, I was hoping we could start all over again and fix things as a family

I chuckle and shove my hands into my pockets.

Me: that will never happen.

I say harshly and he chuckles. After what he put us all through he wants us

to start all over again? Never.

Monster: I'm really sorry for everything that happened Luyanda, I'm trying here

Me: well I don't care, I hate you and I always will so please stay away from me and my family

I say grabbing my stuff and marching towards the door.

Monster: where is Tumisani?

He says and I turn, I look him deep in the eyes and yes this man will always be the monster that he is.

Me: how does that concern you?

Monster: me and you both know she's

not in this company and it's only a matter of time till the Russians find her

Me: I'm gonna protect her and..

Monster: you didn't protect her two years ago and that's why you lost her the first time, let me help you

He says sincerely and for the first time in a very long time he looked honest.

Me: I will do things my way

Monster: you did that two years ago and..

Me: I don't need your sick help, I will fight my own battles I don't need you

I say stubbornly with burning eyes as I

was getting even more pissed than I already was.

Monster: you're stubborn Yanda, I know how to work with these people and I know them better than you do, let me help you it's the least I can do for all I've put you people through. She needs our protection.

He says and I now see the redness of his eyes that was always there. A leopard never changes it's spots.

Monster just will never change. Here I was thinking he'll never be a gangster ever again but I thought wrong. I look at him deeply and my heart was saying yes yet my mind didn't trust him enough. I

know we need him to get Layla down
but I just can't stand working with this
man, he's too tricky and I can't risk
Tumisani and my baby's life like this.

Me: have a nice day

I walk out there and head back to
Tumisani's office where I found Lwazi
and a lady.

Me: Good afternoon

I greet and the white lady stands up with
a smile and shakes my hand.

Lwazi: Miss Harley this is Luyanda Mkisi,
dawg this is Miss Harley the therapist

He introduces and I force a tight smile.

Miss Harley: hi nice to meet you. are you our patient?

She says with a smile and I chuckle.

This is Nina's Therapist and I'm sure she's here because I asked Lwazi to get me a therapist and she looks promising enough.

Me: no actually, our patient is here right now but you're here because I'd like to discuss her with you

I say and she nods, Lwazi's excuses himself and we start talking about Nina's condition.

Me: I think there's a possibility that this all started from her past and it is now

affecting her life, is it possible for someone to become mentally ill after being raped?

I say with concern and she looks at me convincingly.

Miss Harley: yes it's possible because the person might've gone into depression after the rape and that depression could've been deeper and heavier causing them to want to commit suicide but they couldn't and it could've led to sleeping disorders and infected the brain and once infecting the brain the only signals it sent to the brain whenever they thought about being raped was the fact that they were raped

maybe that's what she's going through. It could also lead her to have switched personalities maybe she's happy in a sec then moody then upset, it happens and for that we have to undergo heavy check ups to make sure everything we're saying is correct

She says and I nod in understanding.

Me: so when is it possible for you to go and see her, she actually doesn't want to see a doctor and she just wants me to be there with her, she's losing it.

Miss Harley: I understand, is it possible for me to meet her tomorrow?

Me: tomorrow is perfect, then maybe if

I'm not there then she'll be able to open up more.

Miss Harley: no problem, tomorrow it is.

She says and we conclude the short meeting and she leaves shortly. I

continue making calls and also checking with Ziggler if my woman is fine and I only got to leave the office around 19:40.

This day has been terrible and I'm so tired but I promised Nina I would check up on her so before she kills herself let me just check up on her.

I drove to her place and knocked a few times until she opened wearing shorts and she now has cuts on her wrists...

Me: Nina, why are you doing this to yourself?

I say worried dragging her into the house and she's been crying judging from the marks on her cheeks. I grab the kit and bandage her up.

Nina: I thought you left me, you took so long and you weren't answering your phone, I thought you left me just like they left me

She says through sobs and my heart breaks.

Me: Nina come on, I promised I would come back look what you did to yourself

I say looking at her and she looks like

she's lost weight. I'm really worried about this girl.

Me: have you eaten?

She shakes her head and I chuckle. I can't keep doing this. I ordered some food as she kept talking to herself and the TV. She looks messed up, she's talking to herself and this is not normal at all. I left her in the lounge without her noticing and I slowly crept to her room. Maybe there's something that could help me figure out what is wrong with her. I searched in her cardboards, her drawers and even her bags but found nothing. I can even think of anything that I can use to help her. Then it hit me that I've

looked everywhere else but under her bed. So I got onto my knees and looked under her bed only to find a box which looked pretty old. I pulled it out and sat on her bed to check it out. I opened the box and there were so many papers in it and there was medication as well. I read the name of the meds and I had no idea what it was. So I decided to call Lwazi and sent him a pic of it so he can figure it out and call me. I pulled out the stack of papers and the first word my eyes landed on was, " Bipolar disorder, Doctor Jane Atkinson " until the door burst open and she walks in with a gun in her hands causing me to jump in fear.

Me: Nina put that thing down

I warned and she chuckles.

Nina: push that box aside and get up

She says and I chuckle standing up. I can't believe I fell for this shit. Here I was thinking she was mentally ill but this all was an act.

Me: so you're not sick, you've been researching shit about being Bipolar so you can trap me

I say now pissed with my hands raised up and she smiles bitterly.

Nina: oh baby I am sick, don't you see the medicine I've been drinking?

Me: bullshit, those are all fake

Nina: no they're not, do you know who I am?

She says and I raise an eyebrow, so she's not actually Nina? Isn't this Thandokazi's cousin, are all their family members messed up.

Me: who are you? Why have you been working with me as a journalist if you knew all this while that it was a fake!

I yelled and she stands there pointing her gun at me.

Nina: well actually I'm on a mission sweetie, I'm doctor Jane Atkinson, wife of Mr Atkinson.

Me: you're married!!

I yell and she frowns.

Nina: surprise, well listen my people are on their way

Me: why are you doing this Nina, who are you working with and why?

Nina: Layla Matthews, does that name ring a bell?

Fuck, they got me real good. I should've known this has Layla written all over it. First she returns back in the country next thing Nina is acting mentally sick, next thing she's at Tumisani's company and now I finally put the pieces together.

Nina: I was hoping to milk your account

dry while working as your journalist but damn your accountant is stingy yazi

Me: so it was you who tried to hack into the companies account?

Nina: I thought you were a gangster, you're so slow, I even worked with you for almost a month yet you suspected nothing, Tumisani is so much clever than you

Me: shut up you tramp, you lied to me all this while and even got me worried and finding therapists to help you, you bitch!

I yelled coming closer to her and she moved back. I know for a fact her people are gonna kill me and leave my

baby fatherless and I won't allow that.

Nina: come any closer and I'll shoot

She warns and I chuckle.

Me: put that gun down and we'll make a deal, I'll pay you more than you're already being paid

Nina: I don't need your money

She says and my technique is to distract.

Me: ok, but I know you've always wanted my dick, I'll sleep with you

I say slowly taking off my shirt and her jaw drops, her fingers shake and her eyes become lustful.

Nina: no stop it, put your shit back on

She says trembling with the gun in her hands.

Me: I'll fuck every corner of your pussy just the way you want it, I promise

I say dirtier than ever and zipped down my pants. A moan escaped her mouth and I knew I got her right where I wanted her. I pounded onto her roughly pulling her hair in the process and she shoots the roof giving me more excess to grab the gun. I grab it out her hands and choke her hard pressing her to the wall.

Me: you slut, how dare your betray me like that!

I said angrily choking her, I pulled her off

the wall and she coughs heavily, I drag her to the lounge and find something to tie her up with, after doing that I call Lwazi and quickly get back dressed.

Nina: Yanda untie me now!

She screams and I slap her hard across the face.

Me: shut up you bitch, you're not going anywhere.

I say as I searched the place trying to find her phone and indeed she has been into contact with Layla and the Russians. I need to get out of her. I crack her neck a big to make her unconscious and it works just right. I rush out the building

and as soon as I'm on the road I notice two cars following me.

Me: shit!

I cursed. I grab my gun from the side of my seat and drive faster trying to lose them.

Lwazi: dude, those meds are all fake

Me: I know man, they're tagging me, where are my people?

I say into the phone trying to focus the road.

Lwazi: come to the warehouse, the gents are tagging them now

He said and next thing I hear are

gunshots behind me. I look back and
yes it's my people. I drive to the
warehouse and it's now dark. I can't
believe I trusted that bitxh.

~

Like Comment and Share

[06/20, 05:37] Snr: INSERT 144~

.

.

.

.

.

Four Days Later-

Tumisani's POV~

If I said I'm having fun it would be such a lie. I'm now missing my family so badly and it's kinda annoying. I call them everyday just to pass time and I'm now actually bored of this trip already. I've been around the beautiful Paris but still there's nothing more special then home and right now you would say I'm home sick. My mind is constantly there wondering what on earth is going on back home. My phone all of a sudden has no access to internet or social media and now the only thing I can do on my phone is call people, I just don't get it. Last time I spoke to Luu was two days ago and since then I've heard

nothing. I think I might be losing my mind right now because the waiting is killing me and I'm becoming very impatient. I've traveled almost everywhere around this city in just a week and seriously I wanna go home. My heart doesn't feel right and I don't know why but I have this feeling that something isn't right and it's stressing me. On the other hand my pregnancy has me vomiting most of the time and my body is constantly weak which is also stressing me and don't get me started on these headaches. I don't know, maybe I'm just stressed and over thinking things, maybe I just miss my

family and I wish my pregnancy wasn't this draining. I'm growing and it's only about two months close to three months. I lose appetite easily and I'm now very picky with my eating which has me worried as shit since we're in a foreign country and my desires can't be met since we're so far from home. I now cry too much and I just wish I was home. Can you imagine I've only been here a week and already I'm fed up with this place. It's a beautiful city but this just isn't for me, especially when I'm pregnant and the father of my child is like 200 miles away from us. Sigh.

I rush into the bathroom and vomit

everything I ate last night out and then rinse my mouth. I stand at the basin and look myself in the mirror. I'm such a mess and it's not even funny. If only I was there with Luu then we could fight this war together. What if things are terrible back home and he's hurt, what if my investors have cut contact with me because I've already lose my company without knowing. I can't just sit here and do nothing when my heart isn't settled right now. I miss Luu's touch, his kisses, his hugs and his presence, I really do miss him.

After brushing my teeth and doing all my hygiene process I decide to settle into a

comfortable Addidas tracksuit with black socks, I just want to stay in bed and laze around because I feel weak already and I don't have energy for anything at all. My phone rings just as I finish doing my hair and I slowly make my way to it.

Me: Phakade speaking

I say sitting down on the bed.

Luu: baby...

His voice has every hair on my skin standing up and my heart sinks to the floor, as my eyes get teary.

Me: Luu, babe..

Tears roll down my cheeks and I bite my

bottom lip to stop myself from sobbing.

Luu: Tumsa, my love, how are you babe?

He says worried with so much concern in his voice and I wish I could tell him of how much I miss his body right now and how much I miss his kisses, I wish he was here with me to put me to bed every night and to tell me everything is gonna be OK.

Me: Luu I miss you, babe I wanna come back home, I can't do this any longer

I say as more tears gush down my cheeks and I sniff.

Luu: babe please, don't do this right now I need you to be strong for us babe, for

our baby

He says and I know he's not OK.

Me: Luu what is going on down there? I know for a fact that nothing is going right so please tell me!

Luu: babe, take care of yourself please, I need you to be strong.

Me: Luyanda I'm freaking worried as shit here, tell me what is going on!

I yell and he chuckles.

Luu: calm down, I don't want you stressing over nothing

Me: Luu tell me..

Luu: don't be stubborn Phakade

He says sternly and I sigh.

Me: I'm getting into a plane and I'm gonna come back there and you won't stop me

I say stubbornly and he chuckles annoyed.

Luu: don't you dare Tumisani, don't you dare

Me: then tell me what the fuxk is going on!

I yell angrily and he just breaths into the phone. I know some things not right over there and I know there's something he's not telling me.

Luu: take care of yourself and our baby

please .

He whispers and my heart breaks.

Me: I'm sick Luu, I can't do this anymore

Luu: what you mean you're sick!?

He said worried and I wipe my tears .

Me: you think being pregnant is easy,
waking up every morning vomiting your
lungs out like some mad person while
having hormones and picky appetites in
some kind of fucking foreign country!!

I scream and he sighs worriedly.

Luu: baby we have to be strong, you're
stressing me and now how am I
supposed to concentrate with you being

sick, I'm worried Tumsa, where is Ziggler?

Me: he's somewhere in this house making love to his woman while mine is there fighting my problems when I'm well alive and kicking

I sulk, he chuckles.

Luu: Baby you know this is hard for me too, I so badly wanna be there with you, I want to be there holding you and watching you grow moody but I have to be here and fight our battles so that we can be happy.

He says and I breath. He's right but I just miss him.

Me: you don't wanna tell me what's

happening down there and I'm worried

Luu: I will tell you everything when the time is right. I love you alright?

Me: I love you more, please take care of yourself. I don't want my baby to grow up without a father like me, please...

Luu: don't worry sthandwa Sam, uh Tumsa....

Me: yeah?

Luu: why did you sign a contract with my father!?

My mind runs wild and my palms get sweaty. How the hell did he find out!

Me: you're going through my business

files without my permission Mkisi!?

I half shout standing up and now pacing around the room

Luu: you lied to me Phakade, you told me you weren't working with him

Me: Luu this is business related and we both know we can't mix business with family

Luu: I get that but you could've at least been honest with me babe

He says defeated and my heart breaks even further.

Me: I was scared you would stop me from working with him Luu, I'm sorry

I say putting my hand on my forehead as I felt my head pain and I felt weak all of a sudden.

Me: ba-be....I...

I rubbed my head as the pain got even more and I could barely think straight.

Luu: Tumisani, hello, babe what's wrong!

He panics and I try walking to the bed so I can sit but my legs also feel so weak.

Me: my head, ouch...

I cried in pain and drop the phone. I forced myself to walk to the bed which seemed impossible as my legs gave in and my eyes rolled to the back. What is happening to me. My eyes felt weak and

I collapsed to the floor as darkness consumes me.

.

Luyanda's POV~

Panic consumes my heart and I start rushing like a mad man. After calling Ziggler and informing him of the condition Tumisani is in he assured me he rushed to her room and now they're probably heading to the hospital. My mind is running wild and I don't know what to do. These past few days has been hectic and I really can't explain it. I'm trying to get Tumisani's company on track while trying to fix mine as well, it's

not easy since Layla keeps sending me threats of how she'll destroy me, she doesn't give up and now that I have Nina under my own nose I am able to maybe win over. I kidnapped Nina and she's now tied up to a chair in the warehouse and I'm not even thinking of letting her go. She's the one thing that will make the Russians come after me and that's the whole plan. I want them to attack first so that I'm able to make my move. I'm worried sick about Tumisani and I pray nothing happens to them. Sigh, I feel so helpless right now.

It's late at night and there it's probably morning or something. I get into my car

and drive to the warehouse but I'm being shot at as soon as I'm on the road. I pull out my gun and speed up my car, these people have a way of ruining my mood yazi. My phone rings and I quickly answer hoping that it's Tumisani

Me: Hello...

Lwazi: dude you're in danger and the guys are far from your reach right now

Me: so I can't be protected at this moment?

I say in a calm tone and he chuckles.

Lwazi: should I make the call and allow them to decide whether they want her dead or alive?

He says because I know there's no way I'm getting out of these many gun shots, my car window is broken and it's only a matter of time till they bust my wheels.

Me: go ahead and keep me on the line, don't hang up

I say using my one hand to connect my phone to the car while dodging bullets and trying to keep my focus on the road. Lwazi connects the calls and has Layla as well as the Russians on the line.

Me: Layla get your dogs to back down so we can discuss like civilized people

Layla: there's nothing to discuss, I want you dead

I hear a scream break through and I know Lwazi is doing his magic on Nina.

Lwazi: are you gonna let her die so easily!?

He roars pissed and I dodge yet another bullet.

Voice: Mkisi don't even think of laying a finger on my daughter

A broad voice comes through and I swear that man is a Russian, Nina's father is a Russian? She said her father died, no wonder she has an English surname and her name isn't really Nina.

Me: I thought you would never speak Mr Atkinson

I chuckled.

Mr Atkinson: let's make a deal, you let go of my daughter and we step down

Layla: what!! we're not stepping down till he dies

Mr Atkinson: I'm not risking my daughters life for this shit game, the Queen of diamonds is nowhere to be seen and you want me to lose my daughter, bullshit!

He yells and I now have the upper hand.

Me: mfethwu do your thing

I speed up and shoot as Nina's screams fill up the car and I now have a huge smile on my face.

Layla: OK OK, stop, stop please !!

She screams. Nina stops screaming and now she's sobbing like a baby.

Nina: daddy!! Daddy he's gonna kill me

Me: Mr Atkinson

Mr Atkinson: let go of my daughter you bastard!!

Me: I want you to kill that slut sitting next to you first then I'll consider letting your daughter go

Layla: no, no...you're not gonna kill me for your daughter, the Colombians have my back even if you don't

She yells and I know she's speaking with

the Russians, they're probably all sitting in one room, if only I could get the location. My glass breaks again and I now know it's now or never

Lwazi: I got their location

He says only transferring the message to me since we don't want them to find out about our next move.

Me: sure

Layla: Luyanda I'll get my men down and disappear, let her go

Me: lost time I fell for that sick joke this time I won't, not even.

Layla: trust me I'll leave!!

She yells and I don't even bother listening to her. I lose her dogs and drive to the warehouse like a maniac. I get out my car and barging into the basement sweating. I just escaped death.

Me: untie her

They untie her and I drag her by her hair out the house and we get everything set. It's now or never. What choice do I have. We get into separate cars and I make sure I have more than one gun. There's gonna be guns shooting but I don't care. This is my family's future I'm building and no ones gonna stop me.

My people circulates the building and I

pull the bitch by her hair and drag her out with my gun on her head. Her father stomps out with a gun in hand anger written all over her face.

Nina: Daddy!!!

She cries and tries to get out my hold and I pull her even harder.

Layla: It's over Luyanda let her go!

She commands and she gets a smack from Mr Atkinson.

Mr Atkinson: look what condition my daughter is in, this is all your fault

He roars angrily and Layla looks at him boiling with anger.

Layla: how dare you

Next thing I know she shoots two bullets at the Russian drug lord and he falls dead to the ground.

Layla: Now all of you, listen and listen carefully

Nina: Daddy!!! no daddy wake up, dad wake up!!

She cries trying so hard to push my hands off her but it's impossible.

Nina: Layla you slut, I'm gonna kill you!!!

She screams angrily with tears rolling down her cheeks.

Layla: I would like to see you try, now

shut up, you're of no use to us, they can
kill you for all I care

I look at her with anger boiling my blood
and I just want to kill her already. Fuck
life, I shoot five bullets all at once at her
as anger consumes me and my eyes
turn blood red, I hear her scream as the
first bullet hits her followed by the
others and there and then I see Layla
Matthews fall flat to the ground. Her
people starts shooting and I duck
dragging Nina with me, I could kill her
right now but she's been through too
much torture for one night.

Me: shut up and don't make a sound

I roar at her as I hide behind a car and she's shaking in fear.

Gunshots fly around and I can't seem to find. Pedro, the Colombian drug lord, my eyes look around and my heart skips a beat when my eyes land on him dragging Yemi by her hair, she's shaking and crying at the same time and that's when I literally when mad. No one and I mean no one, will ever touch my sister like that, no one has any right to do no such thing to my sister.

Lwazi: Yanda, Yemi is here!!?

He shouts confused and I'm just as shocked. When did they kidnap Yemi?

Yemi: Yanda!!

She cries and my heart breaks. He slaps her twice across the face and I now realize all my men are down.

Nina: Yanda please let me go , please

She begs as I drag her out my hiding position to stand up for myself as the man that I am. I won't let anything happen to my sister, not until they kill me first.

Lwazi: we're down man, it's only the two of us now!

He shouts in his hiding spot And I don't give a damn right now.

Pedro: like the view?

He smirks pathetically and my blood boils like hot lava.

Me: let her go Pedro!

I yell.

Nina: he's my uncle Yanda, let me speak to him

She says shaking and I now realize what my father has been telling. These motherfuckers have me, they got me.

The Russians work with the Colombians because they're related, I now realize Monster has always been right. He warned me about they people, I didn't listen to him.

Pedro: let my niece go Mkisi

Me: not unless you let my sister go

I point the gun to Nina's head and she shivers. He chuckles.

Pedro: you people are down and you still have time to make threats?

He laughs like the devil he is and my heart beats faster. If I'm dying today than God has to promise me he'll forever protect Tumisani and my unborn child. They need me too.

Voice: let my daughter go Pedro!!

His deep voice has me shivering as a wave of relieve takes over me, I turn around and there walks Monster with a whole military service collection as if

world war three has just begun. I knew he would never let anything happen to us. He might've wronged us but never will Monster let anything happen to his princess.

Yemi: Dad?Dad-...Daddy!!

She says in unbelief as tears stream down her cheeks and Monster has his gun control in such a way that shows he's not here to play, when you see Monster in this position just know he aims to please.

Pedro: put your gun down Monster, or else....

Before he can even finish there's a bullet

in his head and he falls to the floor. Yemi screams and collapses to the floor as bullets are being fired and I'm distracted so much I don't realize the bullet that has just hit me. My eyes become heavy and my body just immediately gives in. I turn to look at where it comes from and I now see Nina with a gun in her hand. I look down and see blood oozing out my body. I get dizzy immediately and feel like my life has just been snatched out of my body. I see heaven and hell getting closer and now my soul has to decide where I belong because a gangster never enters the gates of heaven, especially when

they've just committed a sin all their life.
If I die today than all I ask for is for my
wife and child to be safe. " Yanda no!!!!"
she screams And I wish it was all a
dream. My life leaves my body.

~

Like Comment and Share

~ Ncooh, we are almost there my people.

1 more insert

[06/20, 05:37] Snr: INSERT 145~

SEASON FINALE

.

.

.

Seven Months Later~

Time, money, greed, love, secrets, betrayal, loyalty, power, honesty, truth and most importantly kindness. As I look back on this journey called life I see my whole life fade with time, I see what money and greed turn people into.

Things change as soon as money is involved. Betrayal takes place and the heart becomes one cold iced demon. All in the name of riches and power.

Families get broken and loyalty becomes nothing more than just a simply seven letter word. Hearts are broken and a year becomes nothing more than a 356 day process. Honesty

is the last thing in a mans mind when greed and lies sit on the tip of their tongue. I look back and think about all the secrets that has been poured out for the past three years of my life. I was just a simple 17 year old living in a dump, an ill grandmother who tried by all means to put food on the table. It all begun when she said, " there's something that I need to tell you before I die" those words changed my life. My brother, oh my beloved Dumisani. Poverty got the better of us and my poor brother resorted to gangsterism. One thing led to another and the beast within woke in me.

When I look back on my story I feel like it's all just a farytale. How does one year change so drastically in just a space of time. I grew up faster than I could believe and it all happened way too fast. One minute I was 17 the next I was holding a gun to my mothers head. Funny how life seems to shoot bullets of problems down my lane. Lost my baby while fighting for my life. Fell in love with a mentally ill man, it all just feels like a movie. " Tumisani push!!" He shouts and I'm being brought back to reality. I'm sweating bullets and my heart just keeps beating way too fast, faster than usual. Tears roll down my cheeks as I

feel my body getting weaker and weaker every time I tried to push. I can't give up now. I can't, I've been through hell and still survived yet I can't push my baby out? Hell no I'm gonna push. I keep pushing while screaming and crying at the same time these people keep shouting at me making me feel even more angry yet scared.

Nurse: madam one more push!!

She shouts and I want to smack her hard against her face. Does she know how painful this shit is, I've been pushing my ass off and still she's yelling at me. I can't stop crying And my heart feels like it's beating all by itself

because my body just isn't alive no more.
I hold onto his hand tightly and push
with everything in me, every power
inside of me was pushed out and as
soon as I heard a baby's cry, I sighed in
relieve only to be met by another urge to
push. My eyes widen and I scream my
lungs out

Nurse: oh there's another one coming,
we have twins!

She announces and more tears roll
down my cheeks.

Nurse: push!!

I push hard and put my all in it as I know
my life has been blessed with twins. One

year ago I lost a baby but this year I've been blessed with not one but rather two. I hear another cry break through and my heart settles. I look on my right and Luu has a smile plastered on his face with our princess in his arms.

Luu: baby, they're twins! A girl and a boy!!
We have twins!

He shouts excitedly and my heart melts with joy. If y'all told me life would turn out like this then yes i'll definitely want to go back and live life one more time or even more than once. This man has been nothing but the best and I couldn't have asked for a better husband. Oh wait, did you hear me.....yes I'm now

officially Tumisani Phakade Mkisi. We got married two months ago and to say my wedding was great would be an understatement. Every girls dream is to have a beautiful white wedding but mine was more than just a wedding. I bonded my soul with this man on that day, I officially bonded my heart with his and I now own his heart and he also mine. We vowed to stay together till death do us apart and through good times, sad and even death. What's mine is now his and what's his is now mine. Love is probably also an understatement of how much I feel for this man and I just couldn't have asked for a better husband.

Bullets couldn't take him away from me and nothing ever will. Layla died, Nina died and life went on. Luu's mom got back together with Monster and forgiveness was sealed. We're now all a big happy family. Sipho met a girl that he's madly in love with and I couldn't have been more happier. Vuyo gave birth to a handsome baby boy who looks exactly like Thabiso and she's happily engaged. Jack and Emihle are also on their journey of life and are very happy. Lindiwe and Brian are growing strong each day that goes by, they're now heading to baby number two. Dumisani and Busi are always at each others

throats and yet never seizes to steal a quickie wherever they may find themselves. Their love is unexplainable and yet extraordinary. Lesedi is now crawling and keeps getting beautiful by the minute. Thando and Sihle have started school and have become best of friends, they are inseparable. I don't know how I got here but I guess secrets gave me a journey to remember. Let me not forget to mention Vusi and his beautiful daughter Angela who are now traveling the world and enjoying life to the fullest. You know my family grew largely over these past years and I'm very happy, wait happy is just an

understatement. I'm over the moon.
Who could've ever imagined, me,
Tumisani Phakade Mkisi would have
such a happy ending with two beautiful
children and a loving husband who
would go through extremes just to make
her happy.

Luu: woman relax, they're right here next
to you

He says pecking my cheeks. I can't help
it, I just want to see them every single
second that goes by. We've been moved
into a ward and my babies are
peacefully sleeping next to me. They're
so adorable and have their fathers nose.
The look on Luu's face is priceless, the

glow in his eyes when he looks at our babies is so special I swear he's gonna be a great father. These past seven months have been hectic yet here we are overcoming it all. After Luu got shot that day I took the first flight back to SA and when I got here he was being operated on. My heart was beyond broken and I couldn't even think straight. Forget eating, I couldn't even do anything properly. But faith and prayer somehow made me believe that he'll come out of it strong and powerful.

After he came out of hospital my businesses went bankrupt and only God knows how many funds I lost in one

week. I had to start from scratch yet it wasn't easy but Luu was by my side every single step I took. He never let me go. I somehow managed to get back on my feet and things started to work out. I had to balance work and my pregnancy all at once. My hormones got worse and I was getting bigger by the minute. Still Luu stood by my side and never let me go. He's a blessing sent from above really.

Me: so our princess's name is Pamela right?

I say with a smile plastered on my face as he held my hand tightly.

Luu: yep and our little prince here is
Enzokuhle

He says pecking my hand. I look at their
tiny hands and their tiny toes as more
tears roll down my cheeks. Is this some
kind of dream, if it is please don't wake
me up.

Luu: babe...

Me: Luu this feels like a dream, I..I..

Luu: ssshh this isn't a dream sthandwa
Sam, this is our little love story. The
ending has to be great isn't it?

He says leaning down to kiss my head. I
smile and wipe my tears. No more
crying from now on. Only joy and

nothing less than joy.

Luu: I love you so much Tumisani

He says softly and I giggle.

Me: nah I don't love you, I love my babies

Luu: woman please, without my super sperms these little kiddos wouldn't be here!

He laughs and I blush brightly.

Me: shut up, my poor babies

Luu: I'm serious Phakade, you needed my sperms

Me: OK ssshh before I kick you out

Luu: I'd like to see you try

Me: you dare me!?

I say with my hand on the emergency button and he gasps. I laugh and sit up straight as the door bursts open and here comes our little crazy family. A family of gangsters to be precise. But nah, Luu washed his hands off on our wedding day and vowed never to go back to that life ever again.

Lindiwe: Chommie!!! Aaahh oh my gosh we have twins!

She screams happily and I giggle.

Dumisani: love of my life

Me: man of my heart

We laugh and he kisses my cheeks

Dumisani: so I'm now uncle Dumisani

He says looking down at Pamela and Enzokuhle. My heart in human form

Monster: makoti, you've made me the proudest man alive!

Me: thank you baba

Luu's mom: Tumisani they're so beautiful

She says taking Pam into her arms as Monster takes Enzo. Luu smiles broadly.

Yemi: Daddy let me hold him, oh my gosh he looks so much like Yanda

Brian: aaayah our little niggah scored big goals!

Luu: my mama didn't make me

paralyzed down there

I gasped as all the man roared up in laughter.

Luu's mom: you guys have no shame

Monster: aah baby our son knows his game, I'm expecting triplets next year

Luu: that's too little baba, quads are better

They laughed and I'm beyond shy right now. He's mad if he thinks we're going as far as six kids. My nunu can't hold that much, especially when he's beast down there.

Busi: I'm so happy for you Tumisani, I'm so very happy

She says hugging me tightly as Emihle barges in with all the children. Thando runs up to me and gives me kisses all over my face.

Thando: aunty I have a brother and a sister to play with now!!

She screams excitedly.

Me: I'm glad you're happy

Sihle: aunty she's so pretty!

He says looking at Pam, I smiled.

Monster: just like her mother

I giggled. OK I couldn't have asked for a better family. I never knew my story would have a happy ending, I never knew

some roads take a different turn at different street lights. I was just a typical girl with secrets in heart yet here I am filled with joy.

Dumisani: have you decided on their names?

He says with a smile as they stare down at my gorgeous angels.

Luu: Pamela and Enzokuhle.

My heart in human form. I'm now a sister, aunt, wife, mother, friend and many more. I'm a woman of my own power and a woman filled with the Phakade blood flowing in my veins.

~The End.

~ok, I'm crying.

I can't believe it's the end of our beloved Hidden secrets. I want to thank each and every one of you for all your support and all your likes and comments. Thank you all for being here through this journey, I really appreciate it. I've truly learnt a lot in this journey and I could definitely say my writing skills have developed. Thank you guys so much. I love you all.